# To summarize the historical background:

The "telephone" that was Invented by Alexander Graham Bell in 1876 became a staple in 50,000 American households alone within 4 years.

The "steam locomotive" that crossed the North American continent reached a top speed of 120 km/h, and an average speed of 88 km/h.

And the public was in a spectator sports frenzy, the Pro Baseball National League was born in1876, and the first champion team was the "Chicago White Sox". The racehorse "Domino" was the champion of the Kentucky derby in 1891, and reigned undefeated as "The Black Whirlwind".

And in the first international Olympics that opened in Athens, Greece in1896, each sport had "prize money" despite strict amateur regulations.

JOJO 熱情領域
Steel.Ball.Run

☆驰骋吧!! 去往彼方!!
漫画界最大的冲击!!
新连载53——页!!
STEEL BALL RUN
Steel·Ball·Run
劲风哟!
流云哟!
横渡这广袤的大地
祝福这新大陆上的
世纪盛事吧!!
荒木飞吕彦先生
新连载!!
] 圣地亚哥沙滩 1890年
9月23日 比赛的两天前
荒木飞吕彦
&LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
☆世纪的杰作!! 漫画「JOJO的奇妙冒险」1~63和
「JOJO的奇妙冒险Part6石之海洋」1~17绝赞发卖中!!
www.jojohot.com
热情汉化简体版
扫图:Ryu
翻译:neophoenix&重H
修图:戒指
JOJO
www.jojohot.com

ドドドドドドド
WHAT'S ALL THAT RACKET?
IT'S THAT TROUBLE MAKER, SANDMAN.
YOU CAN'T PROTECT HIM ANYMORE... CHIEF.
THE WHITE MAN'S BOOKS. THEY WERE HIDDEN IN HIS TENT.
THIS IS TREACHERY AGAIST OUR TRIBE AND OUR ANCESTORS.
SANDMAN MUST RECEIVE PUNSHMENT...
ドサドサドサァ
HOLY BIBLE
HE WILL BE SCALPED ....
IS THERE NO OBJECTION?
ドドドドド
到底所为何事！？续文请见第33页！！

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

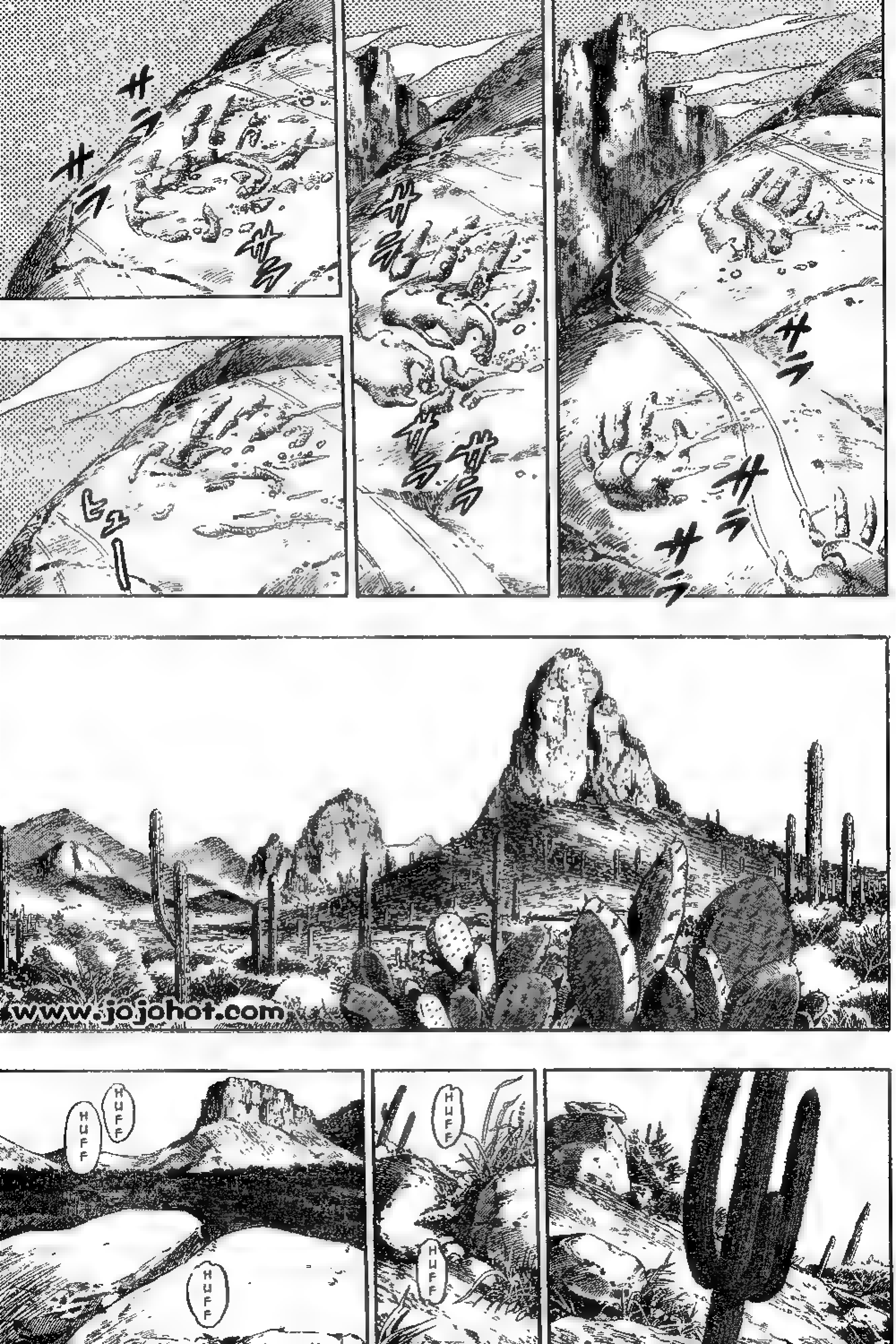
www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

WOA AAH!
WHAT THE... HE DOVE UNDER MY HORSE!
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
www.jojohot.com
WHAT ARE YOU THINKING, SANDMAN? ARE YOU INSANE?!
YOU PURPOSELY GOT KICKED BY MY HORSE ONTO THE ROCKS
HUFF
HUFF
AND YOU'RE STILL CLIMBING
HUFF
.......

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com



www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

OW
PLEASE!!! STOP IT!!!
S... SORRY!!!
I'M REALLY SORRY, SIS!
PLEASE!
APOLOGIZE, AND TELL THEM YOU DIDN'T MEAN TO INSULT THE TRIBE!
www.jojohot.com
THAT'S WHERE OUR OPINIONS DIFFER...
YOU'RE WRONG.
SIS...
WE'RE GOING BACK TOGETHER, SANDMAN!!!
I'LL APOLOGIZE WITH YOU.
PROMISE TO THE ELDER AND THE CHIEF AND EVERYONE THAT YOU WON'T READ THE WHITE MAN'S BOOKS ANYMORE!

www.jojohot.com

YOU WERE ALWAYS LIKE THAT SINCE YOU WERE A CHILD.
ONCE YOU'VE DECIDED, YOU NEVER COOPERATED WITH ANYONE ELSE.
THAT'S WHY NOBODY EVER UNDERSTANDS WHAT YOU'RE THINKING.
SIS.
LET ME SHOW YOU SOMETHING.
IT'S OVER THERE.
www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

WHAT IS THIS?
WHAT ARE YOU SAYING?
I FOUND THIS 2 WEEKS AGO.
WERE THEY GOUGED OUT? OR MAYBE SCRAPED OUT?
THEY'RE PERFECTLY ROUND...
www.jojohot.com
HOW WAS THIS DONE? THERE ARE NO WARPS...
EVERY ONE IS AN IMPRINT OF A PERFECT SPHERE.
AND YOU'D HAVE TO SCRAPE AT AN INCREDIBLE SPEED TO GET THIS AMOUNT OF HOLES.
SO WHAT?
I FOUND THE WHITE MAN'S BOOKS HERE TOO.

www.jojohot.com

HE REACHED AT LEAST EIGHT METERS IN ONE LEAP... THREE HORSES WORTH!
AMAZ-ING...
I WON'T COME BACK TO THE VILLAGE.
SIS... I WANTED TO SAY GOODBYE.
I'M GOING ON A TRIP.
WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO SAY TO ME?
I JUST FOUND THAT HE WAS RUNNING WITH SOME-THING IN HIS HAND.
STONE OR IRON... SOMETHING VERY HEAVY.
IS THIS IT? DID THIS SCRAPE ALL THOSE HOLES IN THE ROCKS...?
www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

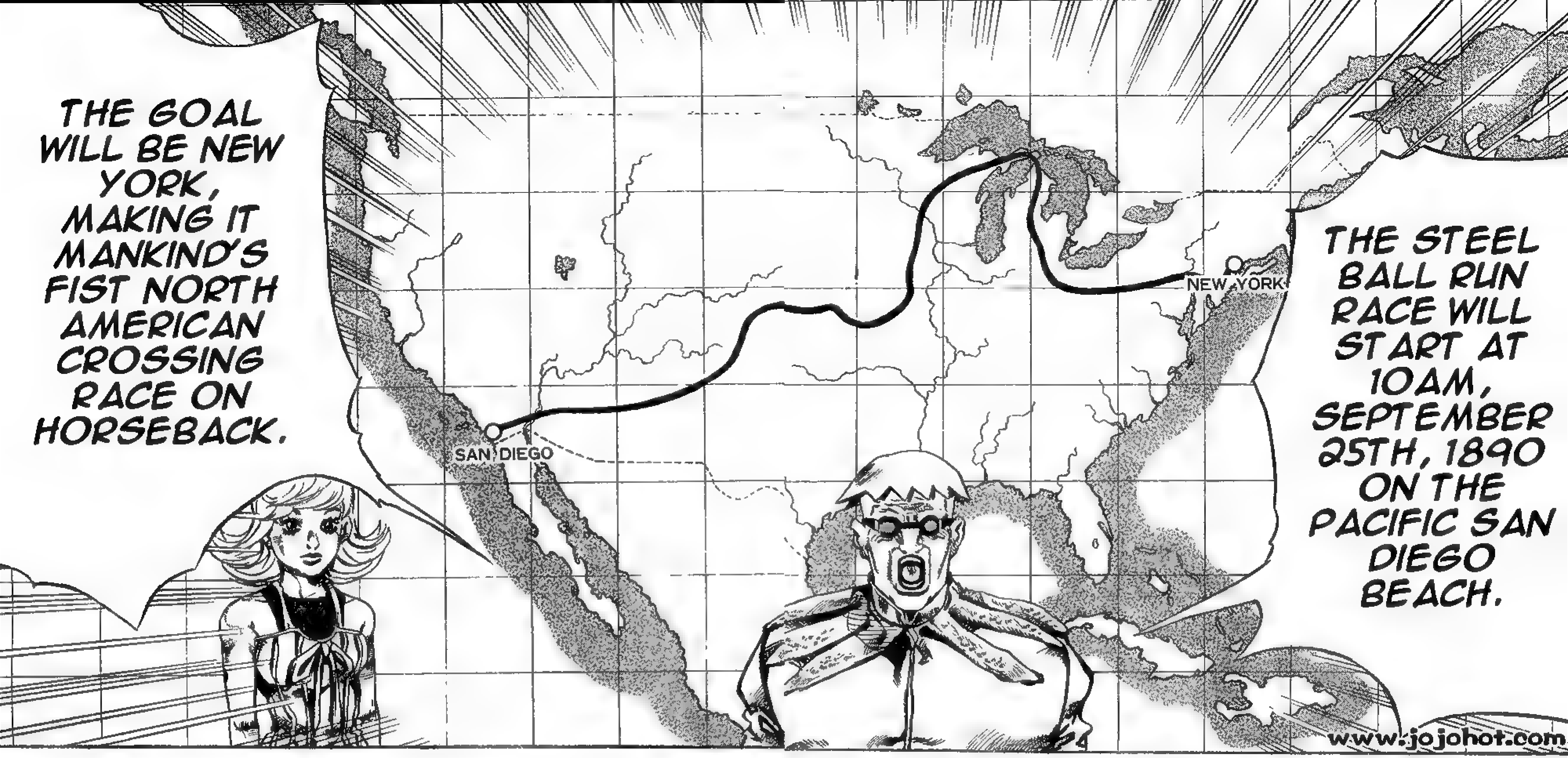
WE PREDICTED THERE WOULD BE 500 PARTICIPANTS IN THIS CONTEST.
ABOUT 2000 PEOPLE FROM ALL ACROSS AMERICA ARE GATHERING ON THIS BEACH... MORE WILL COME. THE NUMBER OF HORSES WILL BE THREEFOLD, AND MANY MORE SPECTATORS AND RELATED GUESTS WILL COME.
THERE ARE TWO DAYS BEFORE THE RACE STARTS.
WE SHOULD CELE-BRATE THIS...
BUT THERE IS A CHANCE THIS RACE MIGHT BE OVER BEFORE IT EVEN BEGINS.
www.jojohot.com
DAMN
ALL RIGHT!
YOU CAN ADD ANOTHER MILLION.
DO SOME-THING ABOUT IT! GO OVER THE BUDGET AND INCREASE OUR CAPACITY FOUR-FOLD.
......
AND TELL THOSE FOREIGN-ERS...
IF YOU HAVE TO EAT DOGS AND SHOW YOUR PRIVATES, TELL US WHY!
AND IF THEY DON'T QUIT IT, KICK THEM OUT!
IT MAY BE BECAUSE OF THEIR CULTURE OR RELIGION BUT SO WHAT?!
AS LONG AS THEY'RE ON THIS BEACH, I AM THE LAW!!!

www.jojohot.comv
www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

WAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!
WHAT-AMI-GONNA-DOOOOOO!!
I'M SO SCAAAAAARED!!
WHAT'S GONNA HAPPEN IF THIS GOES BAAAAAAAAD?! WHAT IF THIS RACE FALLS APART?!
IT'S ALL RIGHT STEVEN.
YOU'VE BEEN A PRO-MOTER FOR 40 YEARS.
BELIEVE IN YOUR-SELF... DO YOU BEST.
MY DEAR.
SOB
SOB
SOB

THERE THERE ...
OKAY. I'LL DO MY BEST.
www.jojohot.com
MR. STEVEN STEEL.
ABOUT THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE THAT BEGINS IN TWO DAYS...
YOU HAVE REPEATEDLY EXPLAINED THIS BEFORE, BUT PLEASE EXPLAIN IT TO THE NEWS READERS AROUND THE WORLD.
WE WILL THEN MOVE ON TO THE Q&A.
1890 STEEL BALL RUN
SAN DIEGO


THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE WILL START AT 10AM, SEPTEMBER 25TH, 1890 ON THE PACIFIC SAN DIEGO BEACH.
NEW YORK
SAN DIEGO
THE GOAL WILL BE NEW YORK, MAKING IT MANKIND'S FIST NORTH AMERICAN CROSSING RACE ON HORSEBACK.
www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com
THE DISTANCE IS ROUGHLY 6000KM.
FOLLOWING THIS ROUTE ...
THE CHAMPION WILL RECEVE $50,000,000 WHICH WILL BE DEPOSITED INTO THE NIDEVIDUAL'S EAST & WEST BANK ACCOUNT!
2ND PLACE $1,000,000 3RD PLACE $500,000 4TH PLACE $250,000 5TH PLACE $120,000 UP THROUGH 10TH PLACE, AND SPECIAL PRIZES, SUCH AS THE CHECKPOINT AWARD, WILL BE PRESENT.
READ THE RULEBOOK FOR MORE DETAILS.

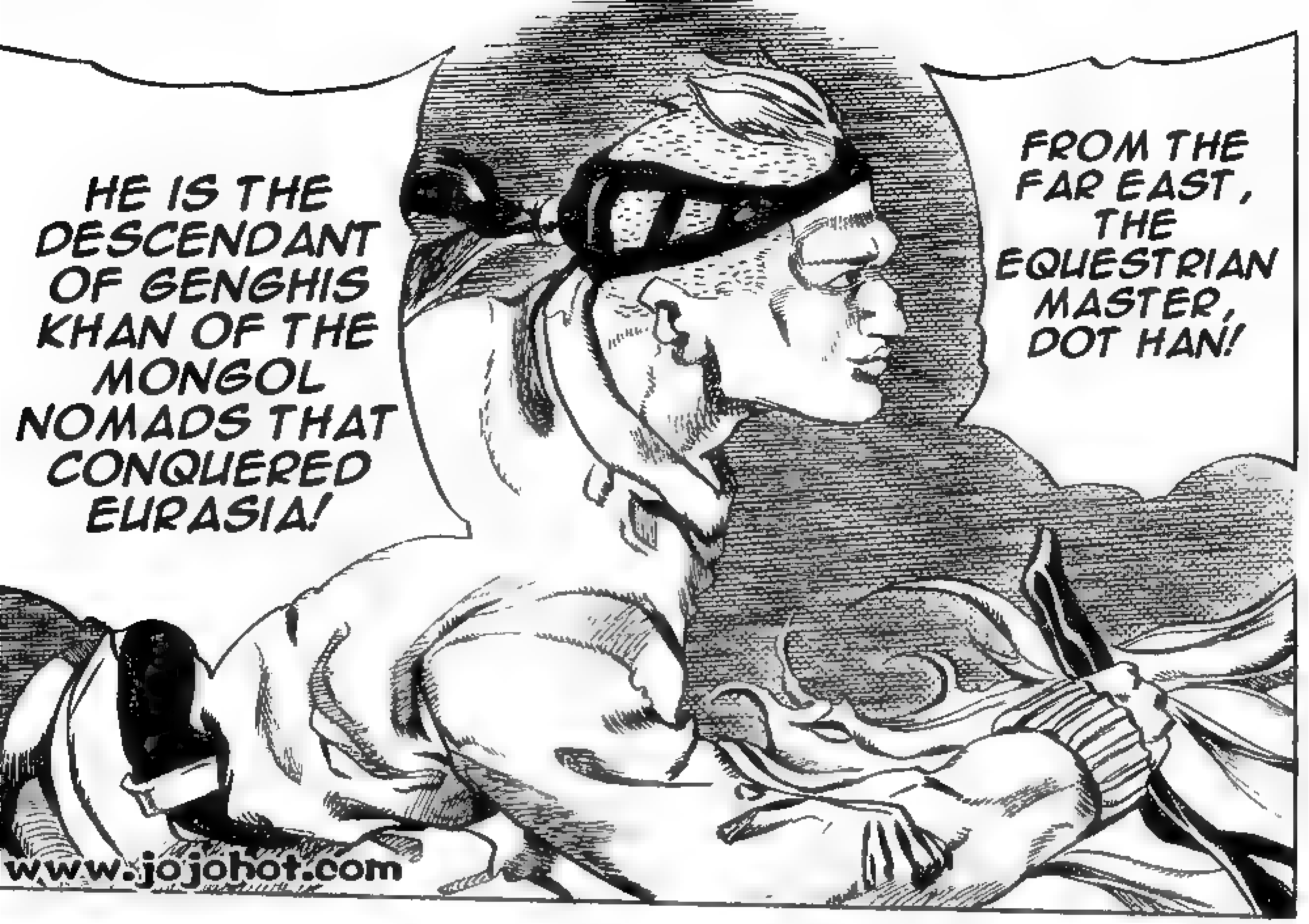
www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

THEN IT WOULD TAKE ROUGHLY 60 TO 80 DAYS TO REACH THE GOAL.
IS A HORSE'S RUNNING DISTANCE BEING 70KM TO 100KM PER DAY THE LIMIT?
IN THIS RACE, THE EXCHANGE OF HORSES IS PROHIBITED AND RESULTS IN A DIS-QUALIFICA-TION!
ALSO THE RACE GOES THROUGH PARTLY UNCHARTED TERRITORY... THAT MEANS GOING THROUGH WASTELAND WITHOUT ROADS.
LIKE I SAID BEFORE, WE CAN'T PREDICT THAT.
THERE WAS A RECORD OF QUARTERHORSES RUNNING A DISTANCE OF 3,164KM BETWEEN MISSOURI AND CALIFORNIA IN 12 DAYS, BUT THAT WAS A RELAY THAT USED 400 HORSES INSTAED OF ONE.
www.jojohot.com
BUT STILL, TAKING 60 TO 80 DAYS TO FINISH IS AN APPRO-PRIATE ESTIMATE.
ANY OTHER QUES-TIONS?
AND WAS A RECORD IN 1851 DURING THE CRIMEAN WAR WHERE AN ARABIAN HORSE RAN 150KM IN ONE DAY...
BUT THE RIDER DIED OF EXHAUS-TION.

THEIR TRAVEL EXPENSES, MEDICAL EXPENSES, HOTEL FEES, AND FOOD EXPENSES...
WE WILL SUPPLY ALL THAT.
IF THE PARTICIPANTS RETIRED DURING THE RACE HOW WOULD THEY GET BACK HOME?
I DON'T BELIEVE SO.
THERE ARE SOME COMPLAINTS ABOUT THE $1,200 ENTRY FEE BEING A MONEYMAKING RACKET.
$1,200 IS THE SAME AS A REGULAR WORKER'S MONTHLY SALARY!
HM ...
THIS RACE IS A SPORT.
WILL YOU BE ALLOWING WEAPONS?
www.jojohot.com
AS LONG AS IT'S NOT CONSIDERED "CRIMINAL BEHAVIOR", WE WON'T SAY ANYTHING ABOUT THAT.
LIKE THE 2ND AMENDMENT SAYS ABOUT THE RIGHT TO BEAR ARMS, WE CAN'T TAKE THAT AWAY WITH OUR RULES.
THE ANSWER IS YES! SECURITY DURING THE RACE SHOULD BE PROVIDED BY YOURSELF.
ONE MIGHT HAVE TO SPEND THE NIGHT IN UNDEVELOPED TERRITORY. THERE'S POISONOUS SNAKES AND OTHER WILD ANIMALS.

www.jojohot.com


FROM THE FAR EAST, THE EQUESTRIAN MASTER, DOT HAN!
HE IS THE DESCENDANT OF GENGHIS KHAN OF THE MONGOL NOMADS THAT CONQUERED EURASIA!
www.jojohot.com

DEIGO BRANDO, COMMONLY KNOWN AS DIO!
AND DESPITE HAVING ORIGINS FROM THE LOW SOCIAL RANKS OF ENGLAND, HE WAS RAISED BY ROYALTY AND BECAME A GENIUS JOCKEY OF THE HORSE RACING WORLD.
WILL HIS GENIUS ON THE TRACKS WORK IN LONG DISTANCE...?

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com
ドドドドン
WHEN THE $1,200 ENTRY FEE IS PAID, THERE WILL BE NO REFUNDS DUE TO PERSONAL REASONS.
THE START OF THE RACE TWO DAYS LATER WILL BE HELD RAIN OR SHINE OR REGARDLESS OF ACCIDENTS.
PLEASE SIGN HERE TO ACKNOWL-EDGE THE RULES.
WE WILL RECORD THE RIDERS' FINGERPRINTS AND HORSES' NOSEPRINTS ON THE STARTING DAY.
ONCE RECORDED, EXCHANGE OF RIDERS OR HORSES IS STRICTLY FORBIDDEN, SO BE CAREFUL.
THIS IS YOUR PLAYER IDENTIFI-CATION AND NUMBER , B-636. ALSO INCLUDED IS THE RACE COMMEMMORA-TION MEDAL AND BADGE.
B-636

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

www.jojohot.com

OHHHH...
WHAT THE...
LEGS... MY LEGS...
WHAT THE HELL?! I WAS JUST MAKING SMALL TALK!!!
I WAS JUST CURIOUS... WHY ARE YOU PUTTING THESE ROUND THINGS IN YOUR GUN BELT?!
www.jojohot.com
IS THAT SO?

www.jojohot.com

开始转动!!开始奔跑!!
乘载着一群奇人怪人的竞赛开始乐舞!!
到底…这个男人是!?
GIVE ME THE COINS YOU SWIPED FROM ME! IF I'M $20 SHORT...
I WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO ENTER THE RACE, WOULD I? NYO-HO.
HO.
I WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO ENTER THE RACE... AND WIN IT, WOULD I!?
STEEL.BAL
www.jojohot.com
热情汉化简体版
扫图:Ryu
翻译:neophoenix反重H
修图:戒指
JOJO

## <About Numerical Values and Notation>

As you know, the unit for length is feet and inches in America. And since distance is also measured in miles, rods and yards, it's hard for us Japanese to to get a feel for it in an instant. Thus, in Steel Ball Run, all units of measure are in metric

for the Japanese readers to easily understand, and weight is shown in kilograms instead of pounds and ounces.money is shown in dollars, but it's monetary value is shown in modern standards. the reason for this is that payment for a full day's work in the 1890's could have been one dollar, thus we wouldn't be sure if $10,000 is alot of money or not. therefore $50,000,000 is about 6,000,000,000 yen in modern Japan.

#2 Gyro Zeppeli
WHAT ARE YOU DOING, POCOLOCO?
I'M COUNTING.
COUNTING THE CLOUDS IN THE SKY...

#2 Gyro Zeppeli

I WANTED TO DO THIS BEFORE...
I WANTED TO SEE HOW MANY CLOUDS I COULD COUNT IN ONE DAY .
I'M ASKING YOU.
WHY ARE YOU LYING ON YOUR ASS ALL DAY AND NOT WORKING?!
YOU KNOW A THING CALLED "TENCHU-SATSU"... OLD MAN?
......
I'LL SAY IT AGAIN! "TENCHU-SATSU".
I WENT DOWN TO THE CITY.
THREE DAYS AGO...
I LOST AT GAMBLING, SO I ASKED A GYPSY LADY TO TELL ME MY FORTUNE.
I SHOULD'VE DONE THAT *BEFORE* I LOST
THE LOWEST POINT IN YOUR LONG LIFE IS CALLED "TENCHU-SATSU".

STARTING NEXT MONTH, I'M GOINT TO BE AT THE HAPPIEST POINT IN MY LIFE FOR TWO MONTHS!!! HEE HEE!
BUT LISTEN.
I'M THE OPPOSITE!!! "THE OPPOSITE OF WORST"!!!
YOU MEAN THAT DIRTY OLD HAG THAT SITS AROUND IN THE STREET ONLY IN THE SUMMER?
SO WHATEVER I DO, IT'S ALL GOOD FOR THOSE TWO MONTHS! GYA KEE KEE KEE KEE!!!
THEN I'LL TELL YOU SOMETHING LUCKY.
YEAH ....
YOU SEE THAT FOREST...? THE LANDLORD GAVE US A JOB TO PLOW A NEW FIELD OVER THERE.
SO I'M PLANNING TO ENJOY THAT.
HAPPY

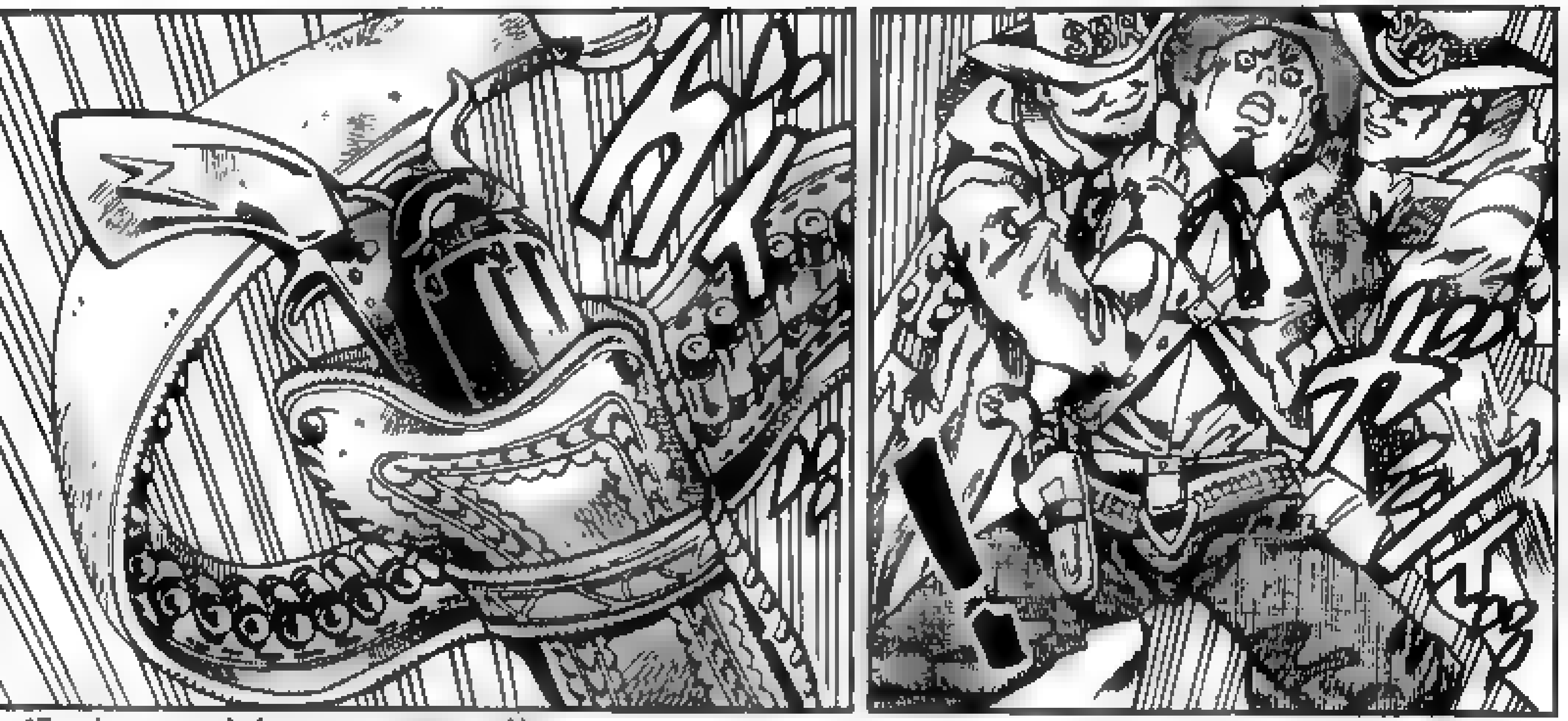
NO WAY, MAN.
THAT'S SWAMP-LAND.
FROM NOW ON I'M GOING TO LIVE THE EASY LIFE.
WHY DON'T YOU DO IT?
PEOPLE LIKE ME AND YOUR DEAD FATHER...
WERE FREED FROM SLAVERY 20 YEARS AGO.
BUT LIFE HASN'T CHANGED ONE BIT.
WE WILL NEVER LIVE THE EASY LIFE.
THE LANDLORD SAID TO DO IT IN ONE MONTH.
I THOUGHT YOU COULD HANDLE THE JOB.
HEY... I THINK YOU SHOULD LOOSEN THE BELT ON THAT HORSE ONE NOTCH.
THAT MARE IS PREGNANT. 'BOUT FOUR TO FIVE MONTHS...

?
TCH!
*YAWN* I'VE LOST COUNT OF THE CLOUDS.
WHICH ONE WAS THE 48TH...
I'LL JUST START OVER.
I EVEN TALKED IT OVER WITH THE LANDLORD TO RAISE OUR PLOWING PAY FROM 1,000 TO 1,200 BUCKS TOO.

"STEEL BALL RUN"
$50,000
Participation Fee:
$1,200 per person
OLD MAN...
THAT PAY FOR THE NEW FARM...
HOW MUCH DID YOU SAY IT WAS?

チャリィィ

HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
ドドドド
ドドドド
ドドドド



*Translator's note: In Japan, some salesmen address the recipt that way

SO WHICH TENT WILL I BE IN... UNTIL THE START OF THE RACE IN TWO DAYS?
バァァァ
IT'S NOT OVER, MAN!!!
TURN AROUND! YOU THINK YOU'RE SO BIG OVER $20?!
IS THAT YOUR WEAPON?!
THAT DIRTY, ROUND THING BY YOUR SIDE IS YOUR WEAPON?!
WEEEELL? GO AHEAD AND DO IT!
JUST KILL ME WITH THAT THING!
HEY, SHUT UP! JUST SHUT UP AND WAIT FOR THE SHERIFF!

AH!
HA!!! YOU'RE DEAD!!!

DAMN !!!
HE GOT MY GUN!
HYA HAHA HAHA HAHA HAHA HAHA HAA!!
AASH, WHY YOU...
IF I FELT LIKE IT, HYAHA HAHA...
YOU'D BE DEAD NOW!
YOU'RE PERCEPTIVE... BUT SUCH AN EASY KILL!
YOU DIDN'T CATCH ME! RIGHT WHEN I TOOK YOUR CASH FROM YOU!
YOU LISTEN-ING TO ME , YOU BASTARD ?!
I'M GONNA ENTER THE RACE!
I'M GONNA STALK YOU AND BLOCK YOU THE WHOLE WAY THROUGH!
STOP IT! JUST SHUT UP YOU THIEF!
I'M FASTER THAN YOU!
I WON'T SETTLE IT LIKE THIS.
YOU HUMILIATED ME... I'M GONNA STALK YOU DOWN...

KE KE!
I'M SERIOUSLY THINKING ABOUT ANNOYING YOU FROM THE BOTTOM OF MY SOUL!
IF YOU'RE DONE TALKING.
GIVE HIM BACK THE GUN.
?
EH?
.........
.........
SBR
SBR
SBR

I'M NOT GOING TO CHARGE HIM.
I'LL FORGET ABOUT IT...
LET HIM GO.
AND GIVE HIM BACK THE GUN.
..........
..........

PICK IT UP.
IF YOU DO, THAT'LL BE THE "SIGN"...
BUT ...
IF YOU'RE REALLY GOING TO BOTHER ME...
WHAT IS IT? WHAT'S ALL THE NOISE?
DAMN IT! THIS IS REAL BAD!
LET ME THROUGH! WHERE'S THE SHERIFF? GET HIM OVER HERE QUICK!
YOU GUYS! WHAT IS IT! MOVE!
I CAN'T SEE IN FRONT OF ME!
MOVE IT! DAMN, I CAN'T SEE! JERKS!

OVER THERE, SHERIFF.
LET HIM THROUGH !!!
NO FIGHTS ARE ALLOWED ON THIS BEACH!
IT'S JUST A JOKE ...
HEY.
YEAH!
YOU SERIOUS ABOUT THIS?
YOU TWO!
WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE?
I'M JUST A PICK-POCKET..
GOOD LUCK... WITH THE RACE I MEAN...
I'M GETTING SCARED BY YOUR FACE EVERYTHING I SAID WAS JUST A JOKE...
HEE HEE

UGEE!
AH!!
!!
AH!!

UGOOOOOOOOO!
AAAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAA

AGH
AH
AH

NOO OOO OOO
OO OO
LET GO OF THAT GUN... AND SEE A DOCTOR.
BEFORE LUNCH...
I'M NOT A NICE GUY.

YOU BASTARD !!!
SAN DIEGO
NY

YAAAAAAAAAAA!!!

WE SHOULD ...!!!
SHERIFF !!!
NO.
YOU SAW THAT! WHAT DID HE DO?!
HE THREW THAT STEEL BALL IN HIS BELT AT THAT GUNMAN'S ARM.
THEN IT ACCIDENTALLY BOUNCED BACK.
THERE'S NO PROBLEM. IT WAS JUST A DUEL.
NO LAWS WERE BROKEN... LET HIM GO.
THE DUEL WAS FAIR ON BOTH SIDES.
HEY YOU!
WHAT'S WITH THAT STEEL BALL?
MOVE !!!
I TOLD YOU GUYS TO MOVE! LET ME THROUGH!
THAT'S WRONG ...
THAT'S NOT WHAT HAPPENED! ... THAT STEEL BALL WAS SPINNING... AT A HIGH SPEED! AND IT WAS STILL SPINNING WHEN IT HIT THE GUY'S ARM!
AH! WHY YOU..!
N... NO...

LET ME SEE IT ONE MORE TIME!
HEY, DON'T TOUCH IT! IT'S STILL SPIN-NING!

...AFTER MEETING WITH THAT MAN, GYRO ZEPPELI, WHO WAS FULL OF MYSTERY FROM BEGINNING TO END...
MY NAME IS JOHNNY JOESTAR.
NOT IN THE PHYSICAL SENSE... BUT FROM AN ADOLESCENCE TO ADULTHOOD SORT OF WAY...
THIS "STORY" IS THE TALE OF ME STARTING TO WALK.

# #3 JOHNNY·JOESTAR

DID I SIMPLY WANT TO SEE THE BEGINNING OF THE RACE LIKE THE OTHER SPECTATORS ?
WHEN I LOOK BACK...
FOR WHAT REASON DID I COME TO THIS BEACH?
OR WAS IT THE NOSTALGIA FOR THE HORSES THAT WERE WITH ME SINCE I WAS YOUNG?
I WAS DRAWN TO THE BEACH BY SOME-THING.
PEOPLE ARE DRAWN TO BEAUTY...
IT'S BETTER WHEN IT'S SHINY AND NEW.

MY NAME IS JOHNNY "JOE KID" JOESTAR
I WAS FIVE WHEN I FIRST RODE A HORSE.
AND IF IT'S RUNNING, THAT'S THE MOST BEAUTIFUL THING IN THE WORLD.
MY FATHER ...
HE SAW ME DOING THIS AND THOUGHT:
MY SON'S A HORSE RIDING GENIUS.
AND I BELIEVED THAT TOO.
FROM THE SADDLE, I SAW THE MUSCLES MOVE.
I BELIEVED I KNEW WHAT THE HORSE WAS THINKING AND FEELING FROM THE WAY IT RAN.
AND I THOUGHT THE SOUND OF THE HOOVES KICKING THE GROUND WAS BEAUTIFUL.

WHEN ON HORSE-BACK, I GOT EVERY-THING I WANTED
EVERYONE FLATTERED ME FROM BELOW... AND BROUGHT ME RICHES.
THEY CALLED ME "JOJO" OR "JOE KID".
POLITI-CIANS AND ROYALTY FROM AROUND THE WORLD CAME.
THE TIME I WON THE KENTUCKY DERBY WHEN I WAS 16 WAS THE GREATEST.
ONE TIME I WENT TO A MILLIONAIRE'S HOME.
THE GUY'S DAUGHTER AND HER FRIEND STARTED TAKING THEIR CLOTHES OFF WITHOUT ME SAYING A WORD.
MY PARENTS AREN'T GOING TO BE HOME TONIGHT.
IS WHAT THEY SAID.
WHAT WOULD YOU DO ? IT WAS THE BEST.

EVERY-ONE CALLED ME ROOKIE.
AND WHEN I FELT LIKE IT, I COULD RACE MY HORSE FASTER THAN ANYONE ELSE.
TO WIN ON HORSEBACK WAS A SYMBOL OF VICTORY AND POWER IN THE HISTORY OF MANKIND.
WILD HORSE
UGH
HEY THE LINE'S WRAPPED AROUND THE CORNER AND STRETCHES TO THE ROAD OVER THERE
LET'S COME BACK SOME OTHER DAY
WHAAAAAAAAT?!
THERE ARE SO MANY PEOPLE . WE CAN'T GET IN! NOT TODAY!

DOROTHY PARKER
WILD
BUT I WANNA SEE IT!
I WANNA SEE IT NOW!
IT'S A POPULAR PLAY. THERE'S A CUTE ACTRESS NAMED DOROTHY PARKER IN IT.
TCH. BUT IS IT WORTH STANDING IN LINE?
IT'S GONNA BE AN ERA WHERE BEAUTIFUL ACTRESSES BECOME WORKS OF ART.
WHY DO WE HAVE TO STAND IN LINE?! YOU'RE JOHNNY JOESTAR.
YOU'RE FAMOUS, RIGHT?
IS THAT SPOT OPEN?
EH? YOU THINK SO?
LET'S SAY IT'S OPEN.
MAYBE IT IS OPEN.

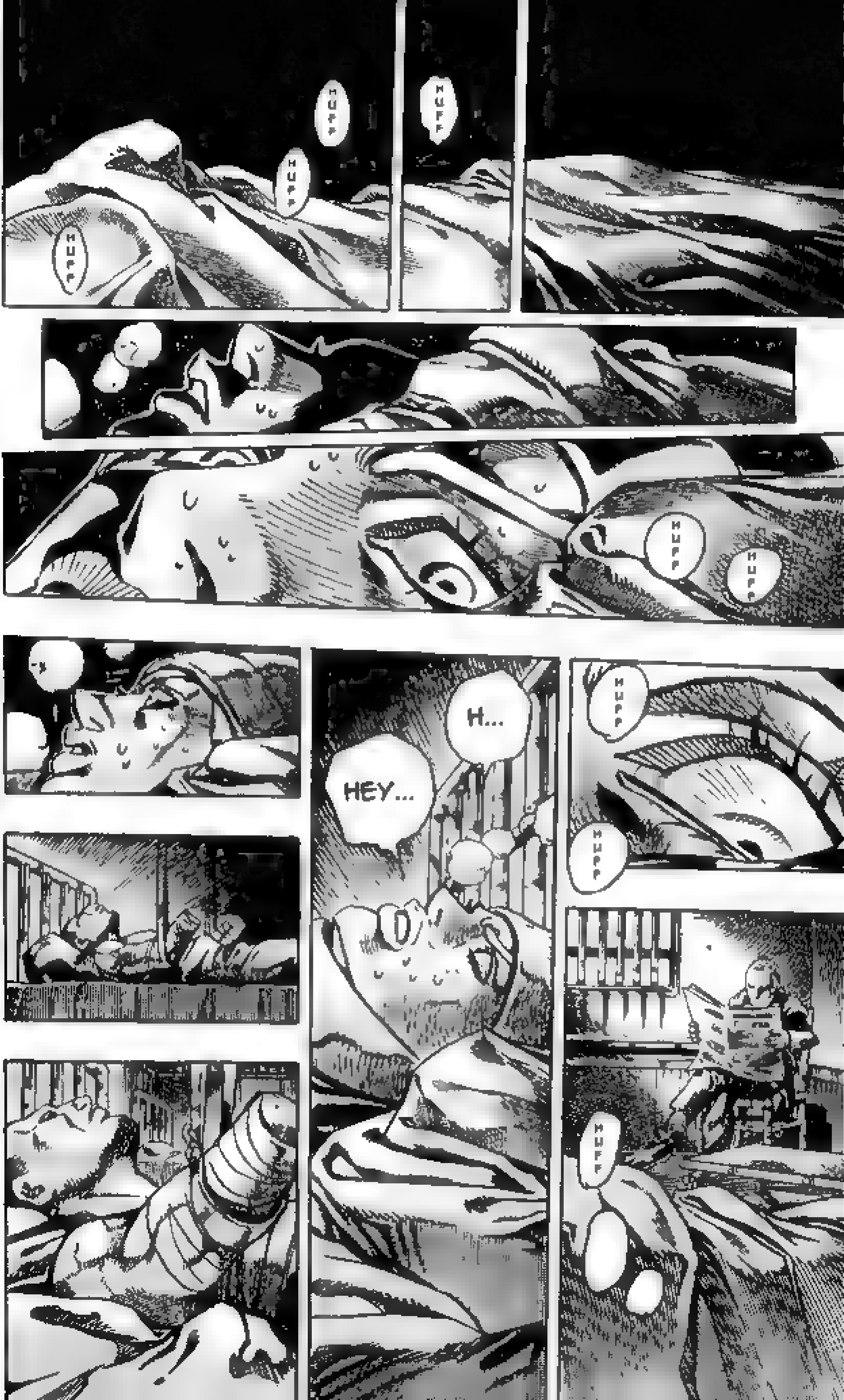
THE FRONT ...
OF THE LINE...
IS... UH...
IT STARTS ...
UH
UH...
I SEE...
.....
RIGHT HERE, YOU KNOW...

WELL, TAKE CARE.
I SEE... GOOD FOR YOU...
OOOOOH
I...
I'VE BEEN ...
STANDING IN LINE... UH...
SINCE LAST NIGHT...
NOW YOU LISTEN ..
I "BOUGHT" THIS SPOT! YOU WANT TO ASK SOMEONE?! ASK THE GUYS AT THE THEATER!
YEAH YEAH!
THAT'S ENOUGH !!!
SHUT UP!!!
THE BACK OF THE LINE ...
IS...
IS OVER THERE ...
I WAS STAND-ING IN LINE! THROUGH THE NIGHT ...!
HEY, YOU! I DID BUY THIS SPOT, DIDN'T I?!
THIS GUY LOOKS LIKE HE WANTS TO START SOME-THING! CAN YOU THROW HIM OUT?!

HEE HEE!
IT'S ABOUT TO OPEN.
HEY, HOW LONG UNTIL IT STARTS?
UH UH
YOU'RE A PER-SISTENT BUGGER AREN'T YOU!
WHAAAAAAAT?! YOU AGAIN?!

WHAT'S THAT?

WHAT THE HELL DID YOU DO?!
KYAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!!



HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HEY...
H...
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF

N...
NURSE ...
WHY AREN'T YOU ANSWERING ..?
IT... IT STINKS IN HERE... IT REEKS...
IT'S .. IT'S ME...
I SAID IT REEKS IN HERE...
CAN'T YOU HEAR ME?!
I'M...
I'M SOILING .. MYSELF..
DAMMIT!!!

HEY
HEY!!! I'M CALLING YOU, NURSE!!!
TAKE CARE OF THIS IMMEDIATELY!!!
DO YOUR JOB!!!
HUH ?!
WHAT THE ? THERE'S SOMETHING STUCK TO MY LEG.
WHAT IS THAT?

EH?
OOF
YOU'RE GOING TO WAKE UP THE OTHER PATIENTS.
SHUT THE HELL UP, MR. GENIUS JOCKEY.
MFF

DONATING BLOOD IS A GOOD PART-TIME JOB.
I'M JUST TAKING A LITTLE BLOOD FROM YOUR FOOT.
GAH
NGH
YOU DON'T MIND, DO YOU? BESIDES, YOU CAN'T FEEL ANYTHING BELOW THE WAIST.
Y... YOU...
UGH
GUH
YOU GONNA TELL SOMEONE? WHO?
YOUR FATHER, WHO HASN'T VISITED SINCE YOU CHECKED IN?
WHAT ABOUT YOUR POLITICIAN AND ROYALTY FRIENDS?
IF YOU INJURED YOURSELF DURING A RACE MAYBE, BUT A FORMER GENIUS JOCKEY WHO BECAME PARALYZED FROM THE WAIST DOWN BECAUSE HE WAS MESSING AROUND WITH SOME GIRL...

YOUR WOMAN IS PROBABLY BEING FRIENDLY WITH ANOTHER GUY RIGHT NOW!!!
MF !
MF !
NOBODY FEELS SORRY FOR YOU! EVEN VISTING THIS PLACE IS A BURDEN FOR THEM!
NOBODY WANTS TO SEE YOUR FACE ANYMORE !!!
STEEL BA
RUN RAC
PROJECTED START IN TWO YEARS
OOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

OOOOO
OOOOO
OOOOO
OOOOO
ド
ド
ドド
ドドド
ドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドド
ドドドド

SFX: HEARTBEATS
BUMP
BA
BUMP
BUMP
BA
BA
BUMP

BASUMP
BASUMP
BASUMP
BASUMP
BASUMP
WHAT ..?!
JUST NOW ..
BUT .. THEY WON'T MOVE .. THEY CAN'T .
MY LEGS
THE STEEL BALL
I JUST TOUCHED IT... THAT MAN'S...
WHAT JUST HAPPENED?! ...NO, BUT... JUST NOW... IT REALLY ..
!!
DID THEY REALLY MOVE...?

I NEED TO KNOW! WHAT DID YOU JUST DO TO ME?!
W... WAIT !!!
YOU !!!
!!
LET ME THROUGH! YOU SLOW-POKES!!!
M... MOVE IT!!! YOU'RE IN THE WAY! DAMMIT !!!
TWO YEARS HAD PASSED SINCE THAT DAY...
IF THAT ACCIDENT DIDN'T HAPPEN... I DIDN'T EVEN WANT TO SEE THAT PLAY...

WHAT THE HELL DID YOU SAY?!
W... WAIT!
I NEED TO KNOW! TELL ME!
I NEED TO KNOW WHAT JUST HAPPENED TO ME!
MY LEGS.. THAT NEVER MOVED A MILLI- METER..
SHAD- DAP !!!
DO YOU KNOW THE LEADING CAUSES OF DEATH?
THE FIRST IS SICKNESS CARRIED BY MOSQUITOES. BEING KILLED BY A HORSE KICK IS AFTER THAT.
DO YOU PLAN ON CHANGING THE RANKING?
THE PUBLIC TOLD ME TO GIVE UP...
WITH WORDS ... OR WITH SILENCE ...
WHO IS THIS MAN...? WHY IS HE ON THIS BEACH?

DON'T GET ANY FOOLISH EXPECTATIONS.
I DON'T KNOW YOUR SITUATION ...
BUT YOU STANDING UP FROM THAT CHAIR WAS JUST A COINCI- DENCE.
IT WAS JUST A BODY REFLEX...
AND NOTHING MORE.
REFLEX MY ASS! THAT WAS THE CAUSE AFTER ALL!!!
THAT "STEEL BALL"... IT WAS SPINNING ...
DO YOU THINK I COULD DO THAT AGAIN ...?!
JUST ONE MORE TIME!
I'LL PAY YOU!
JUST SHOW ME ONE MORE TIME!
I'M DONE TALKING.

HEY
KID
THEN I'LL TOUCH IT AGAIN MYSELF!!!
EH.......

FWIP

AH !!!

MY FINGERS...
WHY AM I GRABBING THE RAFTER?
BEFORE I KNOCK YOU AND MAKE YOU FEEL BAD, I'LL COMPLIMENT YOU.
YOU DO HAVE VERY STRONG MUSCLES.
AT LEAST YOUR UPPER BODY DOES.
AND I'LL SAY THIS CLEARLY. THIS "SPINNING STEEL" IS DEFINITELY MY WEAPON.
BUT IT WON'T MAKE PEOPLE LIKE YOU WALK AGAIN.
HOW COULD I BELIEVE THAT AFTER ALL THAT HAPPENED?!
I'LL FIND OUT!!! I'LL FIGURE OUT THE TRUTH OF THAT "SPIN"!!!
YOU CAN'T EVEN GET ON A HORSE...
THE "STEEL BALL RUN" IS ABOUT TO BEGIN
I WON'T STAY ON THIS BEACH, SINCE I'LL BE CROSSING THE CONTINENT

ARG
THE SUMMER OF 1890.
THE ONLY THING I COULD SAY
NGH
A "BEAUTY" WITHIN THE DARKNESS
I WAS DRAWN TO SOME-THING ON THIS BEACH
WAS THERE WAS A "BEAUTY" THAT EXISTED ON THIS BEACH
I'LL GET ON A HORSE AGAIN... AND I *WILL* RACE...
DAMMIT ...
I'LL GET ON ALL RIGHT...
WILL THERE BE A LIGHT CALLED HOPE HERE...?

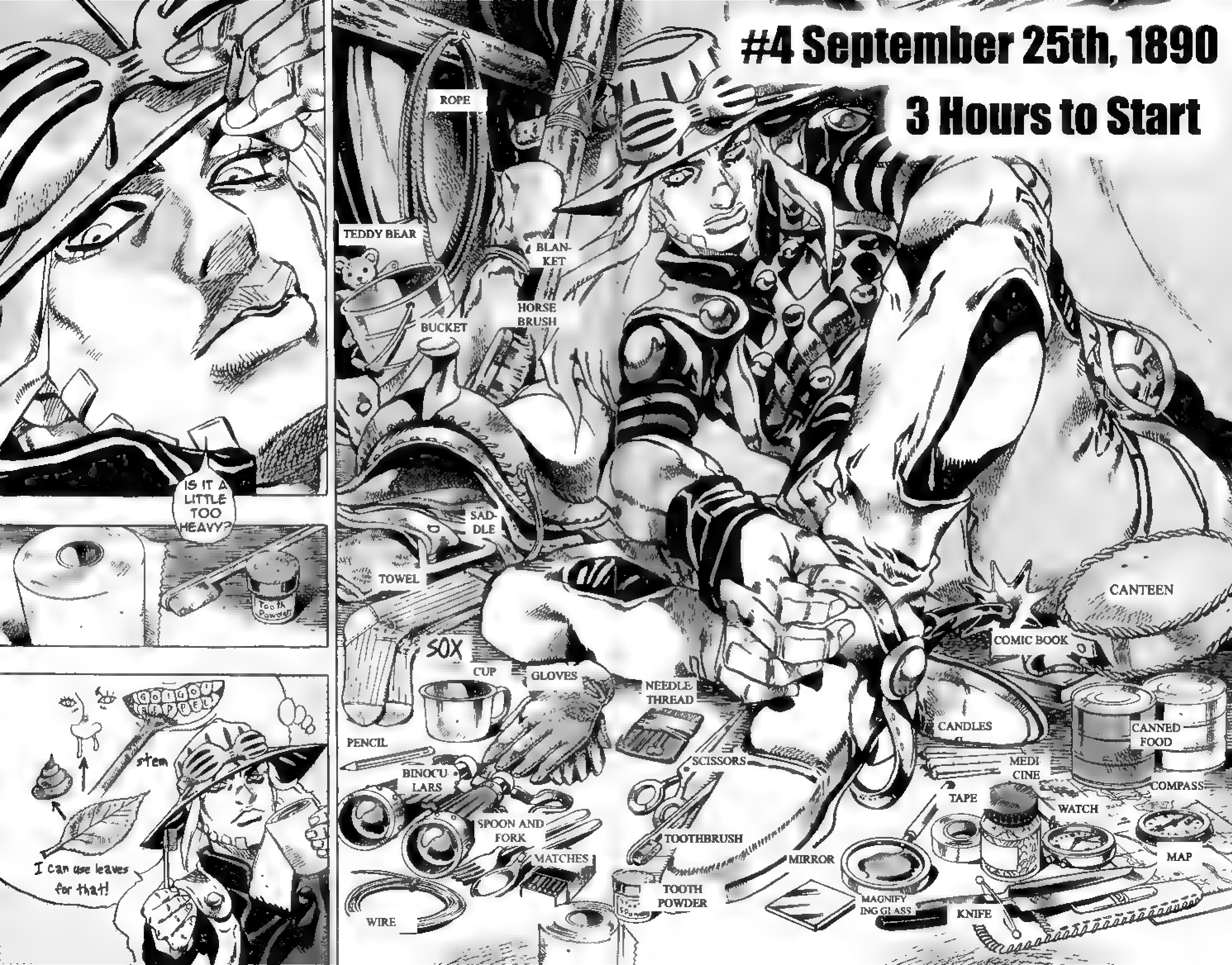
**Message from the editor:**

**You've probably been wondering what the hell happened to me and this project. While I would like it to be a valid excuse like school-work, it's actually BECAUSE of school I took this up again. That and the fact that not more than 6 hours ago (5:50am 10/20/04 at the time of this writing) the Boston Red Sox handed the New York Yankees the single most devestating playoff defeat in all of baseball history. So I'm in a good mood. But the real reason I stopped editing is because it just wasn't fun anymore. I kept receiving complaints about the quality from "pro scanners" and others who wanted HQ scans. So I attempted to do a high quality job from then on. However I quickly realized that "high quality" means "sitting in front of a scanner for 4 hours". That was unacceptable. You can see my attempt at HQ in the first 10 or so pages of this chapter. It was today that I decided that the BoSox had it right all along. If you don't like my scans, *fuck you* Yankee.**

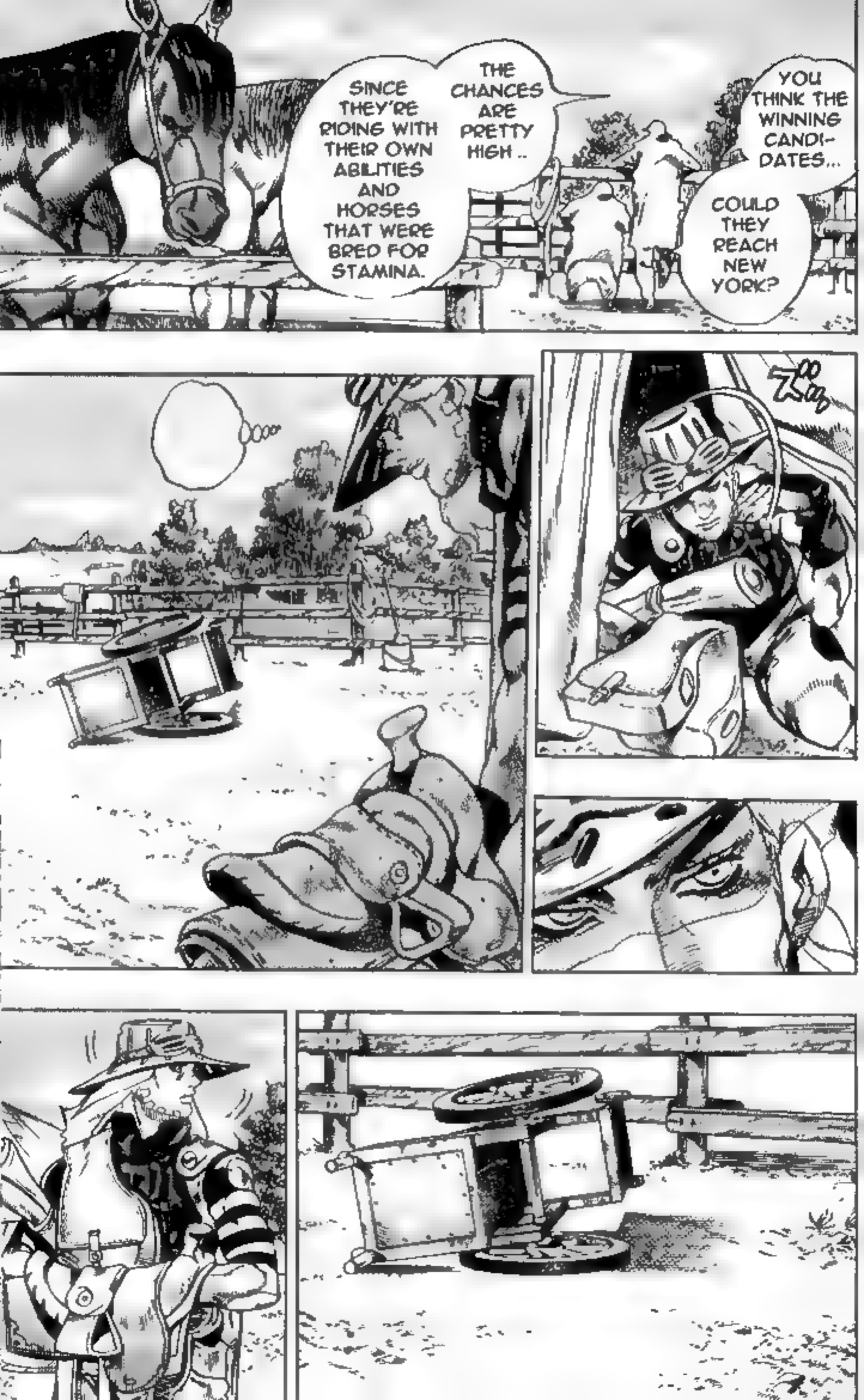
**Veggie**

**PS: GO METS.**

Early Morning,
September 25th, 1890
7:06 A.M.
The Steel Ball Run Race
starts in 3 hours.
“San Diego West Beach”
LOOKS LIKE THERE ARE MORE THAN 3,500.
3,500 WHAT?
THE NUMBER OF PARTICI-PANTS.
MORE THAN 3,500 PEOPLE. 7 OR 8 TIMES MORE THAN THE EXPECTED AMOUNT.
WHOA! YOU THINK ALL THOSE PEOPLE WILL HAVE A FAIR START?
THE START AT LEAST.
THAT'S WHY THEY PICKED THE BEACH...
I PREDICT THAT MORE THAN HALF THE PEOPLE WILL DROP OUT IN THE FIRST WEEK.
NO, MAYBE MORE THAN TWO-THIRDS
BUT ...
THIS RACE ISN'T A SPORT. IT'S SUR-VIVAL.


#4 September 25th, 1890
3 Hours to Start
ROPE
TEDDY BEAR
BLAN-KET
HORSE BRUSH
BUCKET
SAD-DLE
TOWEL
CANTEEN
COMIC BOOK
SOX
CUP
GLOVES
NEEDLE THREAD
CANDLES
CANNED FOOD
PENCIL
SCISSORS
MEDI CINE
COMPASS
BINOCU LARS
TAPE
WATCH
SPOON AND FORK
TOOTHBRUSH
MATCHES
MIRROR
MAP
TOOTH POWDER
MAGNIFY ING GLASS
KNIFE
WIRE
IS IT A LITTLE TOO HEAVY?
Tooth Powder
stem
I can use leaves for that!

INK
NYO !!!
I can use the knife
WHEN THEY PASS ...
THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS, THERE'LL BE LESS THAN ONE-TENTH.
MAYBE TWO, THREE HUNDRED WILL BE LEFT.


YOU THINK THE WINNING CANDI-DATES...
COULD THEY REACH NEW YORK?
THE CHANCES ARE PRETTY HIGH..
SINCE THEY'RE RIDING WITH THEIR OWN ABILITIES AND HORSES THAT WERE BRED FOR STAMINA.

...THE HORSE HE'S GRABBING ON TO, IS THAT A...
HEY LOOK, IT'S HIM..
THE GUY WHO WAS A FAMOUS JOCKEY HE'S STILL GOING AT IT?
HE'S PLANNING TO ENTER THE RACE IN THAT CONDITION
AFTER GETTING OFF THAT WHEEL-CHAIR, ALL DAY YESTERDAY AND ALL THROUGH THE NIGHT?
I FEEL SORRY FOR HIM.
GYA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA HA
HEY HEY!

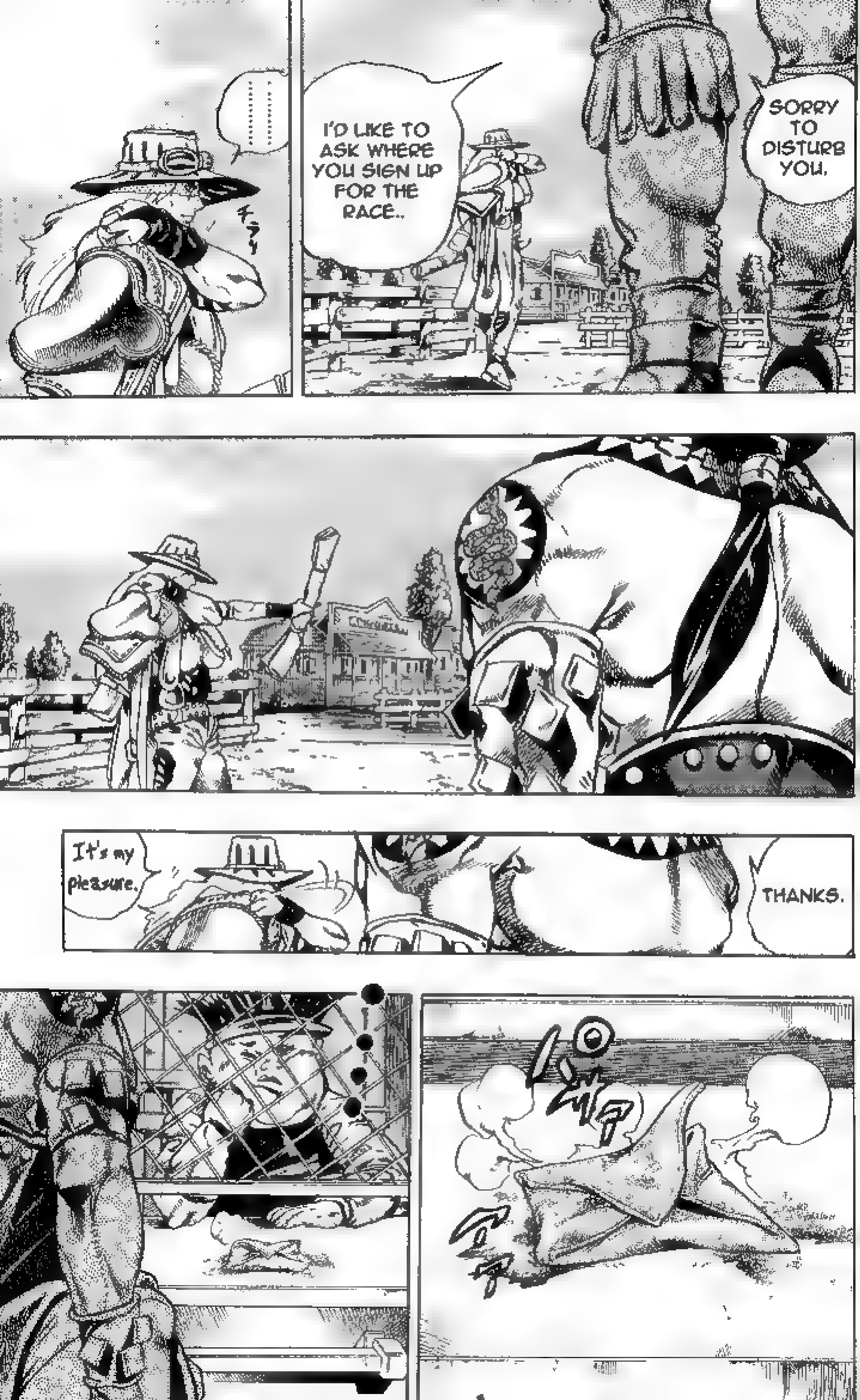
SOME-BODY STOP HIM!
I DON'T KNOW IF HE'S DREAMING OF HIS FORMER GLORY.
BUT HE'LL GET HURT!
YOU DIDN'T KNOW?
"HE'LL GET HURT"... HE WAS ALREADY HURT LAST NIGHT.
LOOK AT HIS FEET.
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

Ed's note: A "dobbin" is a slow plowhorse, considered useless.

HAH
HAH
EVEN IF HE COULD GET ON THAT HORSE AGAIN, I'M NOT SURE HE COULD GET IT TO GO EAST.
BUT THEN AGAIN, LET HIM DO WHAT HE WANTS!
"IMPOSSIBLE GLORY"....
EVERY-ONE WHO CAME HERE IS LIKE THAT.
I CAN'T WATCH ANYMORE! WE NEED TO STOP HIM!
HEY, DON'T YOU THINK SO TOO?
HEY!!! HE'LL BE TRAM-PLED TO DEATH!!!
ARG!!!

ARE YOU ASKING FOR MY OPINION?
I WAS JUST LOOKING, SINCE HE WAS IN MY SIGHT.
BUT IF I WERE TO SAY SOMETHING ABOUT THIS...
HE'LL NEVER RIDE IT... NOT LIKE THAT.

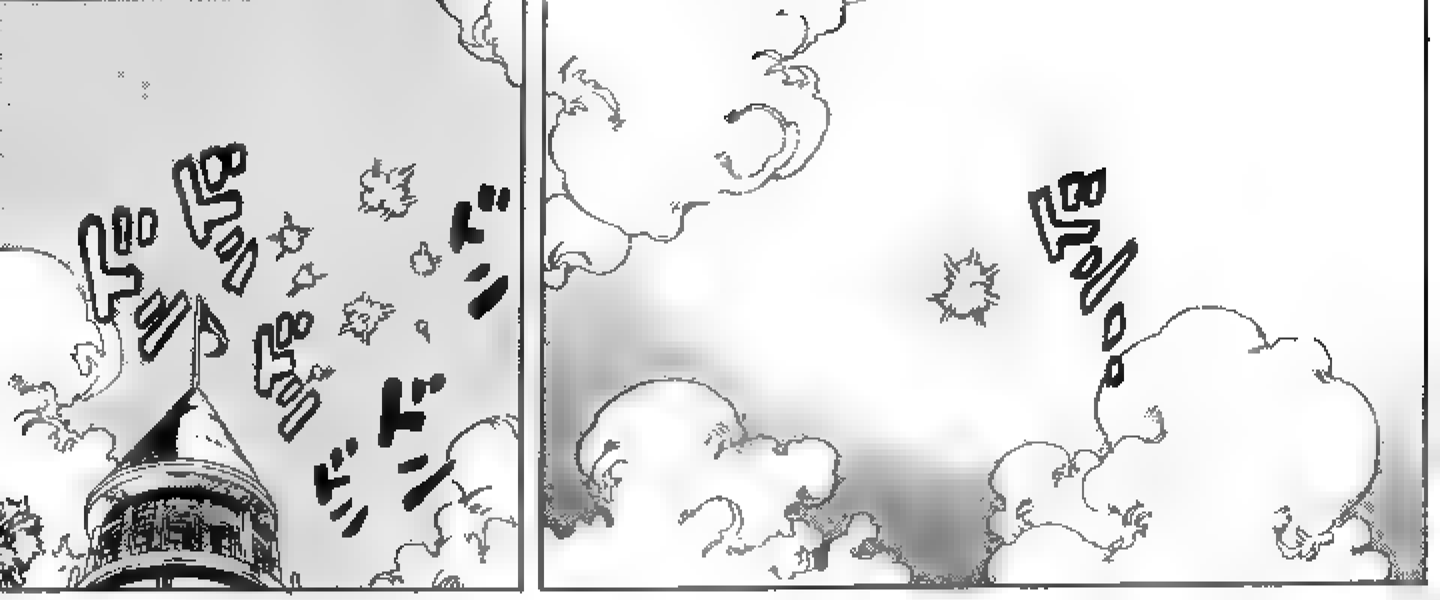
IF HE COULD RIDE IT, HE'LL GO BEYOND HUMAN.
BUT ON THE OTHER HAND...
HAHHAH
HAH
HAH
HAH


SORRY TO DISTURB YOU.
I'D LIKE TO ASK WHERE YOU SIGN UP FOR THE RACE..
......
THANKS.
It's my pleasure.

IT'S 1,200 DOLLARS! CAN A GUY LIKE YOU PAY IT?! MOVE ALONG, INDIAN!!!
HEY.
DON'T GET ME WRONG.
YOU NEED AN ENTRY FEE.
BUT IT'S NOT 12 DOLLARS, OR A 120 DOLLARS
IN WHITE MAN'S MONEY ...

FWO OO!!
SAND-MAN... THEN...
TAKE IT...
YOU'LL NEED IT, RIGHT?
IT'S A KEEPSAKE FROM MOM AND DAD...
THIS IS...!!
IT'S COVERED IN SAND BUT, AN EMERALD? A REAL ONE!
W... WHERE DID YOU FIND IT? ARE THERE MORE, INDIAN?
GYA!! ARGH!!
I GOT SAND IN MY EYE!
KEEP THE CHANGE.
EAT SAND, PIG..
GIVE ME A PARTICIPATION PERMIT.

I'LL CROSS THE CONTINENT AND WIN WITH MY FEET ALONE.
AH..
TH... THIS IS YOUR PERMIT AND NUMBER.
UH, YEAH ...
YOU KNOW THE STARTING TIME?
AND WE'LL TAKE YOUR HORSE'S NOSEPRINTS BEFORE THE START .
I WON'T NEED THAT.




Morning, 9:30 A.M.

30 minutes to start.

ATTENTION ALL PARTICIPANTS.
EACH OF YOUR NUMBERS IS ALSO YOUR STARTING GRID NUMBER...
FOR FAIRNESS, PLEASE BE AT YOUR CORRESPONDING STARTING GRID BY 2 MINUTES TO 10 A.M.
DURING THE 2 MINUTES BETWEEN 9:58 AND 10:00... ANY PARTICIPANTS THAT DID NOT LINE UP... OR LEFT THEIR GRID...
WILL BE JUDGED AS A FALSE START AND WILL BE PENALIZED, SO PLEASE BE CAREFUL.
AND NOW, AFTER THE RACE MASCOT, "MINI HORSE MARCH" AND THE BAND PERFORMANCE...
THERE WILL BE AN OPENING CEREMONIAL SPEECH BY THE RACE DIRECTOR AND SPONSOR OF THE "STEEL BALL RUN" RACE, MR. STEVEN STEEL.
STEEL
RACE

WELL, I THINK THOSE COMMENTS ...
"BROKE THE ICE", don't you think?
heh
I CAN'T BELIEVE HE SAID IT
PFFT!
GAH!
CLAP
CLAP
THIS WILL BE THE "SACRED ICE" OF THE "STEEL BALL RUN" RACE...!!! AND OUR BURNING DESIRES WILL MELT THE ICE!!!
STEEL BALL RUN RACE
STEEL BALL RUN RACE
THIS WILL BE TRANSPORTED TO NEW YORK VIA RAILROAD AND HAS BEEN CALCULATED TO MELT WHEN YOU REACH THE FINISH LINE!
THE SYMBOL OF FAIR FIGHT AND MOVING FOR-WARD!
THIS ICE...
CAME FROM A PLACE CALLED THE SOUTH POLE, WHICH BELONGS TO NO NATION.
ACCORD-ING TO SCIEN-TISTS, IT FROZE 300 MILLION YEARS AGO.
WE OPENED A HOLE IN THIS ICE AND PLACED THE CHAMPI-ONSHIP TROPHY INSIDE.

NEW YORK!
SAN DIEGO!
NEW YORK!
SAN DIEGO!
SAN DIEGO!
THE WINNING CANDIDATES ARE ENTERING NOW!
THERE'S THE COWBOY, MOUNTAIN TIM!
FROM THE BRITISH RACING WORLD, THE ARISTOCRAT DIEGO BRANDO CAN BEE SEEN!
SAN DIEGO!
NEW YORK!
THE SAHARAN NOMAD, URMD ABDUL, IS ENTERING ON CAMEL-BACK!
SAN DIEGO!
NEW YORK!
AND THERE'S DOT HAN FROM MONGOLIA!
SAN DIEGO!
NEW YORK!
ONLY 3 MINUTES LEFT TO ENTER THE STARTING GRID! PLEASE LINE UP IN THE GRID WITH YOUR NUMBER!
IT'S DOWN TO THE FINAL 5 MINUTES TO START TIME!
HEY, LOOK.
IT'S HIM.
HE'S REALLY LOST IT AFTER ALL.
PATHETIC.

LICK
LICK
I WILL FIGURE IT OUT...
I WON'T GIVE UP...
THE TRUTH ABOUT YOUR "STEEL BALL"...
IT'S IN THE "SPIN" ...
EVEN IF I CAN'T CATCH UP TO YOU... EVEN AFTER THE RACE ENDS... I WILL... SOMEDAY...
......
DAMMIT ...

CHOOSING THAT HORSE...
WAS CORRECT.
SINCE I'M INTERESTED IN YOU...
I'LL GIVE YOU A HINT.
IN THIS KIND OF RACE...
OLD HORSES HAVE EXPERIENCE...
THEY DON'T CHARGE INTO DANGEROUS TERRITORY ON IMPULSE AND SPRAIN THEIR LEGS.
NOT LIKE THE YOUNG ONES THAT ARE ALL ABOUT POWER.

IF YOU HAVE THE WILL TO GET ON THE HORSE, WHY DON'T YOU?
YOU ALREADY FOUND THE ANSWER.
..........
..........
....EH?
IT'S NOW 2 MINUTES TO STARTING TIME!!!
3,652 PARTICIPANTS IN ALL!!
EACH HORSE IS ENTERING ITS GRID. WE CAN'T SEE THE END OF THE LINE!!!
NYO HO!

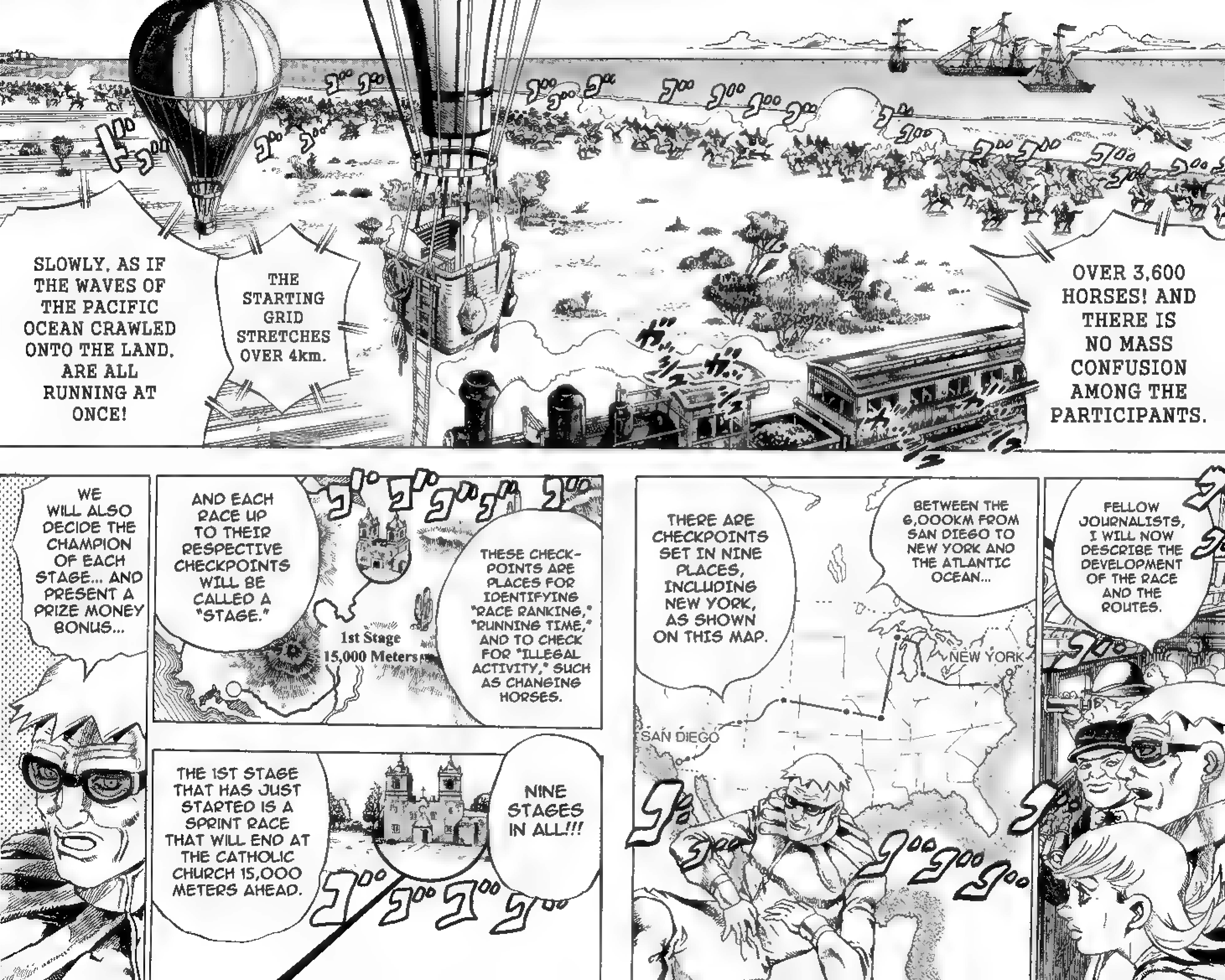
ALL ARE LINED ALONG THE BEACH!!! WHAT AN OVER-WHELMING SCENE!!!
IT'S LIKE A WHOLE CITY!!!
THIS WILL MOVE BEYOND THE HORIZON...!!! AND BEYOND THE WESTERLIES ...!!!
Ed's note: The "westerlies" is the wind blowing to the west.
THE EVENT OF THE CENTURY IS JUST ABOUT TO START!!!
AGAIN ...
AGAIN... LICK...
LICK MY FACE... MY HORSE...
THE "SPIN" ...

THE "STEEL BALL RUN" BEGINS NOW!!!
THE "SPIN" ...
ALL HOPE ...
IS IN THE "SPIN"!!! I WANT TO KNOW MORE... MORE ABOUT THE "STEEL BALL"...

# #5
# 1st Stage 15,000 Meters

# #5

# 1st Stage 15,000 Meters


OVER 3,600 HORSES! AND THERE IS NO MASS CONFUSION AMONG THE PARTICIPANTS.
THE STARTING GRID STRETCHES OVER 4km.
SLOWLY, AS IF THE WAVES OF THE PACIFIC OCEAN CRAWLED ONTO THE LAND. ARE ALL RUNNING AT ONCE!
FELLOW JOURNALISTS, I WILL NOW DESCRIBE THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE RACE AND THE ROUTES.
BETWEEN THE 6,000KM FROM SAN DIEGO TO NEW YORK AND THE ATLANTIC OCEAN...
THERE ARE CHECKPOINTS SET IN NINE PLACES, INCLUDING NEW YORK, AS SHOWN ON THIS MAP.
NEW YORK
SAN DIEGO
THESE CHECK-POINTS ARE PLACES FOR IDENTIFYING "RACE RANKING," "RUNNING TIME," AND TO CHECK FOR "ILLEGAL ACTIVITY," SUCH AS CHANGING HORSES.
1st Stage 15,000 Meters
AND EACH RACE UP TO THEIR RESPECTIVE CHECKPOINTS WILL BE CALLED A "STAGE."
WE WILL ALSO DECIDE THE CHAMPION OF EACH STAGE... AND PRESENT A PRIZE MONEY BONUS...
NINE STAGES IN ALL!!!
THE 1ST STAGE THAT HAS JUST STARTED IS A SPRINT RACE THAT WILL END AT THE CATHOLIC CHURCH 15,000 METERS AHEAD.

TO THE STAGE CHAM-PION!!!
$10,000 AND A ONE HOUR TIME BONUS!!!
A TIME BONUS...
THAT MEANS...
COR-RECT.
IT WILL BE VERY USEFUL IN THE LAST HALF OF THE RACE.
FOR EXAMPLE, IF A PERSON WITH A TIME BONUS FINISHES SECOND PLACE IN NEW YORK AND THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN FIRST PLACE IS LESS THAN ONE HOUR, THAT PERSON WILL BE THE CHAMPION.
THEREFORE IT'S A ONE HOUR EXTENSION TO THE TOTAL RACE TIME.
BUT THIS TIME BONUS...
EVERYONE WILL BE DROOLING OVER IT.
BUT THIS RACE GOES FOR OVER TWO MONTHS WITH ONLY ONE HORSE...!! GOING HARD ON THE HORSE RIGHT FROM THE START AND CHARGING INTO THE HARSH FRONT LINE WOULD BE SOMETHING TO THINK OVER.

YOU COULD EASILY BREAK YOUR HORSE RIGHT AWAY.
OH! WHILE WE WERE LISTENING TO THE COMMENTARY, ONE HORSE JUMPED OUT AHEAD OF THE GROUP OF 3,600!!!
WHO IS IT? WE ARE CHECKING HIS SADDLECLOTH! HE'S FAST!
HE'S FAST! HE'S SPEEDING UP AT AN INCREDIBLE RATE! UNBELIEVABLE SPEED!
IT'S INCREDIBLE!!!
INCREDIBLE!!!

THE 1ST STAGE IS QUICKLY TURNING INTO SOME-THING UNEXP-ECTED!!
HE'S NOT SLOWING DOWN!!!
WHAT'S THE NUMBER ON THE SADDLE-CLOTH?
THE SAD-DLE-CLOTH!!!
THE NUMBER IS B-636!!!
IDENTI-FIED AS 636.
"ZEPPELI..."
RECORDED AS GYRO ZEPPELI!!!
INCREDIBLE!!!
RACING NUMBER B-636, GYRO ZEPPELI HAS LEFT THE GROUP!!!
RACING SOLO!!!
HE'S TRYING TO MAKE A CLEAN GETAWAY FOR THE FULL 15,000 METERS!!!

WHO IS HE?
I DON'T KNOW. THERE'S NO RECORD.
HE COULD BE A COWBOY OR A MINER.
HE'S STILL SPEEDING UP!!!
HE... HE'S PLANNING TO CHARGE HERE ...!!!

GYRO ZEPPELI.
THE HORSE HE'S RIDING ON IS A "STOCKHORSE"... I HEARD IT HAS AUSTRALIAN ROOTS AND HAS AMAZING STAMINA...
IS HE RELYING ON THAT SPEED AND STAMINA HERE?
BUT IT'S 15,000 METERS.
HE'LL DEFINITELY TIRE OUT IN THE LATER HALF! AND THERE'S A RACE TOMORROW TOO! GOING FOR IT AFTER 13,000 WOULD BE REASONABLE...
NO . HE SAID HE'LL "WIN THE RACE " TO CROSS THE CONTINENT AND BECOME THE CHAMPION..
BUT RACING AT THAT SPEED... IS HE REALLY THINKING ABOUT CROSSING THE CONTINENT LIKE THAT?

IT LEANED!
THE OTHER HORSES ARE BECOMING AGITATED BECAUSE HE JUMPED OUT OF THE GROUP!!!

OH NO!!! A COLLISION HAS OCCURRED!!!
THEY'RE RUNNING INTO EACH OTHER! IT'S FINALLY LOOKING LIKE A RACE NOW!!!
COWBOYS CONTROL HERDS OF CATTLE BY DODGING THE CATTLE CHARGES. DODGING CHARGES IS A MUST!!!
STILL... BODY CHARGING IS NOT AGAINST THE RULES.

AND NOW THERE IS A CHALLENGER AGAINST GYRO ZEPPELI!!!
ANOTHER ONE HAS JUMPED OUT OF THE GROUP!
HE'S CHASING !!!
HE'S CHASING !!!
HE'S CHASING AND CLOSING IN ON GYRO!!!
IT'S DIEGO BRANDO !!!
THE PRINCE OF THE BRITISH HORSERACING WORLD PLANS TO CHALLENGE, AS IF HE'S SAYING "SHORT RANGE RACING IS MY TERRITORY!"
NO! WAIT!!! THERE'S ALREADY ...
...THERE'S ALREADY SOMEONE CLOSING IN FROM BEHIND AND TO THE LEFT!
ZEPPELI IS IN HIS RANGE!
HE'S ALREADY CLOSING IN!

THE LARGE MASS IS THE CHAMPION CANDIDATE URMD ABDUL ON CAMEL-BACK!!!

HE
CHARGED
!!!

THE CAMEL'S RUN!!!
IT LOOKS LIKE IT'S IN SLOW MOTION, BUT IT'S LEGS ARE TWICE THE LENGTH OF A HORSE'S!
AND IT'S STRIDE! IT CAN ACCELERATE ENOUGH TO COMPETE WITH THE SPEED OF A HORSE!
AND IT'S WEIGHT SURPASSES 800KGS, THAT'S 1.5 TIMES HEAVIER THAN A HORSE!!! HE'S PLANNING TO GO FOR THE GOAL BY CRUSHING ANYONE THAT GETS NEAR HIM!

ANOTHER HIT!
DIEGO BRANDO HAS TAKEN ADVANTAGE OF THIS SLACK AND GOES FORWARD! FORWARD!!
GYRO IS LOSING SPEED!!!

HE'S GOING INTO THE GROVE!
NO!!! HE'LL GET CAUGHT IN BETWEEN THE TREES!!!
THE FINAL BLOW...
GYRO'S LEANING!!!
IF ANYONE IS GETTING THE TIME BONUS, IT WILL BE ME, ABDUL, SORRY TO SAY.
THE DEADLY CAMEL'S RUN!!! THE DEADLY DESERT NOMAD. URMD ABDUL!!!

HE'S CLOSING IN AGAIN! HE CAN'T HOLD IT OFF ANY MORE! HE'LL BE STRUCK DOWN! GYRO ZEPPELI!
N... NO!
HE LUNGED !!!
IT'S CACTI!!! ABDUL LUNGED INTO A CLUSTER OF CACTI!!!

BUU BAA AA AH!
THE CAMEL CHARGED INTO THE CACTI!!!
DID HE NOT SEE IT BECAUSE THEY WERE BLOCKED BY THE GROVE?!

HE COLLAPSED!!!
IT'S A FALL!
A FALL!!! HE'S FALLEN!!!
GYRO IS SAFE!!!
URMD ABDUL IS DOWN!!!
GYRO HAS NOT CHARGED INTO THE CACTI!!!
GYRO IS UNHURT!!!

ドドドド
ドドドドド
ギャルギャル
ギャルギャル
ギャルギャル
ギャルギャル
ギャルギャル

HE'S ELIMI- NATED!!!
WHAT A START !!!
THE 1st STAGE! THEY HAVEN'T EVEN RUN FOR 1,000 METERS AND WHAT A FLURRY OF EVENTS!
URMD ABDUL! HE'S NOT MOVING! HE'S BEEN ELIMI- NATED!!!

1 1890年9月25日サンディエゴビーチ(完)

JUMP COMICS

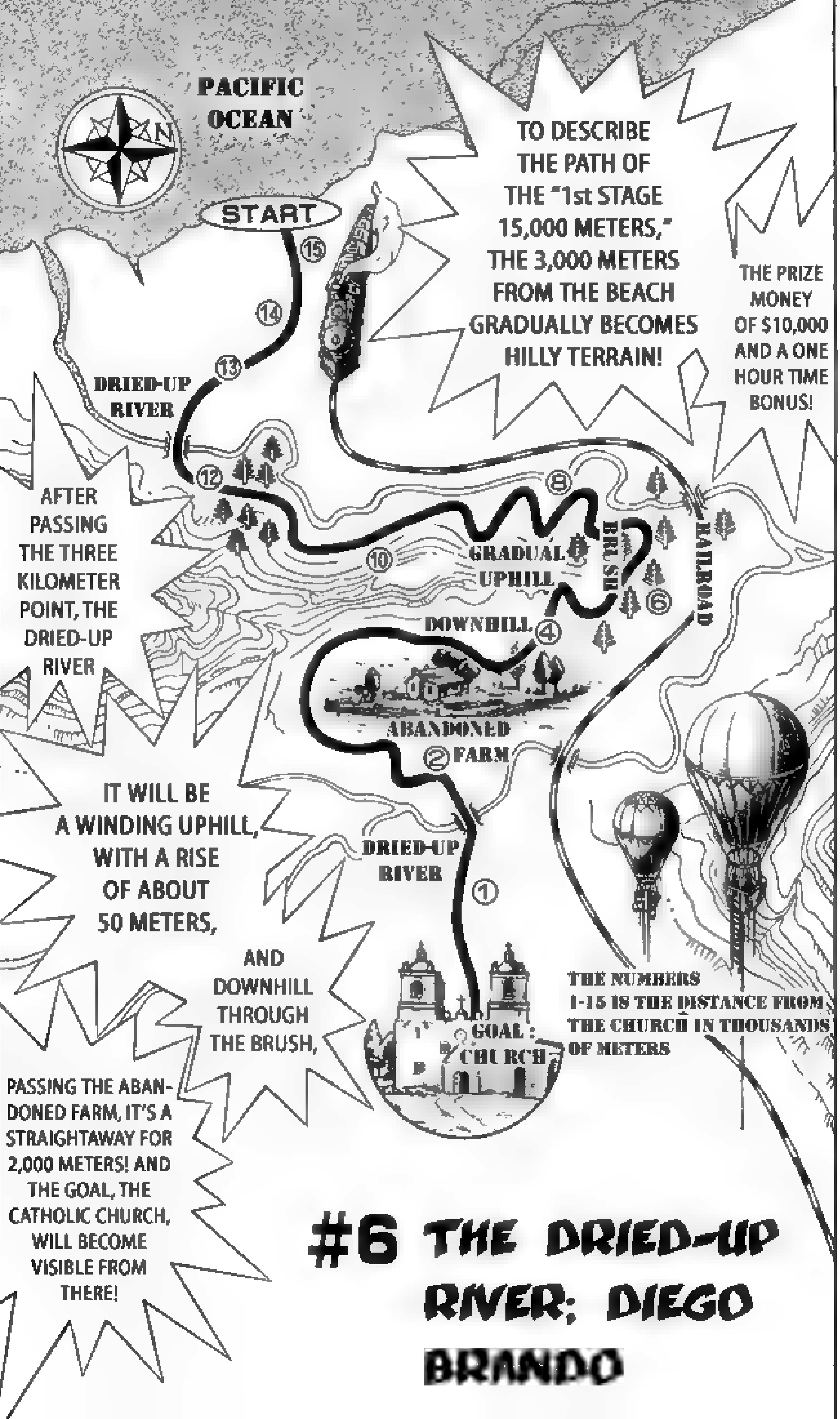
# STEEL BALL RUN

1st.STAGE 15,000 METERS

vol.2

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS



TO DESCRIBE THE PATH OF THE "1st STAGE 15,000 METERS," THE 3,000 METERS FROM THE BEACH GRADUALLY BECOMES HILLY TERRAIN!
THE PRIZE MONEY OF $10,000 AND A ONE HOUR TIME BONUS!
AFTER PASSING THE THREE KILOMETER POINT, THE DRIED-UP RIVER
IT WILL BE A WINDING UPHILL, WITH A RISE OF ABOUT 50 METERS,
AND DOWNHILL THROUGH THE BRUSH,
PASSING THE ABAN-DONED FARM, IT'S A STRAIGHTAWAY FOR 2,000 METERS! AND THE GOAL, THE CATHOLIC CHURCH, WILL BECOME VISIBLE FROM THERE!
PACIFIC OCEAN
N
START
DRIED-UP RIVER
GRADUAL UPHILL
BRUSH
RAILROAD
DOWNHILL
ABANDONED FARM
DRIED-UP RIVER
GOAL : CHURCH
THE NUMBERS 1-15 IS THE DISTANCE FROM THE CHURCH IN THOUSANDS OF METERS
#6 THE DRIED-UP RIVER: DIEGO BRANDO

AND THE AMAZING CHAIN OF EVENTS!
A CHAMPION CANDIDATE, THE DESERT NOMAD URMD ABDUL HAS SUDDENLY RETIRED AFTER BARELY RUNNING 1,000 METERS FROM THE STARTING POINT!!
THE LEADER, NUMBER B-636 "GYRO ZEPELLI" HAS STILL NOT DROPPED SPEED!
HE'S CHARGING! HE'S CHARGING! TRAILING AT ABOUT TWENTY LENGTHS ...
ALSO A CHAMPION CANDIDATE, IS THE NUMBER ONE PRINCE OF THE BRITISH HORSERACING WORLD! DIEGO BRANDO, ALIAS DIO! HE CAN'T CLOSE IN!!

THE DISTANCE BETWEEN THE TRAILING GROUP HAS GROWN UP TO MORE THAN 50 LENGTHS!
HE'S TRAVELING SOLO!
GYRO ZEPELLI! HE'S PLANNING A CLEAN GETAWAY!
ドドドド
IN ADDITION, THE RACE OWNER HAS GIVEN OUT ORDERS ...
TO FIND OUT THE HISTORY OF THE UNKNOWN CONTESTANT, GYRO ZEPELLI *BEFORE THE DEADLINE OF [redacted]
ドドドド
NO ...
THAT ... "DIEGO BRANDO" ...
ドドドド
LOOKING CLOSELY ... FOR AWHILE
HE'S MOVING STRANGELY ...
AND HE'S GRADUALLY DROPPING THE DISTANCE BETWEEN HIM AND GYRO.
CHASING FROM THE RIGHT ... CLOSING IN FROM THE LEFT ...
HE'S GETTING CLOSER!!

HE'S AN EXTRA-ORDINARY JOCKEY THAT MADE IT UP TO THE TOP OF THE BRITISH RACING WORLD IN A MATTER OF YEARS!
.....COULD IT BE.....?
HMPH

I WAS SURPRISED ABOUT THE CAMEL ATTACK ENDING UP LIKE THAT ...
BUT I GUESS HE WAS A SMALL FRY ...
RIGHT NOW,
I CAN SEE THAT HE'S JUST AN AMATEUR ... I CAN SEE THE OUTCOME.
HE JUST CLOSED IN ON GYRO AGAIN!
COULD IT BE?!
COULD IT BE? HE DISCOVERED THAT?! THAT BRITISH JOCKEY!

ドドド
?!!?
ドド
ドドドドド
HE'S GONE
. . . . ?!

HE'S GONE ...
!?
WHERE IS HE?! DIEGO BRANDO IS GONE ...
HEY, WHAT IS THIS?!
WHAT THE HELL?! DIEGO'S DISAPPEARED!

THEY'RE LINED UUUP!
THEY'RE LINED UP!
THEY'RE LINED UP!
*THEY'RE LINED UUUUUP!*
HE'S TRAILING A NECK BEHIND FROM THE LEFT, AND DIO HAS LINED UP!
HOW COULD THIS BE?!
IT'S LIKE MAGIC!
HE SUDDENLY MATCHED GYRO'S SPEED!! IT DIDN'T LOOK LIKE DIO WAS ACCELERATING AT ALL!!

SO IT'S TRUE! HE'S DISCOVERED IT!
HE WAS READING IT, BUT ... HE DID IT SO QUICKLY!
EVERYTHING . . . .
UMPH
HAS ITS OWN HABITS.
WHETHER IT BE MACHINES OR OTHER OBJECTS.
HORSES ESPECIALLY, SINCE THEY'RE LIVING BEINGS AND HAVE MORE CHARACTERISTICS THAN HUMANS
FOR EXAMPLE, ONE HORSE WOULD ALWAYS MOVE ITS TAIL UP AND DOWN BEFORE CHARGING!
OR ANOTHER HORSE WOULD MOVE TO THE OUTSIDE OF THE GROUP AND RUN WHEN CORNERED
A HORSE THAT SHAKES ITS HEAD.
A HORSE THAT WOULD SPIN ITS EARS WHEN APPROACHED BY ANOTHER HORSE IT DISLIKES.
ONES WHO LOWER THEIR BODY.
ONES WHO CHANGE THEIR STRIDE

IF ONE COULD READ ALL THE HABITS OF HORSES AND ATTACK THEM DURING A RACE, EVERYONE COULD BE PASSED, REGARDLESS OF YOUR OWN'S HORSE STAMINA!
NATURALLY, THE HORSE OF THIS MAN ALSO HAS A HABIT!
EVERYTIME THIS HORSE BREATHES EIGHT TIMES,
IT ALWAYS SWAYS ONCE TO THE LEFT WHILE RUNNING!
AND NATURALLY, ITS SPEED DROPS WHEN IT SWAYS!

THREE BREATHS
FOUR BREATHS
FIVE BREATHS
SIX BREATHS
SEVEN BREATHS
SWAY TO THE LEFT.
HE PASSED! HE PASSED! HE PAAASSED!!
DIEGO BRANDO HAS PASSED BY A NECK!
THEREFORE!
IF I SPEED UP ONLY WHEN THE HORSE SWAYS, MY HORSE WILL CATCH UP WITH HIS SPEED WITHOUT WASTING ANY STAMINA AND TIRING OUT.

DIO IS IN THE LEAD!
HE'S DISCOVERED THE HORSE'S HABITS!
DOES GYRO KNOW ABOUT THIS?
... NO!
EVEN IF HE KNEW ABOUT THIS, IF HE TRIED TO FIX THE HABITS, SOME OTHER WEAKNESS WOULD SHOW UP!
HUMANS AND HORSES WORK THE SAME WAY!
AND ONCE HE'S OVERTAKEN!
HE WON'T BE ABLE TO TAKE BACK THE LEAD AGAIN!
THE DISTANCE WOULD BE WIDENED IN THE SAME WAY!
THREE BREATHS
FOUR BREATHS
FIVE BREATHS
!!
SIX BREATHS
SEVEN BREATHS

UNBELIEVABLE! IT LOOKS LIKE GYRO IS THE ONE ACCEL-ERATING!
BUT DIO IS THE ONE UP FRONT! A GENIUS! HE'S A GENIUS! IT LOOKS LIKE NONE OTHER THAN MAGIC!
IT'S A HORSE'S LENGTH DIFFERENCE!
......
ALL THIS ...
HEY, WHAT'S UP WITH THIS?
HMPH
IT'S THE TECHNIQUE OF THE PROS ... AND YOURS IS THE RACING OF A BUMPKIN!
STAY IN THE BACK.
......
YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT HABITS?
YOU MEAN MY HORSE HAS A RUNNING HABIT?
ARE YOU KIDDING ME?
WOULD IT EVEN MATTER IF I TOLD YOU?
HABITS CAN'T BE FIXED ... JUST LIKE FATE.
THERE'S THE 12,000 METER MARK! IT'S THE DRIED-UP RIVER! DIO, OR DIEGO BRANDO, IS THE FIRST TO CROSS THE BRIDGE!

8 BREATHS
HE'S ADVANCING AGAIN!
TWO LENGTHS!
THREE LENGTHS!
HE CAN'T CATCH UP! HE CAN'T CATCH UP!
GYRO ZEPELLI JUST CAN'T CATCH UP ANYMORE!
HE SAYS HABITS, WHAT'S UP WITH THAT?
YOU HAD HABITS ... ? I DIDN'T KNOW THAT.
HEY.
... WHAT KIND OF HABIT DO YOU HAVE?

SO MANY POWERFUL RIVALS ...
THE WORLD'S FULL OF THEM.
BUT YOU DON'T HAVE TO FIX YOUR HABITS!

PUT MORE INTO YOUR HABITS WHILE YOU'RE RUNNING.

HEY HEY,
YOU'RE SWAYING ...
SO SWAYING TO YOUR LEFT IS YOUR HABIT ...
BUT ...
GOOD! GO AHEAD ... GO AHEAD AND LET YOUR ANGER EXPLODE!
THE BRIDGE?! ...WHAT HAPPENED?!

WHAT HAPPENED?! THE BRIDGE PLATES ARE SHATTERED! AND GYRO ZEPELLI IS CHARGING THROUGH IT!
DIO CAN'T CROSS THE BRIDGE!
DIO CAN'T CROSS! DIO HESITATED!
THE FOLLOWING RACERS REACHED THE RIVER!
3,600 MEN ARE CROSSING THE RIVER! THE REAR GROUP IS CROSSING THE DRIED-UP RIVER! DIO CAN'T CROSS THE BRIDGE!
DIO IS FALLING BEHIND! DIO IS FALLING GREATLY BEHIND!
DIO MUST GET OFF THAT BRIDGE AND CROSS THE RIVER ONCE MORE!
GRR ...
THAT ... THAT MAN ...
A . . .
JUST LIKE THE LAST TIME WITH MY LEGS!
AGAIN WITH THE STEEL BALL!
THE STRANGE SPIN OF THE STEEL BALL PULLED OUT THE HORSE'S HABITS IN AN EXPLOSIVE RATE!

HUAAAH
HUAAAH
M
NM
EDITOR'S NOTE: HE'S YAWNING.
HUAAAH
HUAAAH
RRG
NM
PUFF PUFF
I FELL ASLEEP WITH-OUT A PROB-LEM!!
HUAAAH
LAST NIGHT.
THERE WERE SO MANY BUGS FLYING AROUND THIS LAMP
AND WHEN I STARTED COUNTING HOW MANY WERE BUZZING AROUND ..

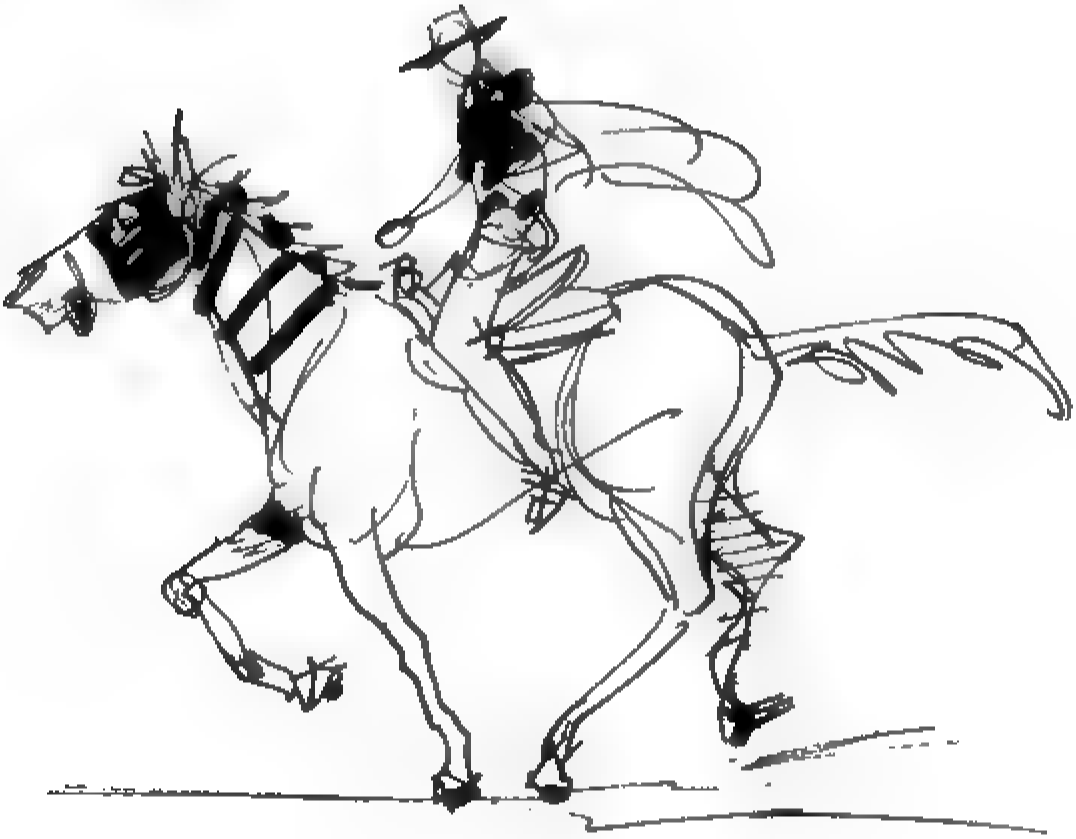
NOW I'M SET FOR THE STEEL BALL RACE AT 10 O'CLOCK!
I'M AT MY BEST NOW!
?
ドド
ドドドド
ドドドドド

GULP
SORRY TO BOTHER YOU
UH,
AH,
S...
WHAT TIME IS IT?
CHIRP
CHIRP
POCOLOCO... THE NEXT TWO MONTHS OF YOUR LIFE...
I GUARANTEE THAT ANYTHING YOU DO, YOU WILL SUCCEED AT IT.
ONE OUT OF FIFTY HUNDRED MILLION PEOPLE! THE GREATEST PEAK OF YOUR LIFE IS COMING!
YOU SHOULD DO WHATEVER YOUR HEART DESIRES! THERE'S NO NEED TO HESI-TATE! YOU HAVE NO ENEMIES TO FEAR!
THE LOVERS

AWESOME! THIS IS AWESOME!
BECAUSE OF EVERY-BODY'S HORSES GALLOPING ALL OVER THE PLACE!
YO! YO!
I'VE NEVER BEEN ON GROUND THAT WAS SO EASY TO RIDE ON LIKE THIS BEFORE! POCOLOCO IS ON A ROLL!
"POCOLOCO" (AGE 21) SADDLECLOTH A-777 FARMER BIRTHPLACE: GEORGIA

IGNITION-ONE.COM
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY: ORA2
EDITED BY: THE VINNY MAC & HANAMICHI
& PUAR



# #7 POCOLOCO AND THE SANDMAN

IGNITION-ONE
HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM
SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY: ORA2 EDITED BY: PUAR
TEXT PLACEMENT BY: THE VINNY MAC

BUT...
THIS IS SO AWESOME! THE GROUND'S SO SMOOTH!
TRAMPLED AND BEATEN BY EVERYBODY! I'M PICKING UP UNBELIEVABLE SPEED!
YO! YO!
I-I GUESS! POCOLOCO IS THE LUCKY GUY AFTER ALL!
AHEM
I JUST DISCOVERED ...
WHY DIDN'T ANYONE TELL ME?
ABOUT THE MILEAGE BEING 400 MILES PER LITRE?
CROSSING THE CONTINENT IS IMPOSSIBLE ...
YES ... IT'S A PITY. LET'S RETURN TO OUR HOME COUNTRY, BARON.
THERE THEY ARE!
I SEE 'EM!
THERE'S THE REAR END OF THE GROUP!
THE SPEED'S ALMOST REFRESHING!!
GAAAAH!

I'M NOT IT! I'M NOT 1 IN 5 BILLION AFTERALL!
NO SENSE AT ALL! I'M ...
IT CAN'T BE! THIS REALLY DOESN'T MAKE ANY SENSE!
GAH!
EEEW!
IT'S ... IT'S IN MY MOUTH ...
IT'S A GOLD COIN ...
IT'S ...
WITH ...
WITH THE MANURE ...
PTOOEY!
I DON'T BELIEVE THIS!
THERE'S MANURE ON MY CLOTHES!
AAAAAAGH!

NG!
ARGH!
CRAP! IT GOT ON MY FACE!
IT REEKS!
WHOA, HO, HOOOO!!
YO!
THANK YOU, GOD!
YO!
HAHAHA HAHAHA! THIS MEANS!!
I REALLY WAS! AFTERALL!
WANTED $500
Habitual Burglar
Possibly disguised by shaving beard
AAAAAH!!

H ... HEY! DAMNIT! WE STRAYED FROM THE COURSE!
IT'S A CLIFF!
WE'RE NOT ON THE RACING COURSE!
......
DAMNIT! IT'S HIS FAULT! WHERE'D HE GO?!
IT'S THAT INDIAN! I THOUGHT WE WERE ON THE COURSE BECAUSE THAT GUY WAS RUNNING THIS WAY!

オ
オォォォォォ…
オォォォ…

IT'S THAT INDIAN!
DID HE TRICK US INTO THINKING THE COURSE WAS THIS WAY?!
DAMN!
IT'S ... IT'S NOT LIKE THAT ... I SORT OF WENT ALONG WITH HIM, BECAUSE HE WAS RUNNING FAST LIKE THAT, AND ...
I ... JUST FOLLOWED HIM!
......

BUT LOOK AT THE MAP!
IF WE GO THIS ROUTE, IT'LL BE A SHORTCUT TO THE CLIMB IN HALF THE DISTANCE!
IF YOU WANT TO INJURE YOUR HORSE, THAT IS!
I'M GOING BACK! DAMN HIM! IT'S ALL HIS FAULT!

I'M ONE IN FIVE HUNDRED MILLION ... I'LL BELIEVE IN THAT ... I CAME TO SAN DIEGO BELIEVING THAT ... IF I WAS WRONG, IT'S ALL OVER RIGHT HERE.
I'M GONNA WIN IT. I'LL WIN IT ... THEN GO BACK HOME!
AND LIVE A HAPPIER LIFE!

USE THE ROPE YOU GOT ...
IF YOU KNOW HOW TO USE IT.

ドドドド
BFFT!
WHOOOAA!!

ドドドドドドドド
THAT GUY . . .
DID HE COME ALL THE WAY FROM THE BEACH AT THAT PACE? HOW CAN HE RUN LIKE THAT?
IT'S TRUE I GOT HELP FROM THAT INDIAN.
BUT ME BEING ABLE TO JUMP OVER THAT CLIFF PROVES MY LUCKINESS!
AND THIS GUY!
THINKS HE'S GONNA WIN THIS RACE, EH?!
ドドドドドド
!

THERE'S THE RACE GROUP!
YO! YO!
I FINALLY MET UP WITH IT!
YHAAAAAEEEEA
YO! YO! YO!
HEEEY, DO YOU KNOW WHERE THE LEADER IS?
MAYBE YOU'RE THE LEADER?
I DON'T THINK SOOOO ...
YOUR RUNNING LOOKS LAZY ... UHYAHEE! HEE!

MM!
AND NOOO! THEY HAVE JUST PASSED THE 6,000 METER SIGN!
THE LEADER IS STILL GYRO ZEPELLI!
IT'S FINALLY THE LAST THIRD OF THE 15,000 METERS OF THE 1st STAGE! AFTER THE CLIMB, IT'S DOWNHILL FROM THERE!
IT'S ROUGHLY 60 TO 70 LENGTHS BETWEEN HIM AND THE FOLLOWING GROUP! WILL HE MAKE A CLEAN ESCAPE?! COULD THIS RACE END HERE WITH HIS GETAWAY?!

COULD IT BE ... ?
HE'S ...
HE'S THE LEADER?
GYRO ZEPELLI'S HORSE WILL BEGIN TO TIRE SOON ...
A LITTLE LESS THAN 2,000 METERS IS ALWAYS THE REASONABLE CHOICE WHEN SPEEDING UP AND GOING FOR THE FINISH LINE ...
BUT ...
IF I LOSE SIGHT OF HIM NOW, IT MIGHT BE IMPOSSIBLE TO CATCH UP WITH HIM ...
TO ME, THIS RACE ...
ISN'T IT ABOUT WINNING OR THE PRIZE MONEY,
BUT TO FIND OUT THE MYSTERY OF THE "STEEL BALL," I'D NEED HIS RECOGNITION!
BEATING HIM IN THIS STAGE WOULD BE THE EASIEST WAY!

FIRST KEEP THE DISTANCE BETWEEN HIM . . .
AND CHALLENGE HIM AFTER THE 2,000 METER MARK!
WHAT HAPPENED?! GYRO ZEPELLI IS GOING OFF COURSE!
HE'S VEERING RIGHT! GYRO'S GOING GREATLY OFF THE COURSE!

ドドドド
NO WAY ...
WHAT IS HE THINKING?! COULD GYRO ZEPELLI ... !
BE PLANNING TO TAKE A SHORT CUT!
THE BRUSH IS UP AHEAD!
HE'S GOING OFF COURSE AND INTO THE BRUSH!

GYRO ZEPELLI HAS GONE OFF COURSE TO THE RIGHT! HE'S GOING FOR A SHORT CUT!
IF HE GOES THROUGH THE BRUSH, HE CAN SHAVE 800 TO 1,000 METERS OFF HIS RUNNING DISTANCE!!
GYRO IS . . . .
GOING TO CROSS THE FOREST!
2
5
4
6
8
10
12
14
START

BUT THERE WILL BE OBSTACLES!
IT'S MORE OF A FOREST THAN A BRUSH! THE TREES ARE TOO TIGHTLY PACKED!
IT'S A DANGEROUS BET! SINCE THERE ARE TOO MANY TREES, DROPPING SPEED AND USING STAMINA IS A MUST!
BUT IF GYRO SUCCEEDS, HE'LL GET CLOSER AND CLOSER TO A COMPLETE SWEEP!
WHAT WILL THE FOLLOWERS DO?!
WHICH COURSE WILL THE FOLLOWERS TAKE?! THE BRUSH?! THE REGULAR COURSE?!

WHAT THE ... IS GYRO ZEPELLI INSANE?
THERE'S A VERY HIGH CHANCE OF THE RIDER GETTING INJURED, AS WELL AS THE HORSE!
AND DROPPING SPEED ISN'T THE WORST THING.
TWO HORSES ARE GOING FOR IT!
TWO FROM THE FOLLOWING GROUP ARE CHASING GYRO!

MMM!
MMM!
MORE FROM THE FOLLOWING GROUP ARE JOINING THE CHASE!
SEVEN HORSES!
EIGHT HORSES!
ARE THEY ACCEPTING GYRO'S BET?!

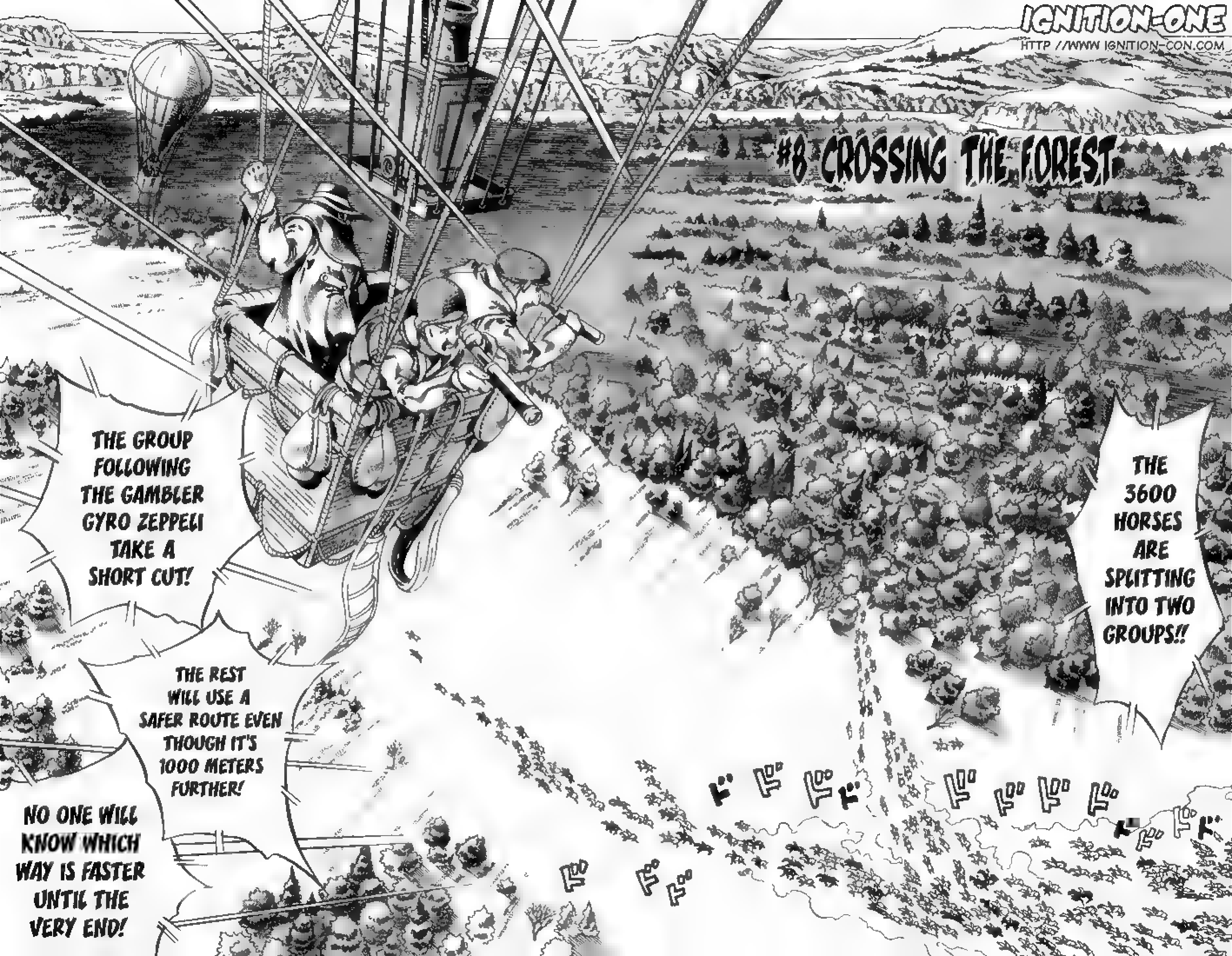
HM.
GYRO DISAPPEARED INTO THE FOREST!

WHAT ? THIS GUY ?!
... WHAT'S HE DOING?
HE CLOSED HIS EYES!
WHAT'S HE THINKING ?!
HE'S NOT SLIGHTLY OPENING HIS EYES, EITHER.
AND THAT POSTURE IS ONE OF CONFIDENCE RATHER THAN FEAR!
IT'S LIKE HE DECIDED ... MORE LIKE TESTING HIMSELF BY CLOSING HIS EYES.
HE'S SPEEDING UP!!
NUMBER 777 IS THE FIRST TO DIVE IN!

IGNITION-ONE
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY: ORA2
EDITED BY: PUAR
TEXT PLACEMENT BY: THE VINNY MAC

I REALLY HAVE THAT "ONE OUT OF 50 HUNDRED MILLION" GOOD LUCK! UH-OHHH!
IT'S TRUE... IF IT WASN'T, I WOULD HAVE ALREADY FALLEN OFF THE HORSE!
#8 CROSSING THE FOREST
I WON'T GET HIT BY BRANCHES EVEN IF I CLOSE MY EYES!
NOTHING WILL KICK ME OFF THIS HORSE!


IGNITION-ONE
HTTP //WWW.IGNITION-CON.COM
#8 CROSSING THE FOREST
THE 3600 HORSES ARE SPLITTING INTO TWO GROUPS!!
THE GROUP FOLLOWING THE GAMBLER GYRO ZEPPELI TAKE A SHORT CUT!
THE REST WILL USE A SAFER ROUTE EVEN THOUGH IT'S 1000 METERS FURTHER!
NO ONE WILL KNOW WHICH WAY IS FASTER UNTIL THE VERY END!
ド ド ド ド ド ド ド ド ド ド ド ド ド
ド ド ド

SHIT! WHERE!? WHERE'S GYRO!? I CAN'T SEE HIM! I CAN'T LET HIM GAIN MORE DISTANCE FROM ME!
UOOOOO-OOOOO!
FHA-HAHA-HAHA!

OH!
あひっ
OOOOO!

WOAHHH!
UGH

THIS GUY ...
EVEN THOUGH HE'S CLOSING HIS EYES ...

HE'S ACCELERATING WHILE HIS EYES ARE CLOSED !!
DID HE THINK IT WAS SAFER TO CLOSE HIS EYES AND LET HIS HORSE MOVE ON ITS OWN RATHER THAN CONTROLLING THE HORSE HIMSELF...!?
CER-TAIN-LY ...
A RIDER'S WEAKNESSES AND FEAR OF OBSTACLES COULD TRANSFER TO THEIR HORSE...
BUT!!

EVEN GYRO
IS RACING NEAR HIS STRENGTH'S LIMIT!
BUT SOME SWEET THINKING LIKE THAT CAN WIN THIS RACE !!

PASSED HIM!
UGHA!

HUH!!
UGH
N-
NO WAY ...
B... BUT

GWUAH
SOME THIN AND BORING FREAK.
JUST AS I THOUGHT

!!
MY MIND'S PLAYING TRICKS ON ME
I COULD HAVE SWORN SOMEONE WAS COMING
NO ...!!

A RUNAWAY HORSE ...
THE RIDER'S FALLEN OFF ...

S-
SHIT!
TH, THIS GUY!
WUOOO!
HE WENT STRAIGHT THROUGH THE SPACE BETWEEN THE BRANCHES!
I CAN'T CATCH UP! HE'S GETTING AHEAD OF ME!!

HE COULD GO FREELY THROUGH A SPACE THAT ONLY A HORSE COULD PASS THROUGH ...
... BY FALLING OFF THE HORSE!
THIS GUY !!
IT'S! GYRO!!
BUT THAT GUY'S CLOSING IN ON GYRO!
HE'S BREEZING THROUGH THE TREES !!

F... FAST! FAST!
I CAN'T BELIEVE HOW LUCKY I WAS!
I WAS REALLY LUCKY !!
FALLING OFF THE HORSE!
IF THIS KEEPS UP ... HE MIGHT CATCH UP TO GYRO IN THE FOREST!
IS THIS MERELY BY CHANCE ... OR IS IT ...
DID HE CALCULATE WHAT WOULD HAPPEN FROM THE VERY BEGINNING!?

WHAT ... THE HELL ?
DAMN!
I GUESS IT'S TIME TO AVOID MORE THAN JUST TREES.

ドーン

CLOSED!!

BHEEEEE!
UOOOAH!
GWAH!

OOOOOOH!
ONE CAME OUT OF THE FOREST!
THEY'RE COMING! THEY'RE COMING!
ONE HORSE HAS MADE IT THROUGH THE FOREST!
IT'S GYRO! IT'S GYRO!
AS EXPECTETED, GYRO ZEPPELI CAME OUT SINGLE-HANDEDLY!
IT'S A SUCCESS! THE SHORTCUT WAS A SUCCESS!
THERE'S A DIFFERENCE OF AT LEAST 800 METERS FROM THE PEOPLE WHO RAN THROUGH THE NORMAL ROUTE!
THERE'S ONE MORE!
WHAT!?
ONE MORE HORSE CAME OUT OF THE FOREST!
IT'S CATCHING UP!
CLOSING IN ON GYRO AND ONLY 5 HORSE-LENGTHS AWAY!
NO. 3!

WHAT THE! WHO THE HECK IS THAT!?
WHAT IS GOING ON!?
EVEN THOUGH GYRO ZEPPELI WAS SO FAR AHEAD COMING OUT OF THE FOREST, SOMEONE HAS ALREADY CAUGHT UP TO HIM!

I DON'T UNDERSTAND ... WHO IS HE!?
IT MUST BE SOME KIND OF "ABILITY" ... OR ELSE THIS COULDN'T HAVE HAPPENED!
I GOT HIT BY A TREE BRANCH AND WAS KNOCKED BACK ON THE SADDDDD-DLLEEEEE!
UH
HOHHHH
IT'S TRUE!
I REALLY AM A LUCKY GUY!
THERE'S A SIGN THAT SAYS 4000 LEFT
AFTER THE DOWNHILL AND THE FARM, THERE'S 2000 METERS OF STRAIGHT ROAD TO THE GOAL.
4

IGNITION-ONE
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY: TAKUSHIKUN
EDITED BY: HANAMICHI & PUAR

AND THE FINAL BATTLE BEGINS BETWEEN THE LEADING RIDERS! ONLY 4000 METERS ARE LEFT UNTIL THEY REACH THE GOAL!
THE DEVIL'S DOWNHILL STANDS BEFORE THEM!
STILL ON TOP IS GYRO ZEPPELI!
#9 LONG, LONG DOWNHILL
IGNITION-ONE
HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM
SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY: TAKUSHIKUN & ONIMARU
EDITED BY. PUAR

THERE'S 2000 METERS BETWEEN HERE AND THE FARM,
THE DOWNHILL AREA IS IN THE RANGE OF 50 METERS IN HEIGHT,
THERE ARE AREAS THAT ARE AS STEEP AS A 30° ANGLE,
AND A HORSE-RIDER MUST ALWAYS KEEP IN MIND THAT A LONG DOWNHILL MUST BE RUN AT A LOWER SPEED!
OH! EVEN WHEN PEOPLE JUMP AHEAD, YOU MUST KEEP A SLOWER PACE!
ENDURE IT! EVERYONE MUST ENDURE IT!
YOU MUST HOLD A STEADY PACE! IF YOU PUT OUT TOO MUCH SPEED GOING DOWNHILL
EVEN IF YOU'RE SCATTERED AND BEHIND IN THE GROUP
THE LEGS OF YOUR HORSE COULD GIVE OUT DURING THE FINAL STRETCH!!

THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS!
THE SAME WAY A WELL WILL DRY UP,
THE ENERGY SPENT RUNNING THE 11,000 METERS WILL ALL BE WASTED!
HANG ON! STEADY ...
DON'T LET THE OTHER HORSES DISTRACT YOU !!
THEY'RE ALMOST THERE! YOU CAN'T AFFORD TO EXHAUST YOUR HORSE'S LEG AT THIS POINT!
BUT STILL, THERE'S NO WAY YOU CAN DROP YOUR PACE EITHER!
FROM HERE ON OUT, IT COMES DOWN TO WHO WILL BE ABLE TO ENDURE IT THE BEST!

DAMN ...
BUT THERE'S NO NEED TO WORRY .. I DIDNT MAKE ANY MISTAKES DURING THE FOREST CROSSING...
I DON'T KNOW WHO THE HELL THIS GUY IS ... OR HOW HE CAUGHT UP TO ME SO FAST.
DON'T WORRY ABOUT YOUR BACK
BUILD UP YOUR STRENGTH SLOWLY
BUT STAY IN THE LEAD
AND ONCE WE PASS THE FARM
I'LL LET YOU EXPLODE INTO ACTION !!!

SOMEONE COULDN'T TAKE THE SLOW PACE
AND FLEW OUT, CHARGING TOWARDS THE FRONT!
HE'S CLOSING IN ON GYRO AND NUMBER 777!!
ONCE WE CHARGE OUR ENERGY ... WE CAN DO ANYTHING!!
ONCE WE PASS THE FARM .. YOU CAN DO ANYTHING !!
SO ENDURE IT UNTIL THEN AND DON'T RUN OFF!
I HAVE LUCK THAT'S "ONE OUT OF 50 HUNDRED MILLION!!"
DON'T WORRY!
YOHHH
YOIYOI

POCO-LOCO!!
WHAT KIND OF IDEALISTIC TALK IS THAT?
THERES THE COW POCO-LOCO!
REMEMBER THE COW!

SO, YOU CAN DO ANYTHING ...!?
KU KU
HEY! DON'T GET DISTRACTED!
OR ELSE YOU MIGHT FALL OFF THE HORSE... YOU'RE NOT SUPPOSED TO FALL OFF YET.

DID I HIT MY HEAD WHEN I FELL IN THE FOREST?
TH.. THAT THING JUST NOW. WAS I HALLUCINATING? I... I..
I SAW SOMETHING REALLY WEIRD ...
HUH!?
IT WILL ALL WORK OUT, RIGHT? YOU'LL CERTAINLY WIN!
DON'T WORRY ABOUT THE DOWNHILL AND JUST GO! HAVE FAITH!
GO!
YOU'RE THE GUY WITH "ONE OUT OF 50 HUNDRED MILLION" LUCK!
YOU'RE A LUCKY GUY! YOU CAN BEAT HIM IF YOU DON'T HOLD YOUR HORSE BACK!
YEAH, IT MUST HAVE BEEN A HALLUCINATION.
YEAH ...
YOU'RE GOING TO DO IT, RIGHT?

ドドドド
ドドド

YO! YOUUU!
GUY IN THE FRONT!
IS THAT ALL YOU CAN DO ...!?
I PROCLAIM
ONCE I PASS YOU ...
YOU WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO TAKE THE LEAD AWAY FROM ME, POCOLOCO ...
DID YOU SAY SOME-THING?
WERE YOU TALKING INTO MY ASS...? BECAUSE I CAN'T HEAR ANYTHING WITH MY ASS...
YOU BETTER MOVE ...
FALL BEHIND, YOU FREAK!

WHAT THE

AMAZING! NUMBER 777 FLEW OUT IN FRONT!
HIS NAME IS [redacted] FROM GEORGIA, 21-YEARS-OLD, REGISTERED AS POCOLOCO!
HE PASSED GYRO TO TAKE THE LEAD!

DON'T WORRY! DON'T GET PULLED IN BY HIM! GETTING PULLED IN BY SOME SUPERFICIAL CHOICE MADE BY HIM WILL LEAD US TO HELL'S STAIRCASE.
STEADY
THERE'S NO DOUBT ABOUT IT!
STEADY
GYRO'S HOLDING BACK!
GYRO'S HOLDING BACK!
15 HORSE-LENGTHS, 10 HORSE-LENGTHS!
HE'S PULLING CLOSER TO POCO-LOCO
GYRO IS CATCHING UP!
THEY'RE FLYING!
OTHER RIDERS IN THE REAR HAVE JOINED IN AND ARE ALSO ACCELERATING!

BUT THIS IS FOOLISH!
IT'S NOT A CHALLENGE, IT'S WRECKLESS! ACCELERATING DOWNHILL IS A POOR TACTIC!
THE SOUND OF THE HOOVES ARE A REQUIEM FOR WHAT'S TO COME!
DAMN ...
BUT
... IF
LETS SAY HE... KI... HE... HAD SOME KIND OF STRATEGY AND HE'S FLYING THROUGH THE "DOWNHILL" FOR A REASON
LIKE... IN THE FOREST WHEN HE CONSCIOUSLY FELL OFF TO GET PULLED BY HIS HORSE THROUGH THE TREES.

IF HE REACHES THE FARM SAFELY, THEN DURING THE FINAL STRETCH...
WITH THE DISTANCE CREATED BETWEEN US AT THIS HILL, WILL MY HORSE HAVE A CHANCE TO OVERTAKE HIM BEFORE THE GOAL!?
NO! THERE'S NO WAY HE CAN MAKE IT IN ONE PIECE! IT'LL ALL COME TO A HEAD SOON!
FORGET HE EVEN EXISTS! JUST DON'T THINK ABOUT HIM! HOLD BACK! I HAVE TO ENDURE THROUGH THIS HILL!

WHOA!
AGH
2 RIDERS HAVE FALLEN OFF! THINGS HAVE COME TO A HEAD!
IF YOU DON'T TAKE THIS DOWNHILL SERIOUSLY, YOU WILL DEFINITELY WIND UP DEAD!
THEY FELL OFF!

FELL
POCO-LOCO TRIPPED !!
POCOLOCO
IT'S ALL COMING TO A HEAD!
IT'S OK JUST KEEP GOING!
WE ARE LUCKY!
IT'S SAFE! G...
WHAT!?

HUH?
HE FELL! HE FELL!
POCO-LOCO WAS IMPRU-DENT!
POCO-LOCO IS DOWN!
GYRO IS IN FIRST PLACE! GYRO TAKES THE LEAD!
THANK YOU VERY MUUUCH...

RIGHT ON SCHEDULE, GYRO IS IN THE LEAD AND HEADED TOWARDS THE FARM!

WHAT THE HELL ...
HE'S MOVING ...!
......!?
NO! HE DEFINITELY FELL DOWN!
BUT HE'S MOVING! HE'S MOVING AT AN EVEN GREATER SPEED!
HE'S RIDING SOMETHING! MOVING! HE'S MOVING DOWN!
P-POCO-LOCO IS SAFE! HE DIDN'T FALL DOWN!

DEAD BODYYY !!!
POCOLOCO IS SLIDING DOWN ON A DEAD BODY!
SOMEHOW, A COW'S BODY WAS HIDDEN INSIDE THE GRASS!
TH- THIS GUY!?
THIS FREAKING ... WHAT THE HELL!?
IT'S CALCULATION! THERE'S NO MISTAKE! THIS GUY'S ACTIONS AREN'T COINCIDENCE OR JUST BEING DUMB! HE HAS TO KNOW ALL THESE THINGS IN ADVANCE OR ELSE HE COULDN'T PULL OFF ALL THIS CRAP! THIS RACE'S ENEMY IS HIM!
HE'S A FEARSOME ENEMY!

WONDER-FULLLLLLL YEEEE-HAAAAHHH !!!
THERE WAS A DEAD COW'S BODY INSIDE THE GRASS!
THIS IS NO HALLUCINATION! IT'S MY GOOD LUCK! I WAS DAMN SURPRISED!
SHIT!!
THIS IS TERRIBLE!! HIS HORSE ISN'T EVEN RUNNING! IT'S DOING NOTHING BUT RESTING!!
ONCE WE CROSS THE FARM, WE'LL REACH THE FINAL STRETCH AND HIS HORSE WILL HAVE RESTED ITS LEGS COMPLETELY!!

I'M NOT SURE WHAT THE RULEBOOK SAYS EXACTLY ...
I CAN'T LET YOU RIDE A DEAD COW'S BODY!
BUT I'M SURE THIS IS A RACE WHERE YOU RIDE HORSES!

LET'S HAVE THAT ROCK STOP THE COW'S SLIDING!

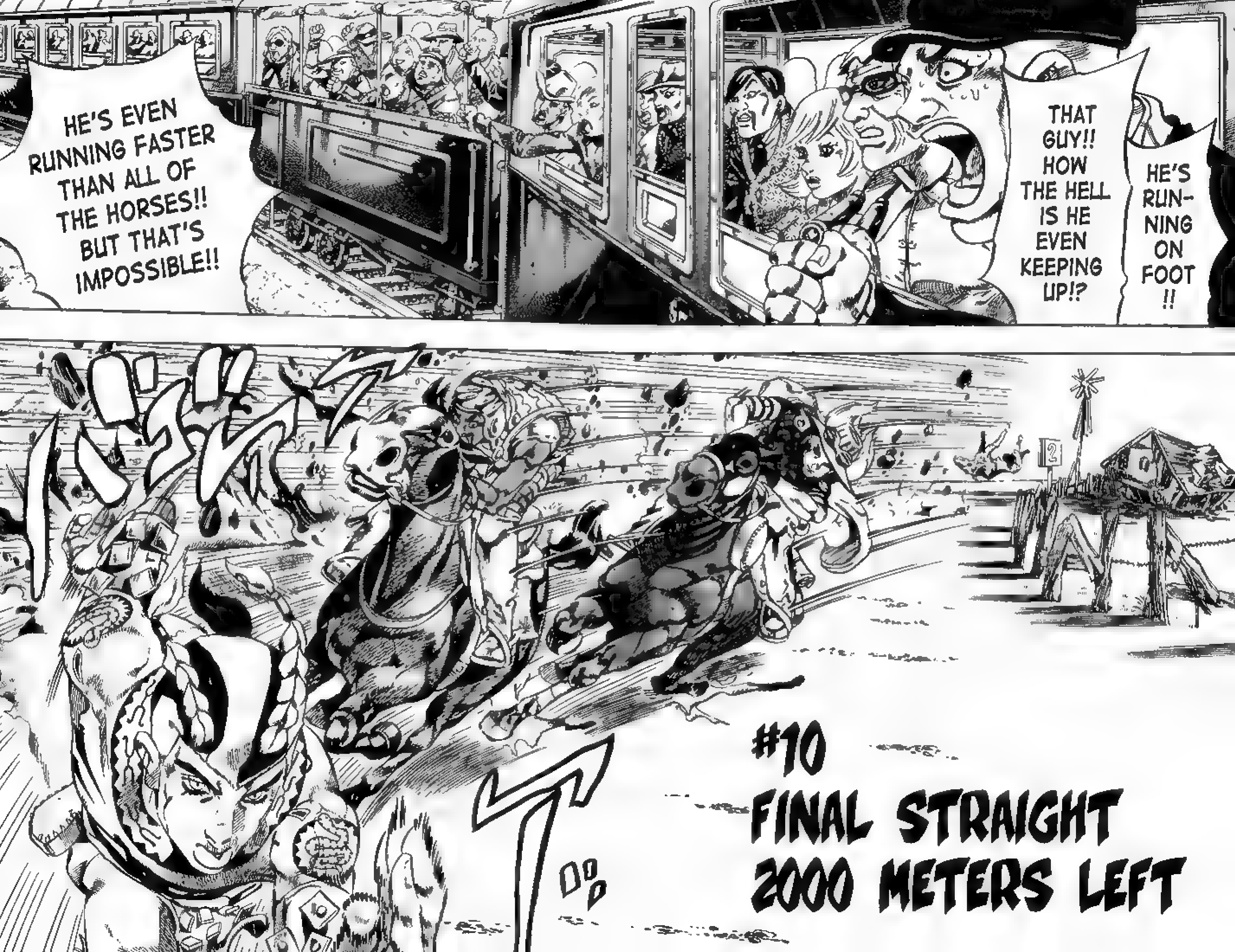
UH
UHH
!!
WHAT!?

HM!
W... WHO'S THAT !?
SHIT, THE ROCK FELL DOWN TOO LATE!
WHY IS THERE SOMEBODY ON THE TRACK?
WHO IS HE? THAT PERSON!! RUNNING! HE'S RUNNING DOWN THE HILL WITH HIS OWN LEGS!!
HE BROKE IN SO SUDDENLY!! FAST! FAST!
WHICH ROUTE DID HE TAKE!?
SANDMAN! SANDMAN! HIS NAME IS SANDMAN ACCORDING TO THE REGISTRATION!
THIS RACE IS IMPOSSIBLE TO PREDICT! IT'S SO EXCITING! SANDMAN IS IN 1 ST PLACE AS WE HEAD DOWN THE FINAL STRETCH!

IGNITION-ONE
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY:
TAKUSHIKUN & ONIMARU
EDITED BY: PUAR

#10 FINAL STRAIGHT
2000 METERS LEFT
LIMITED
STEEL BALL RUN
THEY JUST PASSED THE 2000 METER LINE ...
THE TRAIN IS FINALLY ROUNDING THE HILL ...
WHAT'S GOING ON ...?
SO THAT'S WHAT'S HAPPEN- ING.


HE'S RUN-NING ON FOOT!!
THAT GUY!! HOW THE HELL IS HE EVEN KEEPING UP!?
HE'S EVEN RUNNING FASTER THAN ALL OF THE HORSES!! BUT THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE!!
#10
FINAL STRAIGHT
2000 METERS LEFT

THIS SANDMAN IS FAST!
SAND-MAN!
JUST LOOK AT HIM! NOW HE'S RUNNING OVER THE HILL!
THIS DOWNHILL RACE WILL END SOON AND THE FINAL STRAIGHT WILL BE SEEN! THE RUNNING TIME HAS ALREADY PASSED 17 MINUTES!!
DIRECT PATH
GOAL
ROCKY AREA
IGNITION-ONE
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM
SCANNER: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATORS: ORA2 & ONIMARU
EDITOR: PUAR

A HUMAN RUNNING FASTER THAN A HORSE ...
YES THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE
IF YOU THINK ABOUT IT RATIONALLY ...
BUT IT MAKES SENSE WHEN YOU SEE IT... HE'S GOING OVER 30 KM/H.
30 ...?
NO, IT MIGHT BE CLOSER TO 40 KM/H ...
40 KM/H IS THAT EVEN ...
HANG ON THERE JUST A SECOND, MR. STEEL
SAND-MAN'S SPEED !?
WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT? RUNNING 100 METERS IN 10 SECONDS IS 36 KM/H!
THE WORLD RECORD ISN'T EVEN CLOSE TO THAT!
RUNNING A LONG-DISTANCE MARATHON IN 2 HOURS IS ONLY 21 KM/H!
77
HE REALLY IS RUNNING FASTER THAN ALL THESE HORSES!
AND THE SECRET IS IN HIS RUNNING STYLE...
IT MAKES SENSE...! LOOK AT HOW HE IS RUNNING OVER THOSE CLIFFS!

ALRIGHT, I'LL EXPLAIN TO YOU HOW THERE'S A WAY TO RUN AND ACHIEVE SPEEDS OF 40 KM/H ...
WHEN HUMANS RUN ...
IMPACT
KNEE
KNEE
THERE'S AN IMPACT WHEN THE FOOT HITS THE GROUND... THE FORCE OF THIS BLOW KNOCKS THE JOINTS AND ANY MUSCLES AROUND, CAUSING THEM TO BECOME FATIGUED.
IMPACT
IMPACT
ANKLE
ANKLE
THERE ISN'T A WAY AROUND IT, EVEN THE STRONGEST OF LEGS WILL GET TIRED!

SANDMAN'S LEG
THAT STYLE OF RUNNING !!
EVEN IF HIS HEEL TOUCHES THE GROUND, HE NEVER STEPS THROUGH
BUT IN SANDMAN'S CASE ...
FLOW OF THE IMPACT
WHEN HE RUNS, HIS HEEL TOUCHES THE GROUND FOR ONLY A BRIEF MOMENT ...
INTO THE GROUND
ENERGY FROM THE IMPACT
AND THUS THE IMPACT MOVES TO THE TIP OF HIS FEET ...
UNDER-STAND NOW?
THE FLOW OF IMPACT IS GOING BEHIND HIM, NOT IN FRONT!
AS SUCH, HIS FEET DON'T HAVE ANY DAMAGE NOR DO THEY FATIGUE ...
AND HE IS ABLE TO RECYCLE THIS FORCE AND USES IT TO ACCELER-ATE EVEN FURTHER!
AND THEN HE KICKS THE GROUND AT THAT EXACT MOMENT, USING THE FORCE FROM THE IMPACT TO PROPEL HIMSELF FORWARD!

AND WHEN LANDING, HE KICKS THE GROUND A FEW TIMES
ENERGY FROM THE IMPACT No. 1
ENERGY FROM THE IMPACT No. 2
ENERGY FROM THE IMPACT No. 3
ENERGY FROM THE IMPACT No. 4
LETTING OUT ENERGY AND REDUCING THE IMPACT AGAIN.
THIS WAY, HIS SPEED INCREASES EVERY TIME THAT HE KICKS OFF THE CLIFFS !!
THERE YOU HAVE IT!
THAT'S HOW HE'S GOING OVER 45 KM/H!
THE LONGER THAT HE'S IN THE AIR, THE MORE HIS MUSCLES ARE ABLE TO RELAX.
HIS HEELS ARE PROBABLY AS SOFT AND SMOOTH AS AN INFANT CHILD'S.
DOESN'T THAT MAKE YOU WANNA RUN LIKE THAT!
BUT YOU WOULD NEED VERY LONG LEGS AND INCREDIBLE AGILITY IN ORDER TO DO THAT.
THAT KIND OF RUNNING.
WHERE DID HE LEARN IT?
WHO KNOWS... HE PROBABLY LEARNED IT FROM HIS SURROUND-INGS.

AND NOW HE'S CLIMBING UP THE ROCKS !!
USING HIS HANDS, FEET, AND ALL THE MUSCLES IN HIS BODY, HE'S JUST LIKE A COUGAR.
HE DOESN'T PUT ANY FORCE ONTO HIS FEET AND HE'S MUCH FASTER HERE ON THE ROCKS.
SANDMAN'S STYLE PUTS THE ENTIRE EARTH ON HIS SIDE!
SO LONG AS STEEL BALL RUN USES THE LAND AS ITS STAGE, WE CAN'T PREDICT THE OUTCOME EVEN IF SWIFT HORSES ARE HIS ENEMY!

ドドドド
AFTER SANDMAN, IT'S POCOLOCO! AND ONLY A HORSE-LENGTH AWAY FROM HIM IS GYRO ZEPPELI!
ドドドド
THE REST HAVE ALSO FINISHED COMING DOWNHILL! WE'VE RUN NEARLY 13,000 METERS! THE WIND IS COMING FROM MEXICO! SANTANA IS BLOWING!
AFTER RESTING ON THAT HILL FOR A GOOD 1000 METERS ...
HE'S AHEAD OF ME ...
WHAT THE FUCK IS GOING ON HERE... SHIT...
HOW CAN WE EVEN BEGIN TO DICTATE THIS RACE ...

AND THAT RUNNING MAN ALSO TOOK A SHORTCUT OVER THAT CLIFF.
BUT THE 1ST STAGE'S ONLY REAL ENEMY IS THIS GUY ...
ONLY HIM ...
IN THE FOREST
THE DEAD COW
STOP-PING MY TRAP
TOO MANY COINCI-DENCES !!
SOME-THING MUST BE HELPING HIM ...
A LONG TIME AGO, IN A CASINO, I SAW A GUY BETTING ONLY ON RED AND HE WON 18 TIMES IN A ROW.
BUT IT WAS JUST LUCK.
SOME KIND OF POWER HAS TO BE SHIELDING THIS GUY!
WHAT I'M TRYING TO SAY IS THIS.
HOW CAN I FIX IT SO THAT HIS INCREDIBLE FLOW OF LUCK CHANGES SO THAT HE RUNS HIMSELF OVER INSTEAD.
HEY, POCO-LOCO.
YEA?

ALRIGHT! SO GO AHEAD, DO ANYTHING YOU WANT!
I WILL PROTECT YOU FROM EVERYTHING THERE IS.
KEEP ON RUSHING FORWARD!! AFTER ALL, THERE'S ONLY LUCK INSIDE YOUR BAG!
SOOO ...
OH!! YEAAAA!!
LET'S RUN!
MY HORSE HAS BEEN A SPRINTER EVER SINCE BIRTH.
IF I STARE AT HIS ASS THE WHOLE TIME... I CAN'T WIN!
EVEN IF I CAN'T DO ANYTHING TO HIM ...

HE'S GOING! HE'S JUMPED AHEAD!
GYRO HAS PICKED UP THE PACE YET AGAIN!
HE'S REALLY MOVING! ACCELER-ATING!!
BUT ISN'T THIS A LITTLE TOO SOON! IS IT ALRIGHT!? THERE'S MORE THAN 1500 METERS LEFT!
AND THE STRAIGHT-AWAY IS COMING UPPP !!!
THE STRAIGHT THIS IS!?

W.. WHAT THE HELLLL ...?
SO MANY PEOPLE ...
I... HAD NO IDEA.

WOW! THERE ARE SO MANY PEOPLE AT THE FINISH LINE!
THERE'S THE GOAL! IT'S BY AN ABANDONED CHURCH!
THERE'S A GIANT CROWD OF SPECTATORS GATHERED HERE ALL EAGER TO SEE THE WINNER OF THE 1ST STAGE!!
GOAL
STEEL BALL RUN RACE
IT'S REALLY HEATING UP! 10,000 PEOPLE! NO, WAIT! IT'S DEFINITELY OVER 20,000! WAY MORE THAN THE OPENING CEREMONY!
THIS IS IMPOSSIBLE! MIND BOGGLING! THERE'S NO WAY YOU CAN COUNT HOW MANY PEOPLE THERE ARE!

THE POSSIBIL-ITIES ARE ENDLESS! THIS IS WHAT STEEL BALL RUN IS ALL ABOUT!!
D... DID SOME-ONE CALL THEM ALL?
UN. UNBE-LIEVABLE! EVEN I
THE WINNER OF THIS RACE... WILL BE A WORLD RENOWN HERO!
HE WILL BE A HERO ...

ドドドド
YOU... RAN WELL.
OLD HORSE ...
ド
YOU'VE GAINED A LOT OF EXPERIENCE FROM THIS RACE.
RIDING ON THE ROUGH GROUND
GOING ACROSS THAT FOREST
AND RUSHING DOWNHILL WITH NO ERRORS
AND DESPITE HOW MUCH YOU'VE BEEN SWEATING ...
YOU CAN STILL KEEP ON GOING ...!
YOUR LEGS ARE IN PERFECT SHAPE !!

WE'RE ONLY 40-50 HORSE-LENGTHS AWAY!
BUT HE DASHED AHEAD TOO EARLY! HE'LL BE TIRED! LET'S SURPRISE HIM... GYRO ZEPPELI!
YOUR BREATHING IS ALSO IN GOOD SPIRITS!

H... HANG ON! EVERYONE LOOK!
D... DID YOU NOTICE... SHOCKING, INDEED!
PULL-ING AHEAD IN THE TRAILING GROUP ...
HE... HE'S MAKING HIS WAY THROUGH THE PACK!!

IT'S SIMPLY UNBE-LIEVABLE!! COMING FROM WAY BEHIND !!
THIS GUY IS ...

DIO OOOO !!
DIO IS HERE! DIEGO BRANDO HAS CAUGHT UP TO ME!!
PUSHED BEHIND EVERYONE WITH THE DESTRUCTION OF THE BRIDGE.
AND HE'S JUST CAUGHT UP! HOW IN THE WORLD DID HE GAIN BACK ALL THE GROUND THAT HE LOST! HE'S ALREADY PAID BACK ALL HIS LOANS!!
AGAIN! HE PASSES ON BY!
DIO IS CATCHING UP!!
HE'S BREAKING THROUGH!
THIS GUY ...
HE'S USING THAT TECHNIQUE ...!?
HE CAME FORWARD USING THIS ...

RIDING BEHIND THE LEADING HORSE, WHERE THE WIND IS COMPLETELY BLOCKED.
AVOIDING THE FATIGUE THAT'S CAUSED BY THE AIR PRESSURE... SO THAT'S HOW HE'S BEEN ABLE TO KEEP ON OVERTAKING ALL OF THE OTHER RIDERS OUT HERE...!!
AIR PRES-SURE SHIELD !!
IT'S AN EXTREMELY DANGEROUS MANEUVER THAT TAKES AMAZING SKILL TO USE!!
IS HE GONNA USE MY HORSE AS A SHIELD TOO!?
BUT I'VE ALREADY DECIDED TO OVERTAKE GYRO NO MATTER WHAT...

HM!

THE TRAILING GROUPS ARE FINALLY ARRIVING!!
ジャイロ
ポコロコ
ジョニィ
ディオ
OOH! THEY'RE SPEEDING UP!
THEY'RE NO LONGER HOLDING THEIR HORSES BACK!
FROM GYRO DOWN TO THE BOTTOM OF THIS MOUNTAIN, THERE'S AN ENTIRE RIVER OF RIDERS ON THE MOVE!!
AND POCOLOCO HAS JUST CHALLENGED GYRO!!
IT DOESN'T CHANGE THE FACT THAT THIS IS WHAT I WAS EXPECT-ING.
SINCE THE VERY BEGINNING OF THE RACE.
AT LEAST, I THINK SO...

# IGNITION-ONE

WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

SCANNER: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATORS:
ORA2 & ONIMARU
EDITOR: PUAR

RYUUSEI NO AI GA KIMI NI ISSHUN NO HIKARI OKUTTERU... YEAH!

THERE'S ONLY A LITTLE UNDER 1,000 METERS LEFT UNTIL THE GOAL!
GYRO IS TWISTING HIS BODY WAAAAY BACK TO LOOK BEHIND HIM!
IT'S LIKE HE'S MEASURING UP THE DISTANCE BETWEEN HIM AND THE REAR GROUP...
IS HE ANXIOUS!? OR DOES HE THINK HE CAN AFFORD TO DO THIS!?
#11 THE FINAL STRETCH 1,000 METERS LEFT

CUTTING THROUGH THE MEXICAN WIND SANTANA, THE FLOOD OF RIDERS DRIVE TOWARDS THE END GOAL!!
WHAT FURIOUS MOMEN-TUM!!
THE SHOUTS FROM THE CROWD AT THE GOAL ARE LIKE A GREAT TSUNAMI!!
WE CAN'T EVEN HEAR THE SOUND OF THE ARRIVING TRAIN!
JOHNNY
DIO
GYRO
POCOLOCO
IGNITION-ONE
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM
SCANNER: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATOR: ORA2
EDITOR: PUAR

DAMN... THIS BRIT JOCKEY, DIEGO BRANDO!
I OUTRUN HIM AND I OUTRUN HIM, BUT HE KEEPS ON USING MY HORSE AS A WINDSHIELD AND HE JUST WON'T GO AWAY!!
HE'S PLANNING ON LETTING ME LEAD UNTIL THE GOAL, AND THEN PASSING ALL OF THE OTHERS AT THE LAST MINUTE ...
STAYING THIS WAY, THROUGH ALL OF THIS WIND ...
GYRO SHOULD ALREADY BE AT HIS LIMIT! AND IF ANYONE IS GOING TO BEAT GYRO ZEPPELI...!!
BUT NO WAY IN HELL AM I GONNA LET THAT HAPPEN!
WHAT !?
HIS HORSE JUST SANK !?

IT'S GONNA BE ME, JOHN-NY JOE-STAR !!
!!
AAH
UGH !!
R... ROCKS!

HE EVEN KICKED UP SOME ROCKS AT ME WHEN HE SPED UP!!
THIS GUY! WAS HE A PROFESSION-AL JOCKEY!?
HE PROTECTED HIMSELF AGAINST MY WINDSHIELD ATTACK!
TO THINK THAT SOMEONE OUTSIDE THE TRADITIONAL BRITISH RACING WORLD HAD SKILLS LIKE THIS!
OH NO! WE CAN NOW SEE A FEW HORSES COLLAPS-ING!!
THEY'LL GET CAUGHT UP IN THE FALL!
THERE ARE A FEW MORE HORSES THAT ARE LEANING! LOOK, THEY'RE LEANING!

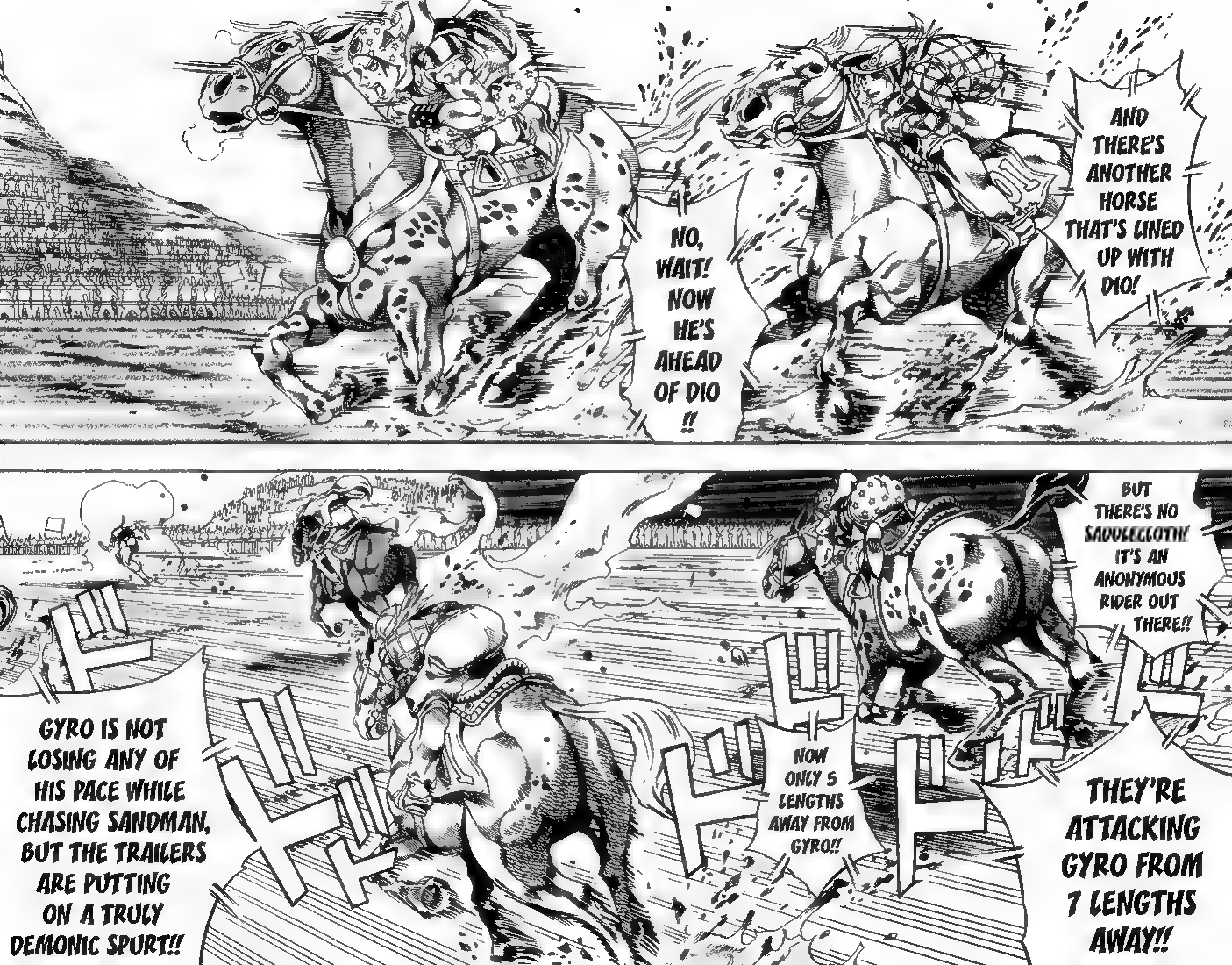
ALL OF THE HORSES ARE EX-HAUSTED!
THEY'VE ALL RUN FOR 14,000 METERS NON-STOP! THEIR LEVEL OF CONCENTRATION WAS AT MAX FOR THE FULL LENGTH OF THIS DEADLY BATTLE!
AND THEY'RE EXHAUST-ED!!
THERE ARE A FEW HORSES OUT THERE THAT ARE JUST REFUSING TO RUN ANYMORE!
ALL OF THE HORSES ON THE FILED ARE ALREADY AT THEIR LIMITS!!
YOUR AIM MUST BE TO AVOID THAT KIND OF DANGER!
THE GOAL IS TO GAIN GROUND FROM THERE ON OUT!!

LOOKS LIKE FROM HERE ON ...
TECHNIQUE IS GOING TO JUST BE USELESS ...
LEG POWER IS ALL THAT'S LEFT.
HOW MUCH LEG POWER WAS I ABLE TO SAVED REACHING HERE...!!
THAT'S IT!! WHAT'S STILL LEFT IN THE HORSE'S LEGS! THAT WILL BE THE KEY TO VICTORY!
HEY, POCO-LOCO ...
GO LEFT!
HUH ...?
BUT WHY!?
!?
JUST GO TO THE LEFT ALREADY!!
GO AROUND TO THE LEFT OF HIM.

THAT'S RIGHT, POCOLOCO! SAY, "YO! YO! YO!" JUST LIKE THAT!
BUT I'M A LUCKY GUY, RIGHT!? I'M PROMISED THAT, RIGHT!?
SO I CAN DO ANYTHING I WANT.
Oaaa OKAY!
MY HORSE IS AT ITS LIMIT TOO!
YO!
YOOO
YO!
......

AND HERE'S SANDMAN COMING DOWN OFF THE CLIFFS AND HE REJOINS THE LEAD GROUP!!

WITH HIS MUSCLES NEARLY EXPLODING, SANDMAN IS BACK! HE'S AHEAD OF GYRO! HE REJOINED AT THE FRONT OF THE PACK!
HE'S ABOUT 8 LENGTHS AHEAD!!
AND HE'S SUCCESSFULLY REJOINED WHILE GOING FOR THE GOAL! HE'S GOING AT LEAST 40KM PER HOUR!!
IS THIS REALLY A MAN RUNNING?
SANDMAN! CAN HE HOLD UP AGAINST ALL THESE HORSES UNTIL THE GOAL!? CAN HE PULL AWAY!?
BUT THERE ARE NO MORE SHORTCUTS!
AND NOW DIO'S OUT!
DIO HAS JUMPED OUT NOW!
AND THERE'S ABOUT 300 'TIL THE GOAL! DIO'S AT SUCH AN AMAZING PACE!


AND THERE'S ANOTHER HORSE THAT'S LINED UP WITH DIO!
NO, WAIT! NOW HE'S AHEAD OF DIO !!
BUT THERE'S NO SADDLECLOTH! IT'S AN ANONYMOUS RIDER OUT THERE!!
THEY'RE ATTACKING GYRO FROM 7 LENGTHS AWAY!!
NOW ONLY 5 LENGTHS AWAY FROM GYRO!!
GYRO IS NOT LOSING ANY OF HIS PACE WHILE CHASING SANDMAN, BUT THE TRAILERS ARE PUTTING ON A TRULY DEMONIC SPURT!!

AND POCOLOCO IS TRYING TO PASS GYRO FROM THE LEFT!!

FOUR RIDERS ARE ALL ABOUT TO ATTACK THE LEADING SANDMAN!
GYRO'S JUST 3 LENGTHS AWAY FROM THE SAND-MAN!

THEY ARE ALL LINED UP!
ALL LINED UP!
THEY'RE ALL LINED UP IN A ROW!
THEY ARE ALL LINED UP!
AND THE FOUR HORSEMEN ARE LINED UP ON SANDMAN'S TAIL!!
I'VE NO HOMELAND TO RETURN BACK TO.
BUT, SIS... I... I AM DEFINITELY GOING TO WIN THIS RACE...
FOR THE SPIRITS OF THE EARTH... AND FOR THE SPIRITS OF MY FATHER AND ANCESTORS...
PLEASE GIVE ME STRENGTH AND YOUR COURAGE!!

THERE'S ONLY 100 METERS LEFT!!
WAIT! GYRO'S SLIGHTLY AHEAD !!
GOAL
AND NOW DIO'S COMING OUT!
AND SANDMAN SPEEDS UP ONCE AGAIN !!
ALL FOUR HORSES ARE LINED UP SIDE BY SIDE AT THE NOSE!
JUST RIDE UP HERE! THERE'LL BE A DEAD TREE BURIED IN THE GROUND!!
THIS IS GOOD! YOU'LL BE THE WINNER!
DON'T HOLD BACK ANY !!
OKAY, POCO-LOCO.
IT'S BECOME ONE FIERCE BATTLE IN FRONT OF THE GOAL !!
WHO WILL END UP BEING IN 1ST PLACE!?

POCOLOCO HAS JUST SLIPPED A- ...HUH!?
HE SLIPPED OUT!
AND NOW HE'S UP AHEAD!
EH?
WHAT'S THIS... POCOLOCO JUMPED !!
IT'S A DEAD TREE!
HE RAN ON THE DEAD TREE, USING IT LIKE A SPRINGBOARD TO VAULT HIS HORSE!

NO, WAIT! THAT'S WRONG!
POCOLOCO ISN'T THE ONE WHO SLIPPED AHEAD!
IT'S NOT POCO-LOCO!
GAH ...
I WON BACK AT THE DOWNHILL, SO WHY'S HE OUT IN FRONT !?
THIS JUST CAN'T BE! HE SHOULD HAVE NO LEG POWER LEFT AT ALL!
HE WAS FLOGGING IT WAY TOO MUCH BACK ON THE STRAIGHT-AWAY TOO!!
HE SHOULDN'T HAVE BEEN ABLE TO PUSH THROUGH!
WHA... WHAT IN THE HELL IS UP WITH THIS GUY!?

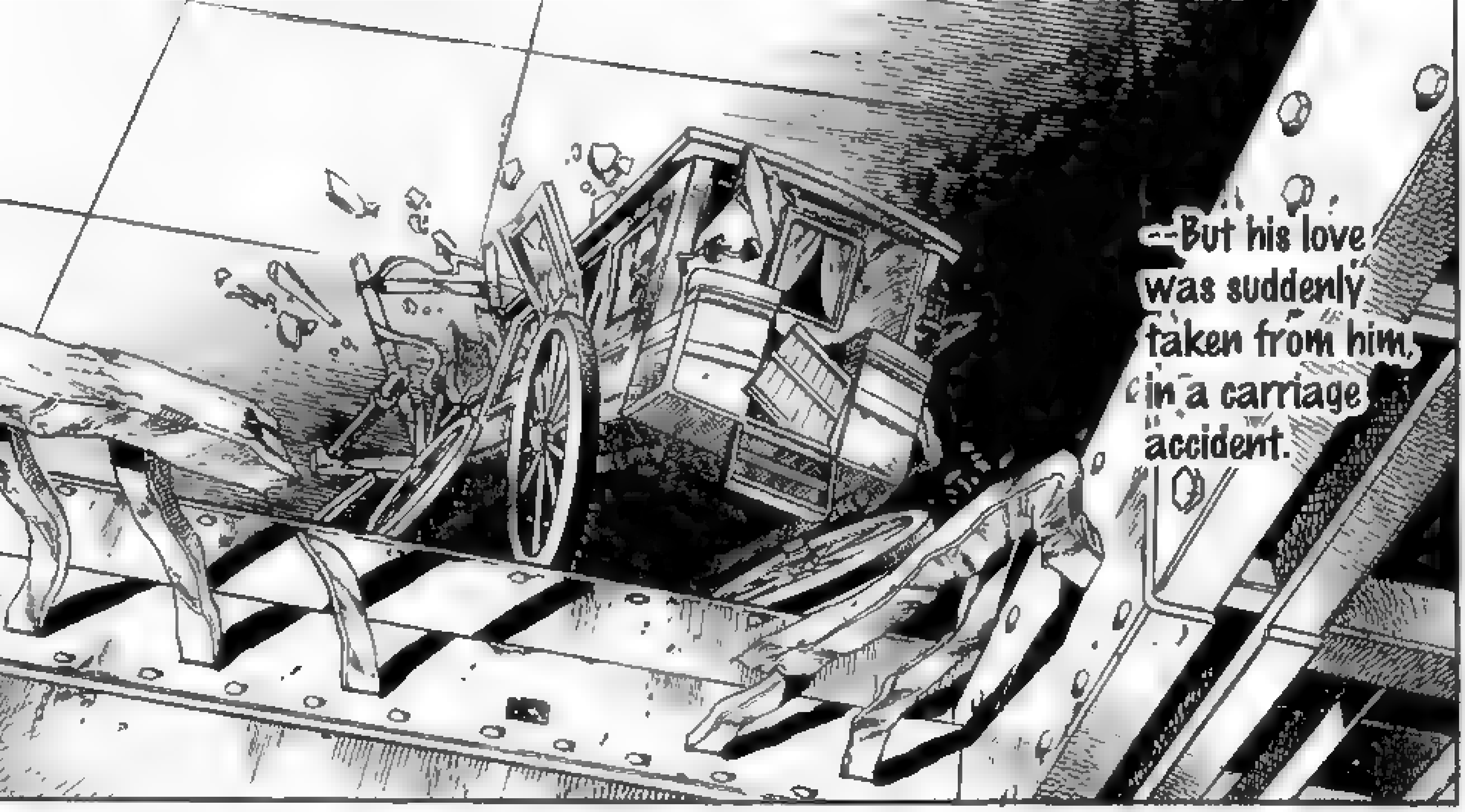
JOHNNY JOESTAR.
I'M AMAZED ...
YOU DID WELL CATCHING UP WITH ME.
BY THE WAY, KID ...
EVER RIDE ON A SHIP? I'VE BEEN ON ONE BEFORE.
DID YOU KNOW
THE MORE HEADWINDS THAT A SAILING VESSEL GETS ON ITS SAILS ...
THE FASTER IT WILL GO.
AND THIS HEAD-WIND!
THE HEAD-WIND FROM MEXICO ...
WAS THERE TO HELP MY HORSE ...
RIGHT FROM THE VERY START!
!?

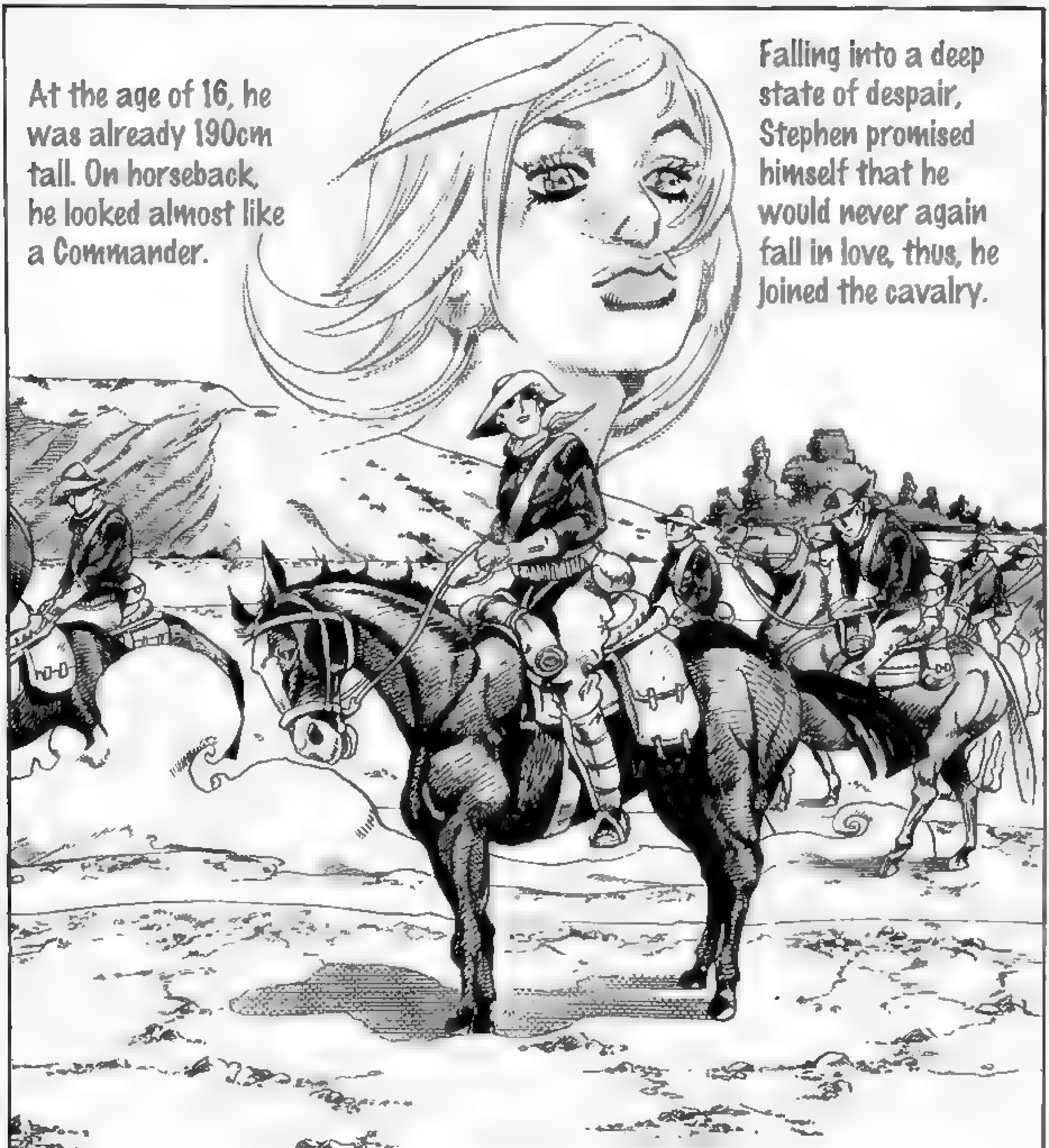
WHO'S THIS MAN? TO THINK A JOCKEY LIKE HIM EXISTS IN THIS WORLD!!
WHAT'S THIS GUY TALKING ABOUT...?
WHAT THE HELL'S HE RAMBLING ABOUT!?
GOAL
STEEL BALL RUN RACE
30 LEFT!
HERE HE COMES! YES, HE'S COMING!
HE'S PULLING AWAY AND HOLDING THEM BACK AS HE PUSHES THROUGH!!
50 METERS TO THE GOAL NOW!
THE... THE STEEL BALL!! HE'S WRAPPED IT WITH THE STEEL BALL IN ORDER TO MAKE A SAIL...
N-NO WAY!
THE CAPE ON HIS BACK...

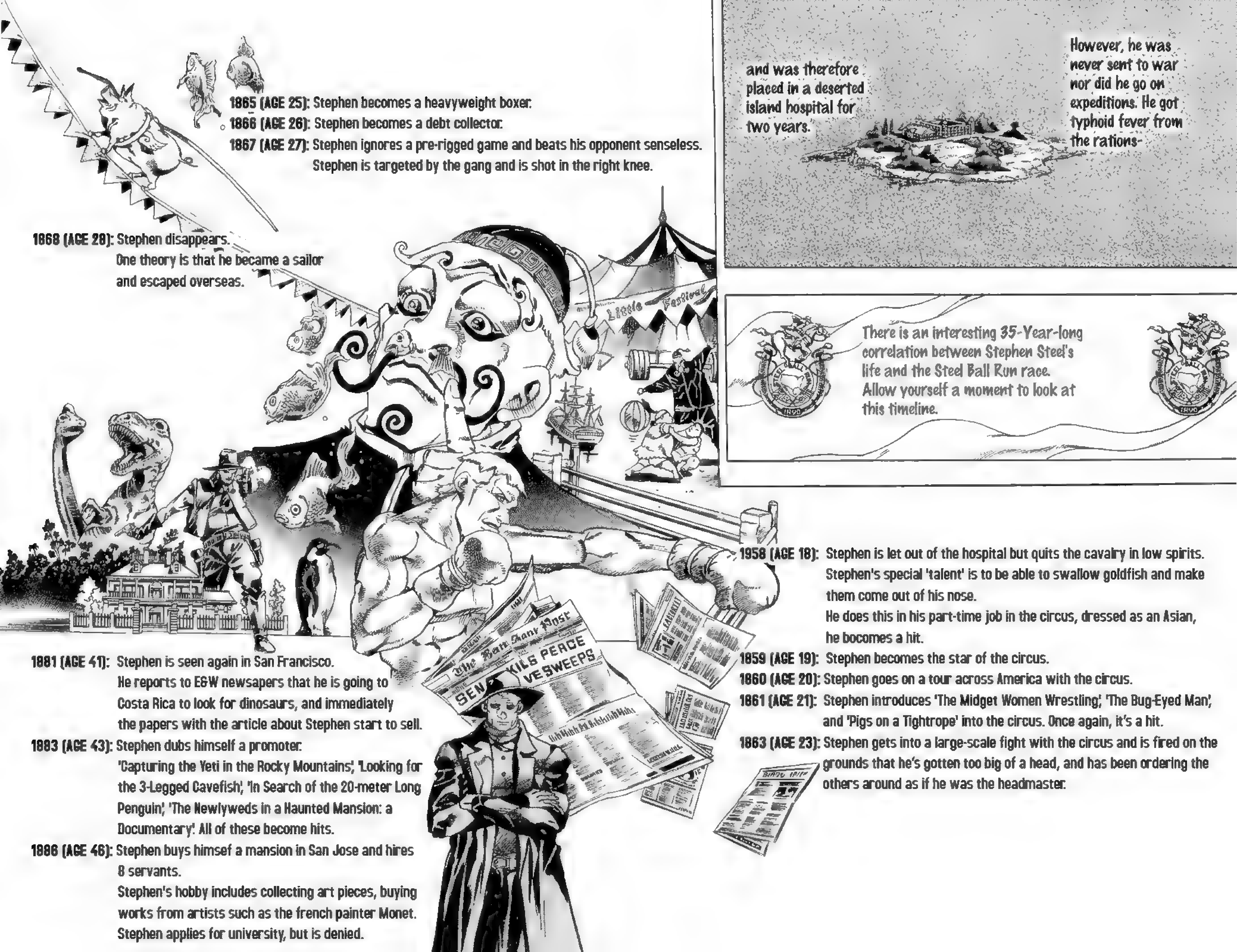
LIKE IT'S A SAILING VESSEL ...
THIS IS THE POWER OF THE WIND... THE HEAD-WIND FROM MEXICO...
AND HE'S PASSING RIGHT THROUGH! HE'S PASSING THROUGH! HE'S CLOSED IN ON THE GOAL!!

② 1st.STAGE 15,000メートル(完)

EXTRA STORY:
~THE DETAILS BEHIND THE OPENING OF THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE~
THE STORY OF STEPHEN STEEL (51), THE PROMOTER OF THIS RACE IS AS FOLLOWS
Stephen was born in NY in 1804, the fourth child out of seven, to an Irish immigrant family. His father was a poor blacksmith.
When Stephen was 15, he fell in love with a beautiful daughter of a florist and the two vowed to be together.


--But his love was suddenly taken from him, in a carriage accident.


At the age of 16, he was already 190cm tall. On horseback, he looked almost like a Commander.
Falling into a deep state of despair, Stephen promised himself that he would never again fall in love, thus, he joined the cavalry.


However, he was never sent to war nor did he go on expeditions. He got typhoid fever from the rations-
and was therefore placed in a deserted island hospital for two years.
There is an interesting 35-Year-long correlation between Stephen Steel's life and the Steel Ball Run race. Allow yourself a moment to look at this timeline.
1958 (AGE 18): Stephen is let out of the hospital but quits the cavalry in low spirits. Stephen's special 'talent' is to be able to swallow goldfish and make them come out of his nose. He does this in his part-time job in the circus, dressed as an Asian, he bocomes a hit.
1859 (AGE 19): Stephen becomes the star of the circus.
1860 (AGE 20): Stephen goes on a tour across America with the circus.
1861 (AGE 21): Stephen introduces 'The Midget Women Wrestling', 'The Bug-Eyed Man', and 'Pigs on a Tightrope' into the circus. Once again, it's a hit.
1863 (AGE 23): Stephen gets into a large-scale fight with the circus and is fired on the grounds that he's gotten too big of a head, and has been ordering the others around as if he was the headmaster.
1865 (AGE 25): Stephen becomes a heavyweight boxer.
1866 (AGE 26): Stephen becomes a debt collector.
1867 (AGE 27): Stephen ignores a pre-rigged game and beats his opponent senseless. Stephen is targeted by the gang and is shot in the right knee.
1868 (AGE 28): Stephen disappears. One theory is that he became a sailor and escaped overseas.
1881 (AGE 41): Stephen is seen again in San Francisco. He reports to E&W newsapers that he is going to Costa Rica to look for dinosaurs, and immediately the papers with the article about Stephen start to sell.
1883 (AGE 43): Stephen dubs himself a promoter. 'Capturing the Yeti in the Rocky Mountains', 'Looking for the 3-Legged Cavefish', 'In Search of the 20-meter Long Penguin', 'The Newlyweds in a Haunted Mansion: a Documentary'. All of these become hits.
1886 (AGE 46): Stephen buys himsef a mansion in San Jose and hires 8 servants. Stephen's hobby includes collecting art pieces, buying works from artists such as the french painter Monet. Stephen applies for university, but is denied.

The tides turned against him, and he was treated like a petty scammer.
Though Stephen had nothing to do with this scandal. He was also dubbed a fraud.
But one day, someone tried to sell a story about 'aliens', when in reality it was just a shaved monkey.
And this was when it came to him. That's right! When he was 'still young'... the one thing he wasn't able to do in the 'cavalry'...
'A long-distance HORSE RIDE!
'I should organize a long-distance race'!
Forced to sell his mansion and buried in debt, Stephen was hurled into darkness again...
No one was willing to listen to him.
I WAS NOT LIKE THAT.
MY STORIES WERE ABOUT FANTASY
Not having eaten and severely drunk, he sat by the edge of the street...
Although he searched for sponsors every day, all they did was scoff at him.
But his reliability factor was at an all-time low.

IF YOU'RE GOING TO PLAN A RACE, IT SHOULD BE ACROSS THE ENTIRE AMERICAN CONTINENT!
AND THE WINNINGS SHOULD BE HUUUUUGE! LIKE, 50 MILLION DOLLARS!
REAL DREAMS SHOULD BE THAT BIG!
A little girl who was listening to his mumbling was talking to him...
WHAT IDIOT WOULD SPONSOR A STUPID PROPOSAL LIKE THAT?!
WA HA HA HA HA!!!
GO AWAY! LEAVE ME ALONE!
AFTER THAT, HE RETURNED TO THE BAR, GOT INTO A FIGHT AND SLEPT BEHIND THE URINALS.
The next day, when he woke up,
There were several men surrounding him in a group.

UH ...
WH... WHAT IS IT?
YOU WANNA FIGHT? LET'S GO, THEN!
WE WANT TO HEAR YOUR STORY...
THE ONE YOU WERE TALKING ABOUT IN THE BAR LAST NIGHT.
CAN YOU REALLY DO IT? ORGANIZE A 'CROSS-CONTINENTAL RACE'...!
WE'RE FROM E&W PAPERS...
AND WE KNOW THAT THE AGE OF SPORTS IS COMING... WE'RE WILLING TO SPONSOR YOUR CAUSE.
WHAT ...?
The story had spread and had gradually gotten bigger and bigger. The number of sponsors inflated to 20, including large companies, and the prize money was, in fact, 50 million dollars. The race was to begin in two years.

THAT GIRL I MET IN THE STREET.. SHE WAS THE ONE THAT GAVE ME MY 'CHANCE'...
THAT'S RIGHT....! I SHOULD GO THANK HER...
And two years later...
he remembered.
AND SHE WAS... IDENTICAL TO HIS FIRST LOVE, BACK WHEN HE WAS STILL A YOUNG MAN.
AND WHEN HE MET HER AGAIN, SHE WAS GROWN UP.
That's how it seemed to Stephen...

STEPHEN STEEL'S FANTASY...

EXTRA STORY:
-THE DETAILS BEHIND THE OPENING OF THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE- END

## CREDITS

Translation: Freshy

Proofreading: ack44

Editing: Frequency

to be continued...

next 2nd STAGE!!

JUMP COMICS

# STEEL BALL RUN

2ND STAGE – ACROSS THE ARIZONA DESERT

vol.3

## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

GYRO ZEPPELI!!
GYRO ZEPPELI!!
THE END OF THE FIRST STAGE SEES THE BIRTH OF A NEW KING!!
TO THE VICTOR GOES $10,000, A 1 HR. TIME BONUS AND 100 POINTS!!
THE WINNER OF THE 1ST STAGE IS GYRO ZEPPELI!! AND SO A NEW STAGE WILL START!!
THE WINNER OF STAGE ONE IS ... GYYYRRRROOOO ZEEEPPPEELLLLLIII!
スティール・ボール・ラン
STEEL BALL RUN

STEEL BALL RUN
#12 1ST STAGE
DISQUALIFIED
FROM VICTORY
IGNITION-ONE
HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM
IN A JOINT ADVENTURE WITH
KNOCKOUT!SCANS
NEOSHWEATY.PROBOARDS53.COM
HIROHIKO ARAKI
荒木飛呂彦
&LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

IN SECOND, THE ONE AND ONLY SWIFT RUNNER, SANDMAN!
IN THIRD, THE CARE-LESS BLACK COMET, POCOLOCO!
W-WAIT!
DIEGO BRANDO?!
THE JUDGES ARE DISCUSSING THE RECENT TURN OF EVENTS ...
AND SO, AND SO BECAUSE OF A DISCREPANCY, WE ARE RE-JUDGING THE PLACEMENTS.

THE DELIBERATION CONTINUES
THE DECISION OF THE 5 JUDGES COMBINED WITH THE EVIDENCE FROM THE NEW CAMERA TECHNOLOGY WILL BE USED TO DETERMINE THE WINNER.
PLEASE WAIT A LITTLE WHILE ...
THE OTHER RACERS APPROACH THE GOAL.
THE STEEL BALL RUN IS USING A POINTS SYSTEM.
FIRST PLACE IS AWARDED 100 POINTS, SECOND 50 POINTS, THIRD 40 POINTS AND SO ON. THE RACERS ARE AWARDED POINT UNTIL THE 21ST RACER. THE GOAL OF THE RACE IS IN NEW YORK. ON THE WAY, THERE ARE 9 STAGES, AND THE POINTS LEADER AT THE END OF THESE 9 STAGES WILL BE NAMED THE WINNER.

...
THE FOOD AND DRINK ARE FREE FOR THE PARTICIPANTS.
I'LL TAKE.
OKAY, ALL OF YOU SPONSORS ...
IT'S THE END OF THE FIRST STAGE, SO I'VE PREPARED SOME EXPENSIVE FRENCH CHAMPAGNE.
TODAY'S RACE ENDS HERE.
WE'LL CAMP HERE TONIGHT. THE 2ND STAGE WILL START TOMORROW AT 10 AM.
MR. STEEL ...
I HAVE SOME INFORMATION ON GYRO ZEPPELI'S BACKGROUND.

IMMIGRATION HAS HIS INFORMATION.
HE DEPARTED GENOVA, ITALY IN MAY AND ARRIVED IN THIS COUNTRY ON MAY 22.
!
HE'S A FOREI-GNER?!
FAR FROM IT! HIS SHIP WAS NEITHER AN IMMIGRANT SHIP NOR A CARGO SHIP.
YOU'RE SAYING HE'S NOT A COWBOY OR GUNMAN?!
GYRO ENTERED THIS COUNTRY ON A SHIP OWNED BY A ROYAL FAMILY FROM SOME COUNTRY IN EUROPE.

... ROYALTY?
SO, WHAT DOES THAT MEAN?
LIKE A GOVERNMENT'S VIP OR WEALTHY PERSON...WHY WOULD A WEALTHY PERSON PARTICIPATE IN THIS RACE? SOME MIGHT ASK THAT QUESTION.
ANYWAY ...
WHY DONT YOU ASK ZEPPELI DIRECTLY, "WHO ARE YOU?"
HIS RACING APPLICATION WAS BLANK.
IF HE IS A FOREIGNER, WHY IS HE HIDING IN THE BACKGROUND? EVEN IF WE ASK HIM HE MIGHT NOT ANSWER.
THE 2ND STAGE IS THE LONG-DISTANCE 1200 KILOMETER PORTION OF THE RACE. FROM THE NEXT STAGE ON, WE'LL TAKE BETS ON WHO WILL BE IN FIRST PLACE NATIONWIDE.
FIND OUT GYRO ZEPPELI'S INFORMATION. GOT IT?
ALRIGHT, THE RESULTS ARE IN!
I WILL ANNOUNCE THEM.

BY DELIBERATION ...
GYRO ZEPPELI WAS IN FIRST PLACE,
BUT BECAUSE HE DISRUPTED SANDMAN DURING THE RACE ...
HE WILL INCUR A PENALTY.
!
HE IS UNABLE TO GET FIRST PLACE IN THIS ROUND.
I WILL REPEAT!

AS REPORTED BY THE JUDGE IN THE AIR BALLOON, GYRO ZEPELLI DISRUPTED THE RACE WITH SOME KIND OF WEAPON.
IT OCCURRED AT THE 13,000 METER MARK ...
AROUND THE END OF THE DOWNHILL POINT OF THE RACE.
THAT'S WHY ...
GYRO ZEPPELI HAS BEEN LOWERED 20 PLACES AS A PENALTY.
A WEA-PON?
SECOND PLACE WILL BE RAISED TO FIRST.

WHAT?
DEMOTED?
...
THE WINNER OF THE FIRST STAGE IS SAAAAND MAAAAN!!
RISING THE RANKS... IT'S SANDMAN!
THAT'S THE DECISION!

SANDMAN
DIEGO BRANDO
POCO LOCO
MOUNTAIN TIM
STAR
PANTS
ROHEIM
SECOND WILL BE DIO, DIEGO BRANDO.
HE WAS SLOWED DOWN AT THE DRIED UP RIVER. HOWEVER, BECAUSE HE IS THE PRINCE OF HORSE RACING IN ENGLAND, HE CLOSED THE FAP RIGHT BEFORE THE GOAL LINE, AS EXPECTED!
THIRD WILL BE POCO LOCO.
YES! LUCKY!
I BEAT PEOPLE LIKE GYRO!
YOUR ATTENTION PLEASE. MOUNTAIN TIM IS IN FOURTH PLACE, OUR FELLOW COWBOY SOMEHOW MANAGED TO GET HIS HORSE TO STICK IT'S NOSE OUT TO THE FINISH LINE.
GYRO DISRUPTED THE RACE?

# FIRST STAGE: 15,000 METERS. SAN DIEGO BEACH TO SANTA MARIA NOVELA CHURCH

TOTAL PARTICIPANTS 3852 | START TIME 9 28 1890

RETIRED 82 | 10 00 AM

| PLACE | NAME | CNTY. | HORSE NAME | HOR. AGE | TIME/ TIME [redacted] LEADER (MIN.) | BREED | POINTS | BONUS |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | SANDMAN | AMER | NOT RIDING ONE | / | 18 MIN 09 SEC | / | 100 | TIME BONUS 1HR MONEY BONUS $ 0,000 |
| 2 | DIEGO BRANDO | GREAT BRIT | SILVER BULLET | 4 | BY A NOSE | ARAB THOROUGHBRED | 50 | |
| 3 | POCOLOCO | AMER. | HEY YA! | 4 | BY A NOSE | QUARTER HORSE | 40 | |
| 4 | MOUNTAIN TIM | AMER. | GHOST RIDER IN THE SKY | 5 | BY A NOSE | MUSTANG | 35 | |
| 5 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | AMER | SLOW DANCER | 11 | BY A NECK | APALUSA | 30 | |
| 6 | F V STROHEIM | GER | GET UP | 3 | 2 5 | MUSTANG | 25 | |
| 7 | HOT PANTS | ? | EUROPE EXPRESS | 4 | 3 25 | TRAKEHNER | 20 | |
| 8 | DIXIE CHICKEN | AMER | RAMBLING MAN | 4 | 5 | PINTO | 15 | |
| 9 | BENJAMIN BOOM BOOM | AMER. | CROSSTOWN TRAFFIC | 4 | 8 25 | QUARTER HORSE | 13 | |
| 10 | ANDRE BOOM BOOM | AMER | FOXY LADY | 3 | 8 50 | QUARTER HORSE | 12 | |
| 11 | L A BOOM BOOM | AMER | LITTLE WING | 3 | 8 75 | QUARTER HORSE | 11 | |
| 12 | ZENYATTA MONDATTA | INDIA | ROXANNE | 5 | 11 | ARAB | 10 | |
| 13 | CARAVAN SARAI | MEX | MOON FLOWER | 4 | 13 | ANDALUSIA | 09 | |
| 14 | BABA YAGA | RUS | NIGHT-ROCKER | 5 | 13 50 | ARAB | 08 | |
| 15 | NELLYVILLE | AMER | COUNTRY GRAMMER | 4 | 13 75 | QUARTER HORSE | 07 | |
| 16 | DOT HAN | ? | #1 | 4 | 15 | [illegible] | 06 | |
| 17 | GAUCHO | SPAIN | PEG | 6 | 17 | CREOLE | 05 | |
| 18 | MRS ROBINSON | MEX | EL CONDOR PASA | 7 | 17 25 | APALUSA | 04 | |
| 19 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | JAPAN | HONOO (FLAME) | 4 | 21 | BARBARIAN WARM BLOOD | 03 | |
| 20 | SLOOP JOHN B | AMER. | CATCH A WAVE | 4 | 23 | QUARTER HORSE | 02 | |
| 21 | GYRO ZEPPELI | UNK | VALKYRIE | 4 | PENALTY LOWERED 20 PLACES | STOCK HORSE | 01 | |
| 22 | BARRY WHITE | AMER. | LOVE UNLIMITED | 5 | 28 | MUSTANG | 00 | |
| 23 | IGLESIAS | PORTUGAL | NATALIE | 5 | 35 | PALAMINO | 00 | |

GO! GO! ZEPPELI

MR. ZEPPELI?
YOU HAVE SOMETHING TO COMPLAIN ABOUT?
NORMALLY, YOU WOULD BE DISQUALIFIED BECAUSE YOU DISRUPTED THE RACE WITH A WEAPON.
I GOT NUTHIN' REALLY.
THAT WAS THE PAST. WE CANT DO ANYTHING NOW EXCEPT LOOK TO TOMORROW.
I WONT TALK TO YOU ANYMORE.

I'M HERE TO MAKE MYSELF FEEL BETTER. THAT'S ALL. THAT'S ALL I WANT TO SAY.
GO CELEBRATE WITH SOME CHAMPAGNE.
UM ...
WERENT YOU SUPPOSED TO ASK WHO HE WAS MR STEEL?
HUH?
THAT'S RIGHT!
HEY!
WAIT!
UWAGH!
?
WHAT THE ?

AAAAH!
AAAAH!
HEY, HEY...!
WHAT IS THIS?
WAIT A SECOND, THAT'S $500 CHAMPAGNE!
IS THIS TO PISS ME OFF?
IS IT ALL GOING TO SPILL OUT?!
OH SHIT! WHAT THE HELL'S HE DOING? HOLD THEM DOWN!
HEY YOU! DONT SPILL AND THAT'S AN ORDER!

....
HEH
IT DIDNT SPILL.
?
I FEEL A LITTLE BETTER NOW.
HEY, YOU WANNA COME TO...
THE NEXT STAGE,
JOHNNY JOESTAR?

...
LESSON 2 IS TO WORK THOSE ...
THAT'S FINE, I GUESS.
MUSCLES.
I'LL SHOW YOU WHAT I CAN DO!
OF COURSE!

YOU READY? FOR EXAMPLE, IF I GRAB YOUR WRIST LIKE THIS ...
HOLDING THE WRIST TIGHTLY LIKE THIS,
THE MUSCLE AUTOMATICALLY KNOWS TO BEND.
THE FLESH INSTINCTIVELY PROTECTS THE BODY BY WOUNDING THE MUSCLE.
AND THAT'S NATURE FOR YOU.
THE STEEL BALL WILL NOT LET YOU DO THAT.
CONTROL THE SKIN! IF THE SKIN IS UNDER AN UNUSUAL SITUATION, THE MUSCLE WONT ACT UPON IT.
ONLY ON THE SKIN ...
YOU WANNA TRY? IF YOU'RE NOT SCARED THAT IS ...
IN YOUR HAND IS A REVOLVING CORK.

THAT'S HOW YOU *GET OFF* A HORSE.
THE HORSE'S MUSCLE ISNT ACTING UPON IT.
IT WONT LET IT DO THAT EVEN IF YOU DIDNT HAVE A WEAPON, THE *SPINNING* STRENGTH IS THE WEAPON.
JOHNNY JOESTAR, THE 2ND STAGE IS A DESERT CROSSING WITH A DISTANCE OF 1.200 KM.
IT LOOKS TOUGH.
LET'S WRAP THIS UP.
IT'LL BE A ONE-TWO FINISH... I'LL BE FIRST THOUGH.
HEEY. SHERIFF!

WHY DID YOU MAKE US RETURN TO THE RACING COURSE IN THIS KIND OF CARRIAGE?
SHERIFF, DO YOU HAVE SOMETHING YOU WANT TO SAY TO ME?
I WANT TO TALK ABOUT SOME BODIES THAT'VE BEEN FOUND.
MR. STEEL.
I'M BUSY YOU KNOW!
THEN, WHAT'S THIS ABOUT?!
THE TRUTH IS, I DIDNT WANT A LADY HERE EITHER.
IT'S NOT GOOD TO HAVE THE NEWSPAPER REPORTERS AROUND HERE.
WE HAVE HORSES THAT CAN RUN UP TO 90 KILOMETERS.
WHAT'S THE CONDITION OF THE HORSES?
...

AT THE TIME THE JOCKEY'S EYESIGHT FROM THE GROUND IS ABOUT 2 METERS AND 50 CENTIMETERS HIGH AND THEY'RE AT FLYING SPEEDS!
WHAT ABOUT THE RACE? IT'S A DANGEROUS SPORT, YOU KNOW! THE PARTICIPANTS ALL SIGNED A CONTRACT KNOWING THAT!
ガラ ガラ
ガラ ガラ
WE'RE HERE. THIS IS THE SPOT.
JUST WHAT THE HELL IS HERE?!
YOU SHOULD BE ABLE TO SEE IT, MR STEEL.
RIGHT IN FRONT OF YOUR EYES, SIR

WH-WHAT THE HELL IS THIS?
HUH?
!?

RETURN MY WIFE TO THE TRAIN STATION!
TAKE HER BACK NOOOW!
SHERIFF

WHAT IS THIS?!
WHO THE HELL ARE THESE PEOPLE?
THERE ARE 3 OF THEM?!
ALL THREE OF THESE PEOPLE WERE PARTICIPANTS IN THE RACE.
THE GUY'S NAME ON THIS SIDE IS MARK BAKER. THE GUY ON THE FAR SIDE IS DAVID HAGEN. THE GUY ON THE FAR RIGHT IS PAUL LUCASA.
IT WAS REPORTED THAT THEIR HORSES WERE RUNNING OUT IN THE WILD SOMEWHERE IN THE AREA.
THE THREE OF THEM WERE AROUND 200TH PLACE UNTIL ABOUT 7,000 TO 8,000 METERS, AND SO WE QUESTIONED THE OTHER PARTICIPANTS ABOUT IT..
BUT NO ONE SAW ANYTHING FROM THE TIME THEY FELL OFF THEIR HORSES TO WHEN THEIR HORSES WERE FOUND AND STOPPED.

FOR EXAMPLE, A VULTURE CAN DRAG A HUMAN'S INTERNAL ORGANS OUT IN ABOUT 3 SECONDS FLAT.
THE ANIMALS?
WHY'D THEY DIE LIKE THIS? EXPLAIN!
JUST WHAT IS THIS?!
MR. STEEL.
THIS IS A MURDER.
NEVERTHE-LESS, IT WAS DURING THE RACE.
WE DON'T KNOW WHO IT IS, BUT THEY DID IT DURING THE RACE. I'D SAY THIS WAS A PLANNED MURDER, TO KNOCK THEM OFF THEIR HORSES AND OUT OF THE RACE.
SO, HOW DID IT HAPPEN?!
BUT, THOSE AREN'T INTERNAL ORGANS, THEY'RE ROPE. THERE'S ANOTHER PROBLEM, THERE'S NOT A SINGLE COUGAR TRACK IN SIGHT.
I HAVE NO CLUE HOW THEY DID THIS.

YET, NO ONE SAW A THING?
EVEN THOUGH 3,000 PEOPLE WERE RACING SIDE BY SIDE WITH THE OTHERS, NO ONE SAW A THING?
D-DONT SAY SOMETHING AS STUPID AS THAT!
WHY DO YOU THINK THEY DID IT?
ドドドド
JUDGING FROM THE EVIDENCE IT IS ALREADY CLEAR TO ME ...
THE SUSPECT IS WITHIN YOUR PARTICIPANTS.
A POSSIBLE MOTIVE IS FOR THE $50,000,000 PRIZE MONEY AND TO RAISE THEIR RANKINGS
IN THE RACE

IF THAT'S THE CASE, THE CULPRIT IS STILL IN THE RACE.
ANYONE WHO INTERFERES WILL BE TAKEN OUT FOR THE SAKE OF WINNING.

IGNITION-ONE

HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

KNOCKOUT! SCANS

NEOSHWEATY.PROBOARDS53.COM

HOPE YOU ENJOYED THIS CHAPTER OF STEEL BALL RUN! IT'S THE FIRST IN A JOINT EFFORT BETWEEN THE FOLKS AT IGNITION-ONE AND KO SCANS, SO LOOK FORWARD TO EVEN MORE BIZARRE ADVENTURES IN THE NEAR FUTURE!

SCANNER: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATOR: KUSHO
EDITOR. NEOSHWEATY
TYPESETTER: SAURIAN

EDITORS NOTE. I'M LOOKING FOR PEOPLE TO FILL POSITIONS OTHER THAN TRANSLATOR. EMAIL JOBS@IGNITION-ONE.COM OR HEAD TO EITHER ONE OF THE FORUMS TO INQUIRE.

#13. THE SHERIFF'S
REQUEST TO MOUNTAIN TIM

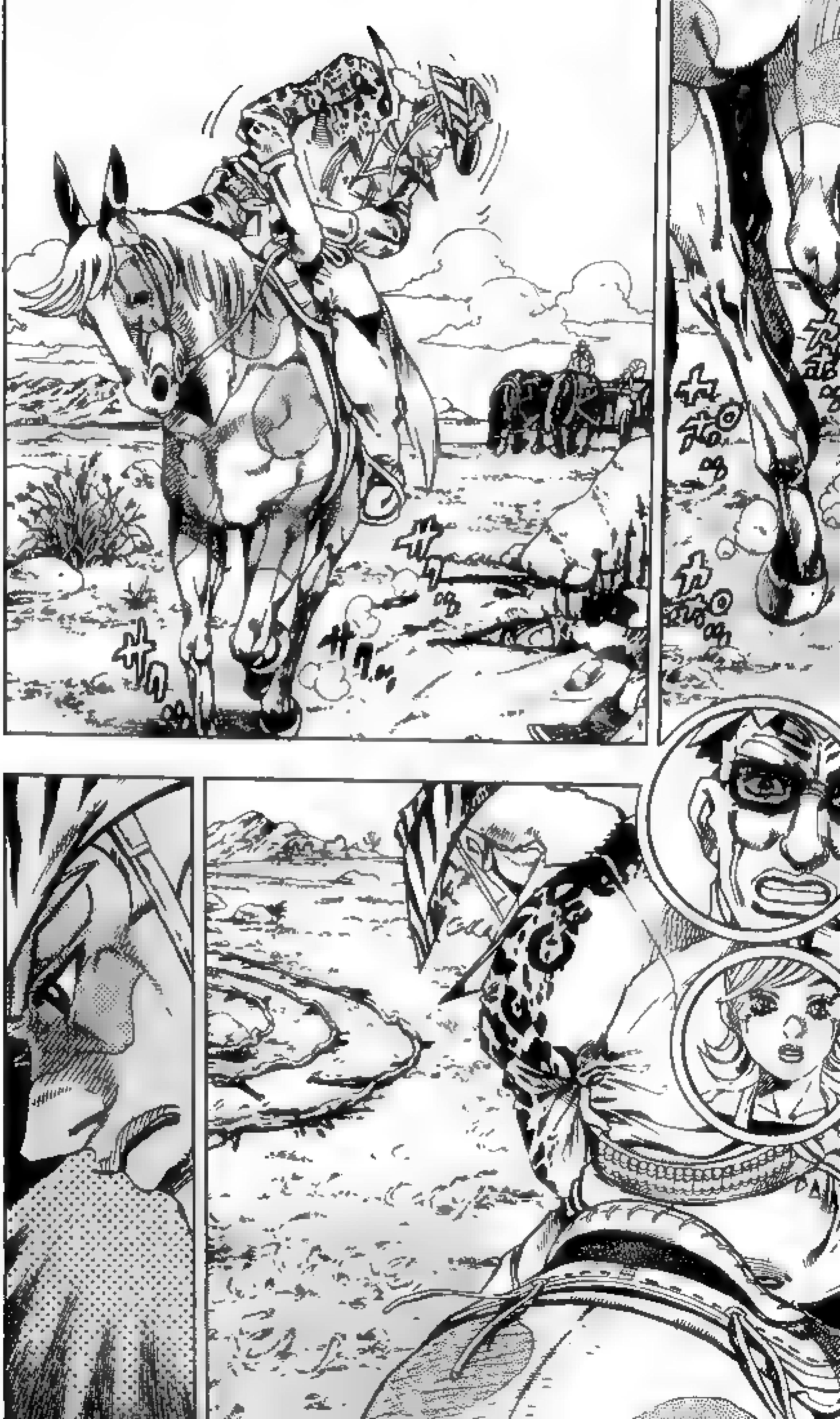
THE SUSPECT ...
IS WITHIN YOUR PARTICIPANTS.
FOR THE SAKE OF THIS INVESTIGATION, I HIGHLY SUGGEST POSTPONING THE RACE FOR A LITTLE BIT.
BUT THAT MEANS ....
FUCK ...
FOR SOMETHING LIKE THIS ...
...TO INTERRUPT MY RACE ...!!!
THE RACE WILL CONTINUE AS NORMAL ..!!
IT'S TOO LATE. EVERYONE INVOLVED IN THIS IS ALREADY PUTTING EVERYTHING THEY'VE GOT INTO WINNING. NOT EVEN THE PRESIDENT HAS CONTROL OVER IT ANYMORE!!
POSTPONING THIS IS IMPOSSIBLE.
I FIGURED YOU'D SAY SOMETHING LIKE THAT.

THAT'S WHY I REQUESTED THAT MOUNTAIN TIM PURSUE ALL POTENTIAL SUSPECTS.

WHAT'S WRONG?
THE HORSES ARE ACTING STRANGE.
MUST BE BECAUSE MOUNTAIN TIM HAS ARRIVED.
HE'S A MYSTERIOUS FELLOW... THE HORSES ALL PAY HIM THEIR RESPECT.

WHEN DID HE ...
EH?
AH!
UH!
FLOW- ERS.
MOUNTAIN TIM!!!
ARE YOU ACTUALLY MARRIED?
IT'S A SHAME.

WHAT'S WITH HIM TAKING THIS REQUEST?
I MEAN, HE'S A LEGENDARY COWBOY, AND IS EVEN A CANDIDATE TO WIN!!
JUST IN TODAY'S RACE, HE CAME IN FOURTH PLACE!
ALLOW ME TO EXPLAIN.
NOT ONLY IS HE A VERY GOOD FRIEND OF MINE, BUT A RELIABLE ONE AT THAT.
ALL THE WAY FROM NORTHERN MONTANA TO THE SOUTHERN PART OF TEXAS, HE'S COLLECTED REWARDS PURSUING MEN ALL OVER THE GREAT WEST.
BUT... HE'S A PARTICIPANT IN THE RACE!!
THAT'S WHY HE'S IMPORTANT. ONCE THE 2ND STAGE OF THE RACE BEGINS, THERE'S A HIGH PROBABILITY THAT HE WILL BE TAR-GETED BY THE SUSPECT.
YES,
OF COURSE.
IT'LL ONLY BE TO OUR BENEFIT IF HE'S PURSUED.
HE'LL BE THE NEW SHERIFF'S ASSISTANT, IF THAT'S ALRIGHT WITH YOU, MR. STEEL

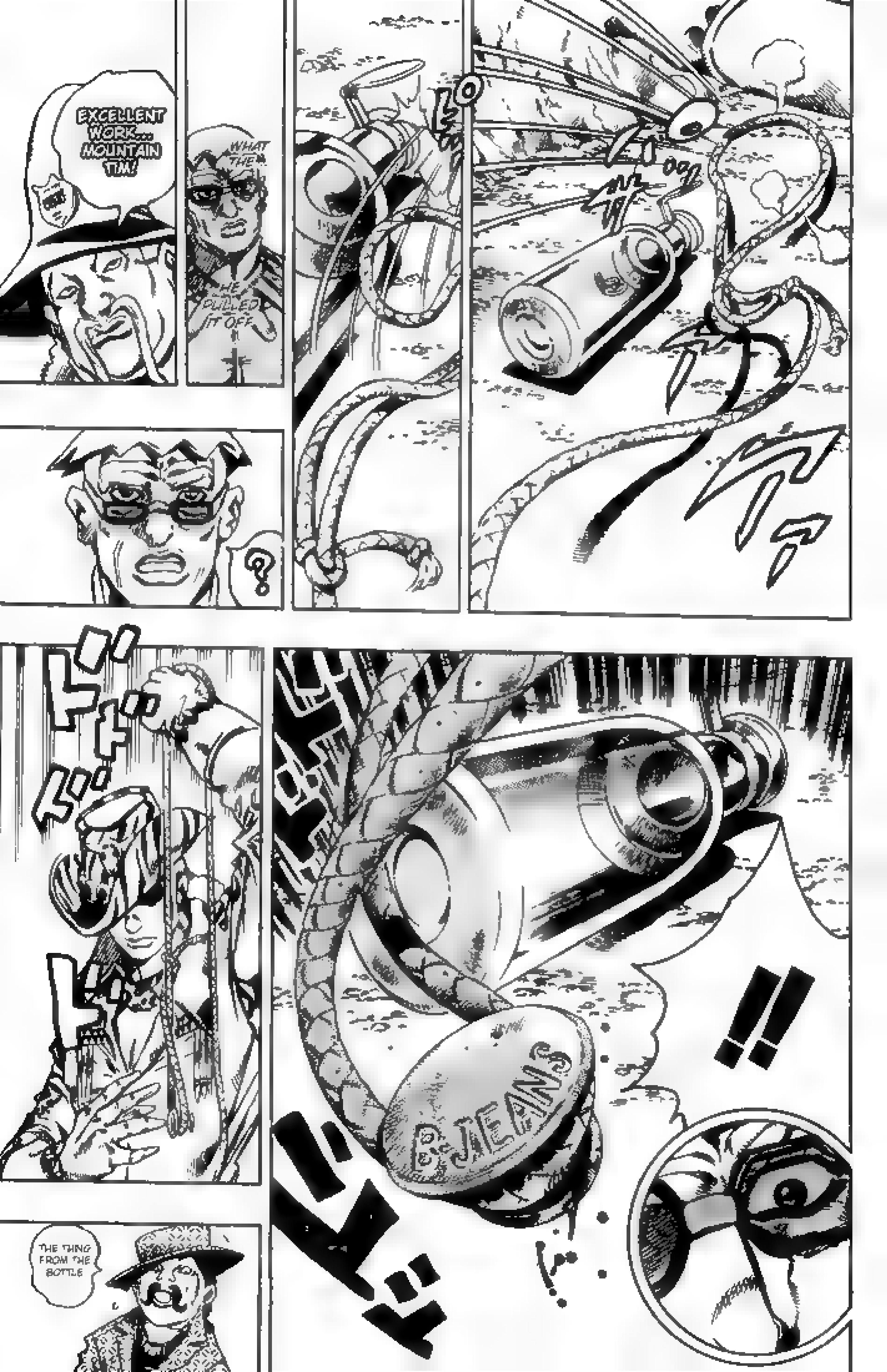

カポッ
カポッ

WHAT'S THIS FURY I'M FEELING ALL OF A SUDDEN?
SO SUCH A THING WAS PRESENT DURING THE RACE ...
DON'T WORRY, FEEL AT EASE...I CAN'T POSSIBLY WIN THE RACE ANYMORE.
IN THIS RACE, I HAVE MANY FRIENDS WHO ARE ALSO PARTICIPATING.
BUT UP UNTIL NOW, I'VE NEVER SEEN ANYTHING LIKE THIS BEFORE..SUCH A KILLING METHOD!
HOWEVER, I HAVE HEARD A LEGEND ABOUT SIMILAR DEATHS ...
THERE'S AN OLD INDIAN LEGEND THAT TALKS ABOUT A SPOT WHERE A SHOOTING STAR FELL SOMEWHERE IN THE ARIZONA DESERT.
THERE LIES TAINTED SOIL.

IT IS SAID THAT ANYTHING THAT TOUCHES THE SPOT, WILL SUDDENLY BE ABLE TO PULL OUT A **MYSTERIOUS POWER** FROM ITS OWN HEART.
AT THE SAME TIME, THOUGH, EVIL SPIRITS WILL CALL OUT A CURSE UPON THEM.
NONE OF THE NATIVES OF THE LAND EVER STEP FOOT THERE.
ONE DAY, A WHITE MAN LOOKING FOR EMERALD ORE STEPPED INTO THE SPOT AND STARTED TO COME HOME.
IT IS SAID THAT AFTERWARDS, HE BEGAN TO KILL OTHERS IN A SIMILAR FASHION.
AND AFTERWARDS, AS IF POSSIBLY REALIZING HIS OWN SINFUL-NESS, HE SHOT HIMSELF.
BUT IF HE DIED, HE'S OBVIOUSLY NOT THE SUSPECT!
WHICH MAKES ME WONDER...IF YOU REALLY ARE GOING TO KEEP UP WITH THIS INVESTIGATION, HOW DO YOU PLAN TO FIND THE SUSPECT?
DO YOU INTEND TO KEEP AN EYE OUT FOR *ALIENS*?

THESE ONES.
IN THESE, THE BERSERK NATURE OF THE RUN IS CLEARLY VISIBLE.
THE FIRST THING TO DO IS TO FOLLOW THESE FOOT-PRINTS.
AND IN THE CENTER, THERE'S A VERY DISTINGUISHABLE MOUNTAIN-SHAPED MARK
THE HORSE PROBABLY WENT OUT OF CONTROL AFTER SEEING HUMAN BLOOD.
AND JUDGING FROM THE NATURE OF THE RIDER, IT'S PROBABLY SOMEONE WHO'S USED TO BEING IN THE DESERT
BUT THAT STILL DOESN'T MAKE IT EVIDENCE!
NO... IT MOST CERTAINLY DOES.

......
....ER ...
THERE'S A BOTTLE LAYING OVER BY THE VICTIM
HAVE YOU CHECKED IT OUT, SHERIFF?
THERE'S SOMETHING INSIDE THERE... COVERED IN BLOOD.
A BUTTON ....?
IS A BUTTON FROM A PIECE OF CLOTHING?


EXCELLENT WORK... MOUNTAIN TIM!
WHAT THE
HE PULLED IT OFF
?
B.JEANS
THE THING FROM THE BOTTLE

THIS IS A BUTTON FROM THE JEANS OF THE VICTIM. BUT WHY WOULD IT COME OFF...?
OR, MORE IMPORTANTLY HOW COULD IT POSSIBLE GET INSIDE THE BOTTLE?
I WONDER... WHAT SORT OF CONNECTION THIS HAS WITH THE MURDER METHOD?
I DON'T CLAIM TO KNOW THE ANSWER, HOWEVER...
ONE THING IS CERTAIN: IT'S VERY DANGEROUS FOR THE KILLER TO LET SUCH AN IMPORTANT PIECE OF EVIDENCE FALL INTO OUR HANDS.

THE 2ND STAGE ...
IS SCHEDULED TO START IN 5 MINUTES!

# 2ND. STAGE
## ACROSS THE ARIZONA DESERT
## MONUMENT VALLEY

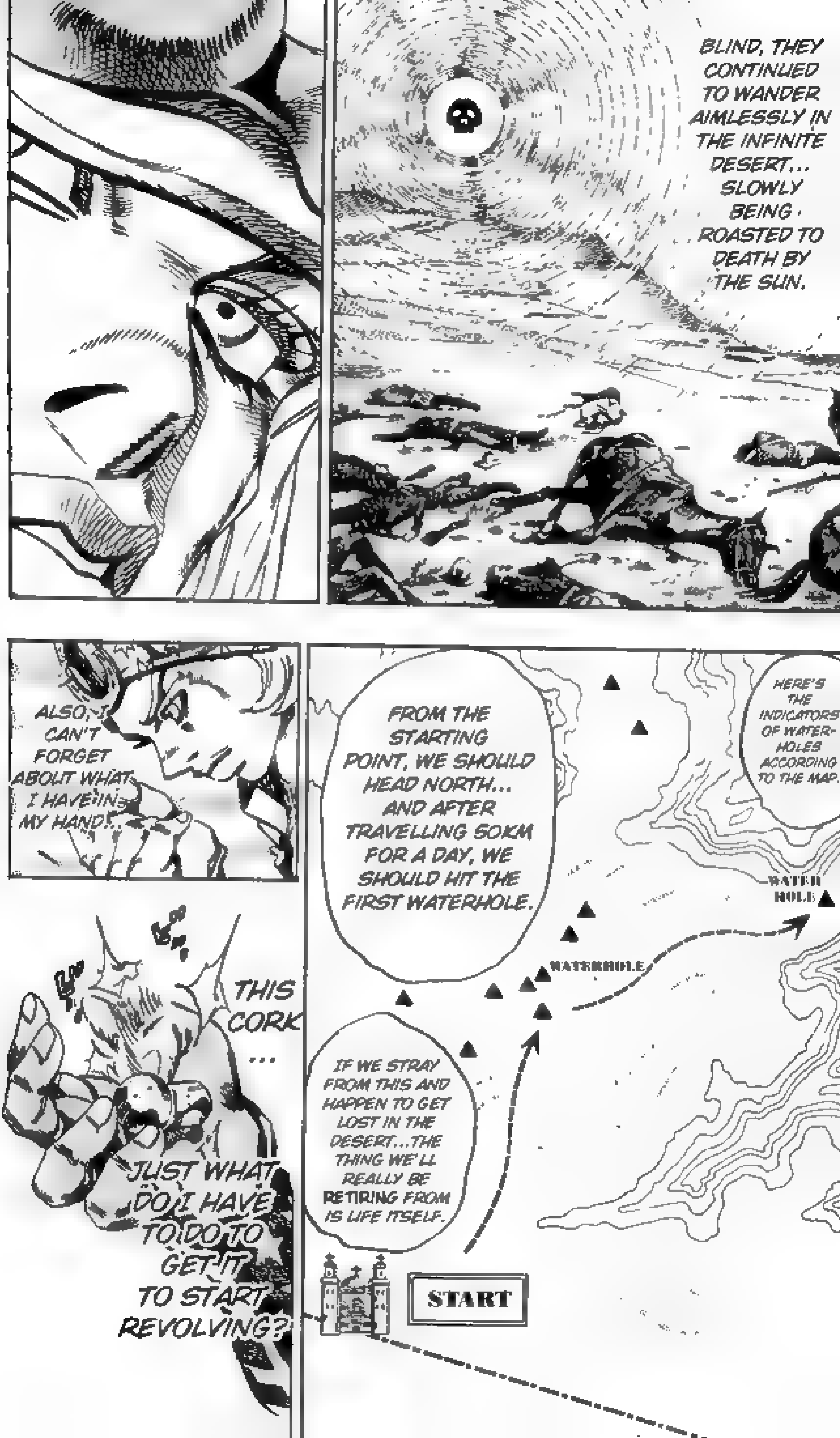
SANTA MARIA NOVELA CHURCH → MONUMENT VALLEY
(AN ESTIMATED 1200KM DISTANCE OVER 12-18 DAYS)
ACTIVE PARTICIPANTS: 3770
DATE: 1890/9/26, 10:00AM START.
PRIZE: $10,000 AND -1 HOUR TIME BONUS. POINTS FOR RUNNERS-UP WILL BE RANKED FROM 1-100.

FINALLY —
THEIR RESPECTIVE NUMBERS WILL BE DISPLAYED AS FLAGS OVER THE ROUTE.
IF FOR SOME REASON A PLAYER IS FORCED TO RETIRE IN THE MIDDLE OF THE RACE,
NOW,
COVERED WAGONS FILLED WITH MEDICS AND REFEREES WILL BE FOLLOWING THE RACE AT A DISTANCE BEHIND.
THESE MEDICS HAVE A LARGE SUPPLY OF THINGS LIKE WATER, FOOD, AND MEDICINE ON THEM, AND WILL NOT HESITATE TO DISPENSE THEM IF REQUESTED. DO KEEP IN MIND, THOUGH, ANY PLAYERS THAT DO SO WILL BE IMMEDIATELY RETIRED FROM THE RACE.
GYRO ...
THIS STAGE'S TOP CANDIDATE SEEMS TO BE SANDMAN!
EVEN IN THE GAMBLING ARENA, HE'S THE MOST POPULAR! ...WHAT DO YOU THINK OF THAT?
HMPH!

BY THE WAY, I'M THE SIXTH MOST POPULAR RACER.
SUCKS FOR YOU...
YOU'RE ONLY #9 BECAUSE OF YOUR PENALTY.. IF YOU WOULDN'T HAVE GOT THAT, I'M SURE YOU'D BE PRETTY POPULAR.
WHAT ABOUT ME?!
BUT, IF SANDMAN TAKES THE PRIZE AGAIN THIS TIME ...
HIS TOTAL POINTS WILL BE 200...AND HE'LL HAVE ACCUMULATED 2 HOURS IN TIME BONUSES!!
THOSE PEOPLE DON'T KNOW WHAT THE FUCK THEY'RE TALKIN' ABOUT!!
ANY WAY YOU LOOK AT IT, THAT ARTICLE WAS JUST WRITTEN BY SOME IDIOT EVERYDAY PEOPLE.
NO ONE SHOULD TAKE IT SERIOUSLY!!
AND, TO MAKE MATTERS WORSE, SANDMAN IS FROM THE ARIZONA DESERT...SO GEOGRAPHICALLY, HE'S ON HIS HOME TURF.
I'M AFRAID SO ...
I WONDER ... CAN HE RUN OVER 100KM IN ONE DAY?
IF THAT HAPPENS, HE'LL HAVE AN OVERWHELMING ADVANTAGE OVER EVERYONE ELSE FOR THE REST OF THE RACE.
THAT'S REALLY WHAT WE'VE GOT TO KEEP FROM HAPPENING.

BUT LOOK AT THAT WEIRD HAT HE'S WEARING ...
MAKES ME WANNA TRAMPLE ALL OVER IT...RIGHT THERE, WHILE IT'S STILL ON HIS HEAD, I WANNA TRAMPLE RIGHT ON IT!!
THAT GUY OVER THERE, MOUNTAIN TIM, IS JUST ABOUT AS POPULAR AND A HUGE CANDIDATE FOR THIS TIME AROUND.
GYRO, THIS STAGE ...
I THINK IT'S GOING TO TURN INTO A BATTLE OVER THE WATERHOLES ...
I THINK IT'S BECAUSE OF THAT WEIRD HAT HE WEARS.
HAVEN'T YOU NOTICED IT?!
GAHA HA-NYOHO!
MOUNTAIN TIM IS A COWBOY, SO HE SHOULD HAVE POOR SHORT-RANGE ABILITIES... YET THEN AGAIN, HE WAS FOLLOWING US PRETTY WELL YESTERDAY.
WE COULDN'T EVEN HEAR THE SOUNDS THE HOOVES OF HIS HORSE MADE..SO WITHOUT US KNOWING, HE FOLLOWED US ALL THE WAY TO THE END AND THEN PASSED US UP AT THE LAST SECOND.

HOW FAR PEOPLE CAN CONTINUE ON THIS ROUTE...
...MUST DEPEND ON HOW FAR THEY CAN GO WITHOUT RUNNING OUT OF WATER.
IN 1875, JUST WHEN THIS LAND HAD BARELY BECOME A PART OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA...
THERE WAS AN INCIDENT THAT HAPPENED INVOLVING THE DEATH OF AN ENTIRE ARMY UNIT, THE 26TH CALVARY.
IT WASN'T BECAUSE OF A WAR OR AN ACCIDENT, THOUGH...IT WAS BECAUSE DURING THAT YEAR, ALL THE KNOWN WATERHOLES HAD COMPLETELY DRIED UP.
AS THEY WANDERED THROUGH THE DESERT LOOKING FOR AN ALTERNATE SOURCE OF WATER. THEY NOTICED THAT THE TEMPERATURE WAS STEADILY RISING. IT WAS ALREADY WELL ABOVE 50C AND QUICKLY NEARING 60C AS THEY CONTINUED THROUGH THE AREA.
EVENTUALLY, THEY ALL DIED OF DEHYDRATION, BUT ...
BEFORE THAT, SMALL FISSURES AND CRACKS SPREAD ACROSS THEIR OWN DRIED-UP, CLAY-LIKE EYEBALLS... AND THEY ALL WENT BLIND.


BLIND, THEY CONTINUED TO WANDER AIMLESSLY IN THE INFINITE DESERT... SLOWLY BEING ROASTED TO DEATH BY THE SUN.
ALSO, I CAN'T FORGET ABOUT WHAT I HAVE IN MY HAND...
THIS CORK ...
JUST WHAT DO I HAVE TO DO TO GET IT TO START REVOLVING?
FROM THE STARTING POINT, WE SHOULD HEAD NORTH... AND AFTER TRAVELLING 50KM FOR A DAY, WE SHOULD HIT THE FIRST WATERHOLE.
HERE'S THE INDICATORS OF WATER-HOLES ACCORDING TO THE MAP.
WATERHOLE
WATER HOLE
IF WE STRAY FROM THIS AND HAPPEN TO GET LOST IN THE DESERT...THE THING WE'LL REALLY BE RETIRING FROM IS LIFE ITSELF.
START

THEY SAY THAT THE HOT AIR BALLON CAN ONLY FOLLOW TO THE COLORADO RIVER.
THERE IS NO TRACK LAID ALONG THE RACE PATH, SO THE TRAIN WILL GO AHEAD TO THE NEXT CHECKPOINT.
ALRIIIGHT... IN JUST AN INSTANT, THE 2ND STAGE SHALL TRULY BEGIN!!
IT'S NOW ONLY THIRTY SECONDS UNTIL WE START ...
POCOLOCO, AS USUAL, HAS HIS MANY SACKS PACKED UP AND READY!
DIEGO BRANDO HAS PUSHED UP HIS GOOGLES!

EH ...
THE 10 O'CLOCK FIREWORKS ARE FLYING INTO THE AIR RIGHT ON TIME!!
LET'S GO... START!!!

HE'S FLYING!!!
IT'S GYRO!!
IT'S GYRO!!
IT'S GYRO!!
IT'S GYRO!! IT'S GYRO!! IT'S GYRO!!
JUST LIKE THE FIRST STAGE...HE JUST WENT FLYING BY ON HIS OWN LIKE THAT!!
IN A FEW MORE MINUTES HE'LL BE NO MORE THAN A SPECK ON THE HORIZON!!
ALL THE HORSE FOLLOWING HIM WILL BE PLASTERED IN HIS DUST!!
AT ANY RATE, IT SEEMS THAT GYRO ZEPPELI PLANS TO COMPLETE THIS 2ND STAGE AS A SOLO RUN!!
OOH ...
KUH
KUUUH ...
ARGGHH!! I'M GOING AFTER HIM!!
CAN HE REALLY TAKE ALL 1200KM ON HIS OWN!?
FU.. FUCK
WHAT THE HELL IS WRONG WITH THIS GUY?!
I'M COMING AFTER YOUUUU!!!

OHH!! WAIT!!
GYRO ZEPPELI IS...WHAT IS THIS?! HE'S CHANGING COURSE!!
HE'S COM-PLETELY CHANGING HIS COURSE!!
SO HE WASN'T JUST FLYING OUT AHEAD...HE WAS PICKING OUT A COMPLETELY DIFFERENT ROUTE!!
WHAT THE HELL ...!?

GYRO ZEPPELI... IS HEADING STRAIGHT INTO THE DESERT!!
IT LOOKS LIKE HE'S AIMING TO CUT ACROSS THE ENTIRE WASTELAND!!!!
DOES HE PLAN TO IGNORE THE FIRST WATERHOLE ALTOGETHER!?
AT THIS ANGLE, A WATERHOLE WON'T BE VISIBLE FOR ANOTHER 150km OR SO!!

WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING, GYRO ZEPPELI!? AT LEAST GIVE ME SOME REASON FOR ALL THIS SPEED!!
WHAT? WE HAVE OTHER RIVALS IN THE RACE WHO ARE DOING THE SAME THING.
WANNA COME WITH? THIS IS THE SHORTEST WAY...
THIS WAY....WE'LL PASS THEM ALL...EVEN SANDMAAAANN ...
OHHH..HOW IT LOOKS LIKE GYRO ISN'T THE ONLY ONE CROSSING THROUGH THE DESERT!!
HE'S GAINED A FOLLOWER!
BUT WHO ON EARTH WOULD VOLUNTARILY PICK SUCH A ROUTE? IT'S LIKE SETTING ONESELF UP FOR SUICIDE! ALL THEY MUST BE THINKING ABOUT IS SETTING THEIR HANDS ON THAT PRIZE!!

I CAN SEE HIS NUMBER ...!!
HIS NAME... IS "MRS. ROBIN-SON!!"
TRUE LOVE

IGNITION-ONE
HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

POSITIONS STILL AVAILABLE.
INQUIRE AT EITHER ONE OF
THE FORUMS OR EMAIL
JOBS@IGNITION-ONE.COM

KNOCKOUT!SCANS
NEOSHWEATY.PROBOARDS53.COM

SCANNER:HANAMICHI
EDITOR NEOSHWEATY
TRANSLATOR.DAN

WHO IS THAT PERSON?
THERE'S SOME WEIRD THINGS HANGING FROM HIS EARS.
BUT I CAN'T SEE THEM TOO WELL.
SO FAR THIS ROUTE HAS BEEN FILLED WITH NOTHING BUT WEIRDOS!
I CAN SEE HIS NUMBER, SO, ACCORDING TO THE LIST, HE MUST BE THAT "MRS. ROBINSON" GUY.
THE DISTANCE BETWEEN US LOOKS TO BE ABOUT 150 HORSE LENGTHS.
#14
ACROSS THE ARIZONA DESERT:
CONTINUING ALONG THE SHORTEST ROUTE

HEY, GYRO...
WE'RE SIX HOURS FROM THE STARTING POINT...
AS LONG AS WE'VE BEEN HEADING IN THE RIGHT DIRECTION THE ENTIRE TIME
AND, ACCORDING TO THIS MAP, WE SHOULD BE REACHING THE TOP ABOUT NOW...
THAT MEANS, AT VERY WORST, IT SHOULD ONLY BE ABOUT ANOTHER 80 KM BEFORE WE CAN GET OUR HANDS ON SOME FRESH WATER!
I JUST WANT TO MAKE SURE WE'RE ON THE RIGHT TRAIL JUST TO BE ON THE SAFE SIDE.
BECAUSE IF WE GO THAT WAY... THERE'LL BE NO WAY WE'LL BE ABLE TO RIDE OVER THOSE MOUNTAINS, RIGHT? ACCORDING TO THIS MAP...

YEAH! IT'S FINE!
EVERYTHING'S PERFECT! WE'RE ON THE RIGHT TRAIL! ABSOLUTELY!
EH?!
WHAT DID YOU SAY JUST NOW?!
HOLD ON A SECOND! RIGHT THEN, IT SOUNDED LIKE YOU MUTTERED "MAYBE!"
MAYBE?!
DON'T WORRY ABOUT IT!
OF COURSE WE'RE GOING THE RIGHT WAY! THE WEATHER BALLOON IS FOLLOWING US SO THAT MEANS WE'RE FOLLOWING THE MAP!
WHAT WAS THAT?!
"CER-TAIN-LYYYY?!"

IT'S 80 KM TO THE WATERHOLE! IF WE DETER EVEN A LITTLE BIT FROM THE ROUTE, WE RUN THE RISK OF DEATH!
WHAT I'M TRYING TO FIGURE OUT IS WHETHER OR NOT YOU KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT THE DESERT! GET ME?!
THAT'S WHAT I'VE BEEN SAYING... WE'RE FINE! WE'VE GOT NOTHING TO WORRY ABOUT IN THIS PLACE!
MORE IMPORTANTLY, HOW ARE YOUR "REVOLUTIONS" COMING?
THAT CORK EXERCISE I TAUGHT YOU ABOUT... DON'T TELL ME YOU FORGOT!?

?
WHAT THE HELL WAS THAT?!
G... GYRO ...
JUST NOW SOMETHING CAME FLYING PAST...
FROM SOMEONE IN FRONT OF US...

Y... YOUR ...
... EAR ...

OHH ...
OHHH HH!
UOHH!

A... AHEAD OF US!
WHATEVER IT IS, IT'S COMING FROM AHEAD OF US!
SHIT! I'VE BEEN CUT!
SOME-THING KEEPS CUTTING UP MY ARM!

THAT GUY ...
HE'S RUNNING PARALLEL TO US!
WHAT THE HELL IS HE DOING?
IS HE SHOOTING SOMETHING?
HE MUST BE TRYING TO INTERFERE WITH OUR PROGRESS!
CALM DOWN, GYRO.

THE DIRECTION OF THESE ATTACKS SEEMS STRANGE...
SINCE THEY'RE COMING FROM OUR FRONT
HE MUST BE HIDING IN THE SHADOWS OF THE CLIFFS OR SOMETHING...
HEY, TRY TO HAVE YOUR HORSE NOT MAKE ANY SUDDEN MOVEMENTS.
HEY, GYRO... AREN'T THESE CACTUS NEEDLES?
HOW FAMILIAR ARE YOU WITH THE DESERT?
BECAUSE I THINK I REMEMBER HEARING STORIES OF A TYPE OF CACTUS THAT'S ABLE TO SHOOT OUT IT'S NEEDLES.
THEY'RE CALLED "CHOLLA."
WHEN AN ANIMAL OR SOMETHING DRAWS CLOSE TO IT... AS A RESPONSE TO THE VIBRATIONS IN THE AIR, THE NEEDLES WILL POP OFF FROM THE PLANT.
IT'S BECAUSE THE CHOLLA CARRY THEIR SEEDS IN THE NEEDLES, I THINK.

PEH!
SHIT...
THOSE HAVE GOT TO BE THE CHOLLA.
IT LOOKS LIKE THERE'S A WHOLE BUNCH GROWING AROUND HERE...
SO, THEN.. WHO'S THE ONE AT FAULT HERE?
US FOR TRAMPLING THROUGH THE CACTUS' AREA...
...OR THE JERKS WHO SET UP THIS TRAP IN THE FIRST PLACE?!

I DON'T KNOW.. IT CAN'T BE...
IN ORDER TO LAUNCH THE NEEDLES OF THE CHOLLA, YOU'D HAVE TO BE IN EX-TREMELY CLOSE RANGE!
YOU COULDN'T EVEN SHOOT A RIFLE FROM OVER THERE! WHATEVER IT WAS THAT HIT US... TO THINK THAT THEY WERE ACTUALLY AIMING FOR US... JUST ISN'T POSSIBLE!
BUT IF THEY HAD A MOTIVE, IT'D BE TOTALLY POSSIBLE.
A COMPETITOR THAT ISN'T WOR-RIED ABOUT RE-CEIVING A PEN-ALTY FROM THE WEATHER BAL-LOON REFEREE .. BUT IS TRYING TO GET US REMOVED IN THE PROCESS!
PROBABLY SOMEONE FROM 1ST STAGE... AND NOW HE'S ALREADY TRYING TO ATTACK US LIKE THIS!
HE'S TURNING AROUND -- BUT I STILL CAN'T TELL IF THAT'S REALLY THE ONE TAR-GETING US OR NOT!
SHIT... AND AT THIS DISTANCE, ESCAPING IS...
DAMMIT, THIS IS BAD, JOHNNY! WE'RE IN A DANGEROUS POSITION!
RUN!
JOHNNY!
I GOT IT, I'M RUN-NING!

...TOO ACCU-RATE...
WOAAAAAAHHH!

ドドド

JOHNNY JOESTAR! HURRY UP AND GET BACK ON YOUR HORSE!
THIS HAS ALL BEEN HIS INTENT FROM THE VERY START!
UH... UHH...
KUH!
KUH ...
UUH ...

JUST KEEP GOING!
THERE'S BLOOD IN MY EYES, BUT THE EYEBALL ITSELF IS ALRIGHT!
GO ON, I SAID!
I KNOW I PROMISED TO CROSS THE GOAL LINE WITH YOU, BUT REMEMBER, WE'RE STILL RIVALS!
YOU HAVE TO CONCENTRATE ON GETTING OUT OF THIS PLACE...
A RACE IS A RACE...
THERE'S NO REASON FOR YOU TO WAIT FOR ME... I'LL CATCH UP WITH YOU AFTER I WIPE UP MY BLOOD!

THE DIRECTION I'LL BE HEADING IN, THOUGH... IS TOWARDS THAT SON OF A BITCH!
GOT IT...
WE ARE BOTH RIVALS... SO I'LL HEAD ONWARDS.
YEAH, GO!

PAC HIN!

YOU ALREADY GOT A WARNING FOR INTERFERENCE! IF YOU MESS UP AGAIN, THERE WON'T BE A NEXT TIME!
IF YOU USE THAT, YOU'LL BE DISQUALIFIED FROM THE RACE!
BESIDES, WE DON'T EVEN HAVE ANY EVIDENCE THAT HE'S THE CRIMINAL!
THAT'S ...
IS IT REALLY OKAY FOR YOU TO GIVE IT ALL UP NOW SO EARLY?!
EVEN KNOWING YOU COULD JUST EASILY CONTINUE FORWARDS?!

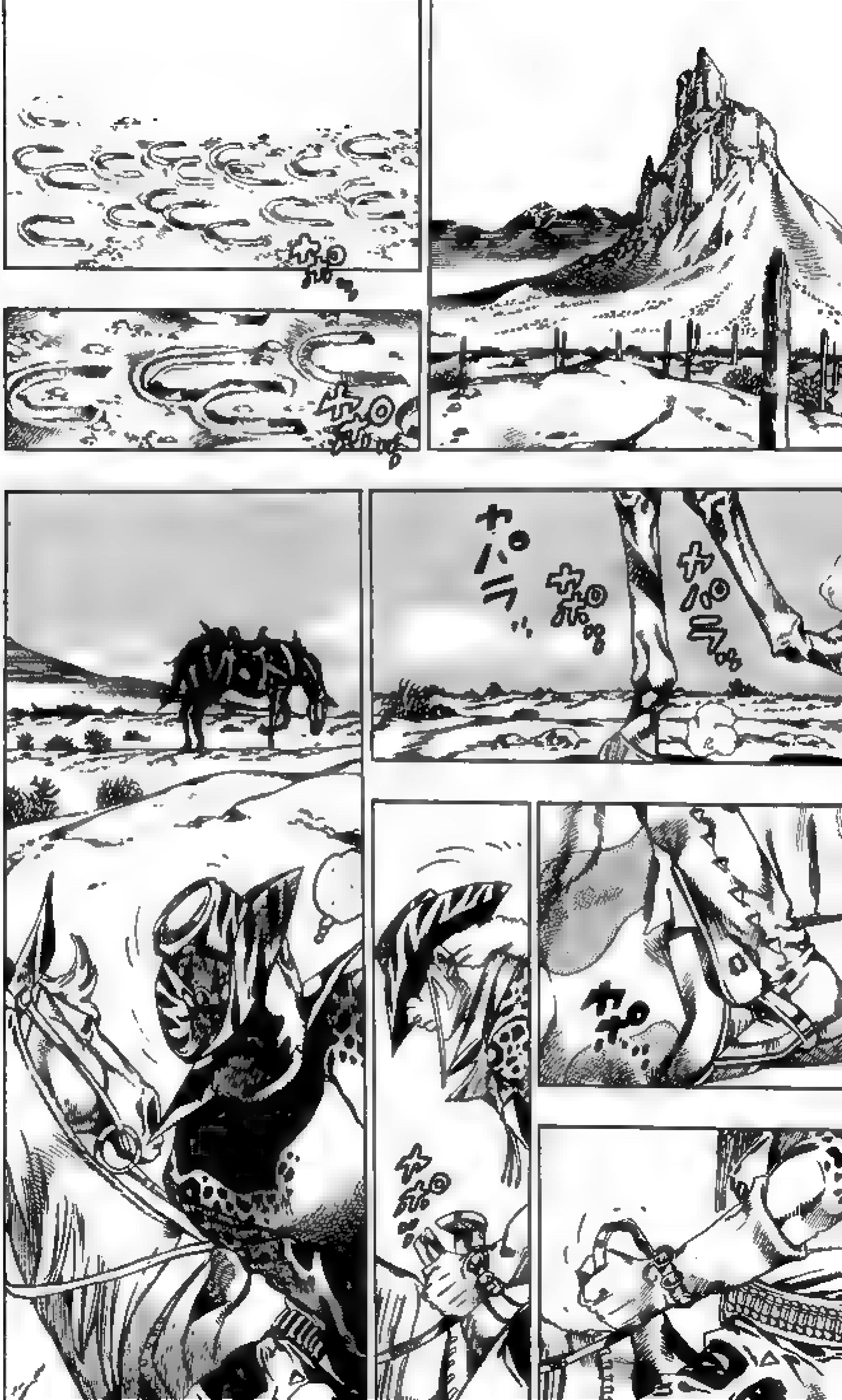
BUH
UGAHH
UWAHH
!!
DID THE STEEL BALLS CONNECT...!?

ONE TIME, IN A SMALL VILLAGE IN THE DESERT, THERE WAS A SCUFFLE THAT SOON TURNED INTO SOMETHING MUCH MORE BLOODY. .
THE LOSER OF THE DUEL WAS PURPOSELY CHAINED TO A CACTUS WITH THE INTENT THAT HE WOULD DIE A SLOW, CRUEL DEATH...
AND AFTER-WARDS, THE CACTUS PLACED A CURSE ON THAT DEAD MAN.
HE WAS BROUGHT BACK FROM THE DEAD TO BE A SLAVE TO REVENGE, AVENGING A GRUDGE THAT WOULD NEVER BE RE-SOLVED.
I CONTINUED TO EXIST THERE IN THAT VILLAGE BUT IN ORDER TO SEPARATE MYSELF FROM THE OTHERS, I USED A SPECIAL TECHNIQUE ON MY BODY
TO MAKE MYSELF UN-STOPPABLE, I STARTED TO RAISE IN-SECTS WITHIN MYSELF...
THESE "IN-SECTS" HAVE NOW COMPLETE-LEY SUR-ROUNDED ALL OF YOU!
IT'S THE HIGH-SPEED PRES-SURE THESE IN-SECTS GIVE OFF WHILE FLYING THAT CAUSES THE CHOLLA TO FREELY SHOOT OFF THEIR NEEDLES!

NOW THAT I'VE TOLD YOU MY SECRET, IT'S TIME TO FINISH YOU OFF.
TAKE THIS! I WILL NOT ALLOW ANYONE IN THIS RACE TO RUN AHEAD OF ME!
ALRIIIIGHT! FINALLY, SOMEONE WHO THINKS THE SAME WAY I DO!
YOU THINK YOU COULD JUST THROW MY STEEL BALLS TO THE GROUND AND FORGET ABOUT THEM? MY PRECIOUS STEEL BALLS..?

......
I MAY NOT BE AS ACCURATE IN AIMING AS YOU.
BUT THE VIBRATIONS OF THE REVOLUTIONS ARE STILL SYNCED UP WITH YOU. NOW THEY'RE JUST TRAVELING ACROSS THE GROUND BELOW YOU. .
YOU JUST MADE YOUR OWN ESCAPE IMPOSSIBLE!
!?
KUH?!

...CH
G... GYRO
DOBAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHH-HHHHHHHHH-HHHHHHHHH-HHH!



カポ ポッ
カポ ポッ
カパラ
カパラ
ポッ
カポ
カポ ポッ

THAT IS MRS. ROBINSON...
HE... HELLO...
THIS ISN'T "THE ONE"...
THE MURDERER I'VE BEEN FOLLOWING...
...HAS A COMPLETELY DIFFERENT DESIGN ON THEIR HORSESHOES.
BUT I'M POSITIVE THAT I'M ON THE RIGHT TRAIL.
THE HORSESHOES I'M LOOKING FOR HAVE INDEED PASSED THROUGH HERE... ABOUT THIRTY MINUTES AGO.

IGNITION-ONE
TRANSLATED BY MOLOKIDAN
SCANNED BY HANAMICHI
EDITED BY MOGZIG

セカンド ステージ だい にちめ しゅうりょう
2nd.STAGE 第1日目終了

TIME OF SUNSET 6 03PM. **JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI**
RUNNING DISTANCE OF 1ST DAY ABOUT 95KM APPROXIMATELY
50KM FROM THE NEXT WATERING HOLE
CURRENT RANK 1ST CAMPING AT THIS LOCATION

# #15 THE DESERT BORN OUTLAWS

THIS MIGHT BE A LITTLE SUDDEN ...
BUT I'D LIKE TO INTRODUCE A STORY IN A NEWSPAPER FROM A CERTAIN EUROPEAN COUNTRY... DATED APRIL 23RD, 1890.
IN THAT COUNTRY, THERE WAS A BOY NAMED MARCO.
HE WAS 9 YEARS OLD.
THE BOY'S FAMILY WAS FROM A LINE OF SERVANTS TO THE ARISTO-CRATS.
MARCO WAS ALSO TO SERVE UNDER A BARON CALLED RIPPI AND HIS JOB WOULD ONLY BE CLEANING HATS AND SHOES.
WHEN HE WAS ABOUT TO LEAVE HIS PARENTS, HIS FATHER TOLD THE 9-YEAR OLD MARCO ...
"THIS JOB WILL BRING YOU HAPPINESS... AS LONG AS YOU STAY HUMBLE AND EARNEST." ...HE SAID.

EVERY MORNING, MARCO GOT UP EARLIER THAN EVERYBODY ELSE, AND SHINED THE SHOES AND BRUSHED THE HATS FOR THE BARON AND HIS GUESTS.
HOWEVER, WEEKS AFTER TAKING SERVICE, SUDDENLY... THE COUNTRY'S MILITARY POLICE BROKE INTO THE ESTATE.
AND MARCO WAS ARRESTED.
THE BARON WAS PLOTTING A REVOLT AGAINST THE KING OF THIS COUNTRY.
THE KING'S ASSASSINATION WAS PREVENTED, BUT TREASON IS THE MOST SERIOUS CRIME!
THE BARON'S PARTNERS IN THE PLOT AND THE BARON'S FAMILY WERE PUT ON TRIAL, AND SENTENCED TO EXECUTION.

BECAUSE HE WAS SHINING THE SHOES OF THE BARON AND HIS PARTNERS EVERY MORNING...
AND MARCO WAS SEEN AS PART OF THE BARON'S FAMILY.
"THERE IS NO DOUBT THAT HE KNEW ABOUT IT..." THEY SAID.
FROM THE EVIDENCE, THE ASSASSINATION PLOT WAS PLANNED IN THIS ESTATE,
THE DECISION OF THE STATE WAS ABSOLUTE.
THE EXECUTION METHOD WAS BEHEADING.

Champagne
I'VE GOT THE IMAGE.
AT LEAST THE IMAGE OF THE SPIN...
OH!!
LIKE THE DANCING IMAGE OF A SPINNING LIKE A BALLET DANCER IN THE WIND...

IT'S... SPINN... GYRO!
WHOOOOAA!!
YOU DIDN'T SEE ME JUST NOW!? WHY WEREN'T YOU WATCHING!?
WHAT, GYRO! WEREN'T YOU WATCHING!?
IT WAS GREAT!! IT REALLY SPUN! THE CORK!

THAT'S FUNNY.
HUH?
WHERE DID THE CORK GO?
YOU REALLY DID IT? DO IT AGAIN THEN.
WHY DO I HAVE TO WATCH YOU ALL DAY LONG?
SO ...
POP
THE ROCKS ARE BEHIND ME.. IT SHOULDN'T FLY OUT.
WHERE IS IT?
IT SHOULDN'T DISAPPEAR LIKE THAT.
IT'S A LITTLE DAMP!!
AAH!
IT'S FALLING DOWN MY BACK!.... AH!
WAS IT REALLY UP THE HORSE'S ASS!!
POP?
WHAT WAS THAT SOUND... WHERE WAS IT?
POP?

JOHNNY, THERE'S SOMEONE OVER THERE.
......
YOU THINK HE'S PLANNING TO RUN ALL NIGHT?
THAT GUY.
UNTHINK-ABLE.
THAT HORSE WOULD JUST GET IN AN ACCIDENT IN THE DARK.
HE MIGHT COME OVER HERE.

YOU JUST SAID THAT THIS ROUTE WAS FULL OF "WEIRDOES."
JOHNNY... DID YOU BRING A WEAPON?
WHEN YOU SAY WEIRDOES, YOU MEAN GUYS LIKE THAT MRS. ROBINSON, RIGHT!? THAT WAS BY CHANCE.
YOU THINK SO? ....
WE'RE CHAMPION CANDIDATES.
IF YOU HAVE ANY WEAPON, GET THEM OUT. IF HE COMES NEAR US, WE'LL DRIVE HIM BACK!
UH. JU. .JUST IN CASE .
I DID BRING A GUN. . BUT I NEVER FIRED IT BEFORE. .

*1 BOY GIVEN DEATH SENTENCE FOR TREASON

*2 EXECUTION IN DECEMBER

WHAT'S THIS?
A COAT OF ARMS ...
A LETTER HOLDER WITH A COAT OF ARMS ON IT ...
DID HE STEAL IT? A COAT OF ARMS IS A TREASURE THAT CAN'T BE HELD WITHOUT PERMISSION FROM SOMEONE LIKE A LORD IN EUROPE.
ツェペリ法務官
少年有罪に抗議
しかし 認められず
(OFFICER ZEPPELI PROTESTS AGAINST BOY'S GUILT)
裁判やりなおしの費用に
50.000.000ドル必要
WERE YOU TAUGHT TO LOOK THROUGH OTHER PEOPLE'S STUFF WHILE GROWING UP?
EH...!?

I... I WASN'T LOOKING THROUGH!
BUT YOU ....
WHO ARE YOU?
YOU'RE NOT FROM THIS COUNTRY?

WAS GYRO TRYING TO SAVE THAT BOY ALL BY HIMSELF? HOW WERE GYRO AND THE BOY RELATED? THE RACE PRIZE OF $50 MILLION... ALL I CAN SAY ABOUT THIS IS THAT THE TIME GYRO ANSWERS THESE QUESTION WOULD SOON COME...WHEN HE HITS THE HARSHEST POINT IN THE RACE.

HE REALLY IS COMING OVER HERE AFTER ALL ...
EH?
LOOKS LIKE THE BALLOONS HAVE LANDED. THIS MIGHT JUST TURNED INTO ■ RACE INTERFERENCE ALLOWED ROUTE.
NEVER LET HIM COME NEAR.
ALLLLL RIGHT! STOP RIGHT THERE!
DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!

I MEAN NO HARM! I CAME HERE BECAUSE I SAW THE FIRE!
D... DON'T SHOOOT!
YEAH, YOU!
I TOLD YOU TO STOP RIGHT THERE!
I'M TALKING TO YOU!
THIS IS BAD...!! REAL BAD!
I WAS BITTEN!
I WAS SQUATTING DOWN AND TAKING A DUMP, AND MY FINGERS WERE BIT! SHIIIT! 2 FINGERS ON MY LEFT HAAAND!
MEANING HARM OR NO HARM ...
I'LL JUDGE THAT AFTER YOU LEAVE.

HE HASN'T SAID IT YET.
HEY! WHAT'RE YOU GETTING OFF YOUR HORSE FOR!? YOU ASSHOLE!
JOHNNY... DID HE SAY WHAT HE WAS BITTEN BY?
DON'T MAKE ME TELL YOU TO STAY AWAY MORE THAN ONCE!!
A POISONOUS LIZARRRRD!
A YELLOW AND BLACK STRIPED ONE!
WHEN I WAS TRYING TO WIPE MY ASS, IT WAS HIDING BEHIND THE SHIT!
PLEEEASE, GIMME SOME FIRE FROM YOUR CAMPFIRE! I WANNA BURN THE WOUND AND CLEAN IIIIIT!!
MIGHT BE A FAKE WOUND.
THE LIZARD'S A "SPOTTED SALAM-ANDER".
ONCE ITS VENOM CIRCLES THE WHOLE BODY, YOU DIE.

WHAT'RE YOU TALKING ABOUT! WOULD THEY COME AT NIGHT!?
I'LL BE DEAD BEFORE DAWN!
AFTER I CUT OFF THE POISON, I WANT TO CLEAN IT...GIMME SOME FIREEEEE!!
WELL, THAT'S TOO BAD. WAIT FOR THE RESCUE GROUP.
ARE YOU GOING TO LET HIM DIE?
I DUNNO ...
BUT I DON'T TRUST HIM ...
STRANGE GUY.
THANK YOUUUUU!
THANK YOUUUUU, THANKYOU THANKYOU!
THANK YOUUUUU, THANK YOU!
THANK YOUUU!
THANK YOUUUUU, THANKYOU!
I WON'T LET YOU COME NEAR US! BUT I'LL GIVE YOU A LIT PIECE OF WOOD!
YOU GO AHEAD AND START YOUR OWN CAMPFIRE AND CLEAN IT!

URK.
K
ACK

URK
BK
HEY, WHAT'RE YOU DOING?
IT'S...IT'S ANESTHESIA.
ANESTHESIA.
SINCE I'M GONNA CUT OFF THE POISONED PART OF THE SKINNN... I'D NEED A PAINKILLER.
I INVENTED THIS WAY MYSELF...IT'S OUT OF THIS WORLD.
DON'T EVER TRY THIS
I ALWAYS LET THE GIRLS STRANGLE ME.

JUUUUUST RIGHT BEFORE I PASS OOOOOOUT!!
WHAT'S HE TALK-ING ABOUT!
NO IDEA!! WHAT'S ALL THIS!?
HEEEEEEEE AAAAAAH!!
UGH.
EEEEEE EEE!!
BBB
KK
NOTE: ALL OF THESE SOUNDS ARE CHOKING NOISES
PK

WHAT THE HELL! HE TORE OUT HIS WOUND! A LIZARD REALLY DID GET HIM!
SHIT!
I REALLY DIDN'T HAVE TO SEE THAT KIND OF THING RIGHT BEFORE GOING TO SLEEP!!
HERE, HERE'S YOUR FIRE, JUST GET THE HELL OUT OF HERE!! DAMN IT!!
HE'S NOT MOVING ANY-MORE!
YEAH, OF COURSE ... YOU'D DEFINITELY DIE IF YOU DO THAT! HE MIGHT HAVE REALLY BOUGHT IT BY STRANGLING TOO MUCH ...

HEY, WAKE UP!
I'M SORRY THAT I WAS HARD ON YOU WHEN YOU WERE BITTEN, BUT WE DON'T WANT YOU LYING THERE ALL NIGHT EITHER!
JUST GET UP AND GET OUT OF HERE!

GYRO, I FOUND HIS NAME IN THE RACER LIST.
ANDRE BOOM BOOM, NUMBER C-450. HE'S IN AT 10TH PLACE IN THE 1ST STAGE!
HEY HEY, HE REALLY DIDN'T DIE, DID HE?

MY ....
BOOT .....?
AND THIS BOOM BOOM, WAIT A MINUTE.

NOTE: LIST ON THE RIGHT IS A RACE RANKING LIST. SEE CH. 12 FOR THE TRANS.

NOTE: (O)NIISAN MEANS OLDER BROTHER. HE ADDS -NII BECAUSE IT IS SORT OF A JAPANESE CUSTOM TO REFER TO ONE'S OWN BROTHER THAT WAY IF REFERRING TO THEM BY NAME RATHER THAN AS OLDER BROTHER.

BUT HE FINALLY TOUCHED ANDRE'S KNIFE!
HE DIDN'T DIRECTLY TOUCH ANDRE, BUT HE TOUCHED THE BLOOD-STAINED KNIFE!
WHO THE HELL ARE THEY! THERE'S 2 GUYS COMING RIGHT AT US!
THEY'RE A TEAM. THEY'RE A 3-MAN TEAM AIMING FOR THE $50 MILLION!
IF THEY'RE GOING TO CHARGE AT US ...

JOHNNY! SHOT THE GUY ON THE LEFT WITH YOUR GUN!
I'LL TAKE THE ONE ON THE RIGHT!
WHAT ?!
WHAT THE?!
MY ... FOOT !

IGNITION-ONE
HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

KNOCKOUT! SCANS
NEOSHWEATY.PROBOARDS53.COM

SCANS: HANAMICHI
EDITOR: NEOSHWEATY
TRANS: ORA2

#16 THE DESERT-BORN OUTLAWS PART ②
THE FOOT?! WHAT HAPPENED?!

GYRO! WHAT IS THAT?! THE SHAPE OF YOUR FOOT?!
I DON'T KNOW!
THE SKIN OF MY LEFT FOOT'S LIKE STEEL ...
DAMN IT ... THE PAIN'S INCREDIBLE TOO!
IT'S SLOWLY CREEPING UP MY FOOT!

IT FEELS LIKE A BLOCK IS IN MY FOOT!
SOME-THING'S GOING WRONG IN MY BODY!
I KICKED HIS KNIFE AWAY WITH THIS FOOT! SOME KIND OF POISON! ... OR ... HE MIGHT HAVE INFECTED ME WITH SOME SORT OF DISEASE!!
DID THAT ANDRÉ BOOM BOOM OVER THERE DO IT?! OR DID THE TWO GUYS CLOSING IN DO IT?!
WHAT HAPPENED TO YOU?!
IT HAS TO BE! ... BUT I DON'T KNOW WHAT WAS DONE TO ME!

JUST TAKE THE LEFT! I GOT THE RIGHT!
DON'T LET THEM GET ANY CLOSER!
HERE THEY COME!
EH?!
WHAT ?!

GYROOO!
!?

JOHNNY?! WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING?!
THE GUN BROKE!! ALL ... ALL OF A SUDDEN!!
I HAVEN'T USED IT MUCH! ... BUT IT SUDDENLY FELL APART ...
IT'S NOT AN OLD GUN ...
AND ...
AND

IT'S BEING PULLED.
THE GUN'S GOING TOWARD YOU!

WHA ...
WHAT IS THIS ?!
INTO MY SKIN ...
GYRO! EVEN THE KNIFE IS MOVING YOUR WAY!

BROTHER ANDRE ... HE'S NOT MOVING.
YOU THINK HE SAFELY CLEANED OUT THE LIZARD VENOM?
GOD, YOU'VE BEEN NOISY FOR AWHILE!
AND ... L.A.! HOW LONG ARE YOU GONNA STICK TO MY ASS?
I TOLD YOU TO GO TO THE OTHER SIDE OF THOSE GUYS. THAT WAS OUR PLAN.
GO IN FROM BOTH SIDES, AND THAT'S THE END OF OUR PLAN!!
GOD, YOU'RE SLOW, JUST LIKE YOUR MOM ...
JUST LIKE THAT WOMAN WHO LEFT HOME AND BECAME A WHORE!
OUR MOM WAS A STORK, RIGHT?
BIG BROTHER SAID THAT.
OUR MOM WAS A STORK! DO I LOOK LIKE A STORK?
SHADDUP!! HURRY UP AND GET AROUND THOSE GUYS!!
THAT KNIFE IS IRON ...
THOSE GUN PARTS BURROWING INTO THE SKIN ARE IRON, TOO ...
MAYBE THE IRON IS BEING PULLED TOWARDS YOU?

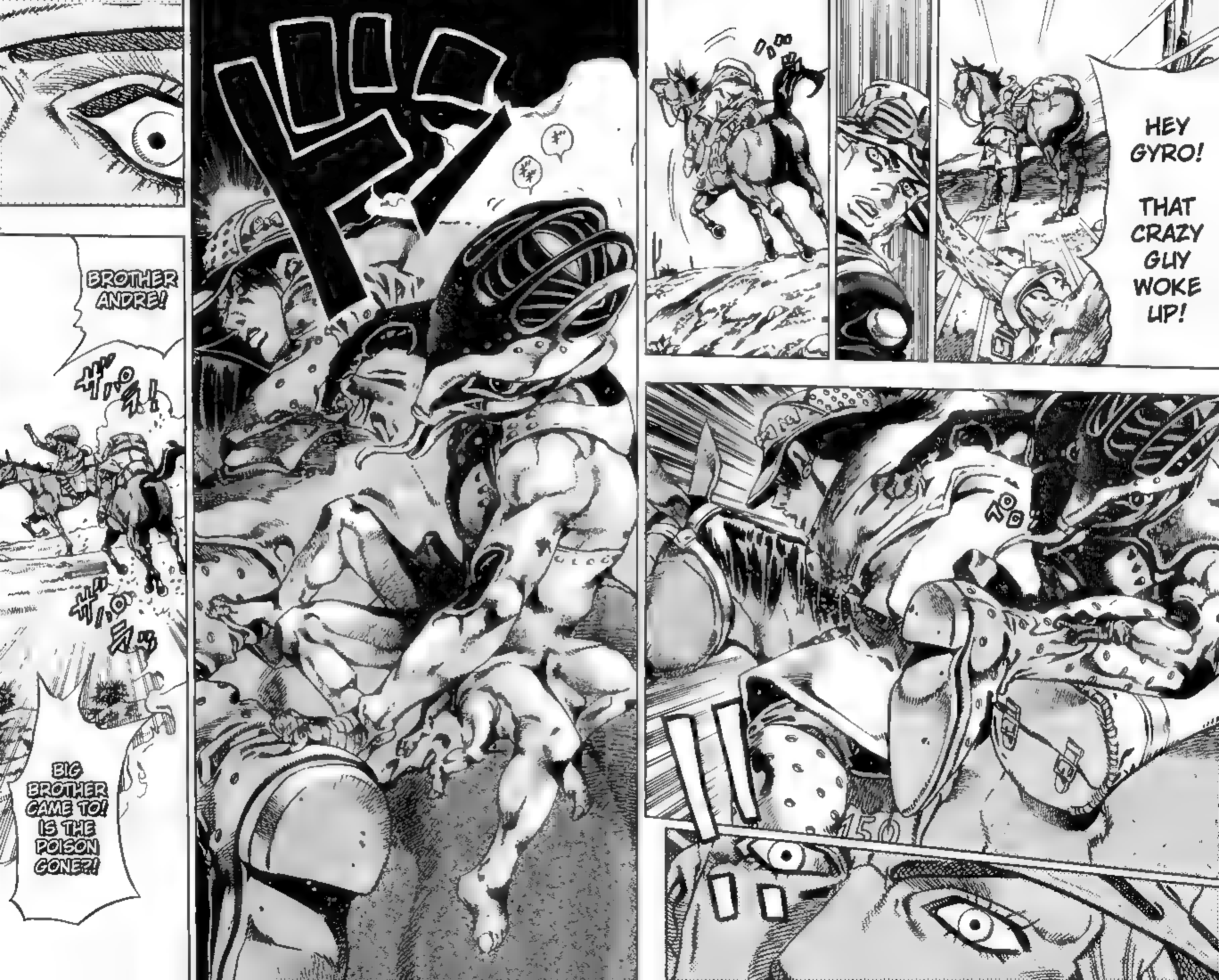
THERE'S IRON IN BLOOD, TOO!
COULD THEY BE CONTROLLING IRON THAT WAY?!

URYAAA
AAAAA!!!
Y!!

THE STEEL BALL ...
IT ...
IT GOT GROUND UP IN MID-AIR!!

1ST PLACE IS DAD.
2ND PLACE IS BROTHER ANDRE.
3RD PLACE IS ME.
IF WE DO A 1-2-3 FINISH ...
THE TOTAL PRIZE MONEY WILL BE BIG! IT'LL BE BIG WHEN YOU ADD THEM ALL UP!!
...... UH ......
HOW MUCH DO YOU GET WHEN YOU ADD THEM ...?
51.5 MILLION DOLLARS!
YOU IDIOT!
GYRO! THE STEEL BALL WAS GONE IN MID-AIR! THE STEEL BALL IS IRON, TOO ... !
BUT HOW WOULD YOU GRIND IRON?!
WHO THE HELL ARE THESE GUYS?!
WE'RE SURROUNDED, GYRO!
THEY'RE BEGINNING TO CIRCLE AROUND US!

THESE GUYS ARE COMPLETELY DIFFERENT ...
NOT LIKE THAT MISSUS ROBIN-SON ...
THEY'RE NOT LIKE HIM ... !! HE WAS BREEDING INSECTS IN HIS EYES AND CONTROLLING THEM.
THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THAT KIND ...
THESE GUYS HAVE A SUPERIOR "SOMETHING," AND THEY SHOWED UP IN THIS RACE.
.........
WHAT DO YOU MEAN? A "SUPERIOR" SOMETHING?!
I DON'T KNOW ...
I'D LIKE TO KNOW ...
BECAUSE I GOT ABSOLUTELY NO CLUE ...


HEY GYRO!
THAT CRAZY GUY WOKE UP!
BROTHER ANDRE!
BIG BROTHER CAME TO! IS THE POISON GONE?!

JOHNNY!! YOU SEE THAT?!
EH ... ?
WHAT ... ?
I DON'T SEE IT ANYMORE.
THAT ANDRE BOOM BOOM. WHAT WAS THAT JUST NOW?!
?
ANYWAY, GYRO! YOUR FOOT.
THE BLEEDING IS GETTING WORSE THAN BEFORE!!
AREN'T THE PARTS BURROWING DEEPER?!
I KNOW ... IT'S GOTTEN WORSE AFTER BEING SURROUNDED BY THEM!
THIS IS A TEAM ATTACK.
THE CLOSER I APPROACH THESE GUYS ... THE STRONGER THIS IRON SEEMS TO HAVE AN EFFECT ON MY BODY!

IF THEY GET RIGHT NEXT TO US HERE ...
THESE MIGHT GO STRAIGHT THROUGH MY BODY!
JOHNNY. YOU OKAY OVER THERE?
YEAH, I'M ALL RIGHT.
I GUESS IT'S CONNECTED TO TOUCHING IT ...
AFTER YOU TOUCHED THE KNIFE WITH HIS BLOOD ON IT ...
DAMN, WE'RE COMPLETELY SURROUNDED! ALL THREE ARE BEGINNING TO CIRCLE AROUND US!
HEY YO, L.A.
HUH?

CAN YOU DO THIS?
NOS-TRILS BOTH FLAT!
NOS-TRILS BOTH FLAT!
WOW, BRO-THER ANDRE!! HOW DO YOU DO THAT?!
WHOA, THAT'S AWESOME!
DUMBASS!!
I WON'T TELL YOU! YOU WON'T BE ABLE TO DO IT FOR THE REST OF YOUR LIFE!
MY EAR CAN GO INTO MY EARHOLE, TOO!
EAR'S ALL FLAT TOO!
YOU CAN'T DO THIS!
WHOO OOOA!! THAT'S AWESOME !!
HEY YOU GUYS!
WHO IS GOING TO CLOSE IN ON THESE GUYS AND SETTLE THIS?
AM I GONNA DO THIS?

HE'S ALL OUT.
BESIDES, EVEN IF HE DID, WOULD IT MATTER?
THE GUY ON HORSE-BACK ...
HE MIGHT HAVE MORE GUNS.
THEN I'LL GO, DAD!
THOSE GUYS DIDN'T GIVE ME SOME FIRE RIGHT AWAY! I WAS THIS CLOSE FROM LETTING THAT LIZARD VENOM RUN THROUGH MY WHOLE BODY!
I'M GONNA GET MY REVENGE!

HEY LOOK.
HE TOOK OUT THAT OTHER STEEL BALL.
THERE'S TWO IN ALL.
HE THREW THAT AT THE INDIAN AND GOT A PENALTY IN THE 1ST STAGE.
G ... GYRO ...
HEH HEH HEH HEH ...
KUKU KUKU ...

ANDRE'S THE MOST TALENTED IN THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY.
HE DOESN'T KNOW.
I GUESS ... HE'LL THROW IT AGAIN.
DOES HE THINK IT'LL REACH BIG BROTHER WITHOUT THE IRON RUNNING OUT?
IT'LL BE THE SAME.
LET'S GO! OUR FAMILY WILL BE 1ST IN THE RACE!

HAHA! SO YOU'RE THROWING IT DIFFERENTLY THIS TIME ... ?
IT'S STILL THE SAME ... IT'LL NEVER MAKE IT TO ME ...
EH?
IT WON'T REACH, DUMBASS !!

IT WON'T REACH ME YOU DUMB-ASS! I'LL CHARGE IN AND RIP YOUR GUTS OUT!
LOOKS LIKE THEY ONLY HAVE INFLUENCE ON IRON ...
A ROCK CAN BE SHOT. A ROCK ...

IT'S A HIT.
JOHNNY, GET YOUR STUFF ON YOUR HORSE.
WE HAVE TO LEAVE THIS PLACE ... THERE'S 2 MORE LEFT ... THESE GUYS ARE SIMPLY BIZARRE ... LET'S GO.
E ...
HAAAA!! IT'S HURRRTS!
DAAAAD!

IGNITION-ONE
HTTP://WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM
IN A JOINT ADVENTURE WITH
KNOCKOUT!SCANS
NEOSHWEATY.PROBOARDS53.COM

SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI
TRANSLATED BY: ORA2
EDITED BY: THE VINNY MAC

TRANSLATED BY: ORA2

EDITED BY: THE VINNY MAC

SCANNED BY: HANAMICHI

IGNITION-ONE.COM
WWW.IGNITION-ONE.COM

AAAAAAH! THOSE GUYS ARE GETTING AWAAAAAY!
I WON'T LET YOU RUN, YOU PIIIIGS!
THEY'RE TOO FAR, DAD.
PLUS, THOSE BULLETS ARE LEAD.
IF IT WAS IRON, THE GUY'S BODY MIGHT'VE PULLED THEM IN AND HIT ...
I KNOW THAT!! SINCE WHEN DID YOU BECOME MR. KNOW-IT-ALL?!
DON'T TALK AS IF YOU KNOW WITH THAT CRUMMY BRAIN OF YOURS!

HEY ANDRE, MOVE A LITTLE TO THE RIGHT.
TO THE RIGHT.

ヒュン

AAAH!
......
WHEN I WAS YOUNG, I FELL OFF A CLIFF AND TORE OFF MY LOWER JAW ... AND I WALKED 5KM BACK HOME.
WHAT THE, IT'S A PRETTY SMALL HOLE.
LEMME SEE YOUR WOUND, ANDRE.
I ... I THINK I MIGHT DIE, DAD!
THAT BASTARD, I'LL MAKE HIM PAY! I'LL GET MY REVENGE!!
HEH, SHITHEAD ... THAT'LL DO IT.

... WON'T HAVE ANY DRINKING WATER, WHICH MEANS THEY'RE WIPED OUT!
WE'LL KILL THOSE TWO GUYS.
AND WE'LL REACH THE WATERING HOLE 50KM AHEAD FASTER THAN ANYONE ELSE.
YEAH, WE'LL FINISH THEM!
IF WE GET THERE FIRST, WE CAN DESTROY THE ONLY WATERING HOLE ... THE OTHER RACERS THAT'LL COME BY LATER ...
THOSE GUYS ARE CHAMPION CANDIDATES.
BUT HOW'RE WE GOING TO CATCH UP TO THOSE TWO GUYS?
WE'RE ATTACKING THEM LIKE THIS BECAUSE WE CAN'T CATCH UP TO THEM EASILY, RIGHT?
EH HEE HEE HEE HEE HEE!
KE HEH HEH HEH HEH HEH!
KE KE KE KE

SHIT FOR BRAINS.
OH, HERE WE GO. OUR FAMILY'S SMARTASS MADE A COMMENT.
WE'LL LET THE GUY BEHIND US CHASE GYRO ZEPELLI AND JOHNNY JOESTAR. HE'LL TAKE CARE OF THEM FOR US.
WHO SAID WE'RE GONNA CHASE THEM?
EH?
BEHIND?
WHO'S THE GUY BEHIND?
WHO IS IT?
HEE
THE GUY THAT'S TRACKING US!
OUT OF THE 3,000 SOMETHING RACERS THERE'S SOMEBODY WHO FOUND ONLY MY HOOFPRINTS AND HAS BEEN TRACKING ME SINCE MORNING ...
I KNEW ALLLL ABOUT THIS!

Y-YOU MEAN LIKE DAD'S HOOF PRINTS RIGHT HERE?
THERE'S SUCH A GUY? THAT MAN ... WHO IS HE?
I CAN'T TELL FROM THE VIEW HERE.
IT'S PROBABLY A SHERIFF ... POSSIBLY MOUNTAIN TIM.
I HEARD HE'S FRIENDLY WITH THE SHERIFF
MOUNTAIN TIM!!
WOW! 4TH PLACE IN THE 1ST STAGE! THE COWBOY EVERBODY LOOKS UP TO.
AND WE'RE GONNA USE THAT FACT AGAINST THEM!!
WITH OUR POWER OF IRON CONTROL!

!
EH HEE HEE HEE HEE HEE
THAT'S DEFINITELY A SUREFIRE WAY!
A-HA! NOW I UNDER-STAND DAD'S THINKING!
WHAT ARE YOU PLANNING TO DO TO MOUNTAIN TIM?
P-PUTTING IRON INSIDE YOUR FACE .. AND .. AND IT'S CHANG-ING SHAPE ...
U-USING IT, DAD ... ?

WE WERE LOOKING FOR MINES IN THE CURSED MOUNTAIN IN THE DESERT, WHICH WAS DESPISED BY LOCAL INDIANS ... AND WE GAINED THIS POWER!
THE INDIANS SAID BAD LUCK WOULD COME TO US, BUT WE'VE ONLY BECOME HAPPY!
WE'LL ELIMINATE ANYONE WHO'S IN THE WAY!
AND THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY WILL RUN AS THE LEADER!

PWFT

I WAS JUST ABOUT TO THINK THAT I SHOULD CONTINUE TRACKING NEXT MORNING.
I THOUGHT I'D HAVE TO CAMP HERE, TOO.
SHERIFF
UNDER THE LAW OF UNITED STATES AND ARIZONA TERRITORY
I'VE BEEN COMMIS-SIONED AS AN ASSISTANT SHERIFF.
I'M PLACING YOU UNDER ARREST FOR THE MURDERS OF THREE RACE CONTESTANTS.
SHOW YOUR HANDS AND SLOWLY GET OUT OF THERE.

DEPENDING ON THE SITUATION, I HAVE THE RIGHT TO EXECUTION.
TURN THIS WAY!
DON'T LOWER YOUR HANDS.

YOU'RE ...
YOU WERE IN 5TH PLACE.
I REMEMBER ...

……
!
IT'S ... BLOOD.
?

......
HM.
WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO DO?
DON'T THINK ABOUT ANYTHING STUPID!
THE CHASE ENDS HERE, AND I'D LIKE TO CONCENTRATE ON THE RACE.

SO IT'S A CLIFF DOWN THERE ...
YOU'D HAVE TO GO ALL THE WAY AROUND THE BRIER PATCH TO GET TO THE OTHERSIDE ON HORSEBACK.
BUT I SEE. YOU WOULD ESCAPE DURING THAT TIME.
I WON'T LET YOU AWAY ...

PFT!
UGEH!
ARE YOU COMING OUT?
OR SHOULD I DRAG YOU OUT THROUGH THE THORNY BRUSH?
UGH!
GAH!
TH- THIS ... ROPE ...

D-DON'T
... BE SO
SURE.
EH?
A
HAND?!
WHAT
THE?!
WHAT
...

ドドドド
ド
ズ
ドドドド

ピタ…
TH
...

H-HIS FINGERS!!
BROKE INTO PIECES,
AND SLID DOWN THE ROPE LIKE A PULLEY!!
AND HE COULD MOVE THEM FREELY, TOO!
THIS GUY! COULD MOUNTAIN TIM?!
SO HE WENT TO THAT MOUNTAIN BEFORE, AND BECAME A CURSED MAN!
THIS IS!

TO THINK SUCH A MAN WAS FOLLOWING ME ... !!
BUT IN ANY CASE, OUR VICTORY REMAINS UNCHANGED!!
MOUNTAIN TIM TOUCHED THAT HORSESHOE, AND HE'S DIRECTLY TOUCHING ME NOW! HE'LL BE FINISHED, TOO!
!

HE HAD TWO KNIVES?
IT'S CUT ...
IF I REMEMBER CORRECTLY, HIS NAME WAS JOHNNY JOESTAR.
..........
I'M SURPRISED ... SO HE WAS THE MURDERER.

HEY ANDRE, L.A.!
I'VE CHANGED MY HOOF PRINTS TO JOHNNY'S, TOO!
AND THAT'S THE FINISHING TOUCH.
NOW WE LET MOUNTAIN TIM GO AHEAD.
THAT COWBOY'LL TRACK DOWN JOHNNY AND GYRO, AND WHEN HE CATCHES UP ... !!
BUT I'M SURPRISED MOUNTAIN TIM WAS A CURSED MAN, THOUGH.
THE THREE WILL PULL EACH OTHER TOGETHER WITH THEIR MAGNETIC POWER,
AND THEY'LL BLOW THEMSELVES UP AND SPLATTER THEIR GUTS OUT!
3 2nd. STAGE アリゾナ砂漠越え(完)

荒木飛呂彦

ONE THING THAT AMAZED ME ABOUT THINGS RELATED TO THE 'SPHERE SHAPE'... I WAS WATCHING AN 'AIKIDOU' VIDEO, AND THIS YOUNG MAN IN A 'HAKAMA' GRABBED THE HEAD OF A MAN WHO LOOKED LIKE HE WAS 60 (WHO WAS THE MASTER). THE MASTER GRUNTED 'HUN!' AND SHOOK HIS HEAD IN THE SHAPE OF A SPHERE. THE YOUNG MAN FLEW APPROXIMATELY 2 METERS IN THE AIR. IT MAKES YOU THINK HE JUST JUMPED ON PURPOSE, SINCE HE WAS THROWN SO EASILY. BUT I DON'T THINK IT WAS FAKE, SINCE THE VIDEO COST OVER 10,000 YEN, AND I'D LIKE TO BE THROWN ONCE (SOMEWHERE SOFT).

荒木飛呂彦

(ジャイロ・ツェペリの宿命)

STEEL BALL RUN 4

荒木飛呂彦

集英社

9784088736891

1929979003906

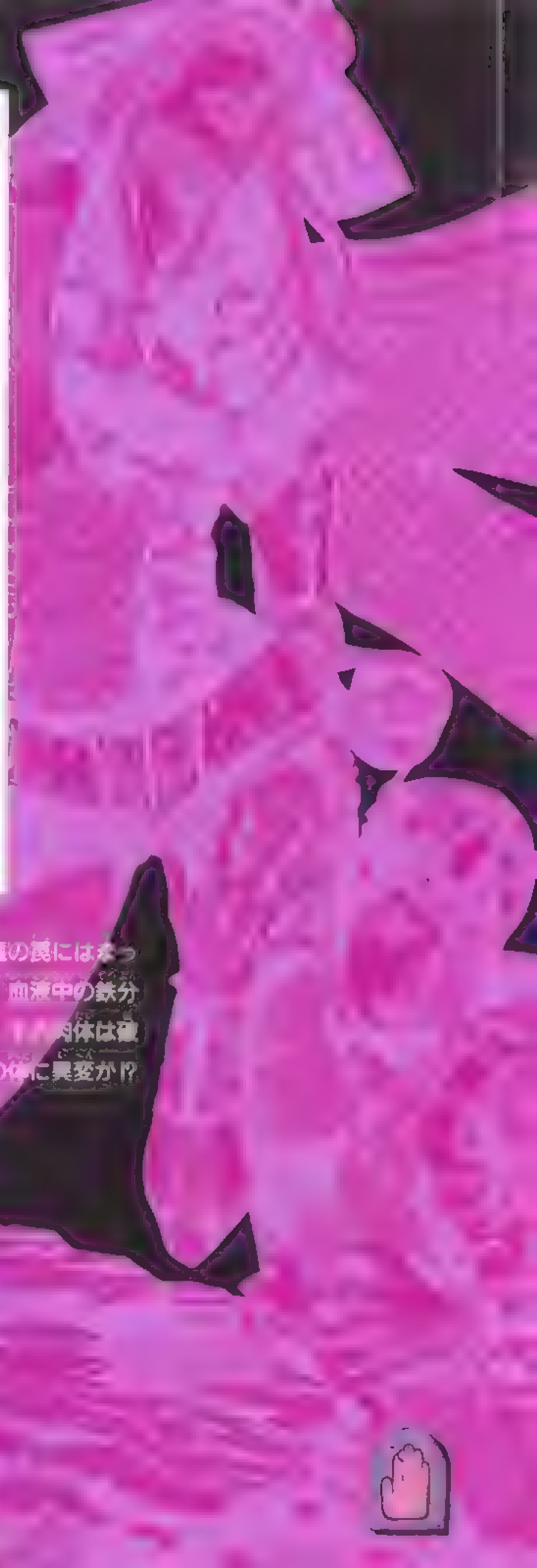
ISBN4-08-873689-3

C9979 ¥390E

定価 本体390円+税

雑誌 43010−89

鉄を操る能力を持つブンブーン一家の魔の罠にはまったジャイロ、ジョニィ、M[illegible]血液中の鉄分が互いを引き寄せあい、3人が[illegible]肉体は破裂する!! 絶体絶命の状況の中[illegible]ジョニィの体に異変か!?



ジャンプ・コミックス

JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890 sep 24
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
4
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
集英社
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together and makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

6000km彼方の極彩色の栄光
虹色の風を越え
JCの名作「ジョジョの奇妙な冒険」1～63 &
「ストーンオーシャン」1～17絶賛発売中!!
時を越えた傑作を体験せよ!!
JC「スティール・ボール・ラン」3 & 4
11月4日(木)同時発売決定!!
このぜいたくな体験!!
STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン
#22 砂漠の猛爆
荒木飛呂彦
& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

JUMP COMICS

# STEEL BALL RUN

THE DUTY OF GYRO ZEPPELI

vol.4

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE
1st.STAGE 15,000メートルのスプリントレース。
ゴール前のデッドヒートを制し、勝者となったジャイロ。
しかし、サンドマンに対し走行妨害行為があったとされ、
21位に降格のペナルティを課せられてしまう。
怒りのおさまらないジャイロだったが、2nd.STAGEの
勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に！
一方、1st.STAGEのレース中に参加選手3名が
殺害される事件が起きていた。
容疑者は選手の中にいると判断した保安官は、
優勝候補のマウンテン・ティムに犯人の追跡を依頼する──。
そしてアリゾナ砂漠を越える2nd.STAGEが始まった。
最短ルートをめざし、水場のあるコースを無視して
砂漠の真ん中を突き進むジャイロとジョニィ。
その二人をブンブーン一家の最悪の罠が待ち構えていた！
鉄を操る能力を持つブンブーン一家に接触した事により、
磁石のように鉄を引き寄せる体になってしまったジャイロ！
なんとか逃げ出し、30km先の水場を目指す二人だったが、
その『呪い』は続いていた…。
全行程中にニューヨークを含め9か所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！
GOAL NEW YORK
2nd.STAGE 1,200km
1st.STAGE 15,000m
START SAN DIEGO
そして、犯人と思われる蹄鉄の跡だけをたよりに
追跡していたティムは、ついに犯人を突き止めた。
だがそれは、ジョニィに姿を変えた
ベンジャミン・ブンブーンだった！
格闘の末、ベンジャミンを
とり逃してしまったティムは、
ジョニィを犯人と思い込んだまま、
彼を追い真夜中の砂漠を突き進む！
そしてティムもまたブンブーンの
『呪い』に感染していた…。
『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km 優勝賞金5千万ドル!!(60億円)
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3600人を超えた！
そして1890年9月25日 午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！
アンドレ・ブンブーン

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.4

## CONTENTS

ジャイロ・ツェペリの宿命


#18
悪魔の手のひら　その① 7

#19
悪魔の手のひら　その② 39

#20
ジャイロ・ツェペリの宿命　その① 71

#21
ジャイロ・ツェペリの宿命　その② 103

#22
遠い国から来たテロリスト　その① 135

#23
遠い国から来たテロリスト　その② 173


STARDUST CRUSADERS

TRANSLATOR: ACK44
PROOFREADER: NURLOCK
EDITOR: KAGAMI

HE'S FOLLOWING AT AN AMAZING PACE!!
CAN YOU SEE THE REST OF THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY!?
WHERE ARE THEY!?
I DON'T SEE THEM AT ALL! ... IT'S DARK... HE'S BEEN FOLLOWING ALONE!
#18 THE DEVIL'S PALM
①

AND HE'S KEPT THAT SAME PACE!
SINCE LIKE THREE HOURS AGO!!
ALL OF OUR HORSES ARE AT THEIR LIMITS...
THERE'S SOMETHING QUEER... WHO IS THAT?
IS HE REALLY ONE OF THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY?
DID THEY HAVE RIDING SKILLS LIKE THAT...... ? AND THAT WEIRD LOOKING HAT...
I'VE SEEN IT BEFORE...
WHO ELSE WOULD WANT TO FOLLOW US...
AT THIS TIME OF NIGHT?
IF WE LET THEM GET NEAR US THAT 'IRON MAGNET' WILL START UP AGAIN!
WE NEED TO GET TO THE 'WATERING HOLE' BEFORE THEM OR IT'LL BE A DIRTY MESS.
WE STILL HAVE 15 KM TO GO, DAMMIT!

GY....

GYRO, WHAT THE FUCK! HE'S ALREADY CLIMBED UP THE ROCKS!!
WAIT.... I KNOW HIM.
YOU'RE RIGHT, IT'S NOT ONE OF THE BOOM BOOMS...
WHY WOULD HE BE CHASING US THROUGH THE NIGHT!!
THAT SPEED... IT'S ABNORMAL!! MOUNTAIN TIM!
WHAT DO WE DO, GYRO!?

WE'VE GOT TO LOSE HIM! WHAT ELSE!
WE CAN'T LET ANYBODY GET CLOSE TO US IN THIS DESERT STAGE! NOBODY WOULD BE FOLLOWING US AT NIGHT LIKE THIS WITHOUT SOME FUCKED-UP REASON!
THE MURDERER OF THE THREE PARTICIPANTS IS 'JOHNNY JOESTAR'
IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE, BUT THOSE PRINTS LEAD ME TO HIM..
EITHER WAY, IT'S CERTAIN HE USED HIS "CURSED ABILITY" FOR THE MURDERS!
BUT!! I WILL ARREST HIM AND PUT AN END TO THIS! DEAD OR ALIVE!

MAN! WHAT THE HELL KIND OF SPEED IS THAT!!
HE'S ALREADY CLIMBED THE NEXT SET OF ROCKS!!
IT'S SUPPOSED TO BE UPHILL, HOW IS HE ACCELERATING!?
NO...
NO! GYRO....
I'M STARTING TO UNDER-STAND.....!!
THIS SITUATION ISN'T WHAT WE WERE THIN-KING....!!
COULD IT... BE?
?
.........
HE IS ACCELERATING....!!
... BUT
THAT'S NOT ALL!!
WE COULDN'T TELL BECAUSE WE WERE RUNNING BUT.... *THAT'S NOT ALL!!*

I'M BEING PULLED!!
MY BODY!!
IT'S BEING PULLED FROM BEHIND!
!!

THE 'METAL' FROM MY HARNESS IS FLYING TOWARDS ME!
JOHNNY!

GUOH
GUHAA!
WE DID IT! THEY FELL!
AMAZING!!

HEHE HEHE HEHE
IT'S PERFECT! NOW THE THREE OF THEM JUST HAVE TO COME TOGETHER!
I KNEW WE COULD COUNT ON MOUNTAIN TIM TO ENTER INTO THE 'MAGNETIC RANGE'!
HEEHEE HEEHEE HEEHEE
DO YOU THINK THAT'S WHAT'S IMPORTANT NOW, ANDRE?
CHIIILLS?
NOW'S NOT THE TIME.
DADDY, LET'S GO SEE! I WANT TO GET CLOSER AND SEE THEIR INTESTINES BLOW UP AND FLY OUT!
YEA!
UHM DAD...
I'M..... KINDA... I'M GETTING CHILLS AND EVERYTHING'S BLURRY.
I DON'T THINK I'M ALL RIGHT.

MY...
MY BODY TOO!?
SINCE WHEN AM I A MAGNET TOO!?
JOHNNY!
WHEN DID THEY TOUCH YOU!?
THEY MUST HAVE!
NO BLOODY IDEA!
BUT WAIT...
IT... IT COULD HAVE BEEN THE 'BULLET'
WHEN BENJAMIN BOOM BOOM SHOT THAT BULLET! THERE COULD HAVE BEEN SOMETHING ON IT..........!!
SHIT! WE HAVE TO FIND THEM!!
WHERE ARE THEY!? THEY MUST BE CONTROLLING THE 'MAGNET' FROM SOMEWHERE!!

......
ドドドドドド
......
MAYBE IT'S NOT THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY ANYMORE....
MOUNTAIN..... TIM.....
I DON'T KNOW WHY HE'S CHASING US BUT THIS ONLY STARTED ONCE HE GOT CLOSE...
ドドドド
!!

HUH!? JOHNNY, WHAT ARE YOU DOING!!
I'M BEING DRAGGED....
FROM BEHIND... I'M TELLING YOU...
YOU TOO, GYRO.

!!
......
IT'S MOUNTAIN TIM!
THEY MUST HAVE TOUCHED HIM SOMEWHERE, AS WELL! BEFORE HE EVEN REALIZED!
WE'RE BEING PULLED BY MOUNTAIN TIM!! THE THREE OF US! WE'RE ALL PULLING EACH OTHER!

IT MUST HAVE BEEN TOO WEAK WHEN IT WAS JUST THE TWO OF US.
BUT AS THE THREE OF US GET CLOSER TO EACH OTHER, THE MAGNETIC STRENGTH MULTIPLIES AND GROWS STRONGER....
PULLING US TOWARDS HIM...
WHILE HE ACCELERATES TOWARDS US.

WHAT IF HE COMES UP HERE!?
HE HASN'T REALIZED, SINCE HE'S RUNNING FORWARD!
WHY HASN'T HE FALLEN THEN!?
WE CAN'T LET HIM GET CLOSE!
THE IRON IN MY BLOOD MUST BE COLLECTING TOGETHER.....
THE SKIN ON MY ARMS IS BEGINNING TO TEAR...
OTHERWISE ALL THREE OF OUR BODIES WILL PROBABLY EXPLODE!

WE NEED TO GET HIS ATTENTION! TELL HIM TO GET OFF HIS HORSE NOW!
WHAT!?
WHY IS JOHNNY JOESTAR OFF OF HIS HORSE...?
HE CAN'T HEAR US! HE'S CHARGING IN!
GYRO ZEPPELI IS THERE TOO....
THEY'RE YELLING SOMETHING.... I CAN'T SEE WITH THIS DUST CLOUD...

EVEN IF HE COULD HEAR US IT'S HARD TO IMAGINE HE WOULD GET OFF HIS HORSE SO EASILY
IF WE DON'T TELL HIM THAT HE'S A MAGNET, BY THE TIME HE REALIZES WE'LL ALL BE DEEEAD!
WURYAA
ALL RIGHT THEN, LET'S DRAG HIM OFF!

THE STEEL BALL WILL GET PULLED BACK TO YOU SINCE YOU'RE MAGNETIZED!
IT CAN'T GO THAT FAR!
NO...
NO WAY GYRO! IT WON'T REACH!!
I KNOW JOHNNY...
BUT THAT [redacted] IS FINE.... IT SHOULD BE ENOUGH TO FORCE HIM OFF OF HIS HORSE.
'METAL' WILL COME TOWARDS ME.
IT'LL RETURN BECAUSE OF THE 'MAGNETIC FORCE' ....

!?
I'VE SCATTERED SOME DUST FROM THE ROCK.
THERE'S IRON IN THOSE ROCK SCRAPS.
BUT THIS IS GONNA HURT...
ALL OF US, SINCE WE'RE MAGNETS NOW.

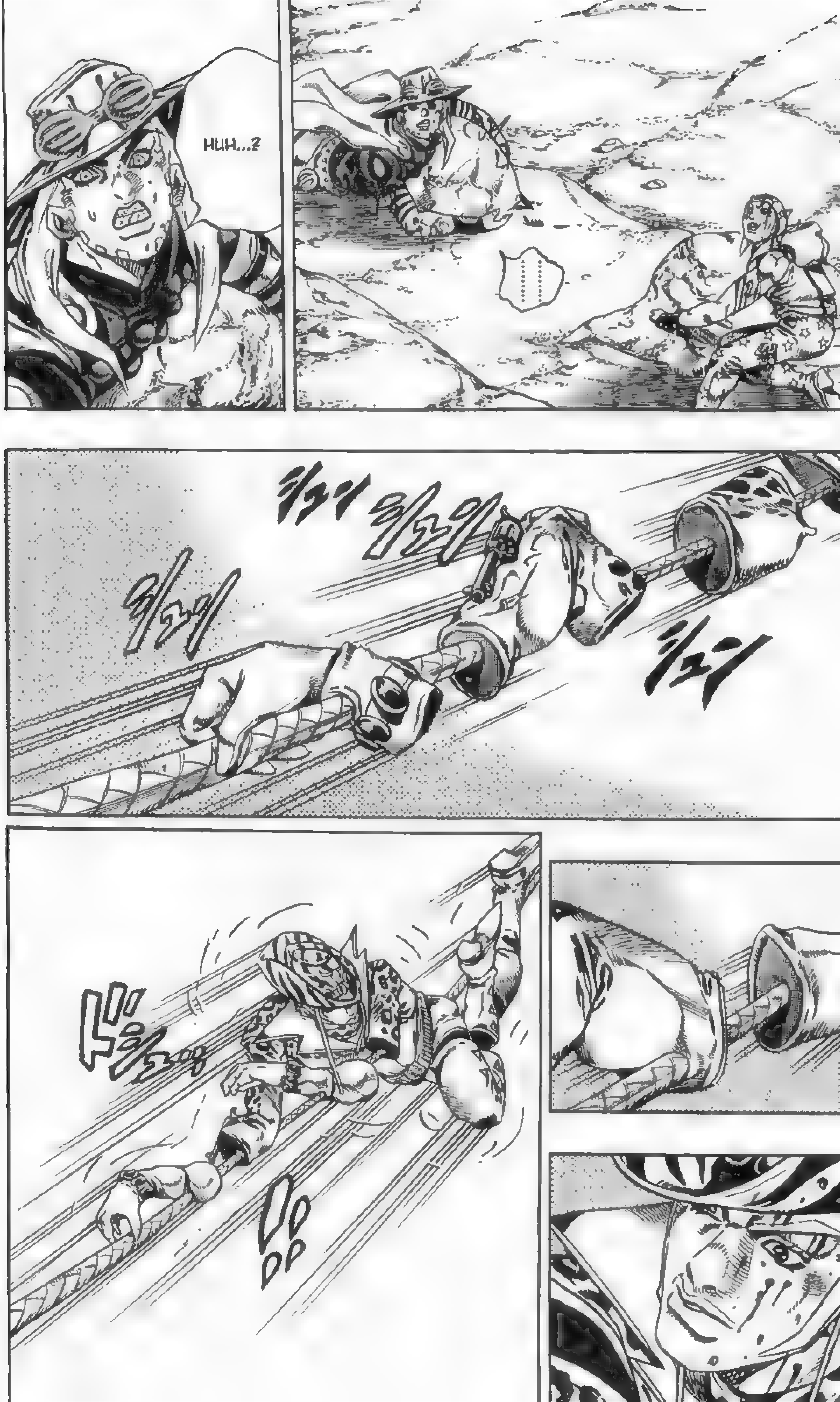
?......
BRACE YOURSELF JOHNNY

THIS
WHAT THE!?
WAAH!!
WOA AAAH
UGH!

HYAHA! I DID IT JOHNNY! I DRAGGED HIM OFF HIS HORSSSE!
WHAT IS THIS!?
THIS FORCE THAT'S PULLING IN!!?
MY ARM.....
INSTEAD OF FALLING MY PISTOL IS STUCK TO MY ARM!!
IT'S USELESS!! GYRO...
TOO CLOSE!! ALREADY!! WE'VE COME TOO CLOSE...

HE'S FLYING!! MOUNTAIN TIM'S BODY IS FLYING THROUGH THE AIR!!
IT'S ALREADY TOO STRONG! THE FORCE OF THE 'MAGNET' HAS GOTTEN TOO STRONG!

HE'S CHARGING THROUGH THE AIR!
MY VEINS ARE GONNA BURRRST!


HUH...?

I'M GUESSING, IN THIS SITUATION... WHEN THE THREE OF US GET CLOSE...
SOMETHING NOT SO PRETTY WILL HAPPEN.
I THREW A ROPE... I CAN SEPARATE MY BODY PARTS AND TRANSPORT THEM AS FAR AS THE ROPE GOES.
SEEMS LIKE I MISUNDER-STOOD MY SUSPECT...
JOHNNY JOESTAR
TO WHOM DOES THIS 'MAGNETIC FORCE' POWER BELONG TO?
TELL ME IN DETAIL...
WHAT EXACTLY IS GOING ON HERE....!
WHAT'S WRONG DADDY?
DAMN... THEY'LL GET AWAY.
WE NEED TO CUT THAT ROPE!

# #19 THE DEVILS PALM ②

LET'S GET FARTHER AWAY.
BUT WAIT! WHAT'S UP WITH YOU!!
THE BOOM BOOM'S WERE PRETTY MESSED UP BUT... ARE YOU EVEN HUMAN!?
WHAT ARE THOSE STEEL BALLS?
WELL HOW ABOUT YOU!?
THOSE ARE JUST PART OF MY 'TECHNIQUE'.
THERE ARE PARTS OF THE HUMAN BEING THAT ARE STILL A GREAT MYSTERY.
I SEE... MYSTERIES OF THE HUMAN BEING....
I'LL EXPLAIN...

FIFTEEN YEARS AGO, 1875....
I WAS 16...
I WAS IN THE ARMY AND WE WERE ASSIGNED TO VENTURE OUT INTO THE UNMAPPED PARTS OF THE ARIZONA DESERT.
BUT THE UNIT THAT I WAS IN GOT LOST, AND ALL 16 OF US WANDERED THE DESERT FOR DAYS SEARCHING FOR WATER.
THAT WAS AN AREA THE LOCAL INDIANS FEARED AND CALLED THE 'DEVIL'S PALM'.
OUR UNIT HAD STEPPED INTO THAT PLACE.
LOST...
SO YOU WERE IN THAT ARMY UNIT...

COMPASSES WERE USELESS THERE...
AND THE GROUND WAS MOVING BECAUSE OF QUICKSAND. THAT'S WHY WE WERE LOST.
MOUNTAINS WOULD DISAPPEAR. CANYONS WOULD FORM. THE LANDSCAPE WOULD CHANGE ITSELF.
THEY SAY THAT THE 'DEVIL'S PALM' TRAVELS MANY MILES IN A DAY.
WHERE IT COULD BE FOUND A MONTH AGO, IT WOULD BE NO MORE...
ACCORDING TO INDIAN TRADITION, A SHOOTING STAR CRASHED HERE LONG AGO, DESTROYING EVERYTHING; NOW IT IS CURSED.
NOBODY KNOWS HOW WIDE IT IS...
AND NOBODY KNOWS IT'S LOCATION UNTIL THEY HAPPEN TO SEE IT THEMSELVES.... IT'S BEEN TRAVELING THIS AREA FOR TENS OF THOUSANDS OF YEARS.

WE FAILED TO FIND WATER...
THE HORSES DIED...
THOSE FROM THE UNIT FELL ONE BY ONE...
EVEN MYSELF..
I WAS BEING FRIED TO DEATH.
BUT THAT PLACE WAS ALSO A LAND THAT CARRIED DESTINY.
FOR SOME REASON I AWOKE.
IT WAS DURING THE NIGHT.
A TINY BIT...
A TINY BIT OF DEW HAD GATHERED...
ONTO THE ROPE.
MY BODY WAS ABSORBING IT...
ON ITS OWN...
MY BODY HAD BECOME ONE WITH THE ROPE...
I WAS THE ONLY SURVIVOR...

IT COULD HAVE BEEN SOME SORT OF 'GRAVITATION'.
THE 'DEVIL'S PALM' HAS THE POWER TO AWAKEN THE SLEEPING ABILITIES OF PEOPLE.
THE INDIANS CALL IT 'CURSED ABILITY' ...
PERHAPS IT IS CURSED ME AND EVERYONE IN THAT UNIT WERE SUPPOSED TO DIE....
I PERSONALLY CALL THIS ABILITY 'STAND'...
THERE IS NO MISTAKE! THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY MUST HAVE ALSO STEPPED INTO THE 'DEVIL'S PALM'.
'STAND'...
THE 'MAGNETIC FORCE' IS GETTING WEAKER....
KEEP IT UP..
KEEP MOVING FARTHER AWAY WITH YOUR ROPE!

LOOKS LIKE THE ONLY WAY WE CAN CONTINUE ON IS TO FIND THOSE CREEPS AND BEAT THE SHIT OUT OF THEM.
NOPE... THERE'S NO NEED FOR THAT.
......

THERE'S NO NEED TO FIND US OR DISTANCE YOURSELVES.
THE ONLY DIRECTION YOU CAN GO...
IS CLOSER TO EACH OTHER...
RIGHT DADDY? THAT'S WHAT DADDY SAID.
HAH!
IT'S THEM!!

DO YOU NEED HELP, L.A?
CAN YOU CUT HIS ROPE BY YOURSELF ...
THAT BASTARD MOUNTAIN TIM'S ROPE?
EEEEH!? I'M NOT SO CONFIDENT...

IRON SAND...!!

UUH!
GGH!
IS THIS...!!?
IRON SAND!?
HE'S FORMING SHAPES WITH THE 'IRON' IN THE SAND!!
IT'S SUCKING ONTO ME! IT'S..... HEAVY!

IT'S MAKING IT'S WAY UP TO MOUNTAIN TIM!!

UH?
HEH! I KNEW IT WOULD BE TOO DANGEROUS FOR YOU TO DO THIS ALONE, L.A.!
YOU HAVE TO BIND THEIR HANDS WITH THE IRON SAND. DON'T LET THEM DO ANYTHING.
DO YOU FEEL BLESSED?
WE'RE SUCH A BLESSED FAMILY.
JUST CUT MOUNTAIN TIM'S ROPE.
AAAAH DADDY... I FEEL SO BLESSED.

TH....
THE ROPE'S BEEN CUT! HE'S COMING! WE'RE SCREWED!!

SO.... HEAVY...
WHATEVER YOU TRY TO PULL OFF INSIDE THE BOUNDARY IS USELESS!

JOHNNY! DO YOU HAVE AN OPEN HAND!?
DO IT!
YOU HAVE TO DO IT!
THE 'SPIN' JOHNNY!
WHAT?
YOU HAVE TO GET THEM USING THE 'SPIN'!
THERE'S ONE ON THE GROUND, THERE! PICK IT UP!
!? !?
HUH!? WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT!
THAT BULLET!
THE ONE THAT MOUNTAIN TIM SHOT!!
IT'S LEAD SO YOU CAN TOSS IT AROUND WITHOUT THE INFLUENCE OF THE MAGNETIC FORCE! YOU NEED TO MAKE THAT BULLET SPIN!

M.....
ME!?
TOO LATE!
HE'S COMING!
MOUNTAIN TIM'S
BODY IS FLYING!

JOHNNY! YOU HAVE TO!! 'LESSON 3'!
WHEN WE WERE CAMPED OUT YOU SAID YOU SPUN THE CORK! IT'S THE SAME WITH THE BULLET! TOSS IT!
BELIEVE IN THE SPIN! THE POWER OF ROTATION IS LIMITLESS! TRUST IN THAT!
IT WAS ONLY COINCI-DENCE!!
IT...
BUT THAT CORK....
THEY'VE UNITEEED! I WONDER HOW FAR THEIR ORGANS WILL FLY OUT... CAN WE GET A NEW INTESTINE RECORD??
SWAAH!
UWOOAAA I'M TEARING!!

JOHNNY, YOU MUST!!
CAN I DO IT!?
.....
IT ONLY SPUN THAT ONE TIME....

BUT... THIS IS WHY I SIGNED UP FOR THIS RACE....
TO KNOW THE SECRET OF THE 'SPIN'
AND TO LEARN IT MYSELF..
I'LL DO IT! IF I DON'T, EVERYTHING WILL END HERE!
MY BODY IS BURSTING JOHNNY!

I... DID IT! IT SPUN! IT SPUN! GYRO!

STEP BACK A LITTLE MORE L.A.!
DON'T EVEN THINK ABOUT RELAXING UNTIL THIS IS ALL OVER.
BE CAREFUL, THE DYING CAN MAKE SOME DESPERATE FINAL MOVES.
I COULDN'T GYRO! I COULDN'T DO IT!
WWWHA WAWA...
DA...
WHA... WHAT THE HEEEELL....
YOU SAID, 'BE CAREFUL'? NO, DADDY...
COME BACK DADDY! THAT WRETCHED HAND!
HURRY AND COME BACK!
DADDY...
I JUST COULDN'T!

?
......A
JO....
JOHNNY JOESTAR.
JOHNNY!
WHAT IS THAT!

THIS ISN'T THE SAME AS WHEN I USE THE SPIN WITH MY STEEL BALLS!
WHAT DOES THIS MEAN!? WHAT COULD CAUSE....
COULD THIS BE......
'STAND'!!
MY.... MY HANDS....
THE NAILS....
WHAT ARE THEY DOING, GYRO!?
MY NAILS ARE SPINNING!!
DADDY JUST HURRY AND COME BACK! DADDY! HURRY AND.... Y... YOUR LEG!

WAAAAA AAAAA AAA AAA AAA AAA AH!

# # 20
# THE DUTY OF GYRO ZEPPELI ①

BLOODY HELL!!
GYRO, WHAT'S GOING ON!! IT'S STOPPED NOW BUT... MY FINGERNAILS...!
MY HAND ...!?
I HAVE NO CLUE WHAT IT IS...
BUT IT'S DEFINITELY NOT THE SAME AS THE STEEL BALLS.
JOHNNY JOESTAR....
COULD THAT BE.....
YOU FUCKER!! HOW DARE YOU DO THAT TO DADDY! HOW DAAAA-AARE!!

I'LL TEAR THROUGH YOUR ARTERIES!!

THIS... THIS CAN'T BE! MY BODY!
MY LEGS.... MY LEGS THAT CAN'T EVEN WALK...!!
THEY JUMPED!! HOW!?
GYAA AAA AAA!

YES! THE IRON SAND THAT WAS WRAPPED AROUND US FELL OFF!
THE CONTROL THEY HAD OVER IRON! THE MAGNETIC FORCE IS GONE!!
GYRO, I'LL ASK ONCE MORE...
WHAT IN THE WORLD IS HAPPENING .... !? THESE FINGERS!!
IT'S A 'POWER OF ROTATION' THAT I DON'T KNOW ABOUT! I'M JUST AS CURIOUS AS YOU ARE ABOUT IT!
I SWEAR, I HAVE ABSOLUTELY NO CLUE!
JOHNNY JOESTAR... IF YOU'RE SAYING THAT IT'S SOMETHING BEYOND TECHNIQUE.....
MAKE NO MISTAKE...
IT'S A 'STAND'! YOU'VE COME UNDER THE INFLUENCE...
OF THE 'DEVIL'S PALM'...
WE'RE PROBABLY IN THAT AREA RIGHT NOW.
WE'VE BEEN IN IT WITHOUT REA-LIZING!

CALL BACK YOUR HORSES.
IF WE'RE REALLY IN THE 'DEVIL'S PALM', THEN WE NEED TO GET OUT OF HERE IMMEDIATELY!
S.... 'STAND'...
IT'S... COME TO ME!?
I DON'T KNOW WHY THE DEVIL'S PALM IS HERE! ...... IT COULD BE COINCIDENCE.
OR IT COULD BE THAT THE LAND PULLED US IN.
PROBABLY THE LATTER....
GET ON YOUR HORSES!
THE GROUND WILL MOVE AND THE LAND WILL CHANGE!
IF WE DON'T ESCAPE NOW, WE'LL GET LOST! WE'LL NEVER FIND THE WATER HOLE!!

THE BOOM BOOM FAMILY IS FINISHED.. THEY WON'T BE ABLE TO ESCAPE THE DESERT WITH THOSE WOUNDS....
LEAVE HIM....
THEY'LL PROBABLY RUN OUT OF WATER BY NOON TOMORROW.. THE RESCUE CREW WON'T BE ABLE TO FIND THEM.
STOP RIGHT THERE BASTAAAAARDS!
I'LL GET YOU BACK! I'LL NEVER FORGIVE YOU FOR THIS!
GYRO ZEPPELIIII!
DO YOU THINK THAT WE'RE THE ONLY ONES AFTER YOUR LIFE!?
WROOOONG!
THERE'S NO WAY YOU'LL REACH THE GOAL ANYWAYS!
JUST ASK THAT PERSON FROM YOUR 'COUNTRY'!

THE REASON WE WERE AFTER YOUR LIFE.... WASN'T ONLY BECAUSE YOU CAME IN FIRST!
IT'S BECAUSE THIS PERSON PROMISED $200,000 FOR YOUR DEATH!
THERE'S A BOUNTY ON YOUR HEAD!!
EE EEE BAHA HAA!
THE PRINTS WE LEFT EARLIER ARE STARTING TO FADE!! THE GROUND IS MOVING!
WHAT ARE YOU DOING! HURRY UP, YOU TWO!
WHO HIRED YOU?
WHAT?

HEY, GET BACK HERE YOU BASTAA-AARDS!
I'LL FUCKING KILL YOOOU!
BROTHER ANDREEEE !!!
DAAAAA-DDYYY!!
GYRO....
THERE'S NO TIME! WE'LL BE LOST IN HERE!

ドドド
ドドド
ドド
ドドドド
ドド
ドドド

ドドドド
ドドドド
ド
GYRO...! WHAT DID HE MEAN THAT SOMEONE FROM YOUR [redacted] IS AFTER YOUR LIFE!?
JUST EXACTLY WHAT WAS L.A. BOOM BOOM TALKING ABOUT!!?
I SAID IT'S NONE OF YOUR BUSINESS!
NOT THIS TIME! THIS TIME I NEED AN ANSWER!
I HAVE THE RIGHT TO ASK...
SINCE I ALMOST LOST MY LIFE BACK THERE.....

OFFICER ZEPPELI!?
WHAT'S YOUR REASON FOR ENTERING THIS RACE!?
IT MUST BE RELATED TO THAT NEWSPAPER ARTICLE YOU HAD...!? I WILL HAVE YOU TELL ME!"
HE MUST HAVE BEEN AFTER YOU BECAUSE OF THAT BOUNTY, TOO!
COME TO THINK OF IT, THAT MRS. ROBINSON!
ドドド
ドドド
ドドド

ドドドド
'EVERY MAN NEEDS A MAP ...
A MAP IN HIS HEART, TO RIDE ACROSS THE WILDERNESS.' THAT'S WHAT HIS FATHER ALWAYS SAID.
ザザザザザザ
GYRO ZEPPELI'S FATHER WAS SUMMONED BY THE KING'S SERVANT ONCE OR TWICE A MONTH.
ON THOSE MORNINGS, HIS MOTHER WOULD SILENTLY PREPARE A SMALL MEAL.

THE MEAL CONSISTED OF FISH, A LOAF OF BREAD, AND WINE.
HIS FATHER WOULD EAT BEFORE HEADING TO THE KING'S COURT.
GYRO'S FATHER WAS A DOCTOR.
HE EXAMINED BOTH THE RICH AND THE POOR AT HIS HOME CLINIC.
AT THAT TIME, THE KING'S SERVANT WOULD ASK GYRO...
GYRO, HOW OLD ARE YOU NOW?
NINE YEARS OLD, SIR.
...BUT THAT WAS ALL HE WOULD ASK.

GYRO, COME HERE.
COME CLOSER...
HOW WILL YOU TAKE THIS STEEL BALL IN MY HAND?

WHOA!
THAT'S NOT RIGHT, GYRO!
NOT BY CHEATING OR DIRTY TRICKS!
I'M TALKING ABOUT ROTATION!
HOW WILL YOU TAKE IT FROM MY FIST USING ROTATION!?
......
THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE, FATHER...
LISTEN GYRO... IT'S FINE THAT YOU LIKE TO RIDE HORSES...
BUT YOU ARE GOING TO HAVE TO LEARN ABOUT THE SPIN OF THE STEEL BALL.
YOU NEED TO BE ABLE TO DO EVERYTHING BY THE TIME YOU ARE 13. YOUR GRANDFATHER TAUGHT IT TO ME...
JUST AS HIS FATHER HAD TAUGHT HIM.

YOU MAY LEAVE NOW.
BECAUSE THE MEN OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY HAVE ALWAYS DONE THIS...
AND YOU CAN SURELY DO IT....
WHAT DOES THE STEEL BALL HAVE TO DO WITH GRAND-FATHER AND GREAT GRAND-FATHER?
WHY, FATHER?
......
IT'S EASIER TO PLACE IT IN A HAND THAN TO TAKE IT AWAY.
GYRO, HOW OLD ARE YOU NOW?
WHOA!
NO WAY..! WHEN DID HE...

WHEN GYRO ZEPPELI TURNED 13....
13, SIR.
1877
HIS FATHER SAID..
'TODAY YOU WILL COME WITH ME!
FOR SOME REASON, HIS MOTHER KISSED HIM, IN SILENCE.
HE ATE THE MEAL SHE HAD PREPARED; A SMALL SERVING OF FISH, A LOAF OF BREAD, AND A GLASS OF WINE.

THE CARRIAGE THAT GYRO AND HIS FATHER RODE ENTERED A BUILDING WITH VERY TALL WALLS ON THE NORTHWEST SIDE OF THE CASTLE.
WHEN THEY ENTERED, GYRO'S FATHER SPOKE SOFTLY TO HIM...
EVERY MAN NEEDS A MAP... A MAP IN HIS HEART, TO RIDE ACROSS THE WILDERNESS.
EVERY MAN NEEDS A MAP... A MAP IN HIS HEART, TO RIDE ACROSS THE WILDERNESS.
TRUE HAPPINESS IS FOUND WITHIN THE FAMILY.
PROTECTING YOUR FAMILY RELATES TO PROTECTING YOUR COUNTRY. FOR YOUR FAMILY TO FALL APART IS TO SCORN YOUR ANCESTORS AND FUTURE DESCENDANTS.
NEVER FORGET THAT.

?
......
FROM THIS DAY FORWARD YOU WILL BE MY ASSISTANT.
THIS IS THE JOB PLACED UPON US BY THE FORMER KING, 380 YEARS AGO.
IT HAS BEEN THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S DUTY THROUGHOUT THE YEARS.... CONTINUING ON THROUGH ENTIRE GENERATIONS OF KINGS. YOU MUST APPROACH THIS DUTY WITH HONOR.
JOB?
ASSIS-TANT?
WHAT ARE IN THESE BUILDINGS, FATHER?

Note: man yelling "No! Curse You!"

PACHIN!

STOO-OOOOP!
NOOOO-OOOO!
I'LL CURSE YOU! I DON'T WANT TO DIIIIIIE!
……
オレは
死にたく
BE STILL.
SILENCE YOUR HEART!
YOUR HEART...

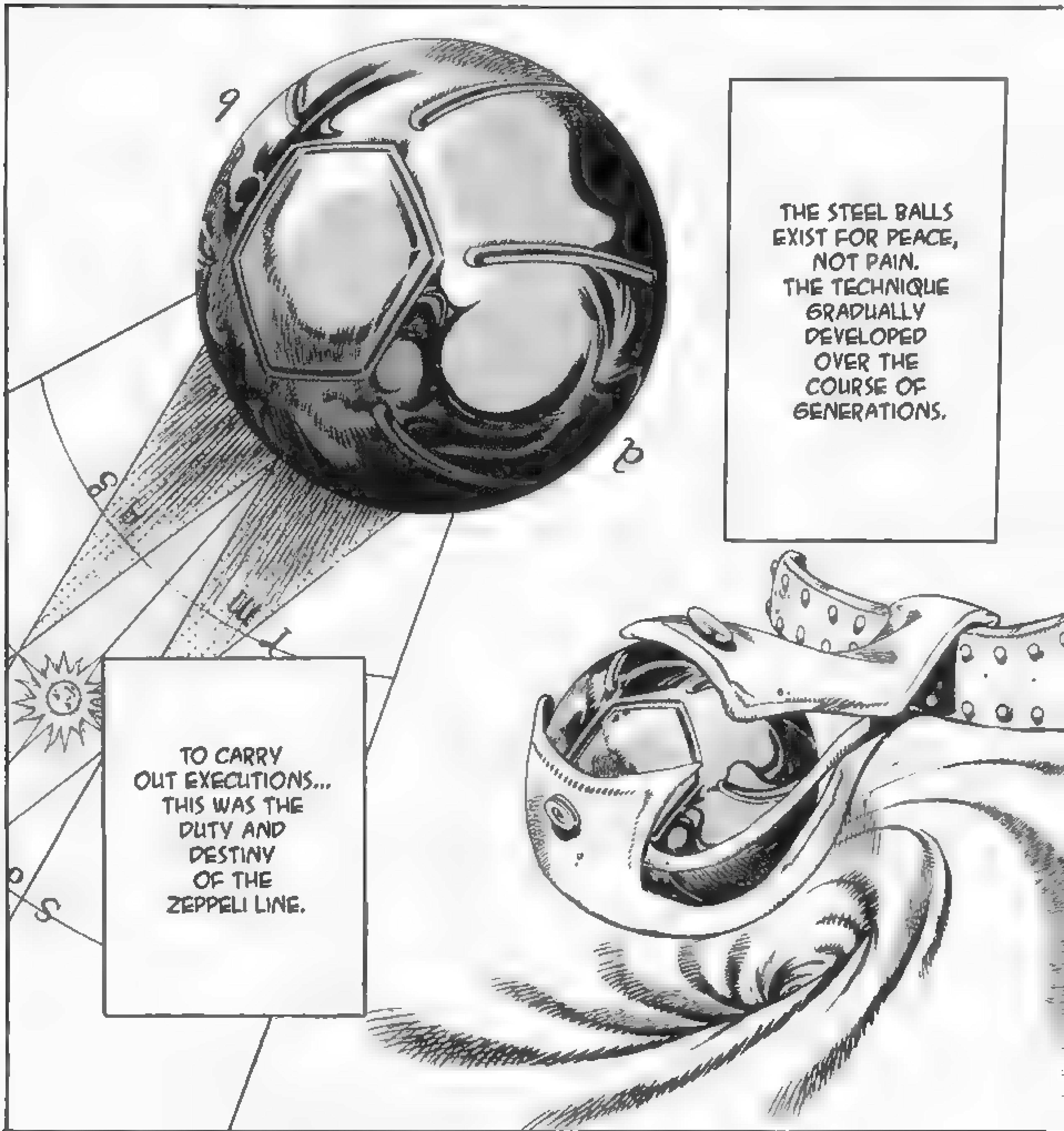
CLUNK

YOUR JOB...
BEGINS HERE.
YOU WILL SANITIZE THE SWORD.
AAAH!!

THIS HAS BEEN THE DUTY OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY FOR 380 YEARS.
AS LONG AS A SYSTEM OF EXECUTION EXISTS IN THE CONSTITUTION, THERE IS A NEED FOR SOMEBODY TO CARRY THEM OUT.
IN PRE-20TH CENTURY EUROPE, THE POSITION OF EXECUTIONER WAS A STRICT OCCUPATION CONTROLLED BY THE GOVERNMENT.
IT WAS PASSED DOWN BY HEREDITY.
THEREFORE...
THE ONES ORDERED TO CARRY OUT EXECUTIONS RECEIVED A HIGH POSITION AND A HIGH WAGE, BUT FROM FATHER TO SON.... AND SON TO GRANDSON.... THE RESPONSIBILITY AND TECHNIQUE OF THE EXECUTIONER WAS PASSED SOLELY DOWN THE FAMILY LINE.

AN EXPERT IS REQUIRED TO EXECUTE AS SWIFTLY AS THE BLINK OF AN EYE.
EVEN CRIMINALS DESERVE AN HONORABLE DEATH WITHOUT SUFFERING.
BUT THE WILL OF LIFE CAN BE SURPRISINGLY POWERFUL.
IT REQUIRES A GOOD AMOUNT OF TECHNIQUE TO BRING ABOUT CERTAIN DEATH.
HUMANS CAN DIE THROUGH ONLY ONE WOUND...
WHERE ARE VITAL SPOTS OF THE BODY?
WHAT AREAS CAN BE EASILY CUT WITHOUT THE BONES INTERFERING?
FOR THE SAKE OF A SMOOTH EXECUTION, AS A SECOND BLOW IS NEVER ACCEPTABLE...
THEY STUDIED MEDICAL SCIENCE AND LEARNED MARTIAL ARTS.
THE EXECUTIONER MUST KNOW EVERYTHING ABOUT THE HUMAN BODY.
Humeri Brachia
Aures
Ocul
Caput
Faces
vox
Pulmones Pec
Diaphragma
Venter. Inter
Stomachus. Lac
Venter
MeBentarum
Nates
Tibia Pes

PHILOSOPHI
THE ZEPPELI FAMILY...
DEVELOPED THE ROTATION OF THE STEEL BALL.
TO BRING BODIES TO A STATE OF PEACE AND STILLNESS...
ALCHIMI.


THE STEEL BALLS EXIST FOR PEACE, NOT PAIN. THE TECHNIQUE GRADUALLY DEVELOPED OVER THE COURSE OF GENERATIONS.
TO CARRY OUT EXECUTIONS... THIS WAS THE DUTY AND DESTINY OF THE ZEPPELI LINE.

YES!...
GYRO ZEPPELI WAS TO RECEIVE HIS FATHER'S POSITION WHEN HE TURNED 25.
AS THE SUCCESSOR!
AND EVERYTHING WAS GOING SMOOTHLY...
UNTIL THE EXECUTION OF MARCO, THE BOY WHO SCRUBBED SHOES AT THE ARISTOCRAT'S MANSION, WAS OFFICIALLY DECIDED.......

#21
THE DUTY OF GYRO ZEPPELI ②

THERE ONCE WAS A CRIMINAL WHO WAS MISSING A BONE IN HIS NECK (NORMALLY, A PERSON HAS 7 BONES IN HIS OR HER NECK, SO THIS CRIMINAL'S VITAL AREA WAS DIFFERENT DUE TO THE MISSING BONE.)
LUCKILY, GYRO'S FATHER WAS SKILLED ENOUGH TO NOTICE THE DIFFERENCE AND DELIVER A NORMAL, SWIFT EXECU- TION.
BUT THIS TIME NOBODY NOTICED..
THIS PRISONER HAD JOINTS THAT BENT IN THE OPPOSITE DIRECTION.
HE SLIPPED OUT OF THE HANDCUFFS AND TOOK ONE OF THE PRISON GUARDS AS A HOSTAGE.
AH!

HA! FOOLS!
WAAAH!
I'LL KILL HIM WITHOUT HESITATION! GYA HAHA HAHA HA!
DON'T STEP OUT OF THAT DRAIN LINE!
IF I'M GONNA BE EXECUTED ANYWAYS, I'LL TAKE HOWEVER MANY I CAN WITH ME! BRING THE KEYS! THE KEYS FOR THIS PRISON!
DON'T COME NEAR!
UGH!
AAH!

WHAT ARE YOU DOII- IING!

GGH

GNYAA
MY SHIRT....!!
NOW THAT'S THE SON OF ZEPPELI! GREAT WORK GYRO!
WAAAAH!
GWEE! IT'S TWISTING ME TIGHTTT!
WHEN GYRO ZEPPELI CAME TO AGE AS THE ELDEST SON OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY...
HE BROUGHT UP A COMPLAINT AGAINST THE COURT'S DECISION OF MARCO'S EXECUTION.

HE HAD NEVER RAISED HIS VOICE TO SCOLD HIS SON BEFORE.
BUT IN HIS SILENT ANGER, HIS FIRM WORDS WERE ENOUGH TO MAKE GYRO SHIVER.
TO RETIRE FROM HIS BURDENSOME DUTY.
HE WAS APPROACHING OLD AGE, AND HAD ALREADY MADE UP HIS MIND..
HIS FATHER WAS DEEPLY DISAPPOINTED AND ANGERED.
OUR FAMILY'S DUTY IS NOT TO DECIDE WHETHER SOMEONE IS INNOCENT OR GUILTY!
WHAT YOU DID IS USELESS, GYRO....
IT WILL ONLY CAUSE TROUBLE FOR OUR COUNTRY.

EVEN TOWARDS THE WORST OF CRIMINALS.
THERE IS NO 'CONSENT', GYRO!
I ONLY WANT TO COMPLETE MY DUTY WITH 'CONSENT'.
FATHER...
I WILL BE TURNING 25 THIS YEAR, WHICH MEANS I WILL BE TAKING YOUR PLACE... AM I TO CARRY OUT THE EXECUTION?
THE BOY WILL BE EXECUTED!!
DON'T GET INVOLVED WITH THE DETAILS!
THE LAW IS THE LAW!
THAT IS ALL.
THE DUTY OF OUR FAMILY IS TO CARRY OUT THE ORDERS OF THE KING.
THIS IS BEYOND 'CONSENT'! IT IS ALL GOD'S WILL!!
TREASON AGAINST THE GOVERNMENT WAS THE WORST OF ALL CRIMES.
NEVER SPEAK OF IT AGAIN!
THIS DISCUSSION IS OVER, GYRO!

AN ASSASSINATION PLOT DISCOVERED JUST IN TIME... IT MATTERED NOT IF SOMEONE HAD ONLY HEARD OF IT WHILE SHINING SHOES...
IF THEY KEPT SILENT ABOUT THE PLOT, THEY WOULD BE GUILTY.... EVEN WOMEN AND CHILDREN.....
IT WAS THIS ERA... IT WAS THE LAW OF THE STATE...
SO GYRO... HOW OLD ARE YOU NOW?
HEH! YOU ALWAYS KNOW THE ANSWER TO THAT QUESTION ....
WHAT DID YOU CALL ME OUT HERE FOR?
AREN'T YOU THE ONE CONCERNED WITH THAT 'BOY', GYRO?

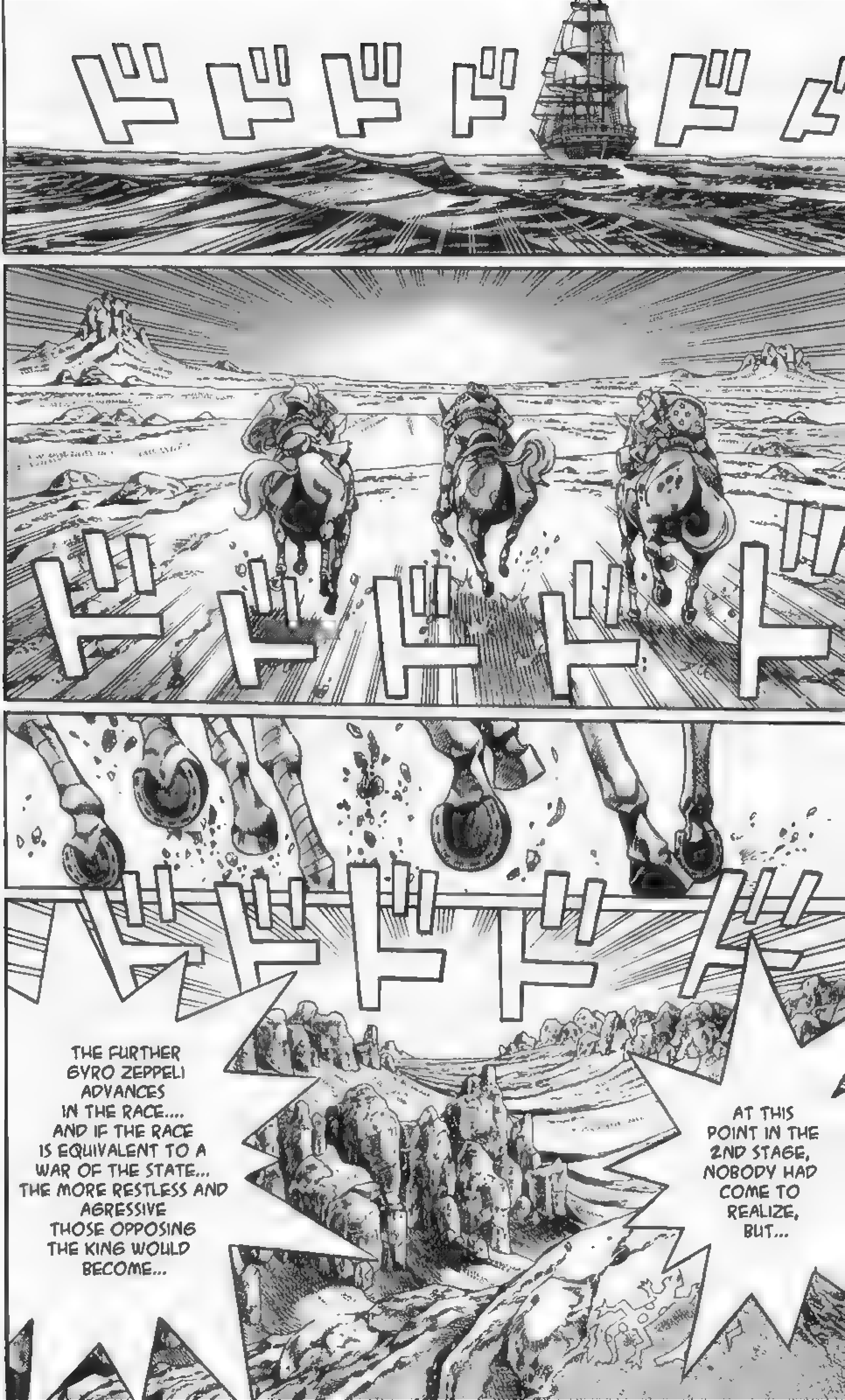
THAT 'BOY' ...
I WILL TAKE THE PLACE OF MY FATHER, WHO HAS PUT HIS PRIDE IN OUR FAMILY LINE.
THIS JOB IS MY 'DUTY' ...
AND THAT WILL NEVER CHANGE.... IT HASN'T IN THE PAST, AND IT WON'T CHANGE FROM HERE ON.
BUT I JUST WANT CONSENT!
MY FATHER SAID NOT TO MENTION IT.
I WANT TO MAKE THIS DUTY THE PRIDE OF MY HEART!
GUILTY OR INNOCENT! THERE NEEDS TO BE 'CONSENT'! PRIDE AND HONOR CANNOT EXIST WITHOUT 'CONSENT'!
I WILL PUT MY LIFE ON THE LINE FOR PRIDE AND HONOR!
ISN'T THERE A WAY!?
NOT ALL LAWS ARE JUSTICE!
I CANNOT AGREE WITH PUTTING THIS BOY TO DEATH! HE HAD NOTHING TO DO WITH THE ASSASSINATION PLOT!
I NEED 'CONSENT' NO MATTER WHAT!

YOU WOULD BE WILLING TO RISK YOUR LIFE IF THE BOY COULD BE INNOCENT?
I'M MAKING SURE.
WHAT?
......
IS THAT WHAT YOU SAID? I'M JUST CHECKING....
YOU WOULD PUT YOUR LIFE ON THE LINE FOR THE BOY?
WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU SAYING?
YOU CAN DO IT?

YES...
I WANT TO SAVE HIM...
HE WAS ONLY SCRUBBING SHOES... IS IT FOOLISH FOR A PERSON FROM MY FAMILY TO OBJECT?
THERE IS ONE WAY TO REVERSE THE DECISION....
SAY A WAR BREAKS OUT AND THIS COUNTRY IS VICTORIOUS.
THE KING MUST RELEASE AN 'AMNESTY' THAT EVERYBODY WILL AGREE WITH!
AN 'AMNESTY' IS AN EXCEPTION WHERE A CRIMINAL'S PENALTY IS LIGHTENED!

THE KING'S 'AMNESTY'!?
YES, THE KING WILL RELEASE ONE WITHOUT A DOUBT!!
NO! WHAT ARE YOU SAYING!?
THERE'S NO WAR! WHERE IS IT!?
STEEL BALL RUN
$50,000,000

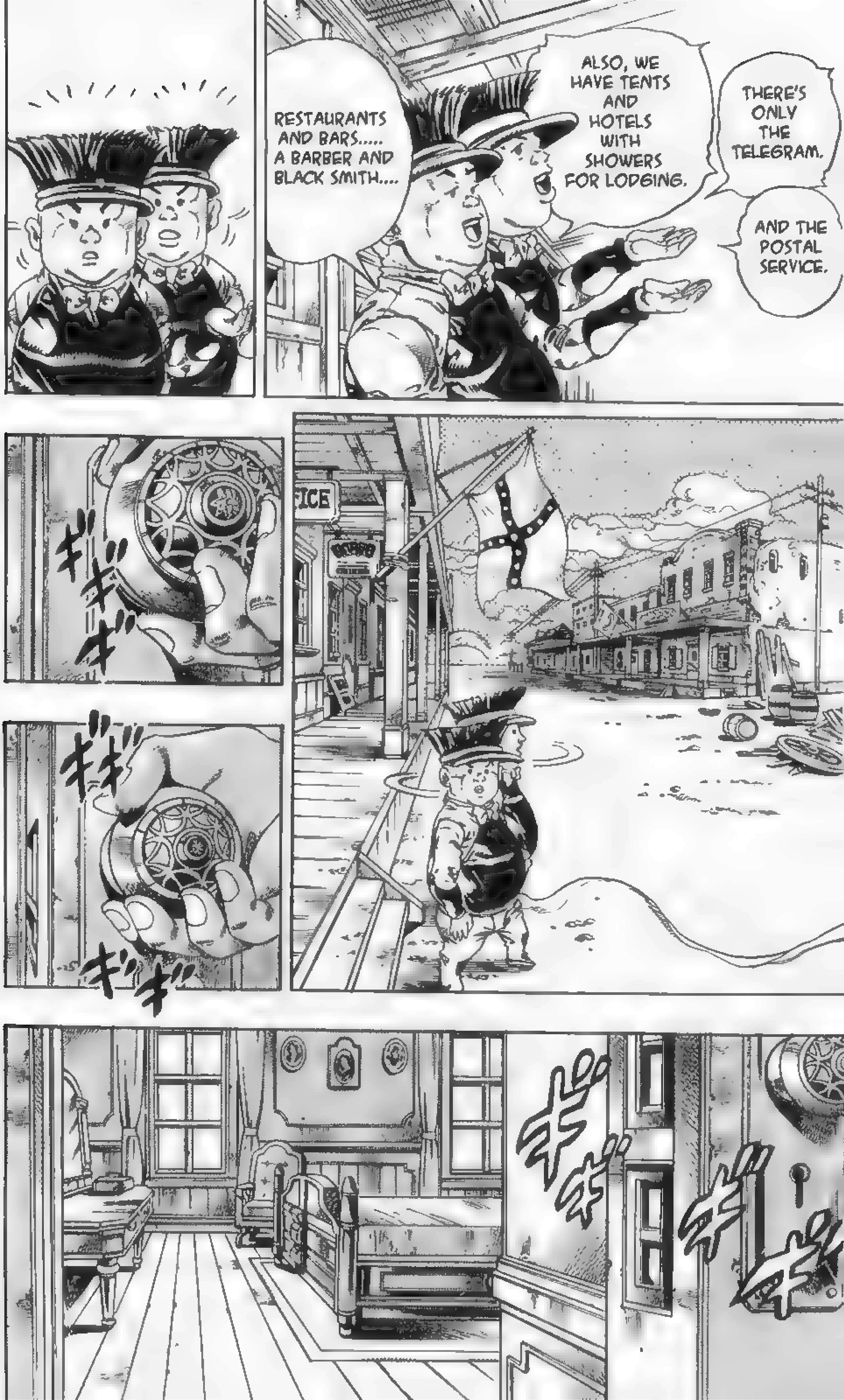
Sandiego -> New York
STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン・レース!
Begins 1890, September 25th!
YOU HAVE THE SKILL OF THE 'STEEL BALL', GYRO ZEPPELI!
VICTORY IN THIS RACE WILL BRING GREAT DIGNITY TO A NATION! THE ENTIRE WORLD IS WATCHING! AND IF A WINNER ARISES FROM THIS NATION...
FOR YOU, IT'S POSSIBLE! THAT'S WHY I AM SUGGESTING THIS!
THE PEOPLE WILL UNITE THEIR HEARTS AS ONE FOR THE KING!!

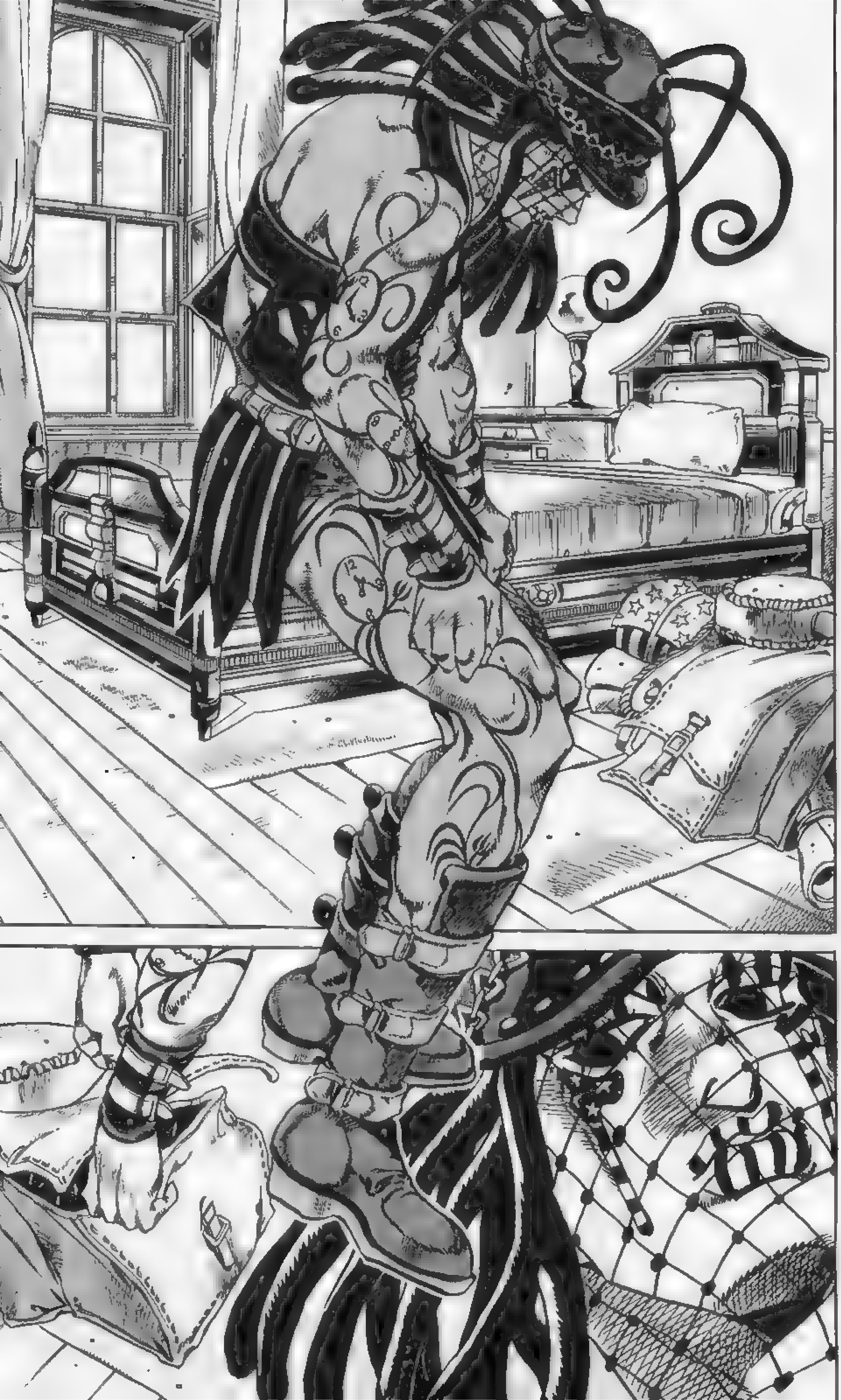

ドドドドドド
ドドドドドド
ドドドドドド
AT THIS POINT IN THE 2ND STAGE, NOBODY HAD COME TO REALIZE, BUT...
THE FURTHER GYRO ZEPPELI ADVANCES IN THE RACE.... AND IF THE RACE IS EQUIVALENT TO A WAR OF THE STATE... THE MORE RESTLESS AND AGRESSIVE THOSE OPPOSING THE KING WOULD BECOME...

ドバ!!
ドドドドト
ドドドドド

ドドドド
HOTEL
OFFICE
OFFICE
CONGRATULATIONS ON YOUR VERY EARLY ARRIVAL, SIR...
THIS IS A TOWN BUILT SPECIFICALLY AS A CHECK POINT IN THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE.
GOAL
Monument Valley
Grand Canyon
mid point
California
START
WE WERE EXPECTING THE HEAD RIDERS OF THE 2ND STAGE TO ARRIVE SOME TIME TOMORROW BUT....
ACCORDING TO OUR INFORMATION YOU'VE DISTANCED YOURSELF A DAY'S WORTH FROM THE GROUP OF SANDMAN AND DIEGO BRANDO, A.K.A. DIO, WHO TOOK A SEPARATE ROUT.
WE NEED TO CHECK YOUR RACE NUMBER AND YOUR HORSE'S NOSE PRINT....
24

I'M NOT....
1ST PLACE?
YOU ARE CURRENTLY IN 4TH PLACE...
MR. OYECOMOVA
MR. MOUNTAIN TIM ARRIVED FIRST.
BUT MR. GYRO ZEPPELI WAS ARGUING THAT HE WAS A NECK'S LENGTH AHEAD AND MR. JOHNNY JOESTAR STARTED PROTESTING THAT HE WAS THE ONE WHO ARRIVED IN 1ST.
BUT SINCE THIS IS ONLY A CHECK POINT, AND IT DOESN'T AFFECT THEIR RACING POINTS, THEY EVENTUALLY SETTLED DOWN...
YES.
DOES A PHONE LINE OR SOMETHING COME THROUGH HERE?
HOTEL


RESTAURANTS AND BARS..... A BARBER AND BLACK SMITH....
ALSO, WE HAVE TENTS AND HOTELS WITH SHOWERS FOR LODGING.
THERE'S ONLY THE TELEGRAM.
AND THE POSTAL SERVICE.
FICE



SOMEBODY I KNOW?
WHOOPS! I GUESS NOT...
BUT WHY WOULD YOU COME INTO A STRANGER'S ROOM AND GO THROUGH HIS STUFF?
I'M LOOKING FOR GYRO ZEPPELI, WHERE IS HE?

THERE WAS WAX FOR SEALING LETTERS DOWN AT THE OFFICE.
HE RECEIVED A "LETTER" AT THIS CHECK POINT.... GYRO DID..
DON'T YOU KNOW YOU'LL FAIL YOUR TEST IF YOU ANSWER A QUESTION WITH A QUESTION? LOSER.
LOOKS LIKE WE HAVE AN IDIOT WHO DOESN'T KNOW HOW TO CONVERSE.
HEY! DON'T YOU MESS WITH ME!!
AH! HERE IT IS...
THIS MUST BE IT ....

!!
JUST AS I THOUGHT...
HE HAD RECEIVED A LETTER FROM THE KING'S SERVANT...

i've prepared a 'Zombie Horse' 50 km North of here in the Red Canyon. The 'Zombie Horse' has the power to heal wounds and restore fatigue from the race. It will be of great help to you.
ZOMBIE HORSE ......?
.......... WHAT'S THAT?
OH YES...
JUST AS A WARNING, DON'T LET GO OF MY SKIN....
I'M JUST GOING TO DISTANCE MYSELF A LITTLE BIT.
IT'S DANGEROUS IF YOU SPREAD YOUR FINGERS.....
UH....G...

OOO, NOW YOU'VE DONE IT. I TOLD YOU NOT TO SPREAD YOUR FINGERS ...
AFTER TOUCHING MY BODY...

I WON'T ALLOW ANYBODY TO RACE FOR THE KING!
I WILL HAVE YOU DEAD, OFFICER GYRO ZEPPELI!

#22 THE TERRORIST FROM
A FAR OFF COUNTRY ①

HOTEL
WHA.....!?
WHAT THE!!

WHA....!?
WHAT THE!!

WHAT HAPPENED!
STAY AWAY!... WHY WOULD THE HOTEL EXPLODE!?
IT'S AN EXPLOSION! DON'T GET CLOSE!
HOTEL
HEY! WHAT'S THAT!!

HEY THAT'S....
MOUNTAIN TIM!!

AH... GG....
GH...
M......
MOUNTAIN TIM!
HE'S ALIVE!
HE WAS ABLE TO SCATTER HIS BODY PARTS WITH HIS ROPE!

UH... GWA...
THIS EXPLOSION.... KKH
DON'T COME....
S.... STOP... GY..... RO....
DON'T COME! GET AWAY FROM ME!!
HE'S HIDING SOMEWHERE CLOSE BY!! HE HAS A STAND ABILITY!!

ドドドド

THERE! DON'T LET HIM TOUCH YOU! RUN AWAAAY!

MAN, THAT COWBOY.....
WHAT THE HELL IS UP WITH HIS BODY?

YOU....!!
GYRO ZEPPELI...
LONG TIME NO SEE.....
DAMN IT, GYRO! HE TOUCHED YOU!
......
HE BRUSHED YOU WITH HIS FINGER!

GYRO, HE PLACED THOSE 'PINS' ON YOU!
THAT'S HIS ABILITY! YOU'LL EXPLODE!
HOLD THEM DOWN SO THEY DON'T FLY OFF!
!?
WHAT ARE THESE THINGS!?
HUH? WHAT!?
!?

JUST HURRY AND HOLD THE 'PINS' DOWN!!
IT WAS THE SAME WITH ME!!
WHEN THE PINS FLEW OFF, I EXPLODED!
DUDE... YOU'RE TELLING HIM.......
HORS
......
DON'T LET GO OF YOUR FINGERS, NO MATTER WHAT!!
IT'S LIKE A 'LAND MINE'! IF YOU LET THE PINS FLY OFF YOUR HAND WILL EXPLODE!!
THAT'S THE 'RULE'!
SO CLOSE ...
MAN!

'STANDS' ARE THE ENERGY BROUGHT FORTH FROM OUR SPIRIT.... THEY APPEAR IN OUR HEARTS AS IF THEY EXIST....
THOSE ARE 'STANDS'!
AND THEY CAN 'DESTROY'! THE 'EXPLOSIONS' COME FROM THAT ENERGY!
THESE CLOCK-LIKE 'RINGS'! THEY'RE EMBEDDED IN MY FINGERS!
WHAT'S... GOING ON!?
THEY LOOK LIKE REAL 'GADGETS'! I SEE ABOUT FOUR OF THEM!
THAT'S WHAT 'LAND MINES' ARE LIKE! DURING THAT TIME HE CAN SAFELY MOVE AWAY FROM THE EXPLOSION!
ONCE THE PINS FLY OFF THEY SET OFF A SWITCH!
HOTEL

DO YOU KNOW HIM?
GYRO... HE SAID 'LONG TIME NO SEE'!
.........
YEA...
.... HIS NAME IS 'OYECOMOVA' ...
HE'S A TERRORIST WHO BLEW UP THE KING'S CARRIAGE WITH A BOMB 2 YEARS AGO...!! THE KING WASN'T IN IT, BUT 5 PEOPLE, INCLUDING 2 CHILDREN, WERE KILLED..
HE WAS ARRESTED AND WAS WAITING FOR HI EXECUTION, BUT HE MANAGED TO ESCAPE...

WHILE HE WAS IN PRISON, HE ODDLY ENOUGH HAD A BIT OF EXPLOSIVE POWDER WITH HIM.
HE PUT IT IN THE JAIL GUARD'S EAR AND MURDERED HIM! HE BROKE OUT...
I HEARD HE RETIRED FROM BEING AN EXECUTIONER, GYRO ZEPPELI...
TAKING RESPONSIBILITY FOR MY JAILBREAK...
HOW'S YOUR OLD MAN DOING ?
THAT'S UNDERSTANDABLE. HE OUGHT TO FEEL RESPONSIBLE FOR HIS SUBORDINATE'S DEATH.
BUT, HOT DAMN! IT WAS GOD'S WORK THAT I HAPPENED TO PASS THROUGH THIS ARIZONA DESSERT!
MY SKILLS WITH EXPLOSIVES BECAME A SPECIAL ABILITY... I TAKE THIS AS A MISSION FROM GOD!

ONE MORE THING, GYRO!
THE QUICKEST WAY TO PROTECT YOURSELF FROM 'STAND ABILITIES'...
... IS TO KILL THE STAND USER!! THEN THEIR 'ABILITY' WILL BE DESTROYED ALONG WITH THEM!
HORSE

IT'S NICE TO POLITELY EXPLAIN ALL THIS...
BUT I'VE ALREADY DISABLED GYRO'S 'RIGHT HAND'... IT'S LIKE A MAN DEEP IN DEBT DUE TO BORROWING MONEY FROM AN 'UNDERGROUND LOANER'... TOTALLY HOPELESS.
GYRO! THE GROUND! HE KICKED SOMETHING THIS WAY!!

A MOUSE...!
WHY IS A MOUSE RUNNING TOWARDS ME?
SOMETHING JUST FLEW OFF THE MOUSE.
NO, GYRO! GET AWAY FROM THE MOUSE!
IT'S BECOME A BOMB!!
HORSE INN

UWOAA AAAH!!
GYRO, DON'T LET GO OF YOUR HAND!
HOLD DOWN YOUR FINGERS NO MATTER WHAT!!

A 'PIN' CAME OFF!!
GYRO! IT CAME OFF OF YOUR HAND!

PICK IT UP, GYRO!
PICK UP THE PIN AND PUT IT BACK IN!
HURRY UP AND PUT IT BACK!!
BUT... WASN'T THAT PIN IN THE......
THE PALM OF HIS HAND..? DIDN'T IT COME FROM THE INSIDE OF HIS HAND GRIPPING THE STEEL BALL?

IT'S ....
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE! IT'S FROM HIS PALM!!
YOU HAVE TO PUT IT BACK, NOW! IT'LL EXPLODE!
IF YOU TRY TO PUT IT BACK WHERE IT WAS AND OPEN YOUR HAND, THE REST OF THE 'PINS' WILL FLY OFF!

バキッ
バキッ

YOU JABBED THE PIN IN..........
FROM THE BACK OF YOUR HAND, TO YOUR PALM...
GOOD! IT'S BACK WHERE IT WAS! IT WON'T EXPLODE!!
HORSE

sigh
WELL, YOU MUST HAVE BUILT UP A LOT OF SWEAT IN YOUR HAND FROM THAT.
IT'S ONLY BEEN 4 DAYS SINCE I RECEIVED THIS ABILITY, BUT NOW I COMPLETELY UNDERSTAND IT.
... THERE IS NO 'WEAKNESS' TO GOD'S WILL.......
WELL, GOOD LUCK WITH TRYING TO HOLD THOSE PINS DOWN...
GYRO! JOHNNY!
DON'T LET HIM GET AWAY!
WHETHER I GET AWAY OR NOT, IT'S ALL OVER....
GYRO CAN'T WALK 3 MORE STEPS... HE'LL ONLY SWEAT MORE!

GET AWAY FROM HERE!
GET BACK, JOHNNY!
WHAT!?

SO YOU'VE REALIZED ........
IT DOESN'T MATTER IF IT'S SWEAT OR ANYTHING ELSE, WHATEVER SEPARATES FROM YOUR HAND...
IT WILL BE THE SAME THING AS THE PINS COMING OFF
Y... YOUR SWEAT !!?
GYRO! YOUR HAND IS SWEATING !?
YOU MEAN THE PINS ARE DRAINING OUT WITH THE SWEAT!?
SHIT! THIS IS USELESS! THE HARDER I PRESS DOWN, THE MORE I SWEAT!

5 OR 6 PINS ARE COMING OUT WITH THE SWEAT!!
WIPE THEM OFF, GYRO! WIPE OFF THE SWEAT!
MOO
NO! THE PINS HAVE MELTED INTO THE SWEAT! THEY'RE DRIPPING OUT!
FUCK... I'LL HAVE TO GET HIM!
I'LL THROW THIS STEEL BALL AND CRUSH HIM!

NOT A BAD IDEA, IF YOUR RIGHT HAND IS GOING TO BLOW OFF ANYWAYS.....
MIGHT AS WELL TAKE YOUR CHANCES AND THROW IT...
I SEE.....!
BUT AS SOON AS IT LEAVES YOUR HAND, YOU'RE SCREWED...
THE PINS CAME OUT!! JOHNNY!
BACK UP! GET FARTHER AWAY!

UWOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!
GYROOOOOOOO!!
ORAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!

THE 'FINAL SECRET' OF THE SPIN OF THE STEEL BALL...
I MOVED THE DAMAGE WAVES THROUGH MY BODY TOWARDS MY LEG.........
THE DESTRUCTION HAS SHIFTED....
IT'S BETTER THAN LOSING THIS HAND.. I'LL GET THAT CREEP
GAH...
GAHA!

GYROO OOO OO OOO!
BGHAA!
TO THE PRESENT FROM THE KING ........ THE 'ZOMBIE HORSE'...
THE 'ZOMBIE HORSE' THAT CAN HEAL 'FATIGUE' AN[redacted] 'WOUNDS' .......
YOU WON'T GET AWAY, OYECOMOVA ...
IT WAS WRITTEN ON THE 'LETTER' FROM THE KING'S 'SERVANT'... HE'LL TRY TO GET TO IT BEFORE US ........
SO.... WE'RE CHASING HIM....!?
!!

# 23 THE TERRORIST FROM
A FAR OFF COUNTRY ②

JOHNNY! HE'S MY ENEMY!
I'LL FINISH HIM OFF BEFORE HE GETS OVER THE MOUNTAIN!!
THIS IS MY COUNTRY'S PROBLEM, NOT YOURS!
NO, GYRO.
OF COURSE I'M COMING WITH YOU.
LISTEN...
THAT TERRORIST IS RUNNING FROM US NOW, BUT I'M TELLING YOU, HE'S STILL JUST AS DANGEROUS.
I'M SURE OYECOMOVA IS THINKING OF A WAY TO KILL ME RIGHT NOW...

AREN'T YOU GOING TO THE RED CANYON TO GET THAT **'ZOMBIE HORSE'**, THE GIFT FROM THE KING?
I WANT TO SEE WHAT IT IS.
THAT HORSE THAT'S SUPPOSED TO HEAL ALL FATIGUE AND WOUNDS.
COULD IT FIX THAT RIGHT LEG OF YOURS?
HOW ABOUT MY LEGS?
LOOK... DON'T EXPECT ANYTHING WEIRD
AND I'M SAYING THAT YOU'RE IN THE WAY!
I DON'T LISTEN TO PEOPLE'S ORDERS AND I HAVEN'T RECEIVED ANYBODY'S HELP..
BUT SINCE THE BEGINNING OF THE RACE, I'VE BEEN INVOLVED WITH YOU!
IT'S TOO LATE TO GO OUR SEPARATE WAYS!

I'VE LET THEM UNDERSTAND MY ABILITY, THAT IF THEY TOUCH ME AND THE PINS FLY OFF THEY'LL EXPLODE...
I NEED TO UNDERSTAND GYRO ZEPPELI'S ABILITY ALSO...

HOW FAR CAN GYRO THROW THE STEEL BALLS?
FROM THE DISTANCE HE THREW THE BALL IN THE TOWN, IT MADE ME SPIT SOME BLOOD BUT IT SURELY WASN'T A FATAL BLOW...
THE RANGE MUST BE CLOSE TO 20 METERS...
IF I GET ANY CLOSER, I'M DONE FOR... IF I MOVE FARTHER AWAY, IT WILL BE HARDER TO KILL THEM WITH MY ABILITY. I NEED TO ATTACK HIM FROM OUTSIDE THAT RANGE.....
IS THIS LANDSCAPE TO MY ADVANTAGE OR TO MY DISADVANTAGE!?
?
GYRO, HE'S RIDING WHILE SPILLING WATER FROM HIS CANTEEN...

GYRO, GET OUT OF THE WATER!!
HE'S TURNED THE WATER INTO BOMBS!

HE'S PUT PINS ON THE WATER!
GET OUT OF THE RIVER!! CLIMB ONTO THE ROCKS!
NO...
CLIMB UP TO THE ROCKS ON YOUR OWN! I'LL DO JUST THE OPPOSITE AND CATCH UP TO HIM....
WHAT!!

PIN
PIN
WE TOUCHED HIS MINE-LIKE PINS.....
...BUT IT'S THE NEXT MOMENT THAT THEY EXPLODE. WE CAN ACCELERATE AND HAVE THEM EXPLODE BEHIND US.
WE'LL RUN RIGHT THROUGH...... THE HORSES MOVE FORWARD ABOUT 4 METERS IN ONE KICK. WE WOULD HAVE BEEN WORSE OFF TRYING TO GET OUR HORSES THROUGH THE ROCKS.

PIN
PIN
DON'T LET YOUR HORSE HESITATE!
I'LL MOVE WITHIN 15... NO, 20 METERS OF HIM AND SLAM IN MY STEEL BALL!

BUT I'M NOT RUNNING FROM YOU; I'M FORCING YOU INTO THIS RIVER.
GYRO ZEPPELI ...
HE GOT COCKY AND ACCELERATED, JUST AS EXPECTED ......

A WATERFALL, GYRO!!
THE RIVER CLIMBS UP THIS SLOPE!!
WE HAVE TO CHARGE RIGHT UP!! DON'T SLOW DOWN!
WE HAVE TO CLIMB IT WITH THE SAME SPEED!
THE ... EXPLOSIONS ARE ... GETTING CLOSER ...

HE HIT SOMETHING!
HE HIT SOMETHING DOWN WHILE RUNNING!!

A BEE'S NEST!!

I'LL HAVE TO SLASH THEM DOWN ONE BY ONE WITH MY 'FINGER CUTTERS'!
THEY'RE GOING TO ATTACK US! ALL THE 'BEES' HAVE 'PINS' ON THEM!
THE EXPLOSIONS ARE EVEN CLOSER!
DON'T SLOW DOWN! JOHNNY!! I'LL HAVE TO DO IT! I'LL THROW MY STEEL BALL FROM HERE!!

ORAAA AAAA AAAA!!
HE'S STILL ABOUT 30 TO 40 METERS AWAY!!
EVEN IF IT REACHES ME, IT WILL BE THE SAME AS THE LAST! IT WON'T BE FATAL! MY ABILITY IS STRONGER THAN YOURS! YOU TWO WILL BE THE ONES WHO EXPLODE FROM THE BEES!

STICK
STICK
STICK
STICK
I CAUGHT THE BEES WITH A SPIDER'S WEB! DUCK, JOHNNY!
PIN
PIN
WHAT...!?

ALRIGHT! WE'VE CLIMBED THE WATERFALL!!

!!?
UGWAA!!
GYROOOOOOOOOO!!

WHAT.... HAPPENED!!
MY... INSIDE MY MOUTH...
ドドドドド
PFFFFFF FFFOO
ドドド

GYRO!?
JOHNNY, DON'T OPEN YOUR MOUTH!
STOP BREATHING!! STOP YOUR HORSE'S BREATHING, TOO! THIS SMELL!!
STOP BREATHING?
IMPOSSIBLE ....
AS LONG AS YOU'RE STILL LIVING, AT LEAST.....

YOU THOUGHT I WOULD ONLY SEND YOU WATER AND BEES...
...IN THIS MOUNTAIN LAND?
EVEN THE AIR I BREATHE! EVERYTHING I TOUCH, I CAN TURN INTO MINES!
YOU TWO ARE THE SAME AS MICE TRAPPED IN A CAGE AND BEING BURNED BY FIRE! YOU'RE OUT OF OPTIONS! THERE'S NOTHING MORE YOU CAN DO!
YOU CAN'T EVEN BREATHE! I'VE RECEIVED A WONDERFUL GIFT FROM GOD!

AFTER I GET OUT OF THIS MOUNTAIN LAND, I'LL GO BACK
AND KILL THE KING WITH THIS POWER!!

WERE THEY ...!!
DOING THIS JUST THEN!!
THE BEES THEY CAUGHT IN THAT WEB!! SENDING THEM BACK TO ME....
THESE THINGS !!
FROM JUST BEFORE!!!
THEY'RE CONNECTED TO THE SPIDER'S WEB!

THIS IS LAME!
YOU THOUGHT YOU COULD BLOW ME UP WITH THE SAME BEES I TURNED INTO MINES!?
I'LL CUT THIS THING!!
!? WHAT ARE THESE...!?
THEY AREN'T BEES...
THEY'RE SPINNING...

ALL THE BEES EITHER EXPLODED OR FLEW AWAY.
THE SOURCE OF THE BUZZING SOUND .........
... IS THE SPIN OF JOHNNY'S NAILS.
SEEMS LIKE YOU THOUGHT IT WAS THE SOUND OF THE BEES YOU TURNED INTO BOMBS...
AND YOU PULLED THEM CLOSER TRYING TO CUT THE WEB!
CONSEQUEN-TIALLY PULLING YOURSELF TOWARDS MY RANGE!
THE POWER AND RANGE OF THE STEEL BALL INCREASES WITH THE SPIN OF THE NAILS!

HA!!

UWAAAAAAAAA
ONE MOOOOOORE SHOT!!
BUH

4 THE DUTY OF GYRO ZEPPELI (END)

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

4 ジャイロ・ツェペリの宿命

2004年11月9日　第1刷発行

著者　荒木飛呂彦

©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS 2004

編集　ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(5211)2651

発行人　鳥嶋和彦

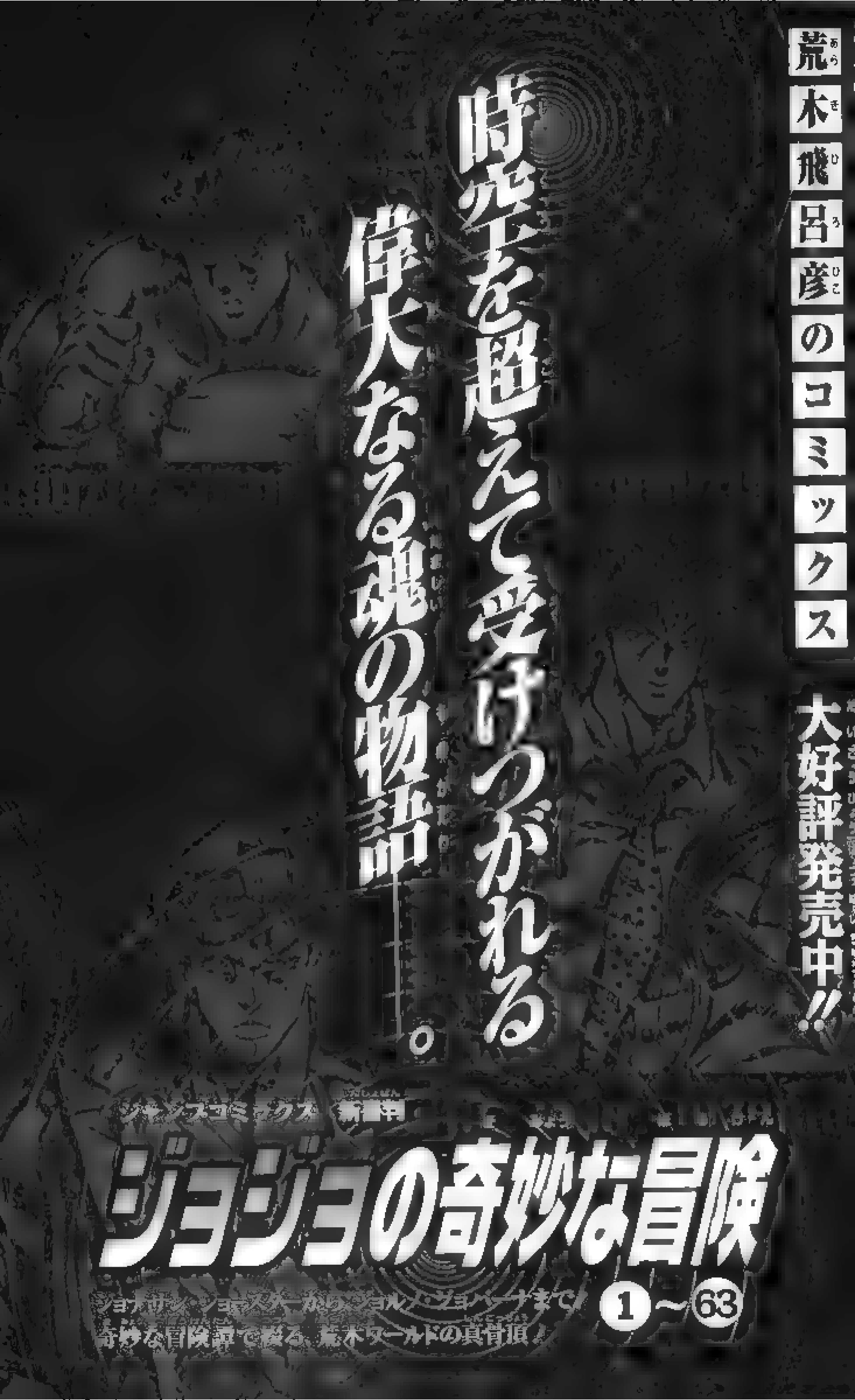
発行所　株式会社　集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(3230)6233(編集)
03(3230)6191(販売)
03(3230)6076(制作)

Printed in Japan

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社

造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社制作部宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。
本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

ISBN4-08-873689-3 C9979


荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
大好評発売中!!
時空を超えて受けつがれる
偉大なる魂の物語――。
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
1〜63
ジョナサン・ジョースターからジョルノ・ジョバァーナまで!
奇妙な冒険譚で綴る、荒木ワールドの真骨頂!

ジャンプコミックス　新書判　ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part6

# ストーンオーシャン ①〜⑰

6代目ジョジョはなんと女性！　空条徐倫は、恋人とのドライブ中に交通事故に遭遇。弁護士と恋人にハメられ15年の刑務所行きを [illegible]

●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞

## ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 ①〜㉙ 以下続刊

●豪華本

## JOJO6251 荒木飛呂彦の世界

デビュー時からJOJO第4部までのイラスト他、自身の作品背景や秘密を語ったロングインタビューを収録。

## JOJO A GO！GO！

独特の色づかいが魅力の荒木イラスト集他、第5部までのスタンドを解説したスタンド本、取材を元に「作家・荒木飛呂彦」の本質に迫る荒木本の3冊セット。美麗ケース入り。

●JUMP j BOOKS

## ジョジョの奇妙な冒険

原作／荒木飛呂彦　著者／関島眞頼・山口宏

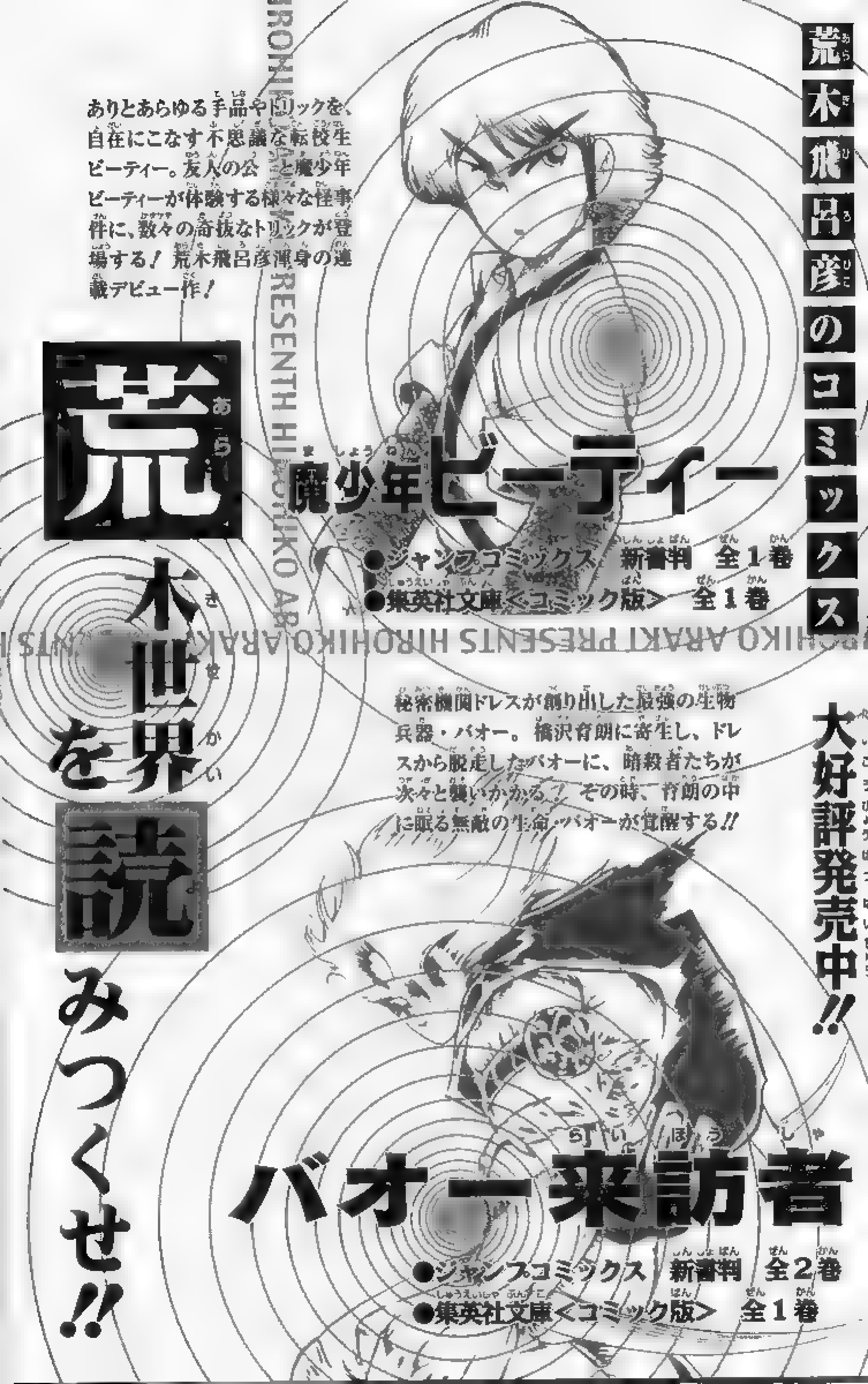
JOJO第3部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー！　承太郎とディオの激闘は灼熱の砂漠を抜け、エジプト・カイロへ。果てしなく広がる砂の海で彼らの行く手を阻むものは何か

## ジョジョの奇妙な冒険Ⅱ

ゴールデンハート／ゴールデンリング

原作／荒木飛呂彦　著者／宮昌太朗・大塚ギチ

JOJO第5部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー第2弾！　ネアポリスで次々と起こる大量殺人事件。そしてその現場には あのパンナコッタ・フーゴの姿が…


荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
荒木世界を読みつくせ!!
HIROHIKO ARAKI PRESENTS
ありとあらゆる手品やトリックを、自在にこなす不思議な転校生ビーティー。友人の公一と魔少年ビーティーが体験する様々な怪事件に、数々の奇抜なトリックが登場する！ 荒木飛呂彦渾身の連載デビュー作！
魔少年ビーティー
●ジャンプコミックス 新書判 全1巻
●集英社文庫<コミック版> 全1巻
大好評発売中!!
秘密機関ドレスが創り出した最強の生物兵器・バオー。橋沢育朗に寄生し、ドレスから脱走したバオーに、暗殺者たちが次々と襲いかかる！ その時、育朗の中に眠る無敵の生命・バオーが覚醒する!!
バオー来訪者
●ジャンプコミックス 新書判 全2巻
●集英社文庫<コミック版> 全1巻

ゴージャス☆アイリン 荒木飛呂彦短編集
●ジャンプスーパーコミックス 新書判 全1巻
代々、殺人教育を受け継ぐ家の血をひき、メイクによって人格が変わる美しき殺し屋アイリンのハイパー・アクション。表題作他「魔少年ビーティー」「バージニアによろしく」そしてデビュー作「武装ポーカー」を収録。
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
15年ぶりに描かれた「ゴージャス☆アイリン」のピンナップを収録。さらに幻の初期短編集「アウトロー・マン」をデジタル復刻掲載！「死刑執行中脱獄進行中」と対をなす箱入り豪華装丁で登場！
HIROHIKO ARAKI PRESENTS
死刑執行中脱獄進行中
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
ある囚人が投獄されたのは死刑執行の為の部屋だった…。衝撃の表題作をはじめ、JOJO第4部の敵・吉良吉影のその後を描いた『デッドマンズQ』、『ドルチ』『岸辺露伴は動かない』を収録。
HIROHIKO ARAKI PRESENTS
変人偏屈列伝
荒木飛呂彦＋鬼窪浩久
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
異能の大リーガー、天才発明家、稀代の興行師、悲運の賄い婦、究極のひきこもり兄弟、生涯館を増築し続けた未亡人…。社会的制圧にも屈せず、己の信念を貫き通した愛すべき変人偏屈たち！ハードカバー、箱入り超豪華装丁！

荒木飛呂彦

● IN LATE 1980, WHEN I HAD THE OPPORTUNITY TO SHAKE TEZUKA OSAMU-SENSI'S HAND, I THOUGHT TO MYSELF "WOW, THE HAND OF A CARTOONIST IS SO SOFT AND FLUFFY!" ALSO, WHEN I SHOOK THE HAND OF OYAMA MASUTATSU-SENSEI OF KARATE, MY REACTION WAS "WHOA! SO HE ACTUALLY SMASHES BOTTLES AND STUFF WITH THESE SOFT HANDS..." AND SO I DECIDED THAT ALL "EXPERTS" MUST HAVE SOFT HANDS. NOBODY HAS EVER TOLD ME THAT I HAVE SOFT HANDS, BUT I'M SURE THAT GYRO'S HANDS ARE ALL SOFT AND FLUFFY.

ウルトラジャンプ・H17年4月号～7月号
掲載分収録

9784088738451

1929979003906

ISBN4-08-873845-4

C9979 ¥390E

定価 本体390円＋税

雑誌 42980－45

モニュメント・バレーを目指して、トップを快走するシャイロとシュニー。だが、ゴールを目前にして、またしてもテロリストの襲撃に遭う二人！ シャイロが狙われる理由とは!? そして、SBRレースの真の目的が明らかに!!

ジャンプ・コミックス

★各巻とも好評発売中!!

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| ONE PIECE | 1～38 | 尾田栄一郎 |
| [illegible] | 1～29 | 許斐剛 |
| NARUTO | 1～29 | 岸本斉史 |
| [illegible] | 1～22 | 冨樫義博 |
| [illegible] | 1～140 | 秋本治 |
| [illegible] | 1～14 | [illegible] |
| BLEACH | 1～18 | 久保帯人 |
| [illegible] | 1～19 | 鈴木信也 |
| [illegible] | 1～9 | うすた京介 |
| [illegible] | 1～18 | 澤井啓夫 |
| [illegible] | 1～17 | 河下水希 |
| [illegible] | 1～8 | 和月伸宏 |
| DEATH NOTE | 1～7 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～8 | 空知英秋 |
| [illegible] | 1～5 | 天野明 |
| [illegible] | 1～5 | 星野桂 |
| [illegible] | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～42 | 鳥山明 |
| [illegible] | 1～38 | 高橋和希 |
| [illegible] | 1～32 | 武井宏之 |
| [illegible] | 1～31 | 井上雄彦 |
| [illegible] | 1～23 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～20 | 矢吹健太朗 |
| [illegible] | 1～19 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～5 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～4 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～9 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～13 | 佐倉ケンイチ |
| [illegible] | 1～19 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～8 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～10 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～7 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～6 | 増田こうすけ |
| [illegible] | 1～3 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～3 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～3 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1 | 樋口大輔 |
| [illegible] | Part～5 | 秋本治 |
| [illegible] | 1～4 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～4 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～23 | 萩原一至 |
| STEEL BALL RUN | 1～5 | 荒木飛呂彦 |
| [illegible] | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1 | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | 1～2 | [illegible] |

インターネットでも集英社のコミックスが購入できます。
書店受取なら送料無料！
http://www.s-manga.net/

JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together and makes a remark to my parents on the order of. "Isn't it nice how well those two get
集英社

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

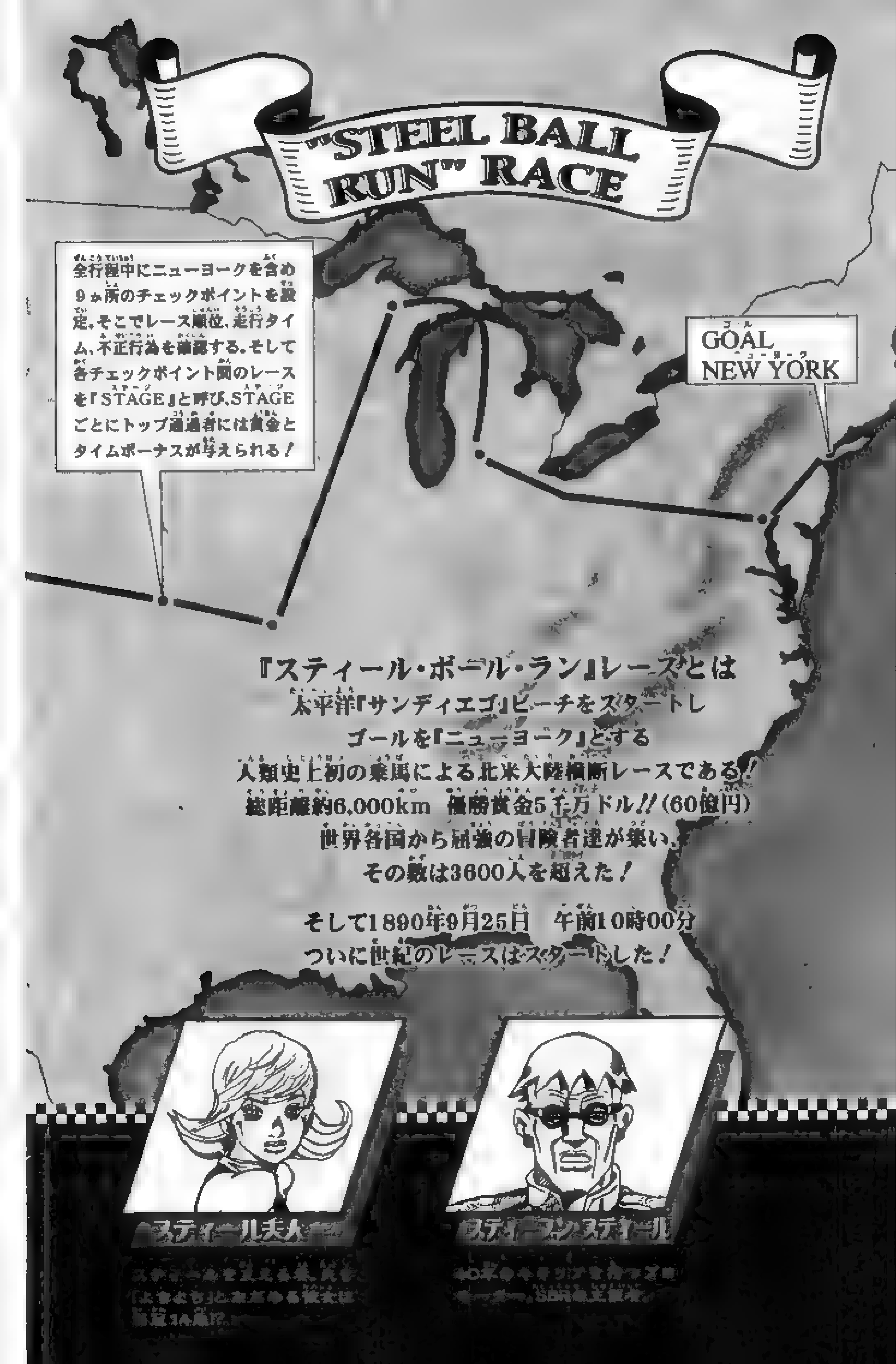
# STEEL BALL RUN

THE PRESIDENT'S CONSPIRACY

vol.5

## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS


"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE
全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定、そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！
GOAL
NEW YORK
『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3600人を超えた！
そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！
スティール夫人
スティーブン・スティール

ジャイロ・ツェペリ

不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る鉄球技術を持つ謎の男。マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う為、国王の「恩赦」を得る為にレースに参加。優勝のみを目指す。

ジョニィ・ジョースター

元天才騎手だが、事故で下半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見い出し、謎を知る為レースに参加。

マルコ

(10歳) [illegible]で働く少年。その家の[illegible]だけで、[illegible]死刑判決を受ける。

1st.STAGE　15,000メートルのスプリントレース。
ゴール前のデッドヒートを制し、勝者となったジャイロ。
しかし、サンドマンに対し走行妨害行為があったとされ、
21位に降格のペナルティを課せられてしまう。
怒りのさめやらないジャイロだったが、2nd.STAGEの
勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に！
そしてアリゾナ砂漠を越える2nd.STAGEが始まった。
最短ルートを目指し、水場のあるコースを無視して
砂漠の真ん中を突き進むジャイロとジョニィ。
だがそのルート上には、地元のインディアンが
「悪魔の手のひら」と呼び恐れる場所があった。
その土地に入った者は、心の中から『不思議な力』を
引き出され身に付くが、同時に邪悪さと禍いを呼びよせ
呪われてしまうという。
そして、何者かによって賞金首にされたジャイロに、
様々なテロリストが襲いかかる！
それは、レースが進む程に激しさを増していく…。

一方、テロリストとの戦いの中で、
知らず知らずのうちに「悪魔の手のひら」に
踏み入っていたジョニィは、そこで爪が
回転して発射できるという『不思議な力』を
身に付けていた！　ジャイロの鉄球と
ジョニィの爪弾でなんとか難を逃れた
二人は、再びゴールを目指して走り出す…！

砂男 サンドマン

ネイティブ・アメリカンの青年。白人に奪われた部族の土地を取り戻す為、己の足でレースに参加。

ディエゴ・ブランドー

[illegible]の出身だが、競馬界を制した天才騎手。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.5

## CONTENTS

THE PRESIDENT'S CONSPIRACY


#24
INTERLUDE 7

#25
TUSK ① 31

#26
TUSK ② 97

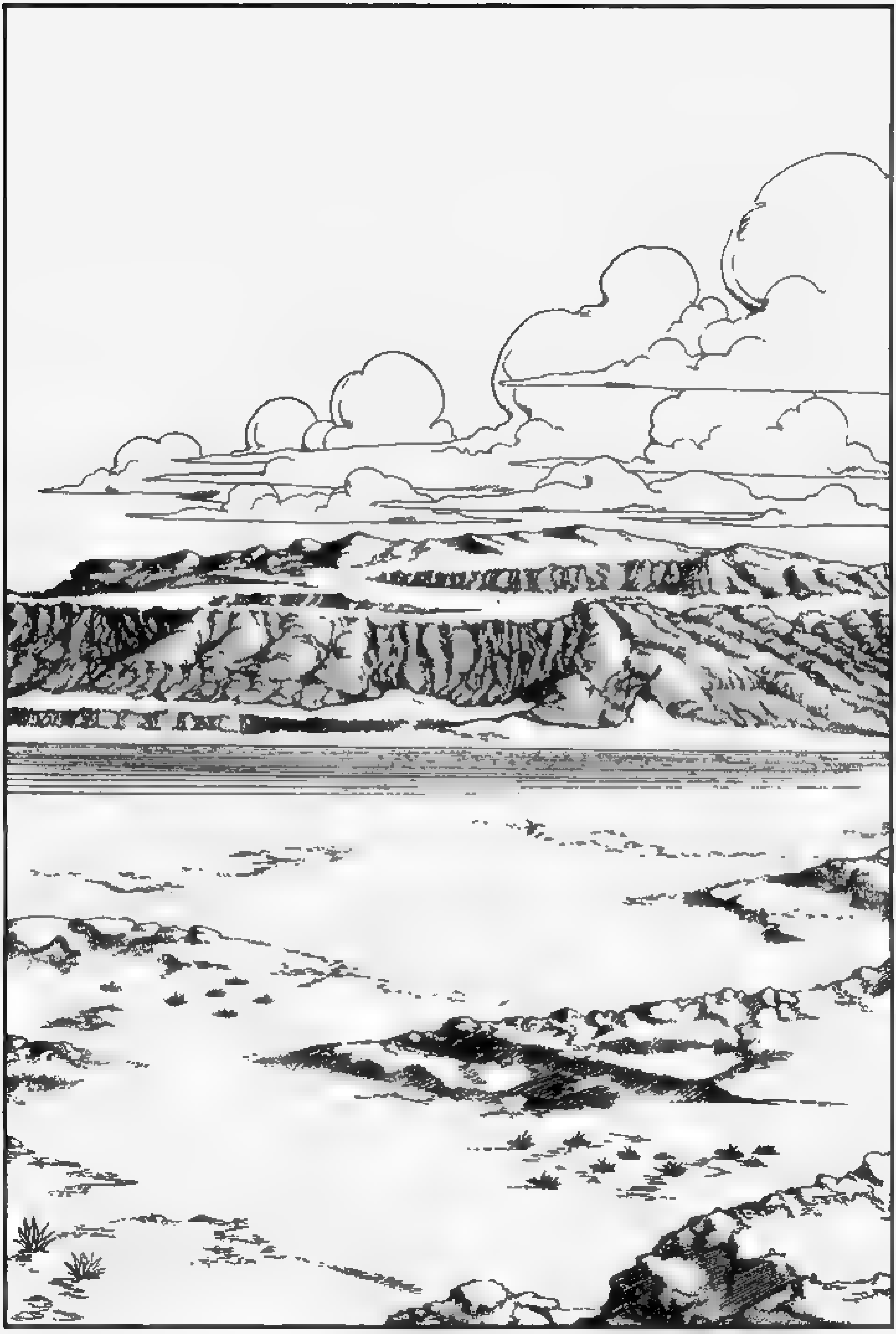
#27
TUSK ③ 159


STARDUST CRUSADERS

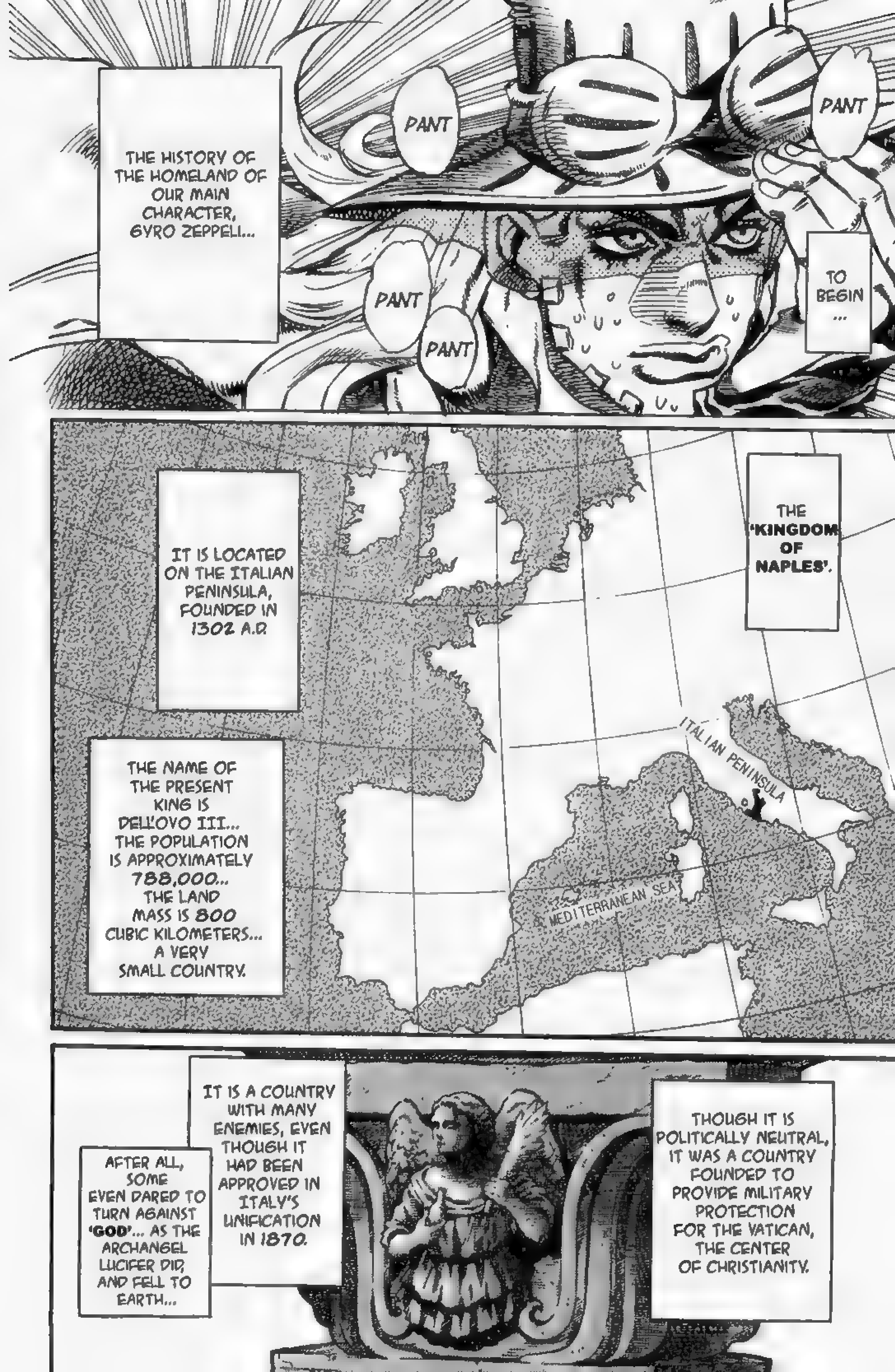

TRANSLATOR: ACK44
PROOFREADER: NURLOCK
EDITOR: KAGAMI

WEBSITE: WWW.GIOGIO.2YA.COM

#24 INTERMISSION
(INTERLUDE PIECE)

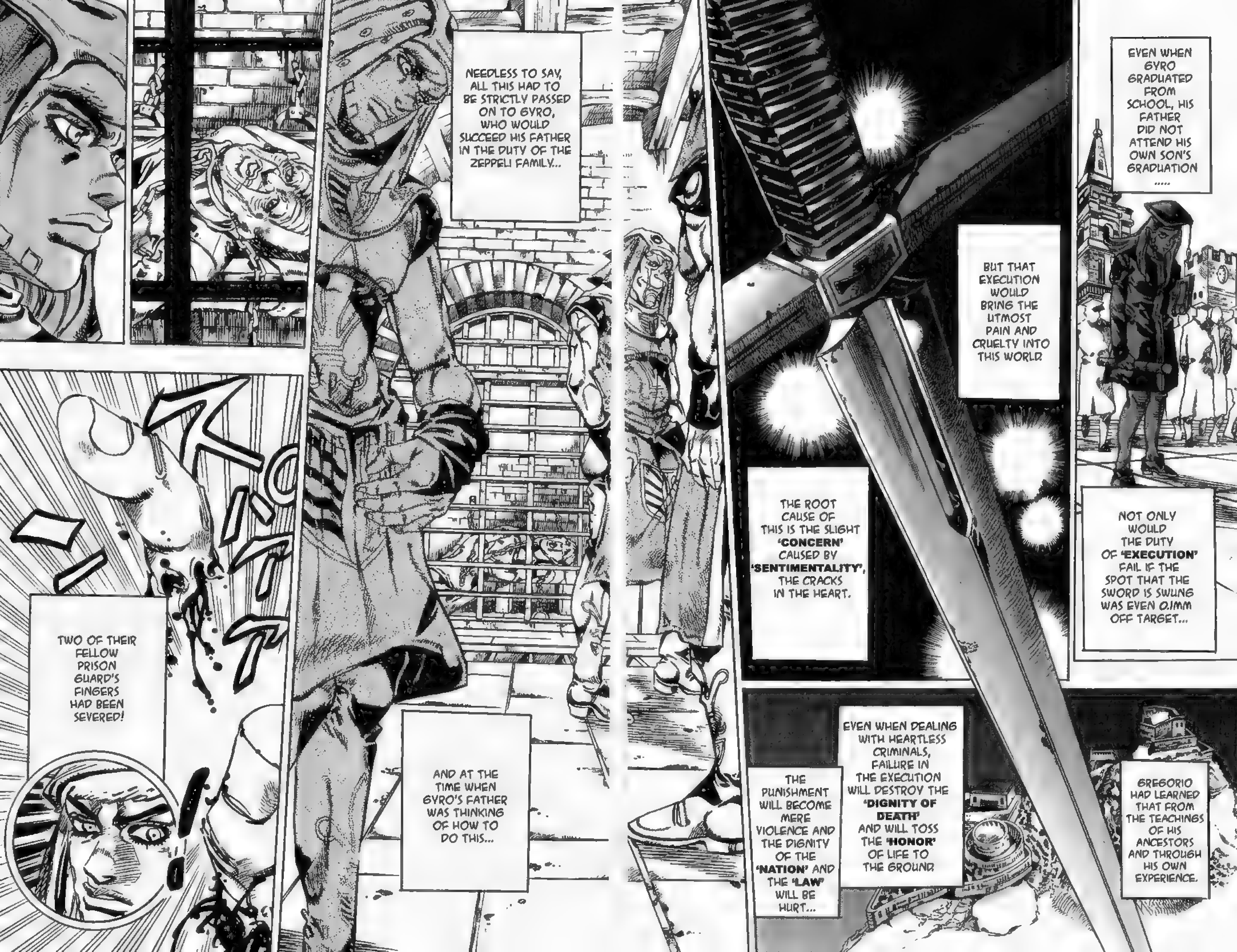


PANT
PANT
PANT
ハァ



TO BEGIN ...
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
THE HISTORY OF THE HOMELAND OF OUR MAIN CHARACTER, GYRO ZEPPELI...
THE 'KINGDOM OF NAPLES'.
IT IS LOCATED ON THE ITALIAN PENINSULA, FOUNDED IN 1302 A.D
ITALIAN PENINSULA
MEDITERRANEAN SEA
THE NAME OF THE PRESENT KING IS DELL'OVO III... THE POPULATION IS APPROXIMATELY 788,000... THE LAND MASS IS 800 CUBIC KILOMETERS... A VERY SMALL COUNTRY.
THOUGH IT IS POLITICALLY NEUTRAL, IT WAS A COUNTRY FOUNDED TO PROVIDE MILITARY PROTECTION FOR THE VATICAN, THE CENTER OF CHRISTIANITY.
IT IS A COUNTRY WITH MANY ENEMIES, EVEN THOUGH IT HAD BEEN APPROVED IN ITALY'S UNIFICATION IN 1870.
AFTER ALL, SOME EVEN DARED TO TURN AGAINST 'GOD'... AS THE ARCHANGEL LUCIFER DID, AND FELL TO EARTH...

GREGORIO ZEPPELI, THE FATHER OF GYRO ZEPPELI, IS A MAN WHO HAS LIVED HIS LIFE APART FROM 'SENTIMENTALITY'.
HE NEVER MAKES PERSONAL FRIENDS... NEVER OWNS PETS...
HE EVEN AVOIDS VISITING PEOPLE AND GOING TO WEDDINGS... HE SPENDS DINNER WITH ONLY HIS FAMILY...
HE HAD NEVER EVEN INVITED RELATIVES TO HIS HOUSE...
HE ALSO DOES NOT ALLOW ANY PICTURES TO BE TAKEN.....
HE NEVER WRITES LETTERS OR KEEPS A JOURNAL.
NEVER GIVES OR RECEIVES PRESENTS...
IT IS BECAUSE HE BELIEVED THAT 'MEMORIES' OF HUMAN RELATIONSHIPS LED TO 'SENTIMENTALITY'.
IT WAS ALL PART OF HIS STRICT REGULATION, IN ORDER TO STAY CLEAR AND SHARP..
'SENTIMENTALITY' LED TO 'CRACKS' IN THE HEART, AND 'WEAKNESS' ...


EVEN WHEN GYRO GRADUATED FROM SCHOOL, HIS FATHER DID NOT ATTEND HIS OWN SON'S GRADUATION .....
BUT THAT EXECUTION WOULD BRING THE UTMOST PAIN AND CRUELTY INTO THIS WORLD
NOT ONLY WOULD THE DUTY OF 'EXECUTION' FAIL IF THE SPOT THAT THE SWORD IS SWUNG WAS EVEN 0.1MM OFF TARGET...
THE ROOT CAUSE OF THIS IS THE SLIGHT 'CONCERN' CAUSED BY 'SENTIMENTALITY', THE CRACKS IN THE HEART.
GREGORIO HAD LEARNED THAT FROM THE TEACHINGS OF HIS ANCESTORS AND THROUGH HIS OWN EXPERIENCE.
EVEN WHEN DEALING WITH HEARTLESS CRIMINALS, FAILURE IN THE EXECUTION WILL DESTROY THE 'DIGNITY OF DEATH' AND WILL TOSS THE 'HONOR' OF LIFE TO THE GROUND
THE PUNISHMENT WILL BECOME MERE VIOLENCE AND THE DIGNITY OF THE 'NATION' AND THE 'LAW' WILL BE HURT...
NEEDLESS TO SAY, ALL THIS HAD TO BE STRICTLY PASSED ON TO GYRO, WHO WOULD SUCCEED HIS FATHER IN THE DUTY OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY...
TWO OF THEIR FELLOW PRISON GUARD'S FINGERS HAD BEEN SEVERED!
AND AT THE TIME WHEN GYRO'S FATHER WAS THINKING OF HOW TO DO THIS...

THAT WOMAN WAS A PRISONER CONDEMNED TO DEATH WHO HAD POISONED AND KILLED MANY FAMILIES AND CHILDREN.
BUT SHE WAS SMALL AND PALE... AND BEAUTIFUL.
WHILE SHE WAS BEING ESCORTED SHE STARTED MOVING LIKE A WILD DOG AND BIT OFF THE PRISON GUARD'S FINGERS... WITH THE POWER OF A PUMP..
MY FINGE-EERR!
GYRO! YOUR STEEL BALL! STOP HER!

IT WAS DONE IN A CALM MANNER AND WITH POLITE WORDING.
THIS CASE DID NOT BECOME TOO MUCH OF A DISASTER...
BUT WHEN GYRO'S FATHER HEARD OF THE INCIDENT, HE DISPLAYED STRICT ANGER TOWARDS HIS SON... AND YET...
ONLY ME?
I WAS THE ONE WHO CALMED THE WOMAN, FATHER.
I THINK I WAS OF SOME HELP.
GYRO PAUSED FOR A MOMENT... THEN QUIETLY DEFENDED HIMSELF.
MY SON...
THIS INCIDENT...
... IS AN ACCIDENT CAUSED ENTIRELY BY YOU.
YOU ARE THE ONE RESPON-SIBLE.
"THE WOMAN IS BEAUTIFUL...... AND SHE IS QUITE SMALL."
IS THAT SO? DID YOU NOT THINK ABOUT HER THIS WAY?

OR DID YOU NOT THINK TO YOURSELF WHEN YOU LOOKED AT THE CELL AT THE END OF THE HALL ...
"THAT PRISONER IS OLD AND SICK"?
......
THIS IS NOT ABOUT 'FAILURE' OR 'CARELESSNESS' ...
I'M TALKING ABOUT 'SENTIMENTALITY' OF THE HEART.... YOU MUST NOT BRING THAT INTO YOUR DUTY!
NO MATTER IF IT IS A SMALL WOMAN OR A MAN 2 METERS TALL, A CONDEMNED CRIMINAL OR A PICKPOCKET, IT IS ALL THE SAME.
WITHOUT THAT, YOU COULD HAVE STOPPED THE WOMAN BEFORE SHE BIT OFF YOUR FELLOW PRISON GUARD'S FINGERS.
SHAME ON YOU!
YOU COULD HAVE AVOIDED LOSING YOUR COLLAR HANGER WITH THE HONORABLE 'CREST'.....!
A HEART FULL OF 'SENTIMENTALITY' IS DANGEROUS.... IT CAN SET YOUR FUTURE TO ETERNAL MISERY...!
DO NOT FORGET ....... MY SON ...

THIS IS THE ROAD..
THAT THE 'ZEPPELI KINSMEN' HAD FOLLOWED THROUGH THE GENERA-TIONS.
A FEW DAYS PASSED ...
MORNING CAME AND GYRO WAS CALLED TO DUTY...
WHEN HE ARRIVED AT THE CELLS...
ANOTHER DISTURBANCE WAS HAPPENING...
WE'LL MAKE YOU SPEAK!
THIS IS A NEEDLE ISN'T IT!!
SINCE WHEN DID YOU HAVE IT!? WHERE DID YOU GET THIS 'NEEDLE'!?

NOW THE CRIME OF JAILBREAK WILL BE PLACED UPON YOU!!
WHAT WERE YOU TRYING TO DO WITH THIS 'NEEDLE'!? YOU MUST HAVE BEEN PLANNING TO USE IT AS A WEAPON!!
DO YOU HAVE ANY COMPANIONS!?
WHAT WERE YOU PLANNING ON DOING WITH THIS!?
WE DON'T KNOW WHY A KID LIKE YOU WAS PUT IN HERE.... AND WE HAVEN'T ASKED YOU OF YOUR CRIME YET...
BUT IF YOU DON'T SPEAK, WE'LL SHOW NO MERCY!

LOOK!!
HE WAS HIDING THIS UNDER HIS BED!
!!
THIS CREST!!
NOW YOU'VE DONE IT! THIS IS AN INSULT TO OUR COUNTRY!!
IT'S OUR COLLAR HANGER! WHERE DID YOU FIND THIS!?

AND THAT WAS RIPPED OFF 2 DAYS AGO BY A WOMAN..
OUT OF A FISH'S BONE....
IT HAD FALLEN INTO THE DRAINAGE ....
I..
I MADE...
... THE NEEDLE ...
MY FATHER TAUGHT ME THAT IF I DO MY BEST, I'LL BE ACCEPTED SOME DAY...
PLEASE RETURN IT TO ITS OWNER.
I HOPE THAT... HE WILL LIKE IT...
THAT IT'S SOME-THING IM-PORTANT ...
I WAS ABLE TO PICK IT UP THROUGH THE NARROW DRAIN WITH MY HANDS...
SO I FIXED IT... I'M SURE....

IT'S THE JOB THAT MY GRANDFATHER AND EVEN HIS GRANDFATHER HAVE DONE!
I'LL BEAT ANYBODY AT SHINING SHOES!
AND I CAN MAKE SILVERWARE BRIGHT AND SHINY!
I CAN SEW ANYTHING!
I CAN MEMORIZE ALL THE NAMES OF MEALS AND WINE....
ENOUGH! STOP!
THAT'S ONLY A FISH'S BONE! NOTHING ELSE!
BACK TO YOUR POSTS! THERE'S NO PROBLEM HERE!
IS IT YOUR COLLAR HANGER, SIR? IF YOU DON'T LIKE IT, I CAN FIX IT AGAIN...
I COULD DO A BETTER JOB.
PUT THE BOY BACK IN HIS CELL!
STOP... DON'T SPEAK TO ME.....
EVER AGAIN...
GOT IT? ......
EVER AGAIN...
IT WAS THE MORNING OF THAT DAY...
... THAT GYRO ZEPPELI HEARD ...
... THE SENTENCE FOR THE BOY ...

THE DECISION WAS THE CRIME OF 'TREASON'.
... A PENALTY THAT NOBODY COULD CHANGE ...
AND THE ONE RESPONSIBLE FOR THE EXECUTION WAS TO BE...
'GYRO ZEPPELI'!! .... HIS FIRST OFFICIAL DUTY ...
'ZOMBIE HORSE'!?

IF WE MISS ONE STEP, WE'LL FALL STRAIGHT DOWN THE VALLEY!
GYRO! IS THAT THING REALLY HERE IN THE RED CANYON!?
THERE IT IS!
PANT
PANT
PANT PANT

THE 'ZOMBIE HORSE'.
A MURAL ..?
A CRAPPY MURAL OF A HORSE WITH A WILD FACE.....
PIP

JOHNNY
.....
DO YOU
HAVE ANY
WIRE?
A PIN WOULD
WORK TOO.
I'LL
CONNECT IT
TO THIS
STRING...
PANT
PANT
PANT
UWOOA!
GH!!
HEY!
WHAT THE
FUCK DO
YOU THINK
YOU'RE
DOING!!?

WHAT KIND OF LOGIC IS THAT!? YOU ONLY SEWED YOURSELF UP WITH THAT DIRTY STRING!! THAT'S NOT GOING TO FIX YOU...!
BUT IF IT DOES WORK... YOU SAID THAT YOUR FATHER...
.. USUALLY WORKS IN THE FIELD OF 'MEDICINE'... IS IT HIS TECHNIQUE?
PANT
THE 'ZOMBIE HORSE' CAN HEAL WOUNDS...
GH!!
GWAA!!
PANT
PANT
PANT
THEY LEFT THIS STRING HERE... SO I CAN 'SEW' WITH IT...
THE 'STRING' CAN HEAL UP TO A CERTAIN DEGREE... AT LEAST TO THE POINT OF FIXING FLESH THAT HAS BEEN BLOWN OFF ...
SOMETHING LIKE A 'STAND ABILITY'?
NEITHER DOES YOUR 'STEEL BALL', BUT THIS IS SOMETHING BIGGER!
NO, IT DOESN'T SEEM LIKE A 'TECHNIQUE'!

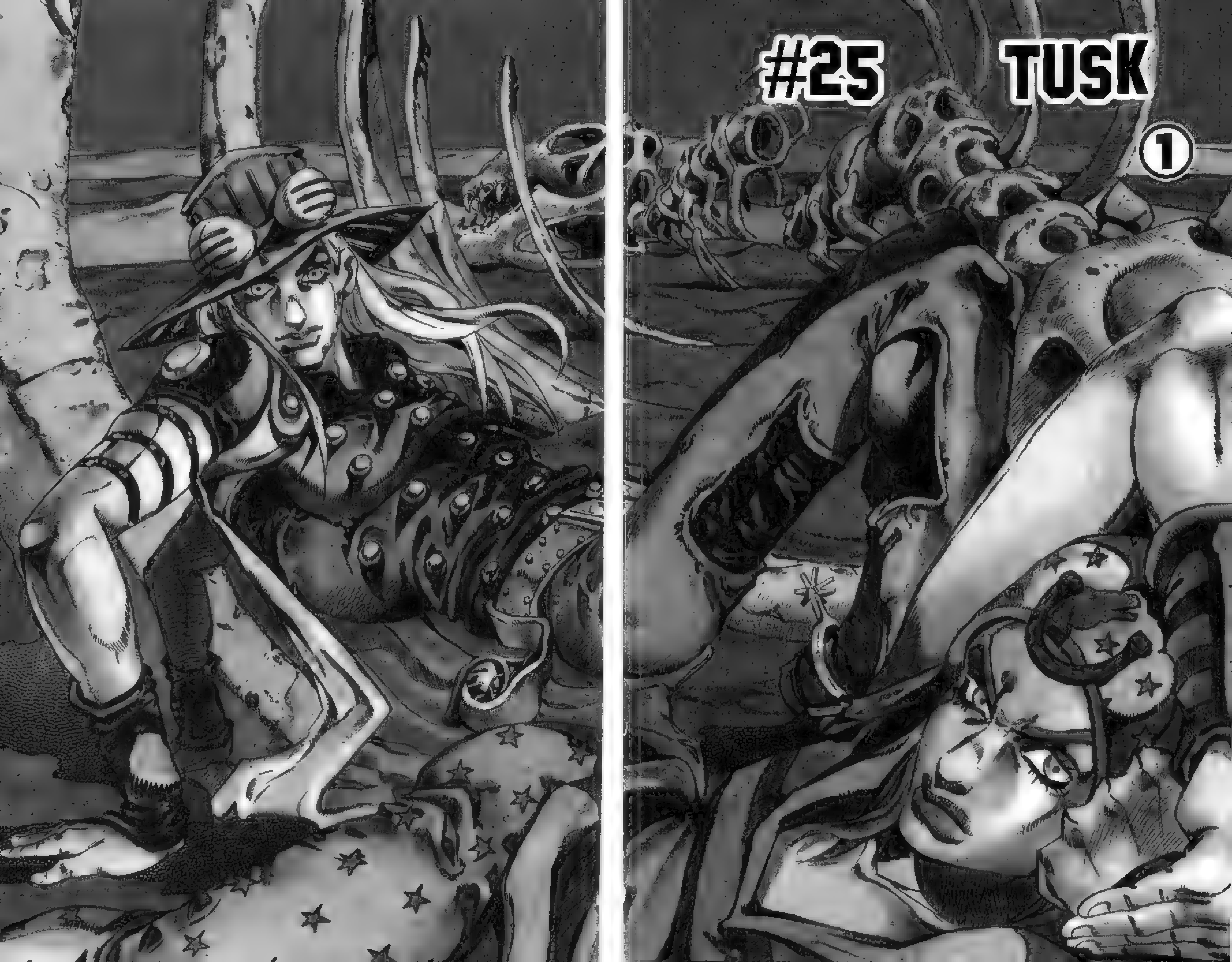
NO.....
THIS.....
... IS A GIFT FROM THE KING, JUST AS THE LETTER SAID..
BESIDES, MY OLD MAN....
HE NEVER WRITES LETTERS!
2ND STAGE - NOT FAR FROM THE GOAL, MONUMENT VALLEY

# STARDUST CRUSADERS

TRANSLATOR: ACK44
PROOFREADER: NURLOCK
EDITOR: KAGAMI

WEBSITE: WWW.GIOGIO.2YA.COM

IN 1191 A.D, 5 METERS UNDER THE YARD OF GLASTONBURY MONASTERY, IN SOUTHWEST ENGLAND..
AN 'OLD MAP' WRITTEN ON A PARCHMENT WAS DISCOVERED
#25 TUSK ①
'JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA' WAS THE SAINT, WHO, DURING THE ERA OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE...
... BROUGHT THE DEAD BODY OF JESUS CHRIST DOWN FROM THE CROSS AFTER HE WAS CRUCIFIED ON THE HILL OF GOLGATHA...
INRI
...AND WHO CLEANED THE BODY BEFORE ITS BURIAL.
IT WAS A 'RELIC OF JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA'.


#25
TUSK
①

HE FOUNDED THE OLDEST CHRISTIAN MONASTERY, GLASTONBURY, ON THE ISLAND OF BRITAIN, AND DIED THERE.
JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA BECAME A MISSIONARY AND WENT ON MANY JOURNEYS.
'THE MAP OF JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA'...
BUT NOBODY COULD UNDERSTAND THAT 'MAP'.
NOBODY HAD EVER SEEN SHORES WITH THE 'SHAPE' OF THOSE DRAWN ON IT.
A LAND THAT NOBODY KNEW...
A PLACE THAT NOBODY HAD EVER BEEN...

WHAT WAS THE PURPOSE OF 'SAINT JOSEPH' DRAWING THIS MAP IN THE DAYS OF JESUS...?
EVENTUALLY, THE 'MAP' BEGAN TO FADE FROM THE PEOPLE'S MINDS...
1500 YEARS LATER, IN THE 16TH CENTURY, THE 'MAP' WAS STOLEN AND FELL INTO UNKNOWN HANDS. IT DISAPPEARED FROM THE LAND OF GLASTONBURY....
BUT SUDDENLY ...

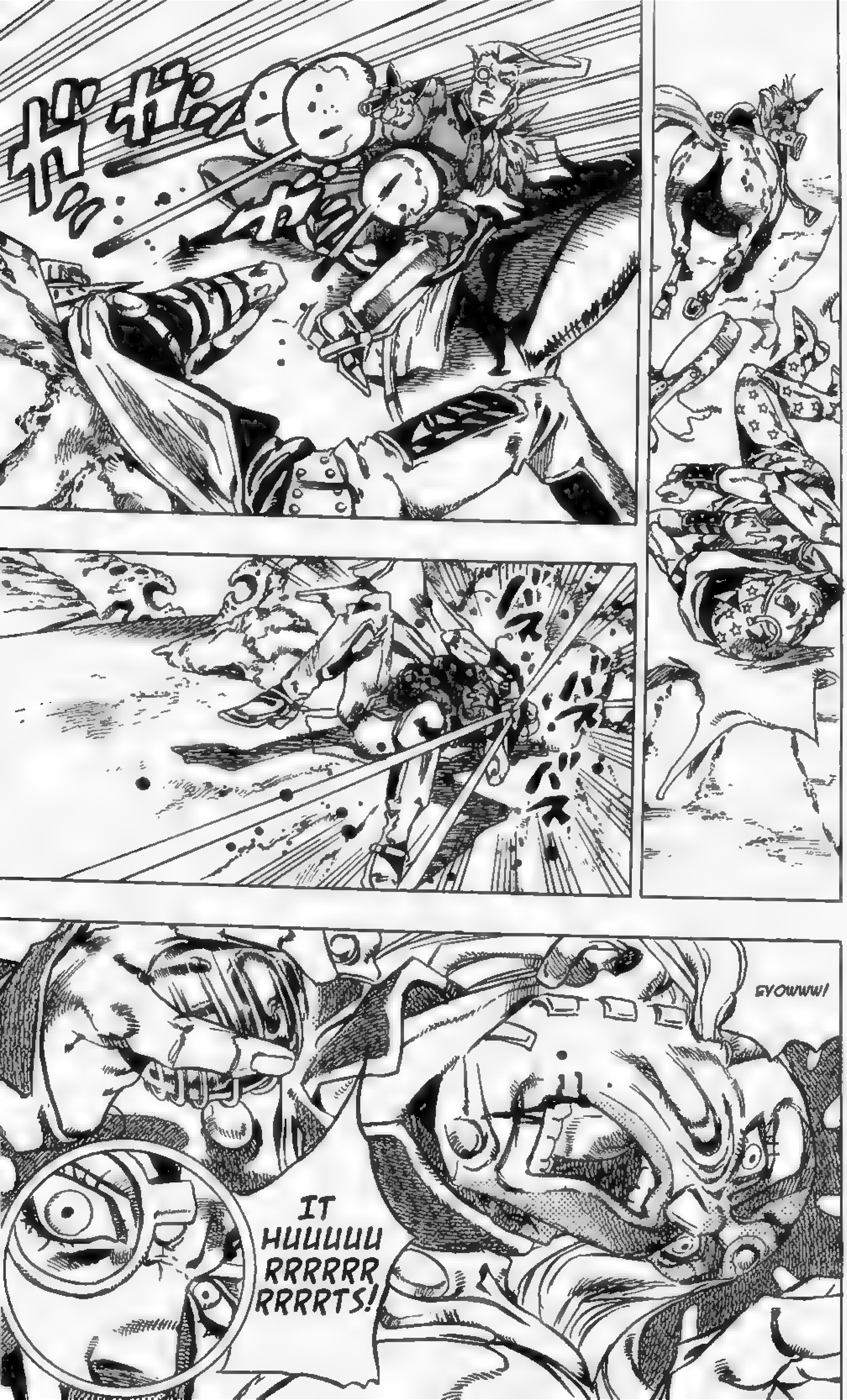
IT WAS A FEW YEARS AFTER THE NEW WORLD, 'AMERICA' HAD BEEN DISCOVERED...
---- AND NOW, IN 1890 ----- 25 KM TO 'MONUMENT VALLEY'...

JOHNNYYYY...
IT'S 25 KM TO THE GOAL! HE EITHER HAS SOME CRAZY TECHNIQUE OR HE'S JUST DOPING. OTHERWISE, HE WOULDN'T BE ABLE TO CHALLENGE US AT THIS POINT...
THAT GUY'S HORSE MUST BE ON STEROIDS!
HE MUST BE DOPING! I JUST DECIDED THAT HE IS. WHAT WAS IT? THAT GUY'S NAME BEHIND US!?
'F.V. STROHEIM' ...
HE'S GERMAN, AND HE PLACED 7TH IN THE 1ST STAGE! LET'S LET HIM PASS US, GYRO!
OUR HORSES' PULSES HAVE GONE UP TO 220 PER MINUTE! IF WE FORCE OUR HORSES TO RUN AT THEIR TOP SPEED HERE, THEY WON'T LAST UNTIL THE GOAL!

NO, JOHNNY! DON'T LET HIM GET CLOSE! WE CAN'T LET ANY STRANGERS NEAR US!
THE COURSE TO THE LEFT IS MY VALKYRIE'S FAVORITE TYPE OF LAND! WE'LL LET HIM CRUSH HIMSELF HERE!

GYRO, HE PULLED OUT A GUN!
HE'S A TERRORIST!!
GHH!

ドガ


バス
バス
バス
GYOWWW!
IT HUUUUU RRRRRR RRRRTS!

GAAAH!!
FREAKIN' HURTS!!
Y... YOU SON OF A BITCH!
IT HAS THE POWER TO CARVE CERTAIN THINGS AND CONTROL BODY MUSCLES.
'THE SPIN OF THE STEEL BALLS' .....

IT LOOKS LIKE IT CAN ALSO MAKE YOUR SKIN HARD ENOUGH TO BOUNCE OFF BULLETS....
YOU...
WAAH!! FUCK YOU!!

DROP THEM! GYRO ZEPPELI!
IF YOU DON'T, I'LL SHOOT YOUR FRIEND AND YOUR HORSE.
YOU CAN EVEN THROW THEM TOWARDS ME ....... IT'LL ALLOW ME TO PROVE THAT MY GUNS ARE FASTER ...
DROP **'THOSE'** FROM YOUR HANDS, NOW!
YOU WANT ME TO DROP THESE STEEL BALLS?
ARE YOU SURE?
......
......

WELL, IF YOU INSIST THAT I DROP THEM...
I GUESS I'LL GO AHEAD AND DO THAT...
!!

!!!
DROPPED 'EM.
BHA!

......
WHAT'S GOING ON?
EVEN IF THE VICTORY OF THIS CONTINENT-CROSSING RACE IS A 'SYMBOL OF VICTORY FOR A NATION'....
IT'S TOO INTENSE...! THESE ASSAULTS FROM THE TERRORISTS.....
......
YOUR HOME COUNTRY.... JUST WHAT IN THE WORLD....
THESE TERRORISTS...

WHY DO THEY CONSTANTLY KEEP ATTACKING YOU LIKE THIS?
THEY'RE ONLY AFTER YOU!
BUT IT'S ONLY A RACE! BEFORE THERE WAS 'OYECOMOVA', AND NOW 'STROHEIM'! I FEEL SOMETHING DEEPER... A 'DEEPER CONNECTION' BETWEEN YOUR COUNTRY AND THE TERRORISTS!
I WILL CROSS THIS CONTINENT AS NUMBER 1! IF YOU THINK YOU'RE ENDANGERING YOURSELF, YOU SHOULD TRAVEL SEPARATELY.
I AM A 'SERVANT OF THE KING'
IF I AM VICTORIOUS IN THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE...
THE KING WILL RELEASE AN 'AMNESTY'! THAT'S ALL.
......

AH...
I CUT MYSELF ..... WHEN I FELL OFF THE HORSE ....
BUT I DON'T FEEL ANY PAIN...

WHA !?

WHA .....
WHAT IS THIS! GY.... GYROOO, WAIT! WAIT UP!!
ドドドド
ドドドドド
MY LEFT HAND!? WHAT THE HELL!?
L... LOOK! MY HAND JUST SUDDENLY ...!?!?

HUH ....!!
WHAT?
........

THERE'S SOMETHING! SOMETHING JUST... WENT INTO MY HAND!!
N.. NO!
IT CAME OUT OF MY LEFT HAND AND WENT BACK IN AGAIN!
HEY, WHAT'S GOING ON?
YOU YELL AT ME... THEN IGNORE ME AND TALK TO THE GROUND?
UWAAAA! AAAAH!!
TH... THIS...!?
DID YOU HURT YOURSELF SOMEWHERE?
N....
I DON'T FEEL ANY PAIN... AM I HALLUCINATING?
... NO ..
BUT... THAT CAN'T BE... I FEEL IT IN MY HEART. IT'S NOT A 'HALLUCINATION' OR A 'STAND ABILITY' OR ANYTHING OF THAT SORT....

MY SPINNING NAILS IS MY 'STAND ABILITY'!
BUT THIS HAND GIVES ME A SENSE OF SOMETHING TOTALLY DIFFERENT
WITH MY OWN WILL...! I CAN SPIN MY OWN NAILS... MY ABILITY!
SOMETHING'S IN THERE!
IN MY 'LEFT HAND'... A 'LEFT HAND' THAT'S NOT MINE!? IT'S BEEN IN THERE! SINCE WHEN?

THAT PHOTOGRAPH WAS TAKEN FROM APPROXIMATELY 200 METERS IN THE AIR BY HOT AIR BALLOON 3 WHILE FOLLOWING THE RACE.
THE PARTICIPANTS OF THE 2ND STAGE ARE MAINLY RUNNING ON 2 ROUTES.
APPROXIMATELY 800 OF THE PARTICIPANTS CHOSE THE ROUTE CROSSING THE DESERT... HOWEVER, 523 OF THEM DROPPED OUT AT THE PLACE PICTURED IN THAT PHOTOGRAPH.
THE MAIN CAUSE IS THOUGHT TO BE ACCIDENTS RESULTING FROM QUICKSAND.
THE DEATH TOLL HAS RISEN TO 68. THIS IS A DILEMMA.
68.......
THE LOCAL APACHE PEOPLE CALL THAT AREA THE **'DEVIL'S PALM'**.
I SAY 'AREA', BUT THE GROUND CHANGES AND MOVES LIKE QUICKSAND. NOBODY CAN PREDICT WHERE THE **'DEVIL'S PALM'** WILL APPEAR NEXT.
THE LAND SHAPE HAD COMPLETELY VANISHED WITHIN 6 TO 7 HOURS.

BUT ITS SIZE AND GEOLOGICAL REASON FOR WHY IT MOVES LIKE A LIVING THING...
... ARE THINGS THAT NOBODY CAN EXPLAIN.
GEOLOGISTS BELIEVE THAT THE AREA IS RELATED TO AN ANCIENT METEOR CRASH.
THE APACHE PEOPLE BELIEVE THAT MISERY COMES UPON THOSE WHO GO NEAR THAT LAND.. AND THEY SAY...
THE 'DEVIL'S PALM' CHOOSES THE PEOPLE...

WAS GYRO ZEPPELI THE FIRST TO PASS THROUGH THIS LAND?
YES.
CURRENTLY, THE BALLOONS HAVE LOST SIGHT OF HIM, BUT HE IS IN 1ST PLACE, ACCOMPANIED BY JOHNNY JOESTAR.
HE IS MOST LIKELY ABOUT 20KM FROM THE GOAL, MONUMENT VALLEY.
AFTER GYRO ZEPPELI PASSED THROUGH THE **'DEVIL'S PALM'**...
WAS THERE ANY TRACE OF HIM FINDING SOMTHING?
......
SOMETHING... MR. STEEL?

THERE IS A POSSIBILITY THAT GYRO ZEPPELI HAS FOUND A HUMAN 'CORPSE' IN THE 'LAND'.
A 'CORPSE', FOR EXAMPLE ....
LOOK INTO IT.
HAVE THE BALLOONS CATCH UP TO HIM AND INVESTIGATE.
E... EXCUSE ME, COULD YOU REPEAT THAT ONCE MORE?
BUT IT MAY ONLY BE PART OF THE 'CORPSE', SUCH AS AN 'ARM' OR 'LEG'...

THIS 'CORPSE' IS SUPPOSEDLY 'MUMMIFIED'.
SEE IF GYRO ZEPPELI IS CARRYING IT ON HIM WHILE RACING.
HE MAY BE HIDING IT IN A BAG OR SOMEWHERE ON HIS HORSE.....
... I...
I'M JUST SURPRISED OF YOU SUDDENLY MENTIONING THIS...
..........
THIS 'CORPSE' ....
MR. STEEL, OUTSIDE OF SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETING THIS CROSS-CONTINENTAL COMPETITION ...
DOES THIS RACE HAVE A DIFFERENT 'PURPOSE'?
AND THIS 'CORPSE' ...
WHO'S 'CORPSE' IS IT?

I SAY THIS WITHOUT A DOUBT! WE SHALL MAKE THIS 'STEEL BALL RUN' RACE SUCCESSFUL!
THAT IS THE ONLY PURPOSE!
BUT RIGHT NOW WE NEED AN INVESTIGATION ... AN INVESTIGATION OF GYRO.
YES, SIR.
YOUR CON-VER-SA-TION, MR. STEEL ...
ALLOW ME TO MAKE ONE CORRECTION.

THE MESSAGE THAT OVECOMOVA, THE MAN WE SENT, LEFT AT THE CHECK POINT TELLS US SO ..... OVECOMOVA HAD PINPOINTED IT.
IT'S NOT ONLY A POSSIBILITY THAT GYRO ZEPPELI FOUND IT IN THE 'DEVIL'S PALM', IT'S A FACT.
HE PURSUED GYRO, TRYING TO GET THE 'CORPSE', BUT WAS DEFEATER..
IT IS 100% CERTAIN! GYRO ZEPPELI HAS FOUND THE 'CORPSE'!

ARE YOU SAYING THAT THE REASON GYRO ZEPPELI JOINED THIS RACE!...
LIKE US....
WAS TO FIND THE 'CORPSE'?
AT THIS POINT, WE DON'T KNOW.
HE COULD HAVE FOUND THE 'CORPSE' BY CHANCE.
OR PERHAPS HE HIMSELF HASN'T YET REALIZED THAT HE HAS FOUND THE 'CORPSE'.
SINCE THAT IS THE NATURE OF THE 'CORPSE' AND OF THE
"THE 'CORPSE' CHOOSES THE PERSON."
THE PROBLEM IS, AFTER WE GET RID OF GYRO...
THE 'CORPSE' COULD GET LOST OR BURIED.
THEREFORE, WE NEED TO INVESTIGATE HOW THE 'CORPSE' IS CURRENTLY BEING HID AND CARRIED!

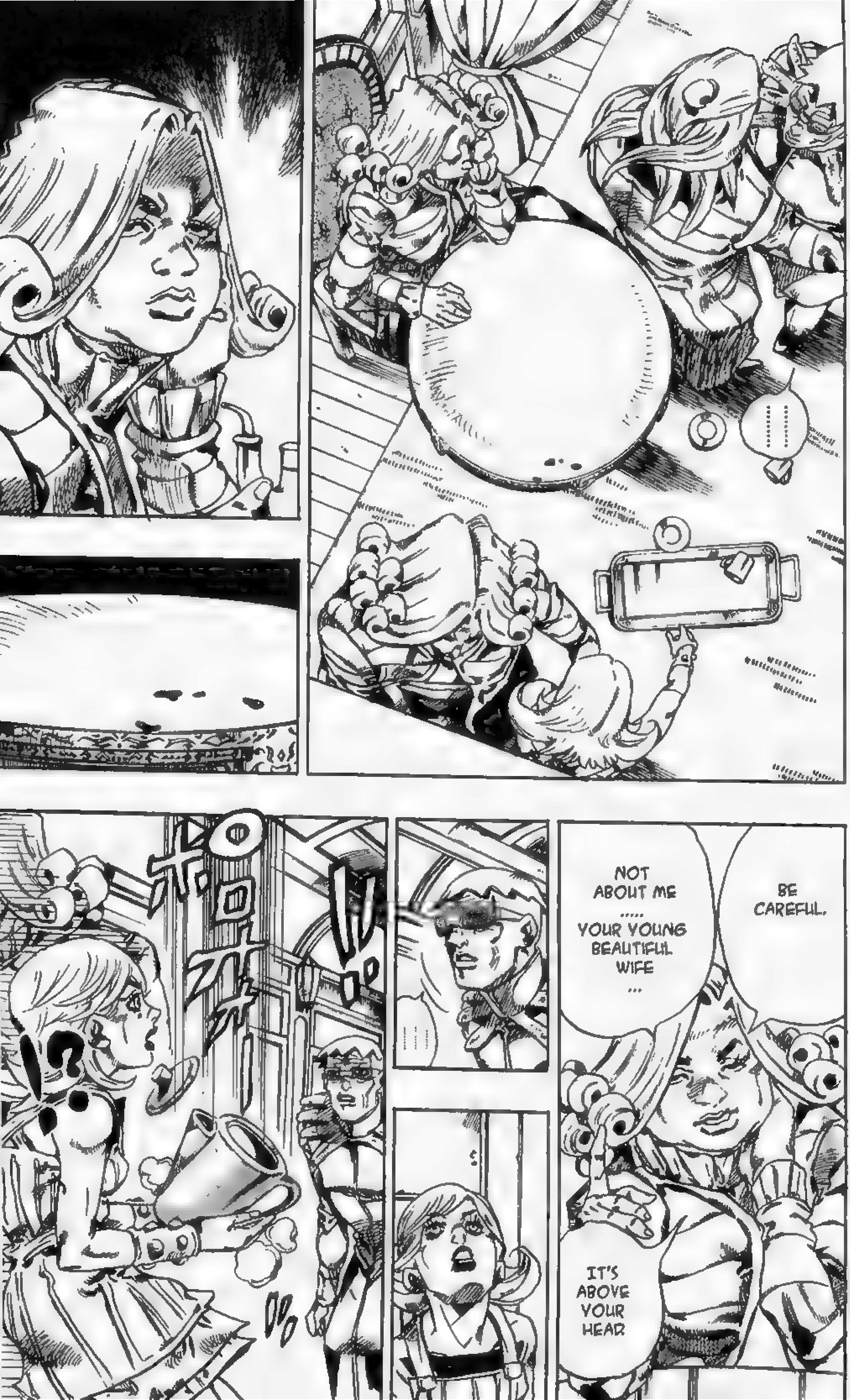
WAIT A SECOND ......
I DON'T REALLY KNOW MUCH ABOUT GYRO ZEPPELI ......
AND I DID PROMISE TO EXTENSIVELY COOPERATE WITH YOU IN THIS RACE, BUT....
GET RID OF?
I WAS NEVER TOLD THAT THERE WOULD BE 'MURDERS' HAPPENING IN THE RACE!
DID YOU SAY YOU WILL GET RID OF GYRO ZEPPELI!!? SO THIS IS NOT JUST ABOUT SEARCHING FOR THE 'CORPSE'!? THIS IS NOT WHAT I'VE BEEN TOLD!
LISTEN, MR. STEEL!
IT IS 'JUSTICE' FOR US TO GET THIS 'CORPSE'!
WE WILL USE ANY MEANS!
THIS IS THE 'CORPSE' THAT MANKIND HAS BEEN WAITING FOR, MORE SO THAN FOR ANY POWER OR TREASURE! IT IS OUR MAIN PRIORITY!
WE WILL MAKE SURE IT WILL BE IN OUR HANDS IN THE END!

TERRARVM
TERRARVM
...
BRING SUCCESS TO THIS STEEL BALL RUN 'RACE' ...
MR. STEEL!
THIS 'RACE' THAT PASSES THROUGH THE ROUTE ON THIS 'MAP'
WHEN A LARGE AMOUNT OF PEOPLE COME TOGETHER AND PASS THROUGH THIS 'ROUTE'! THOSE WHO HAVE THE 'ABILITY' ARE SURE TO FIND THE 'CORPSES' SCATTERED ON THIS CONTINENT! THAT IS FOR CERTAIN!

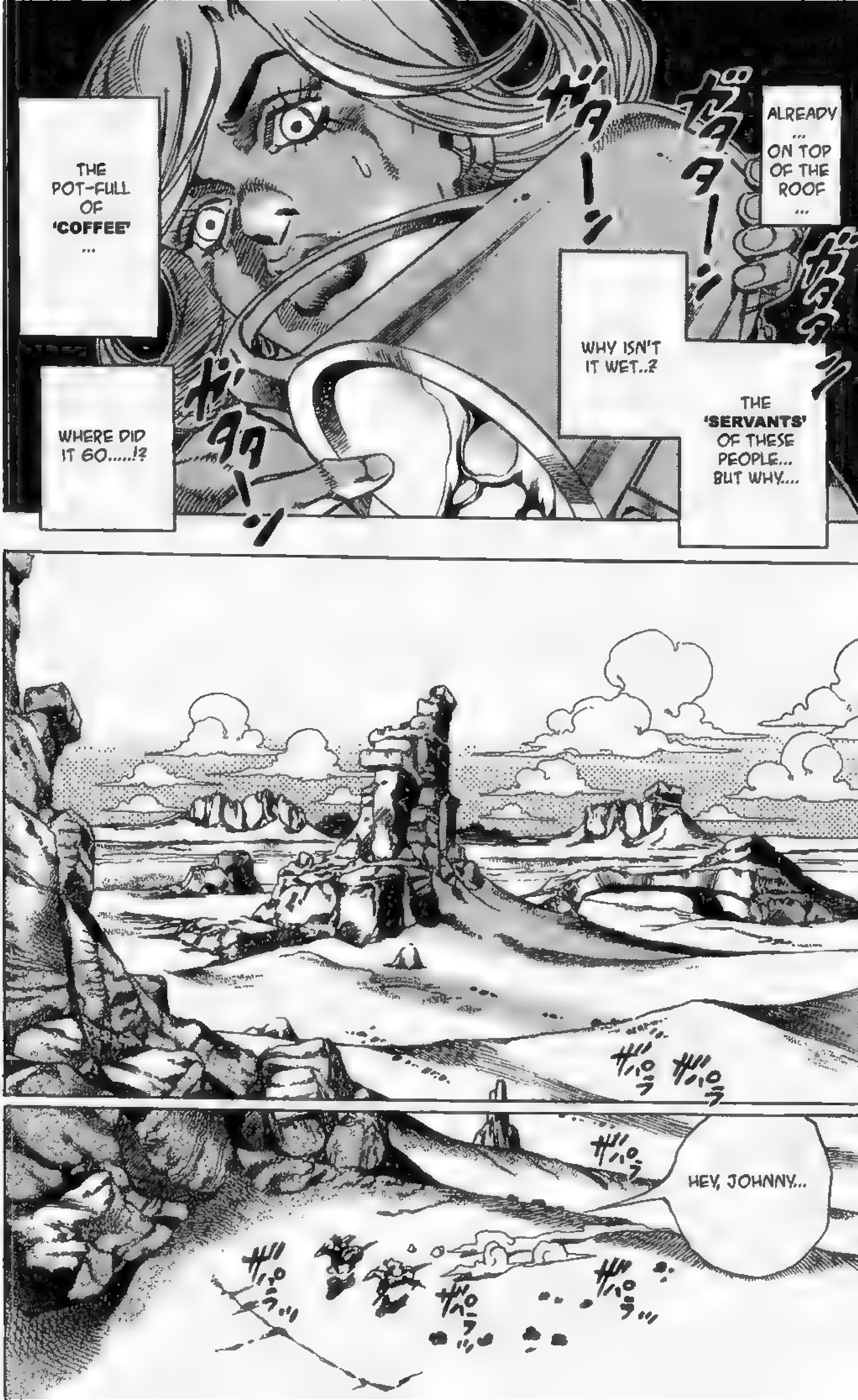
AND 'MURDER', YOU SAY!? WATCH YOUR WORDS!
STEPHEN STEEL! THIS 'RACE' WOULDN'T EVEN EXIST IF IT WEREN'T FOR ME!
I UNDERSTAND ......
MR. PRESIDENT ...
...... OF THE UNITED STATES ....

EXCUSE ME. THE COFFEE IS READY.
DON'T COME IN! YOU HAVEN'T GOTTEN PERMISSION YET!
OOP!

MR. PRESIDENT!
THIS IS MY WIFE ...
SHE IS VERY FOOLISH AND ...
I'M EXTREMELY SORRY!


BE CAREFUL.
NOT ABOUT ME ..... YOUR YOUNG BEAUTIFUL WIFE ...
IT'S ABOVE YOUR HEAD

RUSTLE
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
!?
......
THEY'RE CALLED 'PLANS' ...
THE ACTIONS OF MY 'SERVANTS', MR. STEEL...
... NOT 'MURDER' ... THE 'ORDERS' THAT I GIVE OUT ...
RUSTLE
RUSTLE


ALREADY ... ON TOP OF THE ROOF ...
WHY ISN'T IT WET..?
THE 'SERVANTS' OF THESE PEOPLE... BUT WHY....
THE POT-FULL OF 'COFFEE' ...
WHERE DID IT GO.....!?
HEY, JOHNNY...

HAVE YOU EVER SEEN AN 'OPERA' SHOW?
AN 'OPERA' ...
OPERA?
THOSE 'MUSIC' PLAYS? WHERE THEY START SINGING OUT THEIR SITUATIONS WHEN THEY COULD JUST SAY THEIR LINES?
... NOPE, NEVER SEEN ONE.
WHY DO YOU ASK?
JUST A SIMPLE QUESTION...
THEY CALL THESE 'OPERA GLASSES' BECAUSE YOU USE THEM FOR WATCHING AN OPERA...
BUT THE PEOPLE SINGING ON STAGE HAVE HUGE BODIES THAT WEIGH LIKE 120 OR 150KG OR MORE...
YEA... THAT'S WHY THEY CAN SING LIKE THAT I GUESS...
BUT WHY LOOK AT THEM WITH OPERA GLASSES?
YOU DON'T NEED TO...
'CAUSE THEY'RE ALREADY SO BIG.

THAT'S MONUMENT VALLEY!
WE'LL BE ABLE TO SEE THE GOAL IN A COUPLE OF HOURS.
LOOK, GYRO!
NOW THAT YOU MENTION IT...
AND WATCH THEM AS THEY'RE ABOUT TO FLY OFF ..?
MAYBE YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO ZOOM INTO THE BUTTONS ON THEIR FANCY CLOTHES...
NYOHO HA HOHA HAHA!
SINCE THEY ALL HAVE THE SAME TYPE OF BODY, MAYBE YOU CAN'T TELL THE DIFFERENCE UNLESS YOU ZOOM IN!?
BUT DUDE!
NOT BAD, JOHNNY!
SHOULD WE SPEED UP!?
NO! THIS PACE IS FINE.
WE'LL BE IN 1ST, NO PROBLEM.

パァアァ
……

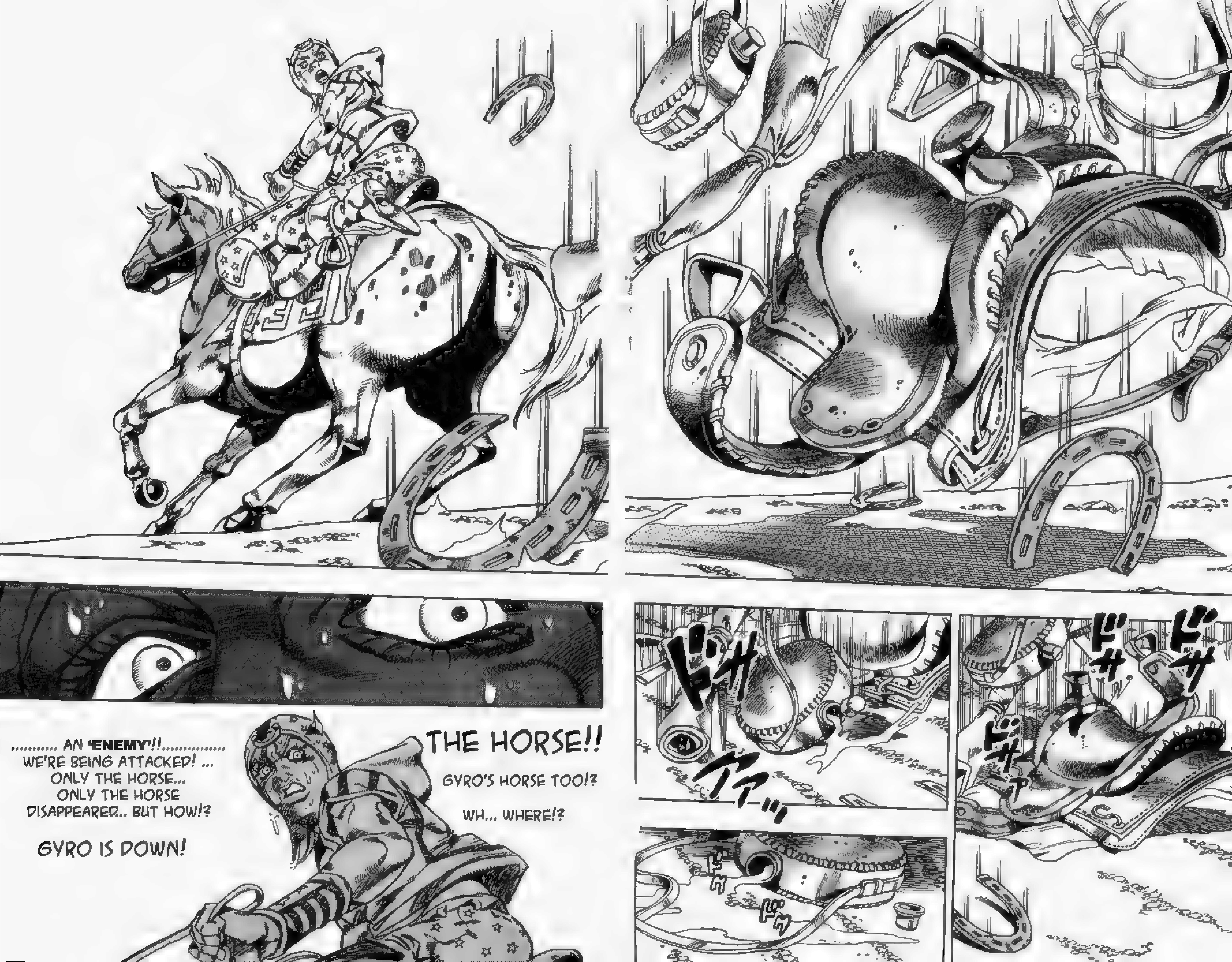
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
…!!
ザパラッ
ザパラッ
ザパラッ

................
GYRO!?
GY.....!!
GYRO!?

WHAT HAPPENED!? GYRO...
WHERE ARE YOU!? GYRO, WHERE ARE YOU!?
COULD HE HAVE FALLEN!?

COULD THERE HAVE BEEN A CRACK IN THE GROUND.....!!
DID HE FALL IN A HOLE!?
... AND HIT HIS HEAD!?

GYRO, ANSWER ME!! WHERE ARE YOU!?
GYROOOOOO!!


THE HORSE!!
GYRO'S HORSE TOO!?
WH... WHERE!?
.......... AN 'ENEMY'!! ..........
WE'RE BEING ATTACKED! ...
ONLY THE HORSE...
ONLY THE HORSE
DISAPPEARED... BUT HOW!?
GYRO IS DOWN!

ANSWER MEEEEEEEE!!
WHERE ARE YOU, GYRO!!?

PAM
PAM
PAM
PAM

WHAT IS THIS!?
EVEN HIS BAGGAGE ......
GONE! THINGS KEEP DISAPPEARING!

THE 'ENEMY' IS ATTACKING FROM THE SKY! FOR SOME REASON, THE 'ENEMY' IS IN THE SKY!
WHAAAAAAAAAAT!

WHAT IS IT...!? THIS POWER!? WHAT COULD BE UP THERE!? AND WHERE!? I CAN'T SEE GOOD ENOUGH!

uryaaaaaaa!!

WHAT COULD THAT POSSIBLY HAVE BEEN!? ... I COULDN'T SEE IT!
...BUT IT'S FROM THE SKY!! AND IT HAS TO BE A 'STAND USER'!!
GYRO! WHERE DID HE GO!? AND THIS RACE! NOW I'M SURE IT'S NOT ONLY ABOUT WINNING OR LOSING!

# STARDUST CRUSADERS

TRANSLATOR: ACK44
PROOFREADER: NURLOCK
EDITOR: KAGAMI

WEBSITE: WWW.GIOGIO.2YA.COM

# # 26 TUSK ②

GYRO WASN'T THEIR ONLY GOAL!
AND NOW ME!
I'VE ALSO BECOME A TARGET!!

THE ENEMY'S INTENTION ISN'T ONLY TO WIN THIS RACE! JUST WHAT DO THEY WANT!?
THE 'BALLOONS'!?
I CAN'T SEE CLEARLY RIGHT NOW, BUT IS THERE A 'BALLOON' IN THE SKY SOMEWHERE!?
'ABOVE THE CLOUDS'!
HOW COULD THEY BE ATTACKING FROM SUCH A PLACE!!?

WHA..?
MY HORSE IS GONE TOO!

WH... WHERE!?
WHAT IS THIS!?
WHERE IS THE ENEMY!?
SHIT! HOW ARE THEY DOING THIS!?
WHERE DID GYRO GO!?
SHIIIT!! WHERE IS IT AND WHAT IS IT!!?

ドドド

HUH!?
UGAH!!
AAAAH!
A FEATHER THAT FELL OFF THOSE BIRDS THAT WERE FLYING BY!? ..... HOW DID IT....
IT.... IT CAME OUT OF THE FEATHER !!
TH.... THIS THING !!?
UH..

Uoryaaa!!
I...
...CAN'T CUT IT!
A WIRE!!?
キリ キリ
THERE'S A METAL-LIKE WIRE AND HOOK COMING FROM THE FEATHER!
OOO!!
UWOOOOOOOOAH!

WOAAAH!!

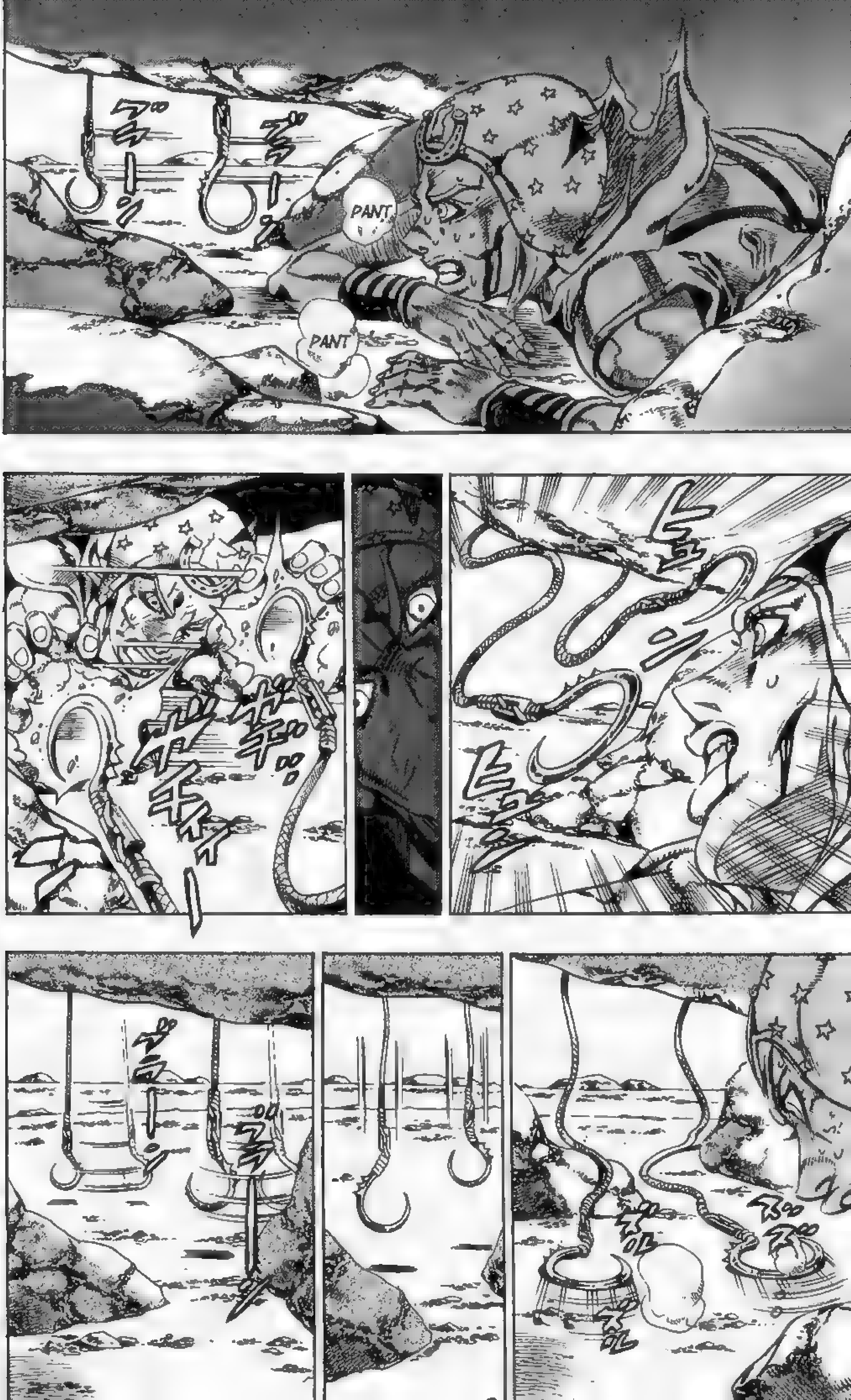
MY STUFF WENT INTO THE FEATHER!
A STAND ABILITY!
THROUGH THAT FEATHER!? DOES IT CONNECT INTO A DIFFERENT DIMENSION!? 'GYRO', AND THE 'HORSES' WERE CAUGHT BY THAT 'HOOK' AND PULLED IN THERE!?
ドドドド

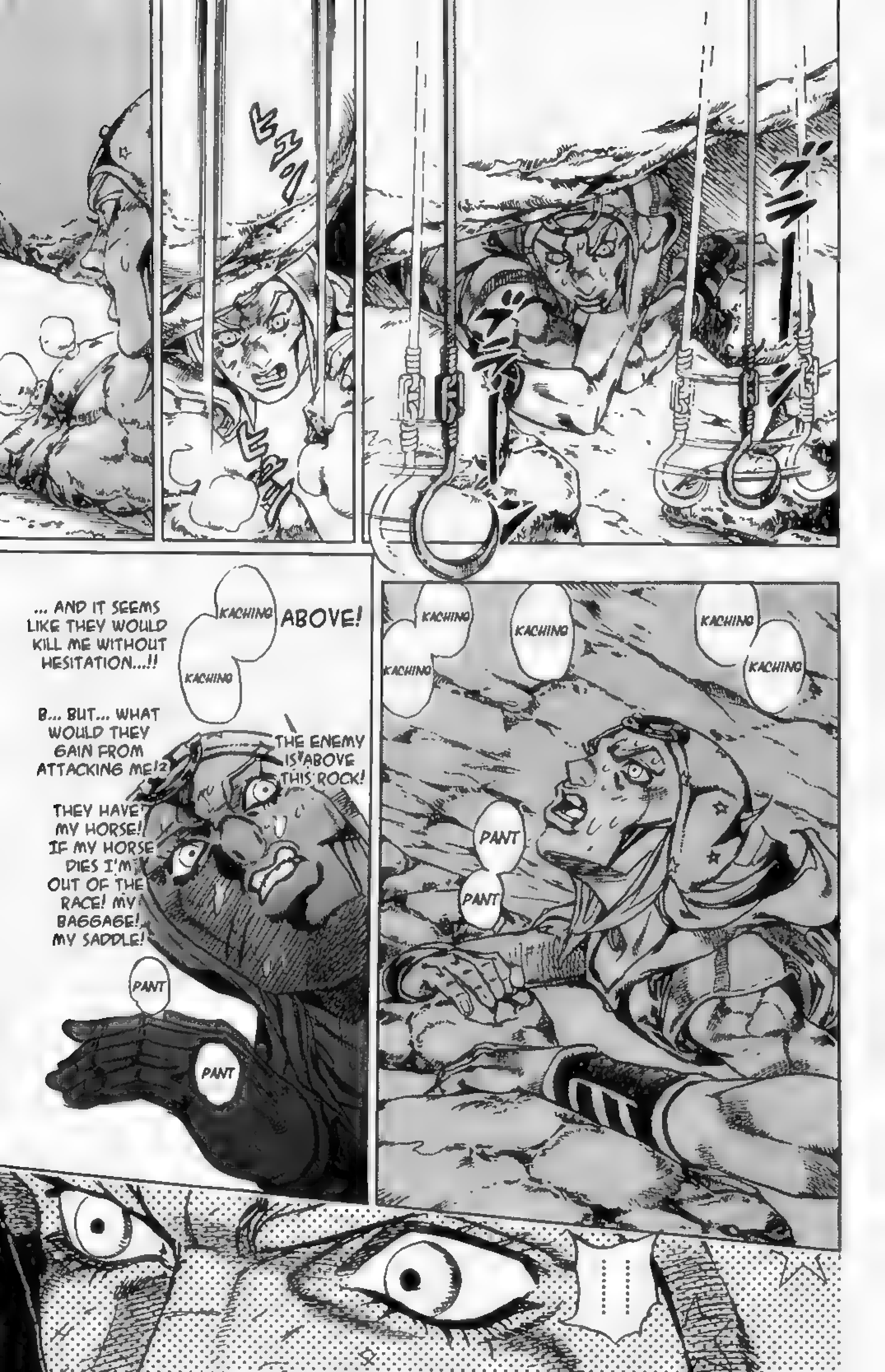
UH ...... ....
THERE WASN'T JUST ONE FEATHER! NOW THERE'S TWO HOOKS! FROM TWO DIFFERENT FEATHERS!

IT'S AFTER ME!
THE ENEMY WILL TRY TO HOOK ME IF IT'S THE LAST THING THEY DO!
A ROCK SHELF!
THERE'S SOME EMPTY SPACE UNDER THAT ROCK! I NEED TO GET THERE!!
I JUST NEED TO HIDE MYSELF UNDER THERE!!

……
モク
モク
ボワァァ
!!
ガリ
ガリ
カリ

AAAH!


PANT
PANT



... AND IT SEEMS LIKE THEY WOULD KILL ME WITHOUT HESITATION...!!
KACHING
KACHING
ABOVE!
B... BUT... WHAT WOULD THEY GAIN FROM ATTACKING ME!?
THE ENEMY IS ABOVE THIS ROCK!
THEY HAVE MY HORSE! IF MY HORSE DIES I'M OUT OF THE RACE! MY BAGGAGE! MY SADDLE!
PANT
PANT
KACHING
KACHING
KACHING
KACHING
KACHING
PANT
PANT

!!!
!!
...THE 'BAGGAGE' ........ EVEN GYRO'S 'BAGGAGE' ...... AND HIS 'HORSE' ....
...COULD IT BE .......
...THAT... THIS 'ENEMY'......!!
IS 'SEARCHING' FOR SOMETHING......? IS THAT THEIR GOAL...!?
ゴゴ
ゴ
!!!
ゴゴゴ
ゴゴ
'SEARCHING'!?
DID THE 'ENEMY' FOLLOW US SEARCHING FOR IT!!?
I SAW IT ONLY FOR A SLIGHT MOMENT!....... AND IT WENT INTO MY 'LEFT HAND'! I THOUGHT I WAS HALLUCINATING...
THAT 'LEFT HAND' THAT LOOKED LIKE IT WAS MUMMIFIED.....!! I 'FOUND' IT BEFORE I EVEN TOOK NOTICE OF IT... OR, MORE LIKE... IT CAME TO ME.... (IS IT STILL IN MY ARM NOW..?)....
IS THAT IT!?
I'M STARTING TO UNDERSTAND THE GOAL OF THE 'ENEMY'. AT FIRST THEY ATTACKED GYRO THINKING THAT IT WAS SOMETHING THAT HE HAD WITH HIM ......
THEN THEY STOLE HIS LUGGAGE AND HORSE, IN THAT ORDER ......!! SINCE THEY COULDN'T FIND IT, THEY'RE ATTACKING ME NOW....

... THEY THOUGHT THAT IT WAS SOMETHING WE WERE HIDING!
EVEN OVECOMOVA! AND STROHEIM! THEY WERE AFTER THIS ALL ALONG!
THIS IS THE TERRORIST'S TRUE GOAL DURING THE RACE! ... I HAD NO CLUE, BUT THEY WERE AFTER THE **'MUMMIFIED ARM'**!!
BUT WHAT IS IT!? THAT MUMMY!! **'WHO'S ARM'** IS IT!?

チャプ
ヒュー

PRRRRRR
PRRR
PRR..
PRRRRR
PRRR
PRR..
KACHAA
AANG!!

GWEEEE
GACHANG!
GWEEEE
GACHANG!

PRRRRRR
RRRMZ...
SHANK...
HEY!
HEY!
CLANK..
CLANK..
CLUNK
CLUNK

......
......?
?
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF
!!
DRIP
DROP
DRIP
DROP
!
パッ
SLURP
SLURP
SLURP
GULP
GULP
GOOD STUUUUUFF!!
ポイッ
GACHANG!
BUT I DON'T SEE IT!
NOT EVEN IN THIS BAG!
GACHANG!

AND SO .....
JYAWNEE JYOSHTER ......
SO, HE'S THE ONE WHO 'HAS' IT... HE'S GOT IT SOMEWHERE...
JYAWNEE..... WHAT'S HIS NAME? JYAWNEE...
HE MUST BE HIDING IT SOMEWHERE ON HIS BODY... GACHANG!
GWEEEE GACHANG!
GWEEEE GACHANG!

WHERE ARE YOU, GYRO?
PANT
PANT
GYRO ......
PANT
WHERE DID YOU GO FROM HERE......
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
GYRO IS PROBABLY ALIVE THERE.....
IF THE ENEMY'S PURPOSE IS TO FIND THE 'MUMMY' THAT THEY STILL HAVEN'T FOUND, IT WOULDN'T MAKE SENSE FOR THEM TO KILL HIM UNTIL THEY AT LEAST SEE THE 'HAND' AND CAN CONFIRM THAT IT EXISTS.
WHERE EXACTLY IS THE ENEMY'S VANTAGE POINT....?
THERE MAY BE SOME DISTANCE, BUT THEY SHOULDN'T BE THAT FAR AWAY.

I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS... HELP ME, GYRO....
PANT
PANT
PANT
I ONLY WANTED TO WIN THIS RACE... I ONLY WANTED TO KNOW THE SECRET OF YOUR 'STEEL BALLS'...
BUT NOW, IF I STEP OUT OF THIS ROCK SHELF ...... I'LL BE KILLED ...
I CAN'T BELIEVE THAT THEY'RE AFTER ME... HELP ME.....
...... WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO DO....?
PANT
PANT

THIS SPOT'S TAKEN...
YOU'LL HAVE TO MAKE RESER-VATIONS .....
FOR ANOTHER TIME.
HUH.
AAA AAAA AAAA AAAA AAAA AAAA AAAA AAAA AAAAA A!

UWOO!!
WHAAAT!!
TH... THE HOOKS AREN'T ONLY FROM THE 'FEATHERS'...
TH... THIS ABILITY... 'BAIT'!!
IT'S A 'LURE'!
E... EVEN LIVING INSECTS ...!!

ガギギギ
AAAH!
UWO..
I.... I NEED TO REMOVE THIS HOOK! QUICK!
IT'S PULLING ME OUT! AS SOON AS I'M DRAGGED OUT FROM THIS ROCK, IT'S ALL OVER!!
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
RUSTLE

YOU HAVE TO BE KIDDING ...
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
WAAA AAAA AAAAA AAAAAAAAA AAAAAAAH!
AAA!!
BGWOH!!
IT..
IT'S ... OVER ...
UGWAA!

I CAN'T STAND IT ANY MORE! I'LL BE PULLED OUT, AND AS SOON AS THEY SEE THAT I HAVE THE 'MUMMIFIED HAND', THEY'LL KILL ME!
TH... THEN FINE ...... I'LL .... DRAG IT OUT ..........
IF YOU WANT IT SO BAD I'LL GLADLY HAND IT OVER....!
IT'S NOT LIKE I GOT THIS BECAUSE I WANTED IT! THIS BIZARRE 'MUMMIFIED HAND'!
I DON'T NEED IT! I'LL GIVE IT TO YOU SO JUST TAKE IT!!

.........
WHISPER
WHISPER
..........
WHAT
...
OUT
OF THE...
MUMMY
HAND.
Movère
crūs
Movère
crūs

ピョオー
CHYUMIIIIIN!
!?
HEY!
WHAT IS THIS THING!?
WHIMPER
crüe
Movêre
Movêre
ヒッ
ヒッ

UH..
UGEH!!

PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
M...

MY...
NAILS......
THEY SHOT OUT..... 'THIS POWER' .....!! FROM THESE LAME FEET!?
THIS THING ....!!
DID IT DO IT......!? WHAT... DOES THIS MEAN? DID IT JUST SAVE ME FROM MY SITUATION!? ....................
MY NAILS WERE JUST SHOT OUT FROM MY LAME FEEEEEEEEET!!

Mevère
erüe
WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU!?
CHVUMI..
CHVUMIII..
IIIII..

CRUS
MOVE OR
IT JUST WROTE SOMETHING!! .......... AND WENT BACK INTO MY 'LEFT HAND'!
JUST NOW! IT HAS A WILL! THIS MUMMIFIED LEFT HAND HAS A CLEAR WILL OF ITS OWN!
!!

PANT
PANT
PANT
MY FEET AREN'T MOVING NOW... ONLY WHEN THEY **'SHOOT OUT'** THE NAILS, THEY MOVE...
DOES THIS MEAN...
... THAT **'ENERGY'** WAS TAKEN FROM MY BODY? ... THROUGH THIS THING'S WILL....!!
AND WHAT IS THIS?
THESE LETTERS ........? THEY'RE NOT ENGLISH...
TOO MANY MYSTERIES ........
THERE ARE TOO MANY MYSTERIES EVERYWHERE .......
THE GOALS OF THE TERRORISTS .....
GYRO'S HOMELAND ...
WHY HAS THIS THING COME TO ME?
AND THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE...
**'STEEL BALL RUN RACE'**

......
THERE MUST BE MORE...
NOT JUST THIS 'LEFT HAND' ...
THERE HAS TO BE OTHER PARTS..
... 'PARTS' OF THE MUMMY'S BODY...
AND IF YOU COMBINE THEM ALL, IT WILL PROBABLY BE A FULL BODY!

THIS CORPSE OF **'SOMEBODY'**, THAT HAS BEEN SCATTERED ACROSS THE LAND!
THEY'RE TRYING TO FIND THEM AND COMBINE THEM TOGETHER!
THAT'S THE GOAL OF THE TERRORISTS!
ON THE SURFACE, IT'S JUST A SPORT! BUT THE STEEL BALL RUN IS ACTUALLY A CONSPIRACY TO COLLECT ALL OF THESE BODY PARTS!!
ド
THESE **'POWER'** POSSESSING CORPSE PARTS... WHAT WOULD HAPPEN IF THEY ALL CAME TOGETHER?
DID GYRO KNOW ABOUT THESE **'CORPSES'**? DID HE JOIN THE RACE WITH THAT KNOWLEDGE?

A 'STEEL BALL' ....
THAT'S GYRO'S SECOND 'STEEL BALL' ...
KKH!
DYAMMIT!
W...
ONE.....
TWO.....

THREE OF 'EEEEEM!
THREE OF MY TEETH ARE BROKENNN!
PRRRRR GACHANG!
BUT NOW I KNOW WHERE HE'S HIDING IT ......
IT'S IN HIS 'LEFT HAND'!!
I CAUGHT A GLIMPSE OF IT FROM ABOVE! HE DIDN'T FIND IT; IT POSSESSED HIM!!
THE 'CORPSE' IS IN JYAWNEE JYOSHTER'S ARM!!
I WONDER IF TEETH TASTE GOOD? BUT I BET YOU CAN'T EAT 'EM...,
SHIT! I DIDN'T KNOW HE HAD THAT KIND OF 'POWER'... THAT...
WHAT'S HIS NAME? JYAWNEE JYOSHTERRR ...
AND SO!
NOW I HAVE TO SWIPE IT FROM HIM! AFTER I KILL HIM, THOUGH!
I'VE FINISHED 'LOOKING' FOR IT....

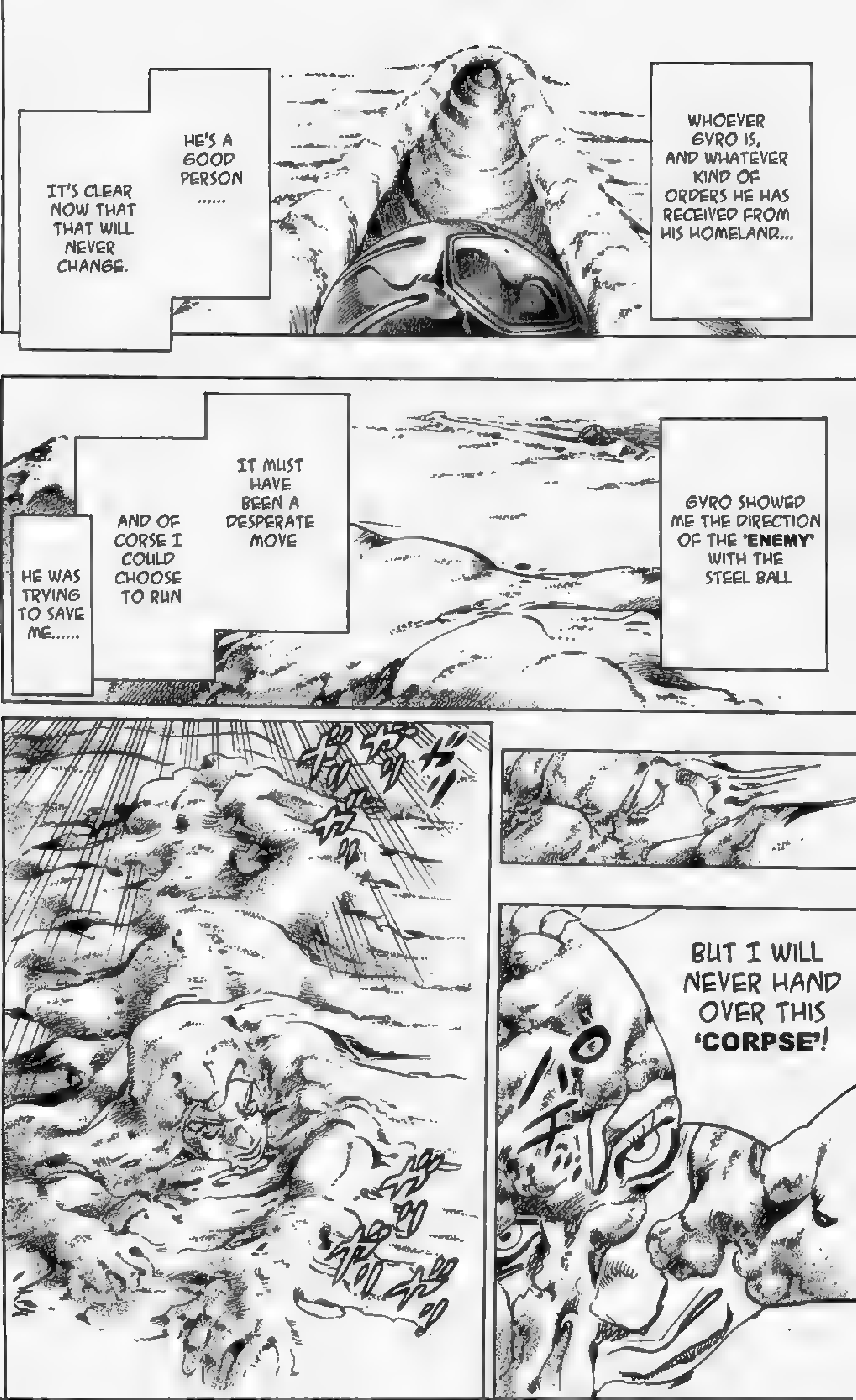
HEY, HUH?
THAT CREEP..... WHERE IS HE? THAT'S.... WEIRD....
HE'S NOT AT THE ROCK!
HE'S GOOOONE!!

HEY...!?
WHAT IS THIS? ....... WHERE IS HE!
HE DISAPPEARED ... WHERE DID HE GO!?
THAT'S CRAZY! EVEN IF HE RAN, HE WOULDN'T GET FAR FROM THE .....
.........

MISTER
....
......
YOU AWAKE?
GHA!! GH...

......
YOU THREW YOUR 'STEEL BALL' INTO MY PLATE DURING ALL THE EXCITEMENT, HUH....
YOU USED YOUR LEGS?
GWEEEE GACHANG!
THESE GUYS ARE TOO FUN!!
BUT HEY, THIS IS FUN!!

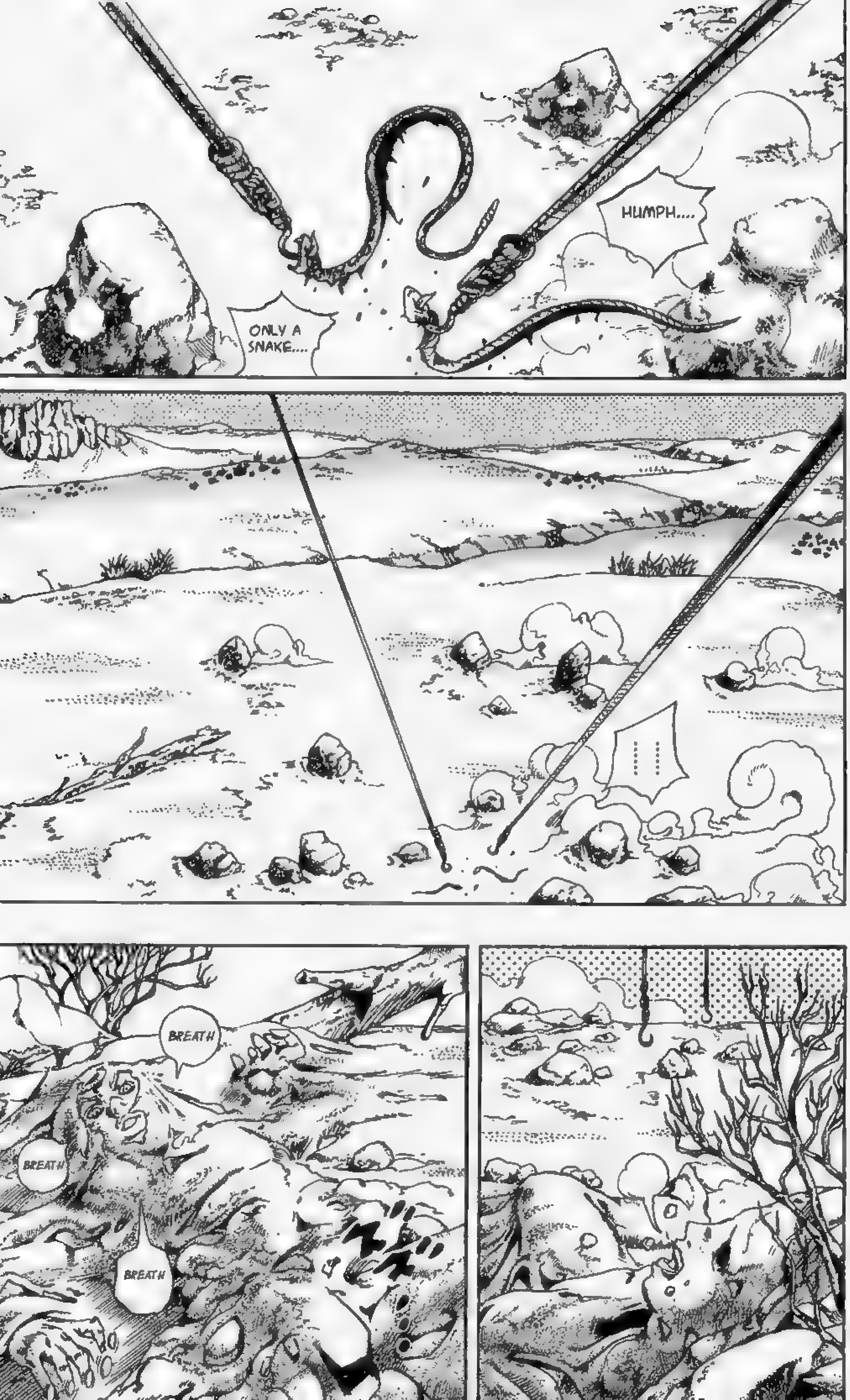
'THAT YOU TOLD JOYSHTER TO RUN IN THE OPPOSITE DIRECTION!'
OR ELSE...!
THE SPIN OF THE STEEL BALL.... THERE'S 2 WAYS TO THINK OF IT.....
YOU TOLD HIM TO 'HEAD TOWARDS' THIS DIRECTION!
VEEERY INTERES-TING.
PANT PANT
PANT PANT
JUST ONE THING ...
... IS CLEAR ......
PANT
PANT
ONE THING .......
PANT
PANT
I'LL LET YOU LIVE, GYRO ZEPPELI....
BUT ONLY UNTIL I FIND WHERE JYAWNEE JYOSHTER IS...


WHOEVER GYRO IS, AND WHATEVER KIND OF ORDERS HE HAS RECEIVED FROM HIS HOMELAND...
HE'S A GOOD PERSON ......
IT'S CLEAR NOW THAT THAT WILL NEVER CHANGE.
GYRO SHOWED ME THE DIRECTION OF THE 'ENEMY' WITH THE STEEL BALL
IT MUST HAVE BEEN A DESPERATE MOVE
AND OF CORSE I COULD CHOOSE TO RUN
HE WAS TRYING TO SAVE ME......
BUT I WILL NEVER HAND OVER THIS 'CORPSE'!

THIS HAS BECOME MY HOPE!
NOW I KNOW YOUR LOCATION! GYRO!
I'M HEADING TOWARDS THAT ROCK MOUNTAIN!!
AND GYRO HAS GIVEN ME THE COURAGE TO PUSH FORWARD IN THIS CRISIS.
WE'RE TOGETHER IN THIS RACE! AND WE'LL COLLECT THE REST OF THE CORPSE PARTS!

# 27 TUSK ③

#27 TUSK ③
NAME – 'GYRO ZEPPELI'
ABILITY NAME – STEEL BALL NO. 1, STEEL BALL NO. 2
◎BY SPINNING THE STEEL BALLS, GYRO CAN CARVE INTO ROCKS AS WELL AS HARDEN OR NUMB THE SKIN AND MUSCLES OF LIVING THINGS. GYRO CLAIMS IT TO BE A 'TECHNIQUE', BUT IS IT NOT TRUE THAT HIS POWER HAS GOTTEN STRONGER SINCE PASSING THROUGH THE STRANGE LAND OF THE 'DEVIL'S PALM'? THE STEEL BALLS HAVE A THROWING RANGE OF 20 TO 30 METERS.
NAME – 'PORK PIE HAT KID'
STAND NAME – WIRED
◎ PORK PIE HAT'S STAND LOOKS LIKE A WINCH, WHICH CAN WIND UP ITS WIRES WITH TREMENDOUS POWER. HE SEEMS TO BE ABLE TO LIFT ABOUT ONE HORSE.
◎ THROUGH A PLATE WITH WATER, PORK PIE HAT CAN LOWER HIS HOOKS THROUGH A DIFFERENT DIMENSION TO CATCH HIS PREY. IF HE USES A 'BAIT', SUCH AS A FEATHER OR AN INSECT, HE CAN HOOK HIS PREY FROM THE 'BAIT' ITSELF. THERE ARE 2 WIRES.
NAME – 'JOHNNY JOESTAR'
STAND NAME – TUSK
◯ JOHNNY CAN SPIN THE NAILS ON HIS HANDS AND FEET, AND CAN CUT WITH THEM AS WELL AS SHOOT THEM LIKE BULLETS. IT SEEMS THAT THE NAILS GROW BACK, NO MATTER HOW MANY ARE SHOT. THE RANGE OF THE NAILS IS ABOUT 10 METERS. HE CAN ALSO MOVE AROUND USING THE FRICTION CAUSED BY THE SPIN.
◯ WHEN JOHNNY PASSED THROUGH THE 'DEVIL'S PALM', THE MUMMIFIED LEFT HAND CAME INTO JOHNNY'S HAND. THIS WAS THE CAUSE OF HIS STAND ABILITY. THE GUARDIAN OF THE LEFT ARM APPEARS IN THE FORM OF THAT SHOWN ON THE LEFT. THAT'S WHAT IT LOOKED LIKE TO JOHNNY.



ONLY A SNAKE....
HUMPH....
BREATH
BREATH
BREATH

PRRRRR
PRRRYYY
WH... WHERE IS HE, DYAMN!!
GACHANG... GEEEE GOGIGUGAAA SLURP SLURP
GWEEE EEEE

THAT CREEP! WHERE'D HE GOOOO! I'LL KILL HIM!
JYOSHTERRR! I'LL TEAR YOU APART LIKE A SPITCHCOCK AND KILL YOU FOR SURE!!

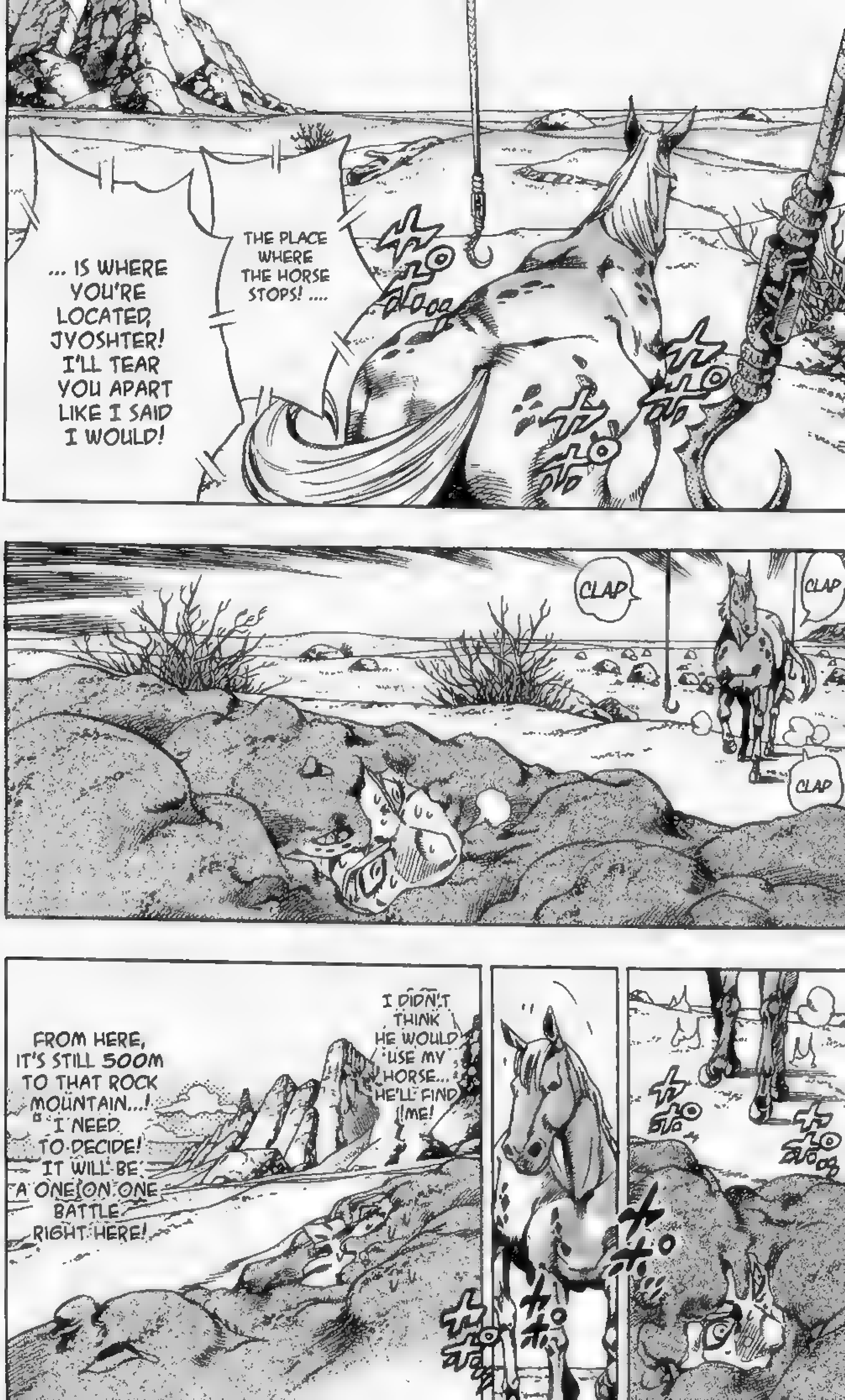
... BUT SAY... THIS IS FUCKING FUN... YET SO TERRIBLE AT THE SAME TIME.
I'VE GOT NO CLUE!
DID I....! DID I LOSE HIM..? IS HE UNDERGROUND? ... HE'S HIDING SOMEWHERE, THAT'S FOR SURE....
GWEEEE EEWEEE
I HAVE NO IDEA HOW HE'S DOING IT!! THAT SCHMUCK!
I'VE GOT A FEELING THAT HE'S COMING TOWARDS THIS PLACE...
BUT THEN AGAIN, HE COULD BE ESCAPING THAT WAY THROUGH THE DESERT .......
MAN...! I'M ALMOST THERE ............... JUST ONE MORE STEP TO FINISH HIM AND GET THE 'CORPSE'..

ONLY ABOUT 500M TO THAT MOUNTAIN...
IT SEEMS LIKE THE 'ENEMY' CAN ONLY SEE AND ATTACK FROM ABOVE...
IF I GOT UP TO THE ROCK'S SHADES..... I SHOULD BE ABLE TO CLIMB WITHOUT BEING SPOTTED!
BSHOOM
PLUS, THE HOOKS ARE MOVING FARTHER AWAY!
THE 'ENEMY' HAS COMPLETELY LOST TRACK OF ME!

BRR!
BRRRRR ...
BRR!
NEEEEIGH!
BRRR!
BRRRRRR RURRRR!

HUH!? WHAT!?
THAT'S MY HORSE!! !? !? !?
BRRR!
BHAAA...
CLAP
CLAP
CLAP
ALRIIIIIGHT, IT STARTED MOVING!!
I'LL GIVE IT BACK TO YOU, JYOSH-TERRR!
YOU CAN HAVE YOUR BELOVED HORSE THAT YOU'VE TRAVELED WITH THROUGH THIS HARSH RACE!
GWEEEEE GACHANG!
HORSES ARE OBEDIENT AND SENSITIVE! THEY'LL RETURN TO THEIR MASTERS BY SMELLING AND LISTENING FOR THEIR BREATHS!

IS.... IS SHE!?
WHAT'S SHE DOING!?
BRR
CLAP
CLAP
CLAP
PANT
PANT
WHA...
HMM, THAT DIRECTION, I SEE. SO HE WAS HEADING THIS WAY.
WHAAAAAAAT!
CLAP
CLAP
CLAP
CLAP
CLAP
BRR
CLAP
CLAP


THE PLACE WHERE THE HORSE STOPS! ....
... IS WHERE YOU'RE LOCATED, JYOSHTER! I'LL TEAR YOU APART LIKE I SAID I WOULD!
CLAP
CLAP
CLAP
I DIDN'T THINK HE WOULD USE MY HORSE... HE'LL FIND ME!
FROM HERE, IT'S STILL 500M TO THAT ROCK MOUNTAIN...! I NEED TO DECIDE! IT WILL BE A ONE ON ONE BATTLE RIGHT HERE!

MY 'NAIL SHOTS'!
AGAINST HIS 'HOOKS'!
IT'S...... WET!! ......!!
DRIP
DRIP
DRIP
......HE SPILLED SOME-THING!
!!
THIS... THIS SMELL!

NEEE EEIGH!
WHAAAAAAAT!!
AH! HE MOVES! RIGHT THERE! I KNEW HE WAS IN THE GROUND! BUT I'LL TRY TO AVOID A CLOSE 'ONE ON ONE' BATTLE!
JUST JUMP OUT AND SHOW YOUR FACE!
I'LL WAIT UNTIL YOU'VE BEEN BURNT A BIT BEFORE I TEAR YOU WITH MY HOOKS!! THE 'CORPSE' IS IN YOUR LEFT HAND, SO THERE SHOULDN'T BE A PROBLEM!
AS LONG AS THE FIRE DOESN'T BURN YOU ON THE INSIDE!
MY ... MY 'NAILS' WON'T REACH OUTSIDE THE FIRE!!
I CAN'T SHOOT MY 'NAIL SHOTS' FROM HERE!!

AAAH!!
UWOAA!
UWOAA!
AGH!
AAAH!
HAHAAAA! HE CAME OUT!
HE STOOD UP!!
I SEE HIS SUFFERING BODY!!
THIS IS THE END!!
JYOSHTERRR!

HUH!? WOOD?
FOOM

THIS ABILITY HAS FAR SURPASSED A SIMPLE 'NAIL'....
IT'S A 'TUSK'.
I CARVED A DEAD TREE INTO THE SHAPE OF A PERSON.....
AND NOW THE WIRES ARE RIGHT IN FRONT OF ME.....
FROM NOW ON I WILL CALL THIS 'TUSK'.
AAAH.........
UH...............

OOH!
OBAH!

AGYAAAA!
YES.....
I....
I DID IT....

PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
GYRO......
PANT PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
GY.........

THIS ENTIRE 'STEEL BALL RUN RACE' IS BASICALLY A TERRORIST ITSELF! EVEN THE RACERS.... AND STEPHEN STEEL... THE SPONSORS... I CAN'T TRUST ANYBODY.......
IS HE ALL RIGHT....? TELL ME YOU'RE ALL RIGHT, GYRO. .....
EXCEPT FOR GYRO..... I CAN ONLY TRUST IN HIM. I WANT TO HEAR HIS OPINION ON THE 'CORPSE'!
ARE YOU BREATHING, GYRO!?
COME ON! WHERE'S THE 'STRING' TO FIX YOUR WOUND?
THAT 'STRING'!?

......
!?
BUH

UWAAAAAAAAAAAAA!!
DRAG DRAG
DRAG DRAG
DRAG
WHAAAAAAAAAT!
DRAG
DRAG
DRAG
C....
CAUGHT YOU!
THAT'S MY 'BAIT'!
JYOSHTERR! YOU LOSE! YOU FELL FOR IT! I MADE GYRO HIMSELF THE BAIT!
PRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRR

THAT'S WHY I LET GYRO LIVE, YOU TWEEEEERP!
GASHANG!!
......
UG...

GHA!!
GH!
GHA!
HUH!?
J... JOHNNY!?

NO.... THIS CAN'T BE....!!
NOOOO OOOO!! GYRO!!
VICTORY IS MINE, EH JYOSHTER!
I'LL DRAG YOU INTO GYRO!
IF I PULL THE WIRES! YOU'LL RIP THROUGH GYRO AND COME TO ME!
GIVE THE 'CORPSE' IN YOUR LEFT HAND TO ME!
NOW! OR DO YOU WANT TO SEE WHAT THIS PLACE WOULD LOOK LIKE IF GYRO'S INSIDES WERE SPLATTERED ALL OVER THE ROCKS!?
UWOOA!!
I'LL LET YOU LIVE! BUT ONLY IF YOU HAND OVER THE 'CORPSE'! THAT'S MY ONLY GOAL!
TAKE IT OUT FROM YOUR ARM AND HAND IT OVER!

W..
WOA!
WAA!

FLOAT
FLOAT
AAAH! GYRO!
UGH!!
UGH!!
YOU'RE A FUN DUO! YOU WANT TO KILL GYRO AND COME FIGHT ME!? FUCK-TARD!
GWEEE GACHANG!
GWEEE GACHANG!
COME ON! SHOOT SOME MORE!

OOOH!
AAAH, GYROOO!
YOU CAN'T DO ANYTHING ANYMORE! JUST HAND THE 'CORPSE' OVER FOR FUCK'S SAKE!
'CORPSE' ......
JOHNNY....
WHAT'S HE TALKING ABOUT?
I.... I DON'T WANT TO.....
I DON'T WANT TO HAND IT OVER... WHAT'S IN MY HAND....
MY LEGS MOVED... GYRO...

DIDN'T YOU SEE? ... MY LEGS MOVED
I'M THANKFUL.
I'M THANKFUL THAT I JOINED THIS RACE. I THOUGHT I COULD RISK MY LIFE FOR HAVING THIS **'LEFT HAND'**...
I WAS REALLY THANKFUL THAT A USELESS PERSON LIKE ME COULD HAVE A PURPOSE FOR LIVING.
I DON'T WANT TO HAND IT OVER..
... YOU BROUGHT THAT....
.... ALL THE WAY HERE ....

THEN IT'S MY JOB TO BLAST THIS GUY AWAY!

WOOSH
WOOSH
WOOSH
TUM
YOU'RE THE 'BAIT'!!
GYRO ZEPPELI!
THE HOOKS COME OUT FROM WHERE YOU TOUCH! THAT'S THE JOB OF THE 'BAIT'!
YOU CAN'T DO ANYTHING ELSE.
AND THIS IS THE LAST TIME I'LL SAY THIS!
RIP THROUGH GYRO...
AND COME OVER HERE! JYAWNEE!
UWOO!

UWOOAAAA!!
WAAAAAAAA!!

AND IT'S YOU WHO RIPPED THROUGH HIM!
IT'S OVERRRRRR!
move

UUUH...
UH..
UHH....
KK....
UH...
HO!
HOHO!
.......... HE TOOK IT OUT..

S... STOP IT...
TAKE THIS...
BUT... TAKE OUT BOTH HOOKS FROM GYRO... OR ELSE...
I'LL DESTROY THIS 'LEFT HAND CORPSE' MYSELG

YES!
MY NAILS.....
I CAN'T SPIN THEM ANY MORE...
IT STOPPED...
MY 'ABILITY' IS GONE .....
I DON'T KNOW WHY EVERYBODY WANTS THIS....... BUT I'M INVINCIBLE!
I PROVED THAT I'M INVINCIBLE AND SMART!
NOW EVERYBODY WILL APPROVE OF ME! I'LL BE APPROVED AND I CAN CLIMB UP TO A HIGHER RANK!
WOW!
SO THIS IS THE 'CORPSE'?

THE NAILS WON'T SPIN, YOU SAY?
JOHNNY ...
THEY ARE STILL SPINNING.
THEY'RE IN THE MIDST OF SPINNING RIGHT NOW.
AND NOW I'LL HAVE THEM DIE! GYRO IS STILL THE 'BAIT'!!
I DID IIIIIIT!

SHOOM
SHOOM
SHOOM
SHOOM
SHOOM
THOSE...
I JUST MADE THEM SPIN....
SHOOM
SHOOM
SHOOM
GYRO...
I SHOULD HAVE KILLED HIM.
BUT THEN... I COULDN'T HAVE USED HIM AS A HOSTAGE AND 'BAIT'...
NAILS OF THE 'CORPSE'.
DYAMN! EITHER WAY...
AAAAAAAAAA!!
HUB..

PANT
PANT
PANT
THERE...
ポイッ!
PANT
PANT
AGH...
ボドッ

I'M NOT INTERESTED
........................
WELL... MAYBE A LITTLE
............
ACTUALLY, NO.
YOU'RE GONNA GIVE IT BACK!? ... TO ME...!?
YOU DON'T WANT IT? S... SO, THE REASON YOU JOINED THIS RACE WASN'T TO FIND THESE **'CORPSE PARTS'**!?
YOU ....
........ BUT I'M STARTING TO GET IT.
THE TERRORISTS THINK THAT I'M HIDING THAT WITH ME SOMEWHERE!
ALL I WANT IS TO FINISH IN 1ST PLACE TO RECEIVE AN **'AMNESTY'** FROM MY KING.

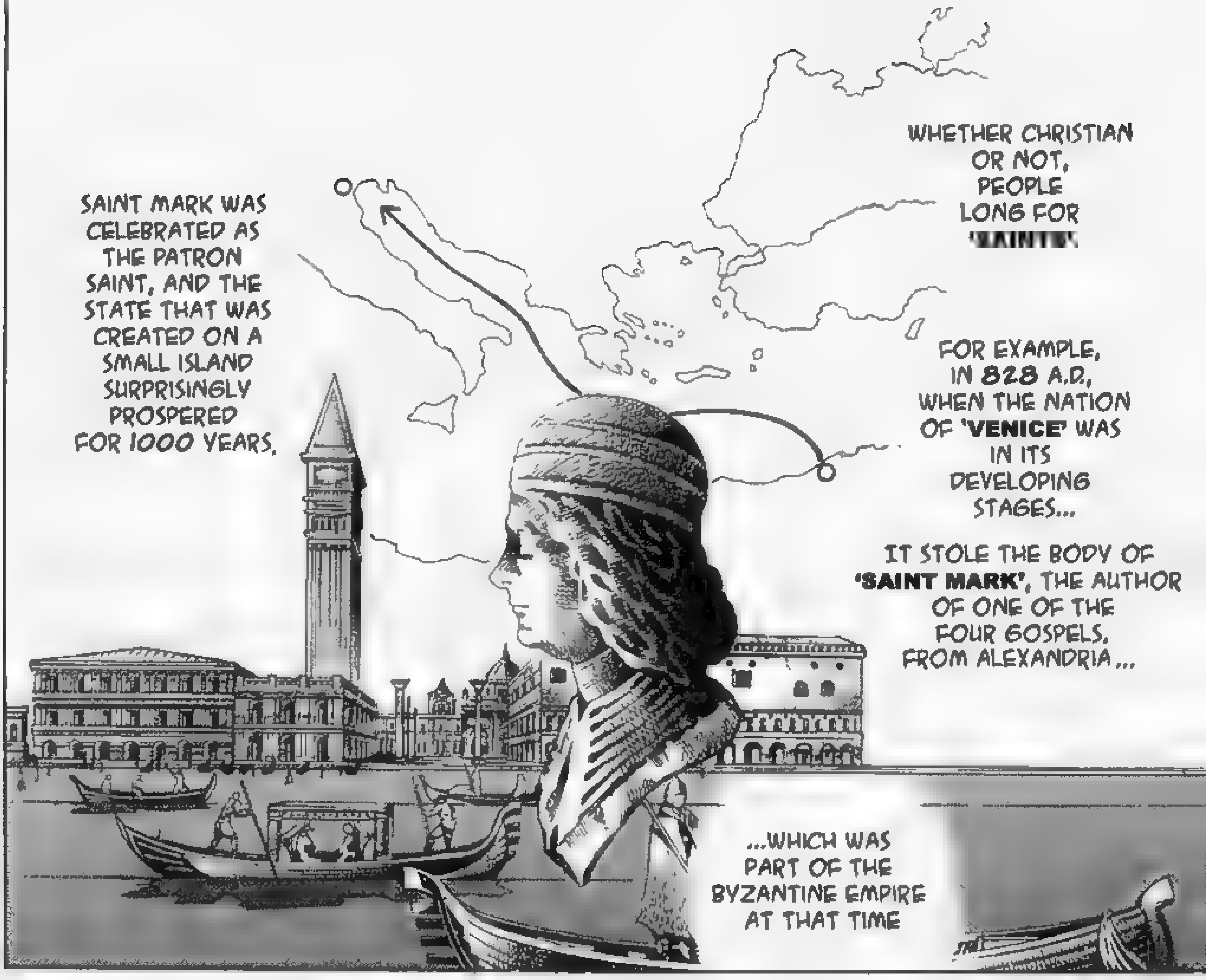
THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE IS A CONSPIRACY TO FIND THE SCATTERED 'CORPSE PARTS'.
THE TERRORISTS, THIS COUNTRY, THE PRODUCER.. THEY'RE ALL CONNECTED OTHERWISE THIS WOULDN'T BE POSSIBLE!
SO YOU'RE SAYING THAT THERE ARE BODY PARTS SCATTERED NEAR THE ROUTE OF THIS RACE, AND THAT THEY BECOME A 'UNIFIED CORPSE' IF THEY ARE ALL GATHERED TOGETHER...
..........
THEY MUST HAVE DESIGNED THE COURSE HAVING A GENERAL IDEA OF WHERE THE CORPSE PARTS ARE 'LOCATED' ...
... AND THE TERRORISTS COLLECT ALL THE PARTS IN THE END... THAT'S THE PURPOSE OF THIS RACE.
... BUT 'THOSE WITH ABILITY' CAN FIND THE EXACT LOCATION....
モニュメント・バレー
アリゾナ砂漠
I SHOULDN'T HAVE HIDDEN IT FROM YOU WHEN I FOUND THIS 'CORPSE PART'... I WANT TO HEAR YOUR OPINION.
WHAT IS THIS 'CORPSE' .............!? AND WHO'S CORPSE IS IT!?

WAIT...
DON'T TELL ME THAT YOU'VE ...
... ALREADY DECIDED TO FIND THE REST TOO.
YES.
......
I'VE ALREADY MADE UP MY MIND..
I DON'T KNOW WHO'S 'CORPSE' THIS IS...
BUT IF I LOSE THIS, I'M BACK TO THE LOSER THAT I WAS.....
IN MANY WAYS.......... THERE'S NO WAY I'M GOING BACK TO BEING A 'QUITTER'
I'M GOING TO GO ALL THE WAY!!
I SEE. WELL, LET'S MAKE THIS CLEAR... DON'T COUNT ON ME.
I'M NOT GOING CORPSE HUNTING....

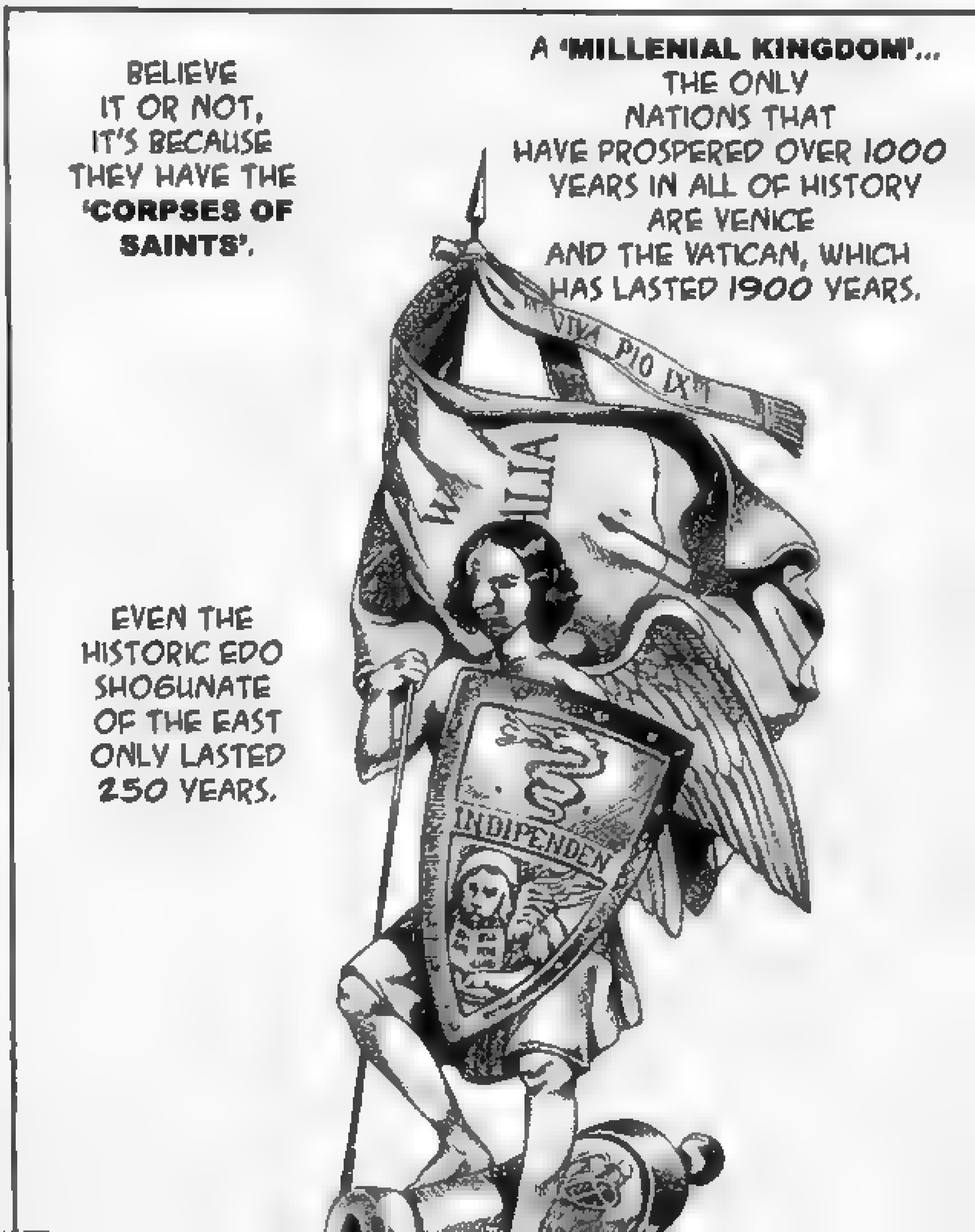
IF THESE TERRORISTS ARE SEARCHING FOR A MUMMIFIED CORPSE...
BUT I'LL TELL YOU WHAT I THINK......
THERE MUST BE A RECORD ON THAT 'CORPSE'.
YOU'LL FIND IT IF YOU INVESTI-GATE.
BUT IT'S PROBABLY A CORPSE OF SOME 'SAINT'.

GYROOOO!! SO YOU DO KNOW SOMETHING ABOUT THIS!
WAIT! CALM DOWN, YOU.....!
I'M JUST SAYING MY PERSONAL OPINION... YOU MUST BE THE TYPE THAT LISTENS TO HALF OF WHAT PEOPLE HAVE TO SAY, AND THEN JUDGE THEM!
THIS IS MY ASSUMPTION...
BUT IT'S TRUE THAT THERE IS A 'RECORD'... THERE'S A RECORD IN MY COUNTRY.
I DON'T KNOW WHY THIS IS WRITTEN ON YOUR ARM, BUT IT'S LATIN.
Movēre crūs
movēre crūs
IT MEANS... 'MOVE YOUR LEGS'.
YOU CAN READ IT?
LATIN...
AN OLD LANGUAGE...
DO YOU KNOW...
... WHAT KIND OF PEOPLE THE WORD 'SAINT' IS USED FOR?
........
... WELL...
LIKE MARY AND.. PETER AND..

THAT'S NOT A COMPLETE ANSWER.
THE WORD 'SAINT' IS USED FOR THOSE WHO CAUSE 'MIRACLES' AFTER THEY DIE!
LET ME REPEAT THAT... IT'S AFTER THEY DIE! NOT ONLY WHILE THEY LIVED..
THE PAPACY HAS A 'STIPULATION' THAT THERE HAS TO BE AT LEAST 2 MIRACLES HAPPEN AFTER THE PERSON'S DEATH FOR THEM TO BE LABELED A 'SAINT'!
THAT'S WHY IT TAKES SOME OF THEM HUNDREDS OF YEARS TO BE DECLARED A SAINT. IT POINTS ONLY AT THOSE GREATEST PEOPLE.
AND IF THESE TERRORISTS CREATE A RACE JUST TO SEARCH FOR THE CORPSE, IT MUST BE A VERY IMPORTANT SAINT.
... AND THE BODIES OF SAINTS DO NOT ROT FOR HUNDREDS OF YEARS.


SAINT MARK WAS CELEBRATED AS THE PATRON SAINT, AND THE STATE THAT WAS CREATED ON A SMALL ISLAND SURPRISINGLY PROSPERED FOR 1000 YEARS.
WHETHER CHRISTIAN OR NOT, PEOPLE LONG FOR
FOR EXAMPLE, IN 828 A.D, WHEN THE NATION OF 'VENICE' WAS IN ITS DEVELOPING STAGES...
IT STOLE THE BODY OF 'SAINT MARK', THE AUTHOR OF ONE OF THE FOUR GOSPELS, FROM ALEXANDRIA...
...WHICH WAS PART OF THE BYZANTINE EMPIRE AT THAT TIME

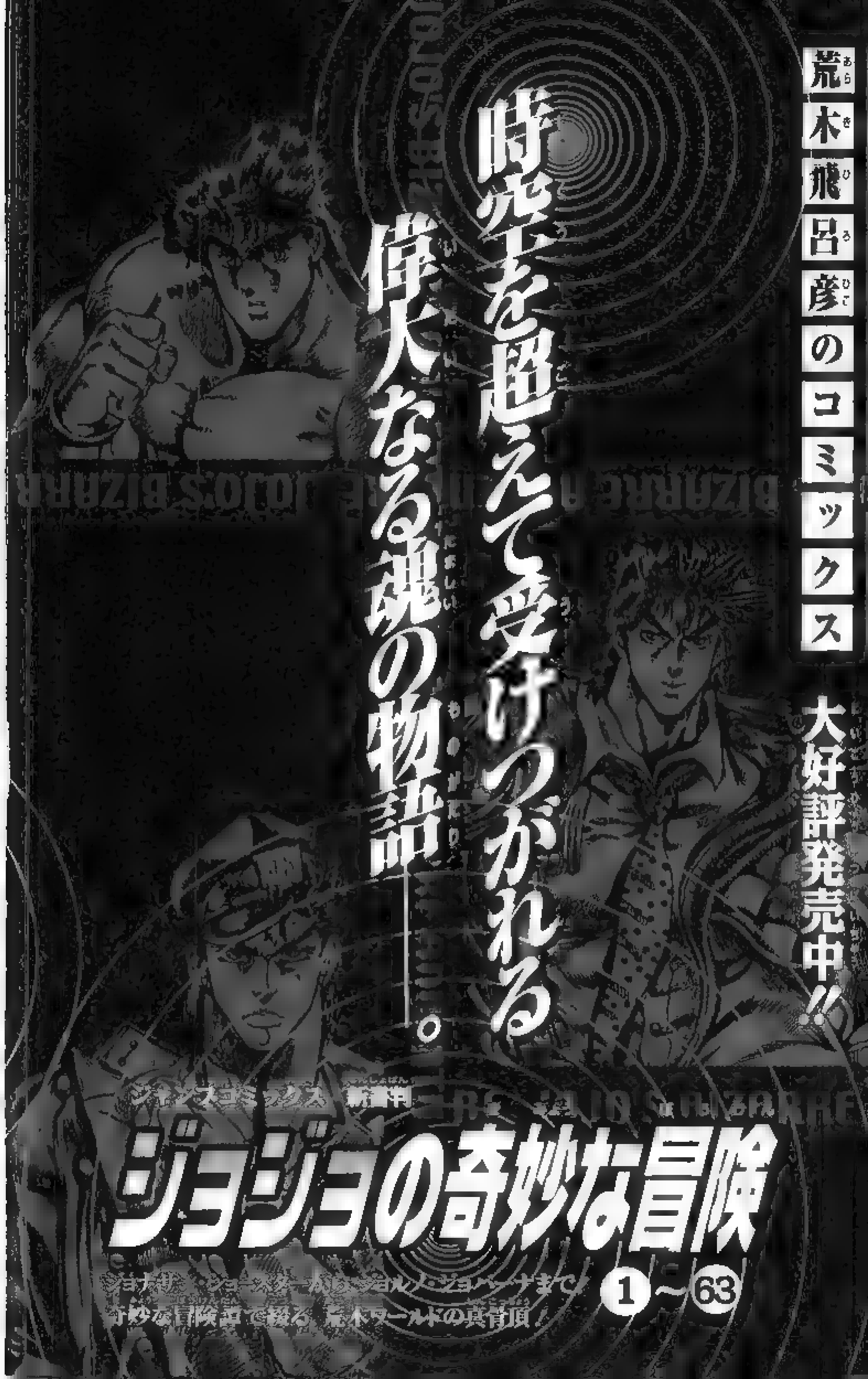
IT IS NOT ALWAYS PLAIN TO SEE, BUT PEOPLE WOULD GLADLY GIVE THEIR LIVES FOR 'SAINTS'...
ANY COUNTRY WOULD MOVE...
THE GREATEST OF SAINTS PROMISE THE GLORY AND POWER OF 1000 YEARS.

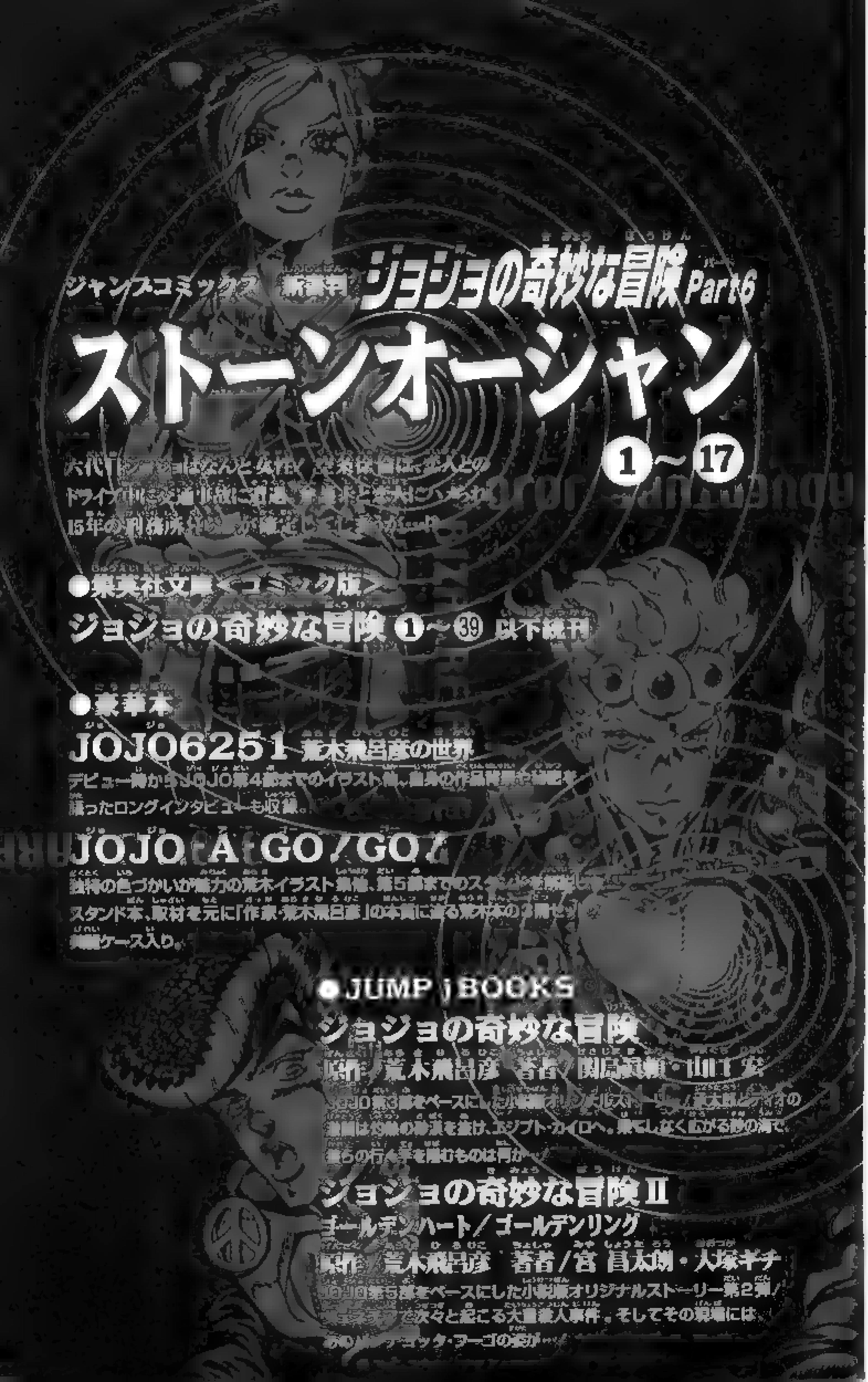

A 'MILLENIAL KINGDOM'... THE ONLY NATIONS THAT HAVE PROSPERED OVER 1000 YEARS IN ALL OF HISTORY ARE VENICE AND THE VATICAN, WHICH HAS LASTED 1900 YEARS.
BELIEVE IT OR NOT, IT'S BECAUSE THEY HAVE THE 'CORPSES OF SAINTS'.
EVEN THE HISTORIC EDO SHOGUNATE OF THE EAST ONLY LASTED 250 YEARS.
VIVA PIO IX
INDIPENDEN

THERE YOU HAVE IT... TWO MIRACLES.
IF YOU DO IT IN THE VATICAN IT'LL EASILY BE RECOGNIZED AS FROM A SAINT...
...THAT MUMMY ...
MY STAND ABILITY... MY NAILS 'SPUN'...
AND.. 'MY LAME FEET MOVED'...
...A S... 'SAINT' .....
YOU'LL FIND OUT IF YOU LOOK IT UP AT MY HOMELAND, I'M TELLING YOU...!
I'M JUST SAYING... IF YOU WANT TO COLLECT THE CORPSE PARTS, FINE...
'SAINTS' EXIST FOR THE COMMON PEOPLE... SO THEY CAN NEVER BE HIDDEN IN THE SHADOWS OF HISTORY.... THERE'S ALWAYS A RECORD.
BUT ...
BUT WAIT... THIS IS THE NEW WORLD! HAVE ANY OF THE 'SAINTS' CROSSED TO AMERICA!?
AND WHY ARE THEY SCATTERED ACROSS THIS LAND?

LET'S DO THIS! MONUMENT VALLEY...
AND THE 3RD STAGE!!
I'M GOING TO BE 1ST IN THIS RACE! AND YOU'LL BE 2ND! DON'T FORGET THAT PROMISE!
IF SOOOOO... I'LL LET YOU COME WITH ME, JOHNNY!

5 THE PRESIDENT'S CONSPIRACY (END)


荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
大好評発売中!!
時空を超えて受けつがれる
偉大なる魂の物語――。
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
①～63


ジャンプコミックス
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part6
ストーンオーシャン
1〜17
●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 1〜39 以下続刊
●豪華本
JOJO6251 荒木飛呂彦の世界
デビュー時からJOJO第4部までのイラスト他、自身の作品背景や秘密を語ったロングインタビューも収録。
JOJO A GO!GO!
スタンド本、取材を元に「作家・荒木飛呂彦」の本質に迫る荒木本の3冊セット
●JUMP j BOOKS
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
原作／荒木飛呂彦
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険Ⅱ
ゴールデンハート／ゴールデンリング
原作／荒木飛呂彦 著者／宮 昌太朗・大塚ギチ
JOJO第5部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー第2弾!
次々と起こる大量殺人事件。そしてその現場には

# 荒木飛呂彦のコミックス

# 荒木世界を読みつくせ!!

ありとあらゆる手品やトリックを、自在にこなす不思議な転校生ビーティー。友人の公一と魔少年ビーティーが体験する様々な怪事件に、数々の奇抜なトリックが登場する！荒木飛呂彦渾身の連載デビュー作！

## 魔少年ビーティー

●ジャンプコミックス　新書判　全1巻
●集英社文庫<コミック版>　全1巻

大好評発売中!!

秘密機関ドレスが創り出した最強の生物兵器・バオー。橋沢育朗に寄生し、ドレスから脱走したバオーに、暗殺者たちが次々と襲いかかる！ その時、育朗の中に眠る無敵の生命・バオーが覚醒する!!

## バオー来訪者

●ジャンプコミックス　新書判　全2巻
●集英社文庫<コミック版>　全1巻

ゴージャス☆アイリン 荒木飛呂彦短編集
●ジャンプスーパーコミックス 新書判 全1巻
代々、殺人教育を受け継ぐ家の血をひき、メイクによって人格が変わる美しき殺し屋アイリンのハイパー・アクション。表題作他「魔少年ビーティー」「バージニアによろしく」そしてデビュー作「武装ポーカー」を収録。
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
15年ぶりに描かれた「ゴージャス☆アイリン」のピンナップを収録。さらに、幻の初期短編「アウトロー・マン」をデジタル復刻掲載！「死刑執行中脱獄進行中」と対をなす箱入り豪華装丁で登場！
死刑執行中脱獄進行中
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
ある囚人が投獄されたのは死刑執行の為の部屋だった…！ 衝撃の表題作をはじめ、JOJO第4部の敵・吉良吉影のその後を描いた『デッドマンズQ』「ドルチ」「岸辺露伴は動かない」を収録。
変人偏屈列伝
荒木飛呂彦＋鬼窪浩久
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
異能の大リーガー、天才発明家、稀代の興行師、悲運の賄い婦、究極のひきこもり兄弟、生涯館を増築し続けた未亡人…。社会的抑圧にも屈せず、己の信念を貫き通した愛すべき変人偏屈たち！ハードカバー、箱入り超豪華装丁！

STARDUST
CRUSADERS

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

5 大統領の陰謀

2005年8月9日　第1刷発行

著者　荒木飛呂彦

©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
2005

編集　ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(5211)2651

発行人　鳥嶋和彦

発行所　株式会社　集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
03(3230)6236(編集)
電話　東京　03(3230)6191(販売)
03(3230)6076(制作)

Printed in Japan

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社

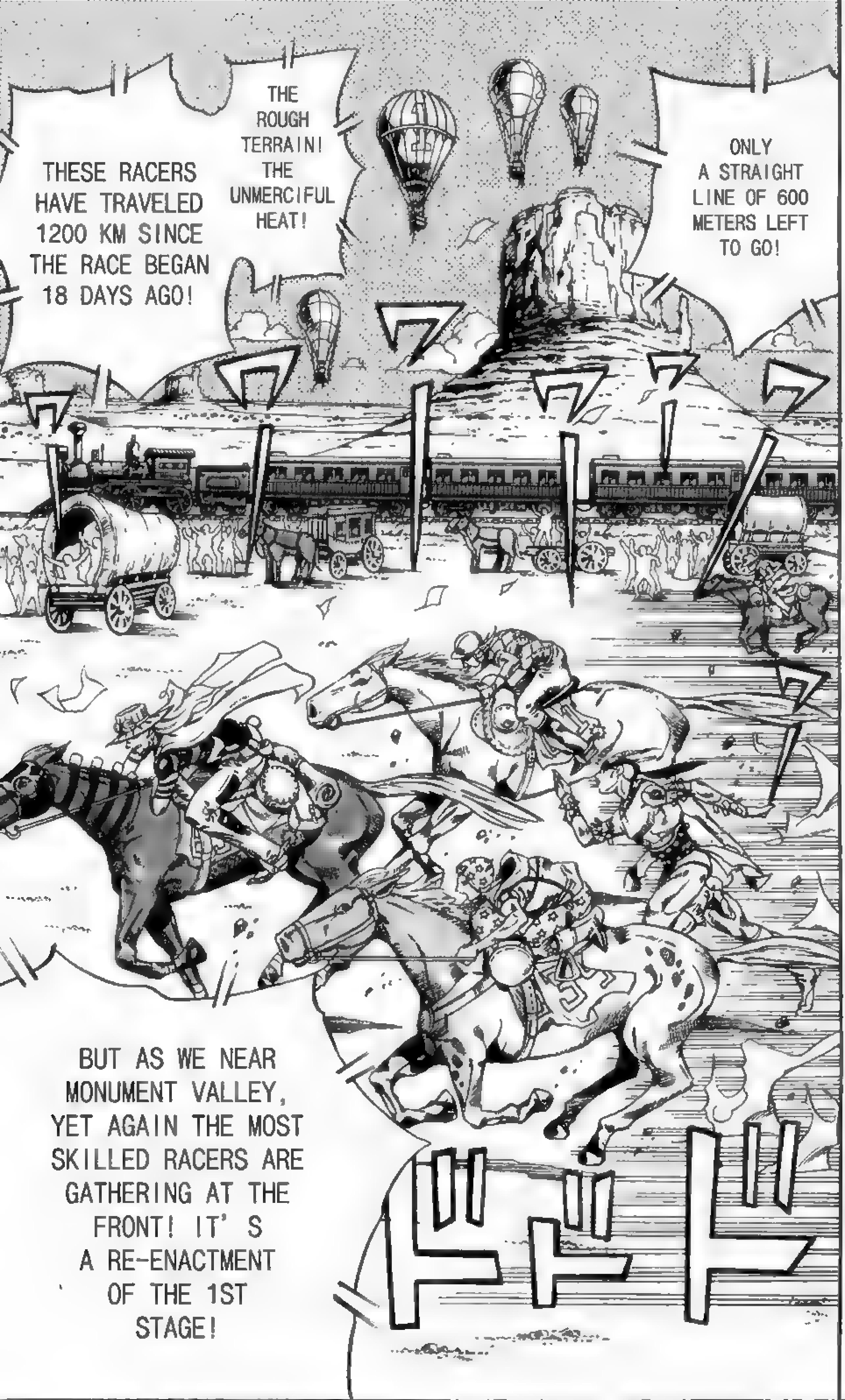
造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社制作部宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

ISBN4-08-873845-4 C9979

IN THE LEAD WE HAVE THE BRITISH JOCKEY, DIEGO BRANDO...
BUT SANDMAN IS FOLLOWING RIGHT BEHIND HIM! SO IS GYRO ZEPPELI! AND JOHNNY JOESTAR, WHO FINISHED 5TH IN THE 1ST STAGE!
#28
SCARY MONSTERS ①

#28
SCARY
MONSTERS
①

IT'S GYRO ZEPPELI!!
RIGHT BEFORE THE 2ND STAGE FINISH LINE! IT'S GYRO AGAIN!
HE JUMPS INTO THE LEAD!


THESE RACERS HAVE TRAVELED 1200 KM SINCE THE RACE BEGAN 18 DAYS AGO!
THE ROUGH TERRAIN! THE UNMERCIFUL HEAT!
ONLY A STRAIGHT LINE OF 600 METERS LEFT TO GO!
BUT AS WE NEAR MONUMENT VALLEY, YET AGAIN THE MOST SKILLED RACERS ARE GATHERING AT THE FRONT! IT'S A RE-ENACTMENT OF THE 1ST STAGE!
ドドド

NOW DIEGO BRANDO IS PICKING UP THE PACE! . . .
AND SANDMAN CONTINUES TO FLY ACROSS THE LAND WITH HIS MONSTROUS LEGS!

GYRO! LOOK! HOLY SHIT!
3rd STAGE
GYRO! TH... THIS!
THIS NEWSPAPER!!
KEEP IT UP, AT FULL SPEED!
WE CAN WIN THIS STAGE!
WE CAN WIN, JOHNNY!
I'M TELLING YOU, GYRO! LOOK AT THIS!!
BUT... IT IS! THIS NEWSPAPER!
THIS PICTURE!!
I.... I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS!!

THIS MOUNTAIN!
... IN THIS ARTICLE'S PICTURE!
IT'S THE **'SAME SHAPE'**, GYRO!! THIS ARTICLE ABOUT THE 3RD STAGE COURSE!
LOOK! THE SHAPE OF THE MOUNTAIN-TOP!
THIS **'SHAPE'**!
IT'S THE SAME!!
LOOK CLOSELY! IT'S THE SAME AS THE SCAR ON MY LEFT ARM!
crūs

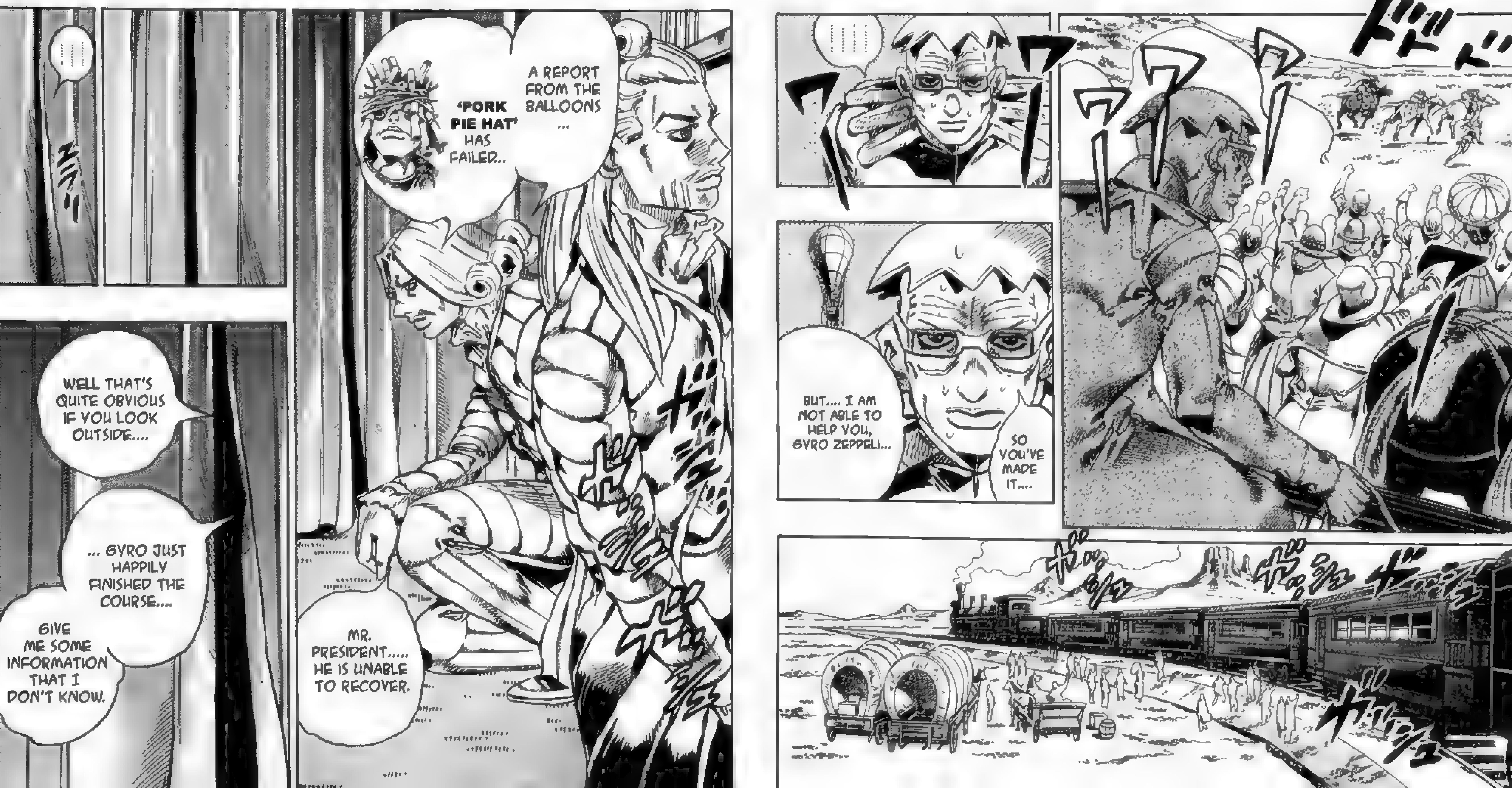
WHAT...!
THEY'RE TELLING US TO GO HERE!! THE NEXT CORPSE PART MUST BE ON THAT MOUNTAIN!
THESE SCARS AREN'T LETTERS! THEY'RE A 'PLACE'!
STEEL BALL RU
GOOOOOOOOAL!!

JOHNNY JOESTAR IS SECOND!
THIRD IS SANDMAN!
AND GYRO ZEPPELI IS FOURTH!
FIRST PLACE GOES TO DIEGO BRANDO!
DIEGO BRANDO FINISHES IN FIRST!
HUH?
EACH RACER CONTINUES STRAIGHT ON! STRAIGHT INTO THE '3RD STAGE'
NO PLANS FOR A BREAK
AND THEY CONTINUE ON! THE FRONT LINE REFUSES TO STOP
HUH..
!!
JOHNNY! YOU FUCKER! WAIT!!
WAIT A SECOND!
HEY!
WHY'D YOU FINISH BEFORE ME?
WHAT'S HE SAYING... JOHNNY?
NO! HOLD IT!
JUST ....!

# 3rd. STAGE

Route - Monument Valley -> Cannon City
Mountain course 510 km
Estimated Time to Arrival - 7 days
Prize points - 1st place 100 points, $10,000

## 'ROCKY MOUNTAIN BREAKDOWN'



IT'S A PIECE OF CLOTH.
FOR SOME REASON, THERE ARE SHAPES OF LETTERS 'SCORCHED' ONTO THE CLOTH.
THE 'SCORCHED' LETTERS ARE LATIN AND MEAN 'TO MOVE ONE'S FEET'.
I DON'T KNOW WHAT THIS COULD MEAN, BUT 'PORK PIE HAT' WAS ON THE GROUND WITH THIS IN HIS HANDS.
......
......

SOMETHING UNEXPECTED ....
PORK PIE HAT WAS NOT FIGHTING GYRO ZEPPELI, BUT JOHNNY JOESTAR.
HMM...
WE CAN TELL BY THE FOOTPRINTS AT THE PLACE OF ACTION ...
THEREFORE...
DO YOU HAVE A PEN?
IT IS NOT GYRO WHO IS HIDING THE 'CORPSE', BUT JOHNNY JOESTAR! HE IS THE ONE WE SHOULD BE AFTER.
... THOUGH WEDON'T KNOW WHICH PART OF THE 'CORPSE' HE HAS...
BEER

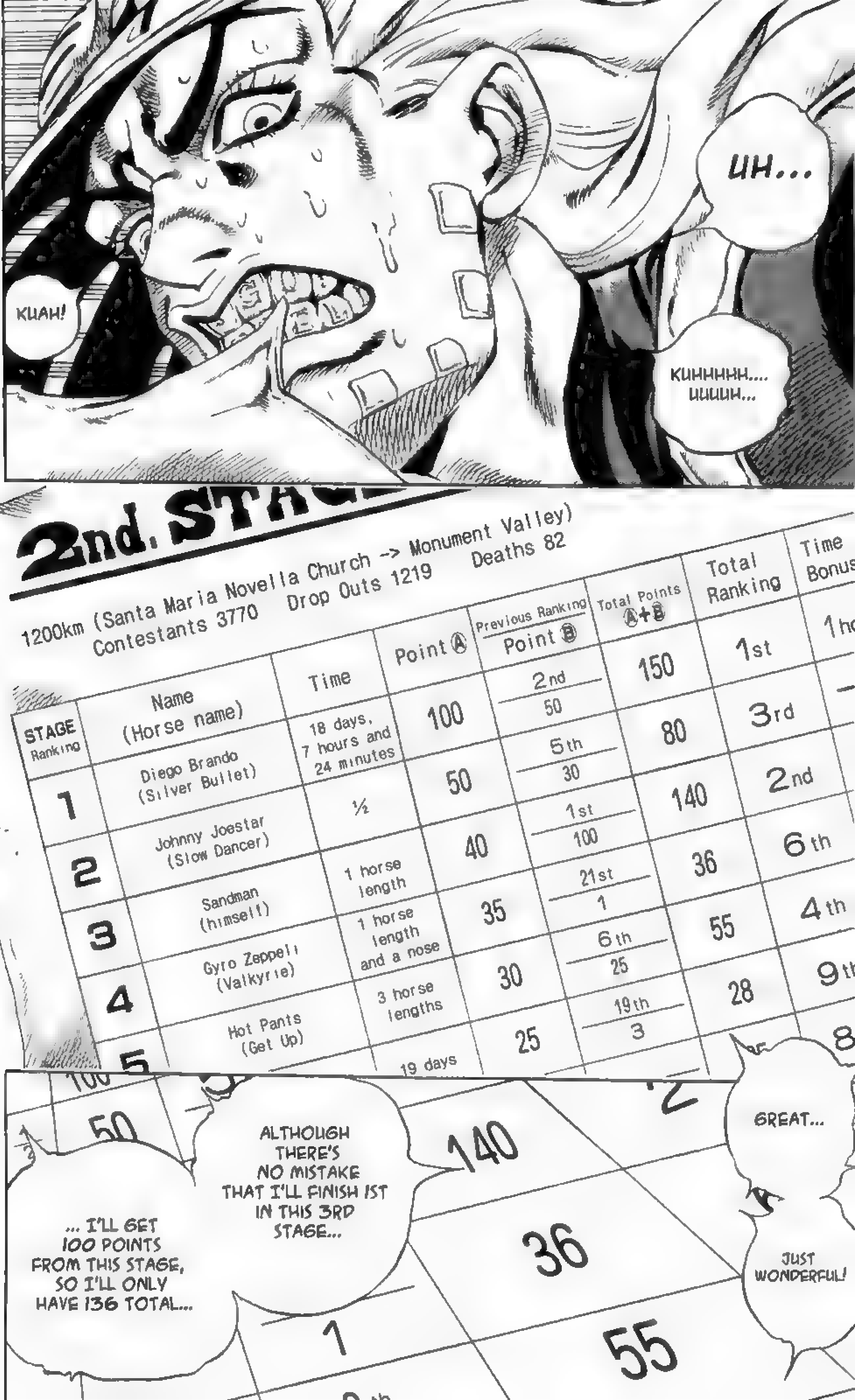
GULP
DO YOU KNOW .... HOW TO DRINK AN ENTIRE CAN OF BEER AT ONCE?
BEER
BHAAAA!
YES! YES!
UGOA!
HE WRAPPED THE 'CORPSE' WITH THIS CLOTH... WHEN HE ONCE HAD IT IN HIS HANDS...
.... JUST LIKE THIS...
ALRIGHT!
THAT KID DID HIS PART TO HELP US OUT.

THAT'S WHEN THE CLOTH WAS SCORCHED.
FROM THE THICKNESS YOU CAN SEE ON THE CLOTH, THE WRAPPED CORPSE PART IS AN 'ARM'... NO DOUBT ABOUT IT! IT'S EITHER THE 'LEFT' OR 'RIGHT ARM'.
WITH THE ENERGY THAT THE 'CORPSE' SETS FORTH.....
JOHNNY JOESTAR HAS AN 'ARM'!
AND THESE SCORCHED LETTERS ARE NOT JUST 'LETTERS'...
BUT I NEVER KNOW WHAT THESE 'LETTERS' MEAN...
COULD THEY BE A MESSAGE POINTING TO A SPECIFIC 'LOCATION'?
AND I AM ALWAYS THINKING...
ALWAYS ....
I'M ALWAYS QUESTIONING ...

ANYHOW...
WE HAVE NOW FOUND 'TWO' PARTS OF THAT PERSON'S 'CORPSE'...
INCLUDING THE 'HEART' IN MY CHEST...

IF THE PORK PIE HAT KID WAS DEFEATED.. THEN JOHNNY JOESTAR MUST HAVE DECIDED TO FIND THE NEXT PART.
ACCORDING TO THE **'MAP OF JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA'** THERE ARE **'NINE'** CORPSE PARTS IN ALL THAT ARE SCATTERED ACROSS THE CONTINENT!
IT MIGHT NOT BE A BAD IDEA TO HAVE HIM FIND IT.
IF JOESTAR DOES FIND IT IN THE **'ROCKY ROUTE'**, THEN WE'D KNOW WHERE **'THREE'** PARTS ARE AND ONLY **'SIX'** WOULD BE LEFT.
WE ALREADY HAVE, MR. PRESIDENT.
HMM!?
YES...
SEND THE ASSASSIN THERE.

OH!
WHAT WAS THAT ........
HIS CHEST .....?




| STAGE Ranking | Name (Horse name) | Time | Point Ⓐ | Previous Ranking Point Ⓑ | Total Points Ⓐ+Ⓑ | Total Ranking | Time Bonus |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | Diego Brando (Silver Bullet) | 18 days, 7 hours and 24 minutes | 100 | 2nd 50 | 150 | 1st | 1 ho |
| 2 | Johnny Joestar (Slow Dancer) | ½ | 50 | 5th 30 | 80 | 3rd | — |
| 3 | Sandman (himself) | 1 horse length | 40 | 1st 100 | 140 | 2nd | |
| 4 | Gyro Zeppeli (Valkyrie) | 1 horse length and a nose | 35 | 21st 1 | 36 | 6th | |
| 5 | Hot Pants (Get Up) | 3 horse lengths | 30 | 6th 25 | 55 | 4th | |
| | | 19 days | 25 | 19th 3 | 28 | 9th | |
| | | | | | | 8 | |

136 POINTS AFTER THIS STAGE STILL WON'T GIVE ME A LEAD OVER DIO OR SANDMAN!
AND THAT JOHNNY BASTARD! IF HE HAPPENS TO GET 1ST, HE'LL HAVE A TOTAL OF 180 POINTS FOR THE LEAD!
HE SAID HE'D FINISH AFTER ME... THAT PROMISE BREAKING BETRAYER... THIS CAN'T BE HAPPENING!
AND IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE THAT DIO AND SANDMAN, WHO ARE MOVING ON AHEAD OF US, WILL FINISH WITHOUT ANY POINTS...
NOT GONNA HAPPEN...
BUT IT WOULD BE SO GOOD...
LOOK, GYRO!
DIO'S SITTING DOWN OVER THERE!
THAT'S DIO'S HORSE.
BUT IT'S STRANGE.... THEY'RE OFF COURSE.
HUH..

LOOKS LIKE HE FELL.
HE'S BLEEDING FROM HIS FACE!
HE FELL?
YES! ... JUST MY LUCK....
DIO ACTUALLY FELL?
WELL, IT IS A MOUNTAIN COURSE... COULD BE THAT HE AND HIS HORSE AREN'T MADE FOR THIS TYPE OF LAND.
HE CUDDLED UP..........!!
HE FELL OVER HOLDING HIS HEAD........
DIO FALLING OFF OF HIS HORSE...... THAT'S JUST HARD TO BELIEVE.
BUT..
BY THE LOOKS OF THINGS, SEEMS LIKE HE'LL BE A LITTLE BEHIND.. HE MAY HAVE TO DROP OUT, EVEN........

LET'S GO, GYRO.
AH..
I DIDN'T KNOW YOU WERE THAT KIND OF PERSON, JOHNNY.
I'M THE TYPE THAT LAUGHS AT OTHER'S MISFORTUNES MYSELF.. AND IT'D BE GREAT IF HE DOESN'T GET ANY POINTS IN THIS STAGE...
BUT IT MIGHT BE A LIFE THREATENING WOUND.. LET'S CHECK IT OUT.
IT'S BEST THAT YOU STAY AWAY FROM DIEGO BRANDO, GYRO.
COME ON, WHERE'S YOUR COMPASSION?
HE CAN'T BE TRUSTED.
DIO IS BRITAIN'S HONORABLE GENIUS JOCKEY.. BUT HE WILL DO ANYTHING FOR MONEY AND TO WIN.
THAT'S WHAT PEOPLE SAY.
THERE ARE MANY SHADY RUMORS ........
FOR EXAMPLE, WHEN HE WAS 20, HE MARRIED AN 83 YEAR OLD WIDOW TO INHERIT HER FORTUNE.
THE WIDOW DIED HALF A YEAR LATER..... IT'S RUMORED THAT DIO KILLED HER ........

HE MAY BE TRYING TO TRICK US LIKE THAT.....
AND IN THIS SITUATION, IT'S POSSIBLE THAT HE'S CONNECTED TO THE TERRORISTS!
SO WHAT YOU WANT TO SAY IS......
BRRRR
BRRRR
DOU..
DOU DOU...
NEEEEIGH
OUCH!
HIS BLEEDING'S GETTING WORSE!
MAYBE IF HE WAS ABOUT TO LOSE TO YOU, BUT HE'S RANKED 1ST! WHY WOULD HE DO THAT?
I'M JUST GOING TO CHECK.

THE GROUND OVER HERE...
IT'S AWFULLY SHARP LAND.
MY HORSE IS REACTING TOO.
HIS HORSE MIGHT HAVE BEEN SURPRISED JUST THE SAME.
HEY, DIO! ARE YOU ALL RIGHT!?
IF YOU WANT THE RESCUE TEAM TO COME, JUST SAY SO! I'LL CALL THEM!

......
WHAT.. HIS FINGERS...
A SCAB? DID HE TOUCH SOMETHING?
GET LOST, YOU TWO!
IN THE END, I'M THE ONE WHO'S GOING TO PASS YOU UP!
NYO.....
HO HO!
......

LOOKS LIKE HE'S FINE!!
WHETHER IT'S A TRAP OR NOT, HE'S TOO HEALTHY! THAT'S GREAT! ..... LET'S GO, JOHNNY!

GYRO! WE'LL PASS THROUGH THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS IN 2 DAYS!
Cannon City
Monument Valley
ACCORDING TO THE MAP, MT. FOOTLOOSE IS ACROSS THAT MOUNTAIN!
3RD STAGE - 5TH DAY - ROCKY MOUNTAINS ABOUT 380KM FROM MONUMENT VALLEY

IT'S RIGHT ON THE COURSE! YOU CAN SEE IT SLIGHTLY!
IT'S ABOUT 15 KM AWAY!
COULD WE MAKE IT TODAY?
TODAY IS TOO LATE! TOMORROW!
THE SUN'S ABOUT TO SET! WE'LL LET THE HORSES REST!
THAT HAS TO BE THE PLACE...! THE NEXT CORPSE PART IS ON THAT MOUNTAIN.
THE MOUNTAIN IS WIDE, BUT WE'LL FIND OUT WHEN WE GO! I KNOW WE WILL!!
HEY, JOHNNY, MY HORSE IS FREAKING OUT!
JOHNNY, IT'S HIM!
IT'S DIOOO!!

HE LOOKS PRETTY AGGRESSIVE...
... UNLIKE BEFORE...
DON'T LET YOUR GUARD DOWN, JOHNNY! AND DON'T LET HIM PASS YOU!
HEY COME ON, GUYS.
DON'T TAKE IT THAT WAY!
I'M DONE FOR TODAY... THE SUN'S STARTING TO SET!
THERE'S A SMALL VILLAGE AHEAD.. LET'S STAY THERE.
CAMPING OUT IS A BAD IDEA.
THERE ARE BEASTS OUT IN THIS AREA.
THE OTHER DAY AFTER SUNDOWN, I GOT SURROUNDED BY BEASTS.
A FEW COUGARS AND A FEW RATTLE SNAKES.
THE COUGARS AND RATTLE SNAKES WERE ON TWO SIDES OF THE ROAD, BLOCKING MY WAY OUT.

I WAS THINKING OF HOW TO ESCAPE... BUT THEN, FOR SOME REASON, I WAS ABLE TO PASS THROUGH ON ONE SIDE OF THE ROAD.
I WAS ABLE TO GET BY ONE OF THE TWO GROUPS EASILY.
WHICH SIDE DO YOU THINK IT WAS? THE COUGARS OR THE RATTLE SNAKES?
THE ANSWER IS THE RATTLE SNAKES!
BECAUSE THEY WERE...
ASSSS-SSSSSLEEP ...
... AND SSSSSS-SSNORING ON THE ROAD!
HUH?
...
HEY COME ON, IT'S A JOKE!
THEN MAYBE THEY WOKE UP AND STARTED SSSSSSSLAPPING EACH OTHER...
.. IN THEIR FACESSSSSSSS! GET IT?
ONLY A JOKE! WHAT DID YOU THINK?

DAMN, I FEEL GOOD!
MY BODY FEELS LIGHT! IT'S TOO BAD THAT THE SUN IS SETTING!
SPLENDID! MAYBE IT'S BECAUSE I FELL BACK THERE...
EVERYTHING IS SO REFRESHING!
WE WON'T TRAVEL WITH YOU!
GET AWAY FROM US, DIEGO BRANDO!!
....
I APPLAUD YOUR SPECTACULAR PERFORMANCE IN BOTH THE 1ST AND 2ND STAGE.
JOHNNY JOESTAR...
I HEARD YOU GOT INJURED BUT WHAT A GRAND COMEBACK THIS IS!

……
!?
ポロッ
!!
ポロッ
ポロッ
ポロッ

HEY!
HEY!
YOU TWO ARE EXPERTS ON THE HORSE, BUT CAN YOU DO THIS?

HEY!
HEY!
WHAT'S UP WITH HIM?
ARE GENIUS JOCKEYS ALWAYS THIS WACKY?
HEY!
HEY!
JOHNNY...!
GYRO, ARE WE GONNA BE WITH HIM TONIGHT?
HOW SHOULD I KNOW!
BUT SOMETHING'S STRANGE...
WE THOUGHT HE WAS BADLY INJURED BACK THERE, BUT NOW...!
SOME-THING'S WRONG!

WELL, EVEN IF WE TRY TO AVOID THAT...
THERE ARE WOLVES OUT HERE, IT WOULD BE TOO RISKY FOR OUR HORSES!
WE NEED TO STAY AT THE VILLAGE.
YEP!
THAT'S THE SAFEST.
THE WOLVES ARE ROAMING AROUND.
......
DUDE, HE CAN HEAR US.
バァァア

SEEMS LIKE EVERYBODY KNOWS ABOUT THIS RACE...
EVEN UP HERE IN THE MOUNTAINS...

MAYBE HE'S TALKING WITH THE VILLAGERS.
WHO KNOWS....
HE'S GONE!
GYRO! WHERE DID DIO GO!?
I KNOW.
WE'LL KEEP WATCH OF OUR HORSES JUST LIKE WE DO WHEN WE CAMP OUT!
PUTTING POISON IN THE HORSE'S FOOD OR TINKERING WITH OUR HARNESSES IS SECOND NATURE TO HIM.
SERIOUSLY! I AM NOT SLEEPING IN THE SAME PLACE AS HIM...
HE'S DEFINITELY THE LOWEST A HUMAN CAN BECOME!
THERE'S A FURNACE IN THE ROOM NEXT DOOR..... I SAY IT'S TIME FOR DINNER... I'LL GO SEARCH FOR SOME WOOD

コポ コポ
ギクリ

ROLL
DIO!!
IT'S DIO ......
...WHAT IS HE DOING CROUCHED DOWN THERE ........?
ROLL
ROLL
ROLL
GOBBLE

RUBBLE RUBBLE
SMACK SMACK
!......
GULP GULP
GULP
KKKOO KKOO
ゴクン
KKOOKKKOOO
KKOO KOO

!?......
.......
......
SNIFF
SNIFF... HMM...
SMELLS LIKE COFFEE.
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
ARE YOU MAKING COFFEE? WHAT A PLEASANT AROMA.....

HEY! DON'T COME IN!
NOTHING?
NOTHING...
WHAT ARE YOU DOING THERE, DIO?
ARE YOU WONDERING WHY I WAS EATING THOSE 'ROCKS'?
OOOH...
IT'S FOR DIGESTION, MR. JOESTAR. DON'T YOU KNOW?
IT HELPS YOUR STOMACH DIGEST.
IT CRUSHES WHAT YOU ATE INSIDE THE STOMACH.
THEY'RE CALLED 'GASTROLITHS', MOST MEAT EATING CREATURES DO THIS.
IT'S A HEALTH METHOD..... LEARNED FROM THE BIRDS AND ALLIGATORS.
I FEEL SPLENDID
.......

BUT YOU'RE MAKING COFFEE, AREN'T YOU?
IT HASN'T QUITE GOT THE AROMA OF BLUE MOUNTAIN NO. 1, BUT IT'S STILL REALLY GOOD.. MIND IF I HAVE A CUP?
WHAT ABOUT THAT WOUND YOU GOT FROM FALLING?
IT LOOKED LIKE A TERRIBLE WOUND WHEN WE SAW YOU.
I TOLD YOU, I'M DOING GREAT.
I DON'T FEEL ANY PAIN ANYWHERE.
WHY AREN'T YOU TAKING OFF YOUR GLOVES?
OCTOBER NIGHTS IN THE ROCKYS CAN GET PRETTY CHILLY.
I'LL TAKE THEM OFF WHEN I WASH MY HANDS.
COME ON.... LET ME HAVE SOME.
......
'I DON'T WANT TO TRAVEL WITH YOU'...... LET'S MAKE THAT CLEAR.
IT'S RIGHT IN FRONT OF YOU.
DRINK THE COFFEE AND GO TO A DIFFERENT EMPTY HOUSE.
......

......
......
?
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF
?
UUUHM...
COULD I JUST ASK..?
......
WHICH ONE CAN I DRINK?
......
WHICH ONE? THERE'S ONLY ONE CUP THERE .....
DIO.... YOU...
... YOU CAN'T SEE IT? THE REST ARE CANS.

'CAN'T SEE'?
GIVE ME A BREAK... I CAN SEE GREAT!
BOTH MY EYESIGHT AND PHYSICAL PERFORMANCE ARE AT THEIR BEST!
I CAN SEE EVEN BETTER AS IT GETS DARKER.
......
SNIFF
BUT WHICH ONE?
SNIFF
SNIFF
WHICH IS IT?
!!

I TOLD YOU, THERE'S ONLY ONE CUP, RIGHT HERE!
CLING
KKKOOOO
KKOO KKOO

SOMETHING'S WRONG FOR SURE... CAN'T HE SEE IT? OR DOES HE JUST NOT UNDERSTAND?
WHAT A QUEER!
DRIP
DRIP
DRIP
KKOOO
KKOOO
DRIP
DRIP
DRIP
DRIP
KKOOO
KKOOO
KKOOO
ゴゴゴゴ

W.... WHAT!?
TEETH... THOSE ARE TEETH...
DRIP
DRIP
DRIP
.. IT'S... A MOUTH! IT'S RIPPED ALL THE WAY TO HIS EARS!!
THIS GUY!! WHAT THE HELL IS UNDER THAT BANDAGE!!?
THAT MOUTH!! IT'S AS IF ...!

WHAT ARE YOU DOING, JOHNNY?
THERE SURE ARE A LOT OF FLIES HERE, DON'T YOU THINK?
... THERE'S A TON!
THEY'RE COMING IN FROM THE WINDOW! CLOSE IT! AND THAT DOOR TOO!

JOHNNY! CLOSE THE WINDOW! I'M NOT TALKING ABOUT THE FLIES!
DIDN'T YOU NOTICE!? THERE'S SOME-THING RIGHT OUTSIDE!

IT'S THE CORPSE OF A BEAR!! ITS FLESH HAS BEEN EATEN OFF!
HOW LONG HAS IT BEEN LAYING HERE DEAD!?
A HUMAN COULDN'T HAVE DONE THIS!
DIO!!

# STARDUST CRUSADERS

TRANSLATOR: ACK44
PROOFREADER: NURLOCK
EDITOR: KAGAMI

WEBSITE: WWW.GIOGIO.ZYA.COM

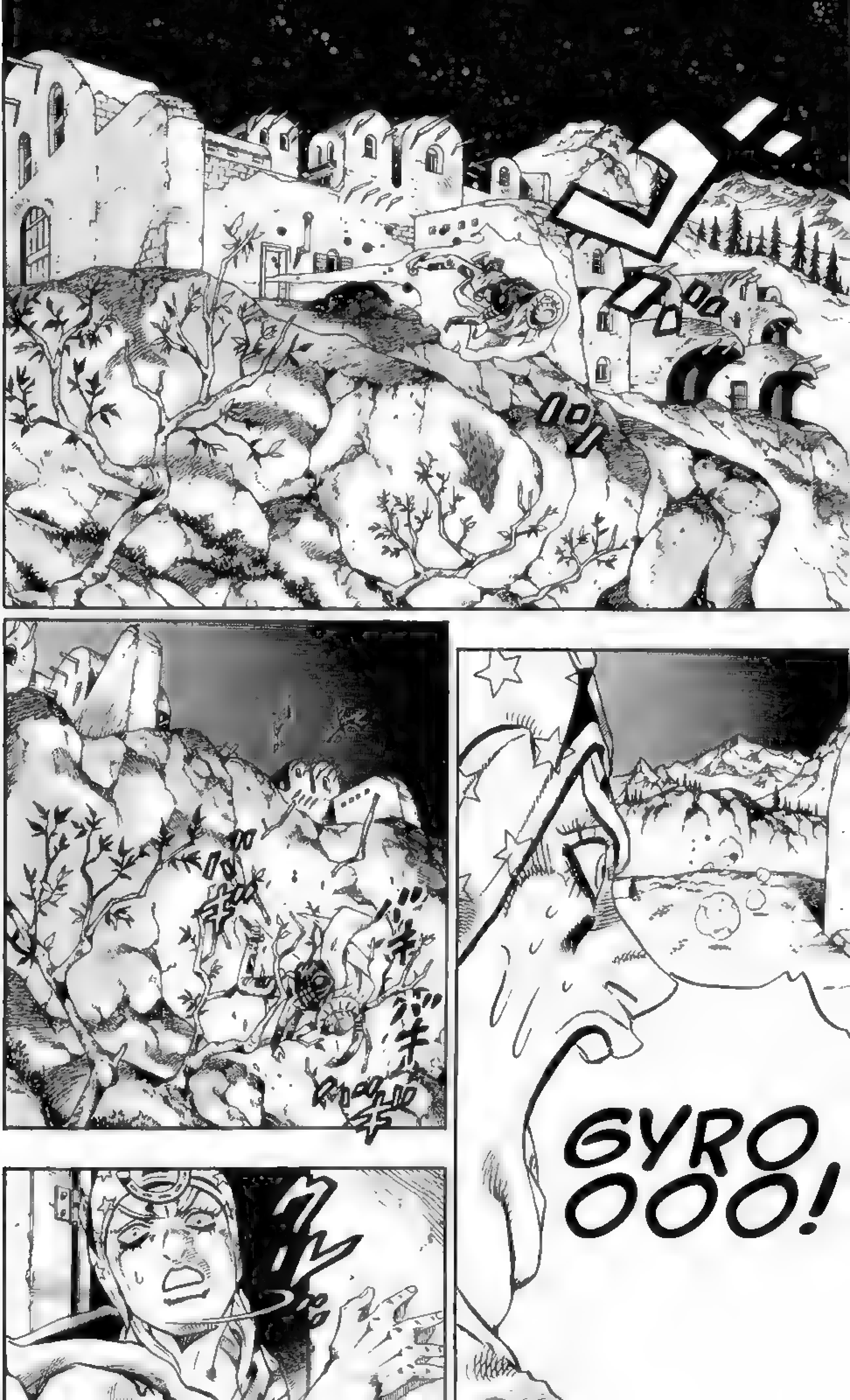
"HELLO FELLOW JOJO FANS! SO, THIS IS THE THIRD SBR VOLUME THAT WE'RE SCANLATING. I JUST THOUGHT I SHOULD CLEAR SOME THINGS UP BEFORE WE MOVE ON. SOME OF YOU ARE PROBABLY WONDERING ABOUT THE BOLD FONT WE USE THAT LOOKS LIKE '**THIS**'. ARAKI FREQUENTLY USES A BOLD FONT FOR WORDS THAT ARE IMPORTANT IN HIS WORKS; WE ARE JUST MAKING SURE THAT THE SAME ATTENTION IS BEING CALLED FOR IN OUR SCANLATIONS. ALSO, A METHOD IS USED IN THE ORIGINAL TEXT WHERE A DOT WOULD BE PLACED NEXT TO EACH LETTER IN A BALLOON OR SENTENCE. WE EXPRESS THIS BY UNDERLINING THE WORDS. UNDERLINING IS ALSO USED IN PLACE OF ITALICS, SINCE THE FONT WE ARE USING DOESN'T REALLY HAVE AN ITALICS OPTION.

KAGAMI GET'S THE CREDIT FOR COMING UP WITH DIO'S "ASSSSSLEEP" JOKE IN THIS CHAPTER (WHILE I LATER ADDED THE "SSSSSLAPPING" PART). IN THE ORIGINAL, THE WORD FOR "POISON" AND "TO GET OUT OF THE WAY" ARE BOTH "DOKU", AND SO DIO IS ABLE TO GET PAST THE RATTLE SNAKES. A REPLACEMENT JOKE HAD TO BE USED BACK IN CHAPTER 4 ALSO, AND I APPLAUD WHOEVER CAME UP WITH THE "DON'T YOU THINK THAT BROKE THE ICE?" JOKE.

WELL, THAT IS ALL FOR NOW. STAY TUNED FOR THE REST OF THE DIO CHAPTERS! WRYYYYY!!!" - ACK44

#29
SCARY MONSTERS
②
THIS POWER!
I KNEW IT!
HE WAS A 'STAND USER'!
WHA... WHAT IS THIS!?
HE... HE TRANSFOR-MED!
?
Dio!

#29
SCARY
MONSTERS
②


GYRO
OOOO!

HUH?

USHYAA AAA!
'TUSK'!
GWA AAA AAA AR!

AN ENEMY!
DIO WAS ONE OF THEM... THE TERRORISTS!!

HE CAN DODGE MY 'NAIL SHOTS'...!
AT THIS DISTANCE!!

WH...
WHOA WHOA
CHECK OUT HIS 'DYNAMIC VISION'....
HE EASILY DODGED MY STEEL BALL, EVEN FROM SO CLOSE.

GYROOOOOOO! ABOVE YOU!!
WHAT!?

GAH!!
GAH!!
SO, IS IT YOUR GOAL...
... TO FIND THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'?
OR ARE YOU SIMPLY GOING TO KILL US AND TAKE IT? ... SEEMS YOU'RE PRETTY DAMN SENSITIVE TO SUDDEN MOVEMENTS.
BUT IF THERE'S SOMETHING MOVING SLOWLY.... IT WOULDN'T BE TAKEN AS A THREAT AND YOU WOULDN'T FEEL LIKE DODGING IT, EH?

IF IT DOESN'T SEEM LIKE AN ATTACK...
YOU'D BE RELIEVED.. NO NEED TO DODGE.

I PUT THE STEEL BALL IN THE CAN.
HOW I GOT IT IN THERE IS A SECRET.
GWAAR!

BUT IT DIDN'T SEEM TO DO MUCH DAMAGE! HE'S GETTING UP! MY STEEL BALLS WON'T HIT HIM! WE GOTTA RUN!
HURRY AND GET OUTSIDE, JOHNNY!
WHAT IS THIS!? THIS 'STAND ABILITY'!!
WHAT KIND OF ABILITY IS IT?
IT'S A DINOSAUR, JOHNNY!
IT LOOKS LIKE DIO'S BODY HAS FUSED WITH A 'DINOSAUR'S' ABILITY
'DINO-SORE'?
WHAT'S A DINOSORE?
YOU DON'T KNOW?

THEY'RE THESE HUGE CREATURES! BIGGER THAN AFRICAN ELEPHANTS!
IN 1838 A SCHOLAR NAMED OWEN MADE THE WORD 'DINOSAUR' AND STARTED CALLING THEM THAT!
WELL, THIS ONE'S SMALLER THAN AN ELEPHANT ...
SHUT UP! ANYWAYS, THEY EXISTED LONG BEFORE MANKIND WAS BORN TO THE EARTH!
SO WHY DOES DIO HAVE AN ABILITY OF SOMETHING SO OLD!?
IT COULD HAVE SOMETHING TO DO WITH 'FOSSILS'!
EVER SINCE THE FOSSIL DISCOVERY IN THE COLORADO CLIFF IN THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS, TONS MORE HAVE BEEN DISCOVERED!
......
HMM?

......
DAMN! THE DOOR'S BEING RIPPED UP! WE HAVE TO GO DOWN THE CLIFF! JOHNNY!
NO! I'M NOT GOING!! IF DIO'S AFTER THE 'CORPSE' ...
WE NEED TO DEFEAT DIO! AND JUST THE OPPOSITE, DON'T MOVE NO MATTER WHAT!!
DIO CAN'T SEE MOTION-LESS THINGS!
WHAT?

DON'T MOVE, GYRO!
FOR SOME REASON DIO CAN ONLY SEE 'MOVING' THINGS! ISN'T THAT HOW DINOSAURS ARE!

JUST LIKE BEFORE... HE COULDN'T RECOGNIZE THE COFFEE!
I'M SURE OF IT. HE CAN'T SEE US...
NOT EVEN A BLINK!
DON'T ...!

HAAA

HE THINKS WE WENT DOWN THE CLIFF!!
YES!
......
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
HE'S ONLY SMELLING THIS BEAR! HE COULD SMELL THE COFFEE BUT HE COULDN'T FIGURE OUT WHERE IT WAS!
DON'T PANIC, GYRO. THERE'S NO WAY HE KNOWS!
HE'S SNIFFING LIKE A DOG! HE'S COMING BACK!!
HEY! DID HE FIND OUT!? I THINK HE DID!
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
HAAAAAAA
SNIFF
SNIFF

BHAAA
GHA AAA
JU.... JUST BEAR IT......!!!

DID WE DO IT?
HE JUST.... LEFT!? SO HE'S LOST US!?
WHERE'D HE GO!?
SHH!

!?
TH... THAT... DOESN'T SEEM TO BE IT... GYRO... I THINK DIO...! Y... YES... HE KNOWS!
DIO HAS ALREADY SEEN YOUR ABILITY WITH THE STEEL BALLS IN THE 1ST STAGE! .....
GH!
GYRO..! HE KNOWS THAT THE SPINNING BALL RETURNS TO YOU!
HE'S TRYING TO FIND YOU WITH YOUR STEEL BALL! WHEREVER THE BALL RETURNS TO!

HE'S COMING AFTER THE BALL!!
NOOOOOOOOO!

ギャン
ギャン
ギャン
ギャン

GWA AAR!
CALM DOWN, JOHNNY ...
THE 'STEEL BALL THAT RETURNED' FLATTENED MY LEGS WITH THE SPIN.
AND IT LOOKS LIKE HE THINKS WE WENT OVER THE WALL NOW.

HE WENT DOWN THE CLIFF!
OH... YES!
JOHNNY... ABOUT THOSE LETTERS ON YOUR LEFT ARM....
JUST NOW... THERE'S SOMETHING I REALIZED ABOUT THEIR "PLACEMENT" ...

......
......
CRUMBLE
GRUZZLE
GRUZZLE
......
ポロッ
GYRO
......!?
DO YOU.... HEAR SOME-THING?
SOMETHING'S... STRANGE...... UNDER... UNDER HERE....
BREATH
BREATH
YEAH...
I HEAR IT ..... BUT WHAT IS IT?

HAAAA AAAAA
HAA
HAA
GWAA AAAA AR
WHA ... WHA AAT ...
WHA AAAA AAAAAA AAAAA AAAAT!!

AND HIS 'APPEARANCE' ......!! HE WAS ALIVE!
TH... THE BEAR!
JUST WHAT IS THIS ABILITY OF DIO'S!!?
GO THROUGH, JOHNNY! I CAN MAKE YOUR BODY FLAT WITH THE SPIN ALSO!
GO UNDER THE WALL! THROUGH THE DRAINAGE!

GWAA AAAAA AA AAA AAA AAAA AAAAA AAAR
AND ONE MORE THING, THOUGH WE ARE IN A BIT OF A SITUATION!
AS I WAS SAYING, ABOUT THAT LEFT ARM OF YOUR'S!
THOSE AREN'T LETTERS!....... I JUST NOW UNDERSTOOD IT!
IT'S THE SHAPE OF THE 'CONSTELLATION'! THE PLACEMENT OF THE LETTERS ARE IN THE 'ARRAY OF THE STARS'!
WE'VE COME CLOSER TO OUR DESTINATION THAN WE THOUGHT!

THE BIG DIPPER!
THE SHAPE AND PLACEMENT ARE THE SAME! THE 'CRŪS' IS AT THE NORTH STAR!
THE LETTERS THEMSELVES ARE A MAP THAT SHOW THE CONSTELLATION!
ドドドドド
THE LOCATION WHERE THE BIG DIPPER DIPS INTO THE GROUND!!
THAT'S WHERE IT'S POINTING AT!! COMBINE THE CONSTELLATION TO THE MOUNTAIN AND GROUND!!
THE 'CORPSE' IS ON THAT 'HILL'!
WE'LL GO GET IT NOW! IF YOU'RE UP TO IT, THAT IS!

THE 'CORPSE' IS ON THAT HILL!
FOUND IT!

#30
SCARY
MONSTERS ③

SOMEWHERE ON THE ISLAND OF BRITAIN....
... ON AN IMPOVERISHED REGION, AMONG IMPOVERISHED PEOPLE IN A RURAL VILLAGE ...
... WHERE TWO PARENTS OF A NEWBORN BOY.
THEY BECAME SO WEARY OF THEIR POVERTY-STRICKEN LIVES...
... THAT ONE NIGHT, THEY WENT UP INTO THE MOUNTAINS AND DUG A HOLE.
THEY WRAPPED THE SLEEPING BABE IN WHITE CLOTH...
... AND PLACED HIM IN THE HOLE.
THEY FINISHED THE JOB AND CARRIED ON AS IF THE CHILD WERE NEVER BORN.

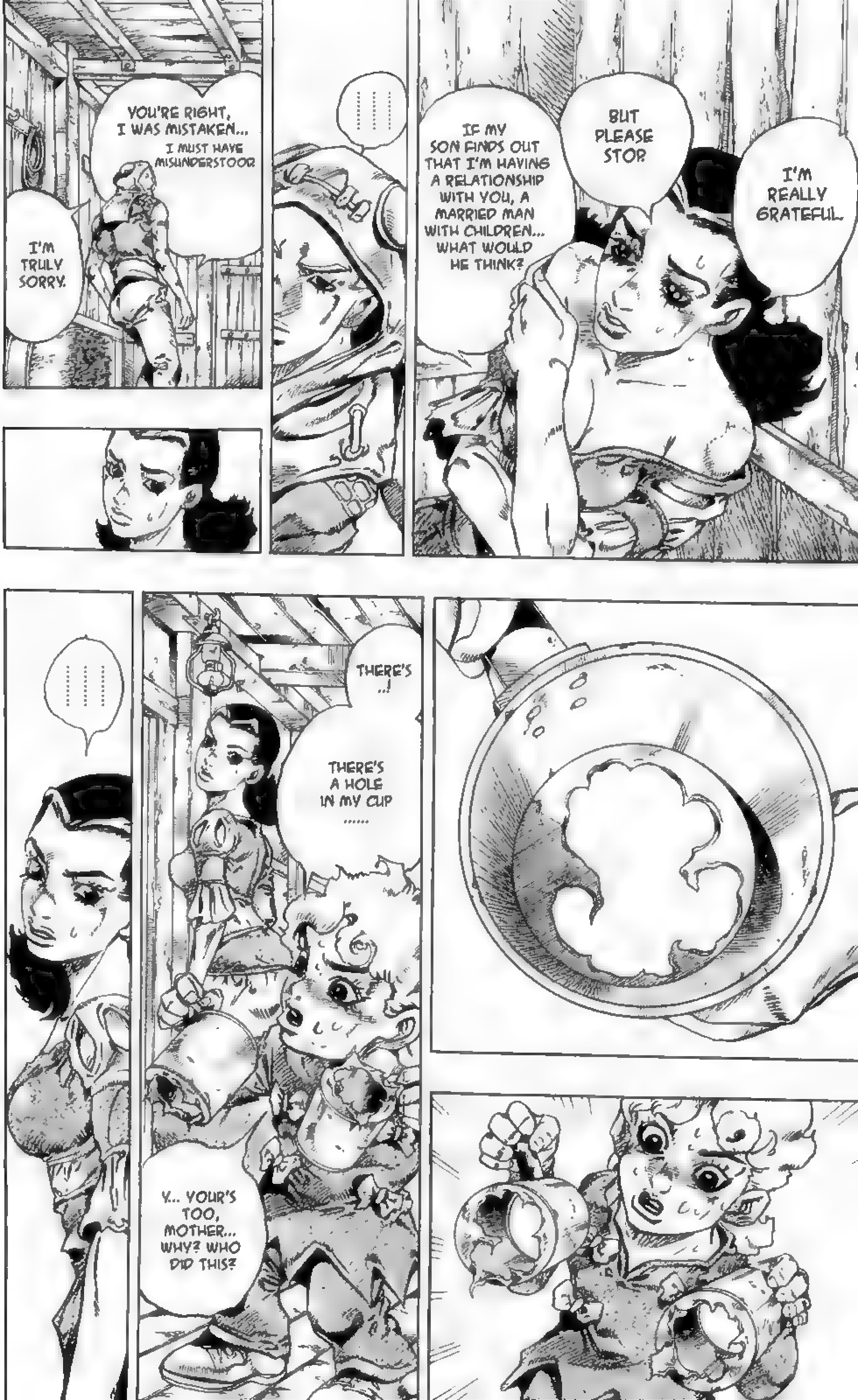
BUT A LITTLE WHILE LATER, IT STARTED TO RAIN.
THE WATER IN THE RIVER INCREASED AND STARTED TO FLOOR

ドドド
ドドドドド
ONCE WE HAVE A STABLE LIFE, WE CAN HAVE AS MANY BABIES AS WE WANT!!
DON'T! HE MUST HAVE DIED A LONG TIME AGO!
WE'LL HAVE ANOTHER BABY SOME TIME! THAT ONE DIED BY ACCIDENT IN THE FLOOD OKAY?
YOU HAD A NAME FOR THAT CHILD!?
DIEGO!!
OOOH!!
WHAT! HOW DARE YOU SCORN YOUR HUSBAND LIKE THAT!
IF YOU WOULD JUST QUIT YOUR DRINKING!
WE WERE WRONG! I DON'T NEED MONEY!

DIEGO!!
DIO!
DIOO OOO!
DI...
ACKK..
HAH!
SHE'S DROWNING... THAT STUPID WOMAN.
NOW I GOT RID OF BOTH OF THEM....
GOOD RIDDANCE!
KKH!
ACKK!
KH... HAA!

OOOH!! HE... HE'S ALIVE....!
I'M SORRY! I'M SORRY! I WON'T EVER DO IT AGAIN! ..... EVER!
OH CHILD WITH SUCH POWER OF LIFE!
THANK YOU LORD!!
THANK YOU!
AFTER THE RAIN STOPPED THE MOTHER AND CHILD WERE FOUND UNCONSCIOUS DOWN THE RIVER...
... BY A MAN WHO WAS EMPLOYED AT A FARM.
THE WOMAN CHANGED HER SURNAME TO 'BRANDO' ...
... AND BEGAN TO DO WORK FOR THE FARM.

BUT THEIR LIVES OF POVERTY DID NOT IMPROVE A BIT.
DIO, DID YOU GROW THINNER?
HERE! EAT MY PORTION TOO.
DIEGO BRANDO HAD TURNED FIVE.
AT THAT TIME, HE WAS ALREADY TAKING CARE OF THE HORSES.
I JUST GREW TALLER...
I'M ALREADY FULL!
I HAVEN'T GOTTEN SKINNY.
OOOH
PLEASE DON'T...
STOP...
P... PLEASE STOP
THEY WORKED FROM DUSK TO DAWN...
... AND WERE ONLY GIVEN A PLACE TO SLEEP, EATING UTENSILS, AND BARELY ANY FOOD...
THERE WAS NO PLACE ELSE THEY COULD GO.
S... STOP IT!
WHAT IS IT...?
I LIKE YOU.
COME ON, JUST A LITTLE BIT...
IT'S BEEN 5 YEARS NOW... IS THIS HOW YOU TREAT THE PERSON YOU OWE YOUR LIFE TO?


YOU'RE RIGHT, I WAS MISTAKEN...
I MUST HAVE MISUNDERSTOOD.
I'M TRULY SORRY.
......
IF MY SON FINDS OUT THAT I'M HAVING A RELATIONSHIP WITH YOU, A MARRIED MAN WITH CHILDREN... WHAT WOULD HE THINK?
BUT PLEASE STOP.
I'M REALLY GRATEFUL.
......
THERE'S ...!
THERE'S A HOLE IN MY CUP ......
Y... YOUR'S TOO, MOTHER... WHY? WHO DID THIS?

GATHER AROUND EVERYBODY!
TIME FOR YOUR MEAL!! LINE UP!
OH NO.
LAD..
THERE'S A HOLE IN YOUR CUP THERE.
WHAT A WASTE, ONE PERSON'S WORTH WAS JUST SPILLED!
NOW I CAN'T GIVE YOU THE NICE WARM STEW.
AND THESE UTENSILS ARE THE LANDLORD'S. WE NEED TO BE CAREFUL, DON'T WE.
SOMEBODY PUT HOLES IN OUR CUPS.
IT WASN'T ME OR MY MOTHER.
OH! REALLY?
WHO IN THE WORLD DID IT? ...... BE SURE TO TELL ME IF YOU FIND OUT WHO DID.
YOUNG LAD
......

BUT SINCE YOU BROKE THE LANDLORD'S UTENSILS, YOU MUST BUY NEW ONES .......
THREE POUNDS.
ALL RIGHT.
......
MAY WE JUST BORROW A COUPLE OF CUPS?
ME AND MY SON ...
WE CANNOT EAT WITHOUT THEM.
BUT, OH YES!
WELL, WE'VE KNOWN EACH OTHER FOR 5 YEARS SO MAYBE WE CAN WORK THIS OUT.
ADVANCES AREN'T PERMITTED HERE... I'M DEEPLY SORRY.
I... DON'T HAVE THAT MUCH NOW...
ONCE I RECEIVE MY SALARY I CAN PAY YOU BACK.
......
IN HERE! COULD WE HAVE THE STEW ■ HERE? EVEN JUST ONE PERSON'S WORTH.
DON'T BE A FOOL, BOY! THAT'S THE ANIMAL'S PALE!
THE COWS AND SHEEP DON'T WANT THE SMELL OF GRAVY IN THEIR BUCKET!

......
EVERYBODY ELSE IS WAITING THEIR TURN.
SORRY, BUT COULD YOU MOVE ASIDE?
WE'VE GOT OUR SHOES...
WE CAN HAVE HIM POUR THE SOUP INSIDE HERE!
MOTHER, I'M NOT EVEN HUNGRY ANYWAYS.
?
HUH?
WHAT A GREAT IDEA!
BUT I JUST THOUGHT OF SOMETHING TERRIFIC!

!?
COULD I HAVE SOME STEW...
PLEASE...
INSIDE THESE HANDS?

......
WILL YOU PLEASE POUR THE STEW?
DIO'S PORTION ....
GO AHEAD, PLEASE.
RIGHT HERE...
IN THESE HANDS...

ST...
STO...!
STOP IIIIIT!!
THANK....
.........
YOU... VERY MUCH.
M... MO..
MOTHER!

NOW...
I'VE GOTTEN SOME. GO ON AND EAT, DIO...
MOTHER, LET GO!!
HURRY! I'M NOT HUNGRY!
NO MATTER HOW POOR WE ARE, WE CANNOT FORGET OUR DIGNITY.
WHAT ABOUT TOMORROW? AND THE NEXT DAY? AND THE NEXT?
UUUUGHH...
UUGH...
AAAGH
EAT THIS AND GROW BIG..... AND STRONG....
SO THAT YOU CAN GROW UP..... AND SO THAT YOU CAN PROTECT YOUR MOTHER....
WAAAAAAAH!!

UUUGH!!
AAAAAAAAAAAAH!
WE CAN BUY NEW CUPS NEXT MONTH.
BUT UNTIL THEN... GO ON AND EAT THIS.
DIEGO BRANDO'S MOTHER CONTINUED TO WORK AND WORK.
A YEAR LATER SHE CAUGHT A DISEASE CALLED TETANUS, AND DIED AT THE YOUNG AGE OF 23.
DIO BELIEVED THAT
THE GERMS THAT CAME IN THROUGH HER BURNS WERE THE CAUSE OF HER DISEASE...
... AND INTUITIVELY KNEW THAT THE 'MAN' WAS THE CAUSE OF HER DEATH.

AS DIO GREW OLDER HE SWORE TO HIMSELF ....
"AND ALL OF YOU AT THE FARM WHO LOOKED DOWN ON US JUST BECAUSE IT WASN'T CLEAR WHO MY FATHER WAS! YOU ALL ABANDONED MY MOTHER."
"YOU DISPOSED OF US BOTH. AND MY FATHER; GOD KNOWS WHERE HE IS! AND THE OWNER OF THE FARM! I'LL NEVER FORGIVE ANY OF YOU!"
"TO FIND THAT 'MAN' AND GET REVENGE!"
"YOU'RE ALL GUILTY!"
BLOODY COUNTRY-FUCKS! I'LL CLIMB TO THE TOP OF SOCIETY!
IF ANYBODY GETS IN MY WAY, I'LL PUT THEM THROUGH HUMILIATION
WORSE THAN GETTING STEW IN THEIR SHOES; I'LL SLASH THROUGH THEIR 'PRIDE' AND SCATTER IT ON THE GROUND!

BEFORE TAKING HER LAST BREATH, DIO'S MOTHER SAID TO HIM...
DON'T BE SAD. IT'S ALL BECAUSE OF MY SIN. IT'S NOT YOUR FAULT.
BUT, DIO...
EVEN THE UNTAMABLE HORSES ON THIS FARM LISTEN TO YOU WHEN YOU COME NEAR AND WILL EAT FROM YOUR HANDS.
YOU SHOULD TRY RIDING THEM WHEN YOU GROW A LITTLE OLDER......
THAT'S YOUR TALENT......
THE GLORY OF THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE!
IT HAS THE POWER TO INFLUENCE EVEN THE ROYAL FAMILY OF ENGLAND!
ANY MEANS WILL BE TAKEN TO MEET THAT END!

GWA
AAA
AAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAA
AAA
AA
AAR!
OUH!
OUH!
ドドドドドドド

GO, JOHNNY! GO!
DIO IS BACK!! GO DEEPER!
NYO

GO TO THE OTHER SIDE THROUGH THE SEWAGE!
BHAA!!
GYAAAWR!
HAA!
WHAT IS THIS!?
DIO'S ABILITY! THAT BEAR THAT HE KILLED! EVEN THAT BEAR BECAME A DINOSAUR!!
WHO KNOWS! HURRY UP AND GO DEEPER!

THAT 'ROCKY HILL' AT THE BIG DIPPER IS ON THE CLIFF ACROSS THE CANYON!!
I'M GUESSING THE 'CORPSE' IS SOMEWHERE IN THE DENT OF THE PEAK! IT'S PROBABLY ONLY A 200 OR 300 METER CLIMB!!
AFTER WE GET OUT OF HERE, WE'LL CLIMB DOWN THE CLIFF AND UP THE CANYON IN THE DARK!!
RIGHT! ...
WE'LL GET THE 'CORPSE' FROM THE MOUNTAIN AND THEN WE'RE OUT OF HERE!
BUT GYRO, WHAT ABOUT OUR HORSES!?
NO! HE WOULDN'T DO THAT.
DIO'S GOAL IS TO GET YOUR 'LEFT HAND' AND.. OUR LIVES.
BESIDES, A GUY LIKE HIM WHO'S MADE HIS LIFE AS A JOCKEY WOULDN'T KILL A HORSE!
'VALKYRIE' WILL COME FIND US IN THE MORNING.
I SURE HOPE SO ...
THE HORSES!
THEY'LL BE EATEN BY DIO!
RUSTLE
RUSTLE

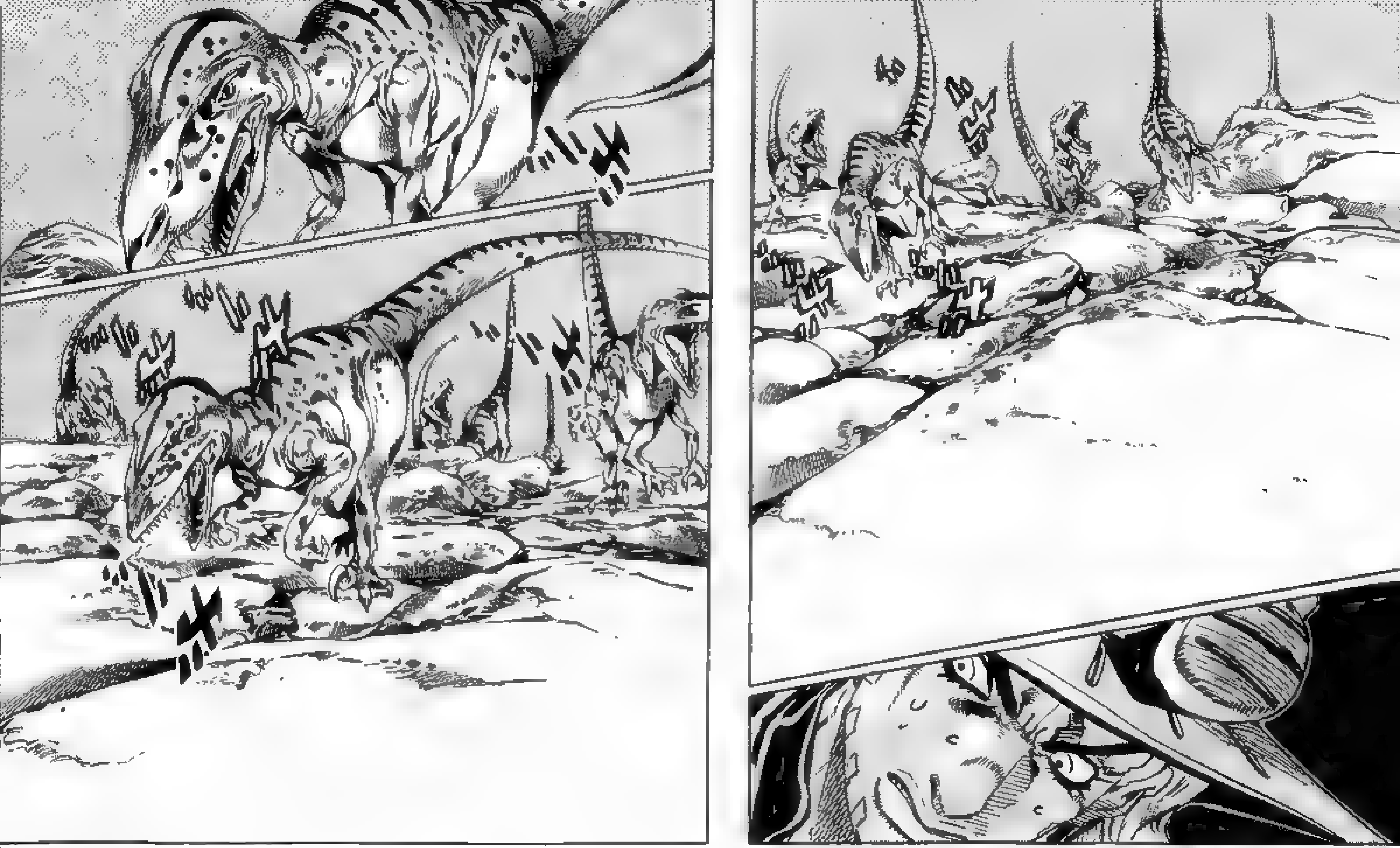
HEY, WHAT THE HELL!! SOME 'SMALL' ONES CAME IN!

DINOSAURS!
EVEN THOUGH THEY'RE SMALL, THEY'RE STILL DINOSAURS!
DIO MUST HAVE SENT THEM IN!

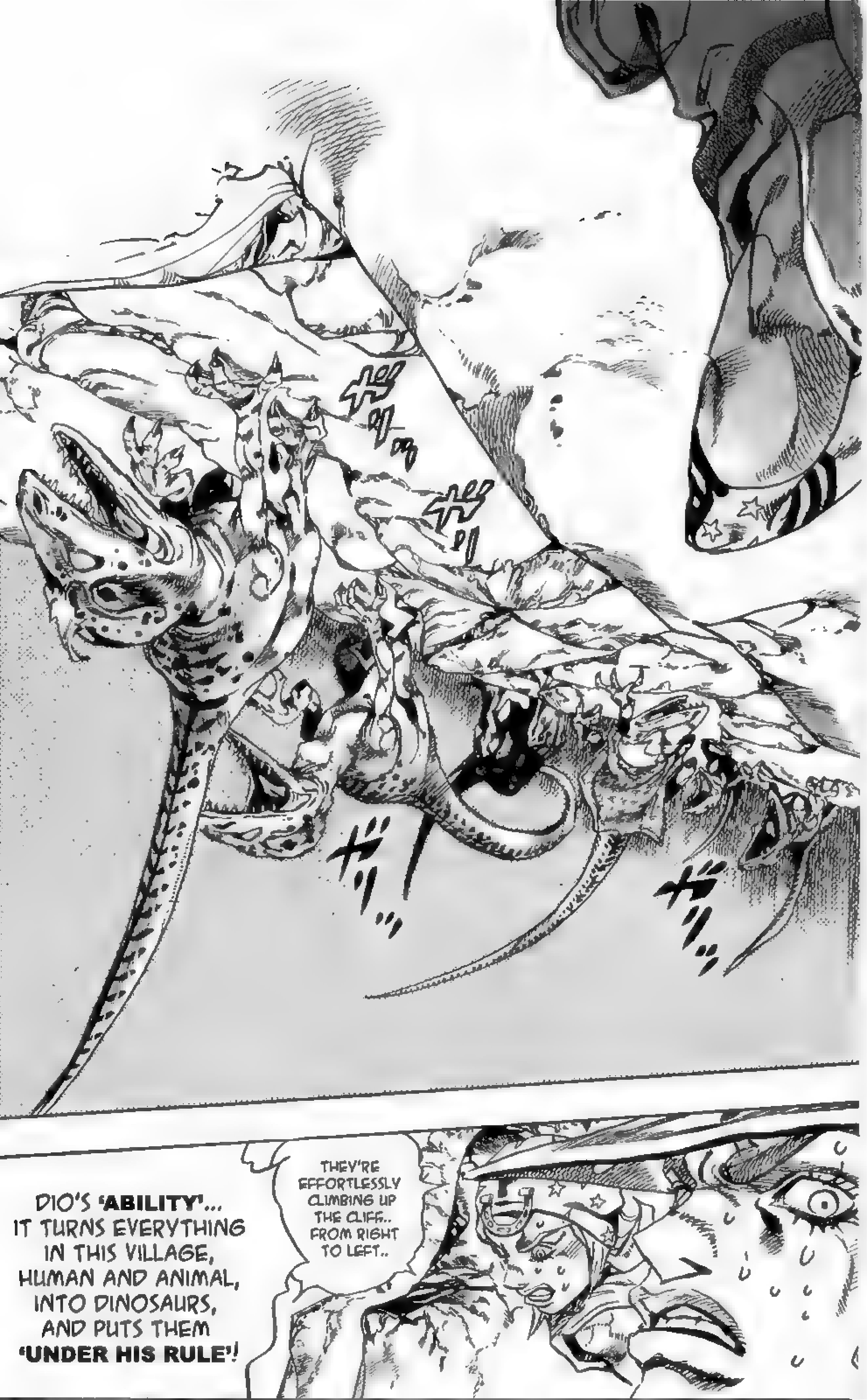
IT...!!
WOAAAH!
IT PISSED ON ME!
MY 'TUSK' WON'T HIT THEM AT ALL!
THEY HAVE THE SAME DYNAMIC VISION!!

UWOOOO OOOOOOO OOOOO OOOA!
TH... THERE'S MORE COMING! IT'S THE SMELL! THEY'RE COMING AFTER THE SMELL OF THEIR OWN PISS!
MICE!
THEY'RE BACK TO NORMAL AFTER DROPPING DEAD! THESE 'SMALL' DINOSAURS WERE JUST SEWER MICE.

RUSTLE!
RUSTLE!
RUSTLE!
.......
.......
THE NEXT BUNCH IS COMING! DIO WILL SEND MORE MICE!
JOHNNY, HURRY! GET OUT OF THE GUTTER!
CLING ON TO A ROCK IN THE SHADOW AND BE STILL! WE NEED TO FINISH THIS BEFORE CLIMBING DOWN THE CANYON!
.......
WHAT ARE YOU DOING! GO DOWN THE ROCKS!!
N... NO, GYRO.
WE.... WE CAN'T... GO...
DOWN THE CLIFF... THERE'S NO WAY WE'RE GOING TO CROSS THE CANYON AND GET TO THAT HILL...



W..... WE'RE SURROUNDED!
THEY'VE ALREADY BEEN TURNED INTO DINOSAURS.
THOSE ARE THE VILLAGERS...


THEY'RE EFFORTLESSLY CLIMBING UP THE CLIFF.. FROM RIGHT TO LEFT..
DIO'S 'ABILITY'... IT TURNS EVERYTHING IN THIS VILLAGE, HUMAN AND ANIMAL, INTO DINOSAURS, AND PUTS THEM 'UNDER HIS RULE'!

ドドド
ドドド

DIO'S COMING FROM ABOVE!
DON'T PANIC... NO MATTER HOW MANY THERE ARE... AS LONG AS WE DON'T MOVE, THEY'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO SEE US!
BUT GYRO, IF DIO'S PURPOSE .........
... IS TO SIDE ALL THE VILLAGERS WITH HIMSELF.. AND TO TAKE MY 'LEFT ARM'......
THE 'DINOSAUR INFECTION' WILL SPREAD, EVEN THROUGH A SCRATCH CAUSED BY DIO'S CLAWS... EVEN THROUGH A SMALL SCRATCH, THE INFECTION WILL SPREAD..
HUH?

HUH!!
IT WAS ONLY A SMALL SCRATCH...
DIO WAS HOLDING DOWN YOUR NECK AND ARM WITH HIS FEET BACK IN THE HUT.
... BUT HE DID WOUND YOU!! BOTH YOU AND ME!
WHAAAAAT!
WE'VE ALREADY BEEN INFECTED! WE'RE GOING TO TURN INTO DINOSAURS!
IT'S... HAPPENING TO ME TOO!

YOU HAVE TO BE KID- DING!

HOW MUCH LONGER DO YOU THINK WE'LL LAST!?
WE WON'T LAST! WE PROBABLY WON'T LAST THREE MINUTES! ...
UNTIL WE TURN INTO DINOSAURS!
GUESSING FROM WHAT HAPPENED WITH THAT 'BEAR' AT THE HUT! THERE'S NO MORE TIME!!
ドドドド
THIS SITUATION ...
WHAT DO WE DO?
ドドドド
SHOULD WE CUT OFF YOUR 'LEFT ARM' AND HAND IT OVER ............ AND BEG FOR OUR LIVES?
OR CAN WE DEFEAT DIO QUICK ENOUGH? DEFEAT THE 'ROOT CAUSE' WITHIN THREE MINUTES!

HE UNLEASHED MORE OF THOSE 'MICE'!!
DON'T MOVE! JOHNNY, DON'T MOVE, NO MATTER WHAT!

JUST IGNORE THOSE FOR NOW!!
DON'T YOU GET IT!? WE HAVE THEIR 'PISS' ON US! THAT'S WHAT THEY'RE AFTER! THEIR AIM IS 'FIXED'!
DIO IS TRYING TO FIND OUR EXACT POSITION WITH THOSE 'SMALL' ONES!

WE NEED TO FIGHT OR WE'LL BE KILLED!
WE NEED TO FINISH THEM NOW!
NO, JOHNNY.
THERE'S ONE MORE THING WE HAVE TO DO.
WHAT WE NEED TO ACCOMPLISH IN THE NEXT THREE MINUTES..
IS TO GET THE 'HOLY CORPSE'...
... THAT'S ACROSS THAT CLIFF!!
THE PROGRESSION OF YOUR WOUNDS IS GETTING SLOWER...
THE SCALES ON YOUR LEFT ARM ARE FADING AWAY.
I'M THE ONLY ONE TURNING INTO A DINOSAUR ...
IT MUST BE BECAUSE YOU HAVE THE 'CORPSE PART' IN YOUR LEFT HAND!

SHAA
THE 'HOLY POWER' OF THE 'CORPSE' IS FIGHTING THE INFECTION!!
IF WE GET THE 'NEXT CORPSE PART' ON THAT ROCKY HILL! THEN WE CAN NEGATE MY INFECTION TOO!!

THEY'VE FOUND US, GYRO!
I SAID IGNORE THEM.. JOHNNY, FACE THIS WAY!
WHAT?
HERE WE GO! JUMP OFF, JOHNNY!!
THERE'S AN OPENING TO THE CANYON!
SEE! NOW!

RUN!
GO!
GO!!
GO, JOHNNY! GO!
HOLY SHIIIIT!

WHAT ARE WE DOING!! THERE'S NO WAY WE CAN JUMP ACROSS! IT'S TOO FAAAAR!

EXACTLY.
THERE'S NO WAY TO JUMP ACROSS... FOR THEM!
UNLESS DIO IS A DINOSAUR WITH WINGS, THAT IS ........
AND I DON'T SEE ANY OF THOSE HERE!
GRAB ONTO THE 'TREE BARK' THAT I SHAVED OFF WITH MY STEEL BALL!
GWAAR

BHAA!
GRR
BHAAAA ... GRRR ...
HE'S HAVING THEM COME AFTER US AGAIN!
FORGET DIO!
THEY'RE GOING TO TRY TO GET HERE BY CLIMBING UP FROM BELOW!
EVEN IF THEY ARE DINOSAURS, IT WILL TAKE THEM AT LEAST A FEW MINUTES TO GET HERE!
ANYWAY ....
WE WEREN'T WRONG...
I GUESS..
TO ASSUME THAT IT WAS HERE...!!
WE WERE RIGHT!

FROM THE BOTTOM .....
THE SAND ... ON THE GROUND IS MOVING ....
WHAT KIND OF PRINCIPLE IS THIS? .... COMING UP FROM BELOW!?
THE 'CORPSE' IS RESPONDING TO ANOTHER PART OF THE 'CORPSE'! THEY'RE CALLING EACH OTHER BECAUSE YOU CAME CLOSE!
ISN'T IT BECAUSE IT'S REACTING TO YOUR LEFT ARM? ...
IF THIS IS THE SAME AS THAT TIME IN THE 2ND STAGE!
THEN IT'S VERY CLOSE! FOR REAL!
......
TH... THE 'POSITIONS OF THE ROCKS' ....
IT'S THE 'DEVIL'S PALM'! WH... WHERE IS IT! WHERE IS THE NEXT CORPSE PART BURIED!?
IT'S LIKE A 'PALM'.

MY BODY'S GETTING WORSE! LET'S HURRY UP AND FIND IT AND GET THE HELL OUT OF THIS MOUNTAIN!
CLIMB UP, JOHNNY!
BHAAAAAAAA
HMM

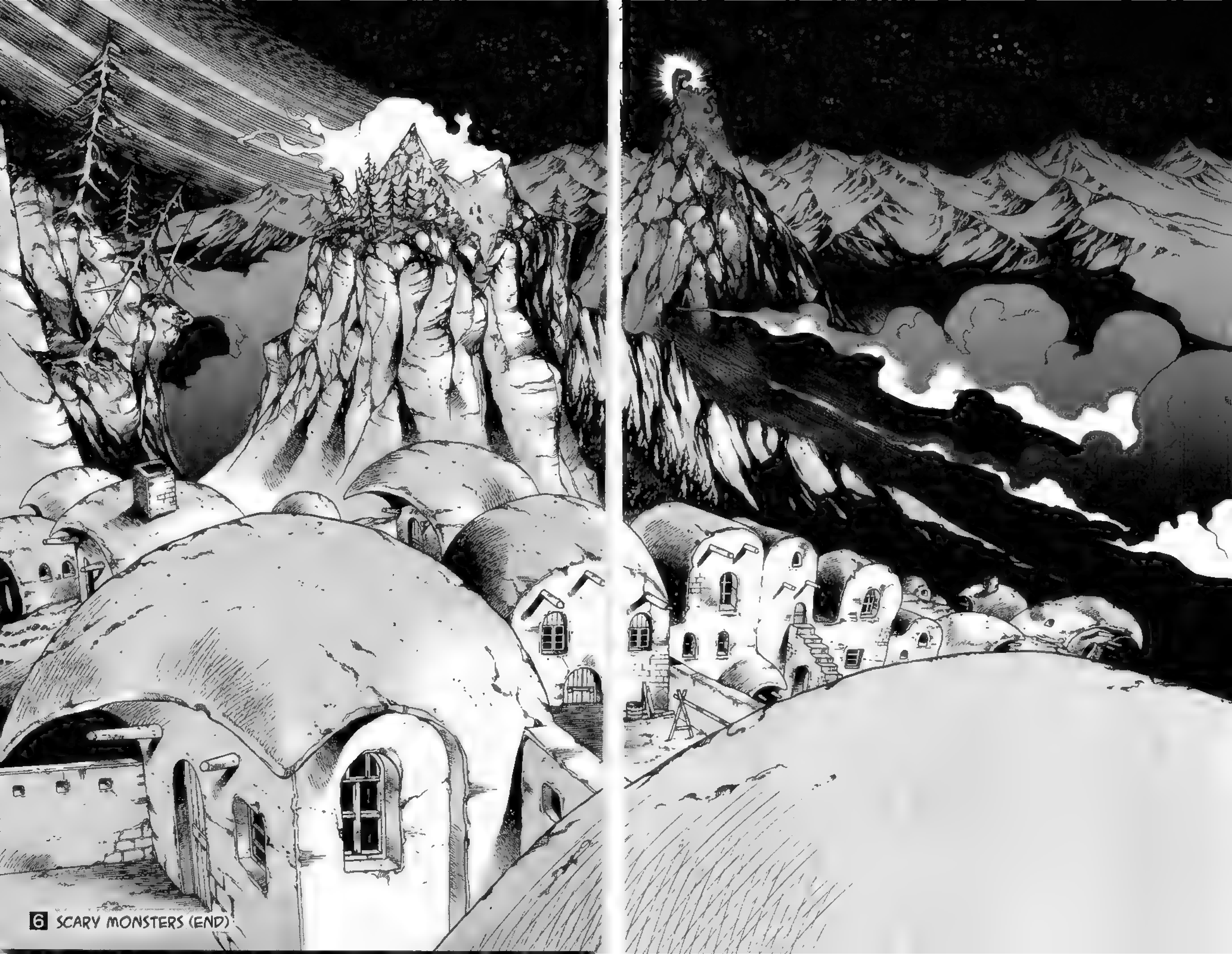
ドドドド
......
HA.......
ドドド
GYRO, LOOK... ABOVE ........
!!.......
ABOVE YOU...!! WHAT.... IS THAT...!?
ドドドド

... NO, I THOUGHT IT WAS A 'STATUE' ...
BUT THAT'S NO STATUE ........
IT'S HOLLOW BENEATH THE SAND..
IT'S ONLY SAND COVERING A 'HOLLOW SHAPE'....
IT'S A 'SHAPE OF ENERGY'... A 'STAND', THE 'SHAPE OF A STAND'!!!
THERE'S SOMETHING IN THE 'PART SHAPED LIKE A HAND'!
OH MAN... IT'S.... T... TAKING OVER MY MIND....
IT HAS SOMETHING IN ITS HAND! THAT'S IT! THERE'S SOMETHING INSIDE!
THOSE ARE THE 'CORPSE PARTS'!
THE NEXT CORPSE PARTS ARE THE 'EYES'!
INSIDE THE HANDS ...
... ARE BOTH EYES!!

G.... GET THEM.
I'M JUST ABOUT TO BECOME A DINOSAUR.
... BUT WE WIN!!
JOHNNY! IF THEY'RE THERE... YOU GO AND GET THEM!
GWAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAR!
HUH
?
GA?
HEY, JOHNNY... I CAN SEE THIS CLEARLY...
DIO JUST KNOCKED TWO OF HIS DINO FRIENDS OFF THE CLIFF! HE JUMPED OFF.... !!

GWE!
GYAAA
GWE!

HUH!?
WHA ...!? WHAT JUST ...!!?
HAAA
NOOOO OOOO!! DIO TOOK THE 'EYES'!!


6 SCARY MONSTERS (END)

9784088741178
1929979003906
ISBN4-08-874117-X
C9979 ¥390E
定価 本体390円+税
雑誌 42982−17

JUMP COMICS
覚醒ジャイロ
STEEL BALL RUN
VOL. 7
荒木飛呂彦
4th.STAGE突入!!
ウルトラジャンプにて大好評連載中!
詳しい情報はウラに!
STEEL BALL RUN
7
荒木飛呂彦
集英社
9784088741178
1929979003906
ISBN4-08-874117-X
C9979 ¥390E
定価 本体390円+税
雑誌 42982-17
4th.STAGEは カンザス・シティへと続く
不気味な大平原!!
奇才・荒木飛呂彦が描く驚愕のストーリー
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
ウルトラジャンプ
にて大激走連載中ッ!!
http://ultra.shueisha.co.jp

ジャンプコミックス

★各巻とも好評発売中!!

ONE PIECE 1～40
テニスの王子様 1～32
NARUTO－ナルト－ 1～31
HUNTER×HUNTER 1～23
こちら葛飾区亀有公園前派出所 1～148
アイシールド21 1～18
BLEACH 1～21
Mr.FULLSWING 1～22
ヒューと吹く!ジャガー 1～10
ボボボーボ・ボーボボ 1～20
武装錬金 1～9
DEATH NOTE 1～10
銀魂－ぎんたま－ 1～11
家庭教師ヒットマンREBORN! 1～8
D.Gray-man 1～7
ムヒョとロージーの魔法律相談事務所 1～5
魔人探偵脳噛ネウロ 1～4
カイン 1～3
タカヤ 1～3
みえるひと 1～2
太臓もて王サーガ 1～2
大泥棒ポルタ 1
べしゃり暮らし 1
DRAGON BALL 1～42
遊☆戯☆王 1～38
SLAM DUNK 1～31
ヒカルの碁 1～23
BLACK CAT 1～20
幕張☆白書 1～19
いちご100% 1～19
冒険王ビィト 1～10
風飛び一斗 1～21
CLAYMORE 1～9
魔砲使い黒姫 1～9
ギャグマンガ日和 1～7
黒いラブレター 1～4
NORA 1～5
ロザリオとバンパイア 1～5
GO AHEAD 1～2
樋口大輔短編集2 ア・ラ・カルト
DRAGON DRIVE 1～14
BASTARD!! 1～23
STEEL BALL RUN 1～7
忍空 1
陰陽大戦記 1～3
遊☆戯☆王R 1～2
スライムもりもり 1
じゃんぷる 1～5

インターネットでも集英社のコミックスが購入できます。
書店受取なら送料無料!
http://www.s-manga.net/


PHOTOGRAPHED BY M.H

荒木飛呂彦

Before I (Araki) have realized I've reached my mid-40's) and if I'm to live up to 70 or 80, I've already passed the half-way point. This is a semi-difficult topic, but I'm starting to wonder if this is okay the way things are going. Am I walking the 'right path'? There is a need for 'satisfaction' and both Gyro and Johnny are seeking 'satisfaction' in this race, and this is infact the theme of this series, and...

(continues to vol. 8)

LOVE

JUMP COMICS
East & West Tribune
Since 1840
スティール・ボール・ラン
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
広い広い大草原の小さな墓標
VOL. 7
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
集英社
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together, makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get
ジャンプ・コミックス

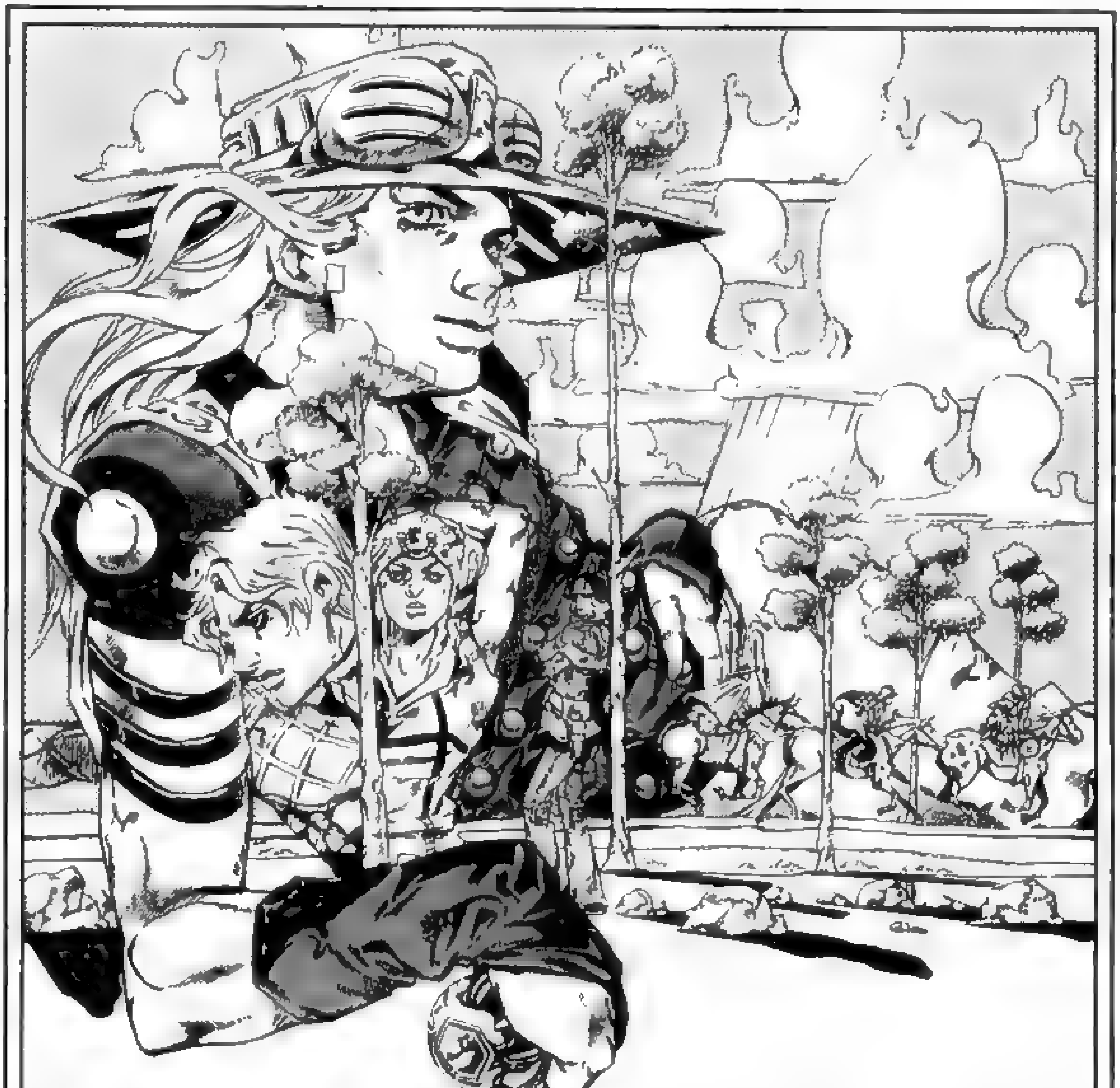
JUMP COMICS

JOJO'S BIZARRE ADVENTURE Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

THE SMALL TOMBSTONE ON THE WIDE, WIDE FIELD

vol.7



## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE
1st.STAGE、走行妨害によるペナルティを受け、1位を逃してしまったジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。アリゾナ砂漠を越える2nd.STAGE、最短ルートを目指し砂漠の真ん中を突き進むジャイロとジョニィにテロリスト達が襲いかかる！
戦いの最中、ジョニィは、『不思議な力』が身に付くという『悪魔の手のひら』と呼ばれる土地でジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』こそが、彼らの目的である事に気付く。そしてＳＢＲレースがその『死体集め』の為のレースであった事にも。『死体』の力で爪を回転させ発射させる能力（タスク）を得たジョニィはスタンドに希望を感じ、残る『死体』を集める事を決意。それが、アメリカ合衆国大統領の陰謀であるとも知らずに…。
ジャイロの鉄球とジョニィのタスクでテロリスト達を倒した二人は再び走り出す。そしてゴールまで残りわずかのところで先頭を走るディオとサンドマンに追いつく。だが接戦の末、2nd.STAGEを制したのはディオだった!!
全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！
GOAL NEW YORK
2nd.STAGE 1,200km
1st. STAGE 15,000m
3rd.STAGE 510km
START SAN DIEGO
そして選手達はそのまま、ロッキー山脈を越える3rd.STAGEへ突入！
二つ目の『死体』の在処を突き止めたジャイロとジョニィに突如、スタンド能力で恐竜と化したディオが襲いかかる！
その攻撃をかわしながら、ようやく死体に辿り着くものの、ディオに奪われてしまい…!?
『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3600人を超えた！
そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！
ジャイロ・ツェペリ
ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家転覆罪で捕まったマルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である『国王の恩赦』を得る為にレースに参加。
ジョニィ・ジョースター
元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見い出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。死体の一部「左腕」を持つ。
ファニー・ヴァレンタイン
第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、死体を集めようとしている。ジョニィが死体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。死体の一部「心臓」を持つ。
砂男サンドマン
ネイティブアメリカンの青年。白人に奪われた部族の土地を取り戻す為、己の足のみでレースに参加。
ディエゴ・ブランドー
通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。
スティール夫人
スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!?
スティーブン・スティール
40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.7

## CONTENTS

THE SMALL TOMBSTONE ON THE WIDE, WIDE FIELD


#31
SCARY MONSTERS ④ 7

#32
3RD STAGE GOAL: CANON CITY 71

#33
THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD 127


STARDUST CRUSADERS • THE JOJO PROJECT

# #31 SCARY MONSTERS ④

TURRR.....
'T·U·R·
...B·Ô'
BO
........
........
......
......
......

!
ドドド
BŌ
TURRRR ......
TH ...
THAT THING ...!?

... TUR ...... BŌ
ドドドド
IT..... IT'S WHISPERING.
THE SAME! IT'S THE SAME AS WITH MY LEFT ARM.
THE 'STAND' IS WHISPERING 'WORDS' TO DIO!
THE LETTERS ON MY LEFT ARM ARE DISAPPEARING! THERE'S NO MORE USE FOR THESE!
TURBŌ
ドドドド
THAT THING IS SPEAKING THE LOCATION OF THE NEXT PIECE OF THE CORPSE!!
ALREADY, THE PLACE OF THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'...!!

AND IT'S TELLING DIO!
TURRRRR... 'T·U·R ·B·O'... BO

T U R
B Ō

EAT THIS DIO!!
HUH!?
I WON'T LET YOU HAVE THAT 'CORPSE'!
UH...
'STEEL BALLS'.....!! UUH.....
N...
NO...
GYRO!
OH...

YES, YOU THERE......
HEY, JOHNNY...
I'M TALKING TO YOU, JOHNNY JOESTAR.
YOU THREW IT AWAY, DIDN'T YOU?
WHAT DID YOU JUST DO?
YOU
YOU LITTERED THAT 'NAIL' OF YOUR'S
ON THIS GROUND ...
ARE YOU THAT GREAT? ARE YOU GREATER THAN THIS GRACIOUS 'EARTH'?
... IT'S PROOF THAT YOU DON'T RESPECT THIS 'GROUND' ........
DON'T BE THROWING AWAY THOSE SORT OF THINGS.
I'M TALKING ABOUT THAT 'NAIL', JOHNNY JOESTAR.
THE FACT THAT YOU CARELESSLY THROW AWAY TRASH AND THINGS LIKE THAT...
.........
!?
WHAT!? .....
HAAA AAAAA
UWAA AAA, GYRO OO!

......
......
......
!?
WHO'S THAT? FROM UNDER THE CLIFF ......
WH? ...
ALL RIGHT!
YOU'VE DONE WELL, 'DIEGO BRANDO'
I ESTEEM YOUR PLAN AND DECISIVENESS ON JUMPING ACROSS THE CLIFF..
I WAS RIGHT IN TURNING YOU INTO A 'DINOSAUR' AND MAKING YOU THE LEADER.
HAAAAAAA
ドドド
ドドドド

H... HUH?
WHAT IS THIS!? WHO IS THIS GUY!?
NOW, SHALL I HAVE YOUR 'LEFT ARM' ALSO... JOHNNY JOESTAR.
BUT LET ME NOT FORGET MY MANNERS, EVEN TO A SCUM WHO DOES NOT RESPECT THE EARTH ...
ALLOW ME TO INTRODUCE MYSELF MY NAME IS 'FERDINAND', I AM A GEOLOGIST AND BIOLOGIST OF ANCIENT CREATURES. CALL ME 'PROFESSOR FERDINAND'.
I ACQUIRED THIS 'ABILITY' TWO YEARS AGO IN ARIZONA WHILE SEARCHING FOR THE 'DEVIL'S PALM'.
I'VE NAMED THIS 'ABILITY' 'SCARY MONSTERS'
SO I TRANSFORMED DIEGO BRANDO INTO A DINOSAUR TO COLLECT THAT 'LEFT ARM' THERE, AND I TRACED HIM.
THEN DIO INFECTED THE ENTIRE VILLAGE.
I WASN'T EXPECTING THAT YOU TWO WOULD FIND THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'...
THESE EYES FOR ME, THOUGH.

SO.....!! YOU WERE THE 'STAND USER'!!
THIS WASN'T DIO'S ABILITY...
IT WAS YOUR 'RULE'!!
WHAT A BRILLIANT 'CORPSE' ......
MY HAND IS SHAKING WITH EXCITEMENT.
I KNOW FOR A FACT THAT THE CORPSE OF 'SAN FRANCISCO JAVIER', WHO EVANGELIZED TO THE EAST, HAS NOT ROTTED ...
BUT THIS FAR SURPASSES THAT.
THIS FRESHNESS MAKES IT HARD TO BELIEVE THAT IT'S FROM A 1900 YEAR OLD CORPSE.....
...... WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?
1900 YEARS OLD?
THIS CONTINENT HADN'T BEEN DISCOVERED THEN.
......... ......

YOU TWO.....
YOU WERE AFTER THESE WITHOUT KNOWING ANYTHING?
NOT EVEN 'WHO' THIS CORPSE BELONGS TO...
OOP! I MAY HAVE SAID SOMETHING UNNECESSARY THERE.....
BUT ANYHOW... I WILL HAVE TO HAVE YOU BOTH DEAD EITHER WAY.
SPIT
WAIT A SECOND, JOHNNY JOESTAR .....
YOU..... WHAT DID YOU JUST DO?
WEREN'T YOU LISTENING TO WHAT I WAS SAYING?
YOU JUST SPAT DIDN'T YOU? YOU SPAT ON THE GROUND
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT? AND WHO ARE YOU TERRORISTS ANYWAYS?
GEOLOGIST, YOU SAY? THAT'S NO ORDINARY 'TERRORIST' ....
SEARCHING FROM 2 YEARS AGO? .... I'VE BEEN THINKING FROM BEFORE... ARE YOU GOVERNMENT RELATED? .... IS THE TERRORIST THIS NATION ITSELF?

I THOUGHT I SAID TO RESPECT THE 'EARTH'!
THE WORLD IS FULL OF PEOPLE LIKE YOU.
DO YOU KNOW WHY THE 'DINOSAURS' SUDDENLY PERISHED WHEN THEY WERE PROSPERING ON THIS EARTH?
IT'S BECAUSE THEY WERE IDIOTS WHO DIDN'T UNDERSTAND THE CONCEPT OF 'RESPECT'!
THEY DIDN'T 'RESPECT' THE 'EARTH'! THAT'S WHY THEY PERISHED! ........ I'M TALKING ABOUT SOMETHING OF SCIENTIFIC SIGNIFICANCE.
ANYONE WHO VIOLATES THE 'EARTH' WILL ONLY PENALIZE THEMSELVES!!
THAT DEEP CAUSAL RELATIONSHIP CAN'T BE UNDERSTOOD BY THEIR PATHETIC BRAINS!
WHY IN THE WORLD ARE YOU SEARCHING FOR THE CORPSE PARTS?
WHAT'S YOUR MOTIVE?
IS IT BECAUSE YOU WANT TO CURE YOUR LAME FEET?
IS IT FOR 'ETERNAL LIFE' OR 'INVINCIBLE POWER'?

I'M NOT SPEAKING OF SUCH INFERIOR THINGS ....
IF ALL THE PARTS OF THIS CORPSE COME TOGETHER, IT WITH BECOME 'THE CORPSE THAT IS RESPECTED' BY ALL HUMANITY.
'RES-PECT' IS 'PROS-PE-RI-TY'!
THE ONE WHO COLLECTS ALL THE PARTS OF THIS 'CORPSE' WILL RECEIVE TRUE 'POWER' AND THE 'ETERNAL KINGDOM'!
SEEMS ...... AMAZING ......
SOUNDS SPLENDID.... BUT
YOU'RE FUCKED IN THE HEAD..... THERE IS NO 'SAINT' THAT CAN DO THAT MUCH....... IN THIS WORLD...
...... ......
....... .......

YOU NEVER LISTEN TO PEOPLE, DO YOU... IT'S YOUR OWN FAULT.
IF YOU HAD JUST CALMLY HANDED OVER THE 'LEFT ARM' I MAY HAVE AT LEAST LET YOU LIVE...
DIO
COLLECT THE 'LEFT ARM' FROM JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GET RID OF HIM!
!?
HUH?
L... 'LEFT'
'ARM'?
HA!

AND THANKS TO THAT, I COULD JUMP THIS FAR WITH MY TAIL.
BEFORE MY HEART IS TOTALLY CONTROLLED AND I BECOME A DINOSAUR!
I LET IT GO
THE 'LEFT ARM' ......

UGH!
UH!
Y.....
YES!
I GOT
THEM!

GYRO!
CATCH!
REVERSE THE DINOSAUR INFECTION WITH THESE CORPSE EYES!

UUH!
UWAAH!
IT SEEMS LIKE YOU'RE ALSO COMING UNDER MY CONTROL...... BUT MY ORDERS TO DIO WILL STILL BE CARRIED OUT.
YOU'RE SURROUNDED BY MANY DINOSAURS, YOU KNOW.
.... YOUR PETTY TRICKS WON'T GET YOU ANYWHERE.
THESE ARE THE WORLD'S GREATEST GUARD AND ATTACK CREATURES OF ALL HISTORY.
GWAAAAAAAAAAR
THEY SURPASS ALL OF YOUR MOVEMENTS!
AAAAAH

DIO
FINISH HIM OFF RIGHT NOW....
THEN COLLECT THE 'LEFT ARM' AND 'EYES'.

.....
......
.....
WHAT'S THIS .....
?
THIS, WHY IS THE STEEL BALL ........
WHY ARE YOU THROWING THE STEEL BALL?
サラサラ
サラサラ

STAY FURTHER BACK UNTIL I ORDER OTHERWISE
AND LAY CALMLY ON THE GROUND!
GYRO ZEPPELI, WHAT DO YOU THINK YOU ARE DOING!?
HUH!?
GONE
WHERE IS IT? COULD .....
COULD IT BE....!!
ONE OF THE EYES.....

WHAT ARE YOU DOING!? DIDN'T YOU HEAR ME!?
SHOW YOUR FACE!
I TOLD YOU TO MOVE FURTHER BACK!
LOOK AT ME!
ド ド
RAISE YOUR FACE AND LOOK THIS WAY! GYRO ZEPPELI!

!?
...
WHAT ....
COULD IT!
THIS!
COULD IT BE! GYRO!
WOOOO OOO OOOO OO OO OOO OOAH
ギギギギギ
ギギギギ

WA AAAA AAH
AAA AAA AH!

THE ONE THAT FELL ON THE SAND RIGHT THERE, WHERE DID IT GO!?
JOHNNY JOESTAR, YOU SON OF A BITCH! WHAT DID YOU DO TO THE EYE!?
WHAT THE HELL IS THAT!!
WHAT DOES THIS MEAN!!?
W... WHERE DID IT GO, JOHNNY JOESTAR!?
GY... GY-RO
HAS IT ENTERED YOU!!?
THE EYE, INSIDE OF YOU!
DON'T ASK ME.
IT MUST HAVE ROLLED.... THE 'CORPSE' ROLLED TOWARDS GYRO!

...
HA!

!
GAAAA
AAAAAAA
AAAA
AAAAAAH

GYRO! YOU!
INSIDE YOUR RIGHT EYE!
TO MY RIGHT EYE!?
WHAT HAPPENED TO ME!?
I CAN SEE AMAZINGLY WELL!
THERE'S BLOOD SPLASHING RIGHT IN FRONT OF MY EYE!! I CAN EVEN SEE THE PIECES OF TEETH.
THIS ISN'T JUST TECHNIQUE. IT'S A SPECIAL 'ABILITY'.
IT'S A TUNED UP VERSION OF THE STEEL BALL 'ABILITY'.
THE CORPSE WENT INSIDE YOUR RIGHT EYE!
I DON'T KNOW, BUT IT'S JUST CRAZY!! I CAN SEE SO WELL!

D... DINOSAURS! WHAT ARE YOU DOING!
PROTECT ME FROM THEM!
ENCIRCLE AND PROTECT ME! DON'T FORGET...
...YOUR DYNAMIC VISION IS BEYOND THAT OF ANY CREATURE IN THE UNIVERSE!

IT'S AS IF THERE'S A CAMERA ON THE 'SPINNING STEEL BALL'!!
IS THIS THE 'POWER OF THE CORPSE'....?
THE 'CORPSE' ENTERED MY RIGHT EYE, YOU SAY....!!?
THE 'CORPSE' WAS ABLE TO PULL OUT A DEEPER ABILITY TO MY STEEL BALLS?
ORAAAAAAAAAAA!!

SNAP
GYAAAA AAAAAAAA AAAAAAA AAAAAAA!
DORVA!
IF THAT'S THE CASE! .... NYOHO!
JOHNNY! PICK UP YOUR 'LEFT ARM' THERE!
I'LL TRY FINISHING HIM OFF WITH ANOTHER SHOT OF THIS STEEL BALL!
I SHOULD GIVE THANKS TO THE CORPSE... OR MAYBE IT WAS JUST CHANCE...
I'LL FINISH THIS FIGHT RIGHT HERE!

バァア――
…
……
ザッ
ザッ
ザッ
ザッ

WHERE IS HE!?
W.... WHERE, GYRO!?
HE'S GONE! HE DISAPPEARED WHEN THE DINOSAURS SCATTERED!!
THE DINOSAURS ARE ALL COMING AT US!
IF WE DON'T FINISH HIM OFF NOW THESE DINOSAURS WON'T STOP!!
HOW DARE YOU, GYRO ZEPPELI!
JOHNNY JOESTAR, HOW DARE YOU!
W.... WHERE!
WHERE IS HE!?
GO ON AND FIGHT WITH THEM!!
EVENTUALLY I'LL GET THERE...
... AND CUT YOUR THROATS OPEN!!
HE'S COMING! HE TURNED HIMSELF INTO A DINOSAUR TOO!
I DON'T THINK SO, JOHNNY.
HE'S HIDING SOMEWHERE IN HIS SAME FORM! IF HE COULD HAVE TURNED HIMSELF INTO A DINOSAUR, HE WOULD HAVE ALREADY DONE SO TO CLIMB THE HILL.
HE CAN'T BECOME A DINOSAUR! HE'S ONLY THE 'COMMANDING HEAD'! HE'S HIDING SOMEWHERE AND CONTROLLING THEM ALL!

I SEE
IT REALLY SEEMS .....!
I'VE RECEIVED A TUNED UP ABILITY.
THE 'STEEL BALL' IS LOOKING INWARD!!
IT'S THE 'WAVES' CAUSED BY THE 'SPIN'.

THE 'VIBRATIONS' RETURN AS AN ECHO!
IT LIKE A 'RIPPLE'. WHAT IS THIS 'EYE'!?
THE STEEL BALL SHOWS THE OTHER SIDE!
I CAN SEE WHERE HE IS!!
THAT DINOSAUR!

INSIDE ITS BODY!!
ORA ORA! HERE WE GO, JOHNNY!
UWOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO!

AGH!
GUFF!
BOOH!!
GABABABA!
H....!!
WH... AT ARE YOU DOING...
GAB! BA!
GABA!!
DINOSAURS ....
FINISH THEM RIGHT NOOOW!
TEAR THOSE TWO INTO PIECES .........
HOW COULD YOU... TELL?
HUH!

UH
AH
AAH
UH
UUH!
WELL WELL
IT SEEMS LIKE YOUR DINOSAUR ABILITY IS OUT OF FUEL.
ALL THE VILLAGERS ARE BACK TO NORMAL.
UUUH.... AAAAAAH!
NO...
AND WHAT'S THIS...
YOU'D EVEN TURNED THE COUGARS IN THE MOUNTAINS INTO YOUR SERVANTS.
I GUESS IT'S THE SURVIVAL OF THE FITTEST .......... ON THIS PLANET...
AAA!
AAAAAAA AAAAAAAA AAAAAAAH!

HEEEEEEE BAAAA
BHA!
AAAAH!

BUT WE'VE DONE IT...
WE HUNTED IT DOWN!!
WE'VE GOT THE "2ND" CORPSE PART!
ドドドドド
....
....
ギョロ
ザロロロ

GYRO.....
?
THERE WERE '2' EYES THAT ROLLED TOWARDS YOU, RIGHT?
......
........
YOUR EYES UNITED WITH '2' OF THEM....!!
YOU'VE GOT THEM 'BOTH', ISN'T THAT RIGHT!?
...........
.............
......
........
..........
..........
...NO..
.......
ドドドド
!!

ドド
ド…
ド…
ド…
ド…
ド

WHAAAAAT!
DIO!
HE HAS ONE OF THEM! WHAT THE HEEEEEELL! HE HAS THE 'LEFT EYE'!!

ゴォ
ド

AND WHAT'S GOING ON!? WHAT DOES THAT MEAN!? DIO'S DINOSAUR TRANSFORMATION HASN'T GONE AWAY!
STOP JOHNNY... IT'S OVER NOW, CALM DOWN.
DIO WAS UNDER THE CONTROL OF 'FERDINAND'!! WE HAVE TO CHASE HIM OR HE'LL TAKE AWAY THAT EYE!
WE CAN'T CHASE HIM HERE.
DIO GOT US AT THE VERY END..
... OR MAYBE WE SHOULD SAY HE GOT THE 'EYE' AND ITS POWER BROUGHT BACK THE DINOSAUR TRANSFORMATION THAT HAD DISAPPEARED AS HIS 'TALENT'.
'HALF' TO MY 'STEEL BALL' ... 'HALF' TO DIO'S 'STAND ABILITY' ...
IS WHAT IT SEEMS
THE ABILITY OF THE 'DINOSAUR'... DIO BRANDO MAY NOT HAVE BEEN A TERRORIST...
AT THIS POINT HE'S FOUND OUT ABOUT THE 'CORPSE' ........
... BUT IF DIO HAS GOT ONE OF THEM, HE WILL WANT THE OTHER!!
I CAN'T BELIEVE HE TOOK 'HALF' ........
HE DOESN'T JUST DESIRE VICTORY! HE LONGS FOR 'AUTHORITY' AND 'ELITENESS'!

HE'LL COME FOR YOU!
HE'LL DEFINITELY DESIRE AFTER THE OTHER 'CORPSE PARTS' TOO!! AS WELL AS MY 'LEFT ARM'!
YEA
MOST LIKELY ......
BUT WE WERE ABLE TO FIND THE LOCATION OF THE 'CORPSE PART' HERE.
NEITHER DIO NOR THE TERRORISTS KNOW 'HOW WE FOUND IT'!
EXACTLY ...
OF COURSE! WE'LL FIND THEM 'ALL' BEFORE THEM!
THIS MUST BE REVEALING THE LOCATION OF THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART' TOO.
T·U·R·B·Ō
'TURBŌ' CAN MEAN 'HURRICANE' OR 'CYCLONE'.
A CONSOLATION NAMED 'TURBŌ'? 'MT. TURBŌ'? 'TURBŌ ROCK'?
COULD IT BE THAT AGAIN

OH YEA, GYRO...
THIS IS A LITTLE OFF TOPIC, BUT
THERE'S ONE THING THAT'S BOTHERING ME...... IT'S SOMETHING THAT 'FERDINAND' SAID
HE SAID THE CORPSE WAS '1900 YEARS OLD'.
JUST A SLIGHT MENTION! ..... WHAT DO YOU THINK?
YOU MUST HAVE HEARD WRONG.
NO! I'M SURE OF IT!
I CLEARLY REMEMBER HIM SAYING, 'IT'S HARD TO BELIEVE THAT THIS IS FROM A 1900 YEAR OLD CORPSE.'
THEN HE MUST HAVE SAID IT WRONG.
HE PROBABLY MEANT 190 YEARS OLD.

YOU NEVER LISTEN TO PEOPLE ANYWAYS. WHY ARE YOU BOTHERED BY THIS NOW!? I'M TRYING TO FIGURE OUT THIS 'CODE'.
I MEAN, COME ON.... THERE'S NO WAY IT'S POSSIBLE!
YEA, THERE'S NO WAY IT'S POSSIBLE.......
BUT IS IT REALLY IMPOSSIBLE?
THE TERRORISTS KNOW WHO THE 'CORPSE' BELONGS TO.
O B.C.! WAS THERE REALLY NOBODY WHO CAME OVER TO THIS CONTINENT BACK THEN?
THE INDIANS HAVE ALWAYS BEEN HERE.
THERE WERE PEOPLE HERE!
THE TERRORISTS HAVE 'PROOF' OF IT! THAT'S WHY THEY'RE HOLDING THIS RACE.
THE TERRORIST IS THIS COUNTRY ITSELF AS WELL AS THIS RACE ITSELF.
...... ...... .....
THERE'S NO 'EVIDENCE' FOR THAT.

A SAINT FROM 1900 YEARS AGO ......
......
....... ....... ......
.... COULDN'T BE
HEY....
LOOK AT THAT!
IT'S 'VALKYRIE'! YOURS IS THERE TOO...
NOW THAT'S MY 'BELOVED HORSE'!
THEY GOT AWAY FROM THE DINOSAURS AT THE VILLAGE AND WERE WAITING FOR US ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE MOUNTAIN!
IT'S STILL NIGHT BUT WE'RE HEADING OUT NOW! DIO IS STILL NEAR TOO!

TOTAL RANKING
TOTAL POINTS
1
1 DIEGO BRANDO 150 3
2 SANDMAN 140 2
3 JOHNNY JOESTAR 80 5
4 HOT PANTS 55 9
5 POCOLOCO 53 4
6 GYRO ZEPPELI 36 UNPLACED
7 MOUNTAIN TIM 35 7
8 ZENYATTA MONDATTA
9 NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA
60 KM LEFT 'TILL THE 3RD STAGE GOAL!
EVEN IF THE RACE ITSELF OR WHOEVER IS A TERRORIST
IT'S STILL THE RACE THAT'S IMPORTANT.
I NEED TO GET 100 POINTS AT THIS STAGE NO MATTER WHAT! THAT'S WHAT'S MOST IMPORTANT! LET'S GO JOHNNY!
NO MATTER HOW POWERFUL THE 'SAINT'S CORPSE PARTS' ARE...
THEIR 'POWER' WON'T TELL YOU HOW TO BECOME RICH
OR TELL YOU HOW TO MAKE CHICKS HAPPY...
... OR FREE A PERSON SENTENCED TO DEATH.

WE ARE NOW HEADING DOWNHILL ON THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS OF THE 3RD STAGE! CANNON CITY! 5 KM IN FRONT OF THE GOAL!
ドドド
AND WE WITNESS THIS STRANGE EFFECT AS WE APPROACH THE GOAL! IT' S AS IF THE RACERS ARE 'HUMAN MAGNETS'!
ALTHOUGH THEY RAN 510 KM WITH AN ESTIMATED RACE TIME OF 7 DAYS MINIMUM
ドドド
AS THE SUN RISES, ALL OF THE TALENTED RACERS GATHER TOGETHER! FOR SOME REASON, THEIR SCATTERED DISTANCES SHRINK! THIS WILL BE ANOTHER CLOSE ONE! IT WILL INEVITABLY BE ANOTHER HEATED BATTLE!

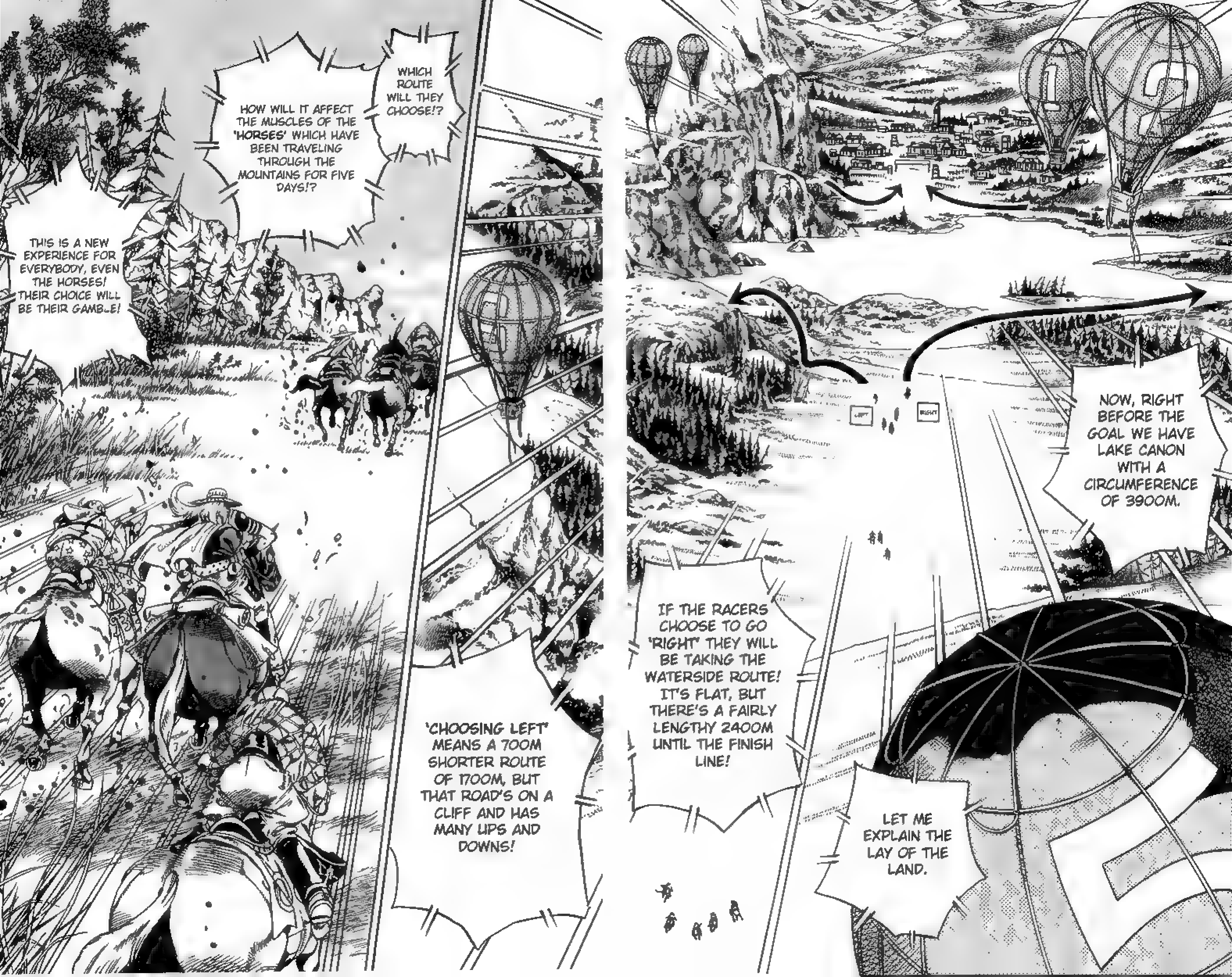
#32
THIRD STAGE GOAL
CANON CITY
WITH THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS IN THE BACKGROUND, THE DISTANCE TO THE GOAL HAS SHRUNK TO 3 KM. LET'S TAKE A LOOK NOW AT EACH OF THE RACERS.
IN THE FRONT OF THE CROWD WE HAVE...
'POCOLOCO' FROM GEORGIA...
...FOLLOWED BY THE BAREFOOT RUNNER, 'SANDMAN'
FROM THE MONGOLIAN HORSE-RIDING TRIBES, 'DOT KHAN'...
'GAUCHO' FROM MEXICO...
'BABA YAGA' FROM THE RUSSIAN MILITARY...

| | TOTAL RANKING | TOTAL POINTS | 2ND STAGE PLACEMENT | 2ND STAGE POINTS |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1ST | DIEGO BRANDO | 150 | 1 | 100 |
| 2ND | SANDMAN | 140 | 3 | 40 |
| 3RD | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 80 | 2 | 50 |
| 4TH | HOT PANTS | 55 | 5 | 30 |
| TH | POCOLOCO | 53 | 9 | 13 |
| | GYRO ZEPPELI | 36 | 4 | 35 |
| | OUNTAIN TIM | 35 | OUT OF RANKING | 0 |
| | TA MONDATTA | 30 | 7 | 20 |
| | RISUKE SHIKATA | 28 | 6 | 25 |
| | OT KHAN | 21 | 8 | 15 |

IF HE CAN ONLY BEAT SANDMAN, 'DIEGO BRANDO' CAN KEEP THE LEAD!!
HIS BIGGEST RIVAL IS 'SANDMAN' WHO IS ONLY 10 POINTS BEHIND!
BUT FOR SOME REASON, DIO IS GOING AFTER 'GYRO ZEPPELI,' RANKED IN SIXTH PLACE WITH 36 POINTS!
HE'S STICKING RIGHT BEHIND HIM!

DIO... ON 'THAT MOUNTAIN'...
HE'S COME TO UNDERSTAND HIS 'STAND ABILITY'...!!
IS HE GOING TO START SOMETHING HERE.....
WILL HE ATTACK US HERE......?
チラ
NO... GYRO!
THERE'S NO WAY DIO WOULD RISK BEING DISQUALIFIED RIGHT HERE IN FRONT OF THE GOAL, WHERE THE BALLOONS ARE WATCHING!
HE'S PLANNING ON DEFEATING YOU IN THIS STAGE WITHOUT BREAKING ANY RULES.
ドドドドド
IT SEEMS THAT DIO IS UNCONCERNED WITH 'SANDMAN' WHO IS FAR AHEAD!
IT SEEMS HE'S THINKING THAT AS LONG AS HE CAN DEFEAT 'GYRO ZEPPELI' HE MAY AS WELL HAVE WON THIS STAGE......!!
ドドドドドド

TO HIM, MOVING PAST YOU IS AS GOOD AS MOVING PAST SANDMAN, WHICH WOULD LEAD HIM TO VICTORY.
IT'S HIS FIGHTING INTUITION!
BUT BE READY, GYRO!
DIO IS 'CALCULATING' !!
THE 'BREATH RATE' OF OUR HORSES!
THEIR 'PULSE RATE'!
EVEN FROM THIS 'DISTANCE'!
THEIR 'PERSPIRATION'!
THEIR 'STRIDE LENGTH'!
THAT'S WHAT HE'S USING HIS NEW 'DINOSAUR ABILITY' FOR!
DIO IS STEALING OUR DATA MORE PERFECTLY THAN EVER!


LET ME EXPLAIN THE LAY OF THE LAND.
NOW, RIGHT BEFORE THE GOAL WE HAVE LAKE CANON WITH A CIRCUMFERENCE OF 3900M.
LEFT
RIGHT
IF THE RACERS CHOOSE TO GO 'RIGHT' THEY WILL BE TAKING THE WATERSIDE ROUTE! IT'S FLAT, BUT THERE'S A FAIRLY LENGTHY 2400M UNTIL THE FINISH LINE!
'CHOOSING LEFT' MEANS A 700M SHORTER ROUTE OF 1700M, BUT THAT ROAD'S ON A CLIFF AND HAS MANY UPS AND DOWNS!
WHICH ROUTE WILL THEY CHOOSE!?
HOW WILL IT AFFECT THE MUSCLES OF THE 'HORSES' WHICH HAVE BEEN TRAVELING THROUGH THE MOUNTAINS FOR FIVE DAYS!?
THIS IS A NEW EXPERIENCE FOR EVERYBODY, EVEN THE HORSES! THEIR CHOICE WILL BE THEIR GAMBLE!

WE HAVE TO 'GO RIGHT,' GYRO! DON'T SAY 'LEFT'
THINK OF THE HORSES!
THE KEY TO VICTORY WILL BE HOW MUCH REST WE CAN GIVE OUR HORSES!
JOHNNY
AS EXPECTED, SANDMAN HAS HEADED LEFT!
OH! AND 'POCOLOCO' FOLLOWS! HE'S TAKING HIS CHANCES WITH THE CLIFF!
THE ONES GOING RIGHT ARE 'DOT KHAN'
FOLLOWED BY 'BABA YAGA' AND 'GAUCHO' WHO HAVE SWITCHED PLACES!

YOU'RE RIGHT, WE'LL REST THE HORSES... WE'LL GO THIS WAY.
LOOK AT THE 'MAP'. THE 'MAP' OF THE LAKE.
SEE THE DEPTH OF THE LAKE. IT'S ONLY 2.2M AT ITS DEEPEST.
'VALKYRIE' CAN CROSS IT. THE LENGTH IS ONLY 450M, SUPER SHORT."

!!
HA!

WHAT?
YOU'VE GOT TO BE KIDDING!
......
WHAT A SURPRISE! A 'THIRD' ROUTE!
DIEGO BRANDO FOLLOWS GYRO ZEPPELI INTO THE LAKE!
BUT IT MAY NOT BE THE WISEST OF CHOICES! THE WATER RESISTANCE WILL WEAR OUT THE HORSES LIKE NOTHING ELSE!

THE DISTANCE IS A MUCH SHORTER 450M! IT MAY JUST BE THE FASTEST ROUTE!
AND YET DIO, THE GENIUS JOCKEY HAS CHOSEN THAT ROUTE!!
THIS RACE HAS JUST GOTTEN A HELL OF A LOT MORE INTERESTING!! AN EPIC BATTLE RIGHT IN FRONT OF THE GOAL!
FUCK!
'IF YOU'RE SCARED, DON'T COME'..... IS THAT IT, GYRO!?
DAMN IT! GYRO.....!!

THIS IS NUTS, GYRO!
AND WHAT IF THERE'S MUD AT THE BOTTOM!
IT'S LIKE A HORSE CARRYING ANOTHER HORSE WHILE CROSSING! THE WATER RESISTANCE REQUIRES MUSCLES THAT AREN'T USUALLY USED!
AT THAT POINT OUR HORSES WILL BE FINISHED!!
THAT'S WHY I'M SLOWING TO THE MINIMUM!
I WON'T PUT STRESS ON THEIR LIMBS!
JUST THE SPEED I NEED TO GET AHEAD OF THE REST GOING AROUND THE LAKE!
I'M SURE THAT'S WHAT DIO IS PLANNING TOO!!

I'M GOING TO GET 100 POINTS ON THIS STAGE!
NO MATTER WHAT!
OR ELSE WE'LL BE EVEN FURTHER FROM VICTORY!
I CAME TO THIS RACE TO WIN!
MY FATHERLAND IS WAITING!
LET'S GO BACK, GYRO!
IT'S NOT TOO LATE.
LET'S GO BACK TO THE SHORE AND GO AROUND FROM THE RIGHT!
YOU CAN'T DEFEAT DIO!
I DON'T WANT TO SAY IT, BUT THIS IS MY PREDICTION.
YOU WON'T GET 1ST PLACE ON THIS STAGE!

THIS ISN'T ABOUT DIO CALCULATING OUR HORSES' PULSES OR HIS 'DINOSAUR' ABILITY...
IT'S NOT ABOUT YOUR 'WEAK POINTS'
THAT'S NOT WHAT I'M TALKING ABOUT...
IT'S.... WELL..... HOW DO YOU SAY....
YOU SHOULD HAVE BEEN ABLE TO WIN ON THE 1ST AND 2ND STAGES.
"BASED ON 'TECHNIQUE' AND 'DRIVE...'
YOU COULD HAVE WON....

HEY, JOHNNY JOESTAR
WHAT IS IT? JUST SAY IT.....!
IF YOU'RE GOING TO COME UP TO ME AND TALK LIKE YOU'RE SO GREAT, THEN SAY IT CLEARLY!
I AM BEING CLEAR! YOU WILL LOSE TO DIO!
I CAN TELL. YOU CAN'T BEAT SANDMAN EITHER..... I CAN TELL FROM EXPERIENCE.....
YOU MAY BE THINKING THAT THE REASONS YOU LOST ON THE 1ST AND 2ND STAGES WERE BECAUSE OF TROUBLES AND ACCIDENTS..... BUT THAT'S NOT IT!
THERE IS A CERTAIN THING 'BEHIND' IT ALL THAT CAUSED YOUR DEFEAT.

YOU'VE LEARNED AND INHERITED FROM YOUR COUNTRY AND PARENTS......
YOU'RE RUNNING THIS RACE WITH 'TECHNIQUE' AND 'ENERGY'....... I UNDERSTAND THAT YOU'RE CORNERED IN A SITUATION....
... WHERE YOU HAVE TO SAVE AN INNOCENT BOY SENTENCED TO DEATH...
BUT THOSE ARE ALL THINGS THAT YOU'VE 'INHERITED'
YOU ARE ONE WHO HAS CONTINUALLY 'INHERITED'!

DIO IS DIFFERENT!
HE HAS STOLEN EVERYTHING, FROM HIS HORSE SKILLS TO HIS SOCIAL STATUS, EVEN FOOD.
EVER SINCE HIS BIRTH, DIO HAS BEEN A PERSON WHO HAS EVEN 'STOLEN' DESTINY!
DIO IS 'SOMEONE WHO'S HUNGERED'!
YOU'RE 'A SUCCESS OR'!
I'M NOT SAYING WHICH IS 'GOOD' OR 'BAD'! THE DIFFERENCE WILL SHOW IN THE DESPERATE MOMENTS OF THIS RACE!
THAT DIFFERENCE WILL STEAL YOUR VICTORY AND EAT YOU UP!

JOHNNY! SO IS THAT WHAT YOU'RE TRYING TO SAY?
THAT I'M SPOILED BY MY PARENTS AND A COWARD!? IS THAT IT?
YOU CAN'T WIN 'UNLESS YOU HUNGER'
BUT NOT LIKE DIO.
YOU NEED TO 'HUNGER' IN A MUCH MORE NOBLE MANNER!
......
...WHAT DID YOU SAY?
I'M GOING BACK TO THE SHORE
SORRY, BUT I'M TAKING TO ROUTE TO THE 'RIGHT'

WHAT'S THIS, NOW?! DIO HAS SPED UP!
IS IT TO AGITATE GYRO!? OR IS BECAUSE HE ALREADY HAS EVERYTHING ALL PLANNED OUT!?
IT LOOKS LIKE HE WANTS TO REACH THE SHORE AND TAKE THE HEAD POSITION! ALREADY ONE THIRD OF THE WAY, HE'S SLOWLY BUT SURELY DISTANCING HIMSELF FROM GYRO!
GYRO... YOU CAN'T WIN UNLESS YOU HUNGER FOR IT... BUT 'SLOWLY'... YOU CAN 'GROW' SLOWLY...
IF YOU CAN 'GROW' SLOWLY... THEN.... IT WILL BE SOMEONE LIKE YOU, 'ONE OF INHERITANCE', WHO'LL WIN THIS RACE......
YOU CAN BE IN '2ND' OR '3RD' ON THIS STAGE... THE RACE IS STILL LONG.....
THAT'S WHAT I WANT TO SEE...WHAT I WANT TO LEARN FROM YOU.
THAT'S WHY I WANTED TO FOLLOW YOU IN THIS 'STEEL BALL RUN RACE', BUT...

AND... AMAZING! GYRO IS GOING FOR IT!
HE'S GOING TO ACCEPT DIO'S CHALLENGE! HE'S BEGINNING TO SPEED UP!
JOHNNY.... ... THAT FUCKER...

SHIT...
BECAUSE OF ALL THAT WEIRD STUFF THAT HE SAID.....
VALKYRIE CAN SENSE THAT I'M AGITATED... DAMN IT, IT'S THROWING ME OFF!
JOHNNY DOESN'T UNDERSTAND YOUR POTENTIAL.
HE THINKS WE'RE JUST SOME IDIOTS CROSSING A LAKE!
BUT VALKYRIE, YOU'VE GOT A SPECIAL 'SKILL' WAITING FOR WHEN WE LAND ON THE OTHER SIDE!
THAT'S WHY WE NEED TO BE CAREFUL NOT TO GET DISTRACTED BY DIO'S MOVEMENTS WHILE WE'RE IN THE WATER.

GYRO'S HORSE'S PULSE, CURRENTLY 198
'AFTER BREATHING TWICE, IT'LL TAKE A DEEP BREATH'
'AND SHIFT ITS BODY TO THE LEFT'
THEN IT'LL SHAKE ITS NECK

NEITHER GYRO NOR HIS HORSE KNOW THIS, BUT...
HIS HORSE WILL STEP ONTO LAND WITH ITS 'LEFT FOOT'...
AND, ANTICIPATING THE LENGTH OF THE HORSE'S STRIDE, IT WILL STEP ON THAT 'BRANCH' ON ITS 75TH STEP!
ABOUT 300 METERS FROM THE GOAL
IF INDEED IT STEPS ON THAT 'BRANCH'
THEN THERE'S WHERE THE HORSE REACHES ITS 'TOP SPEED'
ITS PULSE RATE WILL BE 263.
AT THAT MOMENT, THE HORSE WILL BE OVERCOME BY FATIGUE
SO ALTHOUGH I'M TAKING A RISK BY CROSSING THIS LAKE SO QUICKLY, IF I CAN STAY AHEAD OF GYRO AT THE POINT OF THAT BRANCH...
THEN THERE'S NO WAY THAT HE CAN CATCH UP TO MY HORSE.

UNTIL THEN, ALL I HAVE TO DO IS STAY AHEAD...
JUST UNTIL THAT 'BRANCH'...
'STAY AHEAD'...
'DOT HAN', 'GAUCHO', AND 'BABA YAGA' ARE SPEEDING UP!!
THEY'RE COMING AROUND FROM THE RIGHT-HAND SIDE!!
'SANDMAN' HAS CLEARED THE CLIFFS AND IS ALSO HEADING STRAIGHT TOWARDS THE GOAL!
AND IT LOOKS LIKE DIO'S FINALLY BACK ON LAND!

DIO IS IN THE LEAD! IT'S DIO! 500 METERS REMAINING!
JOHNNY JOESTAR IS CLOSING IN ON DOT KHAN!
AND NOW, GYRO ZEPPELI'S FINALLY BACK ON LAND!
REST A LITTLE BIT MORE!
NOT YET! A LITTLE MORE!
DON'T RUN YET! THIS LAKE IS A VACATION RESORT! THINK OF IT AS A CARIBBEAN BEACH!
BHAAAA
BRRRRR!
POCOLOCO HAS ALSO CLEARED THE CLIFFS!
DON'T GET EXCITED YET! SAVE YOUR ENERGY UNTIL THE VERY END!
NOT YET, VALKYRIE!

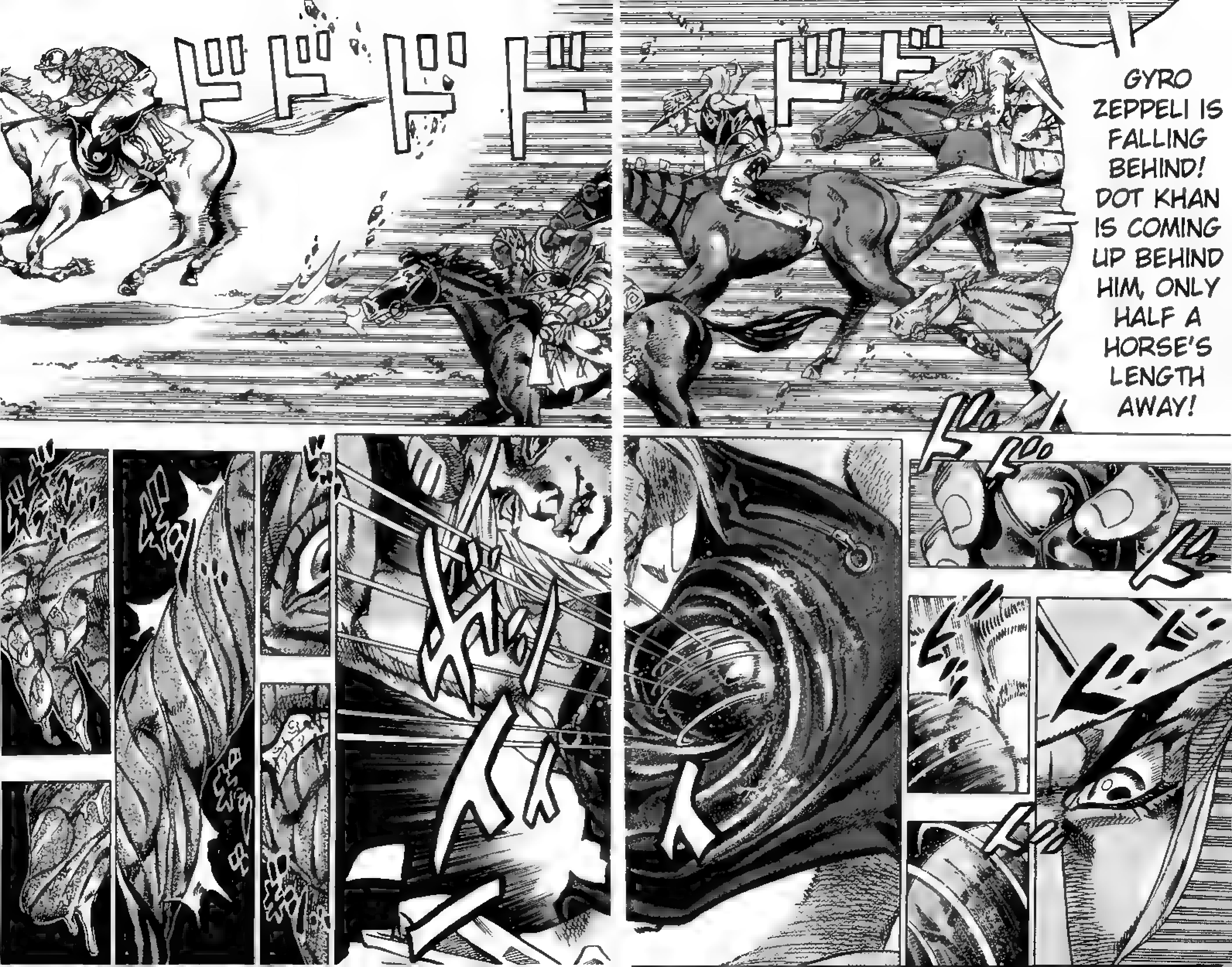
LEFT FOOT
AND HE BEGINS TO ACCELERATE! GYRO ZEPPELI!!
HE'S RUNNING NOW AT A TREMENDOUS SPEED!!
IT'S ALMOST AS IF HE'S A HUNTING DOG GOING AFTER A RABBIT! HE'S RIGHT ON DIO'S TRAIL!
DIO

HIS BLANKET SOAKED WITH WATER! HIS WET LEATHER BAG! HIS CANTEEN! EVERYTHING!
HE MUST BE TRYING TO LIGHTEN HIS HORSE'S BURDEN!
GOOD LORD! GYRO ZEPPELI IS BEGINNING TO THROW HIS LUGGAGE OFF OF HIS HORSE!
HE'S EVEN GETTING RID OF HIS SADDLE! THE ONLY THING HE'S KEEPING ARE HIS REINS, EVERYTHING ELSE IS BEING TOSSED ASIDE!
HE'S STEADILY INCREASING SPEED AS HE DISCARDS HIS THINGS!

HE'S THROWN OFF HIS JACKET AND CAPE!
EVEN HIS TRADEMARK HOLSTER!!
ドドドド
3 MORE STEPS
2
1 STEP!

ALL RIGHT
HE'S REACHED HIS TOP SPEED BY NOW... AND I'M STILL 'AHEAD'
BUT HE CAN'T SHORTEN THIS DISTANCE!! GYRO ZEPPELI!
HE CAN'T CATCH UP! CAN'T TAKE THE LEAD!
VALKYRIE CAN'T GO ANY FASTER!

AND NOW HE'S SLOWING DOWN, WITH 200 METERS LEFT! BOTH ARE FEELING THE STRAIN FROM CROSSING THE LAKE!
BUT DIO IS MANAGING TO STAY AHEAD!
SUDDENLY, THE GAP IS WIDENING!
POCOLOCO HAS JUST PASSED GYRO!
FALLING BEHIND! IT LOOKS LIKE FATIGUE IS FINALLY TAKING A TOLL ON GYRO!
DIO CONTINUES TO STAY AHEAD!!
HE'S RUNNING !!


GYRO ZEPPELI IS FALLING BEHIND! DOT KHAN IS COMING UP BEHIND HIM, ONLY HALF A HORSE'S LENGTH AWAY!

HOW'S THIS 'WEIGHT', VALKYRIE? IS IT A LITTLE LIGHTER!?
THEY SAY THAT 70% OF THE HUMAN BODY IS WATER.
SHOW SOME 'GUTS', VALKYRIE
WE WERE CALLED SPOILED 'COWARDS'.... IS THAT RIGHT? YOU'RE NOT A COWARD, ARE YOU?
THESE 'STEEL BALLS' THAT I'VE INHERITED FROM MY HOMELAND....
THE 'STEEL BALLS' ARE ON OUR SIDE!

GYRO ZEPPELI IS SWEATING BUCKETS!
HIS SWEAT IS RUNNING OFF OF HIM, ALMOST LIKE THE COLORADO RIVER!
HERE HE COMES!
HERE HE COMES!
HERE HE COMES!
HERE HE COMES!
WITH 80 METERS LEFT, GYRO, WHO HAD FALLEN BEHIND, IS ACCELERATING ONCE MORE!
WHAT IS THIIIS
HE FINALLY TAKES THE LEAD FROM DIO!!

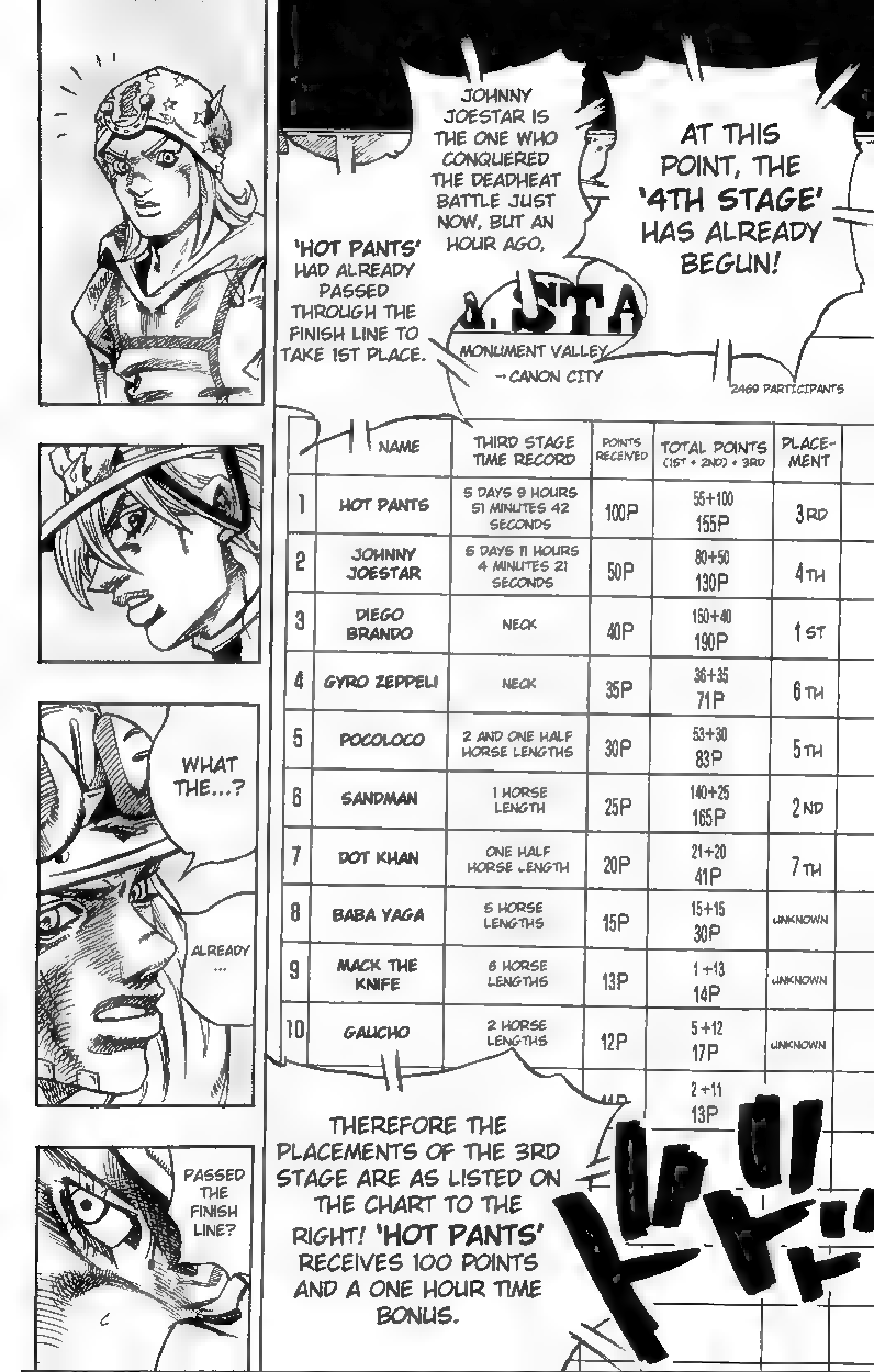
IMPOSSIBLE!
THAT SHOULD HAVE BEEN HIS TOP SPEED! THAT WAS HIS LIMIT! AND YET HE ACCELERATED!?
GGGGG
UGGGG
SPIT!
GGGGG
...GASTROLITH...
VALKYRIE IS WOBBLING!
SHE'S LOSING HER BALANCE!

GYRO ZEPPELI TUMBLES!
30 METERS REMAINING!
10 METERS!
GOOOOOOOOOOOOOAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAL

JOHNNY JOESTAR!
JOHNNY JOESTAR!
STEEL BALL RUN
WHAT A TURN OF EVENTS! THE ORDER IS JOHNNY JOESTAR, DIEGO BRANDO, THEN GYRO ZEPPELI!
FOLLOWED BY POCOLOCO! RUNNING IN, SANDMAN! DOT KHAN, BABA YAGA, MACK THE KNIFE! AND GAUCHO WHO FELL BEHIND!
THERE WAS AN INCIDENT RIGHT BEFORE THE GOAL WHERE DIEGO BRANDO STEPPED ON A 'SMALL ROCK', WHICH HAPPENED TO HIT GYRO'S HORSE--AND DURING THE TIME THE TWO RACERS LOST THEIR BALANCE DUE TO THIS INCIDENT...
JOHNNY JOESTAR CAME TO TAKE THE LEAD!
IT WAS ONLY BY 'CHANCE' THAT DIO HAPPENED TO STEP ON THE 'ROCK'
THERE IS NO PROOF THAT IT WAS 'INTENTIONAL'
THEREFORE, DIEGO BRANDO WILL NOT BE 'DISQUALIFIED'

THE REASON FOR MY DEFEAT
'WASN'T BECAUSE OF AN ACCIDENT... BUT SOMETHING THAT LOOMS BEHIND ME.....'
YOU SAID. .
MAYBE YOU'RE RIGHT JOHNNY
IT MAY BE JUST AS YOU SAID
'A NEED TO HUNGER' .... MORE THAN DIO.
AND EVEN MORE THAN YOU, JOHNNY.....
YOU'RE TRYING TO FIND THAT CORPSE OF THAT 'SAINT' DURING THIS 'RACE', AND THAT'S WHAT YOU WANT MORE THAN ANYTHING.

YOU'RE HUNGERING FOR IT...YOU WANT IT, NO MATTER WHAT...
MAYBE I SHOULD TRY TO FOLLOW YOUR EXAMPLE......
MAYBE SERIOUSLY SEARCHING FOR THOSE CORPSES... WILL HELP ME GROW A LITTLE.




| | NAME | THIRD STAGE TIME RECORD | POINTS RECEIVED | TOTAL POINTS (1ST + 2ND) + 3RD | PLACEMENT |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | HOT PANTS | 5 DAYS 9 HOURS 51 MINUTES 42 SECONDS | 100P | 55+100 155P | 3RD |
| 2 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 5 DAYS 11 HOURS 4 MINUTES 21 SECONDS | 50P | 80+50 130P | 4TH |
| 3 | DIEGO BRANDO | NECK | 40P | 150+40 190P | 1ST |
| 4 | GYRO ZEPPELI | NECK | 35P | 36+35 71P | 6TH |
| 5 | POCOLOCO | 2 AND ONE HALF HORSE LENGTHS | 30P | 53+30 83P | 5TH |
| 6 | SANDMAN | 1 HORSE LENGTH | 25P | 140+25 165P | 2ND |
| 7 | DOT KHAN | ONE HALF HORSE LENGTH | 20P | 21+20 41P | 7TH |
| 8 | BABA YAGA | 5 HORSE LENGTHS | 15P | 15+15 30P | UNKNOWN |
| 9 | MACK THE KNIFE | 6 HORSE LENGTHS | 13P | 1+13 14P | UNKNOWN |
| 10 | GAUCHO | 2 HORSE LENGTHS | 12P | 5+12 17P | UNKNOWN |
| | | | | 2+11 13P | |

ドドドドド
HOT PANTS !
ドドドド
ドドドドドド

# Steel Ball Run v7ch2

## Brought to you by JoJo Project and Stardust Crusaders

[illegible]

Editing: [illegible]

Proofreading: [illegible]

Special thanks [illegible]

#33 The True Man's World ①

4th. STAGE
'THE SMALL TOMBSTONE IN THE WIDE, WIDE, FIELD'
PARTICIPANTS: 1918
3RD STAGE DROP OUTS: 551
Cannon City ⟶ Kansas City
Approximated distance:1250 km
Fastest estimated arrival. 21 days
Mssissippi River
Kansas State
Colorado
Cannon City
Syracuse
Dodge City
Hutchison
Kansas City
"ELEVENTH DAY OF 4TH STAGE 650KM TO KANSAS CITY"
LOOK, GYRO
IT'S HIM... ...
HE'S COMING THIS WAY.
......
THE HELL DOES HE WANT?
IS ANYBODY WITH HIM?
HE'S A LONE WOLF.
HE'S CURRENTLY GOT 155 POINTS AND IS RANKED 3RD
AN AMERICAN... HIS AGE AND REAL NAME ARE UNKNOWN, AS WELL AS ANYTHING OTHER INFORMATION ABOUT HIM. BUT HE'S ON A GOOD HORSE. HE'S ALSO NO HILLBILLY, THE WAY HE CARRIES HIMSELF.
WHAT SHOULD WE DO? TALK TO HIM?
NO... JUST IGNORE HIM

カポ

GOOD DAY TO YOU BOTH.
LET'S SKIP THE CHIT-CHAT AND GET STRAIGHT TO THE POINT
I WILL NOW 'HANG' YOU BOTH FROM THIS TREE.
......
......
YOU ATE MY COW, DIDN'T YOU?
IT WAS A COW THAT I PAID FOR IN ADVANCE TO BE GRAZING ON THIS COURSE.
THE PENALTY OF COW THEFT... ...

... IS TO BE 'HUNG'... PUT THOSE ROPES AROUND YOUR NECKS!
THAT IS THE 'LAW' IN THIS PLACE... ...
THERE'S NO NEED FOR A TRIAL
?
......
WHAT THE FUCK IS THIS GUY SAYING... ... ... ...?
OH.........! THAT BRAND...
GYRO... I WOULDN'T TOUCH THAT.
THERE'S AN OWNER
LOOK AT THIS CLOSELY, JOHNNY....
THE COYOTES ALREADY ATE MOST OF IT.
I'M JUST GOING TO TAKE ABOUT 600 GRAMS...
BEFORE IT'S ALL GONE!

GYRO?
HO...
HOLD ON... I DON'T KNOW THE LAWS OF THIS COUNTRY TOO WELL AND...
!?
!?
HA!

!?
THIS!!

THIS GUY!!
HOT PANTS
HE'S A 'STAND USER'!!

WHAAAA AAAAAT!
WHAT'S HAPPENING!?
MY... MY LEFT ARM
IT'S SHRINKING!!

FROM MY 'ARM'...
THIS IS 'FLESH'!
HE'S TAKING THE 'FLESH' FROM MY ARM! ...
UWOOOO OOOOOH!

AND HE'S SPRAYING THE FLESH ONTO ME!
GH... MY... BREATH ...!
THE FLESH IS MERGING!
I CAN'T BREATHE!

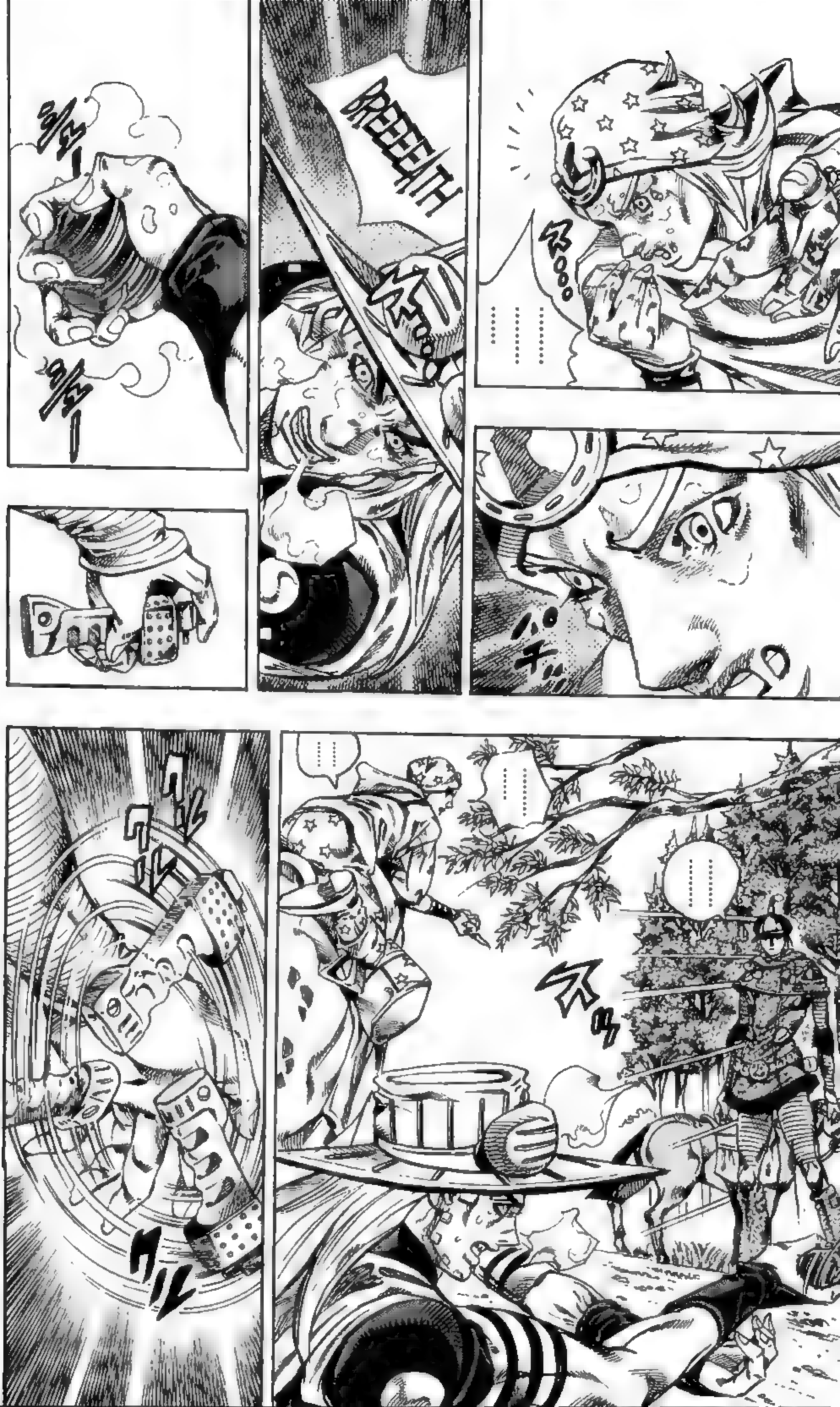
BAM!

UGH!

JOHNNY! NOW! SHOOT! I'VE LOCKED BOTH HIS ARMS!
HE CAN'T MOVE HIS ARMS! BUT IT'LL ONLY LAST TWO SECONDS!
UH
... ... ....
... KUH!

HURRY UP AND SHOOT! I'VE DISTANCED MYSELF FROM HIM! I...MY BREATHING'S GOING TO STOP SOON!
LISTEN! THERE WAS A 'BULLET WOUND' ON THE COW! IT WAS ALREADY DEAD!
IT WASN'T US!
WE DON'T CARRY GUNS BECAUSE WE DON'T NEED THEM!

AND THE WOUND ON ITS FLESH WAS FROM A LARGE CALIBER!!
IT DOESN'T MATCH WITH THAT HOLE! CHECK IF YOU'D LIKE!
FOR FUCK'S SAKE, JUST SHOOT HIM, JOHNNY! I CAN'T EVEN SCRATCH THIS SHIT OFF!

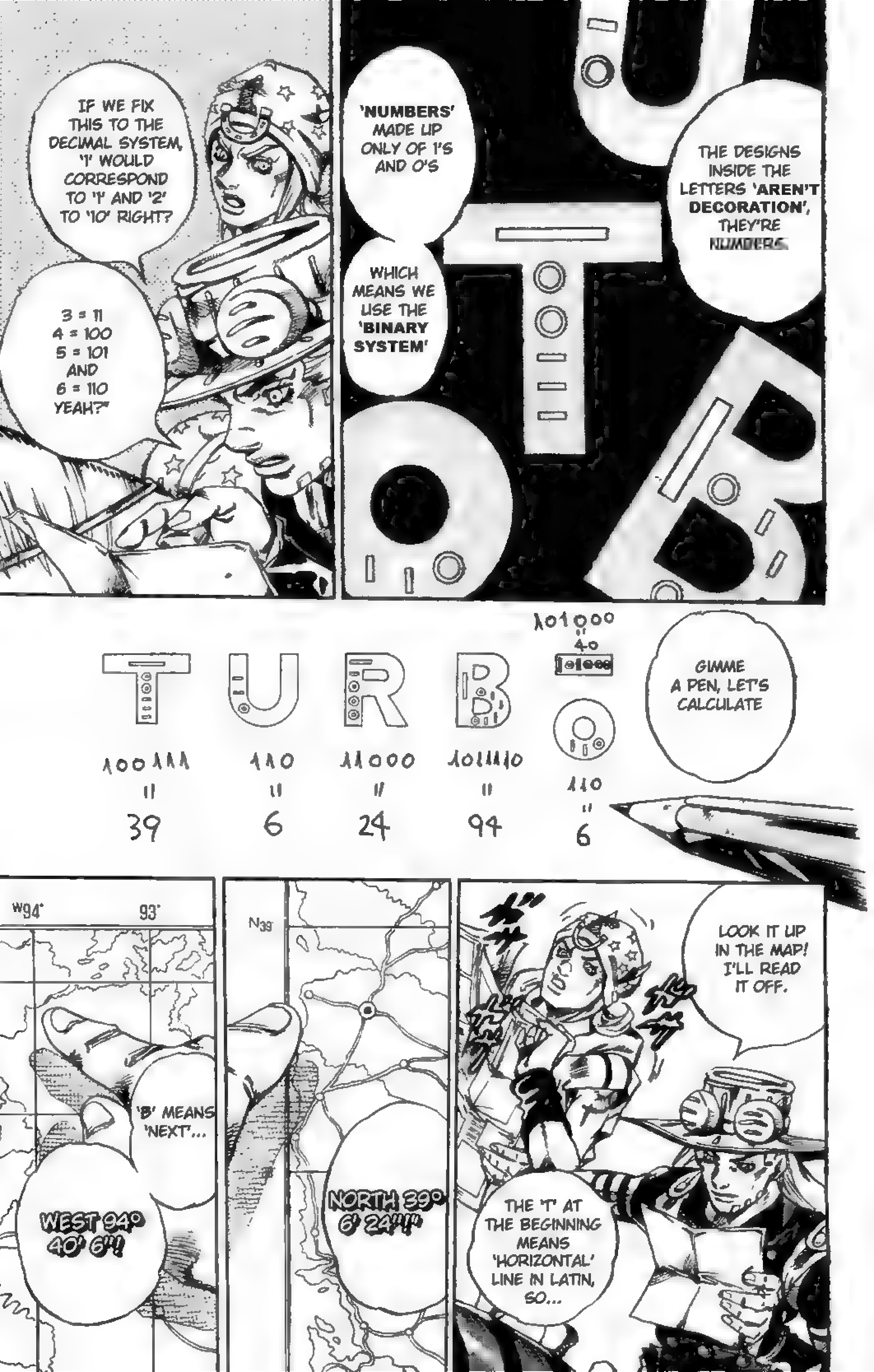

BREEEATH

WHAT AN ODD PAIR...
BUT YOU DID EAT THE MEAT. YOU ATE MY COW!
SO I'M NOT GOING TO APOLOGIZE
TRUE...
......
......
WAIT!
WHERE DID YOU ACQUIRE THAT STAND ABILITY!?
WHOEVER SHOT MY COW IS GONNA HANG
GEEZE, COCKY BASTARD. THE COYOTES ARE THE ONES WHO ATE MOST OF IT!
BUT... THAT 'FLESH FOAM SPRAY' ...

WAS IT IN THE DESERT AT ARIZONA?
DURING THE 'SECOND STAGE'?
'THE DEVIL'S PALM'?"
......
NOT THAT I'M REALLY INTERESTED, BUT...
ARE THERE OTHERS LIKE THAT?
WELL...
WE DON'T KNOW...
NOT A CLUE, REALLY
......
GALLOP
GALLOP
......
......

BUT IT DOESN'T SEEMS LIKE HOT PANTS KNOWS ANYTHING ABOUT THE 'CORPSE'.
WE COULD HAVE BEEN TOAST...
HE DOESN'T SEEM TO BE AN 'ENEMY'.
NOT A TERRORIST OR FROM THE GOVERNMENT...
WHAT IF HE WAS A LIAR?
HE COULD HAVE BEEN TRYING TO TRICK US....
I WOULD HAVE SHOT HIM.
... THERE'S ANOTHER THING, THOUGH,
THAT I'VE REALIZED, THANKS TO HIM....
IT'S WHEN I WAS CHECKING HIS SPINE WITH THE 'SPIN SCAN'...
MAYBE!
BUT ONE THING'S FOR SURE... THAT 'I HATE HIS GUTS'...
HOT PANTS

TURBO
IN LATIN, TURBŌ CAN MEAN 'CYCLONE'
BUT THERE'S NO SUCH WORD AS 'TURBŌ' ON OUR ROUT OR ANYWHERE ON THIS MAP.
'CONSTELLATION OF TURBŌ' 'MT. TURBŌ' 'TURBŌ ROCK' 'TURBŌ SWAMP' 'TREE OF TURBŌ'
THERE DOESN'T SEEM TO BE ANY NAME WE CAN ASSOCIATE IT TO, AND I COULDN'T FIGURE OUT WHY IT WAS TURBO IN THE FIRST PLACE...
BUT THEN IT OCCURRED TO ME THAT MAYBE THE MEANING OF THE WORD TURBO ISN'T THE CLUE.
MAYBE IT'S SHOWING US A LOCATION
THROUGH EACH OF THESE LETTERS.


THE DESIGNS INSIDE THE LETTERS 'AREN'T DECORATION', THEY'RE NUMBERS
'NUMBERS' MADE UP ONLY OF 1'S AND 0'S
WHICH MEANS WE USE THE 'BINARY SYSTEM'
IF WE FIX THIS TO THE DECIMAL SYSTEM, '1' WOULD CORRESPOND TO '1' AND '2' TO '10' RIGHT?
3 = 11 4 = 100 5 = 101 AND 6 = 110 YEAH?"
GIMME A PEN, LET'S CALCULATE
TURBO
101000 = 40
100111 = 39
110 = 6
11000 = 24
1011110 = 94
110 = 6
LOOK IT UP IN THE MAP! I'LL READ IT OFF.
THE 'T' AT THE BEGINNING MEANS 'HORIZONTAL' LINE IN LATIN, SO...
N39°
NORTH 39° 6' 24"!!
W94° 93°
'B' MEANS 'NEXT'...
WEST 94° 40' 6"!

WHERE IS IT?
WHERE DO THOSE NUMBERS MEET!?
'KANSAS CITY'!
KANSAS CITY
AND THAT'S THE LOCATION OF THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'!
LOOKS LIKE IT 'MATCHES' WITH THE ROUTE OF THE RACE.
IT'S THE 'FINISH LINE' OF THE 4TH STAGE! REALLY CLOSE TO IT!

NUMBERS HAVE A CONSTANT QUALITY.
IT COULD BE SOMETHING LIKE 'PROPHECY'
BUT IS IT POSSIBLE FOR AN OLD SAINT TO KNOW ABOUT LONGITUDES AND LATITUDES?
OUR GOAL IS THE SAME; TO 'FINISH' IN FIRST PLACE!
WILL HE REALIZE THE SAMETHING WITH HIS 'LEFT EYE'!!?
UNLESS HE'S A LAZY IDIOT, BUT THAT'S PROBABLY NOT THE CASE.
WE SHOULD PROBABLY ANTICIPATE THAT HE'S COME TO THE SAME CONCLUSION AS US! BUT THE TERRORISTS WON'T KNOW..."
EITHER WAY
DIO!!
'KANSAS CITY' IT IS THEN... THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'

?......
THIS HOUSE...
WAIT A SECOND, GYRO
THIS PLACE! DIDN'T WE PASS THIS PLACE BEFORE?

HOUSES AROUND HERE, YOU KNOW
THEY'RE ALL BUILT THE SAME WAY.
......
LOOK! GYRO!
L...
WE'RE BACK WHERE THE 'MEAT' IS AGAIN!
IT'S THE 'MEAT'!

THIS IS BAD!!
WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT, WAIT...
WE'VE COME BACK THE ROAD WE CAME FROM!
WHERE DID WE GO WRONG? WE'VE LOST 20 MINUTES!
SHIT! THAT HOT PANTS GUY WENT TO THE RIGHT WHEN HE LEFT, AND WE FOLLOWED...
WE WERE GOING THE OPPOSITE DIRECTION!
THAT GUY IS A PLAGUE! I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS! IS THIS WHAT I GET FOR EATING JUST 600G OF MEAT!?
I SWEAR, THAT GUY IS STEALING ALL MY LUCK!
BUT WE KNOW THE LOCATION AT KANSAS CITY THANKS TO HIM, RIGHT?"
JOHNNY! ARE YOU ON HIS SIDE OR SOMETHING?
THIS WAS HIS SCHEME! HE WENT TO THE RIGHT ON PURPOSE TO TRICK US!
THE CORRECT DIRECTION IS THAT WAY!

WE'RE GOING BACK! STRAIGHT THROUGH THIS ROAD BY THE ORCHARD...
... TURN LEFT AT THE END OF THE ROAD...
... TURN LEFT AGAIN...
... AND FINALLY, 'RIGHT'...

IS THAT THE SAME COW?
THE SAME PIECE OF MEAT?
WHY ARE WE HERE AGAIN?
WHAT THE HELL?

......!!
MAYBE WE DIDN'T GO BACK ON THE SAME ROAD...
MAYBE THERE ARE SMALLER PATHS IN THE ORCHARD,
AND WE HAPPENED TO GO THROUGH THOSE PATHS WITHOUT REALIZING WE WERE COMING BACK TO WHERE WE BEGAN.
THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE!
WE ONLY TURNED AT THREE CORNERS.
OUR HOOF MARKS ARE STILL LEFT.
LET'S FOLLOW THESE TRACKS BACK AND FIND THE RIGHT WAY.
SHIT! ANOTHER 20 MINUTE LOSS!
HURRY!
THAT'S 40 MINUTES TOTAL
WE'VE WASTED 40 MINUTES IN A SINGLE DAY! DIO'S GONNA GET WAY AHEAD OF US!

YOU TWO ARE LOST, TOO?
HOW MANY TIMES HAS IT HAPPENED?
WHAT THE HELL IS THIS!?
YOU'VE GOTTA BE KIDDING! WE'VE ONLY TURNED ONCE ON THE ROAD WE'VE COME!!

STOP RIGHT THERE!!
RIGHT THERE! DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!
THIS IS A WARNING!

THE 'PLUMS' GROWN HERE IN THIS ORCHARD CONTAIN A LOT OF IRON...
THAT COULD BE THE REASON WHY MY COMPASS DOESN'T SEEM TO BE POINTING IN THE RIGHT DIRECTION.
NO MATTER WHICH PATH I TAKE, I COME BACK TO THIS SPOT!
I'VE LOST NEARLY AN HOUR HERE.
LOOK AT MY TRACKS!! THEY PASS THROUGH FOUR TIMES, DON'T THEY? ...
THIS IS THE FOURTH TIME I'VE COME BACK HERE.
WHY...? I'M THE ONE WHO WANTS TO KNOW.
HOT PANTS, DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!
WE'RE THINKING THAT YOU COULD BE TRICKING US!!
YOU TWO AREN'T BAD PEOPLE.
IF YOU WERE, I'D ALREADY HAVE KILLED YOU... HOW'S THAT?
THEN I'LL BE THE ONE TO TRUST IN YOU.
SO WHAT'S THAT TO US!?
GET LOST ALREADY!!
WE'RE NEVER EVER GONNA TRUST YOU ANYWAYS, GOT THAT!? ...

......
WHAT WAS THAT SUPPOSED TO MEAN, JOHNNY?
WHAT WAS HE TALKING ABOUT?
I GUESS HE'S SAYING THAT SINCE WE'RE BOTH LOST,
WE SHOULD WORK TOGETHER TO FIND THE RIGHT PATH.
I'VE SAID IT BEFORE, BUT IT'S MY OPINION THAT **'HE ISN'T AN ENEMY'**.
TELL HIM TO GO EAT SHIT, JOHNNY.
TELL HIM YOURSELF.
EAT SHIT, ASSHOLE!
FALL OFF YOUR HORSE!
LET'S JUST COOPERATE UNTIL WE FIND THE MAIN ROAD!
AREN'T WE LOOKING FOR THE SAME PATH?
SO, LET'S SAY THAT WE DO TRUST YOU...
WHAT'S IN IT FOR US IF WE COOPERATE?
I'LL LET YOU HAVE SOME QUALITY FOOD IF YOU'RE WITH ME.
ポイッ

GYRO! IS THIS WHAT HE EATS EVERY DAY?!
IT'S A ROAST BEEF SANDWICH!
HOLY CRAP! IT'S EVEN GOT ONIONS AND EGGS
THERE'S NO POISON.
LOOK!
THAT HOUSE...
LOOKS LIKE THERE'S SOMEBODY INSIDE.
IT LOOKS WORN OUT BUT IT MUST BE INHABITED...
LET'S ASK WHOEVER LIVES THERE FOR DIRECTIONS!
WE'LL JUST BE STUCK HERE IF WE DON'T ASK.

SHIT!
HERE AGAIN!
THIS SAME PLACE AGAIN!
THAT SON OF A BITCH...
YOU GUYS!
ARE YOU GUYS LOST TOO!
HEY HEY HEY HEY HEY...
THAT'S 'GAUCHO'...
HE FINISHED 10TH ON THE 3RD STAGE!!

THAT SON OF A BITCH AGAIN!
ALWAYS AT THE CURTAIN NEAR THE DOOR! ALWAYS BY THAT DAMN CURTAIN
I'VE ASKED HIM OVER AND OVER AGAIN...
HOW TO GET OUT OF THIS ORCHARD...!
AND EACH TIME, THIS IS WHAT HE SAYS...
'YOU'LL FIND YOUR WAY OUT AFTER YOU KILL ME'...
THAT'S IT!
I CAN'T STAND THIS! I'LL GIVE HIM WHAT HE WANTS!

GET YOUR ASS OUT HERE, YOU LIAR!
I'LL SHOOT YOU DEAD JUST AS YOU WISH! SHOW YOURSELF, COWARD!!

ギ
ギギギギギギギギ

ギ
ギギギギ
ギ
ズン
……
ギ
……

THEN....
I HUMBLY SUGGEST THAT WE BEGIN.
D...
DON'T FUCK WITH ME!!
IF YOU WANT TO BE KILLED SO BADLY...
I'LL DO IT! THIS IS YOUR LAST CHANCE!
TELL ME THE 'REAL PATH' THAT'LL GET ME OUT OF HERE!

I'M NO LIAR...
カタッ
BUT IF YOU WANT TO CALL ME THAT, I DON'T MIND...
THERE IS ONLY ONE CORRECT PATH.
IF YOU WANT TO GET OUT OF HERE,
YOU MUST KILL ME. THAT IS THE PATH THAT IS TO BE TAKEN. A DECISION THAT MUST BE MADE EVENTUALLY...

......
HA!
YOUR HANDS!
YOUR HANDS ARE SHAKING!!
......
GYRO!? ... IS THIS WHAT I THINK IT IS!?
WAIT, JOHNNY! I DON'T REALLY UNDERSTAND THIS SITUATION!

WHAT WILL IT BE?
WERE YOU ONLY LYING WHEN YOU SAID YOU WOULD SHOOT ME?
THIS LOOKS SERIOUS!
YOU TWO...
ALTHOUGH I'M IN YOUR RANGE, THE DISTANCE WILL CAUSE YOUR BULLET TO LAND APPROXIMATELY 10 CENTIMETERS TO THE RIGHT.
IT WILL TAKE YOU 'FIVE MORE STEPS' TO ACCURATELY HIT ME.
YOUR CHANCES OF HITTING ME ARE LIMITED IF YOU'RE 'FIVE STEPS BEHIND'
YOU NEED TO TAKE 'FIVE MORE STEPS' IN THIS DIRECTION...
THAT IS ALSO CORRECT... IT IS POSSIBLE THAT EXCESSIVE STRAIN ON THE BODY COULD CAUSE IT TO FREEZE AGAINST ONE'S WILL.
YES
YOU ARE RIGHT...
PERHAPS IT IS BECAUSE OF FEAR.
THE DECISION MUST BE MADE.
THAT GUN ON YOUR HIP IS AN 1873 COLT.
ALLOW ME TO SPEAK OF SOMETHING EQUALLY IMPORTANT...
WITH THIS MUCH DISTANCE BETWEEN US, OUR BULLETS WILL MOST LIKELY NOT BE ABLE TO REACH ITS TARGET.

I CAN'T STAND THIS ANY LONGER!!
IT'S YOUR DECISION, SHOULD YOU CHOOSE TO QUIT.
BUT IN THAT CASE, YOU WOULD BE THE LIAR, NOT ME...

GYRO!

AAA
AAA
AAA
AAA
AAH!

N... NO WAY!
'FIVE STEPS' ...
THE SHOTS ARE ACCURATE FROM THIS DISTANCE.
BUT THE 'POWER' IS STILL WEAK.
THE RESISTANCE OF THE MUSCLES AND CHEST BONE SLOW THE BULLET DOWN,
AND ALTHOUGH IT HAS REACHED THE HEART, IT DIDN'T DESTROY IT COMPLETELY.

HHG... UUUH
GUF!
ONE MORE STEP AND...
Y... YOU...
KH... HEEEK, TERRIBLE...
SO... HOT...
EEK
HEEEEK, HEEEEEK, HOW DARE YOU!!

HEY! STOP, YOU!!

PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
HUFF
HUFF
PANT PANT
PANT
HUFF
HUFF
PUFF
PUFF
I THANK YOU.

7 The Small Tombstone on the Wide, Wide Field (END)

STARDUST CRUSADERS + JOJO PROJECT

TRANSLATION: ACK44

EDITING: FREQUENCY

PROOFREADING: FRESHY

荒 木 飛 呂 彦

"SOMETIMES I WONDER WHAT 'THE RIGHT PATH' IS.
SOMETIMES I WONDER WHAT WOULD HAPPEN IF I WERE TO GO DOWN THE WRONG PATH, IN PURSUIT OF THINGS LIKE LOVE, OR JUSTICE.

HOW ARE WE SUPPOSED TO DISTINGUISH BETWEEN THE '2' PATHS, THE RIGHT AND THE WRONG? WILL ANYONE EVER TELL US? IF WE WERE TO HURT THE ONE WE LOVED BECAUSE WE LOVED THEM, WHAT ARE WE SUPPOSED TO DO? GYRO AND JOHNNY, AND EVERYONE ELSE INVOLVED IN THIS RACE, IS THE ONLY OPTION AVAILABLE TO THEM UNDER THESE CIRCUMSTANCES TO 'PRAY'?

# Steel Ball Run v8ch1

Brought to you by JoJo Project

and Stardust Crusaders

[illegible]

Editing: [illegible]

Proofreading: [illegible]

JUMP COMICS

JOJO'S BIZARRE ADVENTURE Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

TOWARDS THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD

vol.8

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

1st.STAGE、走行妨害によるペナルティを受け、
1位を逃してしまったジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、
ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。
2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠の真ん中で、
突如ジャイロとジョニィに襲いかかるテロリスト達。
彼等の狙いは、『不思議な力』が身に付くという
『悪魔の手のひら』と呼ばれる土地で、ジョニィの左腕に
取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』。なんとSBRレースは
大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の
遺体を集める為のレースだったのだ！ 遺体の力で
爪を回転させ発射させる能力（タスク）を得たジョニィは
スタンドに希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意する。
続く3rd.STAGE、二つ目の遺体『眼球』を目前にした
ジャイロ達に、またもテロリストが襲いかかる。戦いの最中、
追い詰められたジャイロは、偶然にも『眼球』を手に入れ、
新たな鉄球の力で敵を圧倒する。しかし、その隙にもう片方の
『眼球』は、遺体の秘密を知ったディオに奪われてしまった！
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE
全行程中にニューヨークを含め
9ヵ所のチェックポイントを設
定。そこでレース順位、走行タイ
ム、不正行為を確認する。そして
各チェックポイント間のレース
を『STAGE』と呼び、STAGE
ごとにトップ通過者には賞金と
タイムボーナスが与えられる！
GOAL
NEW YORK
2nd.STAGE 1,200km
1st.STAGE 15,000m
3rd.STAGE 510km
4th.STAGE 1,250km
START
SAN DIEGO
4th.STAGE、ジャイロ達は、
『眼球』の暗号から、次の遺体が
ゴールのカンザス・シティにある事を知るも、
ステージ中盤の果樹園地帯で迷い、
出られなくなってしまう。同じく迷った
3rd.STAGE 1位のホット・パンツと共に
辿り着いた人家には謎の男が…。
「自分を倒さなくてはここから出られない」、
と言うその男に対し3人は!?
『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km 優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3600人を超えた！
そして1890年9月25日 午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！
ジャイロ・ツェペリ
ネアポリス王国の法務官。
不思議な鉄球を、自在に操
る特殊能力を持つ。国家叛
逆罪で捕まったマルコの
無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段
である「国王の恩赦」を
得る為にレースに参加。遺
体の一部「右眼」を持つ。
ジョニィ・ジョースター
元天才騎手だが、慢心から
半身不随となる。ジャイロの
鉄球の力に希望を見い出し、
秘密を知る為、レースに参加。
遺体の一部「左腕」を持つ。
ファニー・ヴァレンタイン
第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。
SBRレースを利用して、
遺体を集めようとしている。
ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を
所有している事を知り、テ
ロリストを送り込む。遺体の
一部「心臓」を持つ。
砂男サンドマン
ネイティブアメリカンの
青年。白人に奪われた部族
の土地を取り戻す為、己の
足のみでレースに参加。
ディエゴ・ブランドー
通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出
身の天才騎手。SBRレースに優
勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為
に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。
スティール夫人
スティールを支える妻。夫を
「よちよち」となだめる彼女は
弱冠14歳!?
スティーブン・スティール
40年のキャリアを持つプロ
モーター。SBRの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.8

## CONTENTS

TOWARDS THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD

#34

THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD ② 7

#35

THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD ③ 71

#36

THE GREEN TOMBSTONE ① 133

# #34 THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD ②

YO, HOT PANTS. AT THIS POINT, IT'S USELESS TO TRACE OUR FOOTSTEPS.
WE'VE BEEN PASSING THE SAME PLACE 'OVER AND OVER'. OUR PRINTS ARE JUMBLED TOGETHER, NOW.
THE COMPASS ISN'T DOING SHIT, EITHER.

EVERY TIME WE MAKE A TURN, WE'RE GONNA LEAVE A 'MARK' ON A TREE.
AFTER WE GO STRAIGHT THROUGH THIS PATH THAT'S IN FRONT OF THE HOUSE, WE GO 'LEFT' ON THE NEXT CORNER...
WHERE ARE WE GETTING 'LOST', IN THIS ORCHARD...?
WE'RE GONNA MOVE CAREFULLY, AND PRECISELY.
AND THEN, WE TAKE THE NEXT 'LEFT', AGAIN...
AND THEN, FINALLY, A 'RIGHT'...

パカラ
パカラ
パカラ
……
……
……

JOHNNY! WE'RE GONNA TRY THIS AGAIN!
THIS TIME...!
THIS TIME, WE'RE DEFINITELY GETTING OUT OF HERE!
WE NEED TO FOLLOW THE 'MARKS' ON THE TREE! WE'VE ALREADY LOST ABOUT 2 HOURS!
JOHNNY, WHERE THE HELL IS THE 'MARK'?! LET'S GO!
I... I'VE ALREADY FOUND IT...
IT'S THIS TREE.
THE MARK IS ON THIS TREE...

WHAT'S GOING ON?
I HAVE NO IDEA WHAT'S HAPPENING...
BUT, I DON'T UNDERSTAND...
WHEN WE MADE THAT TURN, THIS WAS THE ONLY TREE THAT I MARKED.
......
......
THIS IS THE ONLY TREE THAT I MADE A MARKING ON!

HEY, JOHNNY! WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING?!
I TOLD YOU TO ONLY MAKE A MARK WHEN WE MADE A TURN!
AND THAT'S WHAT I'M TELLING YOU I DID!! BESIDES, YOU SAW! YOU SAW ME MAKING THE MARKS!
WHAT THE HELL...? WHO MADE THESE OTHER MARKS, THEN...?

I HAVE NO IDEA WHAT'S GOING ON!
WHAT IS THIS PLACE?!
ALSO, THIS 'SYMBOL'! THIS 'MARK'!
AND THEY ALL POINT IN DIFFERENT DIRECTIONS!
I MADE ALL OF THESE MARKS! HOW COULD I HAVE MADE THE SAME MARK IN 4 OR 5 DIFFERENT PLACES?!
IT'S... ALL MY 'HANDWRITING'!
......

SO... OUR 'ENEMY' IS THE MAN IN THAT HOUSE, CORRECT?
A 'STAND ATTACK'.
THAT MUST BE WHAT THIS IS, AM I RIGHT...? WE'VE BEEN ATTACKED BY IT, FOR SEVERAL HOURS NOW...
I DON'T KNOW WHAT HIS 'MOTIVE' IS.
WHY DID THAT GUY HAVE A SHOOTOUT WITH GAUCHO?!
IF HE IS AN 'ENEMY', THEN WHY THE HELL WOULD HE WANT US TO GET 'LOST'?
THEN WHAT DO YOU PROPOSE WE DO, GYRO ZEPPELI?
DO YOU WANT TO ROAM AROUND HERE FOR A BIT LONGER?
HOW MANY MORE ROUNDS DO YOU WANT TO MAKE?
IF YOU WANT TO GO, FINE... BUT I'M NOT GOING TO WANDER AROUND ANYMORE.

......
THAT MAN TOLD GAUCHO...
"YOU CANNOT LEAVE UNLESS YOU DEFEAT ME".
...YES?
NO...
"UNLESS YOU KILL ME"... WAS IT?
WHAT DOES HE MEAN BY THAT...? WELL, LET'S GO BACK AND HAVE HIM EXPLAIN!
AND THEN...
IF WE'RE CONVINCED THAT HE'S OUR 'ENEMY'...
WE'LL TAKE HIM OUT, 'THREE AGAINST ONE'... THAT SHOULD BE A GOOD PLAN, YES?
......
I THOUGHT I TOLD YOU THAT I DON'T TRUST YOU.

......
GAUCHO WAS KILLED.
THIS IS NO TIME TO BE TALKING ABOUT FAIRNESS.
WE SHOULD DO WHAT WE CAN, WITH THE MINIMUM RISK... IF WE'RE GOING TO KILL HIM, ALL THREE OF US ARE GOING TO DO IT.
GYRO.
IF THIS KEEPS UP, WE'RE GOING TO BE HERE WHEN THE SUN SETS.
AND WE HAVE TO AVOID THAT, AT ALL COSTS...
I DON'T KNOW WHERE DIO IS AT THIS POINT IN TIME, BUT HE'LL BE A FULL DAY AHEAD OF US IF WE WASTE THE TIME WE HAVE NOW...!
DIO'LL GET TO 'KANSAS CITY' BEFORE US!
ANYTHING...
ANYTHING BUT THAT...! ESPECIALLY NOT BY HIM...!
NO WAY...!

I don't want him to get the next 'corpse part'...! No, it doesn't matter who gets it! We wouldn't want the terrorists to get it, either! Right, Gyro?!
It's the same for you, isn't it, Gyro?!
We have to overcome this situation by taking the least possible risks...!
LISTEN... ONCE WE KNOW FOR SURE THAT HE'S AN 'ENEMY'...
I'LL TAKE CARE OF THAT...
YOU TWO WILL TALK TO HIM.
YOU'LL TAKE HIS BACK?
WE AMBUSH HIM.
WHILE YOU DO THAT, I'LL TAKE HIS BACK...
AND FINISH HIM OFF. 3 AGAINST 1.
ARE YOU FINE WITH THIS?

AND YOU CAN REALLY DO THAT, HUH?
HE'S NOT A SLEEPING CAT, YOU KNOW.

WHOA!
AH!

'CREAM STARTER'... MY 'HAND' WILL GET BEHIND HIM...
NOW, GO TALK TO HIM... GET THIS OVER WITH, AND LET'S LEAVE.
..........

ザクッ
ザグッ
ザグッ

GLANCE
WHO ARE YOU...?
YOU'RE GOING TO HAVE TO TELL US YOUR OBJECTIVES...
WHY DID YOU KILL GAUCHO?

チラッ
ゴゴゴ
WOULD ONE OF YOU KINDLY MOVE BACK, TO WHERE THE OTHER GENTLEMAN IS STANDING...?
IF WE ARE TO CONVERSE...
I WOULD LIKE TO DO IT 'ONE AT A TIME'.
...LISTEN UP...
JUST ANSWER MY GODDAMN QUESTION.
WHATEVER YOU'RE TRYING TO PULL, WE DON'T CARE, ALL RIGHT?

IF WE WERE TO ENGAGE IN A SHOOTOUT, NOW...
...IF, OF COURSE....
YOU WILL NOT BE ABLE TO DEFEAT ME.
THE GENTLEMAN ON THE 'LEFT' STANDS A CHANCE.
SO YOU, KINDLY STEP BACK.
THE ONE I'LL BE CONVERSING WITH IS 'THE MAN ON THE LEFT'.

……
……
THIS IS FOR YOUR OWN GOOD... STEP BACK.
WOULD YOU LIKE ME TO TALK TO YOU A BIT MORE...?
THE GENTLEMAN ON THE LEFT HAS A 'DARK DETERMINATION'... HE WOULDN'T HESITATE TO KILL ME, IF THE SITUATION CALLED FOR IT.
BUT YOU ARE NOT THE SAME WAY... THAT IS YOUR 'NATURE'.
SO, MOVE ASIDE. THAT IS MY REASON.

YOU ARE TRYING TO FIGURE OUT A 'COUNTERMEASURE', LEST I ATTACK.
THAT IS WHAT'S BEEN 'INGRAINED' INTO YOU.
ON A LEVEL OF 'SKILL', NO DOUBT YOU ARE VERY TALENTED... BUT MERE 'SELF-DEFENSE' WILL NOT BE ENOUGH TO DEFEAT ME.
PASSIVE 'OBSERVERS' ARE NOT NEEDED HERE.

This...
This guy...

AH!

..UGH...!
That was...?!
That...
They will veer...
My steel balls...
They won't hit my target!? I'm not confident I can hit his heart!
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
What...?!
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
WHAT DO YOU WANT FROM US?!
ARE YOU A 'TERRORIST'? ARE YOU LINKED WITH THE GOVERNMENT?!
I APOLOGIZE FOR THE DELAY, BUT ALLOW ME TO INTRODUCE MYSELF...
MY NAME... IS 'RINGO ROADAGAIN'.
I AM A 'STAND USER'. I DEVELOPED MY 'ABILITIES' 3 YEARS AGO, IN THE DESERT...
I CALL IT 'MANDOM'.
PLEASE RECOGNIZE IT AS SUCH.

ONLY '6 SECONDS'.
MANDAM
NOT A SECOND MORE, NOT A SECOND LESS.
FOR PRECISELY '6 SECONDS', I CAN REWIND 'TIME'.
THAT IS MY 'ABILITY'.

WHILE YOU WERE ON YOUR HORSES... ALL I HAD TO DO...
WAS REWIND TIME, IF ONLY FOR '6 SECONDS'.
YET YOU DIDN'T REALIZE THIS SUBTLE ODDITY.
THAT'S WHY, INSTEAD OF TURNING AT THE 'INTENDED' ROUTE, YOU TURNED SOMEWHERE 'IN FRONT' OF IT.
AND SINCE YOU COULDN'T TELL THE SCENERY APART... 'MARKING' THE TREES WOULD HAVE NO EFFECT...
'Intended turn'
Distance traveled within the 6 seconds
INSTEAD OF THE TREE THAT YOU INTENDED TO MARK...
YOU MARKED THE TREE IN THE SPOT 6 SECONDS BEFORE, AND TOOK THE TURN.
Distance covered in 6 seconds
They come back to this point and turn
BUT STILL, YOU RETAIN THE 'MEMORY' OF HAVING 'TRAVELED THE WHOLE WAY'...
AND THIS IS REPEATED...
AS LONG AS I LEFT MORE THAN '6 SECONDS' WORTH OF TIME BETWEEN MY REWINDING OF TIME... I COULD CONTINUOUSLY KEEP ON TURNING THE CLOCK BACKWARDS.

AND THAT IS WHY YOU WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO ESCAPE FROM THIS ORCHARD.
WHAT'S YOUR OBJECTIVE...?!
WHY WOULD YOU WANT US TO GET LOST?!
I WANT YOU TO ATTEMPT TO 'KILL' ME.
A FAIR 'DUEL' WILL ALLOW ME TO GROW AS A HUMAN BEING.
DEVOID OF PETTINESS... A MURDER ATTEMPTED WITH THE DARKEST OF INTENTIONS...

I HUMBLY REQUEST YOUR COOPERATION.
WHAT WILL YOU DO? THE CHOICE IS YOURS...
WILL 'RAISE' ME TOWARDS SACRED HEIGHTS... I AM YET INCOMPLETE, AS A HUMAN.
THERE ARE THINGS THAT I MUST OVERCOME.
'DIVINITY' IS A 'PURSUIT'.
AND THAT IS WHY I HAVE NOT HIDDEN ANYTHING FROM YOU... MY 'ABILITY', MY 'OBJECTIVES'... I HAVE NO REASON TO LIE.

THIS WORLD THAT WE LIVE IN... IT SEEMS AS IF OUR VALUES ARE LEANING HEAVILY TOWARDS ONE OF 'SPOILED INDIFFERENCE'...
DO YOU WANT TO CONDEMN IT AS BACKWARDS?
THIS IS 'THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD'...
IS THIS GUY TELLING THE TRUTH? IS THIS A JOKE?
HE... CAN'T BE SANE...
DON'T INDULGE HIM ANY FURTHER.
I'M NOT PUTTING UP WITH THIS SHIT ANYMORE.
HE'S OBVIOUSLY CRAZY.
IF WE KEEP ON GOING SLOWLY, WE'LL DEFINITELY BE ABLE TO GET OUT OF HERE, WITHOUT MAKING MISTAKES!
HEY, I QUIT! LET'S GO! JOHNNY! GYRO!

AGH...
UH... UGH...
I'LL LEAVE THE REST TO YOU TWO! DON'T LET HIM PICK UP THE GUN WITH HIS LEFT HAND!
ALL RIGHT! JOHNNY! GYRO!
DO IT!
DON'T LET HIM GET THE GUN!!

60
5
DON'T INDULGE HIM ANY FURTHER.
I'M NOT PUTTING UP WITH THIS SHIT ANYMORE.

WHAT?!
STEP

IMPOSSIBLE!
WHAT WAS THAT?!
MY SPRAY DEFINITELY GOT HIM...!
WHAT...?!
THAT WAS...?!
HE JUST...!
'6 SECONDS'...
I CAN REWIND '6 SECONDS' IN TIME...
AND THAT IS THE TRIGGER FOR MY ABILITY, 'MANDOM'.
I WAS 'FAIR'... I HAVE ALREADY EXPLAINED THIS TO YOU, IN ALL 'FAIRNESS'.
I MERELY TWIST THE KNOB ON THIS WRISTWATCH THE PROPER AMOUNT...

YOU WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO ESCAPE, UNLESS YOU KILL ME!
I WILL ASK AS MANY TIMES AS IT TAKES...
WHAT DO YOU CHOOSE?
AGHHHHH!!!!

ドドドド
ドドドド
ドドドドドド

WHAT...?!

WHA...

N...
NO WAY!

JOHNNYYYYYYY!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

AGH!

ドドドド
ドドドド
ドドドド
AS I THOUGHT...
YOU...
'GYRO ZEPPELI'...
YOU ARE A MERE 'CONFORMIST'!
DISGUSTING!
YOU THREW THOSE WEAPONS, EVEN WHEN YOU WERE OUT OF RANGE...!
YOU THREW THEM, OUT OF RAGE FOR LOSING YOUR 'FRIEND'...
YOU WILL NEVER BE ABLE TO KILL ME WITH SOMETHING LIKE 'THAT'!

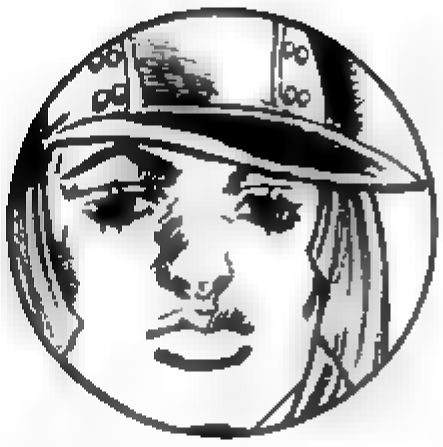
GUH...
GAH...
UGH...
UHH....
GUH!
J....
JOHNNY...
I STILL HAVE 'ONE SHOT' LEFT IN THIS REVOLVER...
BUT I AM ONLY INCLINED TO KILL THOSE THAT DESIRE TO KILL ME, WITH THAT ALL-ENCOMPASSING 'DARK INTENTION'...
THERE IS NO NEED FOR ME TO WASTE MY TIME IN FINISHING YOU OFF...
GET OUT... I WILL RELEASE YOU FROM THESE ORCHARDS.
ゴゴ
ドドド

AND TO THE MAN WHO VALUED MY STAND ABILITY... TO THE MAN WHO SENT ME HERE, I AM INDEBTED.
MY ONLY OBJECTIVE IS IN MY 'TRAINING'...
TO BECOME A HUMAN, WORTHY OF BEING USEFUL TO THIS WORLD...
THE 'CORPSE PART' THAT THIS 'JOESTAR' HAS IN HIS 'LEFT ARM'... I WILL TAKE IT, AND RETURN IT TO 'HIM'.
..........
AGH....
UGH...
GUH!
I THANK YOU.

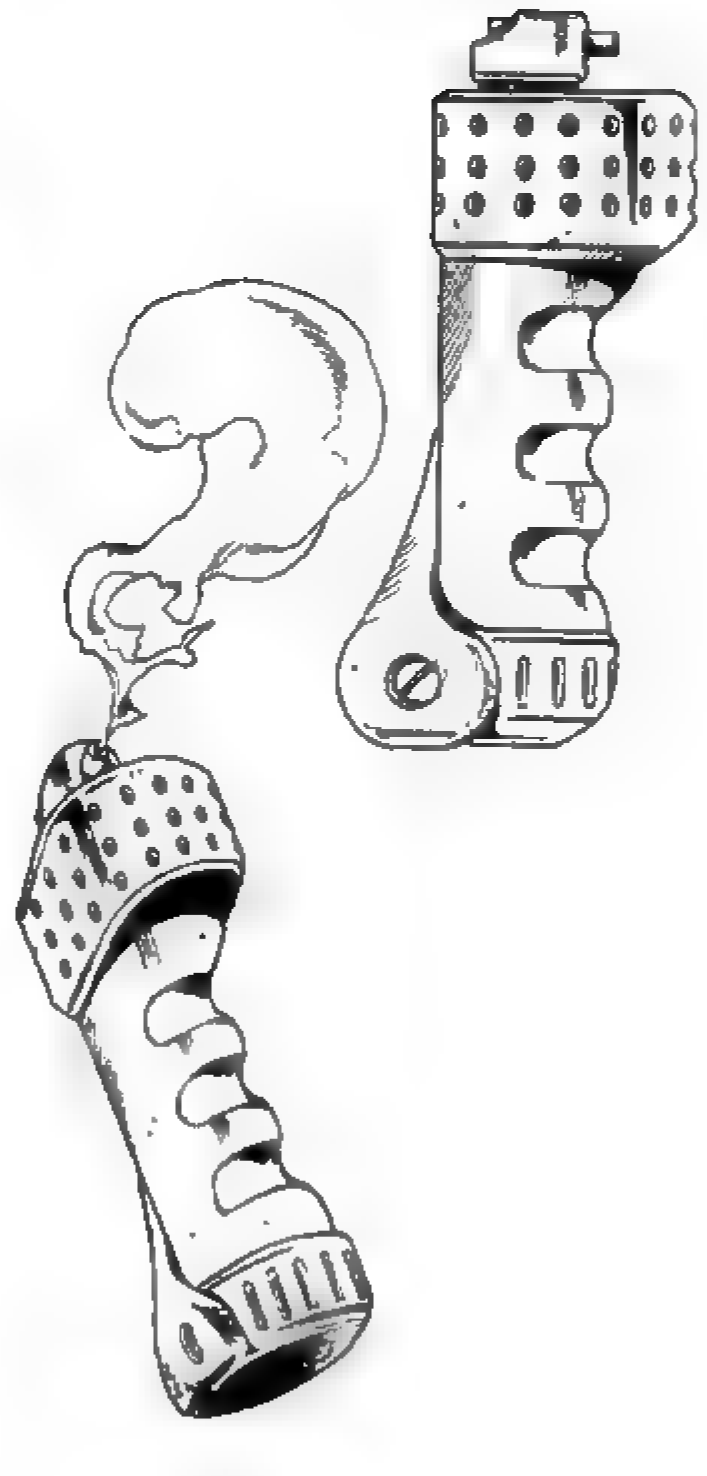
AAGHHHHHH!!!
ドドドドド

THAT GUY...
THAT BASTARD... WAS THIS...
DID HE DO IT ON PURPOSE ...?!
THAT GUN WAS A 1874 COLT...
IT'S FIRING RANGE...
WAS THE DISTANCE THAT THIS STEEL BALL ROLLED...
OR WAS IT COINCIDENCE ...?

...WHICH IS A STEP FARTHER THAN JOHNNY.
JOHNNY IS 'STILL ALIVE'.
HIS BRAIN SHOULD STILL BE INTACT. THE BULLET SHOULD HAVE STOPPED, LODGED IN THE SKULL....



HOT PANTS



**STAND NAME 'CREAM STARTER'**

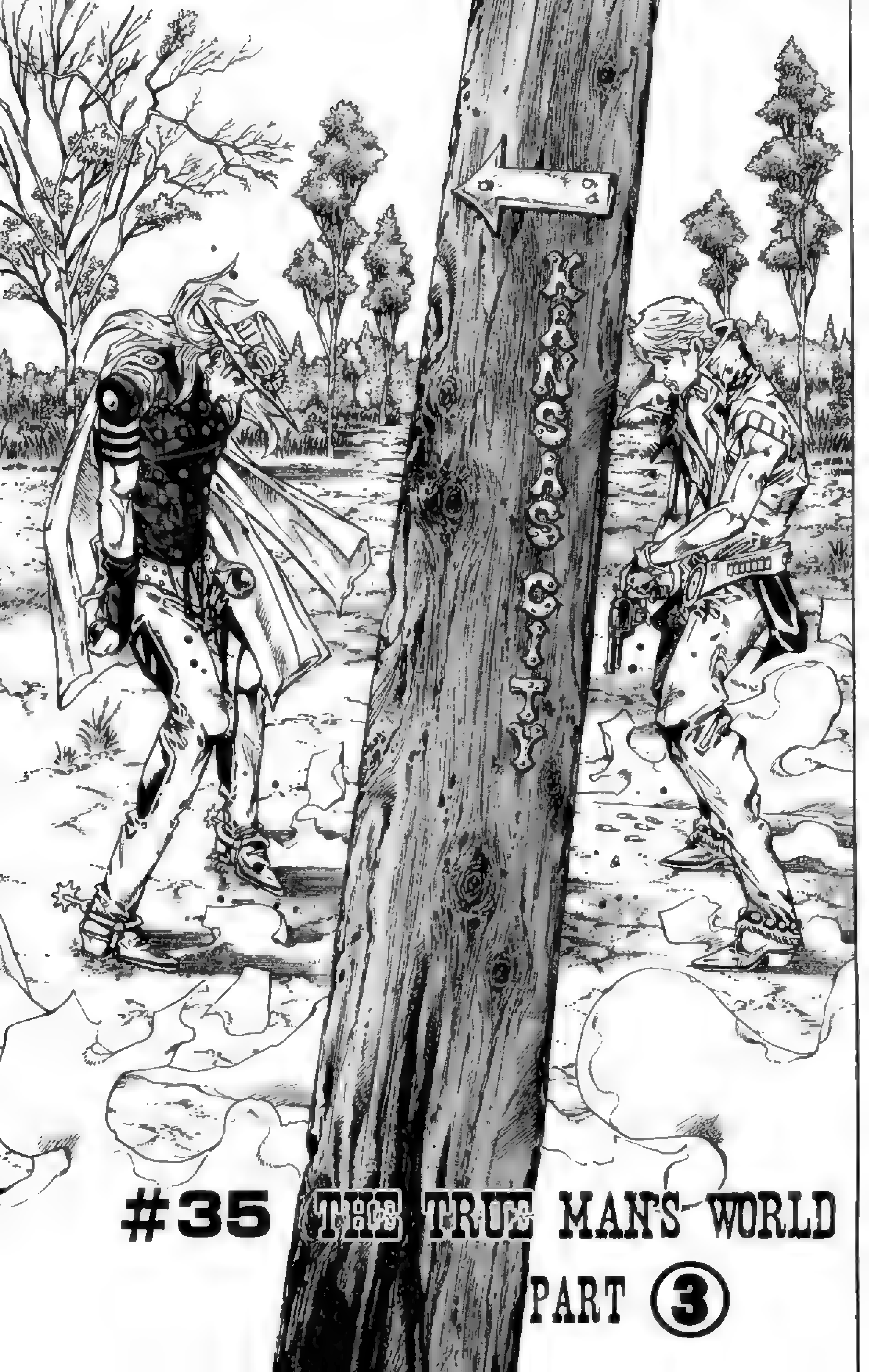
CAN TURN FLESH INTO A CREAMLIKE SUBSTANCE THAT CAN BE SPRAYED. WHEN IN CONTACT WITH SOMEONE ELSE'S BODY, THE OTHER PERSON'S FLESH IS THE ONE THAT IS DRAINED.

# Steel Ball Run v8ch2

Brought to you by JoJo Project
and Stardust Crusaders

Script: Freshy

Editing: Shizuka Joestar & Frequency


KANSAS CITY
#35 THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD
PART ③

When Ringo Roadagain was young,
Ringo's father, who was a farmer, was drafted and sent to war...
And for reasons unknown, he escaped from the frontlines.

Immediately after he was found, he was imprisoned... and eventually, he died of disease.
The Roadagain family was now fatherless - due to their extreme poverty and their newfound brand as 'traitors',
Ringo's mother and his two sisters were forced to leave, and they traveled all across the country.
From birth, Ringo had fragile skin, and even the slightest things could give him cuts, causing him to bleed.
None of the doctors that ringo was taken to, knew the reason for this strange con dition. There were times when Ringo would scrape his elbows in bed, while sleeping, and if he were to cut the inside of his mouth, he would sometimes be unable to breathe.
He often fell ill, and he was never able to go to school.

And one night, when a 10 year old Ringo woke up,
He saw a large man, clad in a military uniform, looming over him, illuminated in the dim light.
The man gave off a strange scent, and, almost like a vapid cow, was eating a raw potato that he had in his right hand.

AND HERE I WAS, DISAP-POINTED THAT THIS HOUSE DIDN'T HAVE SHIT...
I'D LONG FOR-GOTTEN ...
SKIN AS BEAUTIFUL AS THIS...
DON'T MAKE A RUCKUS, NOW.
And the man choked Ringo with his free hand and said:

AH.....
AHH...
AHHH....
UHH...
HAHH
AHHHH!
HUHH...
HAHH...
HAHH...
AHHHH!

SO BEAUTIFUL!
SO FUCKING BEAUTIFUL! IT'S A MILLION TIMES MORE BEAUTIFUL THAN I THOUGHT...!!
WHOA!
HAHH HAHH...
......

HAHH...
HAHH...
HUFF.... HAH...
HUHH ...
HAHH...
HEY.
WHAT DO YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING?
CALM DOWN...
THAT'S DANGEROUS.
UGH.... UHHH...!
UGH!
GUH!

HAHH, HAHH....
GUH!
COUGH COUGH
THAT'S PRETTY AMAZING! BUT, YOU DON'T GET IT, DO YOU?
YOU...
MANAGED TO TAKE THAT FROM ME?
THAT'S SOMETHING ONLY A BAD BOY WOULD DO. DON'T TAKE THAT THING SO LIGHTLY, NOW...
LISTEN! IF YOU SHOOT THAT THING... THINK ABOUT THE AMOUNT OF SHOCK YOU'RE GONNA GET.
YOUR NOSE IS GONNA BLEED LIKE HELL...ENOUGH SO THAT YOU'LL NEVER GROW UP BIG AND STRONG, YEAH?
PLUS, I'M NOT MAD YET, BUT...YOU'RE GONNA MAKE ME MAD.
YOUR NOSE...IT'S BLEEDIN' PRETTY BAD.
YOU ALL RIGHT? IS THAT SOME SORT OF DISEASE? THAT'S A LOT OF BLOOD...

I'LL BE GENTLE, SO PUT THE GUN DOWN!
I'LL RAISE YOU LIKE MY OWN SON, SO PUT THE GUN UNDER THE BED!
BUT, AS A MAN WHO USED TO BE IN THE ARMY...
IF YOU SHOOT, I'LL BE INCREDIBLY PISSED OFF! I WON'T LET YOU OFF THAT EASILY... BEFORE I KILL YOU,
I'LL CUT OFF YOUR MOM AND YOUR SISTERS' ARMS AND FEED THEM TO THE GODDAMN PIGS!
HAHH,
YOU'RE A GOOD BOY, AREN'TCHA? YOU DON'T HAVE THE GUTS TO SHOOT ME....PUT THE GUN DOWN.
HAHH.... HAHH....
HAHH....
AGH!
COUGH!
COUGH!
COUGH, COUGH!
COUGH!

COUGH!
UGH!

ドッ
ドッ
ドッ
ドッ
ドッ
ドッ

ドドドド
ドドドド
AGH-HHHH!!!

That is what he believed... And that was the only 'path' that he could pursue.
The wall that he had to surpass was what he called 'The True Man's World'.
A fair duel served to eliminate his uncertainties within.
There was a newfound power in his eyes and his skin became flushed.
The boy's nosebleed had already stopped.
The 'path of light' that he was to take...
He could see the 'light'.
And after that, ever since... Ringo Roadagain never suffered from sudden cuts or difficulty with breathing.
He breathed through his nose, and it filled his chest. It was like he was breathing for the first time the air was crisp fresh.

YOU CAN'T BE...
HEADING BACK TOWARDS THAT CABIN, ARE YOU, SON?
TO SAVE JOHNNY JOESTAR...
GYRO,
DO NOT GO BACK TO THAT CABIN.
IF YOU GO, YOU WILL LOSE.

YOU CANNOT WIN...
THIS SHOULD BE SOMETHING THAT YOU'VE REALIZED BY NOW.
FATH-ER...
......
WHAT ARE YOUR MOTIVES FOR 'GOING' TO THAT CABIN?
YOU'RE BEING 'SENTIMENTAL'... AND THAT IS WHY YOU LOSE.
THAT 'SENTIMENTALITY'... OF WANTING TO SAVE YOUR 'FRIEND'.
THAT 'SENTIMENT' EATS ITS WAY INTO THE HEART AND CREATES VULNER-ABILITY.
'SENTIMENTALITY' WILL BE THE DE-STRUCTION OF THIS FAMILY... AND OF THE ART OF OUR 'STEEL BALLS'!

'VICTORY' IS IRRELEVANT!
THE 'STEEL BALLS' ARE FOR THE KING! IT IS NOT A SKILL THAT IS TO BE USED FOR COMBAT!
YOU SHOULD NOT GO!
AND HAVE I NOT TOLD YOU? THE CRIMINAL MAY BE A 'BOY', OR HE MAY EVEN BE 'INNOCENT'...BUT ONE MUST NOT FEEL 'SENTIMENTAL' TOWARDS THEM!
LEAVE THIS ORCHARD IN SILENCE!
YOU MUST IMMEDIATELY REMOVE YOURSELF FROM THIS RACE!
THIS IS AN ORDER! YOU ARE THE ELDEST SON OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY!

IF I MAY, FATHER...
'SENTMETALISM' ...?
THAT'S NOT IT.
PLUS, THAT BASTARD, HE THINKS I'M A 'CONFORMIST'...?
FUCK THAT... BIG-HEADED ASSHOLE, TALKING BIG, IS HE...?!
I JUST WANT TO 'UNDERSTAND'.
DOES MARCO REALLY HAVE TO BE EXECUTED?
WHAT THE HELL IS THE IDENTITY OF THE 'CORPSE' THAT JOHNNY WANTS TO FIND?
MY PATH TO 'UNDER-STANDING' IS THE ULTIMATE PRIORITY!
OR ELSE, I'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO MOVE 'FORWARD'! 'NOWHERE'! NOT EVEN THE PATH TO THE 'FUTURE'! I WON'T EVEN BE ABLE TO PURSUE IT!
THAT'S WHY I JOINED THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE!
I CAN SEE IT! I'M BEGINNING TO SEE IT, FATHER!
I'M GETTING THE 'SENSATION' OF VICTORY!

ORAAAAA
AAAAAAA
AAAAAAA
!!!

IN A WORD, THIS IS LIKE CHESS...
BUT, RINGO ROADAGAIN ...
STARTING NOW, NEITHER OF US CAN BACK DOWN.
THE FIRST ONE TO MAKE A 'BAD MOVE' WILL LOSE... NO MATTER WHAT WE BOTH THINK...
NO MATTER HOW HARD WE FIGHT AGAINST IT!
HE'S DEFINITELY STILL ALIVE... JOHNNY...
AND THAT 'MAP'... 'KANSAS CITY'...
HE KNOWS WHERE THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART' IS, NOW...!
KANSAS CITY
TURBO

ORAAAAA!!!!....

........
......
STILL HERE...
YOUR ACTIONS ARE MEANINGLESS TO ME.
I'VE ALREADY EXPRESSED THIS.

I CAN REWIND '6 SECONDS' IN TIME...! I CAN DO IT AS MANY TIMES AS I WISH...!
MY 'EMPLOYER' WILL MOST LIKELY TELL ME TO DISPOSE OF YOU AS WELL, BUT DOING SO IS WORTH NOTHING TO ME.
I WILL LET YOU LEAVE THIS OR-CHARD. GO, ALONE.
RETURN TO YOUR RACE. DO AS YOU WISH...
......
YA KNOW...MIGHT JUST BE ME, BUT I'M GETTING THE FEELING YOU'RE LOOKING DOWN ON ME.
YOU SAID...YOU FIDDLE WITH THAT WRISTWATCH TO TURN BACK TIME, BUT...
YOU KNOW, I THREW THAT STEEL BALL TO CHECK YOUR BODY.
ザッ
ザッ

I'LL TELL YOU, TO BE 'FAIR'.
MY STEEL BALL'S 'SCAN' FOUND AN OLD WOUND IN YOUR LEFT COLLARBONE.
IN MY NEXT ATTACK, I'M GOING TO AIM FOR THAT 'COLLAR-BONE'!
AND THAT IMPACT, TO THAT OLD WOUND...
WILL MOST DEFI-NITELY PARALYZE YOUR WHOLE 'LEFT SIDE'.
......
AND I DON'T THINK YOU'RE GONNA BE ABLE TO TURN THE KNOB ON YOUR 'WRISTWATCH' WITH A PARALYZED LEFT HAND.

AND NOT JUST YOUR 'LEFT ARM', BUT YOUR 'LEFT LEG'...EVEN YOUR 'LEFT EYELID' WILL DROP...
YOU WON'T EVEN BE ABLE TO SPEAK.
EVEN IF YOU WANTED TO, THERE WON'T BE A REDO, NO MORE '6 SECONDS' BACK IN TIME!
......
AND THAT PARALYSIS WILL ALSO STOP YOUR 'HEART', WHICH IS ON THE LEFT SIDE OF YOUR BODY.

SFX: STEP
SFX: STEP

ゴゴゴゴゴ
AND, FROM THIS DISTANCE....
NEITHER OF US ARE GONNA MISS THIS SHOT.
......

SO, NOW WHAT?
WE CAN'T BACK DOWN NOW.
IT DOESN'T MATTER WHAT WE WANT, ANYMORE.
ドドドド

ドゴオオオオ

TH...THIS GUY!
MY 'HEART'... MY 'LEFT ARM'...!

AGH! UGH! MY 'LEFT ARM'...! UGH!
GUH!
TICK
TICK
AGHHHH!!!
A 'DRAW'...!
GYRO ZEPPELI...!
DAMN...!
'6 SECONDS'... IS GOING TO PASS...!

ドァァァァ
グリリ
ドドド

THOUGHT SO...
SO, YOU TURNED BACK TIME...
'6 SECONDS'!
SO... WHAT NOW? 'ONE MORE TIME'?
ドドドドド
INTERESTING, GYRO ZEPPELI!
ONE MORE TIME?!
YOUR EYES HAVE TAKEN ON A BETTER 'GLOW'!
BUT YOU ARE STILL MERELY A 'CONFORMIST'!
ドドドド
THAT'S NOT FOR YOU TO DECIDE! NEITHER OF US CAN BACK DOWN, NOW!!
ドドド

THROW

ベキ
ベキベキ
ペギャア
ドバッ

UGH!

CHK
THIS IS THE 2ND SHOT!
THIS DECIDES IT!
AGH!

WITH YOUR 'LEFT ARM' ...
......
A SHARD OF WOOD
TH... THIS...
...RINGO ROADAGAIN...
YOU WANTED TO FINISH ME OFF WITH THAT 'SECOND SHOT' ...
YOU...WITH THAT 'LEFT ARM'...
GUARDED YOUR 'COL-LARBONE'...

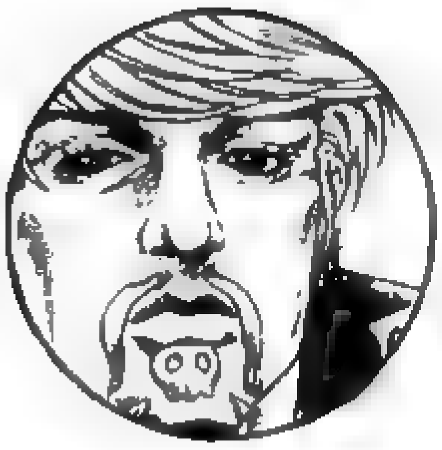
YOUR ATTACK DIDN'T HIT MY 'VITALS', AND INSTEAD HIT MY SHOULDER!
AND BECAUSE OF THAT 'DEFENSIVE' STANCE...
THE END...WOULD BE WHEN YOU FIRED YOUR 'NEXT SHOT'...

'A SHARD OF WOOD'.
THE 'PIECES OF WOOD' THAT WERE FALLING FROM THE CEILING...
YOU REMEMBERED WHERE THEY WERE FROM THE FIRST '6 SECONDS', AND USED YOUR 'STEEL BALL' TO LAUNCH ONE AT ME...
......
ADMIRABLE...
'ONE MOVE'.
GYRO ZEPPELI.
I WAS ONE MOVE BEHIND...

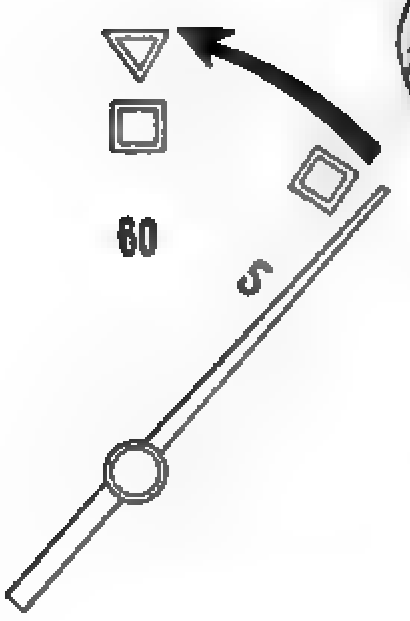
THERE'S NO MORE 'SECOND SHOT' FOR YOU. PUT THAT 'GUN' BACK ON THE FLOOR.
STOP IT.
DON'T TRY ANY-THING FUNNY...
IF YOU HADN'T BEEN 'GUARDING' YOURSELF WITH ONE ARM, YOU WOULD DEFINTELY HAVE HIT MY VITALS...
SOMEONE AS CAPABLE AS YOU.
I'M SATISFIED... THERE'S NO REASON FOR ME TO FINISH YOU OFF!
BUT THAT WOULD HAVE BROUGHT THE MATCH TO A 'DUEL' AGAIN... ANOTHER '6 SECONDS' REWINDED...
IT WOULD HAVE GONE ON. THE DUEL WOULD NEVER HAVE ENDED.
THOUGH... IT SEEMS AS IF THOSE '6 SECONDS' ARE ALREADY UP...
THAT'S WHY YOU ARE A CONFORMIST! FIND THE 'PATH OF LIGHT'...
THE 'SHINING PATH' THAT ONE MUST TREAD...

THERE ARE 'SOCIETAL VALUES' AND ALSO, 'A TRUE MAN'S VALUES'.
THEY USED TO BE SYNONYMOUS IN THE PAST, BUT CURRENTLY... THE '2' ARE NOT NECESSARILY ONE AND THE SAME.
THE 'MAN' AND 'SOCIETY' ARE COMPLETELY DIFFERENT IDEALS NOW... BUT THE 'TRUE ROAD TO VICTORY' REQUIRES THE EMBRACING OF THE 'TRUE MAN'S VALUES'... AND YOU SHOULD BE ABLE TO SEE IT, NOW...
CONTINUE THE RACE, AND FIND OUT FOR YOURSELF... THE 'PATH OF LIGHT'...
THAT IS WHAT I WILL PRAY FOR.
AND I THANK YOU.

WELCOME ...
TO THE TRUE MAN'S WORLD.
LOOKS LIKE YOU STILL HAVE A PULSE...
JOHNNY....
...YOU AND ME BOTH.



RINGO ROADAGAIN




STAND NAME: 'MANDOM'

CAN REWIND 6 SECONDS IN TIME.
RINGO ROADAGAIN'S WRISTWATCH IS JUST A PHYSICAL MANIFESTATION FOR HIS PSYCHOLOGICAL 'SWITCH'.

# Steel Ball Run v8ch3

Brought to you by JoJo Project
and Stardust Crusaders

Script: ack44

Editing: Frequency

Proofreading: Freshy & Shizuka Joestar

STEEL BALL RUN
#36 THE GREEN TOMBSTONE ①

20th Day on the 4th Stage
A full day until 'Kansas City', the Goal
(2 hours until the sunset)
Stage running distance- About 1250 km
Total number of racers- 1918
Racers withdrawn from the race- 825
Currently number 1- Diego Brando (190 points)
Kansas City
Mississippi River
4th
3rd
2nd
1st

UH...
UGH...

HEY, IS YOUR HEAD FEELING ALL RIGHT?
LISTEN... I THINK I JUST CAME UP WITH SOMETHING.
AN ORIGINAL GAG.
BUT, LISTEN UP... I'M ONLY GONNA DO IT ONCE, SO PAY ATTENTION.
ONLY ONCE, ALL RIGHT...? LOOK AT MY FINGERS. HOW MANY AM I HOLDING UP?
FOUR
EXCUSE ME,
LET ME PASS.
ZERO
AND THAT WAS THE GAG... WHAT DO YOU THINK?
HMM... IT WAS PRETTY GOOD!
IT'S PRETTY HILARIOUS, ACTUALLY!
RIGHT? IT GETS FUNNIER WITH TIME.
DON'T TAKE MY IDEA, JUST BECAUSE YOU LIKE IT.

MR. HORSIE, LET ME PASS~.
JOHNNY...
ALL RIGHT, LET'S GET GOING! I SPRAYED HOT PANTS' WOUNDS TOO, BEFORE HE COULD WAKE UP...!
PROBABLY... CHILLING, HUH.
... BUT IT'S NOT LIKE WE CAN QUIT THE RACE, NOW...
BUT YOU WEREN'T GOING TO QUIT ANYWAY, RIGHT?
HE WAS A TERRIFYING ENEMY...
I WONDER IF ALL THE OTHERS THAT WE'RE GOING TO ENCOUNTER ARE GOING TO BE LIKE HIM...
EVEN IF WE DID THROW THE RACE, YOU'D STILL BE CHASED BY THE GOVERNMENT, FOR THE REST OF YOUR LIFE.

LIKE YOU SAID... I DON'T HAVE ANY INTENTION OF DROPPING THE RACE.
ACTUALLY, I FEEL EMBOLDENED.
YEAH... I DON'T KNOW WHY, BUT... I FEEL THE SAME. LET'S GO TO KANSAS CITY. IN THE LEAD.
ALSO, THE IDENTITY OF THE 'CORPSE'... WHO IS THIS 'SAINT'? WE NEED TO GET SOME INFORMATION FROM THE VATICAN.
WHOA!
THIS GUY...! HE HAS A LOT OF STUFF! LET'S TAKE ALL OF HIS ROAST BEEF SANDWICHES.
IF WE EAT ALL OF THEM...
THAT WOULD MEAN THAT HE'LL HAVE NO MORE EVIDENCE LEFT TO SENTENCE US TO 'HANG'.
OR MAYBE WE SHOULD JUST EAT THE MEAT AND LEAVE THE BREAD TO PISS HIM OFF, HUH?
NYO HOHOHO!
IS HE REALLY ALIVE?
IT'S LIKE...

AH!
......

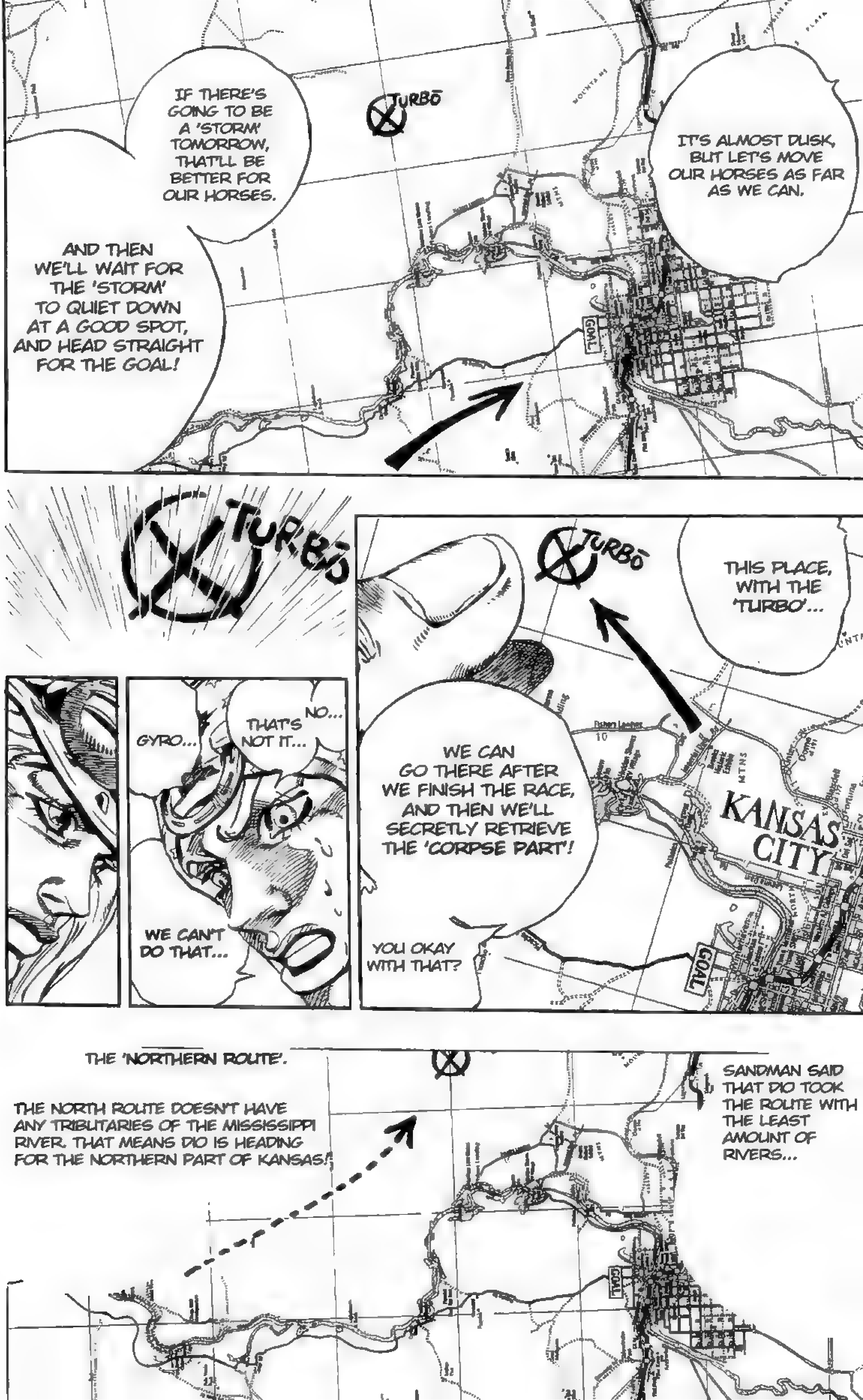
WHAT THE...?! HOT PANTS...
...NO WAY!
AH...
WELL, THAT'S A SURPRISE...
BUT I GUESS IT DOESN'T MATTER...
'HE'...NO,
HOT PANTS... NO MATTER WHO 'HE' MIGHT BE... IT HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH US...
IN POINTS... THAT 'CREAM' GUY IS STILL AHEAD OF US!
HURRY, JOHNNY!

BEING SEEN ISN'T AN ISSUE...
BUT BEING FOLLOWED BY THOSE BALLOONS IS A PROBLEM.
LET'S MOVE THROUGH THE TREES.
ALSO... WHEN YOU TALK, COVER YOUR 'MOUTH' WITH YOUR 'HAND'.
LIKE THIS, WITH YOUR HAND.
BUT WHY?
IT'S LIP-READING
DON'T LET THEM 'READ' OUR CONVERSATION FROM THE SKY!
IT'S WHAT THEY TEACH US IN THE ARMY. IT'S NOT ANYTHING SPECIAL, REALLY... BUT THOSE THAT'VE BEEN TRAINED IN IT ARE UP THERE. 'STEEL' IS DEFINITELY WORKING WITH THE GOVERNMENT...

HEY, LOOK!
POCOLOCO'S HERE!
SANDMAN'S COMING, TOO. LOOKS LIKE WE'RE SOMEWHERE TOWARDS THE LEAD.
HEY, SANDMAN!
SANDMAN!
WE NEED TO ASK YOU SOMETHING.
WHO'S IN THE LEAD RIGHT NOW?
HAVE YOU SEEN DIO?

HEY, LOOKING GOOD, AS USUAL! COME ON, TELL US!
WE WANT TO KNOW WHAT'S GOING ON RIGHT NOW.
......
IS YOUR ONLY RIVAL DIO?
WELL, NO MATTER...
I SAW DIO'S TRACKS THIS MORNING.
HE'S ABOUT AN HOUR AHEAD OF US. AS YOU PREDICTED, HE'S IN THE LEAD... AND HE TOOK THE ROUTE WITH LESS RIVERS.
AN HOUR!
WE STILL HAVE A DAY LEFT. WE CAN STILL CATCH UP TO HIM.
AND ANOTHER THING.
A 'STORM' IS GOING TO HIT TOMORROW.
THE LAST STRETCH OF THE RACE IS GOING TO BE DIFFICULT.

IN THE 1ST STAGE...
I WAS AWARDED THE VICTORY INSTEAD OF YOU.
THAT'S WHY I'M TELLING YOU THIS... NOW WE DON'T OWE EACH OTHER ANYTHING.
IT'S A CLEAR SKY... BUT WE CAN TRUST WHAT SANDMAN SAYS.
SO, DIO IS AN HOUR AHEAD OF US...
AND IT'S GOING TO BE A 'STORM', AND NOT JUST RAIN?
THEN THAT MEANS THAT TRAVELING BY HORSE IS GONNA BE ALMOST IMPOSSIBLE IN TOMORROW'S WEATHER.
LOOKS LIKE A CHANGE OF PLANS, JOHNNY.


TURBŌ
IF THERE'S GOING TO BE A 'STORM' TOMORROW, THAT'LL BE BETTER FOR OUR HORSES.
AND THEN WE'LL WAIT FOR THE 'STORM' TO QUIET DOWN AT A GOOD SPOT, AND HEAD STRAIGHT FOR THE GOAL!
IT'S ALMOST DUSK, BUT LET'S MOVE OUR HORSES AS FAR AS WE CAN.
GOAL
TURBŌ
THIS PLACE, WITH THE 'TURBO'...
TURBŌ
WE CAN GO THERE AFTER WE FINISH THE RACE, AND THEN WE'LL SECRETLY RETRIEVE THE 'CORPSE PART'!
YOU OKAY WITH THAT?
KANSAS CITY
GOAL
NO... THAT'S NOT IT...
GYRO...
WE CAN'T DO THAT...
THE 'NORTHERN ROUTE'.
SANDMAN SAID THAT DIO TOOK THE ROUTE WITH THE LEAST AMOUNT OF RIVERS...
THE NORTH ROUTE DOESN'T HAVE ANY TRIBUTARIES OF THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER. THAT MEANS DIO IS HEADING FOR THE NORTHERN PART OF KANSAS!
GOAL

HE'S HEADING TOWARDS 'IT'!
DIO KNOWS WHERE THE TURBO IS THANKS TO HIS 'LEFT' EYE...!
HE'S PLANNING TO GET THE 'CORPSE PART' BEFORE HE FINISHES THIS RACE!

TURBO
.........
INSIDE RINGO'S CABIN, THERE WAS A BIRDCAGE...!
I JUST REMEMBERED ...!
ALSO... DAMN IT...!
THERE WAS AN EMPTY 'BIRDCAGE' IN THATCABIN!
I THOUGHT THERE WAS SOMETHING WEIRD!
BUT I DIDN'T REALIZE! IT WAS 'EMPTY'! THERE WEREN'T ANY BIRDS IN THERE!
IT WOULD HAVE BEEN FINE IF THERE WAS A 'BIRD' IN THERE!
SO WHAT? WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO SAY?
...YEAH, I KNOW...

RINGO ALREADY SENT THE INFORMATION ABOUT TURBO WITH A 'CARRIER PIGEON', EVEN BEFORE WE CAME...
SO, THAT MEANS THAT THE GOVERNMENT IS ON TO US?
I WOULDN'T PUT IT PAST HIM.
HOW FAST DO PIGEONS FLY?
MUCH FASTER!
I HAVE NO IDEA WHERE HE SENT IT...
BUT IT'S MUCH FASTER THAN A HORSE!
IT MIGHT ALREADY BE TOO LATE!
BUT... WE HAVE TO GO THERE BEFORE WE GET TO THE 'GOAL'...
GYRO!
I'M GOING TO RUN THROUGH THE STORM'!

I HAVE 2 OR 3 QUESTIONS TO ASK ABOUT THESE HOT-AIR BALLOONS...
CAN IT FLY UPWIND?
NO... IT CAN ONLY ADJUST DIRECTIONS DEPENDING ON THE WIND.
HOW LONG CAN IT STAY IN THE AIR?
AS LONG AS THE BALLOON HAS GAS, IT CAN STAY UP AS LONG AS NEEDED... BUT REALISTICALLY SPEAKING, IT USES UP A LOT OF GAS MOVING UP AND DOWN, SO IT USUALLY COMES BACK DOWN TO LAND BY DUSK.

HOW MANY ARE CURRENTLY BEING FLOWN IN THE RACE AREA?
ABOUT 36.
THAT IS, DURING GOOD WEATHER.
THEN, THIS IS MY FINAL QUESTION.
DESPITE HAVING SO MANY OF THEM ON THE LOOKOUT... WHY AM I GETTING REPORTS THAT 'JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI ARE MISSING'...
AND WHY DOES THIS ALWAYS HAPPEN?
AND WHY HAVE THEY NOT FOUND THE PIGEON THAT RINGO SENT FROM HIS ORCHARD?

RINGO'S PIGEON ASIDE...
IT IS IMPOSSIBLE TO TRACK TWO PEOPLE FROM THE AIR AT ALL TIMES.
THAT MIGHT BE.
THESE ARE ALL JUST PETTY DETAILS...
BUT I CAN BE SENSITIVE TO THESE DETAILS.
THIS IS A PERSONAL HYPOTHESIS, BUT... I BELIEVE IT IS BECAUSE 'STEEL' IS NOT WILLING TO BE COOPERATIVE.
PERHAPS HE'S TRYING TO INTERFERE? THOSE HOT-AIR BALLOONS ARE HIS PROPERTY, AFTER ALL...
YOU THINK THAT THE PROMOTER IS DOUBLE-CROSSING US?
IMPOSSIBLE. EVEN IF THIS WAS TRUE, STEEL WOULD HAVE NOTHING TO GAIN. HE HAS NO MOTIVE.
THAT'S RIGHT.
NORMALLY, PROMOTERS SEEK WEALTH AND FAME.
BUT THERE'S SOMETHING DIFFERENT ABOUT HIM...
HE HAS PASSION... SOMETHING AKIN TO A CHILD'S DREAMS... PETTY IDEALISM.
ESPECIALLY AFTER MONUMENT VALLEY.

I FEEL LIKE HE IS NOT NECESSARY TO THIS RACE...
I WONDER WHICH...
THAT MIGHT NOT BE HIS INTENTION NOW... BUT I HAVE A FEELING THAT HE WILL 'BETRAY' US.
BUT AT THE SAME TIME, HE MIGHT STILL BE USEFUL TO ME...
I WONDER...
BUT ONCE HE STOPS BEING OF ANY USE... WE MUST ASK HIM TO TAKE HIS LEAVE.
YES...I SEE. LET'S HOLD THAT THOUGHT FOR NOW.
WE MUST FIND THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART' THAT IS LOCATED SOMEWHERE HERE, IN KANSAS!
THE MEDIA, THE MIDDLE CLASS, VOLUNTEER WORKERS... HE HAS MANY FOLLOWERS. IF HE DISAPPEARS, THE RACE WILL BE PLUNGED INTO CONFUSION.
STEVEN STEEL HAS CHARISMA.

ACCORDING TO JOSEPH OF ARIMATHEA'S MAP, 'HIS' 'BACKBONE' IS HERE, SOMEWHERE!
THE CENTRAL PART OF THE HUMAN BODY...! THE MOST IMPORTANT PART! AS LONG AS WE HAVE IT, THE OTHER PARTS WILL COME ON ITS OWN!
THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART' IS THE 'SPINE'!
WE MUST RETRIEVE IT... WE MUST...
ド
ドドド

CALL THE 'STAND USERS' TO THIS TOWN!

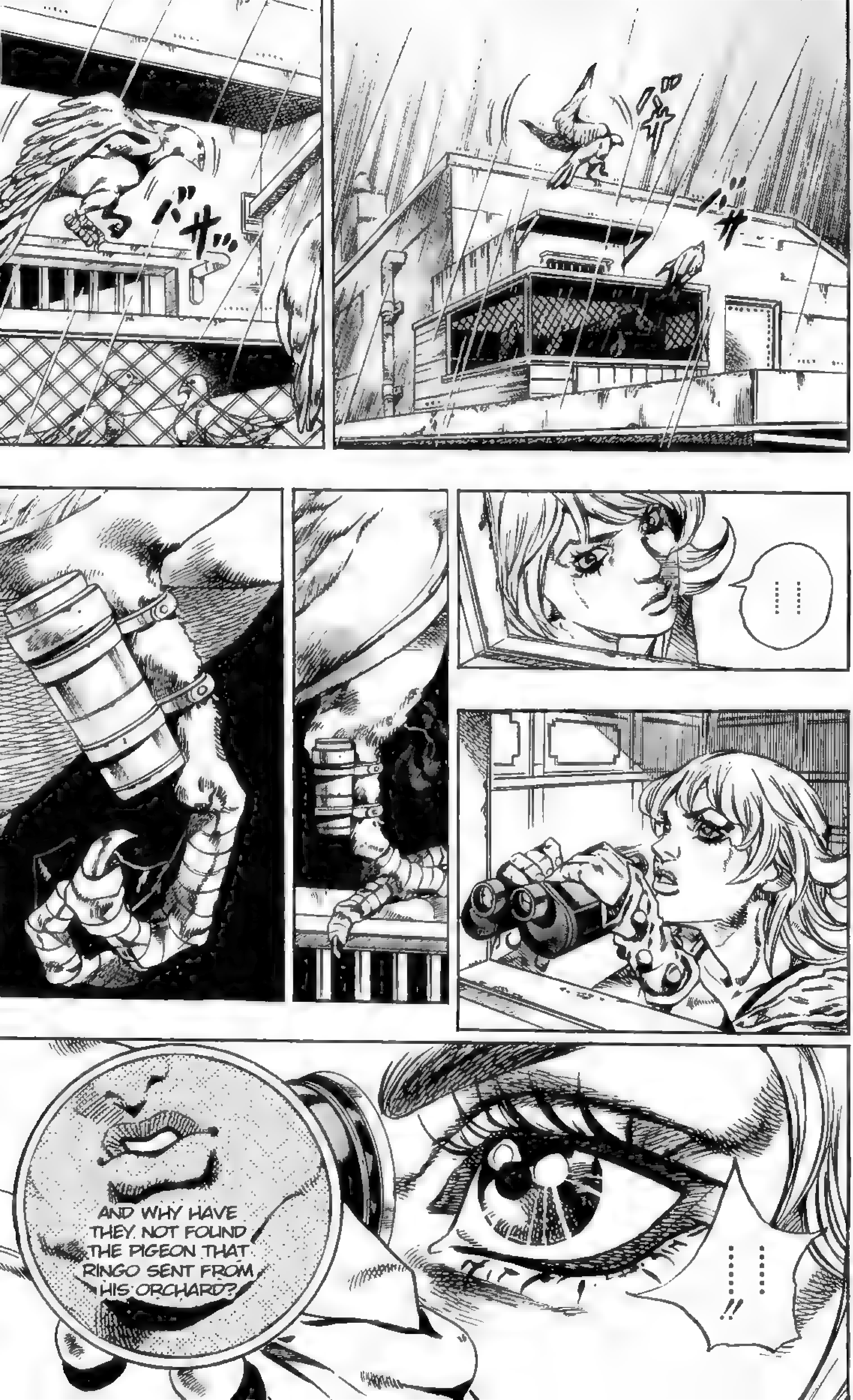
MADAM.
MRS. STEEL...
MADAM.
IN 2 TO 3 DAYS, THE PARTICIPANTS OF THE RACE ARE GOING TO FLOOD INTO THIS CITY!
I HAVE MOUNTAINS OF WORK! AND YET, YOU STILL REQUESTED FOR A TUTOR, AND I AGREED TO DO IT...
ARE YOU LISTENING TO ME, MS. STEEL?!
AH!
YOU HAVEN'T PAID ATTENTION TO WHAT I'VE BEEN SAYING AT ALL! JUST LOOKING OUT OF THE WINDOW...
I'M BUSY TOO! AND WHAT IS THIS, NOW?!

HAVE YOU TOLD ANYONE ABOUT IT?
THAT I'VE BEEN LEARNING 'LIP-READING' FROM YOU...
......
YES.
OF COURSE... THAT WAS WHAT WE PROMISED...
?
: :
I DON'T GET IT AT ALL.
NONE OF THIS MAKES ANY SENSE!
WELL, I'M QUITTING STUDYING.
ALL RIGHT...
......
I'M FALLING ASLEEP ALREADY. I HAVE NO KNACK FOR IT.
YOU HAVEN'T TOLD ANYONE, RIGHT?
RIGHT?! NO ONE KNOWS, RIGHT?!

......
HERE'S YOUR MONEY
NOW GO HOME, PLEASE...
HE'S PROBABLY GOING TO YELL AT ME FOR BEING SO A.D.D.!
AH...
UHHH...
AH...

LUCY...
I DON'T NEED ANYTHING ELSE.
AS LONG AS YOU'RE HERE BESIDE ME,
I'M CONTENT WITH LEADING AN ORDINARY LIFE.
WELL, I GUESS IT MAKES ME A LITTLE BIT HAPPY WHEN I SEE MY NAME IN THE PAPERS... EVEN IF THOSE PAPERS ARE GOING TO BE IN THE GARBAGE BY THE NEXT MORNING...
IT CAN JUST BE IN THE BOTTOM CORNER...
IN TINY LETTERS...
Produced by STEPHEN STEEL
THAT'S FINE WITH ME...
...JUST FOR THAT, I'LL PUT MY WHOLE HEART AND SOUL INTO THIS RACE...

HE'S GOING TO BE KILLED...
MY HUSBAND WAS JUST BEING USED...
WHEN THEY DON'T NEED HIM ANYMORE...
THEY'RE GOING TO DISPOSE OF HIM.



バサッ
......
AND WHY HAVE THEY NOT FOUND THE PIGEON THAT RINGO SENT FROM HIS ORCHARD?
......!!

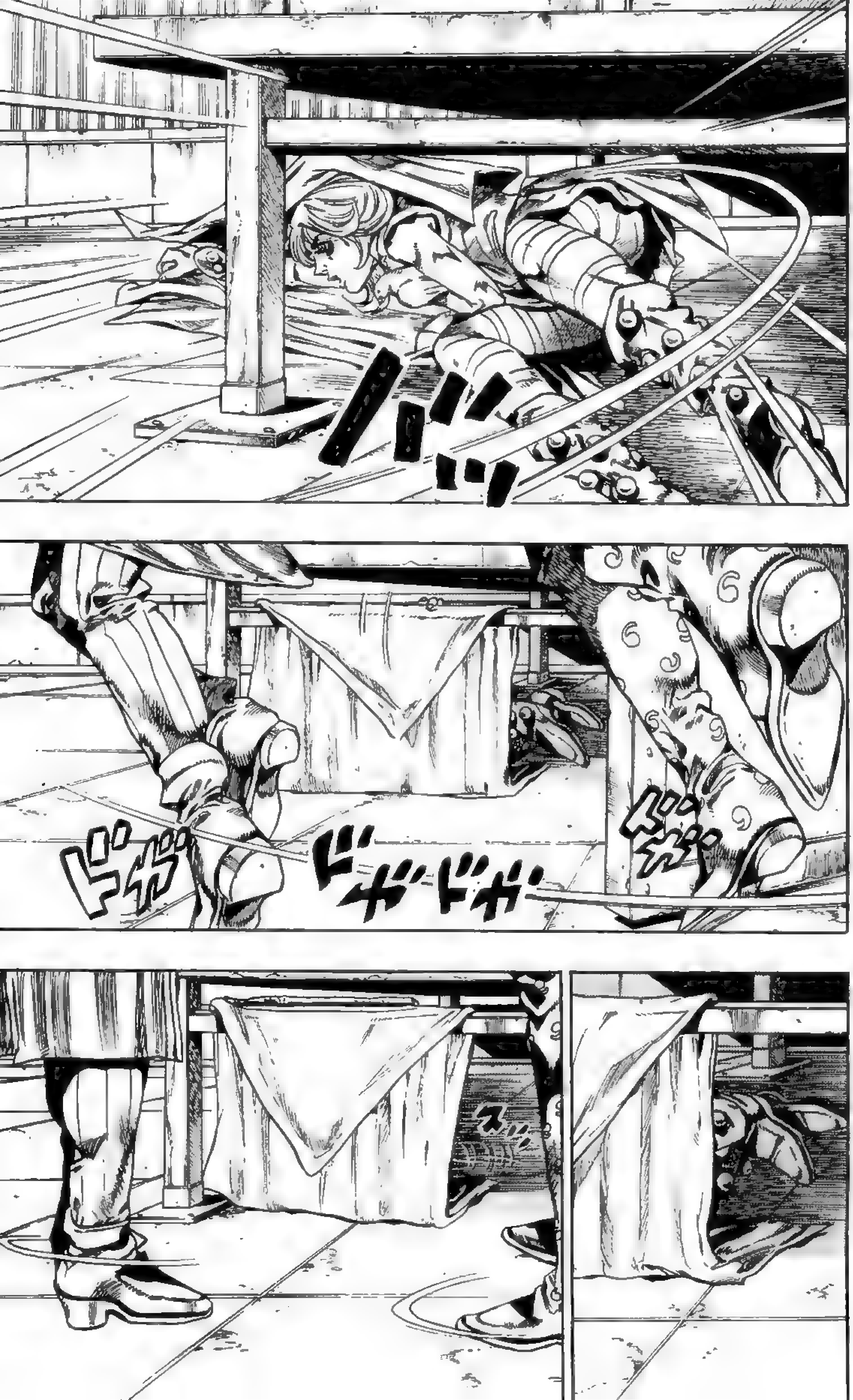
OF COURSE... I'M WELL AWARE.
I KNOW THIS BUILDING IS GOVERNMENT PROPERTY...
ALL I NEED YOU TO DO IS TO GIVE MY HUSBAND HIS LUNCH.
HE FORGOT TO TAKE IT THIS MORNING...
YOU KNOW WHO MY HUSBAND IS, RIGHT? STEVEN STEEL.
PLEASE DO IT RIGHT AWAY. IT WOULD BE POINTLESS TO GIVE IT TO HIM AFTER LUNCHTIME...
......

?
HAHH

ザッ
THERE'S EVIDENCE THAT RINGO SENT HIS PIGEON HERE...
ガチャ
ガチャ
IT SHOULD BE COMING SOON...
WHAT KIND OF INFORMATION DO YOU THINK IT IS?

THERE'S SOMETHING WRONG.
WHAT...?
!?
THIS DOOR IS OPEN....
WHEN I CHECKED THE PIGEON HOUSE THIS MORNING, I CLOSED IT... DID ANYONE ELSE COME HERE?

……
tug
tug
キョロ
キョロ


ドガ
ドガドガ
ドガ
スッ

SO?
IS THE PIGEON HERE?

I'M SO-RRY...
I DON'T SEE A PIGEON CARRYING A MESSAGE...
IT SEEMS AS IF IT HASN'T ARRIVED YET.
......

WHAT DO YOU THINK? THEY SAY THAT THERE ARE PIGEONS THAT CAN FLY 2000KM IN ONE DAY...
EVEN IF IT CAN'T FLY THAT FAST, OUR PIGEON SHOULD HAVE ARRIVED THIS MORNING... AND THIS INFORMATION WAS IMPORTANT ENOUGH THAT RINGO WOULD SEND IT, BEFORE HE DIED...
SOMETHING OF THAT MUCH URGENCY... WHAT DO YOU THINK IT COULD BE?
I'M SO-RRY...
I, MYSELF, HAVE NO IDEA...
IT CAN'T BE...
IT CAN'T BE 'IT'S' LOCATION...

The location of the 'corpse part' seems to be indicated within these numbers.
TURBŌ
N. 39° 6' 24°
W. 94° 40° 6°
Ringo Roadagain
THERE'S SOMETHING WRONG WITH THIS PIGEON HOUSE. THERE'S SOMETHING AMISS...
MR. PRESIDENT...
WAIT A MOMENT...
I'M SO~RRY... I SAID THAT THE PIGEON HADN'T ARRIVED, YET, BUT LET ME CORRECT MYSELF.
THERE'S 'ONE'...
THAT HAS ARRIVED. THERE'S 'ONE' MORE THAN THERE WAS THIS MORNING.
IT LOOKS LIKE RINGO SENT 'TWO' PIGEONS.
ONE WITH THE MESSAGE ATTACHED TO ITS FOOT, AND ANOTHER THAT HE DIDN'T HAVE THE TIME TO... TWO PIGEONS...

......
WHAT DO YOU MEAN? WHY WOULD 'ONE' ARRIVE AND THE 'OTHER' NOT ARRIVE?
THIS IS GETTING ODDER AND ODDER.
THIS 'LOCK'...
THERE'S A SIGN THAT SOMEONE BROKE IT AND TRIED TO FIX IT AGAIN...
SO, WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO SAY, BLACKMORE?
IS IT THAT...
SOMEONE CAME TO THIS ROOFTOP AND PRIED THIS DOOR OPEN?
THAT DOOR OVER THERE WAS ALSO OPEN...
BUT I CAN'T IMAGINE..'WHO'?! FOR 'WHAT REASON'? WHO WOULD DO SOMETHING LIKE THIS? HERE, IN KANSAS CITY...

I'M SO-RRY, MR. PRESIDENT...
IT SEEMS AS IF BOTH PIGEONS HAVE ARRIVED!
THERE ARE FOOTPRINTS IN THE FRONT OF THE CAGE! TWO FOOTPRINTS, WET FROM THE RAIN!
AND THIS PIGEON'S WINGS ARE STILL DAMP!
THE PIGEON ARRIVED...
JUST A FEW MOMENTS AGO!

WAFT
GRAB
ARE YOU SURE ABOUT THIS? BUT I STILL DON'T UNDERSTAND...
ARE YOU SAYING THAT 'SOMEONE' IS HERE? WAS 'JUST' HERE?
THAT THEY STOLE THE PIGEON WITH THE 'MESSAGE'? WHO WOULD DO SUCH A THING....?!

……
……
ゴ ゴ ゴ ゴ
……
ゴ ゴ

...AHH...
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
STEP
SLIDE

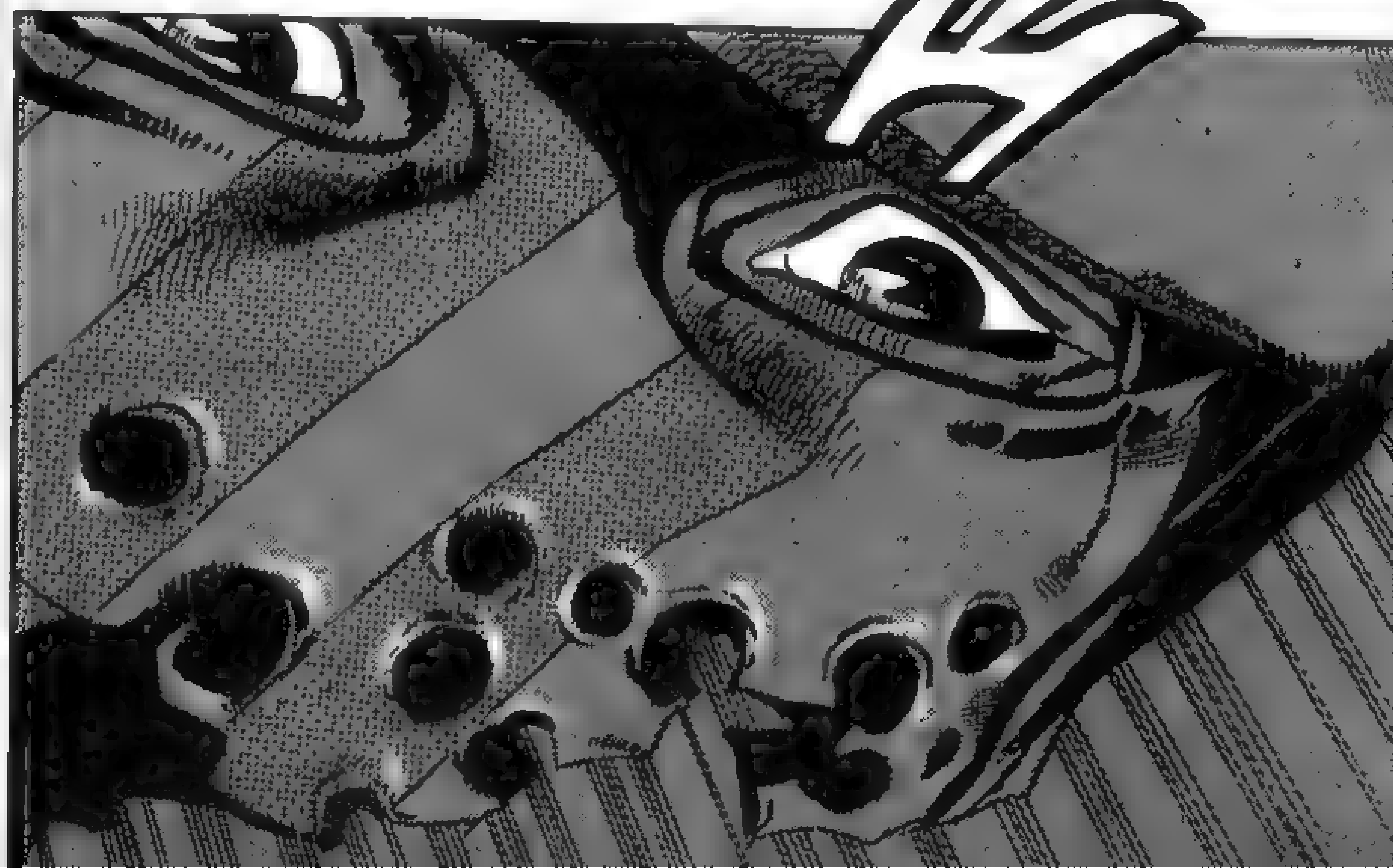
ガシィ…
!!

IT'S THE PIGEON WITH THE MESSAGE!
WHAT ARE YOU DOING, CATCH IT IMMEDIATELY, BLACKMORE!
YES... I'M SO-RRY...
I'LL GO AFTER IT RIGHT AWAY, MR. PRESIDENT.

ヨロ
ヨロ
ヨロ

!!
!?
ドドドド
DRIP
DRIP
DRIP
ドドドド

POP
POP
POP POP



IT'S 'EMPTY'...
MR. PRESIDENT... THERE'S NO MESSAGE INSIDE THE CAPSULE...
I'M SO-RRY... IT'S 'EMPTY'...
......
IT'S THE 'CAP'!
THE CAP TO THE CAPSULE ON THE PIGEON'S LEG!
SOMEONE WAS JUST HERE! THEY JUST TOOK THE MESSAGE!
JUST NOW! WHO COULD IT HAVE BEEN?!
THIS PERSON ALREADY KNEW ABOUT RINGO'S PIGEON AND THE EXISTENCE OF THE MESSAGE!

HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
THIS FLOOR! CHECK THIS FLOOR!
NO ONE'S COME DOWNSTAIRS YET!

THIS IS AN EMERGENCY! SOMEONE HAS INVADED THIS BUILDING!
CLOSE THIS BUILDING DOWN!
CLOSE IT DOWN COMPLETELY! ALSO, IF YOU FIND THE INTRUDER, I GIVE YOU PERMISSION TO 'SHOOT'!
......

I REPEAT! I GIVE YOU PERMISSION TO SHOOT THE INTRUDER!
RAISE SECURITY LEVELS TO MAXIMUM! DON'T LET ANYONE LEAVE THIS BUILDING!
DRIP
DRIP
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH

8 The True Man's World (end)

## Hirohiko Araki

Movies that I've seen recently and thought were fantastic were works by Michael Mann (like "The Insider" and "Collateral"), the Jason Bourne series, and besides those, the TV series "24". The main characters in these works all have a sense of professionality, and they act without hesitation: it's as if their determination transcends normal notions of 'good and evil'. I can sense a deeper sense of humanity through these characters. When I place myself in these characters' shoes, I can feel myself tearing up, and though all of these works are supposed to be 'cool', I always feel a burning sensation in my gut. And the Number 1, in that respect, is "Heat".

●ウルトラジャンプ・H18年5月号～7月号
掲載分収録

9784088741475
1929979003906
ISBN4-08-874147-1
C9979 ¥390E
定価 本体390円+税
雑誌 42982－47

リンゴォが大統領へと送った「遺体の在処を示すメモ」。スティールが利用されている事を知ったルーシーはそのメモを盗み出すが、侵入したビルを封鎖され逃げ場を失ってしまった…。絶体絶命の彼女を救いに現れたのは!?

ジャンプ・コミックス

ジャンプ・コミックス ★各巻とも好評発売中!!

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| ONE PIECE | 1～43 | 尾田栄一郎 |
| テニスの王子様 | 1～35 | 許斐剛 |
| NARUTO－ナルト－ | 1～34 | 岸本斉史 |
| HUNTER×HUNTER | 1～23 | 冨樫義博 |
| こちら葛飾区亀有公園前派出所 | 1～151 | 秋本治 |
| アイシールド21 | 1～20 | 稲垣理一郎・村田雄介 |
| BLEACH | 1～23 | 久保帯人 |
| Mr.FULLSWING | 1～24 | 鈴木信也 |
| ヒューと吹く!ジャガー | 1～11 | うすた京介 |
| 真説ボボボーボ・ボーボボ | 1 | 澤井啓夫 |
| DEATH NOTE | 1～12 | 大場つぐみ・小畑健 |
| 銀魂 きんたま | 1～14 | 空知英秋 |
| 家庭教師ヒットマンREBORN! | 1～11 | 天野明 |
| D.Gray-man | 1～8 | 星野桂 |
| ムヒョとロージーの魔法律相談事務所 | 1～7 | 西義之 |
| 魔人探偵脳噛ネウロ | 1～7 | 松井優征 |
| タカヤ－閃武学園激闘伝－ | 1～5 | 坂本裕次郎 |
| みえるひと | 1～5 | 岩代俊明 |
| 太臓もて王サーガ | 1～4 | 大亜門 |
| べしゃり暮らし | 1～2 | 森田まさのり |
| ツギハギ漂流作家 | 1～2 | 西公平 |
| メゾン・ド・ペンギン | 1 | 大石浩二 |
| DRAGON BALL | 1～42 | 鳥山明 |
| 遊☆戯☆王 | 1～38 | 高橋和希 |
| SLAM DUNK | 1～31 | 井上雄彦 |
| ヒカルの碁 | 1～23 | ほったゆみ・小畑健 |
| いちご100% | 1～19 | 河下水希 |
| 武装錬金 | 1～10 | 和月伸宏 |
| 冒険王ビィト | 1～12 | 三条陸・稲田浩司 |
| 風飛び一斗 | 1～23 | 門馬もとき |
| CLAYMORE | 1～10 | 八木教広 |
| 魔砲使い黒姫 | 1～10 | 片倉・狼組・政憲 |
| ギャグマンガ日和 | 1～7 | 増田こうすけ |
| 黒いラブレター | 1～5 | 東谷文仁 |
| NORA－ノラ－ | 1～7 | 筧一成 |
| ロザリオとバンパイア | 1～6 | 池田晃久 |
| GO AHEAD | 1～3 | 樋口大輔 |
| アノアの森 | 1 | 石塚2祐子 |
| コトクリ | 1 | [illegible] |
| たたかえ!たらんてら | 1 | 葉生田采丸 |
| DRAGON DRIVE | 1～14 | 佐倉ケンイチ |
| 幻燈倶楽部 | 1～2 | 黒輪ビビコ |
| BASTARD!! | 1～24 | 萩原一至 |
| STEEL BALL RUN | 1～9 | 荒木飛呂彦 |
| 忍空～SECOND STAGE 干支忍編～ | 1 | 桐山光侍 |
| 遊☆戯☆王R | 1～3 | 高橋和希・伊藤彰 |
| スライムもりもり | 1 | かねこ統 |
| デジモンネクスト | 1 | 浜崎達也・岡野剛 |

インターネットでも集英社のコミックスが購入できます。
書店受取なら送料無料!
http://www.s-manga.net/

JUMP COMICS
East West Tribune
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
集英社

★[illegible]作品はフィクション[illegible]です。実在の人物[illegible]
[illegible]関係[illegible]

JUMP COMICS

JOJO'S BIZARRE ADVENTURE Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

THE NIGHT OF THE STORM APPROACHES

vol.9

## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

ジャイロ・ツェペリ

ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家反逆罪で捕まったマルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為にレースに参加。遺体の一部「右眼」を持つ。

ジョニィ・ジョースター

元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見い出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。遺体の一部「左腕」を持つ。

ファニー・ヴァレンタイン

第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。SBRレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。遺体の一部「心臓」を持つ。

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！
戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。
なんとSBRレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！
その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。
遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意した。
3rd.STAGE、遺体争奪戦は加熱する。ロッキー山脈での戦いの末、ジャイロが『右の眼球』を、ディオが『左の眼球』を手に入れた！　そして、レースは4th.STAGEへと突入。
眼球の暗号から次の遺体がゴールのカンザス・シティにある事を突き止めたジャイロ達。

2nd.STAGE 1,200km

1st.STAGE 15,000km

3rd.STAGE 530km

START SAN DIEGO

しかし、ステージ中盤で現れたスタンド使い・リンゴォに苦戦、死闘の末に勝利するも、同じく次の遺体を目指すディオに遅れをとってしまった…。
一方、スティールが大統領に利用されている事を知ったルーシーは彼を助ける事を決意。リンゴォが送った『遺体の在処を示すメモ』を大統領より先に手に入れるが、侵入したビルを封鎖され追い詰められてしまった！

# "STEEL BALL RUN" RACE

全行程中にニューヨークを含め9ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！

GOAL NEW YORK

4th.STAGE 1,250km

## 『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは

太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!(60億円)
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3600人を超えた！

そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

砂男(サンドマン)

ネイティブアメリカンの青年。白人に奪われた部族の土地を取り戻す為、己の足のみでレースに参加。

ディエゴ・ブランドー

通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。SBRレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。

ルーシー・スティール

スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!?

スティーブン・スティール

40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。SBRの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.9

## CONTENTS

THE NIGHT OF THE STORM APPROACHES


#37

THE GREEN TOMBSTONE ② 7

#38

CATCH THE RAINBOW (IN THE STORMY NIGHT) ① 71

#39

CATCH THE RAINBOW (IN THE STORMY NIGHT) ② 135

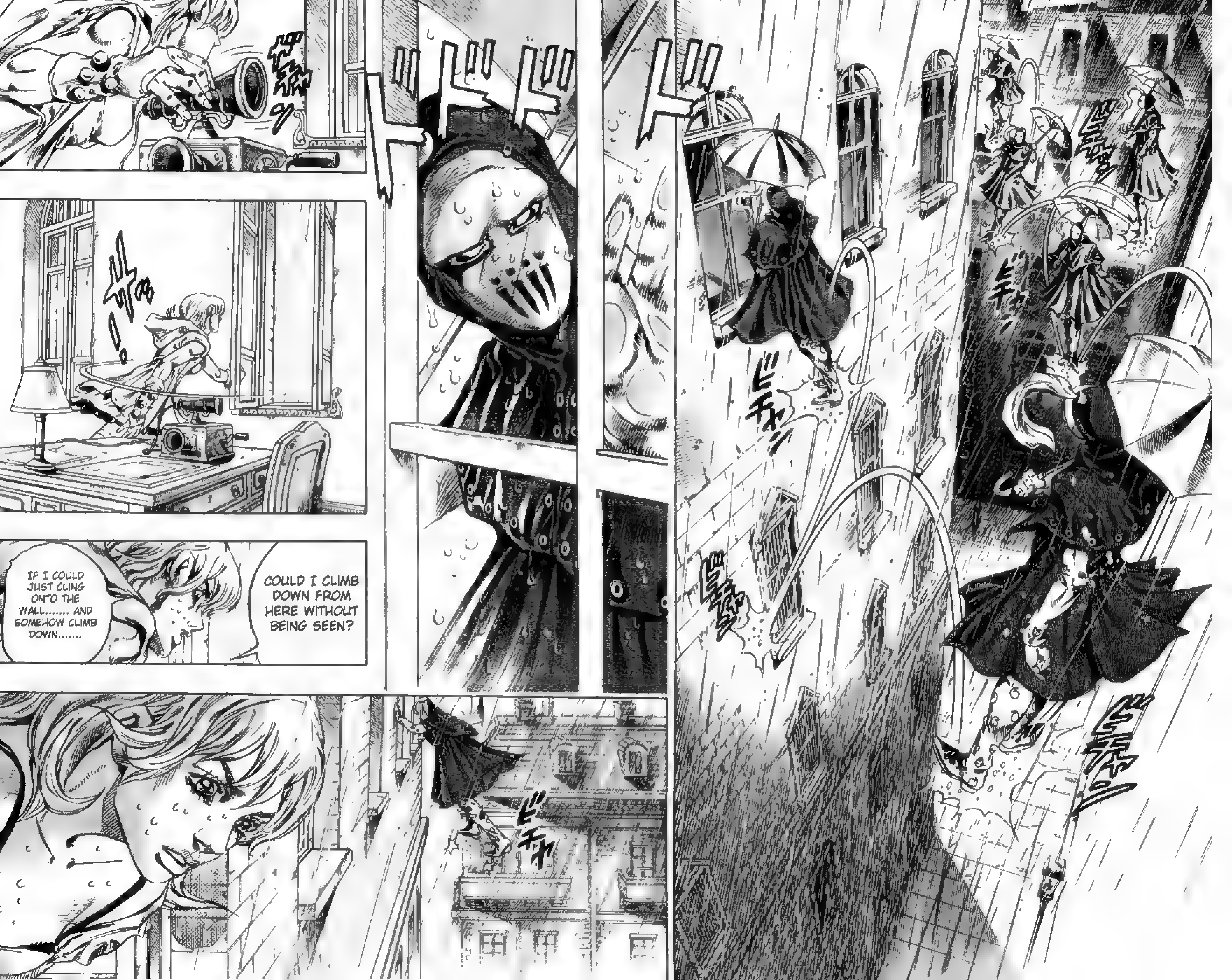
#37 THE GREEN TOMBSTONE
PART ②

UUUH...
OOOOH!
SFX: PANT
NO ONE'S COME BELOW THIS FLOOR YET!
ABOVE!
THE INTRUDER'S STILL ON THE FLOORS ABOVE!!
OOH
CHECK EACH AND EVERY ROOM ON THIS FLOOR!!

ハァ
ハァ
ハァ
SFX PANT
OOOH
UUUH
ハァ
ハァ
WHAT HAVE I DONE! ......
WHAT SHOULD I DO.....
UUUH... UUH...
I SHOULD HAVE JUST LEFT THE PIGEON HOUSE ALONE!
I'VE ONLY MADE THINGS WORSE FOR STEPHEN!
I'M FINISHED...... THEY'LL FIND ME HERE.
BUT IF THEY DO......
IT WOULD BE MY FAULT...
AND HE WOULD HAVE TO TAKE THE BLAME!

DO YOU THINK HE'S A 'STAND USER'?
THIS INTRUDER ....... BLACKMORE ......
IT IS PROBABLY 'ONE OF US'.
BUT IF I MAY EXPRESS MY OPINION...
I DON'T BELIEVE HE IS...... IF HE WERE A STAND USER, HE PROBABLY WOULDN'T HAVE DONE SOMETHING LIKE HIDING UNDER THE PIGEON HOUSE.
ALSO, JUDGING FROM THE INTRUDER'S CHOSEN ROUTE AND METHODS, I'M SORRY TO SAY, BUT........
I'M SO-RRY, SIR.... I REALLY CAN'T SAY......

UNBELIEVABLE .... HOW MANY OF US COULD HAVE KNOWN ABOUT THE PIGEONS?
MR. PRESIDENT.
IF WE FOLLOW THE 'DRIPS OF WATER' OF THE FLOOR, WE CAN FIND THE INTRUDER.
I WILL CORNER HIM FROM OUTSIDE THE WINDOWS....
SO THAT HE WON'T BE ABLE TO ESCAPE FROM ANYWHERE IN THE BUILDING.
LET US FIND RINGO'S 'INFORMATION' .......
IF HE HAS RIPPED IT UP, WE WILL COLLECT THE PIECES.
IF HE'S TRIED TO ERASE THE INFORMATION BY EATING THE NOTE...
WE WILL RETRIEVE IT EVEN IF IT MEANS CUTTING OPEN HIS STOMACH.


COULD I CLIMB DOWN FROM HERE WITHOUT BEING SEEN?
IF I COULD JUST CLING ONTO THE WALL....... AND SOMEHOW CLIMB DOWN.......

HMM?

DID HE SEE ME?!
I'VE BEEN FOUND!!
HE'S.... COMING!
I...
IT'S LOCKED FROM THE INSIDE!
HERE!! THIS ROOM!
THE INTRUDER IS HIDING IN THIS ROOM!
STAND BACK, MR. PRESIDENT!
WE'LL BUST THIS DOOR DOWN WITH A SHOTGUN!!

SFX: SLAM
BLACK-MORE!
THE INTRUDER!
WHERE IS HE!!?
INSIDE THE BATHROOM.
I SAW HIM RUN IN THERE!

AAAH...
AAAH!!
OOOH
OOH
PLEASE STAND BACK! WE'LL DESTROY THE DOOR!!
BLOCK THE SEWAGE SYSTEM OF THIS BUILDING TOO!
YOU STILL HAVE PERMISSION TO SHOOT!
DEAD OR ALIVE, IT DOESN'T MATTER!! HURRY! HE MIGHT FLUSH THE INFORMATION DOWN THE TOILET!

ドドドド
AAAAAH!
MRS. STEEL...
GRAB ON...
TO THAT ROPE.....

GRAB MY ROPE...
HURRY...
LUCY!
OOH! MOUNTAIN TIM!!
THANK YOU FOR THE PHONE CALL...
FOR REMEMBERING ME.

ドガッ ドガッ
ドガガガガ

WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THIS, BLACKMORE?!?
WHERE IS THE INTRUDER?!
THIS IS STEEL. WHAT IS ALL THIS RACKET?
WHAT'S GOING ON?
EVERYONE UNINVOLVED ARE TO STAY IN THEIR ROOMS!
DON'T EVEN TAKE A STEP OUT-SIDE YOUR DOOR UNTIL I GIVE EX-PRESS PER-MISSION !!
......
?
EXPLAIN YOURSELF, BLACKMORE!
WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO!?
YOU SAID THAT THE 'ENEMY' WASN'T A 'STAND USER'!
INFORMATION WAS STOLEN FROM INSIDE MY MANSION... THIS WILL NOT BE TOLERATED!
IT WILL NOT BE FORGIVEN!
MR. PRESIDENT.
WE MAY NOT HAVE LOST THE INTRUDER YET.
THERE MAY BE 'TWO' INTRUDERS.

'ONE THAT WAS ON THE ROOF' AND..... 'ONE WHO HELPED THE FIRST ONE ESCAPE'.
IT IS EASIER TO TRACK TWO THAN ONE.
WAS THIS PHONE USED...
TO CALL SOMEBODY FOR HELP?
......
MUMBLE MUMBLE...
YOUR WIFE CAME BY EARLIER.... SHE BROUGHT YOUR LUNCH.
OH YES, MR. STEEL ...
MY LUNCH?
......
MY WIFE?. SHE BROUGHT MY LUNCH. ?
HERE?
?
......

I DROPPED OUT OF THE RACE IN THE 2ND STAGE DUE TO MY WOUNDS FROM OYECOMOVA'S BOMBS.
BUT I CONSIDER MYSELF LUCKY...

BECAUSE I WAS ABLE TO HOLD YOU IN MY ARMS LIKE THIS......
シュン!
I AM HONORED THAT YOU'VE CALLED ME.
UH... UH...
UH... UUH.....
UUUH...
YOU'RE SHAKING TERRIBLY.....
DEAR DEAR.....
WHAT WERE YOU DOING INSIDE OF THAT BUILDING........?
ARE YOU GETTING INVOLVED IN SOME DIRE EVENT...?

I CAN'T TELL ANYBODY...
NEVER....
.... I CAN'T TELL YOU....
IF I DO, YOU'LL BE IN DANGER TOO.
MOUNTAIN TIM.
MAYBE I'VE LED YOU ON...
BUT THE ONLY PERSON WHO COULD HELP ME THERE... WAS YOU.
YOU BELONG TO ANOTHER MAN.
BUT I WANT TO BE OF HELP TO YOU....
EVER SINCE WE'VE FIRST MET, THAT'S BEEN MY INTENTION...
I WANT TO PROTECT YOU FROM ALL THE CRUEL THINGS OF THIS WORLD.

SOMETHING DANGEROUS IS CLOSING IN ON US.
PLEASE, JUST WALK AWAY. DON'T ASK ANY QUESTIONS.
MAYBE I'VE ALREADY INVOLVED YOU IN THIS.
... AFTER I COME BACK TO TOWN FROM MY JOURNEYS.....
EVEN IF YOU WOULD WELCOME ME WITH A SMILE...
JUST FOR THAT, I AM NOT AFRAID TO FALL INTO HELL ITSELF......
MY ONLY FEAR IS LOSING YOU.
......

........ I CANNOT DO THAT...
MY NAME IS LUCY STEEL.....
THE ONLY MAN I LOVE... IS MY HUSBAND.
I AM WHO I AM ONLY BECAUSE OF MY NAME, STEEL.
!!!

I SEE... SO EVERYTHING THAT IS HAPPENING TO YOU NOW...
... YOU'VE DONE TO PROTECT YOUR HUSBAND...
IF...
... YOU FEEL UTTERLY HELPLESS IN THIS SITUATION...
I ADVISE YOU TO GO SEE JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI, WHO ARE COMING CLOSE TO THE GOAL.
THE TWO OF THEM CAN BE TRUST-ED.
...... YOU HAVE A COMMON 'ENEMY'........ ASSISTING THEM WILL MOST LIKELY LEAD TO HELPING MR. STEEL.......
DO TAKE CARE...
MAY FORTUNE BE WITH YOU.

39° 6' 24" NORTH.
94° 40' 6" WEST.
KANSAS CITY
IT'S CLOSE......
THE LOCATION THAT THIS NOTE SHOWS IS AROUND THIS AREA. IT'S VERY CLOSE TO KANSAS CITY...
IT WOULDN'T TAKE 30 MINUTES BY HORSE...
THESE NUMBERS MIGHT NOT BE THE EXACT SPOT, BUT......
EVEN I KNOW THIS PLACE.
THERE'S A SMALL RUIN IN THE FIELDS THAT'S KNOWN AS THE 'GREEN TOMBSTONE'.

THAT MAY BE THE SPOT......
IF IT'S IN THIS LOCATION, THAT HAS TO BE IT...
THE CORPSE'S 'SPINAL SECTION'!!
I'LL NEVER HAND IT OVER.... NEVER, NOT TO THE PRESIDENT...
WILL I BE ABLE TO FIND IT?
I HAVE TO DIG IT UP BEFOREHAND... AND MOVE THE 'CORPSE' SO THAT IT WON'T BE FOUND.....
BUT WAIT!! SHOULD I HAND IT OVER TO JOHNNY JOESTAR!?

GOLD
COIN
WHAT DO YOU WANT......?
THANKS FOR ACTING AS AN UMBRELLA...
BUT IT'S ACTUALLY QUITE 'IMPOLITE'...

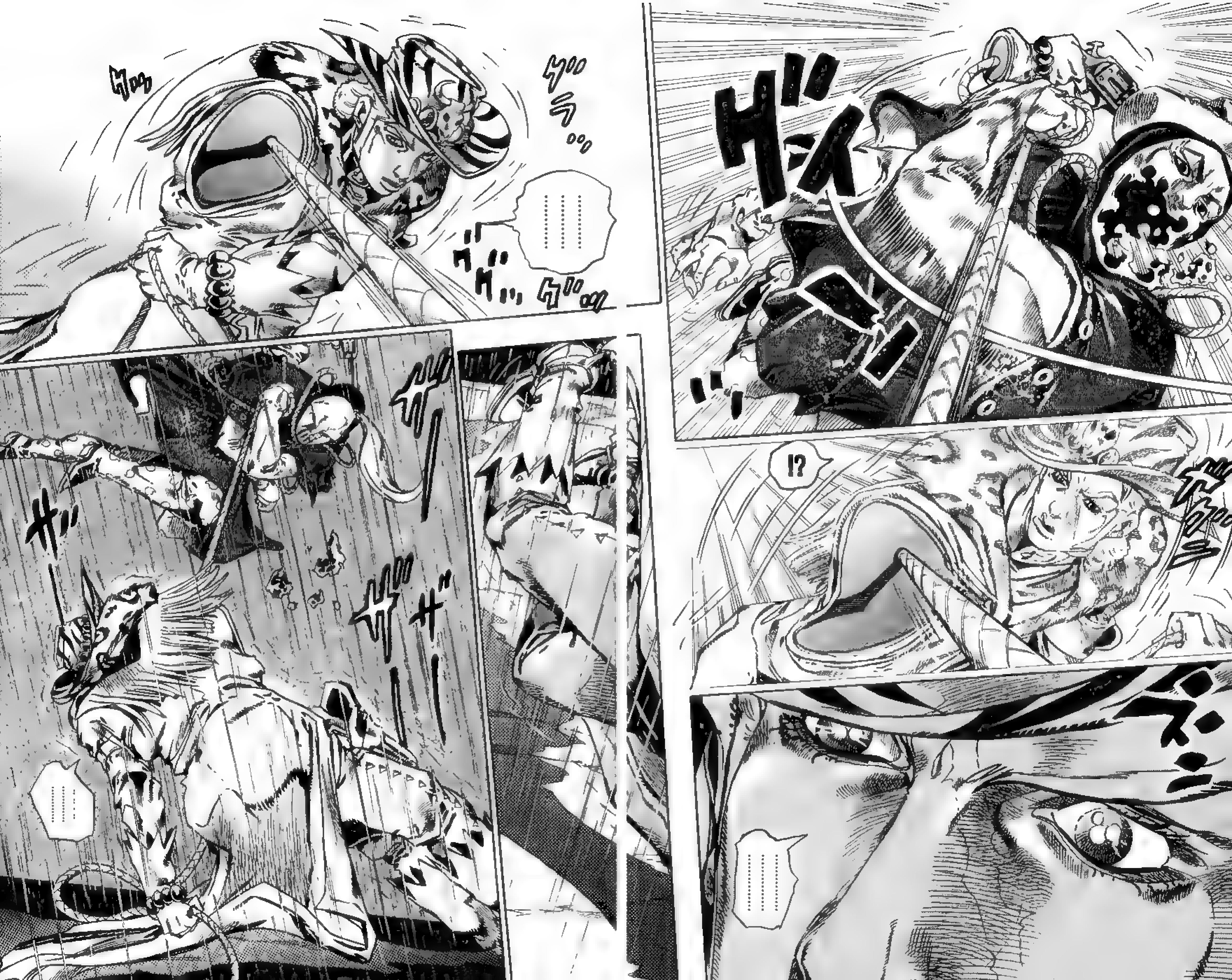
... TO STAND ABOVE A PERSON'S HEAD......
MR. BLACKMORE.
......

I'M SO-RRY...
I'M ON DUTY AND IN A HURRY.....
MOUNTAIN TIM.... MARSHAL
I JUST... HAVE ONE SIMPLE QUESTION.
I CHECKED WITH THE TELEPHONE OPERATOR...
YOU'VE RECEIVED A 'PHONE CALL' FROM INSIDE THE GOVERNMENT BUILDING EARLIER, CORRECT?
WOULD YOU BE SO KIND AS TO TELL ME THE NAME OF THE CALLER...
FEDERAL MARSHAL.....
MOUNTAIN TIM?
AAH.....
THE 'PHONE CALL'....
YEAH, I SEE....

KAAAAH

KAAA
AAAAH
HAVE YOU LOST YOUR MIND?
IF YOU TELL ME NOW, YOU'LL GET AWAY WITH A LIGHT PUNISHMENT, MOUNTAIN TIM.
NOW, THE 'NAME'!
WHO GAVE YOU THE PHONE CALL?

BLACKMORE, YOUR SEARCH IS OVER.
NOW, TO SHUT YOUR MOUTH.....
... FOREVER, WITH THIS BULLET.....



CRACK!
CRACK!
MY ABILITY NAME IS 'CATCH THE RAINBOW'.
THE RAINDROPS I TOUCH.....
... I CAN 'STABILIZE' IN THE AIR...
JUST LIKE CROSSING A
WALKING ON A 'GLASS BOARD'..... YOU CAN'T ASSUME THAT THE RAIN IS ALWAYS POURING DOWN.

I'M SO-RRY .....
I STILL...
... HAVEN'T TAKEN YOUR LIFE COMPLETELY.
I'LL GIVE YOU 'TWO SECONDS', MOUNTAIN TIM.
......
THERE'S ONLY ONE QUESTION, AND IT'S VERY SIMPLE.
'WHO DID YOU RECEIVE THE PHONE CALL FROM?'
PLEASE NOW... IF YOU SPEAK, I'LL SPARE YOUR LIFE.
..... COME NOW.....
THERE'S A HOSPITAL NEARBY. I CAN TAKE YOU THERE.

I NEVER WAS EXPECTING TO DIE ON A BED
I'M A COWBOY.
ALL I WANTED WAS A PLACE TO COME HOME TO...
JUST A PLACE TO RETURN TO AFTER MY JOURNEYS........
THERE'S A SPOT THAT'S PARTICULARLY WET INSIDE HIS COAT.
ESPECIALLY..... NEAR HIS CHEST...
THE INTRUDER THAT MOUNTAIN TIM HELPED ESCAPE WITH HIS ROPE FROM THE RESTROOM OF THE BUILDING...
... MUST HAVE BEEN QUITE SHORT IN HEIGHT... HE TIGHTLY HELD THE INTRUDER'S DRENCHED HEAD TO HIS CHEST...
COULD IT BE A 'WOMAN'?
THE INTRUDER WAS A 'WOMAN'!?

"MR. STEEL, YOUR WIFE HAD BROUGHT YOUR LUNCH EARLIER TODAY."
THERE WERE... TWO LUNCH BOXES....
EVEN STEEL HIMSELF THOUGHT IT WAS STRANGE....
.... WHY? WHY 'TWO' LUNCH BOXES?
COULD IT HAVE BEEN.... TO COME NEAR THE BUILDING...?
COULD IT HAVE BEEN!! MRS. STEEL?
LUCY STEEL!?
THIS IS AN INVESTIGATION! HAVE YOU SEEN MRS. STEEL?
SHE WASN'T IN HER HOTEL ROOM.....
OH... MRS. LUCY....

IT MUST HAVE BEEN OVER AN HOUR AGO...
SHE TOOK A HORSE FROM THE HORSE SHED AND WENT OFF.
AN HOUR AGO!? IN THE RAIN?
......FOR WHAT......!?
WHERE DID SHE GO!?
SHE SAID SHE WAS GOING SHOPPING.......
BUT SHE HEADED TO THE 'NORTH' SIDE OF TOWN.

WHAT IS ON YOUR MIND!? WHAT ARE YOU DOING, LUCY STEEL!?
IT COULD BE!
IT VERY WELL COULD BE! 'ITS' LOCATION!!

LOOK, JOHNNY!!
THEY'RE NEW!! I'VE FINALLY FOUND THEM!!
IT'S ONLY BEEN A FEW MINUTES!!
DIO'S PRINTS!
THAT SON OF A BITCH DIO IS WITHIN OUR REACH!
THEY HAVEN'T WASHED AWAY YET! EVEN IN THIS RAIN!
HE'S WITHIN FIVE MINUTES OF US!
BUT GYRO...
THE STORM'S SUDDENLY GETTING WORSE.

IT'LL STILL TAKE SIX HOURS TO GET TO THE LOCATION OF TURBO! DON'T RUSH IT!
WE WANT TO GET AS FAR AS WE CAN, BUT GOING ANY FURTHER IS IMPOSSIBLE!! THE SAME HOLDS FOR DIO!
IS THAT WHAT YOU THINK?!
DIO'S STILL MOVING ALONG!
NO, JOHNNY! THIS IS OUR ABSOLUTE BEST CHANCE TO HOLD HIM DOWN!
THERE'S A NEED TO MAKE AN IMPRESSION DEEP IN THAT BASTARD'S BRAIN...
... THAT HE'LL 'NEVER DEFEAT' GYRO ZEPPELI IN ANY MORE OF THESE 'STAGES'!!
AAH!
UGH!

WHAT.....
IS THIS? .....
!?
THE 'LEFT EYE'.......

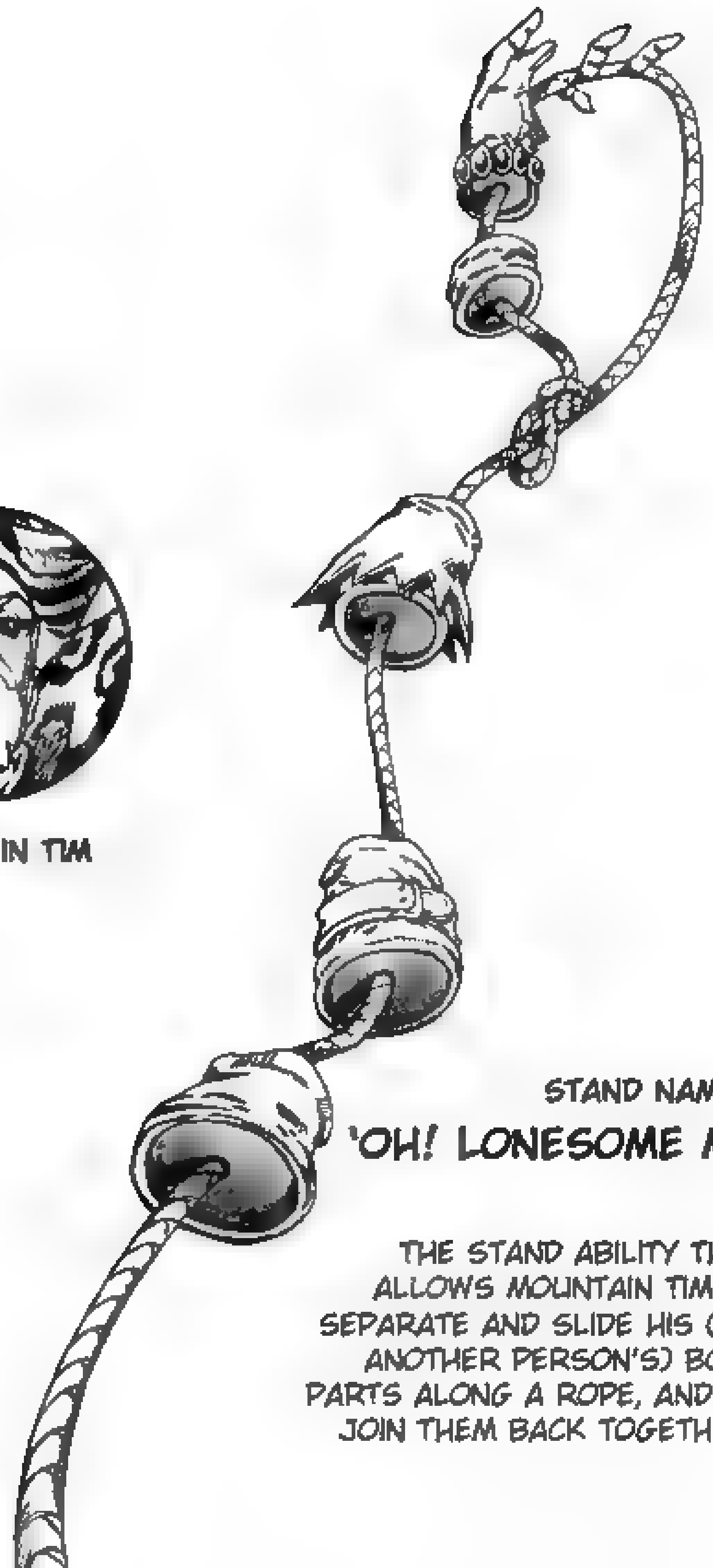
IT ISN'T PAIN..... A BIZARRE SENSE.......!?
I JUST SAW A VISION ......
THE 'CORPSE PART' I'M AFTER....
THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'.....
WHAT I SAW...WAS THE 'SPINE'!
SOMEONE MUST HAVE DUG IT UP JUST NOW... BEYOND THAT HORIZON. I JUST FELT IT...!
BUT... WHAT COULD THIS MEAN!?
IT WAS DUG UP... BUT 'WHY'!? 'SOMEBODY' IS BRINGING THE 'CORPSE PART' TOWARDS THIS ROUTE! WHO!?
I CAN FEEL IT COMING THIS WAY!

ASSISTING 'JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI'... .......
... WILL MOST LIKELY LEAD TO HELPING YOUR HUSBAND.
BUT THEY'RE TOO FAR!
CAN I MAKE IT!? THE STORM IS GETTING STRONGER, TOO! IT WOULD TAKE THOSE TWO RACERS SIX OR SEVEN HOURS TO GET HERE!

'SCUSE ME... MRS. LUCY.
WHAT ARE YOU DOING OUT HERE BEHIND THIS ROCK?
WHAT DO YOU HAVE THERE? YES, THAT.
THAT 'BUNDLE' YOU HAVE AT YOUR CHEST.
KYAAAAAAAA AAAAAAAAA AA!!!

ドドド
ドドド
ドド

MOUNTAIN TIM



STAND NAME -

## 'OH! LONESOME ME'

THE STAND ABILITY THAT ALLOWS MOUNTAIN TIM TO SEPARATE AND SLIDE HIS (OR ANOTHER PERSON'S) BODY PARTS ALONG A ROPE, AND TO JOIN THEM BACK TOGETHER.

# Steel Ball Run v9ch1

Brought to you by JoJo Project

and Stardust Crusaders

Today, June 8, is when we released Chapter 38 of Steel Ball Run. But yesterday, June 7 is also Hirohiko Araki's birthday.

The internet in general has made many observations about Araki's appearance. How he's perfectly symmetrical, how he's the Mona Lisa (my background picture strangely related), how he doesn't seem to age, and how in fact he appears to age in reverse. It's hard to believe that he's 49 years old, isn't it? And yet in those years he has given us such a sheer volume of concentrated awesomeness that one might have expected him to take far more years to accomplish this feat.

Happy birthday to arguably the best mangaka there is. We may be filthy scanlation pirates, but all of the SBR team are grateful for his works, and look forward to as many more years of delicious Araki manga as we can be privileged to get.

-Shizuka Joestar, 8 June 2009

I'LL TAKE THAT AS A NO...
MOUNTAIN TIM WAS MY SUBORDINATE...
... BUT YOU ARE DIFFERENT.
THEN, EVEN THOUGH YOU HOLD THAT 'BUNDLE'... YOU ARE UNABLE TO BECOME A 'STAND USER'.
!!!!
WHAT?
YOU AND YOUR HUSBAND STEPHEN STEEL...
THE PRESIDENT WILL DECIDE YOUR 'TREATMENT'...
OH..
OOOOH!
AH!
UUH
WAAAAAHHH!!!

GACHING
HELLO?
DO YOU COPY? THIS IS BLACKMORE.
PLEASE CONNECT ME TO THE PRESIDENT'S ROOM.
THIS IS URGENT... BUT I CARRY GOOD 'NEWS'.
ONE MOMENT, MISTER BLACKMORE.

SO THIS...
......
... IS THE 'SPINAL' SECTION...
THIS MOMENT
IT IS IN MY ARMS...
'THIS' IS HERE. I'M TOUCHING IT.
IT'S REAL
IT SEEMS LIKE IT'S SHINING...
I WANT IT...
SAY THAT I DON'T HAND 'THIS' OVER TO THE PRESIDENT, AND KEEP IT AS MY OWN...
BANG
EVEN I, BLACKMORE...
I HAVE THE RIGHT TO OWN 'THIS'...
ALL PEOPLE ARE EQUAL... EVEN I SHOULD...
I STRONGLY 'DESIRE' IT
THE RIGHT TO 'OWN'...

!?
HOTEL
HOT
PEAK
……
SHARON PEAK
26 km
26km
KANSAS
!!
RON
PEAK
WHAT? THIS PLACE …?!
THIS…
A "TOWN"?!

HELLO!?
HAVEN'T YOU GOTTEN THE PRESIDENT YET!?
HELLO!?
?
!!
WHAT DOES THIS MEAN!? THESE SURROUNDINGS...!?
THIS TELEPHONE POLE IS PIERCED THROUGH A CARRIAGE!!
WHERE IS THIS!?
!!

SHARON
......
WH...

I'M SURE OF IT...!! THE PERSON WHO WAS JUST THERE!!
I JUST SAW!
A SENSATION OF BEING EMBRACED BY LIGHT! HIS PRESENCE!
THIS HOLY 'CORPSE'! I COULD ONLY GUESS WHO'S IT BELONGED TO! BUT... NOW... I AM SURE!
'NOBODY' HAS EVER MET 'HIM' IN THIS MODERN AGE...
OH!
'HE' HAS SHOWN HIMSELF TO ME!
ONLY TO MYSELF!!

PANT PANT
PANT!
PANT!

SQUIRT
SQUIRT
WHAT ARE YOU DOING WITH THAT GUN!?
WOMAN!!
HOW DARE YOU DO THIS...!! YOU SHOULDN'T DO THIS!
YOU CAN NEVER BECOME A 'STAND USER'...!
WHAT IS YOU 'AIM'?

SHOOP
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
34 km

...THIS CAN'T BE...
NOW IT'S A 'FOREST'
THERE'S NO MORE 'BUILDINGS' AND THE 'CARRIAGE' IS GONE...
ARE WE 'MOVING'?
GREEN SPRINGS
34 Km
KANSAS CITY
34 Km
AND LUCY, TO MOVE...
A DISTANCE OF THREE TO FOUR HOURS BY HORSE...
34 KMS
HAS CAUSED THE AREA OF ME AND THIS POLE
THE BENDING OF SPACE OR SUCH
WHAT A PHENOMENA...
EVEN THIS 'STORM' IS BECAUSE OF THE POWER OF THE 'SPINE' THAT HAS BEEN DUG UP...

......
IS IT BECAUSE THE 'CORPSE PARTS' ARE WANTING TO UNITE!?
IF SO, THE 'CORPSE PART'...
WOULD BE HEADING TO THE 'LEFT ARM' OF JOHNNY JOESTAR!
KACHING
I CAN'T BELIEVE THIS HAS HAPPENED...
JUST BECAUSE OF THAT GIRL...
AFTER THE 'RAIN' OF THIS STORM HAS STOPPED
I WILL SURELY 'DIE'...
THE LID FOR MY WOUNDS, THE RAIN THAT I'VE 'STABILIZED' WILL DRAIN OUT...
BUT I ACCEPT THIS...
THIS IS MY 'PUNISHMENT'...

IT IS A 'PUNISHMENT' TOWARDS MY DESPICABLE LUST AND FEEBLE WILL FOR SCHEMING TO KEEP 'HIM' FOR MYSELF!
I NOW REALIZE THAT HIS HOLY CORPSE' MUST BE GATHERED TO THE PRESIDENT OF THIS NATION, WHO WILL ONE DAY BECOME THE HEAD OF THE WORLD!
AS LONG AS MY LIFE WILL LAST!
UWAAAAAAAAAAAAH!
I WILL SERVE WITH ALL MY BODY AND SOUL!!
WHOA!!
GH!
UUUH!!

WHAT'S WRONG, GYRO!?
YOU ALRIGHT!? IS IT TOO MUCH TO TRAVEL THROUGH THIS STORM ANY FURTHER!?
NO, THAT'S NOT IT! IT'S NOT THE 'STORM' OR 'PAIN' CAUSING THIS!
I JUST SAW 'SOMETHING'.
IT'S GONE NOW! I DON'T KNOW 'WHAT' IT WAS... BUT IN MY 'EYE' I SAW 'SOMETHING' HEADING TOWARDS US...
GYRO, COULD YOUR 'SOMETHING' BE THAT?
LOOK CAREFULLY THROUGH THE RAIN!
THAT DIRECTION
......

OUR TARGET'S FINALLY WITHIN SIGHT!!
GYRO, WE NEED TO READY OUR HEARTS!

I'M ALL READY, JOHNNY...
BUT DURING THE PREVIOUS STAGE...
YOU PREDICTED THAT I'D NEVER BE ABLE TO DEFEAT DIO IN A RACE...
WHAT ABOUT NOW? WHAT DO YOU THINK!?
BE HONEST!
DO YOU STILL THINK I'M UNABLE TO BEAT HIM!?
I DIDN'T MEAN TO BE ALL HIGH AND MIGHTY,
BUT I BELIEVE YOU'VE GROWN... AND YOU HAVE YOUR OWN DISTINCT STYLE OF 'RACING' THAT NOBODY CAN IMITATE,
BUT HE IS MORE 'HUNGRY' THAN BEFORE...
HE WANTS THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART' MORE BADLY THAN US... MORE THAN BEFORE.
I WANNA CRUSH THAT BASTARD. EH, JOHNNY!
WE NEED TO TOTALLY CRUSH HIM RIGHT HERE!
I AGREE! WE NEED TO CRUSH HIM NO MATTER WHAT IT TAKES!

ドドド
ドドド

WATCH OUT, GYRO! HE'S REALIZED WE WERE FOLLOWING!
'WHAT'S HE DOING'!? HE'S STOPPED! WHAT'S HE 'DOING' STOPPING HIS HORSE!?
THERE'S NO BALLOONS IN THIS STORM! THERE AREN'T ANY REFEREES FOR THE RACE!
I KNOW, JOHNNY!
IT'S ALL ANARCHY FROM HERE!
WE'LL FINISH THE BASTARD BEFORE HE ATTACKS US!
ALRIGHT, JOHNNY?

ドドドドドドド
ド
KWAAAAAA
バッ
ドバ
ギャアアア

THE 'DYNAMIC VISION' OF A DINOSAUR
'LISTEN!' THE REASON I STOPPED MY HORSE IS TO WARN YOU THAT THIS IS THE LAST TIME YOU'LL BE ABLE TO COME WITHIN 2 METERS OF ME...
COME NEAR ME AGAIN AND I'LL RIP YOU APART.
AND NOW I'LL TEACH YOU THE MEANING OF THE WORD 'UNRECOVERABLE' WITH MY RACING!!

THAT'S HIS TOP SPEED!!!
HE'S PLANNING ON GETTING RID OF US RIGHT HERE!!
IF HE KEEPS UP AT THAT SPEED...
THIS FIGHT WILL BE OVER WITHIN THE NEXT 2000 METERS!
PROBABLY BY THE TIME WE REACH THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT HILL ...!!
DIO

SHIT!
THE MUD'S FLYING AT US! AS USUAL! HE'S DOING IT ON PURPOSE!
I KNOW THAT 'CLAIMING A COURSE' IS IMPORTANT, BUT....
THE PROBLEM...
...IS WHERE TO TAKE THE LEAD?
AT WHAT POINT.....!?
WHICH COURSE DO I TAKE, AND HOW!?
AND AFTER I PASS HIM, WHICH COURSE ON THIS FIELD DO I CHOOSE!?

GYRO... I THINK YOU'D ALREADY KNOW, BUT LET ME WARN YOU JUST IN CASE.
THIS WIDE FIELD... IT SEEMS AS IF THERE ARE MULTIPLE COURSES THAT COULD GIVE US A LEAD, BUT REALLY, THERE AREN'T.
AT THIS SPEED, THE LITTLE TWISTS AND BUMPS ON THE GROUND WILL BOUNCE BACK TO OUR HORSES.
AND DEPENDING ON WHERE YOU ARE, THE TENDER-NESS OF THE DIRT IS TOTALLY DIF-FERENT!!
THERE'S ONLY ONE 'COURSE' FOR MAXIMUM EFFICIENCY AT THIS SPEED!

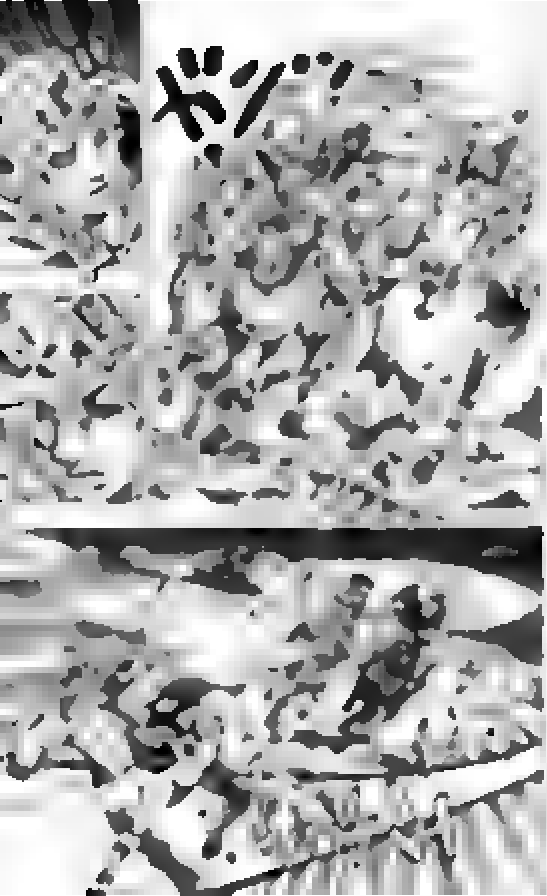
WITH HIS SKILLS AND HIS 'DINO-SAUR' SENSES!
DIO IS CON-TINU-ING TO FIND THAT COURSE AS HE RUNS!
SO WHAT ARE YOU SAYING!?
ARE YOU SAYING THAT THE 'COURSE' HE'S ON NOW IS THAT BEST 'COURSE'!?
IF THAT'S THE ABSOLUTE 'BEST' LINE THEN HOW DO WE OVERTAKE HIM?
WHERE DO WE TAKE THE LEAD?
WE WAIT FOR HIM TO MAKE A MISTAKE IN HIS 'COURSE CLAIMING'.
THAT'S ALL THERE IS.

WAIT FOR HIM TO 'FUCK UP', JOHNNY?
DO YOU REALLY THINK HE'LL FUCK UP?
WE CAN'T WAIT!
THAT WOULDN'T BE 'MAKING AN IMPRESSION ON THAT BASTARD'S BRAIN'!
STOP, GYRO!

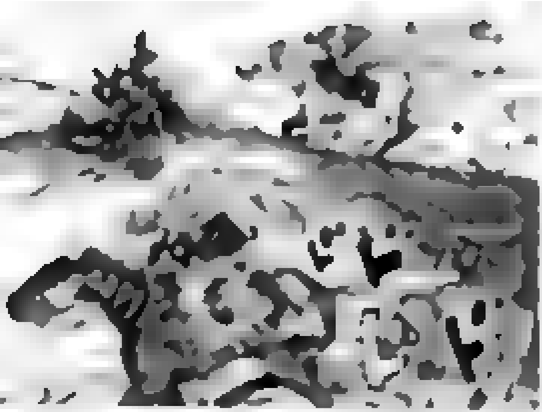
ガン゛ー!!
ドドド
ドド
……

GYRO! HE'LL ONLY DISTANCE HIMSELF FROM YOU!
IT'S BECAUSE HIS COURSE IS THE BEST!
AND VALKYRIE'S BREATH IS OFF RHYTHM BECAUSE OF YOUR MOVEMENTS!
WHEN HE MAKES A MISTAKE ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT HILL, YOUR HORSE WON'T HAVE ENOUGH 'ENERGY' TO SPARE!!
THAT'S ALSO WHAT DIO IS AIMING FOR! DON'T FALL TO HIS SPELL!

......
ドドドド
ドドドド
NO JOHNNY... THAT'S RIGHT!
THAT'S NOT HOW IT IS...!! THIS ISN'T JUST ABOUT VICTORY IN THE RACE!!
WE NEED TO 'BEAT' HIM DOWN SHITLESS!
WE NEED TO DEFEAT HIM SO BAD THAT HE WON'T WANT TO CHALLENGE US AGAIN IN 100 YEARS!
'WAITING FOR MISTAKES' IS FOR COWARDS!


ダッ

D10
ドドドド
ドッ
ゴ



DIO!!
I TOLD YOU, GYRO...
HE'S LOSING IT NOW... IF HE CONTINUES DOING THE SAME THING HE'LL COLLAPSE...
CAN'T WE BEAT HIM IN THIS FIGHT!?
I'LL HAVE TO DO IT......
IF WE LET DIO GET HOLD OF THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART', HE WILL 'HUNGER' EVEN MORE....!!
DO WE JUST HAVE TO ACCEPT THAT HE'S ABOVE US!?

バフ―
バフ―
GYRO'S FALLING BEHIND...!
FALLING
YES...
THIS IS HOW IT SHOULD BE.
I'LL STAY ON THIS COURSE......
THIS COURSE, JUST FOR ME AND VALKYRIE....
THAT FELLOW, RINGO ROADAGAIN, MAY HAVE BEEN AN ENEMY, BUT...
HE SEEMED TO HAVE A POINT... HE SAID THAT...
REAL VICTORY IS IN THE 'TRUE MAN'S WORLD'...
HE NEVER 'SHOT HIS GUN BEFORE HIS OPPONENT'...

HE 'MADE HIS OPPONENT FIRE'...
HE DID THE OPPOSITE...
ドドドドド
IF DIO'S COURSE IS THE BEST...
THEN IT MAY BE ALRIGHT TO LET HIM KEEP IT.......
JUST LIKE THAT.
'TAKING THE NARROW PATH'... MAY BE DIFFICULT....
BUT ......
WE WILL TAKE THE PATH THAT IS JUST FOR US.
NOTHING STANDS IN OUR WAY ON THIS PATH.... WE MOVE AS IF WE ARE SPINNING SLOWLY...
THIS PATH THAT ONLY WE CAN 'ADAPT'.

EVEN JOHNNY DISAPPEARS.
THIS WEATHER AND THE STORM ARE IRRELE-VANT.
WE DON'T NEED TO LOOK AT DIO'S PATH...
FIND THE 'LIGHT'!
ACCORD-ING TO RINGO, THERE SHOULD BE 'LIGHT' AHEAD...
IT'S JUST FOR ME, THIS 'SOOTHING PATH'!
INTO THE 'LIGHT'

......
?
THE SOUND FROM GYRO'S HORSE'S HOOFS ....
THE 'SOUND' IS GONE
I CAN'T HEAR THEM!
HUH? .....
!
GYRO....?
......
WHERE'D HE GO!? .....
......
WHERE'D HE DISAPPEAR TO?
WHERE'S HE RUN-NING !?
C.. COULD HE...
IS HE FAR BEHIND ....?

THE 'SOUND' OF MY BELOVED SILVER BULLET'S HOOFS...
'SOMETHING' IS WRONG WITH THIS SOUND...
THE RHYTHM OF THE GALLOPING IS FROM MY BELOVED..... I'M SURE OF IT...
BUT 'SOMETHING'.....
?
THIS SOUND... 'SOMETHING'
JOHNNY JOESTAR IS FAR BEHIND. IT ISN'T HIM...
!?

ドン
ドン

HEY!
THAT'S....

WHAT !!
!!
HUH
WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?
GYRO!?
WHEN THE HELL DID YOU...!?

HE'S ON DIO'S COURSE!!
WHEN DID HE GET UP THERE!?
I COULD ONLY SEE ONE HORSE!
HE'S PERFECTLY LINED UP ON THE COURSE...!! DIO HASN'T MADE A SINGLE MISTAKE!!
BUMP
WHAT THE FUCK!?
WHAT ARE YOU DOING ON MY LINE!?
GET OUT OF MY WAY!

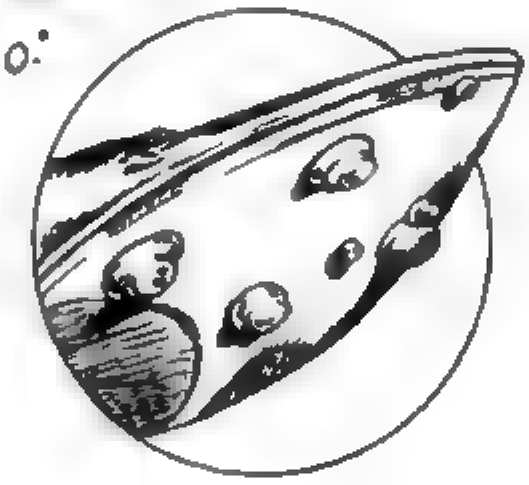
IT'S NOT JUST THE COURSE!
BOTH HORSES HAVE THE EXACT SAME RHYTHM!
THAT COURSE WHICH BRINGS OUT THE HORSE'S GREATEST POTENTIAL! GYRO'S ON IT TOO!
THEY'RE CLOSE ENOUGH AND FAST ENOUGH THAT THE DIRT FROM DIO'S HORSE WON'T HIT GYRO'S!

HE'S RIGHT BEHIND DIO! HE SOMEHOW CAUGHT UP!

THIS IS GYRO ZEP-PELI...?
HIS 'GAZE'!?
SOME-THING'S DIFFERENT. WHERE IS HE LOOKING AT!?
AM I NOT THE FOCUS?
GYRO ZEP-PELI, WHAT ARE YOU LOOKING AT?
AH!
... MY WHIP!
UH
BHAAAA!
BHAAAA!
PFF!
KA AA!
NAAAAAAH!

BUT GYRO, EVEN STILL!
THAT COURSE IS NO GOOD! THE ONLY TIME DIO WILL 'HAND OVER' THAT COURSE IS WHEN HE 'FAILS'!
IS THAT SO!
FINE!!
IT'LL BACKFIRE! YOU'RE ONLY STRENGTHENING HIS WILL TO 'PROTECT HIS COURSE'!
AND YOU'RE WAY TOO CLOSE! A SLIGHT CHANGE IN YOUR GALLOP WILL MAKE YOU CRASH!
HE WILL ONLY 'FAIL' THROUGH CARELESSNESS! BUT IF YOU'RE THAT CLOSE TO HIM...!
DON'T FORGET WHO YOU'RE DEALING WITH!!
DON'T YOU WORRY ABOUT ANYTHING, VALKYRIE!
YOU DON'T NEED TO LOOK AT DIO'S ASS.
THIS IS YOUR COURSE AND YOURS ONLY.
WE'RE JUST GETTING STARTED HERE!
BY THE TIME WE REACH THE TOP OF THAT HILL, ONE OF OUR HORSES WILL COLLAPSE!

BLACKMORE



**STAND NAME**
**"CATCH THE RAINBOW"**

IS ABLE TO WALK ON RAIN. THE RAIN DROPS ARE STABILIZED IN MID AIR, RESISTING GRAVITATIONAL FORCE.

# Steel Ball Run v9ch2

Brought to you by JoJo Project and Stardust Crusaders

Script: ack44

Editing: Frequency & Shizuka Joestar

Proofreading: Shizuka Joestar

Special Thanks: asuka

#39
CATCH THE RAINBOW
(ON THAT STORMY NIGHT)
PART 2

DAMN... I CAN'T PULL AHEAD OF GYRO...
HE'S RIGHT BEHIND ME, AND I CAN'T CREATE MORE DISTANCE...
WHAT TO DO...?
AT THIS RATE, MY HORSE, 'SILVER BULLET'...
SFX: PANT

HE'LL COLLAPSE TOO! HIS BREATHING IS ALSO BECOMING MORE AND MORE IRREGULAR!

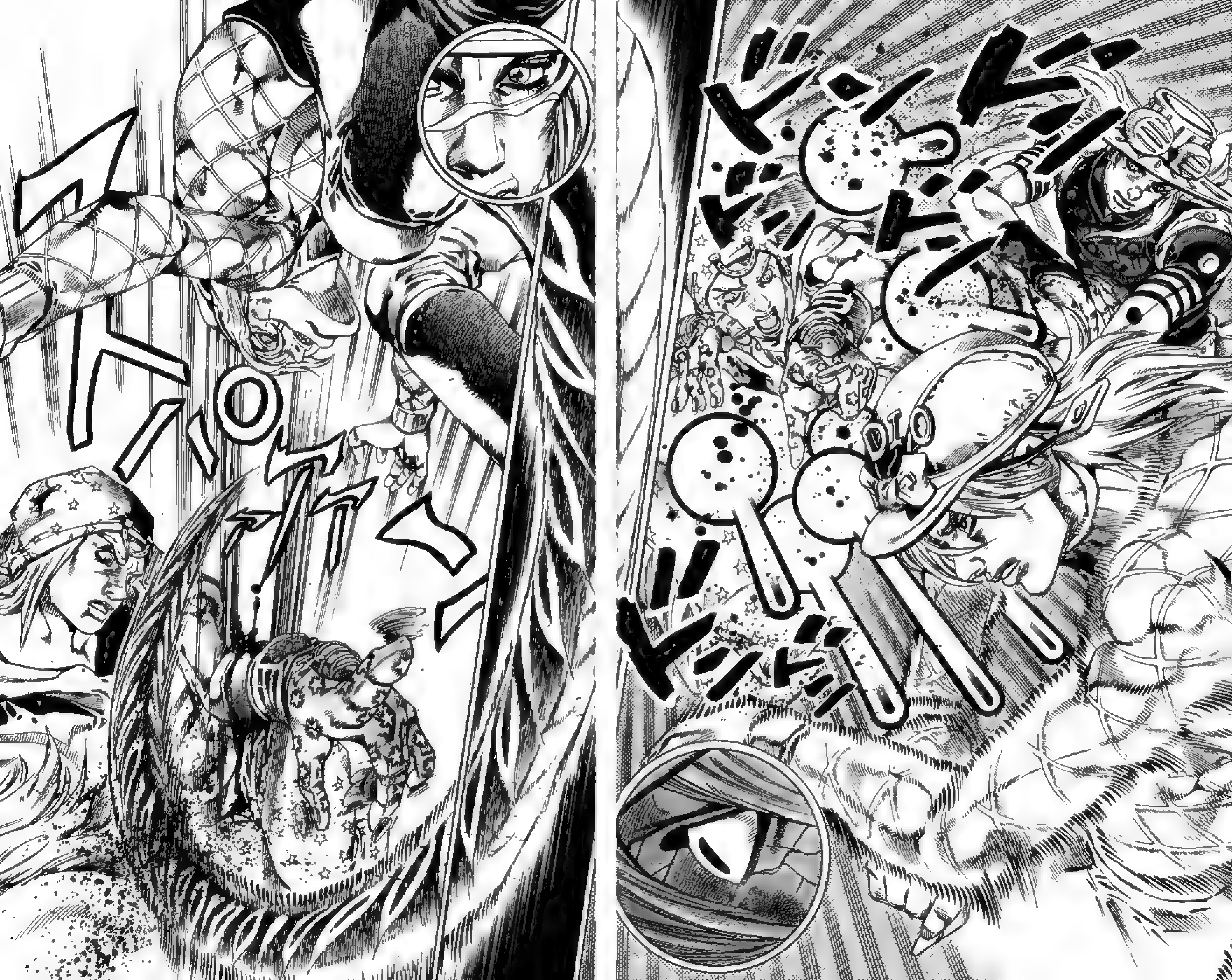
SLIDE
HE'S...
HE'S NOT JUST READING MY LINE OF MOVEMENT.
RATHER, HE...
INSTINCTUALLY, MAYBE EVEN COINCIDENTALLY KNOWS HOW I'LL MOVE NEXT.
AND HE'S MATCHING HIS MOVEMENTS ACCORDINGLY ...!
DAMN! EVEN IF I DO MANAGE TO STAY AHEAD...
EVENTUALLY, MY HORSE IS GOING TO TIRE OUT AND COLLAPSE AT THE SAME TIME GYRO'S DOES!
AND THAT,
THAT'S WHAT JOHNNY JOESTAR IS PLANNING, TO STEAL THE LEAD FROM BEHIND.
I CAN'T LET HIM TAKE THIS LEAD...
BUT I CAN'T ...

......
THERE'S SOMETHING WRONG ... DIEGO BRANDO ...
SOMETHING IS 'OFF'!
AT THIS RATE, BY THE TIME WE REACH THAT HILL,
ONE OF OUR HORSES WILL COLLAPSE FROM FATIGUE!
IT'S EVEN POSSIBLE FOR 'ALL THREE' OF OUR HORSES TO FALL!
THAT'S WHAT'S OFF!
BUT THEN, WHY ISN'T DIO DOING ANYTHING...? I HAVE A BAD FEELING...!
THE FACT THAT DIO'S 'NOT DOING ANYTHING'!
HIS 'PERSONALITY' ...
HE'S NOT THE TYPE TO LET HIMSELF SIT AROUND AND DO NOTHING!
SLIDE

SFX: HOP
GYA AAH
KR RR RR RR
SFX: SLURP
DIO...! SOME-THING'S 'WRONG'!
WHY?! WHY ISN'T HE DOING ANYTHING!?

NO, WAIT....
I'M WRONG...!
HE MIGHT 'ALREADY' BE DOING SOMETHING!
AT THIS VERY MOMENT... I MIGHT NOT KNOW 'WHAT' IT IS, BUT....
HE'S DEFINITELY DOING 'SOME-THING'!
AND HE MIGHT ALREADY HAVE COMPLETED WHATEVER HE DID...!
!
POP
SNORT
SNORT

AM I GOING TO HAVE TO SIT BACK AND DO NOTHING?!
NO! I CAN'T BEAR THIS ANY LONGER...!
TAKE THIS, DIO!



DIO

USELESS, USELESS!! I THOUGHT I TOLD YOU THIS, JOHNNY JOESTAR!
THAT I'D TEAR YOU APART, IF YOU CAME WITHIN 2 METERS OF ME....
NO OTHER ORGANISM ON EARTH CAN MATCH UP TO A DINOSAUR'S SPEED!
EDITOR'S NOTE: IN THE ORIGINAL JAPANESE "USELESS" IS "MUDA."
SNAP
WHAT DIFFERENCE WILL THROWING THAT MAKE!? USELESS, USELESS, GYRO ZEPPELI!!

I WIN!
THIS RACE! THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'!
G...GOD DAMN IT!
THERE'S SOMETHING WRONG WITH GYRO'S 'VALKYRIE'!
THE PARTS THAT YOU TWO ARE IN POSSESSION OF! NOW I, DIO, WILL BE IN POSSESSION OF EVERYTHING!

THAT'S TRUE, THIS 'SECOND' STEEL BALL, 'THIS ONE'...
YEAH, IT MIGHT BE USELESS.
BUT I THINK THE 'FIRST ONE' I THREW IS COMING IN HANDY!
THE HORSES ARE RUNNING. OURS AND YOURS, THEY'RE ALL RUNNING RIGHT NOW, RIGHT?
LOOK...THIS 'EMPTY CASE'. I TOOK MY 'FIRST' STEEL BALL AND THREW IT AT YOU, AT THE SPEED OUR HORSES WERE RUNNING AT...
FROM WHERE I'M SITTING, I CAN TELL THAT IT'S MAKING A PRETTY BIG DIFFERENCE.
SFX: WHIRR

SFX: WHIRR
SEE IT NOW? OR IS IT MOVING TOO SLOWLY?
YOUR SO-CALLED 'INVINCIBLE REFLEXES'...
IT MATCHES THE SPEED THAT WE'RE MOVING AT RIGHT NOW, SO YOU MIGHT NOT HAVE NOTICED ..
DIDN'T HELP MUCH, HUH? BUT YOU SHOULD BE ABLE TO HEAR IT NOW. IT MIGHT LOOK SLOW TO YOU, BUT COMPARATIVELY, IT'S MOVING PRETTY FAST...

HE'S BLUFFING! I'VE GOT YOU NOW, JOHNNY JOESTAR!

AGHHH!
SFX: CLING

ドドドドド
SNORT
SNORT
SNORT
IT STOPPED! DIO'S HORSE STOPPED!
SNORT
SNORT
SNORT
DIO'S FALLING BACK!
SNORT
SNORT
SNORT

IT'S COMPLETELY STOPPED MOVING! IT CAN'T EVEN STAND ON ITS OWN!
DIO'S HORSE IS ON THE GROUND NOW!
DIO'S HORSE CAN'T RUN ANYMORE!
AGHH HHHH HHHH HHHH! !!

DIO'S DOWN!
HE'S DOWN!
HIS 'SILVER BULLET' WON'T BE ABLE TO RUN IN THE RACE ANY MORE!
WH...
WHAT!? WHAT ARE YOU DOING, GYRO?!
DUMBASS! YOU'RE SO STUPID!
HEY! YOU SPLIT MY LIP!
WHY DID YOU TRY TO SHOOT DIO BACK THERE?!
GUH?!
SPIT

......
DUMBASS! I'M GONNA KILL YOU, JOHNNY!
DAMN IT! I'M NOT TRYING TO MAKE EXCUSES, BUT I DID IT BECAUSE I KNEW DIO WAS UP TO SOMETHING!
AND VALKYRIE WAS ACTING STRANGE, THOUGH NOT ANYMORE, APPARENTLY!
HE WAS DEFINITELY UP TO 'SOMETHING'!
I COULD TELL!
SHUT UP!
WHERE'S THE PROOF, HUH?!
THIS ISN'T HOW I GET MY 'PERFECT VICTORY'!
THIS WASN'T WHAT I WANTED!
NO, GYRO, YOU WERE DEFINITELY WINNING.
YOU WERE SURPASSING HIM IN THE RUNNING ASPECT!
AND NOW HIS HORSE IS USELESS!
WE DIDN'T DO ANYTHING AGAINST THE RULES!
IS THAT WHAT YOU THINK?
EVEN THOUGH HE MIGHT HAVE LOST THIS ROUND, HE'LL DEFINITELY MAKE A COMEBACK! HE'LL BE EVEN WORSE, BECAUSE HE'LL GET STRONGER WITH HIS WANT FOR REVENGE!
I DON'T THINK SO.

SORRY I HIT YOU,
JOHNNY.
MAYBE I STILL CAN'T BEAT THAT 'SOMETHING' THAT I'M FIGHTING AGAINST.
LIKE DIO...OR PEOPLE THAT I HAVEN'T EVEN FACED YET.
WHATEVER THAT 'SOME-THING' IS...
...A 'TRUE MAN'S WORLD', HUH.
IT'S GONNA BE TOUGH.

LOOK, GYRO.
SOMEONE'S THERE... THEY'RE COMING THIS WAY.
ALONE, I GUESS.
A 'GIRL'.
THAT'S A 'GIRL'...
IT'S GIVING ME A WEIRD FEELING...
WOMEN ARE BAD LUCK.
WHY WOULD A GIRL BE OUT HERE IN THIS STORM ALONE?
THAT'S PRETTY JUDGEMENTAL OF YOU TO SAY.
...HOPE SO.
WAIT A SECOND! I KNOW THAT CHICK!

THAT'S STEPHEN STEEL'S WIFE!
THERE'S NO MISTAKING IT, I'VE NEVER TALKED TO HER, BUT SHE'S THE ONE...
......!?
STEEL? THE PROMOTOR?
THERE'S AT LEAST 40KM FROM HERE TO THE 4TH STAGE'S GOAL, KANSAS CITY.
WHY WOULD SHE BE HERE?
DON'T LET YOUR GUARD DOWN, JOHNNY...
STEEL'S MOST DEFINITELY LINKED WITH THE GOVERNMENT! THEY'RE PART OF THE 'ENEMY'...
HAHH, HAHH...
I APOLOGIZE FOR MY RUDENESS...
BUT I CAME HERE BECAUSE I HEARD YOU TWO WERE TRAVELING BY THIS ROUTE...!
MISTER JOESTAR, MISTER ZEPPELI,
I'VE FINALLY FOUND YOU! I WAS LOOKING FOR YOU...!

A WARM WELCOME, HUH...
WE KNOW WHO YOU ARE, AND HOW OLD YOU ARE, BUT...
GET ANY CLOSER, AND.... WELL...
LET'S JUST SAY THAT YOU'RE PUSHIN' IT. VALUE YOUR LIFE, MISSY.
WELL, WE WEREN'T LOOKING FOR YOU!
PLEASE HELP ME!
YOU'RE THE ONLY ONES WHO CAN!
PLEASE HELP MY HUSBAND!
HEY, HEY, WHAT'S UP WITH THIS CHICK?
IS SHE INSANE?
OR DOES SHE THINK THAT JUST BECAUSE SHE'S 14, WE'LL BE ALL NICE TO HER?
......

I BROUGHT A 'CORPSE PART'...
THE 'SPINE'!
AND MOUNTAIN TIM ...!
THEY ... THEY PROBABLY KILLED HIM...!

WHAT...WHAT ARE YOU..?!
THAT CAN'T BE...!
I FOUND A MESSAGE TIED TO A CARRIER PIGEON, AND THEN ALL OF THIS HAPPENED...!
THE PRESIDENT DOESN'T KNOW YET! BUT IT'S ONLY A MATTER OF TIME!
IF THE PRESIDENT FINDS OUT ABOUT THIS... MY HUSBAND WAS JUST BEING USED!
HE'LL DISPOSE OF BOTH OF US!
PLEASE HELP ME! YOU TWO ARE THE ONLY ONES WHO CAN! AND THAT'S WHY I BROUGHT THIS TO YOU!
HEY, HEY, WAIT A SECOND!

WHAT THE HELL DID YOU DO BACK IN KANSAS?!
AND YOU BETTER BE DAMN SURE THAT NO ONE'S FOLLOWED YOU HERE!
THAT'S IMPOSS-IBLE.
THAT'S NOT POSSIBLE.
NO... THERE'S NO WAY...

A...AH...
AHH...!
UH...!
AHHHHH!
AHHHHH!
....IT CAN'T BE...!
GYRO.
YOU CAN'T SEE THE STARS IN THIS WEATHER, BUT TOWARDS THE DIRECTION OF URSA MAJOR...
THE SOUND OF THE RAIN CHANGED.

BUT...
I DEFINITELY ...
IT CAN'T BE...!
THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE...!
YARE YARE DAZE.

ORAAAAAA!!

UGH...!
AGHHH!

AAAH,
AAAAH!
AGHHHH!
TH...
THE RAIN-DROPS?! THEY'RE 'FLOATING' ?!
TH... THIS...!?
SNORT
SNORT
SNORT

THEY'RE COMPLETELY 'FROZEN' IN MIDAIR!
THEY'RE NOT MOVING...!
PLUS, THEY'RE IMPOSSIBLY SHARP! IF YOU 'MOVE'...
THEY'LL CUT THROUGH YOUR SKIN!
AHHH!
AGHHH!
AHHH!

UAHHH!!
AH...!
LUCY STEEEEEEL ....
WHAT YOU'VE DONE IS EQUIVALENT TO 'EVE TAKING THE APPLE'...
NOW, LET ME HAVE 'THAT' BACK...
'HE' HAS CHOSEN TO REST IN THIS CONTINENT...
TO 'RESURRECT' HIMSELF IN THIS NEW WORLD!
AH...!
AGHH...

I MUST DISPOSE OF YOU!
YOUR EXISTENCE IS 'SIN'!
AND YOU...
AND YOU MUST 'REPENT' !
WHAT YOU HAVE DONE IS 'EVIL'.
AUGH...
BUT THE SPACES BETWEEN THE DROPS...
THESE RAINDROPS ARE COMPLETELY FROZEN IN MIDAIR...
AGHHHH!
THERE'S GOT TO BE A GOOD 'ANGLE' TO MAKE A SHOT!
SFX. CUT

IT'S A GOOD DISTANCE BETWEEN ME AND HIM...!
I HAVE TO FIND THE RIGHT SPACE BETWEEN THE RAINDROPS!
HMPH.

AND THE 'PARTS' THAT YOU TWO HAVE! THOSE ARE THE PROPERTY OF THE PRESIDENT AS WELL! I'LL BE TAKING THEM BACK!
AGHHHH!
YO, JOHNNY! QUIT HESITATING! SHOOT YOUR NAIL BULLET, NOW!

CAN'T FEEL A THING.
ALL OF THESE SMALL DROPS...
IT'S JUST...
SITTING THERE,
FROZEN IN MIDAIR. RIGHT?
MY WOUNDS ARE JUST
OPENED ALL THE WAY THROUGH, LIKE LITTLE TUNNELS.
IF I MOVE MY ARM IN EXACTLY THE SAME WAY, IN THE SAME ANGLE THAT I MOVED IT BACK...

ALRIGHT, HERE GOES...
ALL YOU CAN DO NOW IS 'BRACE YOURSELF'!
FOR WHEN I PUMMEL YOU WITH THIS.

ALL OF YOU WILL REPENT.
FOR YOUR COLLECT- IVE SINS!
ALL OF YOU, IN THE OTHER WORLD...
ORAAAAAA!!!

......
IT'S NO USE...
THE SAME AS BEFORE! HE STOPPED IT...
......
YOUR HUSBAND WILL SUFFER THE SAME FATE! BUT I'LL TAKE CARE OF YOU FIRST, LUCY STEEL!
BE CURSED IN HELL!
NO...
OH, BLACKMORE...
IT'S 'EVAPORATING'...
IT'S TURNING INTO 'VAPOR'...

SFX:FIZZ

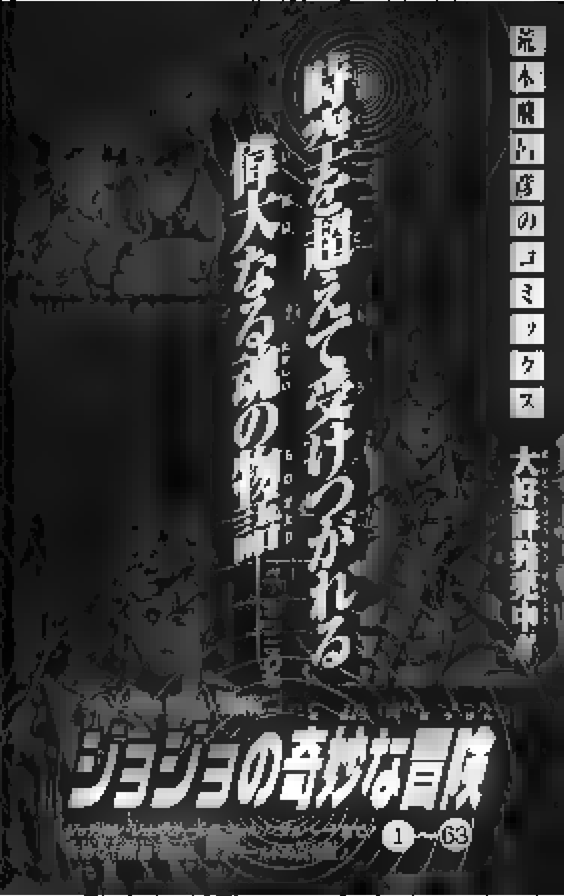
THE 'RAINDROPS' THAT ARE IN THE AIR...
BECAUSE OF THE FRICTION CAUSED BY THE SPIN...!
BECAUSE OF FRICTION...
.. HE DID IT...!

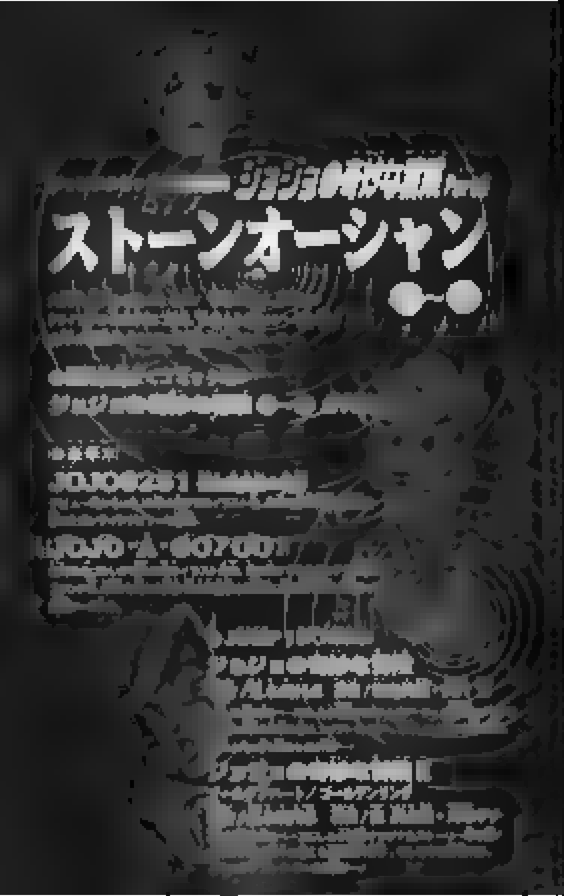
HUMANS ALL HAVE A 'PURPOSE'...
IT TRANSCENDS THE LIMITATIONS OF THE FLESH.
THAT 'PURPOSE' ...!
YOU'RE ALL CURSED! ALL OF YOU...THERE IS NO FUTURE FOR YOU!

HAHH,
HAHH...
COUGH, COUGH
AH... AGH...
H, HE ...
COUGH
HE'LL GET UP...!
HE'S ...
PLEASE, BLACKMORE, HE'S ALMOST IMMORTAL...!
HE'S GOING TO GET UP AGAIN!
NO...
I DON'T KNOW WHAT HAPPENED BEFORE THIS...
BUT,
HE WAS ALREADY HALF-DEAD WHEN HE GOT HERE.
SOMEONE PUMPED A COUPLE OF BULLETS IN HIM ALREADY...
OH...
AHH...
AH...

IT'S STARTING TO CLEAR UP...
THE STORM ...
IT'S ENDING.
THIS IS ODD...LOOK, GYRO.
WHERE IS IT?
THE 'SPINE'.
IT'S GONE! WHERE'D IT GO?!
UGH.. WHAT...
WAIT A SECOND.
I'M GETTING LIGHT-HEADED ... UGH, I'M GETTING NAUSEOUS...!

HEY, JOHNNY ...
I THINK YOU'LL GET OVER YOUR NAUSEA PRETTY SOON..
LOOK AT WHAT'S ON THE GROUND...! THE SAND...IT'S SHIFTING...!
9 嵐の夜がやってくる(完)


荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
大好評発売中!!
時を超えて受けつがれる
偉大なる魂の物語
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
1～63


ストーンオーシャン

STEEL BALL RUN

⑪嵐の夜がやってくる

著者　荒木飛呂彦

編集　ホーム社

発行所　株式会社集英社

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社

ISBN4-08-874147-1 C9979

Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
VOLUME 9, CHAPTER 3
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

AND HOW ABOUT THOSE 'LEOPARDSKIN TROUSERS', SCUM? YOU KNOW WE SAID LEOPARDSKIN TROUSERS'D BE A GREAT IDEA.
......
THEY'RE KIND OF...
LOOK, I COULDN'T FIND A SHOP THAT'D HEARD OF ANYTHING LIKE THAT BUT, ER, YOU KNOW THAT 'CIRCUS' THAT WAS HERE LAST WEEK?
ONLY I HAD A WORD WITH THE GUY IN THE TOP HAT...
AND, WELL, IT WAS A KIND OF A BARGAIN AND--
SCUM,
WHAT
HAVE YOU
BOUGHT??
LOOK AT IT THIS WAY.
IT'S SORT OF LEOPARD-SKIN 'TROUSERS'
AND A LEOPARDSKIN 'SHIRT'
AND A LEOPARD-SKIN 'HAT'.
SCUM...
YOU'VE BOUGHT A 'LEOPARD', HAVEN'T YOU.
SORT OF LEOPARDY, YES.

荒木飛呂彦

It's something that was given to me, but I have a comment calendar hanging on the wall at my workplace. In short, I have 12 pictures of girls in bathing suits in my office. Nothing naughty. But anyway, every time the month changes, I have to flip the page to the next girl, and somehow, that makes me feel incredibly melancholy. "Goodbye, September girl... I guess we'll never meet again!" That's how it makes me feel. Until then, I "flip" and think, "Hmm, October's not bad either!" and that makes me think of how I'm already forgetting the September girl... So, what I'm trying to say here is, that a year goes by really quickly.

STEEL BALL RUN 10
荒木飛呂彦
集英社


9784088742854
1929979003906
ISBN4-08-874285-0
C9979 ¥390E
定価 本体390円+税
雑誌 42983 85


http://www.s-manga.net/

JUMP COMICS

# STEEL BALL RUN

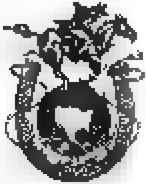
vol.10

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE

# STEEL BALL RUN



## vol.10

## CONTENTS

ILLINOIS SKYLINE MICHIGAN LAKESIDE

#40
A SILENT WAY ① 7

[redacted]
A SILENT WAY ② 69

#42
A SILENT WAY ③ 117

# #40

## A SILENT WAY PART 1

[illegible]

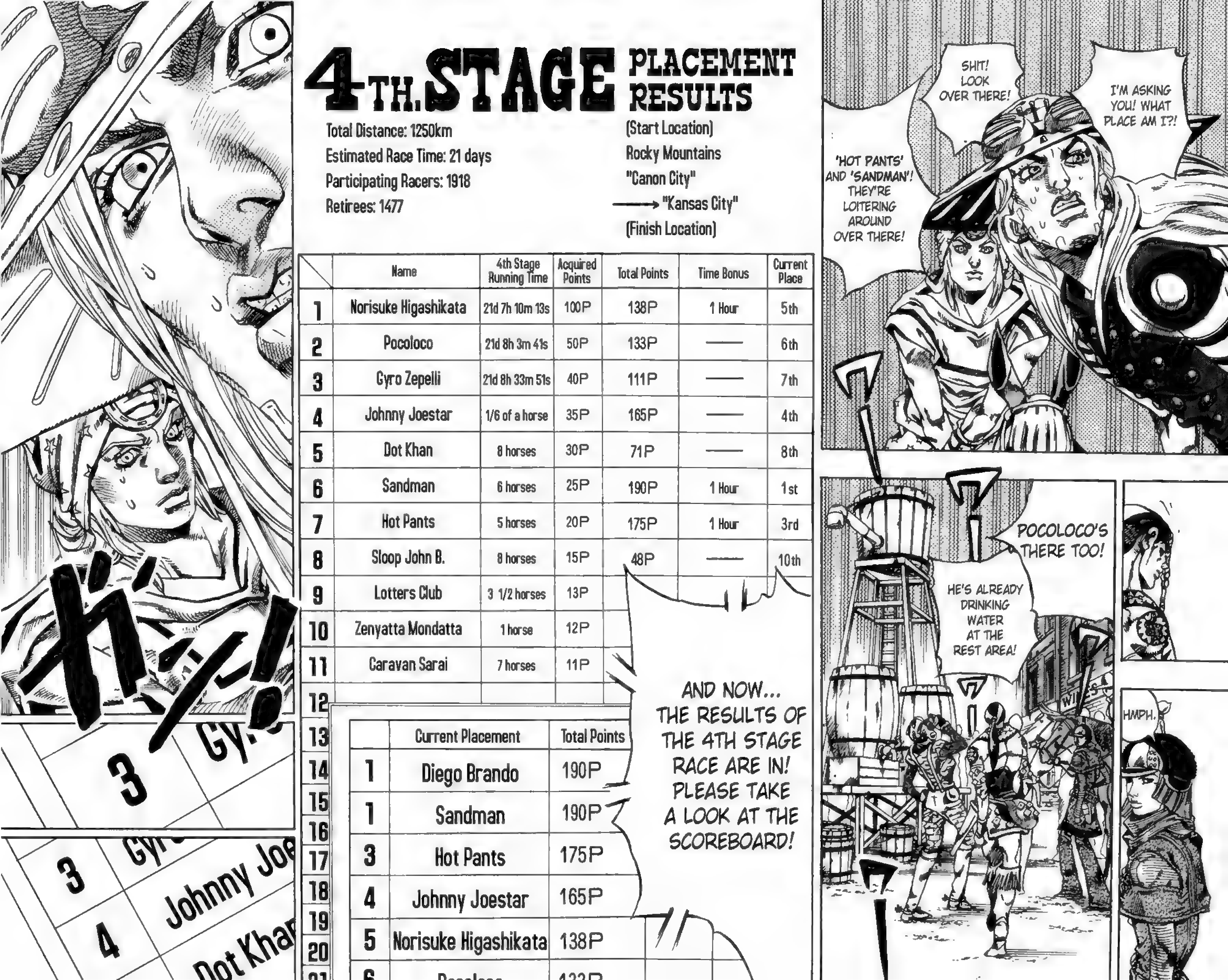
AND GRACEFULLY... GOAAAAAL!!!
AND HERE HE COMES! GYRO ZEPPELI, COASTING TOWARDS THE FINISH LINE...
FOLLOWING HIM IS JOHNNY JOESTAR!

STEEL BALL RUN RACE
AND DOT KHAN FROM MONGOLIA IS TRAILING BEHIND! HE'S JUST ENTERED KANSAS CITY!

THIS 4TH STAGE, SPANNING A DISTANCE OF ABOUT 1250 KM... THERE'S BEEN QUITE AN UPSET,
DUE TO THE UNEXPECTED STORM THAT HIT LAST NIGHT!
AT THE START OF THIS STAGE, THERE WERE 1918 RACERS... BUT NOW, MORE THAN 1450 OF THEM ARE DECLARING THEIR WITHDRAWAL FROM THE RACE!
...THAT MEANS THE REMAINING NUMBER OF RACERS LEFT HAS BEEN REDUCED TO ABOUT 400... A MERE FOURTH OF THE STARTING NUMBER!
STEEL BALL RUN
FIRST IN W
WHO WOULD HAVE EXPECTED SUCH HARSH CONDITIONS IN THE MIDDLE OF THIS GREAT CONTINENT!? WHO COULD HAVE PREDICTED THIS HARSH REALITY!?
BUT, TAKE A LOOK! CONVERSELY, THE NUMBER OF SPECTATORS WAITING AT THE FINISH LINE HAS MULTIPLIED ENORMOUSLY SINCE THE START OF THIS RACE!
THE MONEY BEING CIRCULATED THROUGH GAMBLING IS SAID TO HAVE REACHED ASTRONOMICAL SUMS!
JOHNNY, WHAT PLACE DID WE FINISH IN?!
WHAT NUMBER DID I FINISH AS?!
......
YOU TWO, HAVE YOU SEEN MY WIFE?
SHE LEFT TO GO BACK TO THE HOTEL LAST NIGHT BY HERSELF. SHE SAID SHE WAS TIRED AND WANTED TO GO TO SLEEP... AND I WAS BUSY PREPARING FOR TODAY.
I HAVEN'T SEEN HER ALL MORNING...
NO...
NEITHER OF US HAVE, EITHER...

WE'VE DISCOVERED THAT THE INTRUDER WAS MOUNTAIN TIM...
BUT ODDLY, WE HAVEN'T HAD CONTACT FROM BLACKMORE SINCE LAST NIGHT.
I HAVE NO IDEA WHERE HE COULD BE. HE MADE ONE PHONE CALL LAST NIGHT TO REPORT IN, SOMEWHERE 5KM FROM THE TOWN, BUT...
HE SUDDENLY HUNG UP, AND I HAVEN'T HEARD FROM HIM SINCE.
......
......
THE ONE...
... WHO WAS 'IN THE PIGEON CAGE' ON THE ROOF. HE'S THE TROUBLESOME ONE...
MOUNTAIN TIM IS IRRELEVANT!
THERE'S 'SOMEONE ELSE'...

THE 'CORPSE PARTS'... EVENTUALLY, THEY'LL ALL BE OURS...
BUT THE IMPORTANT THING IS THIS...! 'TRAITORS' WILL NOT BE CONDONED! DO YOU UNDERSTAND?!
A THORN IN OUR SIDE COULD BE A FUTURE HINDRANCE TO OUR STRENGTH! WE MUST FIND THE CULPRIT, AND WE MUST KILL HIM!
COULD HE BE SOMEWHERE WITHIN THIS CROWD, WATCHING ME?!
..........




# 4TH. STAGE PLACEMENT RESULTS

Total Distance: 1250km
Estimated Race Time: 21 days
Participating Racers: 1918
Retirees: 1477

(Start Location)
Rocky Mountains
"Canon City"
→ "Kansas City"
(Finish Location)

| | Name | 4th Stage Running Time | Acquired Points | Total Points | Time Bonus | Current Place |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | Norisuke Higashikata | 21d 7h 10m 13s | 100P | 138P | 1 Hour | 5th |
| 2 | Pocoloco | 21d 8h 3m 41s | 50P | 133P | —— | 6th |
| 3 | Gyro Zepelli | 21d 8h 33m 51s | 40P | 111P | —— | 7th |
| 4 | Johnny Joestar | 1/6 of a horse | 35P | 165P | —— | 4th |
| 5 | Dot Khan | 8 horses | 30P | 71P | —— | 8th |
| 6 | Sandman | 6 horses | 25P | 190P | 1 Hour | 1st |
| 7 | Hot Pants | 5 horses | 20P | 175P | 1 Hour | 3rd |
| 8 | Sloop John B. | 8 horses | 15P | 48P | —— | 10th |
| 9 | Lotters Club | 3 1/2 horses | 13P | | | |
| 10 | Zenyatta Mondatta | 1 horse | 12P | | | |
| 11 | Caravan Sarai | 7 horses | 11P | | | |
| 12 | | | | | | |
| 13 | | | | | | |
| 14 | | | | | | |
| 15 | | | | | | |
| 16 | | | | | | |
| 17 | | | | | | |
| 18 | | | | | | |
| 19 | | | | | | |
| 20 | | | | | | |
| 21 | | | | | | |

| | Current Placement | Total Points |
|---|---|---|
| 1 | Diego Brando | 190P |
| 1 | Sandman | 190P |
| 3 | Hot Pants | 175P |
| 4 | Johnny Joestar | 165P |
| 5 | Norisuke Higashikata | 138P |
| 6 | Pocoloco | 133P |

WE TOOK A DETOUR TO THE NORTH, AND WE EVEN WENT THROUGH THAT STORM.
IT'S LIKE I'M REPEATING MYSELF, BUT YOU'RE THE ONE THAT WON...
WE COULDN'T HAVE HOPED FOR A BETTER PLACEMENT IN THIS RACE.
4th STAGE
AGAIN...
I COULDN'T WIN, AGAIN...
I THOUGHT SO...
!!!!
SHIT... THE GUY WHO PLACED FIRST...
WHO IS HE?
'HIGASHIKATA'? WASN'T ANYONE IMPRESSIVE IN THE FIRST COUPLE OF RACES...
HE'S OVER THERE... THAT MAN.
HE'S JAPANESE.
JAPANESE PEOPLE ARE POLITE, BUT THAT SOMEHOW MAKES ME MORE WARY OF HIM.

AND IT DOESN'T SEEM LIKE HE'S A SAMURAI, EITHER.
THE WEAPON ON HIS BACK ISN'T WHAT THEY NORMALLY USE.
OH... EXCUSE ME.
I GUESS YOU CAN DRINK FIRST, BEFORE ME...
THE FINISHING PLACEMENT HAS NO BEARING ON WHO GETS TO DRINK FIRST, AFTER ALL... OH, BY THE WAY, I WAS FIRST.
... BUT THAT REALLY HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH WHO GETS TO DRINK FIRST.
WHAT NUMBER WERE YOU?
......
... MM.
PLEASE, GO AHEAD.
HM? OH, REALLY?
REALLY? YOU'RE FINE WITH THAT? YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE.

THANK YOU...
YOUNG ONE.
ALSO, DO YOU FOLLOW THE PAPERS?
DO YOU WANT TO READ SOMETHING?
HOW ABOUT IT?
ODDITIES OF THE WORLD
A man with two navels
-Japan-
Norisuke Higashikata (68) of Sendai, Japan is and oddly enough, the owner of two navels (photograph). His parents and grandparents only have one, and were in great health during their lives. Higashikata is currently entered in the Steel Ball Run race: will he be able to complete it?
Also, current research is being done on his by several medical experts...
READ THIS, RIGHT HERE...
HERE.
THE PART I CIRCLED IN RED.
......

SOME REPORTERS FROM ITALY CAME TO DO AN ARTICLE.
THAT'S ME.
I WAS IN THE PAPERS!
DO YOU WANT TO SEE?
THE REAL THING! INTERESTED?
DO YOU WANT TO STICK A FINGER IN IT?
GET AWAY FROM ME, YOU OLD GEEZER...!
IF YOU GOT YOUR WATER, THEN STEP ASIDE.
WATER YOUR HORSE AND GO TEND TO IT SOMEWHERE ELSE!
GOOD CHOICE.
IT WOULD BE IMPROPER OF SOMEONE LIKE YOU TO TOUCH A MAN'S NAVEL.
......
!?
SNIFF SNIFF
HM... MAYBE I'M THINKING TOO MUCH.

HEY, JOHNNY! LOOK...!
SHIT...!
THOUGHT SO...
IT'S LIKE I SAID, BACK THERE...

AAAAAND....
IT'S DIEGO BRANDO, FINALLY AT THE FINISH LINE! THE 'EMPEROR', DIO!
BUT IT LOOKS LIKE HE'S TAKEN QUITE A BIT OF DAMAGE FROM THE STORM! HE'S FINISHED IN AN ASTONISHING 54TH PLACE! 54TH PLACE! THAT WOULD MEAN, OF COURSE, THAT HE GETS NO ADDITIONAL POINTS THIS TIME AROUND!

HE DIDN'T RETIRE, AFTER ALL.
JOHNNY.
GUYS LIKE HIM...
I DON'T LIKE THIS AT ALL...
THEY'RE THE WORST KIND...
HE REALLY PISSES ME OFF.

ドドドド
ドドドド
ドドドド
Dex
Bra
De

WHAT'S HAPPENING TO MY BACK?!
GYRO! WHAT IS IT!? WHAT'S GOING ON?!

LOOKS LIKE THIS 'PART' CHOSE YOU...
LOOK... IT'S LIKE SOME SORT OF MAP...!
THE IRON IN THE SAND IS BEING DRAWN TOWARDS YOU, AND MAKING PATTERNS ON THE GROUND!
THERE ARE WORDS TOO.
Dexter Brachium
AND... I KNOW WHAT THESE LOOK LIKE! 'LAKES'... THE GREAT LAKES! THIS ONE IS LAKE MICHIGAN!

# 5th. & 6th. STAGE 『Illinois Skyline Michigan Lakeline』

5th Stage: Kansas City ⟶ Chicago, Lake Michigan
(Distance: approximately 780km)
(Estimated race time:approximately 41 days)
(Number of participants: 441)

6th Stage: Chicago, Lake Michigan ⟶ Mackinaw City, Lake Huron
(Distance: approximately 690km)
(Estimated race time: approximately 12 days)

Duo Pespedis
'BOTH LEGS'!
WHOA, WHOA, WHOA, WHOA!!
ALL THIS FROM JUST THE 'SPINE'?!
......
AND NOW WE KNOW WHERE TO FIND THREE MORE PARTS?!
'BOTH LEGS'! 'BOTH EARS'! THE 'RIGHT ARM'!

WHAT WERE YOU DOING NEAR THE PRESIDENT?
THERE ARE A FEW THINGS WE WANT TO ASK YOU, TOO.
WE WANT SOME INFORMATION REGARDING THE CURRENT SITUATION.
I...I JUST SAW THE 'CORPSE PART' MOVE AND GO INSIDE YOUR BACK...
WHAT IS THIS...?
WHAT IS IT...? THE PRESIDENT IS LOOKING FOR IT, TOO...
DO YOU KNOW 'WHOSE' CORPSE PARTS THE PRESIDENT IS COLLECTING?
BASICALLY, DO YOU KNOW?
DOES HE HAVE SOME SORT OF ABILITY?
IS THE PRESIDENT A 'STAND USER'...?
THE PRESIDENT HAS A VERY 'OLD MAP', AND HE'S SETTING UP THE RACE BASED ON IT... MY HUSBAND IS JUST BEING USED FOR THE PRESIDENT'S PURPOSE.
... I DON'T KNOW, EITHER...
I HAVEN'T FOUND OUT THAT MUCH.

I DON'T KNOW.
I REALLY DON'T... I'M SORRY.
BUT AS FOR THE CORPSE PARTS, THE PRESIDENT HAS THE 'HEART'.
I...YES, THE 'HEART' WAS ALREADY INSIDE OF THE PRESIDENT'S CHEST...! THAT WAS WHEN I FOUND OUT ABOUT ALL OF THIS...
......
THE 'HEART'...
THEN... HE'S GOTTA BE A 'STAND USER'.
YOUR COUNTRY'S TOP OFFICIAL IS A USER, HUH...
STANDS HAVE A SPECIAL 'POWER'...
YOU HAVEN'T SEEN EVEN A GLIMPSE OF THE PRESIDENT'S ABILITY? YOU HAVE NO IDEA?
NO... I DON'T KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT THINGS LIKE THAT. AND I DIDN'T WANT TO!
AND I DON'T WANT TO KNOW, EITHER! IT SCARES ME...
AH...
SOB

THAT GUY OVER THERE, HE CHASED YOU ALL THE WAY HERE...
YOU SURE THE PRESIDENT AND HIS BUDDIES DON'T KNOW ABOUT YOU?
THEY DON'T KNOW THAT IT WAS YOU WHO BROUGHT US THE 'SPINE'...?
... BLACKMORE MOST LIKELY DIDN'T HAVE TIME TO MAKE A REPORT BACK TO THE PRESIDENT.
THE PHONE CABLES SUDDENLY SNAPPED, SO...
BUT...!
IF THEY KNOW, I'M FINISHED...!
IF THE PRESIDENT FOUND OUT, THEN MY HUSBAND WILL ALREADY BE DEAD BY NOW!
BUT THAT'S JUST A MATTER OF TIME, TOO... OH...
THEY'LL FIND OUT ABOUT ME SOONER OR LATER...!
I SEE.
SO THAT'S WHAT HAPPENED...
ALL RIGHT, LAST QUESTION. IS THAT HORSE YOURS?
......
NO.
IT'S A GOVERNMENT HORSE...
THAT REMINDS ME, SOMEONE SAW ME LEAVE...!

THEN COME HERE.
I'VE MADE A VOW NEVER TO LET A WOMAN GET ON MY HORSE.
SO HITCH A RIDE WITH JOHNNY!
THAT WAY, NO ONE CAN PROVE THAT YOU WERE HERE!
?
?

THE PRESIDENT IS GOING TO TRACE THAT HORSE HERE SOONER OR LATER.
BUT THEY'LL JUST THINK THAT 'BLACKMORE' CAME HERE FROM KANSAS, ON THAT HORSE.
THE TRACKS ONLY LEAD IN ONE DIRECTION! THAT'S WHAT THEY'LL HAVE TO ASSUME.
EVEN IF BLACKMORE COULD WALK IN MIDAIR, THEY'LL HAVE TO ASSUME THAT THAT WAS BLACKMORE'S HORSE.
SO, YOU WERE NEVER HERE!

YOU STOLE OUT TO GO SHOPPING, AND THEN WENT BACK TO YOUR ROOM, AND SLEPT UNTIL THE MORNING...
THAT'S IT.
EVEN IF SOMEONE SAW YOU HITCH A HORSE,
THAT WAS ALL THERE WAS TO IT.
YOU NEVER STEPPED A FOOT OUTSIDE OF KANSAS CITY!
ALL RIGHT?!
......
SO YOU'RE...
TELLING ME TO 'GO BACK'?
I...
I DON'T WANT TO

I CAN'T GO BACK TO KANSAS!
WHAT I WAS ASKING YOU TO DO IS TO RESCUE MY HUSBAND FROM THE PRESIDENT,
AND TAKE HIM AND LET US ESCAPE TO A DIFFERENT COUNTRY!
THAT'S WHY I CAME HERE!
I CAN'T DO THAT.
I REFUSE.
WE CAN'T AFFORD TO QUIT THIS RACE NOW!
OH...
......
......
THE ONLY WAY YOU'RE GOING TO GET OUT OF THIS SAFELY...
LISTEN UP...
THERE'S ONLY ONE WAY.
YOU GO BACK TO KANSAS AS IF NOTHING HAPPENED...
STAY NEAR YOUR HUSBAND DURING THE RACE, JUST LIKE YOU NORMALLY DO...
AND...

GET CLOSE TO THE PRESIDENT AND STEAL THE 'HEART'!
THAT'S WHAT YOU'RE GONNA DO, MRS. STEEL.
VERY SPECIAL THANX. SCREEN TONE WORKED by "Shimosuke" Soul'd out.
HUH...?
WHAT...
WHAT DID YOU...?
WAIT, GYRO...
WHAT ARE YOU SAYING?

I TOLD HER TO STEAL IT.
GO TO HIM, AND TAKE IT FROM HIM!
YOU DO IT, MRS. STEEL.
IF YOU WANT TO SAVE YOURSELF, THAT'S WHAT YOU'RE GONNA HAVE TO DO.
......
NO WAY!
I...
I DON'T WANT TO
YOU SAID YOU WANTED US TO SMUGGLE YOU OUT OF THE COUNTRY?
WHAT WERE YOU PLANNING ON DOING AFTER YOU ESCAPED? BUILD AN IGLOO ON THE NORTH POLE AND WATCH THE NORTHERN LIGHTS WITH YOUR HUSBAND?
GO LIVE ON A DESERT WHERE YOU DON'T KNOW ANYONE, AND LIVE IN FEAR OF PURSUERS AS YOU WATCH THE SUN RISE EACH MORNING?
GYRO!! WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO MAKE HER DO?!
SHE'S ONLY 14!!
SHUT UP!! YOU STAY THE FUCK OUT OF THIS!

I DIDN'T TELL YOU TO 'DEFEAT' THE PRESIDENT, JUST TO TAKE HIS 'ABILITY'.
TONIGHT, YOU SUCCEEDED IN DOING THAT PARTIALLY...
IF YOU SWORE YOUR LOVE TO HIM WHEN YOU MARRIED HIM, THEN PROTECT THAT OATH TO YOUR HUSBAND!
AND BECAUSE THAT'S SOMETHING THAT SHOULD BE COMMENDED, I'LL GIVE YOU THIS.
AH...
AHHHH ...!!

IF YOU HAVE THAT 'EYE'... THE 'PARTS' DRAW EACH OTHER TOGETHER...
EVEN IF YOU DON'T HAVE A STAND ABILITY, THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH FOR YOU TO BE ABLE TO TAKE THE 'HEART'.
I'LL LOSE MY SCANNING ABILITY.
BUT I STILL HAVE MY 'TECHNIQUE'.
OH...
......
OHHHH...

DAMN IT!
I WANT THE 'CORPSE' MORE THAN YOU DO...
SO A PART OF ME WON'T ALLOW MYSELF TO BE COMPLETELY ANGRY WITH YOU, EVEN IF I WANT TO...
BUT THE CHANCES OF THIS SUCCEEDING ARE CLOSE TO ZERO!
YOU'RE TELLING HER TO INFILTRATE THE 'CORE' OF THE ENEMY! IF SHE FAILS...THE CONSEQUENCES WILL BE GRAVE!
WHO'LL COME TO HER AID IF SHE FAILS?!
THIS IS A TERRIBLE THING TO PROPOSE! IT'S TOO HEARTLESS, GYRO ZEPELLI!
I'LL DO IT...
I...
I'LL DO IT...
I'LL DO IT...
IF THAT'S THE ONLY WAY...
I'LL DO AS YOU SAY...

OHHHH...
OH...
SOB, SOB
!!!!
JOHNNY! YOU DON'T HAVE TO COMFORT HER...
WE HAVE TO GET TO KANSAS.
WE'RE THE ONLY ONES THAT KNOW ABOUT THE NEXT CORPSE LOCATIONS!
I WAS WRONG ABOUT YOU, MRS. LUCY STEEL...
I WISH FOR YOU AND YOUR HUSBAND'S GOOD LUCK...
THOUGH, WELL, I'LL NEVER LET YOU RIDE MY HORSE, OF COURSE.
AND YOU'RE GONNA GIVE ME BACK THAT 'EYE' EVENTUALLY! DON'T LOSE IT SOMEWHERE!

YOU WANTED TO 'TALK'... WAS IT?
HMM...
YOUR NAME... DIEGO BRANDO, YES?
YES. LET ME GET STRAIGHT TO THE POINT...
I HAVE THE 'LEFT EYE' OF THE CORPSE...
I'LL HAND THIS OVER TO YOU.
WHOA! LET'S NOT GET TOO HASTY, THOUGH.
I THOUGHT I SAID I WANTED TO TALK DIRECTLY WITH THE PRESIDENT?

ALL RIGHT...
ALL RIGHT, WAIT!
WE'LL TALK, THEN.
I WANT TO DO SOME BUSINESS WITH YOUR PRESIDENT.
DON'T GO! COME BACK HERE, WILL YOU?
MY SILVER BULLET'S TAKEN SOME DAMAGE.
HE WON'T BE TAKEN OUT OF THE RACE, BUT IT'S IMPOSSIBLE FOR HIM TO RUN WITH THE TOP RUNNERS OF THIS RACE.
FOR MY HORSE, I WANT TO TAKE THESE NEXT TWO STAGES SLOWLY.
......
... HOWEVER...

YOU WANT THE SAME THING, CORRECT?
WHY DON'T WE COLLABORATE OUR EFFORTS?
GYRO ZEPPELI AND JOHNNY JOESTAR DEFINITELY KNOW WHERE THE NEXT 'CORPSE PARTS' ARE LOCATED...
I DON'T KNOW WHICH 'PARTS' THEY ARE, YET... BUT I WANT TO TAKE THEM FROM THOSE TWO.
......
...
SNIFF

YOU'VE LOST ME...
WHAT DO YOU MEAN BY 'CORPSE PARTS'?
I WANT 'MONEY'. SIMPLE ENOUGH, RIGHT?
'MONEY'.
THE 'CORPSE' WASN'T MY MAIN OBJECTIVE TO BEGIN WITH.
YOU DON'T HAVE TO PLAY DUMB WITH ME. IF YOU DON'T WANT TO DIVULGE TOO MUCH INFORMATION, THAT'S FINE WITH ME.
I'LL GLADLY GIVE UP THIS 'EYE', ALONG WITH THE OTHER PARTS.
WHAT I DO WANT, HOWEVER, IS...
AND SELL THEM TO THE PRESIDENT!
I, DIO, WILL TAKE THE OTHER 'CORPSE PARTS' FROM GYRO...
THAT'S THE TRANSACTION...

HM... BY THE WAY, THAT 'EYE'...
... (THOUGH I DON'T KNOW IF HE'LL BUY IT FROM YOU OR NOT)...
HOW MUCH DO YOU WANT FOR IT?
NEW YORK'S 'MANHATTAN ISLAND'...

...HOW ABOUT IT?
YOU CAN MAKE ME MAYOR OF NEW YORK.
I WANT TO SECURE A POWERFUL GOVERNMENTAL POSITION IN THE FUTURE.
I'LL SELL IT TO YOU FOR THAT PRICE, ALONG WITH THE OTHER PARTS...
KNOW YOUR PLACE...!
YOU'RE JUST... LISTEN WELL, DIEGO BRANDO...!
WE COULD 'EXECUTE' YOU RIGHT HERE, RIGHT NOW...!
......
I KNOW
THERE'S A 'TRAITOR', ISN'T THERE?!
AMONG ONE OF YOU...

I FOUND THE CORPSE OF THE MAN NAMED 'BLACKMORE' AS I PASSED THROUGH THE PLAINS...
BUT THERE WAS SOMEONE ELSE THERE...A THIRD PERSON.
YOU THINK THAT IT WAS JUST GYRO AND JOHNNY WHO FINISHED HIM OFF, RIGHT?
I CAN TELL, BECAUSE OF THE HORSE'S 'WEIGHT'.
I KNOW JOHNNY'S HORSE'S 'PRINTS' VERY WELL.
FROM THE PRINTS...

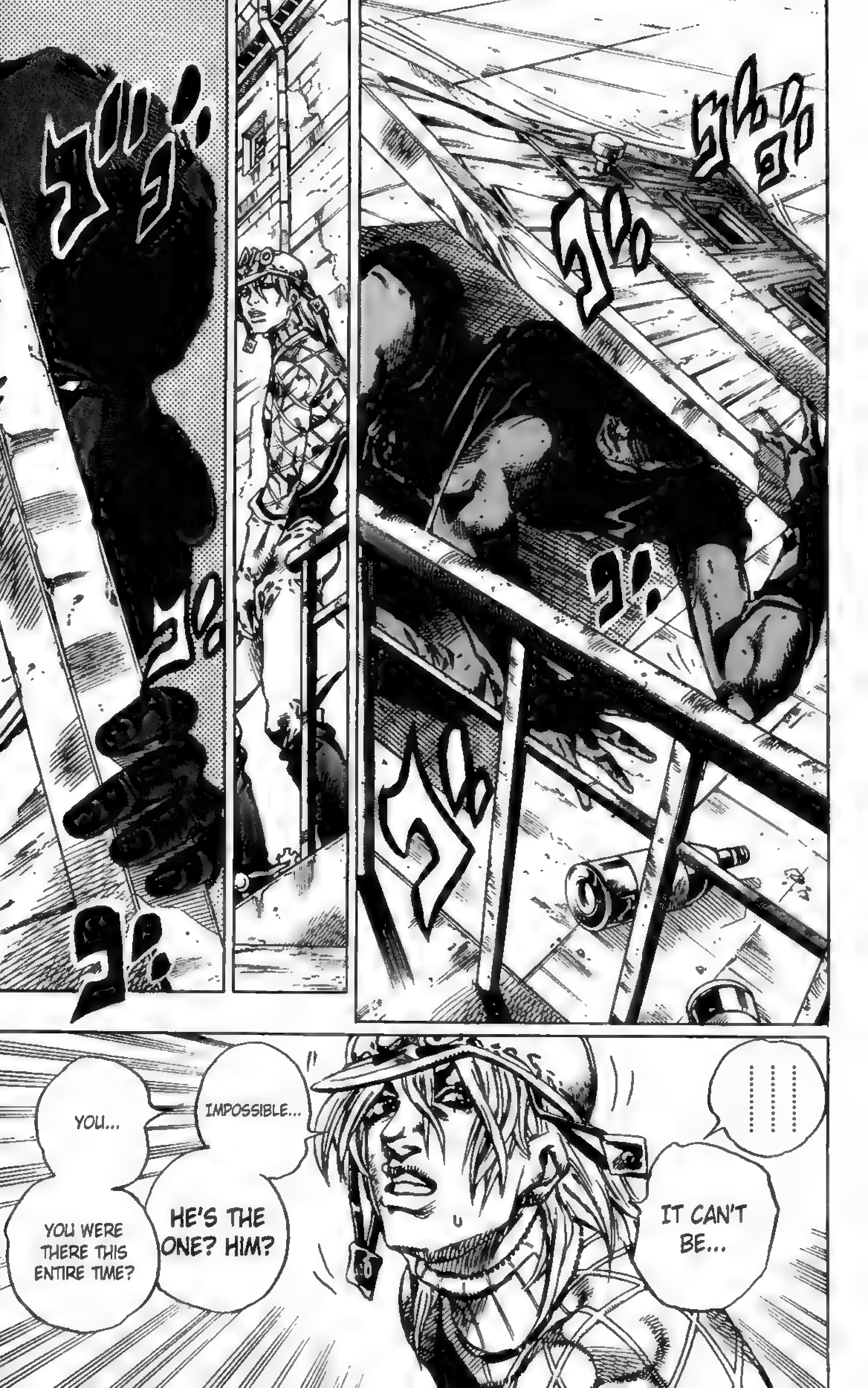
SOMEONE HITCHED A RIDE ON JOHNNY'S HORSE, BACK THERE.
THE HORSE WAS CARRYING MORE 'WEIGHT'.
BUT WHY?
BECAUSE THE THIRD PARTY WAS YOUR 'TRAITOR'.
BECAUSE THERE WAS A NEED TO LEAVE THE HORSE BEHIND AND PRETEND THAT NOTHING HAPPENED... THAT'S WHY THEY RODE ON JOHNNY'S HORSE. AM I WRONG?
ゴゴゴ
ドドドド

...AND YOU'RE SAYING THAT YOU KNOW WHO THIS IS?
I SEE.
BECAUSE I KNOW EVERYONE'S 'WEIGHT'.
I BET YOU DO...
DO YOU WANT TO KNOW?
I COULD FIND OUT WHO.
I MIGHT NOT KNOW THE FACE, BUT I COULD FIND OUT SOON ENOUGH...
BUT I WON'T TELL YOU, NOT JUST YET.
I'LL TELL YOU ONCE I TAKE THE 'PARTS' FROM GYRO,
AND FINISH MY 'REVENGE'!
WHAT?!
SO? ARE YOU WILLING TO DO BUSINESS WITH ME?

I TRUST YOU'LL SAY YES?!
LET'S DO THIS! IT'S A WIN-WIN SITUATION!
GIVE ME MANHATTAN ISLAND!
...PEASANT SCUM...!
MR. DIEGO BRANDO.
...AND? WHAT EXACTLY ARE YOU PLANNING ON DOING?

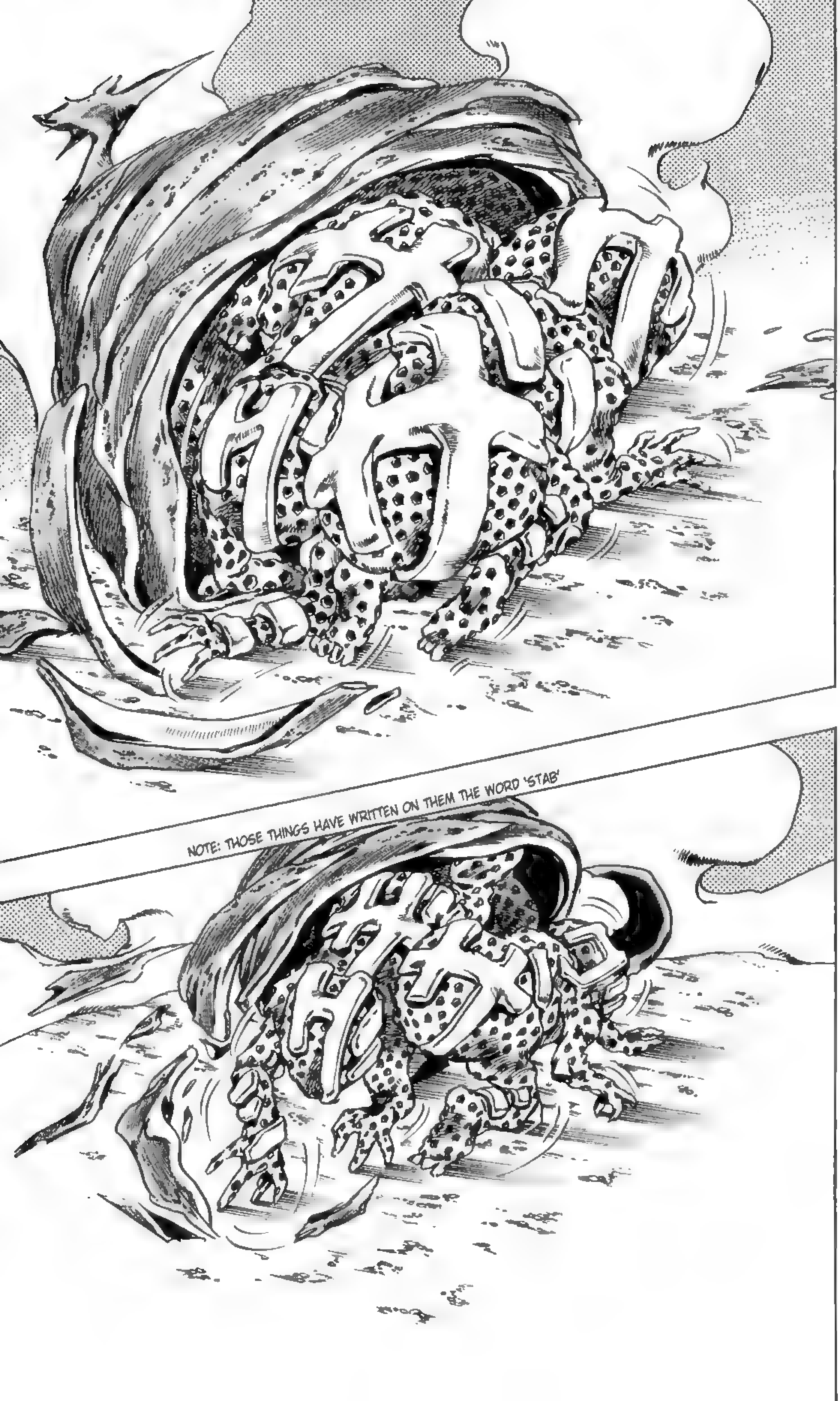
I WANT ANOTHER 'STAND USER'
TO BE MY LOYAL 'SUBORDINATE'.
I REPEAT. 'SUBORDINATE'.
MY HORSE WON'T BE ABLE TO MATCH UP TO THOSE TWO IN ITS CURRENT CONDITION.
I'M GOING TO TAKE DOWN GYRO AS A TEAM.
NOD
GLANCE

HE'D BEEN STATIONED THERE TO KILL YOU IF WE FELT THE NEED...
YOU'VE BEEN GIVEN 'PERMISSION'.
DIDN'T YOU NOTICE? HE'S OVER THERE... YOU CAN MAKE HIM YOUR 'SUBORDINATE'.
...BUT WE'LL OVERLOOK IT.
HOW ARROGANT...
SLIDE
!!!
WE'LL MAKE HIM COOPERATE... COME OUT.



IT CAN'T BE...
!!!
IMPOSSIBLE...
HE'S THE ONE? HIM?
YOU...
YOU WERE THERE THIS ENTIRE TIME?

YOU'RE...
A 'STAND USER'?
YOU...
......
HAVE YOU SPOKEN WITH HIM BEFORE?
......
I'M NOT ENTIRELY SURE...
BUT JUST A FEW MOMENTS AGO, I WAS BACK THERE DRINKING WATER WITH HIM.
IS HE USEFUL?
A GUY LIKE HIM...


NOTE: THOSE THINGS HAVE WRITTEN ON THEM THE WORD 'STAB'

WHAT'S GOING ON?
HEY...
WHAT IS THIS...?
WHAT DID YOU DO WITH THAT BEEHIVE?
I DON'T UNDERSTAND IT TOO WELL MYSELF...
BUT YOU SHOULD STAY BACK... I DON'T THINK YOU SHOULD TOUCH THOSE THINGS...

ザッ

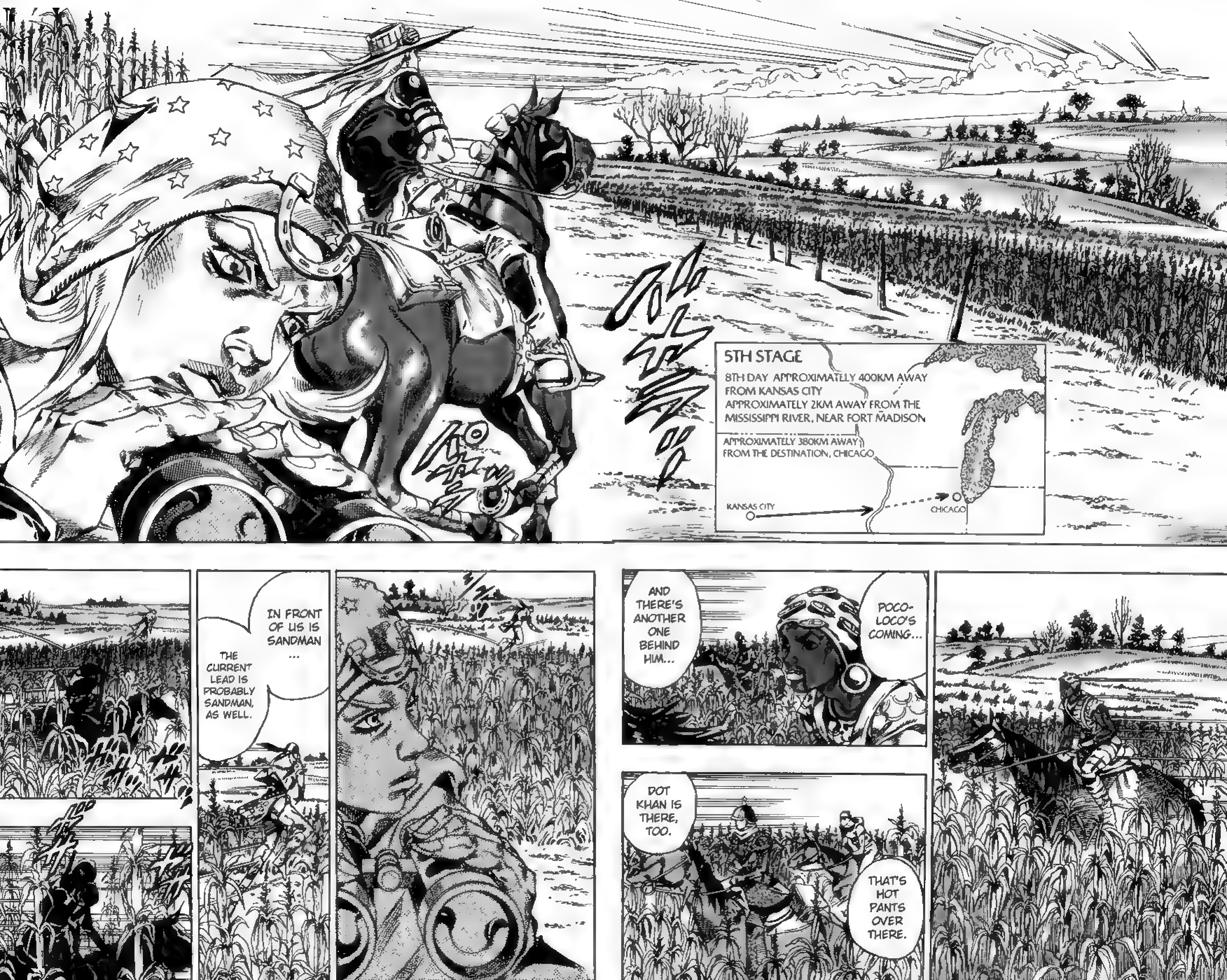
I TOLD YOU NOT TO 'TOUCH THEM'...
DIO, I THINK YOU SHOULD LET GO OF THAT BOTTLE IMMEDIATELY!
DROP IT ...!
SFX: STAB

OH, MY.
WAS THAT A WATCH?
YOU SHOULD BE GLAD YOU HAD IT ON, OTHERWISE IT WOULD HAVE BEEN DISASTROUS...
......

...I SEE.
......
I GUESS I APPROVE.
ANYWAY, I HAVE A FAVOR TO ASK... WHAT TIME IS IT NOW?
DON'T TRUST DIEGO BRANDO... RIGHT NOW... WE'RE MERELY 'USING' HIM.
WE'LL TAKE THE 'EYE' FROM HIM AT A LATER DATE.
DON'T ENTRUST THE SEARCH FOR THE 'TRAITOR' TO HIM, EITHER...

Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
VOLUME 10, CHAPTER 1
TRANSLATION: FRESHY — EDITING: FREQUENCY

#41


5TH STAGE
8TH DAY APPROXIMATELY 400KM AWAY FROM KANSAS CITY
APPROXIMATELY 2KM AWAY FROM THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER, NEAR FORT MADISON
APPROXIMATELY 380KM AWAY FROM THE DESTINATION, CHICAGO
KANSAS CITY
CHICAGO
POCO-LOCO'S COMING...
AND THERE'S ANOTHER ONE BEHIND HIM...
DOT KHAN IS THERE, TOO.
THAT'S HOT PANTS OVER THERE.
IN FRONT OF US IS SANDMAN ...
THE CURRENT LEAD IS PROBABLY SANDMAN, AS WELL.

WHO IS THAT...?
I CAN'T SEE BECAUSE OF THE ROWS OF CORN.
I DON'T KNOW WHO IT IS, BUT THERE'S ANOTHER ONE MAKING HIS WAY ACROSS THE FIELD.

EVERYONE IN THE TOP GROUP ARE THE USUAL STRONG CONTENDERS, BUT WE ALREADY HAVE A GOOD IDEA OF WHAT THEIR HORSES' STAMINA AND CAPABILITIES ARE LIKE.
THEY WON'T BE ABLE TO GET TOO MUCH OF A LEAD, EVEN IF WE REST HERE.
GYRO.
I THINK WE SHOULD TAKE A LITTLE BREAK HERE.
........
YEAH...
IT'S MORE IMPORTANT TO THINK ABOUT HOW WE'RE GOING TO 'CROSS' THE MISSISSIPPI.
HEY, JOHNNY.
I JUST THOUGHT OF A SONG...I JUST MADE IT UP.
LYRICS AND TUNE, BOTH WRITTEN BY GYRO ZEPPELI.
YOU WANT TO HEAR IT? I'LL SING IT FOR YOU, IF YOU WANT.
...YOU SEEM PRETTY NONCHALANT ABOUT ALL OF THIS...
WHAT? YOU WANT TO HEAR IT OR NOT?
I'M NOT GONNA SING IT TWICE, YOU KNOW!
...THEN I WANT TO HEAR IT.

PIZZA, MOZZARELLA~ ♪
PIZZA, MOZZARELLA~ ♪
......
ALL RIGHT THEN, FINE THE TITLE IS "THE CHEESE SONG".
EH-HEM.
HN...
HERE I GO.
RELLA RELLA ♪ RELLA RELLA
RELLA RELLA RELLA RELLA ♪
♪ RELLA ♪ RELLA RELLA RELLA~
PIZZA, MOZZA-RELLA~ ♪
....AND THAT'S HOW IT GOES!
......
WHAT DO YOU THINK?
THE SECOND VERSE REPEATS WITH 'GORGON-ZOLA~'.
♪ ZOLA ZOLA ZOLA ♪ ZOLA ZOLA ZOLA~
......
SO? WHADDAYA THINK?
IT'S GREAT, GYRO! I LIKE IT!
REALLY ?!
AH...OH MAN, IT'S GREAT! IT'S AWESOME! THIS IS INSANE!
IT'S LIKE...A MASTERPIECE! I CAN'T GET IT OUT OF MY MIND! IT'LL DEFINITELY BE A HIT IN EUROPE!
IT GETS STUCK IN YOUR HEAD SO EASILY .. ESPECIALLY THAT 'RELLA RELLA' PART...
REALLY?! YOU THINK SO?!
THAT'S WHAT I'VE SECRETLY BEEN THINKING, TOO! CAN YOU WRITE IT OUT ON A SCORE SHEET?

RELLA RELLA RELLA RELLA
ZOLA ZOLA ZOLA ZOLA
WANT TO FORM A BAND?
BY THE WAY...THIS TOO, JOHNNY. WHAT DO YOU THINK?
I RECIEVED THIS 'LETTER' WHEN WE WERE PASSING THE HALFWAY POINT BETWEEN KANSAS AND CHICAGO...

Signor Gyro Zeppeli,
There are no existing records of such 'saints'.
That is all.
A WHILE BACK (I WROTE IT IN CODE),
I WROTE THAT OUT AND SENT IT TO MY HOME COUNTRY AND THE VATICAN.
I ASKED ABOUT THE IDENTITY OF THE 'CORPSE', AND THAT'S THEIR ANSWER.
......
......
I WANT TO KNOW WHAT YOU THINK.
WHAT'S YOUR OPINION?
I MEAN...
I FRANKLY HAVE NO IDEA. YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO SEEMS TO THINK THAT THE 'CORPSE' IS A 'SAINT'.
MAYBE THE 'CORPSE' HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH THE VATICAN.
HEY...I TOLD YOU BEFORE,
THAT'S NOT POSSIBLE.

IN THE CORE OF EVERYONE WHO SEARCHES FOR 'TRUE POWER' IS THE NEED TO BE 'REVERED'.
IT'S NOT JUST ABOUT OBTAINING AN 'ABILITY' OR A 'TALENT'!
...IT HAS TO BE A 'SAINT'! IT'S NECESSARY FOR THE CORPSE PARTS TO BE THOSE OF A 'SAINT'S'...
AND THAT'S WHY THE PRESIDENT IS OUT SEARCHING FOR THESE PARTS, PERSONALLY.
SFX BOIL
BUT, ISN'T THIS WEIRD?
THEY ONLY WROTE 'ONE SENTENCE' IN THIS ENTIRE LETTER.
DON'T YOU THINK THAT'S WEIRD?
WHY ISN'T THE VATICAN ASKING ME ANY QUESTIONS?
LIKE, 'ZEPPELI, ARE YOU CURRENTLY IN POSSESSION OF SAID CORPSE?', OR...
'SHOW US', TO PROVE THAT I HAVE IT...
THEY'RE NOT ASKING FOR DETAILS... THAT'S WHAT BOTHERS ME.
SO, IN SUMMARY... WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO SAY?
I STILL DON'T GET IT.
DAMN IT!
THAT'S IT! THAT'S WHAT PISSES ME OFF! I DON'T KNOW WHAT I'M TRYING TO SAY, EITHER!

EITHER THAT THE VATICAN HAS ABSOLUTELY NO INTEREST IN THIS CORPSE...
OR...
MAYBE THAT...THEY ALREADY HAVE A GOOD IDEA OF THE IDENTITY OF THIS CORPSE, BUT IT'S SOMEONE SO SACRED, THAT...
IT'S TOO DANGEROUS TO REVEAL THE CORPSE'S NAME IN A LETTER...
HM...
......
THAT'S TRUE. SO, IT MUST BE THAT...
......

SHUT UP...
GYRO...WHO DO YOU THINK THE 'CORPSE' IS? NOT EVEN A GUESS...?
YOU DON'T EVEN HAVE A HUNCH AS TO WHO THIS IS?
MAYBE WE'LL FIND OUT WHEN WE FIND THE NEXT PARTS AT LAKE MICHIGAN...THAT'S WHERE THE 'RIGHT ARM' IS, ALONG WITH 'BOTH EARS'!
THIS CONVER-SATION'S OVER.
I'M THE ONE ASKING YOU FOR YOUR OPINION, REMEMBER?!
SERIOUSLY, JOHNNY!
SHUT THE HELL UP!
CHICAGO

SFX: BOL
OW!
AGHHH!
?
A TOWEL...?

CLOP
CLOP CLOP
CLOP
!!
CLOP
CLOP
CLOP
SOMEONE'S COMING, JOHNNY.
THEY'RE HEADING OUR WAY THROUGH THE FIELDS!
I CAN HEAR A COUPLE OF HORSES...!

CHOP
CHOP
CHOP
!?
GYRO...
CHOP
CHOP
I CAN HEAR SOMETHING INSIDE THE COTTAGE...!
SOMETHING'S BEHIND THAT DOOR! I CAN HEAR IT!
I JUST CHECKED THE COTTAGE A MOMENT AGO. THERE'S NO ONE IN THERE.

GYRO! SOMETHING'S DEFINITELY GOING ON!
THIS IS BIZARRE ...!
CLOP
CLOP
CLOP

LET'S GET OUT OF HERE...WHO THE HELL COULD BE APPROACHING US, ANYWAY?
CLOP CLOP CLOP CLOP CLOP CLOP CLOP CLOP
I DEFINITELY HEARD SOMETHING.
WHAT WAS THAT...?
IF YOU SAY THAT SOMETHING'S UP, SOMETHING MUST BE UP.
JOHNNY...
GET ON YOUR HORSE, RIGHT NOW.
DON'T CLIMB THAT LADDER! GYRO, DON'T TOUCH IT!!

AN AXE...
THIS AXE...
...DON'T TOUCH THAT LADDER...!

CLOP CLOP
CLOP
CLOP
CLOP
D...DON'T TOUCH THIS COTTAGE, EITHER...!
JUST DON'T...!
I JUST USED THAT AXE TO OPEN THE COTTAGE DOOR.
I ALSO USED MY TOWEL TO HOLD THE HANDLE OF MY POT.
I DON'T KNOW WHAT'S GOING ON, BUT IT'S AN 'ENEMY'! THERE'S AN 'ENEMY' HERE! IF YOU TOUCH ANYTHING, YOU'LL BE ATTACKED!
DON'T TOUCH ANYTHING, GYRO! THEY'RE TRYING TO MAKE US TOUCH SOMETHING!
CLOP
CLOP CLOP
CLOP
CLOP CLOP

I KNEW WE WERE BOUND TO RUN INTO ONE OF THESE GUYS SOONER OR LATER, BUT...
LOOKS LIKE THEY'RE PLANNING ON COMING STRAIGHT FOR US...
I SAW A SILHOUETTE IN THE CORN FIELD...LOOKS LIKE THEY'RE GOING TO COME INTO THIS CLEARING NOW. LET'S DECIDE NOW, WHETHER WE WANT TO...
SEE WHO THEY ARE AND BEAT THE SHIT OUT OF THEM, OR JUST GET OUT OF HERE!
SFX CLOP
THEY'RE COMING! THEY'RE COMING!
THEY'RE COMING OUT!

......
WHAT IS THIS...!? GYRO, THERE'S SOMETHING WRONG!
THIS... BEHIND THAT DOOR...
TH... THIS COTTAGE ...!
SFX: CLOP

WHAT IS THIS?!
IT'S DISAP-PEARING ?!
THE BOARDS ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE COTTAGE... THE ROOF... THEY'RE ALL GONE!
THE COTTAGE IS CRUMBLING!
SFX_CHOP

AGHHHHH!
GYRO! THIS IS...
GET AWAY FROM THE COTTAGE! THIS PLACE...
OUR ENEMY IS PLANNING TO SURROUND US WITH HIS TRAP!

DOT KHAN!
OUR ENEMY IS DOT KHAN!
SFX ON DINOSAURS: CLOP
......
WHAT THE...?!
SOMETHING ELSE JUST RAN OUT OF THE FIELDS, TOO...
WHAT THE HELL ARE THOSE? AND I CAN HEAR THE SOUND OF HOOVES COMING FROM THEM...

DAMN IT! THERE ARE TOO MANY THINGS TO DO AT ONCE!
GYRO, WE HAVE TO GET OUR HORSES AND OURSELVES AWAY FROM THIS COTTAGE, NOW!
HE'S USING THE FACT THAT I CAN'T WALK TO HIS ADVANTAGE!
GO!
SNORT
DOT KHAN!
I'M ONLY GONNA WARN YOU ONCE! DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!

AAAA AAGH HHH !!!!
AA AG H!!

THE 'STEEL BALL' ...?!
WHAT?
IMPOSSIBLE... WHAT JUST HAPPENED ?!
HELP...
ME...
AGHHH!
WHAT...?
WHAT AM I DOING?!
WHAT THE...?

HELP ME...!
THE 'STEEL BALL' WAS COMPLETELY DESTROYED...! RIGHT DOWN TO THE 'CORE'...
HE DESTROYS WHATEVER TOUCHES HIM...? IS THAT IT..?!
DAMN IT...
DOT KHAN ISN'T THE 'ENEMY'... HE'S JUST BEING USED AS A 'TOOL' FOR THE REAL ENEMY'S ABILITY...!
HE'S JUST LIKE THAT 'COTTAGE'! IF WE TOUCH HIM OR HIS HORSE, WE'LL BE DESTROYED...
THE 'ENEMY' ISN'T PLANNING TO TRAP US...HE'S ALREADY GOT US SURROUNDED! SO THAT WE CAN'T ESCAPE!
WE'VE ALREADY FALLEN INTO HIS TRAP!
GYRO! HE'S GOING TO PLOW INTO US!

ORA AA!

IT'S NO USE! BOTH OF THE 'STEEL BALLS' WERE DESTROYED! THIS PLACE IS GOING TO FALL!
THERE'S... SOMEONE OVER THERE...?!
JOHNNY! DIG A HOLE IN THE GROUND!
BEFORE THE 'BOARDS' CAN TOUCH YOU!
DIG A HOLE WITH YOUR NAIL BULLETS AND HIDE INSIDE IT!
TOO SHALL-OW...

MY 'NAIL BULLETS'... THEY'RE USELESS, THEY GET DESTROYED ALMOST IMMEDIATELY
LIKE A SOUND THAT INSTANTLY GETS MUFFLED ...WHAT IS THIS ENEMY DOING?!
IT'S TOO SHALLOW, GYRO...
IT'S TOO LATE...I CAN'T MAKE IT.
MY 'NAIL BULLETS' DON'T HAVE ENOUGH POWER TO DIG A LARGE HOLE IN THIS SHORT AMOUNT OF TIME...
RUN.
SOMETHING ELSE IS COMING BEHIND DOT KHAN... HURRY AND GET OUT OF HERE.
THERE'S 'SOMEONE' THERE...I...I FEEL LIKE I KNOW WHO HE IS...!
AND I CAN SENSE OTHER THINGS COMING THIS WAY...DIO? IS THIS DIO'S ABILITY?!
REACH, JOHNNY!
I'LL PULL YOU OUT!
GRAB ONTO MY HAND!
RUN, GYRO...IT'S TOO LATE FOR ME.
GET OUT OF HERE, NOW!

SFX ON DINOSAURS: CLOP
ARE THOSE DIO'S 'DINOSAURS'?
NO...THAT ISN'T IT! DIO DOESN'T HAVE AN ABILITY LIKE THIS...!
THERE'S 'ANOTHER ENEMY' HERE!
BUT I CAN SENSE DIO, TOO...THEY MUST BE A 'TEAM'! DIO FORMED A TEAM WITH SOMEONE...?
WE'RE GONNA GET OUT OF HERE, JOHNNY!
HURRY UP AND GET ON YOUR DAMN HORSE!

IT'S NOT LIKE YOU, JOHNNY.
TO JUST GIVE UP LIKE THAT.
EVEN IF THEY *ARE* BLOWN INTO PIECES, MY STEEL BALLS WILL KEEP ON ROTATING. I DUG THE HOLE FOR YOU!
EVEN IF THEY'RE IN PIECES, THEY CAN STILL EASILY DIG A HOLE FOR ONE PERSON.
BUT NOW I DON'T HAVE ANY MORE SHOTS.
I HAVE TO RELY ON YOU. WE HAVE TO FIND OUT WHO THIS SECOND GUY IS, AND SOON...

NO MATTER WHAT IT TAKES...I NEED TO GET TO 'LAKE MICHIGAN'...!
BUT, MY 'NAIL BULLETS' ...
JUST WITH THESE...
...WILL I BE ABLE TO MAKE IT? I DON'T KNOW IF I CAN BEAT ANYONE WITH JUST MY 'NAIL BULLETS'...
I...I WANT TO GO TO LAKE MICHIGAN ...!

PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
VOLUME 10, CHAPTER 2
TRANSLATION: FRESHY — EDITING: SHIZUKA JOESTAR & JOSEPHSK

#42
PART

GET ON MY HORSE!
HOLD ON, JOHNNY!
LET'S GET OUT OF HERE!
THEY'RE GOING TO SURROUND US AGAIN!
SURROUND...US...
SURROUND...
US...
SUR...

Let me tell you something about myself.
Me... Johnny, born Jonathan Joestar...
Was born and raised in Danville, Kentucky.
The Joestar family used to be aristocrats before they fell into ruin, but my father was wealthy. He was the owner of several farms.
And was the seven-time winner of the Triple Crown. A top-notch horse trainer.
Because of my father's work,
There was a time in my childhood where I spent several years in England.

JONATHAN, WHAT ARE YOU DOING UNDER THE TABLE?
RAISE YOUR LEFT HAND.
LISTEN, JONATHAN.
NOT LIMITED TO DINING, 'MANNERS' ARE AN INDICATION OF 'REVERENCE' TOWARDS THE PEOPLE AROUND YOU.
ENGLISHMEN ESPECIALLY VALUE 'TABLE MANNERS'. DO YOU WANT EVERYONE TO THINK THAT WE ARE A GROUP OF UNEDUCATED, UNCULTURED AMERICAN COUNTRYMEN?!

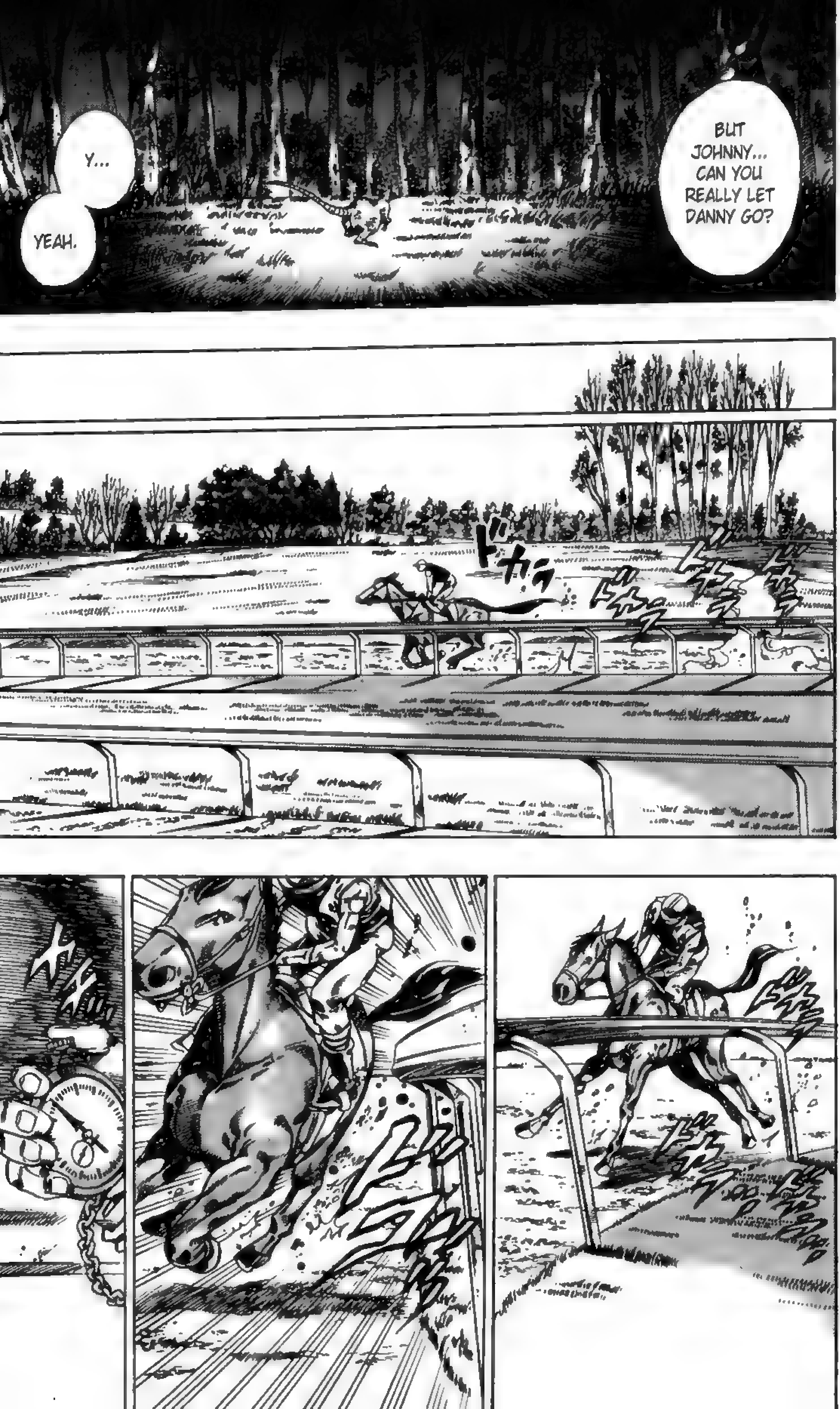
I DIDN'T TELL YOU TO APOLOGIZE, JONATHAN...
I... I WAS JUST...
HE WAS SO CUTE, AND I COULDN'T...
I... I'M SORRY
FATHER...
WHAT ARE YOU HIDING IN YOUR POCKET?
SHOW ME!
AH...
I TOLD YOU TO 'SHOW ME'.
SQUEAK

JONATHAN, GO TO YOUR ROOM IMMEDIATELY.
DINNER IS OVER
BUT FIRST... YOU MUST GO DROWN THAT THING IN THE LAKE. UNDERSTOOD...?!
AH...!
......
BUT,
...BUT...
Y,
YOU SAID I COULD KEEP HIM...
YOU PROMISED...
......

YOU MUST DISPOSE OF IT BY YOURSELF. DO YOU UNDERSTAND, JONATHAN...?
DON'T CHANGE THE SUBJECT!
GO.
YOU ARE THE ONE WHO BROKE OUR PROMISE. I SAID THAT YOU COULD KEEP IT, GRANTED THAT YOU KEEP IT IN A CAGE! ARE YOU CALLING ME A LIAR?!
SNIFF
SOB SOB
SNIFF
AH...
SNIFF
OH...

I had a brother, 5 years my elder, named Nicholas.
ARE YOU GOING TO DROWN IT?
WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO,
JOHNNY?
SOB
SOB
BUT...
...I CAN'T! I CAN'T DROWN DANNY... I CAN'T DO IT...
IT'S...
IT'S ALL MY FAULT!
BUT...
WE CAN'T KEEP THAT MOUSE IN OUR PLACE ANYMORE, JOHNNY.
OH...
SOB
LISTEN, I HAVE AN IDEA.
HOW ABOUT WE LET DANNY GO IN THE WOODS?
YOU CAN DO THAT, RIGHT?
I'M SURE DANNY WILL BE FINE ON HIS OWN, IN THE WOODS.
I CAN'T.
DAD WILL DEFINITELY TELL ME TO GIVE HIM PROOF THAT I DROWNED DANNY...
HE'LL DEFINITELY ASK TO SEE HIS 'CORPSE'!

THAT'S EASY ENOUGH!
TOMORROW, I'LL ASK MY TEACHER TO LET ME BORROW ONE OF A 'WHITE MOUSE'.
YOU KNOW HOW THEY HAVE THOSE STUFFED MICE IN OUR SCHOOL'S SCIENCE ROOMS?
THEY HAVE BIRDS, AND EVEN FOXES, TOO...
IF YOU SHOW THAT TO DAD, HE'LL BELIEVE THAT IT'S DANNY.
HA!
HE'D FLIP OUT IF HE CUT IT OPEN AND ALL THE STUFFING CAME OUT!
NICHOLAS...!
THANKS! YOU'RE SO SMART, BIG BRO!
THE TEACHER WILL DEFINITELY GIVE YOU THE MOUSE, TOO... BECAUSE YOU'RE SUCH A GOOD STUDENT!
I CAN'T IMAGINE THAT HE'D OPEN IT UP TO CHECK IF YOU REALLY DROWNED IT OR NOT.
HEH!
ACTUALLY... HE'D DO SOMETHING LIKE THAT, WOULDN'T HE?


BUT JOHNNY... CAN YOU REALLY LET DANNY GO?
Y...
YEAH.

HE'S AMAZING!
WOW, NICHOLAS...!
IF I TELL HIM TO RUN 200 METERS IN 17 SECONDS,
HE'LL DO IT, IN EXACTLY 17 SECONDS...!
I TOLD HIM TO DO THE NEXT 200 METERS IN 23 SECONDS, AND THEN 19 SECONDS, BUT HE ALWAYS GETS IT EXACTLY! HE'S NEVER EVEN 0.0000001 OF A SECOND LATE!
HOW DOES HE DO THAT?!
THAT'S SO COOL... DO YOU THINK I COULD DO THAT, TOO?
HMM... WELL, IT ALL DEPENDS ON YOUR DETERMINATION AND HARD WORK.
BUT THAT NICHOLAS IS A SPECIAL CASE... HE'S ALWAYS HAD THAT EXPERT SENSE OF 'TIME'. HE WAS BORN WITH IT.
YOUR FATHER DOESN'T HAVE THAT ABILITY, SO THAT'S WHY HE CHOSE TO BECOME A TRAINER INSTEAD...

HM? AH, BIG HORSE, HUH?
WHO'S THAT?
ITS NAME IS 'BLACK ROSE'...
IT'S A BIT SENSITIVE, BUT YOUR BROTHER IS GOING TO RIDE IT IN HIS NEXT TOURNAMENT... HE'LL DEFINITELY WIN. FOR SURE.
NO, I MEAN THAT KID WHO'S LEADING THE HORSE WITH DAD.
OH...
HE WAS... DIEGO... B-SOMETHING.
SOME KID NAMED DIO.
HE'S GOT SOME PROMISE, SO WE'RE LETTING HIM WORK HERE AS A HOT-WALKER.

NICHOLAS IS REALLY AMAZING...
HE CAN CONTROL SUCH A HUGE HORSE PERFECTLY...
HIS CONTROL'S NO DIFFERENT THAN WHEN HE WAS RIDING THAT OTHER HORSE.
YOU'RE GOOD AT EVERYTHING, NICHOLAS.
MAYBE I'M NOT YOUR REAL BROTHER? WE DON'T LOOK ALIKE...
LISTEN, JOHNNY... YOU'RE STILL YOUNG.
NO MATTER WHAT DAD SAYS, WHEN YOU GET A LITTLE OLDER, I'LL TEACH YOU HOW TO RIDE. I PROMISE.
THEN WE CAN RIDE AROUND THE WORLD TOGETHER, AND HELP EACH OTHER WHEN THINGS GET TOUGH.

CRACK
!!
?

......
...HUH?
NICHOLAS!
NICHOLAAAAS!!
A DOCTOR!
SOMEONE CALL THE DOCTOR!!
......
WHAT HAPPENED?!
WHAT?! WHAT THE HELL JUST HAPPENED?!
AHHHH!
I SAW A MOUSE SCUTTLING NEAR THE HORSE'S LEGS!
IT RAN OFF INTO THE WOODS!
BLACK ROSE WAS STARTLED BY A 'WHITE MOUSE'!

......
ドドド
PLEASE, KEEP ON BREATHING! PLEASE!
BREATHE...! OH, GOD...
SOMEONE HURRY UP AND GET THE DOCTOR!!
NICHOLAS!
ドドド
......
ドドドドド
NICHOLAAAAAS!!

FIRST PLACE IN
KENTUCKY DER
JOHNNY JOESTA
(GENIUS JOCKEY, DEBU
JOHNNY JOESTAR,
(GENIUS JOCKEY, DEBUTS).
orld's fastest, Jo
OH.

AGHHH!
TCH
......

OH, FATHER!
JONATHAN.
WHAT ARE YOU DOING IN HERE?
YOU WERE HOME...?
WELL, UH...
MY RIDING BOOTS...THE BOTTOM WAS FALLING OFF. I THINK IT WAS BAD QUALITY...
SO I THOUGHT I COULD BORROW ONE OF THESE...
I SEE.
BUT YOU MUST RETURN THOSE BOOTS TO THE CLOSET.
...THAT'S NICHOLAS' CLOSET, AND THOSE ARE NICHOLAS' RIDING BOOTS.

PERHAPS YOU DIDN'T NOTICE THE HOLE IN THE BOTTOM OF YOUR BOOTS BECAUSE YOU WEREN'T TAKING CARE OF THEM PROPERLY?
THAT IS YOUR RESPONSIBILITY.
YES... I KNOW THAT.
BUT I DON'T HAVE A PAIR OF SPARE BOOTS... ONLY THIS ONE...
AND... MY FEET ARE THE SAME SIZE AS WHAT NICHOLAS USED TO BE, NOW...
WIN?
DIO WON'T BE RUNNING IN TODAY'S RACE. EVEN IF YOU WIN, CAN THAT REALLY BE CONSIDERED A VICTORY...? DON'T GET SO COCKY.
THAT'S STRANGE, WINNING MEANS YOU'LL BE NUMBER ONE.
YOU'VE NEVER EVEN BEATEN DIO, HAVE YOU.
YES...
I SEE YOUR POINT.
BUT I HAVE AN IMPORTANT TOURNAMENT TODAY...
I PROMISE YOU THAT I'LL WIN.
...... ......
......
NICHOLAS...
HE WAS FAR SUPERIOR TO SOMEONE LIKE THAT DIO...

NO!
YOU HAVE NO RIGHT TO USE NICHOLAS' THINGS.
PLEASE, I DON'T HAVE TIME TO FIND ANOTHER PAIR.
PLEASE LET ME BORROW THESE BOOTS.
......
NICHOLAS THAT...
YOU'RE ALWAYS TALKING ABOUT NICHOLAS THIS,
MY BROTHER DIED 7 YEARS AGO!
WHAT...
WHAT IS IT, DAD?!
I'M THE ONE THAT'S GOING TO BE IN THE RACE TODAY!
PLEASE!
PLEASE, COME WATCH ME RACE TODAY... I'LL WIN, FOR YOU!
PUT THEM BACK.
........

JUST PUT NICHOLAS' BOOTS BACK IN THE CLOSET, JONATHAN!
N...
NO!
WHAT?!
THESE ARE JUST OLD BOOTS!
I'M GOING TO ENTER TODAY'S RACE WEARING THESE BOOTS!
ARE YOU GOING TO INSULT YOUR OWN BROTHER?!
S... STOP! LET GO!
LET GO!
THEY'RE JUST OBJECTS!
GIVE THEM TO ME!
DAMN IT, JUST LET GO!

GET THE FUCK OFF!

F... FATHER...
AGHHHHH!
UGH!
GUH!
OH...
GOD...
YOU TOOK THE WRONG SON...

...WHAT...?
DAD, YOU...
WHAT DID... YOU JUST SAY...?
......
GET OUT...
YOU'RE NOT WELCOME HERE ANYMORE...
GET OUT...!
FINE... IF YOU'RE GOING TO BE THAT WAY,
...I'M NOT GOING TO TRUST ANYONE.
I'LL DO FINE ON MY OWN.

'A mouse scuttled near Black Rose's legs'.

A 'white mouse'..
Where did that mouse come from?
Was it really there?
Yes. and it probably really did pass in front of Nicholas' horse.
The white mouse... the one that I let go, instead of drowning, like I was told.
There's no mistake
Danny had come back.
God had made a mistake...
It wasn't supposed to be my brother... It should have been me, who was taken. I should have been the one to die...
That's why
'I had to pay the price'
Someday, 'fate' would catch up to me.

'Not like me'?
Gyro...
That's what you said just now.
No... this is me. This is the 'path' that I'm walking.
Right now, I feel the same way as when I thought about that 'mouse'.
There's 'something' that I can't see, surrounding me quietly, threatening to catch up to me.
I can't beat it with something like my 'nail bullets'.
My Stand ability doesn't stand a chance against this thing!
Bit by bit.
'Fate' would come and surround me, discreetly...
And it would bind me, so I couldn't escape.
I would have an inch of hope, my moment of happiness...
And everyone will abandon me in the end. No one would even be concerned for me...
Everyone would leave.
They won't even glance back.

IT...
......!!
THREW ITS 'PIECES'...!

WHOAAA!
AGH!
AGHHH!

HE'S 'THERE'! IN THE CORN FIELD...
HE'S RUNNING THROUGH THE FIELD...!
THE USER...!
DIO IS JUST 'LENDING' HIS DINOSAURS TO THAT GUY, AS A TOOL... THIS 'ABILITY' IS DEFINITELY NOT DIO'S...
ITS RANGE MUST BE SEVERAL METERS...

LIKE HOW A 'SOUND' TRAVELS,
IT WORKS LIKE A 'SOUND'!
THIS STAND DOESN'T DESTROY WHATEVER THESE DINOSAURS 'TOUCH'...
IT DOESN'T DESTROY OUR HORSE ON IMPACT... IT TRAVELS THROUGH IT UNTIL IT REACHES OUR BODIES!
IT SENDS OUT A SIGNAL... AND IT DESTROYS WHATEVER IS AT THE END OF THAT SIGNAL!
I CAN'T! THERE'S NO TIME FOR THAT!
WASN'T 'HOT PANTS' AROUND HERE SOMEWHERE!?
DAMN IT! WE'RE IN DEEP SHIT!
WELL, VALKYRIE'S GONNA GO DOWN TOO IF THIS KEEPS UP!
GO FIND 'HOT PANTS'! I NEED HIM TO FIX THIS LEG WITH HIS SPRAY! IT'S BLEEDING LIKE CRAZY!

THERE ARE EVEN MORE OF THESE MONSTERS NOW!
AND, WHAT THE HELL?!
SOME OF THEM ARE FLYING TOWARDS US!
AND WE'RE GONNA HIT THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER SOON!
S... SHIT!
THIS IS BAD...!
THE RIVER'S GOING TO BE A DEAD END FOR US...!

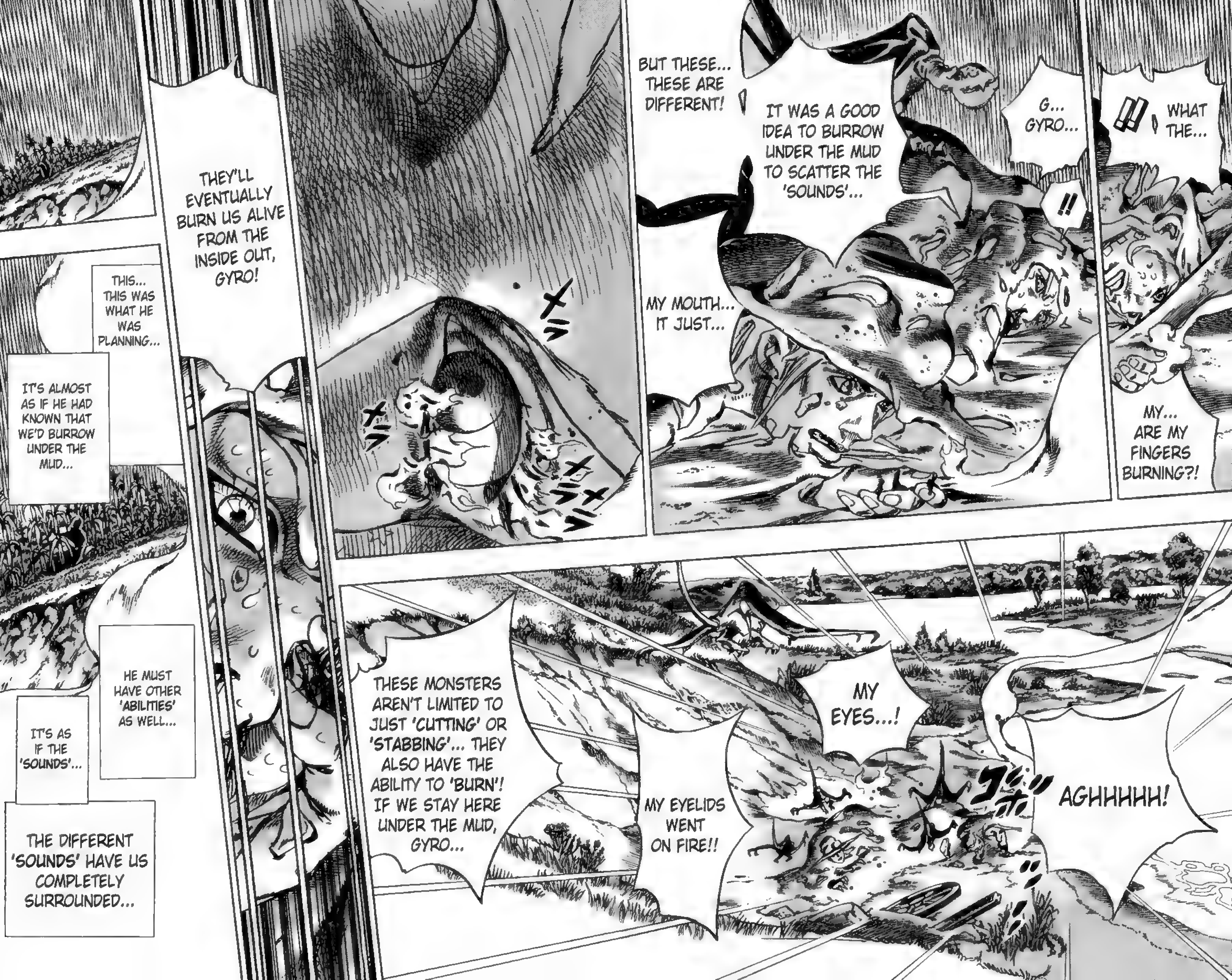
THEY'RE GOING TO CATCH UP...
IT'S... NO USE...
GYRO DOESN'T HAVE A 'STEEL BALL' WITH HIM RIGHT NOW...
AND MY 'NAIL BULLETS' ARE POWERLESS AGAINST THEM...
THEY'RE HERE...
SURROUNDED...
I'VE BEEN SURROUNDED...
AND THEY'VE CAUGHT UP TO ME!

WHAT?
JOHNNY! WE'RE GOING TO DITCH OUR HORSES! OUR HORSES CAN CROSS THE RIVER ON THEIR OWN...
!?
TO SAVE VALKYRIE, I'M GOING TO LET GO!
JUMP OFF, JOHNNY!
JUMP! JUMP!!

JUMP!!
DIG!
DIG!
JOHNNY!
GET
UNDER
THE MUD!

SFX ON DINOS: BURN

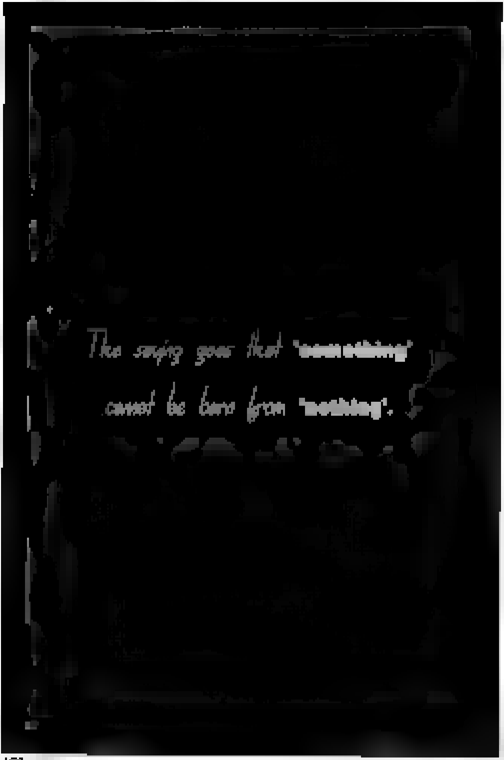
AGHHHHH!
WHAT?!
UGH!
FIRE?!

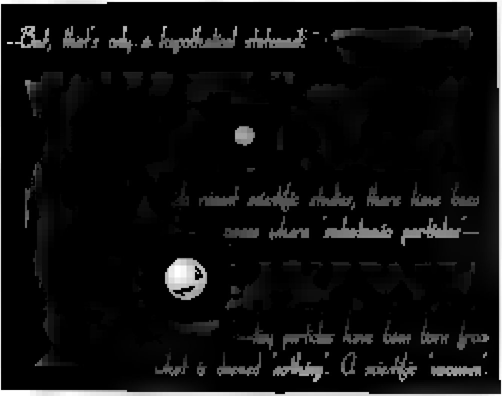

!! WHAT THE...
G... GYRO...
!!
MY... ARE MY FINGERS BURNING?!
IT WAS A GOOD IDEA TO BURROW UNDER THE MUD TO SCATTER THE 'SOUNDS'...
BUT THESE... THESE ARE DIFFERENT!
MY MOUTH... IT JUST...
THEY'LL EVENTUALLY BURN US ALIVE FROM THE INSIDE OUT, GYRO!
AGHHHHH!
MY EYES...!
MY EYELIDS WENT ON FIRE!!
THESE MONSTERS AREN'T LIMITED TO JUST 'CUTTING' OR 'STABBING'... THEY ALSO HAVE THE ABILITY TO 'BURN'! IF WE STAY HERE UNDER THE MUD, GYRO...
THIS... THIS WAS WHAT HE WAS PLANNING...
IT'S ALMOST AS IF HE HAD KNOWN THAT WE'D BURROW UNDER THE MUD...
HE MUST HAVE OTHER 'ABILITIES' AS WELL...
IT'S AS IF THE 'SOUNDS'...
THE DIFFERENT 'SOUNDS' HAVE US COMPLETELY SURROUNDED...

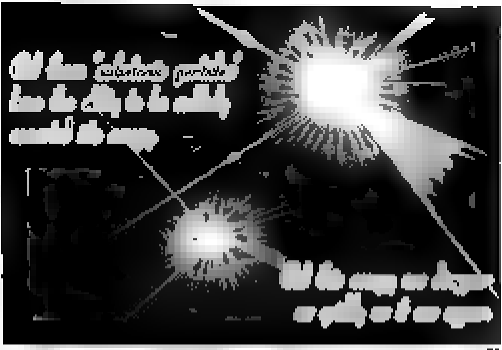
HE... HE'D ALREADY 'TRAPPED' US!
HEY, JOHNNY...
YOU KNOW... YOU'RE REALLY GETTING ON MY NERVES...
DON'T JUST SPEW WHATEVER YOU'RE THINKING OUT OF YOUR GODDAMN MOUTH!
I DON'T HAVE MY 'STEEL BALLS' THIS, YOU CAN'T WIN WITH YOUR 'NAIL BULLETS' THAT...
ARE YOU UNDERESTIMATING MY 'ROTATIONS'?
ARE YOU LOOKING DOWN ON THE 250 YEARS OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S HISTORY?!
......
......
WHAT I'VE TAUGHT YOU IS STILL JUST THE 'BASICS'!

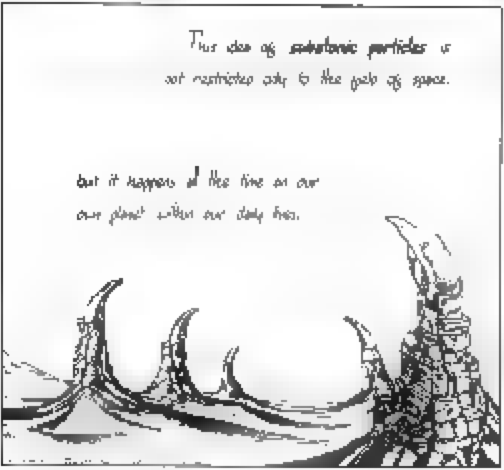
10 Illinois Skyline, Michigan Lakeline (end)

project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
VOLUME 10, CHAPTER 3
TRANSLATION: FRESHY — EDITING: FREQUENCY


The saying goes that "something"
cannot be born from "nothing".


--But, that's only a hypothetical statement--
In recent scientific studies, there have been cases where 'subatomic particles'—
—tiny particles have been born from what is deemed 'nothing'. A scientific 'vacuum'.

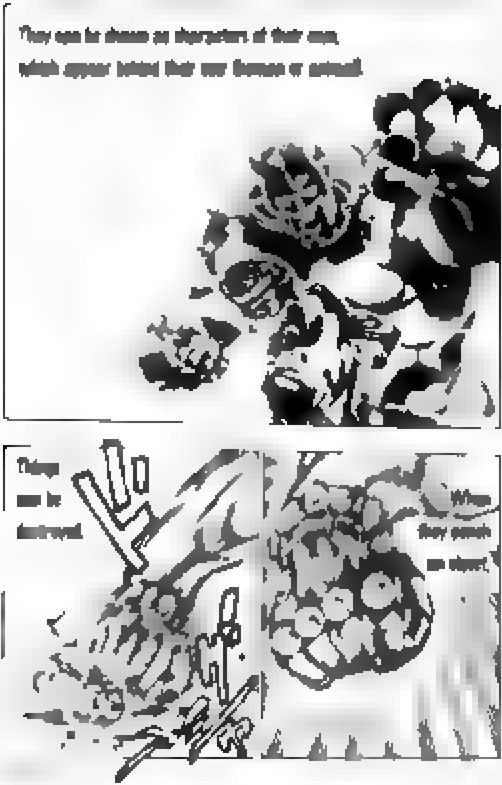


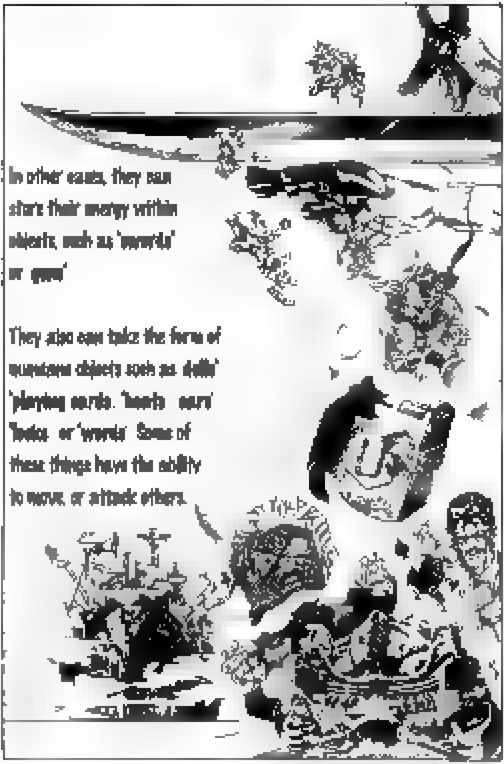

This idea of subatomic particles is
not restricted only to the gulfs of space.
but it happens all the time on our
own planet within our daily lives.

For example, they can be shown as such:

For our purposes, this 'invisible spiritual energy' is expressed through visible depictions.

With that as the introductory concept, in this story, 'Jojo's Bizarre Adventure', the spiritual energy that some humans have the ability to draw on is called 'Stands.'





In other cases, they can store their energy within objects, such as 'swords' or 'guns'.

They also can take the form of mundane objects such as 'dolls', 'playing cards', 'boats', 'cars', 'books', or 'words'. Some of these things have the ability to move or attack others.

There are those that are small, and move in large numbers.
Some can become parts of one's body.
And those that can see these 'Stands' with their heart's eye are called 'Stand users.'

Stands adhere to some rules like the following

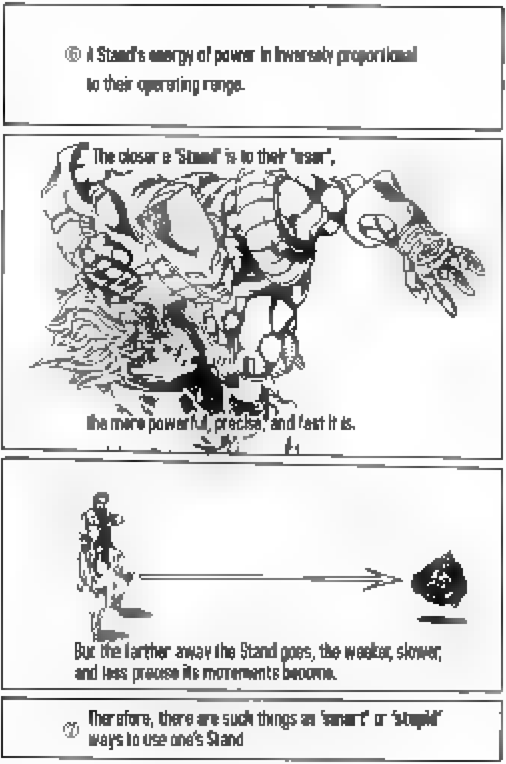
① Stands move according to their user's wishes or commands.

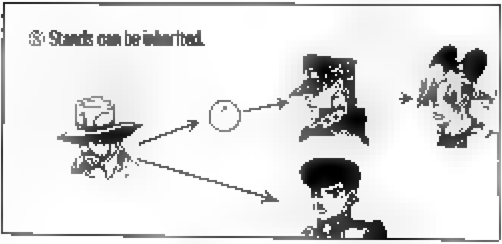
② Stands can only be affected by other Stands.

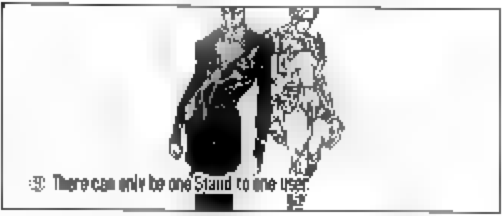
③ When Stands are injured, their users are also injured in the same spot.

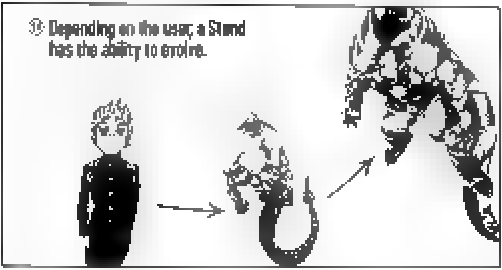
④ When a Stand user dies, their Stand disappears with them.

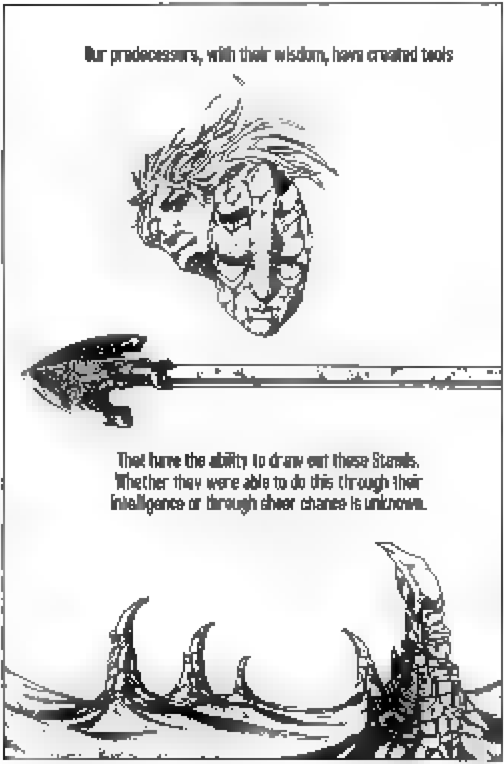
⑤ Consequently, when a Stand is defeated, their users die.

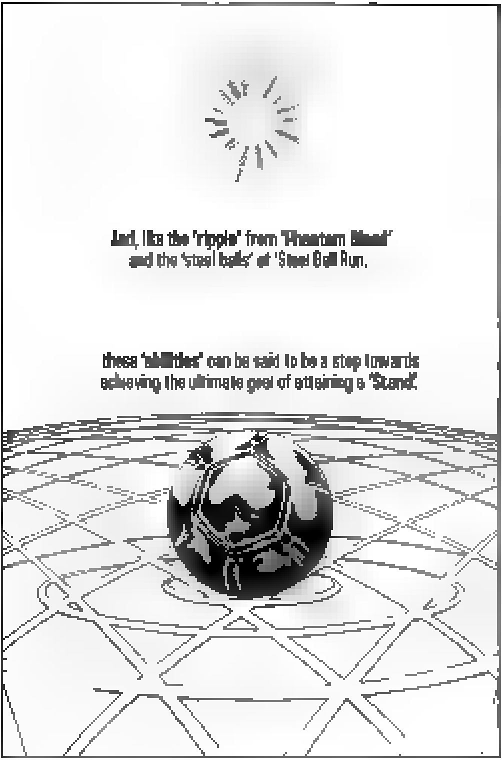

⑯ A Stand's energy of power is inversely proportional to their operating range.
The closer a "Stand" is to their "user",
the more powerful, precise, and fast it is.
But the farther away the Stand goes, the weaker, slower, and less precise its movements become.
⑰ Therefore, there are such things as "smart" or "stupid" ways to use one's Stand


⑧ Stands can be inherited.


⑨ There can only be one Stand to one user.


⑩ Depending on the user, a Stand
has the ability to evolve.


Our predecessors, with their wisdom, have created tools
That have the ability to draw out these Stands. Whether they were able to do this through their intelligence or through sheer chance is unknown.


And, like the 'ripple' from 'Phantom Blood'
and the 'steel balls' of 'Steel Ball Run,'
these 'abilities' can be said to be a step towards
achieving the ultimate goal of attaining a 'Stand'.

荒木飛呂彦

●ウルトラジャンプ・H18年11月号～H19年1月号掲載分収録

Recently, I've been thinking a lot about 'numbers'. For example, 'money'. Though everyone thinks that it's better to have a lot than a little, it seems like once someone gets too much of it, they become burdened with it. This also applies to that wonderful, beneficial invention of cars- too many of them, and they become an inconvenience. Bad for the atmosphere, too.

And us humans? I believe that each individual life is important, of course, but if one day there existed a country with more than ten billion people... That's a scary thought.

LOVE

J・C

荒木飛呂彦
集英社

9784088743363
1929979003906
ISBN978-4-08-874336-3
C9979 ¥390E
定価 本体390円＋税
雑誌 42989―36


姿を見せない謎のスタンド使いの攻撃に、鉄球も爪弾も通じず追い込まれるジャイロ達。逃げ場をなくし、絶望するジョニィに、ジャイロは更なる「回転」の技術を伝授する！ そして、遂に明らかになる敵の正体とは…!?

ジャンプ・コミックス


★各巻とも好評発売中!!

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| ONE PIECE | 1～45 | 尾田栄一郎 |
| テニスの王子様 | 1～37 | 許斐 剛 |
| NARUTO ナルト | 1～36 | 岸本斉史 |
| HUNTER×HUNTER | 1～23 | 冨樫義博 |
| こちら葛飾区亀有公園前派出所 | 1～153 | 秋本 治 |
| アイシールド21 | 1～23 | [illegible] |
| BLEACH | 1～26 | 久保帯人 |
| ピューと吹く！ジャガー | 1～12 | うすた京介 |
| 真説ボボボーボ・ボーボボ | 1～3 | 澤井啓夫 |
| DEATH NOTE | 1～12 | [illegible] |
| 銀魂 ぎんたま | 1～17 | 空知英秋 |
| REBORN！ | 1～14 | 天野 明 |
| D.Gray-man | 1～10 | 星野 桂 |
| [illegible] | 1～10 | [illegible] |
| 魔人探偵脳噛ネウロ | 1～10 | 松井優征 |
| 太臓もて王サーガ | 1～6 | 大亜門 |
| メゾン・ド・ペンギン | 1～3 | 大石浩二 |
| エム×ゼロ | 1～2 | 叶 恭弘 |
| To LOVEる―とらぶる― | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| 少年の村雨くん | 1～2 | いとうみきお |
| 斬 | 1～2 | 杉田尚 |
| OVER TIME | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| P2！―let's Play Pingpong！― | 1 | [illegible] |
| DRAGON BALL | 1～42 | 鳥山 明 |
| 遊☆戯☆王 | 1～38 | 高橋和希 |
| SLAM DUNK | 1～31 | 井上雄彦 |
| 武装錬金 | 1～10 | 和月伸宏 |
| 冒険王ビィト | 1～12 | [illegible] |
| 風飛び一斗 | 1～24 | [illegible] |
| CLAYMORE | 1～11 | 八木教広 |
| [illegible]使い黒姫 | 1～12 | [illegible] |
| [illegible]ギャグマンガ日和 | 1～8 | 増田こうすけ |
| 黒いラブレター | 1～6 | [illegible] |
| NORA―ノラ― | 1～8 | [illegible] |
| ロザリオとバンパイア | 1～8 | [illegible] |
| たたかえ！たらんてら | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| 動乱 | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| テカミバチ | 1 | [illegible] |
| 警察犬キンゾー | 1 | 佐々木恵 |
| [illegible]ND OF THE ATHLETE 中村俊輔物語 | | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | | [illegible] |
| BASTARD!! | 1～24 | [illegible] |
| STEEL BALL RUN | 1～11 | 荒木飛呂彦 |
| 忍空～SECOND STAGE干支忍編～ | 1～2 | [illegible] |
| 遊☆戯☆王R | 1～3 | [illegible] |
| 遊☆戯☆王GX | 1 | [illegible] |
| スライムもりもり | 1～2 | かねこ統 |
| デジモンネクスト | 1～2 | [illegible] |

インターネットでも集英社のコミックスが購入できます。
書店受取なら送料無料！
http://www.s-manga.net/

JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
JC
Since 1840
East & West Tribune
JC
ジャンプ・コミックス
STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン
11
荒木飛呂彦
集英社
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
$50,000,000
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together and makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

★この作品はフィクションです。実在の人物・
団体・事件などには、いっさい関係ありません。

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

CREATE THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE!

vol.11

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE
1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで
1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと
協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を
突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！
戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に
取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。
なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に
散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！
その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を
手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を
身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ
残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を明けた！
4th.STAGE、大統領に利用されているスティールを救う為、
ルーシーは大統領より先に『脊椎』を手に入れる事に成功する。
ジャイロ達が、追っ手のスタンド使いからルーシーを助けた
その直後、『脊椎』はジョニィの体に吸い込まれていった！
そして『脊椎』が示す地図から、ミシガン湖周辺に
『両耳』、『右腕』、『両脚』がある事を知る。
5th.STAGE、ジャイロ達に前STAGEで
敗北したディオは、復讐の為、大統領側の
スタンド使いと手を組む事に。
ディオの恐竜に新たな能力を加え
攻撃してくる謎の敵。鉄球も爪弾も通じず、
その正体もわからない！
絶体絶命のジャイロ達に打つ手はあるのか!?
全行程中にニューヨークを含め
９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設
定。そこでレース順位、走行タイ
ム、不正行為を確認する。そして
各チェックポイント間のレース
を『STAGE』と呼び、STAGE
ごとにトップ通過者には賞金と
タイムボーナスが与えられる！
GOAL NEW YORK
START SAN DIEGO
1st. STAGE 15,000m
2nd STAGE 1,200km
3rd STAGE 510km
4th STAGE 1,250km
5th STAGE 780km
6th STAGE 690km
『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い
その数は3,600人を超えた！
そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！
ジャイロ・ツェペリ
ネアポリス王国の法務官。
不思議な鉄球を、自在に操
る特殊能力を持つ。国家転
覆罪で捕まった幼い少年・
マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を
救う手段である「国王の恩
赦」を得る為、レースに参加。
ジョニィ・ジョースター
元天才騎手だが、慢心から
半身不随となる。ジャイロの
鉄球の力に希望を見い出し、
秘密を知る為、レースに参加。
遺体の一部「左腕」、「脊椎」
を持つ。
ファニー・ヴァレンタイン
第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。
ＳＢＲレースを利用して、
遺体を集めようとしている。
ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を
所有している事を知り、テ
ロリストを送り込む。遺体の
一部「心臓」を持つ。
砂男
ネイティブアメリカンの
青年。白人に奪われた部族
の土地を取り戻す為、己の
足のみでレースに参加。
ディエゴ・ブランドー
通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出
身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優
勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為
に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。
ルーシー・スティール
スティールを支える妻。夫を
「よちよち」となだめる彼女は
弱冠14歳!?　遺体の一部「右
眼」を持つ。
スティーブン・スティール
40年のキャリアを持つプロ
モーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.11 CONTENTS

CREATE THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE!

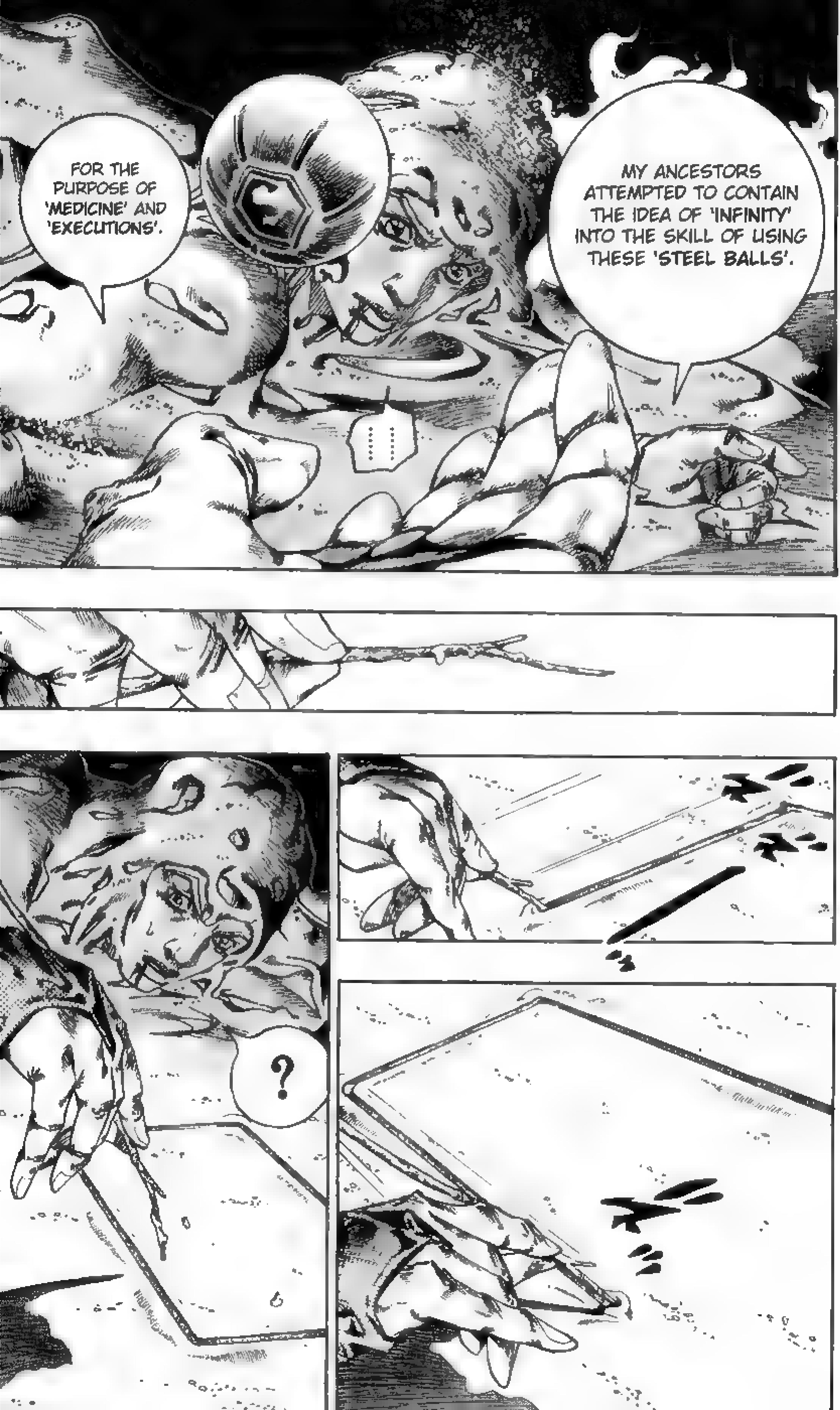

#43
A SILENT WAY PART ④ 7

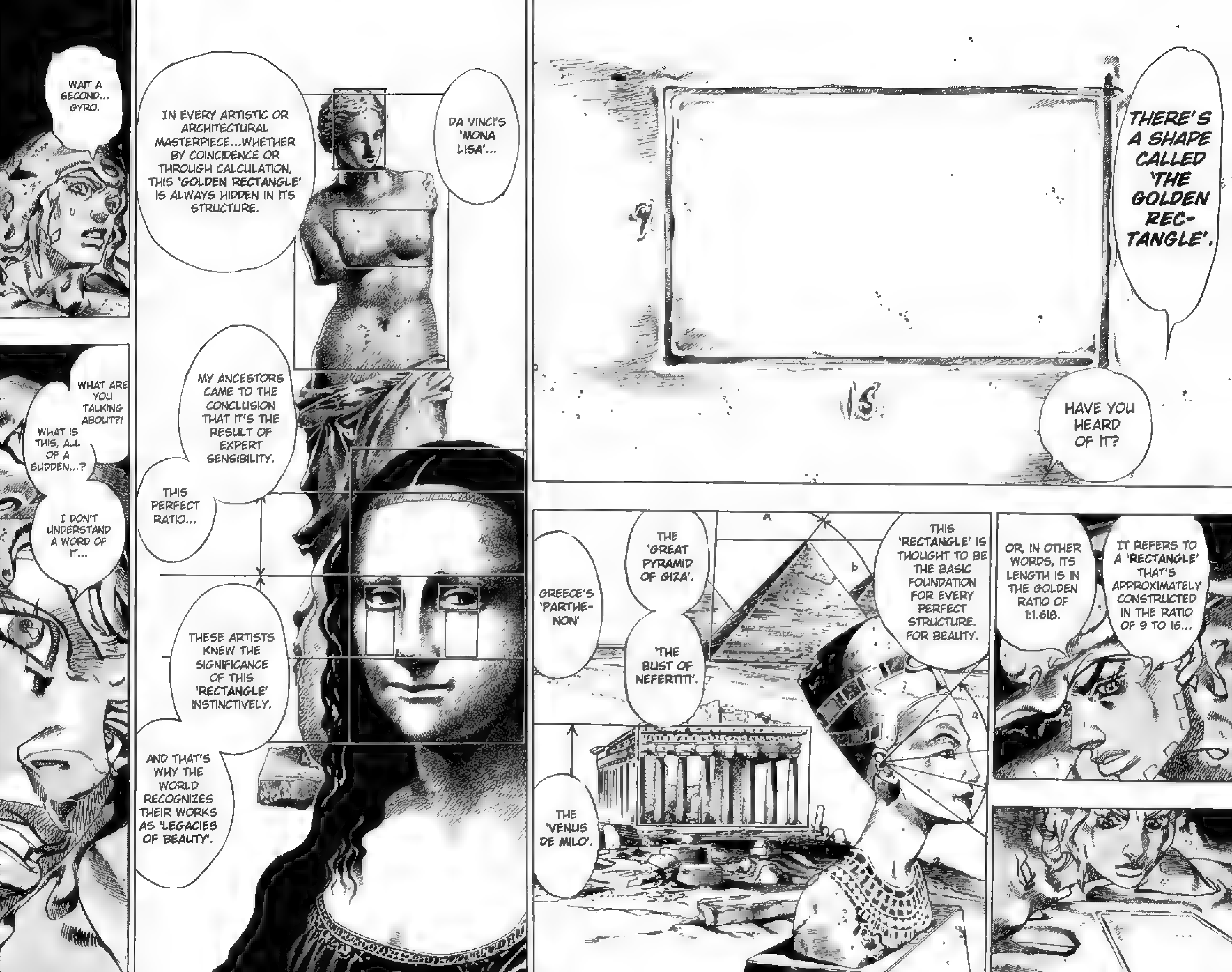
#44
A SILENT WAY PART ⑤ 71

#45
THE PROMISED LAND, SUGAR MOUNTAIN PART ① 133

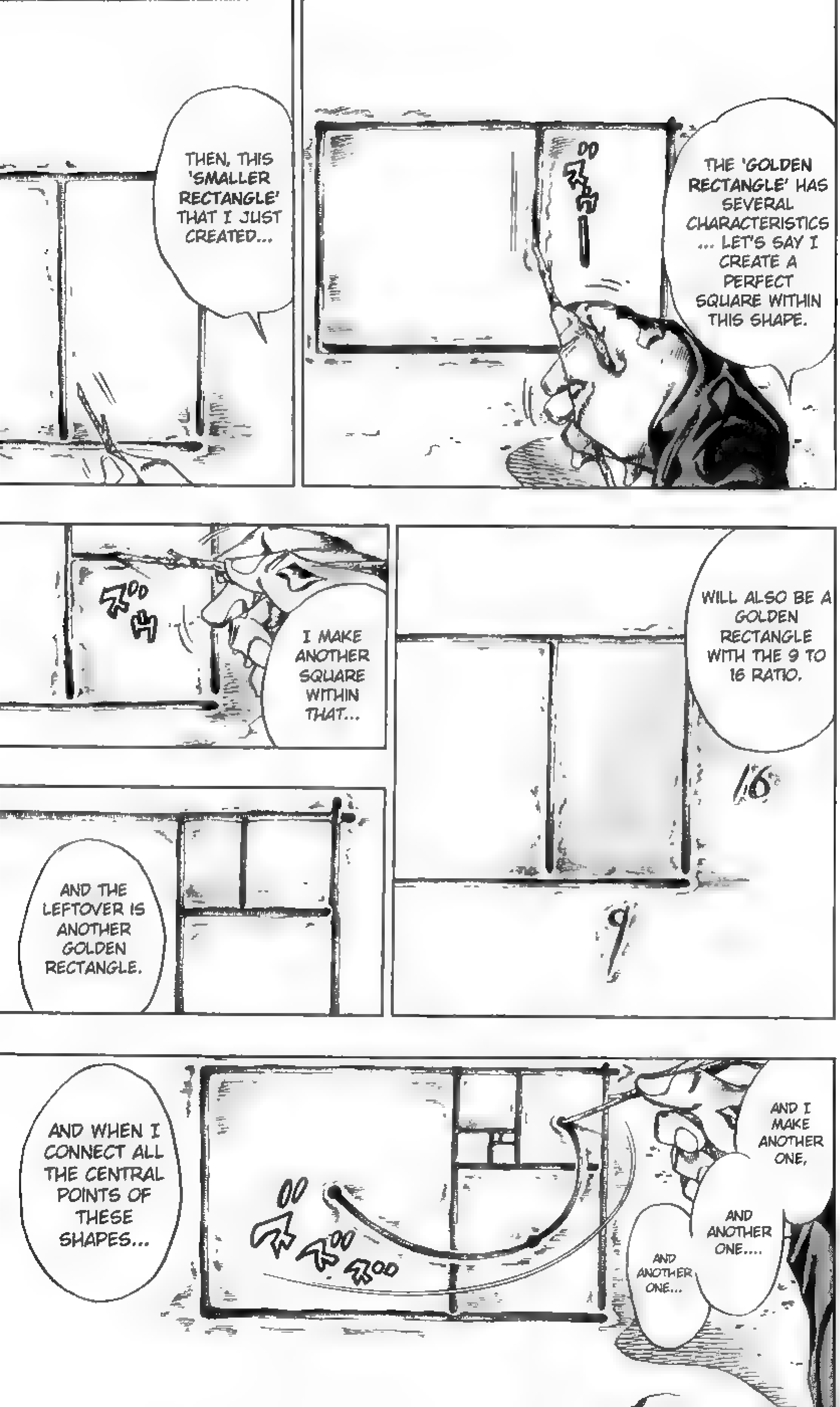
#43
A SILENT WAY
PART④

FIRST OFF, JOHNNY, LET ME TELL YOU ONE THING.
STARTING NOW, YOU CAN ONLY SAY THE WORDS 'THERE'S NO WAY I CAN DO THIS'....
4 TIMES, AND ONLY 4 TIMES.
LONG STORY SHORT, THE SECRET TO THE 'STEEL BALLS' IS THE PURSUIT FOR 'INFINITY'. THAT'S WHAT MY FAMILY, THE ZEPPELIS, ALWAYS STRIVED FOR...
......
?
ALL RIGHT? '4 TIMES'.
THAT'S WHAT MY FATHER TOLD ME, WHEN I WAS A KID.


MY ANCESTORS ATTEMPTED TO CONTAIN THE IDEA OF 'INFINITY' INTO THE SKILL OF USING THESE 'STEEL BALLS'.
FOR THE PURPOSE OF 'MEDICINE' AND 'EXECUTIONS'.
?


THERE'S A SHAPE CALLED 'THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE'.
HAVE YOU HEARD OF IT?
IT REFERS TO A 'RECTANGLE' THAT'S APPROXIMATELY CONSTRUCTED IN THE RATIO OF 9 TO 16...
OR, IN OTHER WORDS, ITS LENGTH IS IN THE GOLDEN RATIO OF 1:1.618.
THIS 'RECTANGLE' IS THOUGHT TO BE THE BASIC FOUNDATION FOR EVERY PERFECT STRUCTURE. FOR BEAUTY.
THE 'GREAT PYRAMID OF GIZA'.
'THE BUST OF NEFERTITI'.
GREECE'S 'PARTHENON'
THE 'VENUS DE MILO'.
DA VINCI'S 'MONA LISA'...
IN EVERY ARTISTIC OR ARCHITECTURAL MASTERPIECE...WHETHER BY COINCIDENCE OR THROUGH CALCULATION, THIS 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE' IS ALWAYS HIDDEN IN ITS STRUCTURE.
MY ANCESTORS CAME TO THE CONCLUSION THAT IT'S THE RESULT OF EXPERT SENSIBILITY.
THIS PERFECT RATIO...
THESE ARTISTS KNEW THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THIS 'RECTANGLE' INSTINCTIVELY.
AND THAT'S WHY THE WORLD RECOGNIZES THEIR WORKS AS 'LEGACIES OF BEAUTY'.
WAIT A SECOND... GYRO.
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?!
WHAT IS THIS, ALL OF A SUDDEN...?
I DON'T UNDERSTAND A WORD OF IT...

MY FATHER TRAINED ME SO THAT I COULD CREATE THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE WITH MY 'HAND'.
......
HUH?!


THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE' HAS SEVERAL CHARACTERISTICS ... LET'S SAY I CREATE A PERFECT SQUARE WITHIN THIS SHAPE.
THEN, THIS 'SMALLER RECTANGLE' THAT I JUST CREATED...
WILL ALSO BE A GOLDEN RECTANGLE WITH THE 9 TO 16 RATIO.
16
9
I MAKE ANOTHER SQUARE WITHIN THAT...
AND THE LEFTOVER IS ANOTHER GOLDEN RECTANGLE.
AND I MAKE ANOTHER ONE,
AND ANOTHER ONE....
AND ANOTHER ONE...
AND WHEN I CONNECT ALL THE CENTRAL POINTS OF THESE SHAPES...

THERE'S NO WAY THAT I CAN DO THIS!
'SPIN YOUR BULLETS IN THE GOLDEN RATIO'!
YOU'RE NOT SPINNING YOUR 'NAIL BULLETS' IN THIS RATIO...
THAT'S WHY YOU THINK YOU'VE REACHED YOUR LIMIT...
THEN, YOU SHOULD BE ABLE TO HARNESS THE 'POWER OF INFINITY'... THE ZEPPELIS HAVE ALWAYS STRIVED FOR THAT POWER...
THIS IS THE 'GOLDEN SPIN'.
IT CREATES A 'SPIRAL' THAT CONTINUES FOREVER.
IT... IT CAN'T BE ....!

............
'I CAN'T DO IT'.
DID YOU JUST SAY IT?
...DID YOU?
E...
THE POWER OF THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE REALLY EXISTED...
EVEN IF...
THERE'S... THERE'S NO WAY THAT I...
......
NGH!

AGHH HHHH!
IN MY NECK...!
GUH!
UGH!
I'LL GIVE YOU THIS... MY 'BELT BUCKLE'.
THIS IS ALSO DESIGNED TO BE IN THE RATIO OF THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'.
JOHNNY...I'M GONNA LET YOU SAY THAT YOU CAN'T DO IT, 3 MORE TIMES... ON THE THIRD TIME,

IF YOU CAN SPIN YOUR NAILS IN THE PRECISE SHAPE OF THIS BELT BUCKLE...
YOUR 'NAIL BULLETS' WILL TAKE ON THE INFINITE SPIRAL!
YOU HAD THAT ALL ALONG...!?
IS THAT... IS THAT A 'SCALE' TO MEASURE THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE?!
WHY DIDN'T YOU JUST SHOW ME THAT 'BUCKLE' IN THE FIRST PLACE!?
I'LL TRY IT, GYRO! GIVE THAT TO ME!
NO.
HUH?
I TOLD YOU I'D GIVE IT TO YOU WHEN YOU SAY 'I CAN'T DO IT', THREE MORE TIMES.

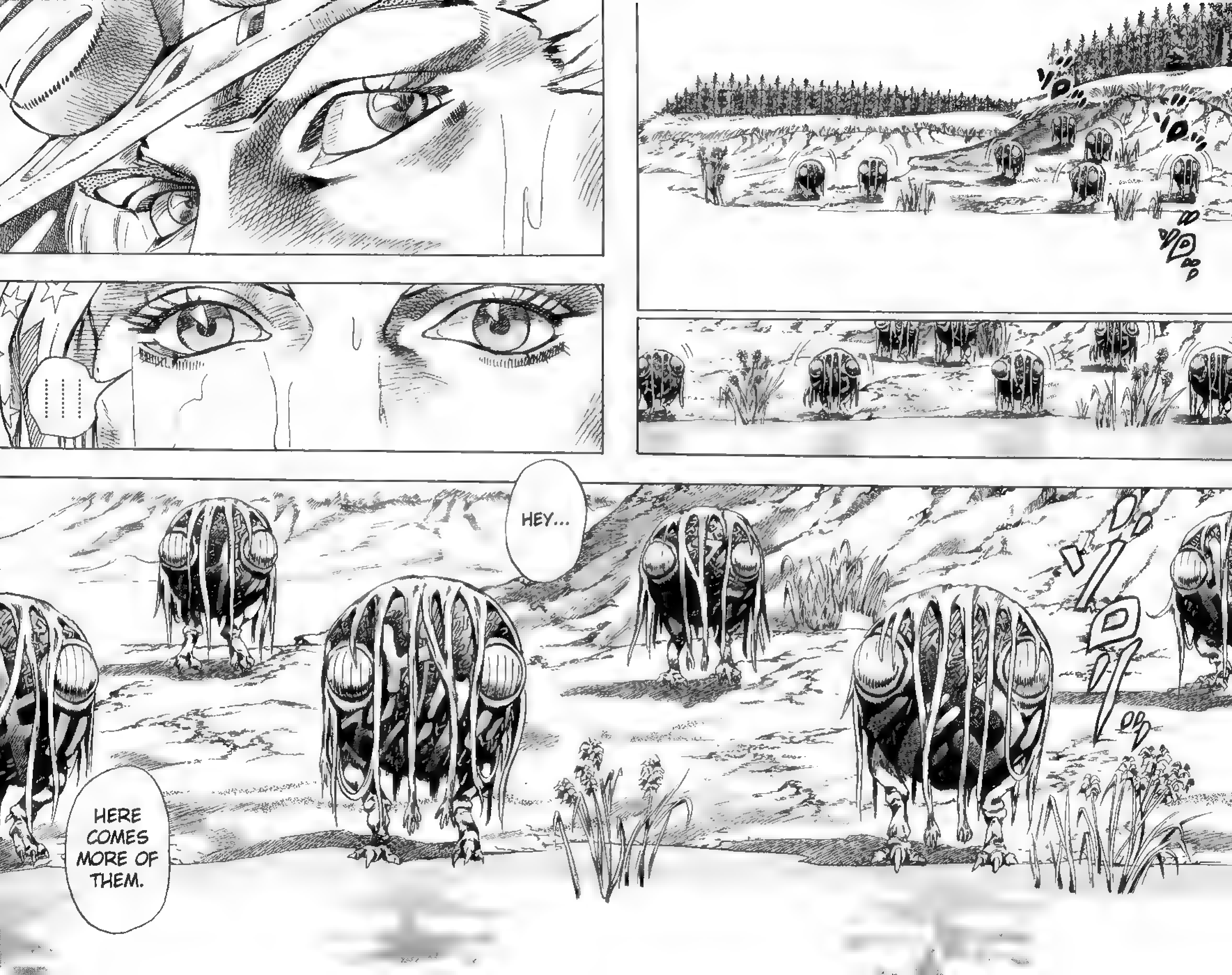
THIS ROCK IS TOO ROUGH...I CAN'T GET A COMPLETE SPIN...!
AND, JOHNNY ...
WE CAN'T STAY IN THE MUD ANY LONGER... WE'RE GOING TO NEED TO ESCAPE INTO THE RIVER!

SHOOT! SHOOT!
JOHNNY, SHOOT ALL OF THEM! WE'RE GOING TO TAKE THAT TIME TO RUN INTO THE RIVER!
WHAT...?!

THEY'RE GOING TO FALL ON US!
MY NAIL BULLETS ...
THEY HAVE THE SAME 'POWER' AS BEFORE... THEY HAVEN'T CHANGED?

THERE'S NO WAY THAT I CAN DO THIS, GYRO!
THERE'S NO WAY I CAN DO THIS, JUST LIKE THAT! WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS?!
THERE'S ABSOLUTELY NO WAY! THERE, GYRO! I SAID IT THREE TIMES! NOW, SHOW ME THAT SCALE!
YOU'VE BEEN TRAINING IN THE ART OF STEEL BALLS SINCE YOU WERE A CHILD, RIGHT!?
THERE'S NO WAY THAT YOU CAN EXPECT ME TO DO SOMETHING LIKE THAT RIGHT NOW, SOMETHING SO IMPOSSIBLE, ON A WHIM!
THERE! I SAID IT AGAIN! IF THERE REALLY IS SUCH A THING AS AN INFINITE SPIN, THEN YOU HAVE TO SHOW ME THAT BUCKLE, OR ELSE I WON'T EVEN HAVE A STARTING POINT!

IS THIS SOME SORT OF 'TEST'?
......
WHAT...?!
THIS IS NO TIME TO BE PLAYING GAMES!
THIS ENEMY IS 'UP TO SOMETHING'... HE PROBABLY ALREADY KNEW THAT WE WERE GOING TO ESCAPE INTO THE RIVER...
TWO MORE TIMES.
I'LL GIVE IT TO YOU ONCE YOU SAY IT TWO MORE TIMES.
I'M ONLY COUNTING THOSE AS ONE, BY THE WAY.
HE'S TRYING TO 'SURROUND' US IN HIS ELABORATE, PERFECT TRAP!
SLOWLY, LITTLE BY LITTLE....
!?
WHAT...!?
CALM DOWN... YOU HAVE TWO MORE.
JOHNNY.
SAY THAT YOU CAN'T DO IT.



HEY...
HERE COMES MORE OF THEM.

WHAT THE HELL ARE THESE THINGS...?!
WHAT IS IT TRYING TO DO?!
THEY'RE STARTING TO LINE THEMSELVES UP! WHAT ARE THEY DOING?!
JOHNNY, WHATEVER THOSE THINGS ARE UP TO...
WE HAVE THIS TIME!
WE HAVE THIS TIME TO LOOK FOR THE 'USER'...
THE 'ENEMY' HAS TO BE WATCHING US FROM SOMEWHERE AROUND HERE!

WE HAVE TO HURRY AND FIND THE 'USER',
AND GET RID OF HIM, FROM HERE!
YOU HAVE TO USE YOUR 'NAIL BULLETS' TO FINISH HIM OFF!
......

SHOULDN'T YOU JUST LOOK FOR A PLACE WHERE THERE'S NO 'SOUND'?
WHERE ALL OF THE SOUNDS 'STOP'...
I SAW A GLIMPSE BEFORE, BUT... NOW I HAVE NO IDEA WHERE HE MIGHT BE!

SO THERE MUST BE SOMEWHERE WHERE THERE ARE NO 'SOUNDS'....
'THE SOUND OF THE WIND'.
'THE SOUND OF INSECTS'.
'THE SOUND OF THE GRASS'.
SO, WHAT I THINK IS THAT HE'S 'ABSORBING' THOSE 'SOUNDS' WITH HIS STAND!
SO HE CAN CONTAIN THEM...
'STABBING SOUNDS', 'CUTTING SOUNDS',
'BURNING SOUNDS'.
THIS GUY'S ABILITY IS TO.. 'CONTAIN' SOUNDS, OR SOMETHING...AND HE'S MAKING THE DINOSAURS CARRY THEM OVER HERE. THE DINOSAURS ARE JUST VEHICLES.
!!
YOU HAVE TO FIND THE EXACT SPOT...
HE MUST BE CLOSE! JUST KEEP ON LOOKING...
GYRO...!

GYRO...
LOOK AT THOSE MONSTERS... SOMETHING'S HAPPENING...
FROM THEIR BODIES ...
SOMETHING'S TRAVELING THROUGH THE SURFACE OF THE WATER...!?
GYRO, SOMETHING IS COMING THIS WAY ALREADY! IT'S SPREADING!
JOHNNY, HURRY UP, SHOOT!
I DON'T CARE WHERE! JUST SHOOT WHEREEVER YOU THINK THE ENEMY IS!

THIS...! THE ENEMY WAS WAITING FOR THIS ALL ALONG...! TO LAUNCH THIS CULMINATING ATTACK...
THE SOUNDS ARE COMING THIS WAY! THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER WAS JUST A STAGE FOR HIS ATTACK!
GYRO, JUST GIVE ME THE 'BUCKLE', RIGHT NOW!!

NO!
I CAN'T GIVE IT TO YOU UNTIL YOU SAY THAT YOU 'CAN'T DO IT'! '4 TIMES'!
THAT'S THE ZEPPELI FAMILY 'RULE'!
ONCE WE BREAK OUR OWN 'RULE', IT'LL BE THE END!
I EXPLAINED EVERYTHING TO YOU! THIS IS LESSON 4! 'PAY YOUR RESPECTS'!

WHAT ARE YOU SAYING ?!
AHHHHHHHHHH!!!

THAT'S...!
JUST NOW...!
THAT WAS...
N...
!
THERE'S NO WAY THAT I CAN DO THIS!
NO! THIS ISN'T THE 'POWER' I NEED!

WE'RE NOT GOING TO MAKE IT! THE SOUNDS ARE ALREADY HERE!

IN THE WATER...
HE MADE A 'SPHERE' WITH THE ROTATION!

I CAN ONLY MAKE A 'SPHERE' OUT OF WATER FOR A SPLIT SECOND.
I CAN DEFEND AGAINST THOSE SOUNDS, JUST FOR A MOMENT...
...BUT...
THERE ARE 'SOUNDS'...
THAT CAN'T BE HEARD, AS WELL...
IN SHORT, THERE ARE SOUNDS THAT WE COULDN'T 'SEE'...
ALSO... WHEN 'SOUNDS' INTERSECT EACH OTHER,
THIS GUY'S ABILITY IS TO 'SOLIDIFY' SOUNDS...
SHIT...
I GET IT NOW...
WHAT AN ANNOYING 'ENEMY'.
WHY...
WHY ARE...
THOSE MONSTERS LINED UP ACROSS THE SHORE LIKE THAT? I FINALLY UNDERSTAND, NOW...
THE INTER-SECTIONS MULTIPLY.
THERE WERE SOUNDS UNDERWATER THAT I COULDN'T ACCOUNT FOR. THAT I COULDN'T DEFEND AGAINST.
?

GYRO....
AH....
AHHHHHHH!
AHHH!
AHH!
BE CAREFUL ...
THE OTHER SIDE OF THE RIVER...
THE SOUNDS WILL...BOUNCE BACK, FROM THE OTHER SIDE...
ALSO, YOU HAVE ONE MORE...
SAY IT, HURRY UP.
YOU CAN SAY IT, AND I'LL GIVE YOU THE BUCKLE...
SAY THAT YOU 'CAN'T DO IT''
AH... AHHHHHHH!!
AHHH !!

AH HH!
AGH HHH HH!!
AGH...
AH ...
AH!
SAND-MAN!
SAND-MAN!
SAND-MAN! GO CALL 'HOT PANTS'!!

HOT PANTS! HE'S AROUND HERE SOME-WHERE!
?
WHAT ARE YOU TWO DOING TH—
?

ドドド
ドドド
?
チャプ
チャプ
ドドドド
ドドド
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
HAHH, HAHH ....
HAHH,
ドドド

HAHH, HAHH...
HAHH...
'THE SPINE', 'THE LEFT ARM', 'THE RIGHT EYE'...
I HEARD THAT YOU TWO... HAVE THOSE THREE SEGMENTS ...?
WINNING THE RACE AND GETTING THE MONEY IS DESIRABLE...
BUT TAKING YOUR 'CORPSE PARTS' WOULD BE FASTER.
THAT'S A MORE DESIRABLE BARGAINING CHIP... WHEN I NEED TO 'NEGOTIATE' WITH THIS COUNTRY ...
HAHH, HAHH.... YOU...! YOU'RE...!

I FEEL SORRY FOR YOU TWO, BUT I DO NOT FEEL GUILT.
THIS IS WHAT YOUR PEOPLE HAVE ESTABLISHED FOR YOURSELVES- 'MONEY' ABOVE ALL.
I NEED TO BUY BACK MY ANCESTORS' LAND...
FOR OUR TRIBE TO SURVIVE THE CHANGING TIMES,
WE NEED 'MONEY'...
IF ONLY YOU HAD OBEYED MY 'A SILENT WAY', BACK AT THE COTTAGE... IF YOU HAD JUST WILLINGLY GIVEN UP YOUR CORPSE PARTS...
...BUT I HADN'T INTENDED TO KILL YOU...

うおあああ
ああああああ
あああああああ
あああああ
あああ
あああ
ああああああああ

AHHHH! IF ONLY YOU'D JUST GIVEN ME THE BELT BUCKLE IN THE FIRST PLACE, NONE OF THIS WOULD HAVE HAPPENED! YOU CAN'T EXPECT ME TO BE ABLE TO CREATE THE ROTATION AFTER ONE EXPLANATION! THERE'S NO WAY!
AH!
THERE'S NO WAY I CAN DO TH...

'THERE'S NO WAY'... AH...
AHH.
'IF I SAY THAT I CAN'T DO IT, 4 TIMES...'
'THE ZEPPELI FAMILY RULE...'
.... WAIT ...

'USE THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE'S ROTATION'...
'I'VE ALREADY EXPLAINED EVERYTHING' ...
?!! ......
W... WAIT...
WAIT A SECOND...WHAT ARE THE ZEPPELIS REALLY TRYING TO SAY?
WHEN THE MASTERS AND GYRO'S ANCESTORS FOUND THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'...
WHERE DID THEY REALLY FIND IT?
WHERE WOULD THEY FIND THE 'BASIS FOR BEAUTY'?
WHO WOULD HAVE TAUGHT THEM SOMETHING LIKE THAT? THEY COULDN'T HAVE FOUND OUT FROM A PROFESSOR, OR BY MEASURING IT WITH A RULER...
THAT WOULD MERELY MAKE IT AN IMITATION
AND NOT THE 'REAL THING'...
WHO DISCOVERED THIS RATIO FIRST...?
THERE HAS TO BE AN 'ORIGINAL'!
IF I CAN'T SEE THE 'ORIGINAL', THEN MY 'GOLDEN ROTATION'...

THERE HAS TO BE AN 'ORIGINAL' GOLDEN RECTANGLE!
THE DIAGRAMS THAT GYRO DREW IN THE MUD, AND THIS BELT BUCKLE... THEY'RE JUST 'COPIES' THAT WERE MEASURED FROM THAT ORIGINAL!
I'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO DO IT...!
FIND THE 'REAL THING'...
WITH MY OWN EYES...
IF I DON'T FIND THE 'ORIGINAL', I CAN'T USE THE ROTATION!
IS THAT WHAT...
THE ZEPPELI RULE IS TRYING TO SAY ...?!

GYRO... CAN I USE THIS... THIS THING THAT I'M LOOKING AT, RIGHT NOW...?
IT'S SOMETHING THAT I'VE BEEN LOOKING AT, SOMETHING THAT I'VE BEEN LOOKING AT ALL THIS TIME...!
THE 'REAL' RECTANGLE,
THIS IS THE REAL THING, ISN'T IT?!

THE MASTERS FOUND THIS SHAPE...
FROM DEEP OBSERVATION...
AND NOW, I...

GYRO WAS SPINNING HIS STEEL BALLS,
WHILE LOOKING AT 'THESE' THINGS AS A BASIS!
DANNY...!
D...

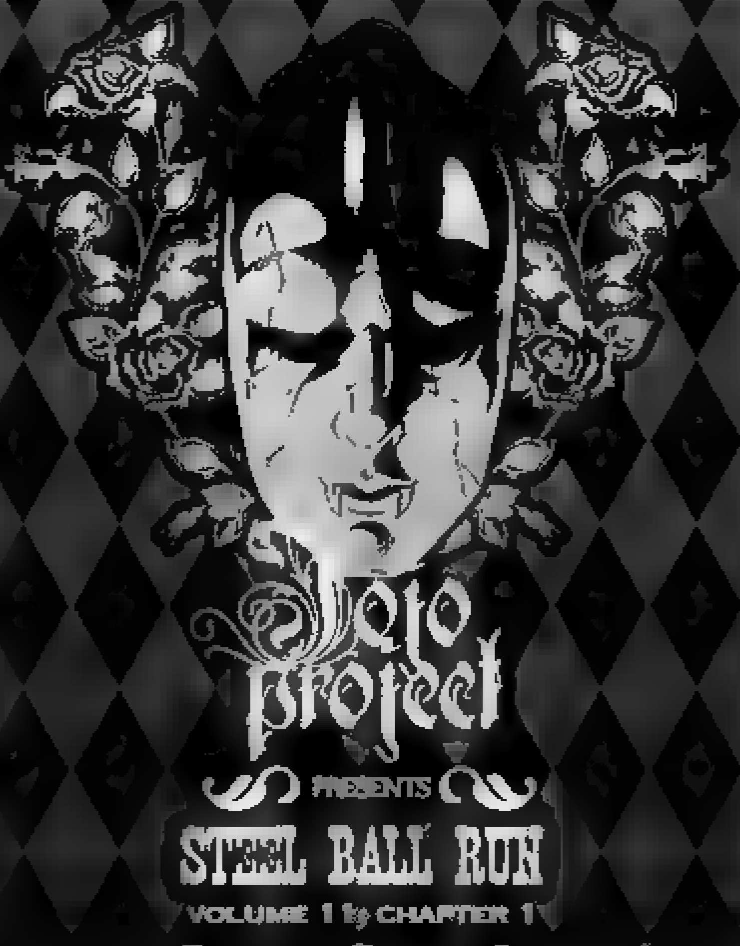
WHOA ?!
!?
WHAT... WHAT IS THIS ROTATION ...!?

SANDMAN

STAND NAME

'IN A SILENT WAY'

HAS THE ABILITY TO MOLD SOUNDS SUCH AS 'CUTTING', 'STABBING', AND 'BURNING' AND SEND IT TOWARDS HIS OPPONENTS. WHEN ONE TOUCHES THOSE SOUNDS, THEY ARE DESTROYED ACCORDINGLY. APPARENTLY, SENDING THE SOUNDS THROUGH WATER IS THE MOST EFFECTIVE WAY OF DOING IT.




Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

Page joins: JosephSK

#44
A SILENT WAY
PART ⑤

THIS...!
THIS ROTATION ...!
WH...
WHOA...!?
USING MY FINGER AS THE AXIS...
IT'S SPINNING... LIKE A DRILL...!

……
I MADE A HOLE IN THE WATER...
THE 'SOUNDS' ARE BEING SUCKED INTO THE 'HOLE' THAT I MADE!
WHAT'S HAPPENING...?! WHAT'S HAPPENING TO MY 'NAILS'?!
WHAT..? I CAN ONLY SHOOT ONE 'NAIL' AT A TIME!
MY NAIL ISN'T GROWING BACK ON MY INDEX FINGER...
BUT THE NAIL ON MY MIDDLE FINGER IS STARTING TO SPIN NOW...!

ドゴォ

I CAN ONLY SHOOT ONE NAIL PER FINGER...
THE NEXT 'NAIL' DOESN'T IMMEDIATELY GROW BACK.
BUT THE 'POWER' OF MY NAILS IS COMPLETELY DIFFERENT FROM BEFORE I DISCOVERED THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'...!
......
JOHNNY...
... JOESTAR...
SANDMAN!

SFX: WHOOSH

AGH!
MY 'GOLDEN SPIN'...
HE DEFLECTED THEM...?!
......

... UGH...!
I MIGHT HAVE DISCOVERED THIS 'GOLDEN SPIN'...
AND I CAN TELL FOR SURE THAT MY 'NAIL BULLETS' HAVE GOTTEN SIGNIFICANTLY 'STRONGER'...
BUT THERE'S NO 'POINT'!
SANDMAN IS ON A COMPLETELY DIFFERENT LEVEL!
AGAINST HIS 'STAND ABILITY', MY 'SPIN' DOESN'T STAND A CHANCE!

IT'S ALWAYS LIKE THIS... I GET A GRASP OF 'HOPE'...
BUT IN THE END, THEY ALWAYS TAKE EVERYTHING FROM ME...!
MY 'FATE' IS FINALLY CATCHING UP WITH ME.
I HAVE TO, REPENT FOR 'WHAT I DID TO NICHOLAS'...
IT'S FINALLY CAUGHT UP WITH ME...
I CAN'T, I'M SORRY, GYRO...
I COULDN'T DO ANYTHING ...!

?
GUH...!

HUH...?
......!!
......
WHAT?!

TH...
THIS...!
WHAT IS THIS...?!

AH!
THE 'BULLET HOLES'...
FROM JOHNNY JOESTAR'S ATTACK...
......
......
......

'SOMETHING' IS HAPPENING! I DON'T KNOW 'WHAT', BUT...
BUT THE 'HOLES' FROM THE 'NAIL BULLETS' THAT MISSED...
THEY... ARE THEY MOVING..?!
THEY'RE MOVING OVER THE GROUND, AND THROUGH THE TREE...?!
!!

IT'S CHASING SANDMAN! THE 'HOLE' IS FOLLOWING HIM AUTOMATICALLY...!
IT'S STILL 'MOVING'!

THE 'HOLE' IS ATTACKING...
IT MOVES TOWARDS ITS TARGET AUTOMATICALLY, ON ITS OWN...
THE ROTATION IS 'ALIVE'! EVEN IF THE BULLET BECOMES A 'HOLE', THE SPIN IS ALIVE 'WITHIN' THE HOLE...

ドドドド

GYRO!
THE SPIN DOESN'T DIE, EVEN AFTER THE BULLET BECOMES A 'HOLE'!

LESSON 4... PAY YOUR RESPECTS.

SANDMAN...
'SANDMAN' ...?
THAT IS A NAME THAT WAS MISTAKENLY GIVEN TO ME BY YOUR PEOPLE.
THE ACTUAL NAME IS 'SOUNDMAN'.
MY TRIBESMEN CALL ME 'THE ONE WHO CREATES SOUND', IN OUR NATIVE TONGUE.
JOHNNY JOESTAR...
IT SEEMS AS IF I HAVE TO DRAW CLOSER...
AND PLUNGE THIS 'KNIFE' INTO YOU, OR ATTACK YOU WITH MY 'SOUNDS', DIRECTLY...
MY STAND... 'IN A SILENT WAY'...!
THE 'SOUND' THAT IT CREATES WILL TEAR YOUR BODY INTO PIECES WITH ONE BLOW...

ONLY 'TWO MORE SHOTS'...
I HAVE NO MORE 'NAIL BULLETS' ON MY OTHER FINGERS.
I CAN ONLY SHOOT HIM TWO MORE TIMES...
!!
AH!

ドッ

THE BULLETS THAT ARE DEFLECTED...
THEIR CHASE ONLY LASTS FOR A FEW SECONDS.
AT THE LONGEST, THEY ONLY FOLLOW ME FOR 7 TO 8 SECONDS ...
......
THE HOLES ARE GETTING SMALLER... THEY WILL DISAPPEAR SOON.
AND THOSE 'NAIL BULLETS' ...
IT LOOKS AS IF YOU ONLY HAVE ONE OF THEM LEFT...
IN TOTAL, YOU ONLY HAVE 10 SHOTS.
IF YOU COULD SHOOT MULTIPLE TIMES... YOU WOULD HAVE DONE SO ALREADY.

THE 'HOLE' HAS DISAPPEARED.
AND THE NEXT WILL BE YOUR LAST SHOT...
......
......

!?
HE MISSED THE LAST SHOT...?
WHY?
HE MISSED ...?

ボトォッ
……

AGH!

THE 'HOLE' IS MOVING FROM MY BACK...!
TO MY HEART..!
WH... WHAT ...?!

AS I THOUGHT, ONLY A 'FEW SECONDS'...
FOR A FEW SECONDS, THE 'HOLE' FROM YOUR 'NAIL BULLET' AUTOMATICALLY TRACKED MY HEART...
BUT IT DISAPPEARED. IT WAS CLOSE... VERY CLOSE, BUT...
...THAT WAS YOUR LAST SHOT.

I WIN...
I...
NO...
SANDMAN...
......
DON'T FIGHT ANYMORE.
BACK AWAY, RIGHT NOW...
THE WINNER OF THIS FIGHT...

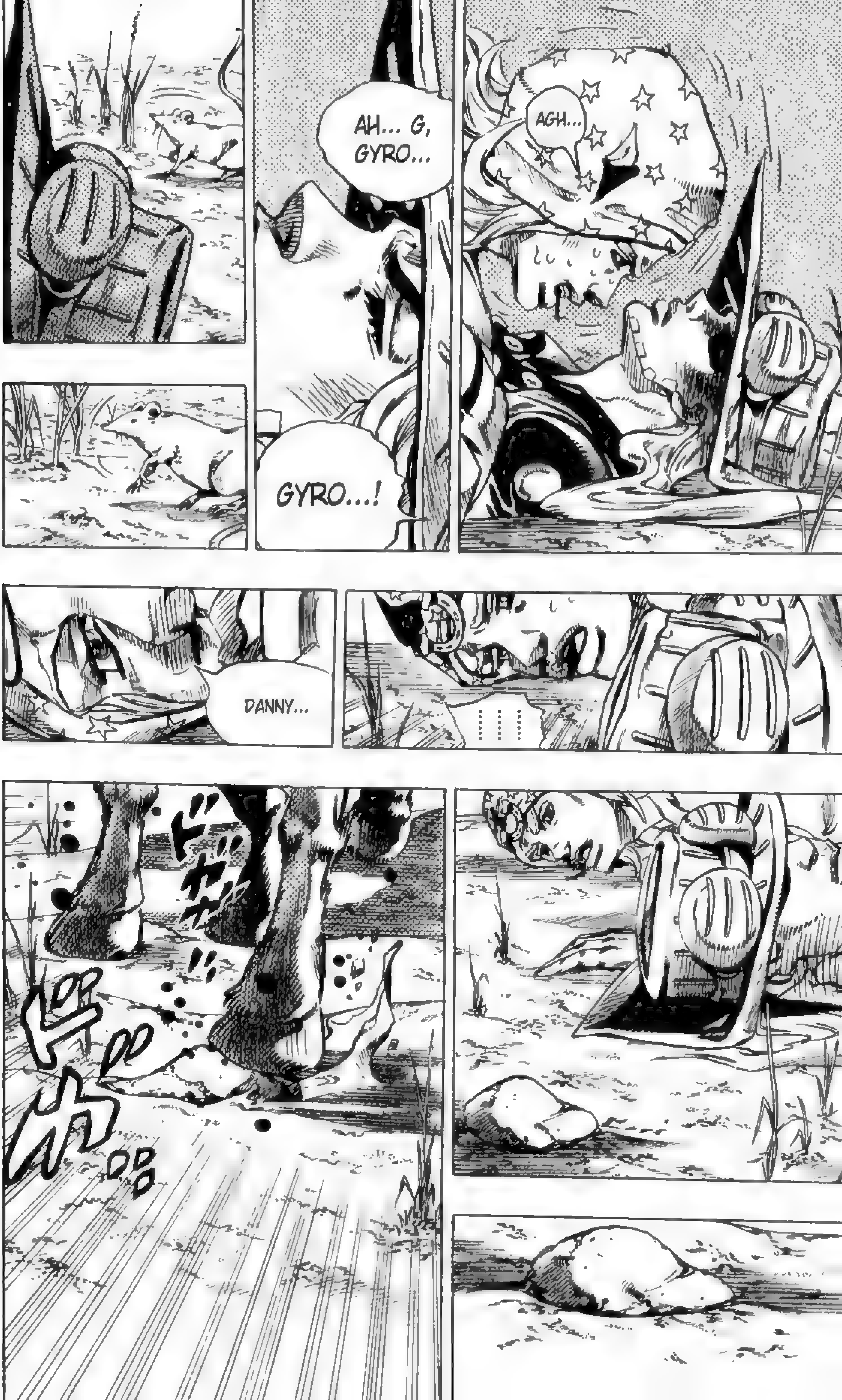
NOT YOU...
...IS US.

GYRO'S 'BELT BUCKLE'...
A FEW MOMENTS AGO...
WHEN I STILL HAD NAILS TO SPARE... I USED THIS 'BUCKLE' TO MAKE A STEEL BALL...
IF YOU SO MUCH AS MOVE A FINGER...
ON THE HAND THAT YOU STILL HAVE LEFT, I'LL SHOOT. FROM THIS DISTANCE, IT'LL DEFINITELY BE FATAL...
GET BACK, SANDMAN!
DEACTIVATE YOUR STAND... AND MOVE BACK...
THERE IS A MERIT TO 'TESTING' THIS...
YOU ARE SAYING THAT YOU...
ARE FASTER THAN MY STAND, 'IN A SILENT WAY'?

ド

......
I FEEL NO MORSEL OF REGRET... NOT EVEN EQUIVALENT TO THE SMALLEST GRAIN OF SAND IN THE DESERT...
NOT AN INCH...
THE ONLY WORRY I HAVE...
IS FOR MY SISTER.
WHO I HAVE LEFT ON MY HOMELAND.
I WANT HER TO BE HAPPY... MY ONLY PRAYER...

IS FOR
HER.


AGH...
AH... G, GYRO...
GYRO...!
DANNY...
......
ドドドド

......
H...
'HOT PANTS'...!
THAT'S WHY I CAME...
YOUR HORSES ARE ALONE ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE MISSISSIPPI.
......?
THEY DIDN'T TAKE THE PARTS, DID THEY?
YOU STILL HAVE 'THEM' WITH YOU...

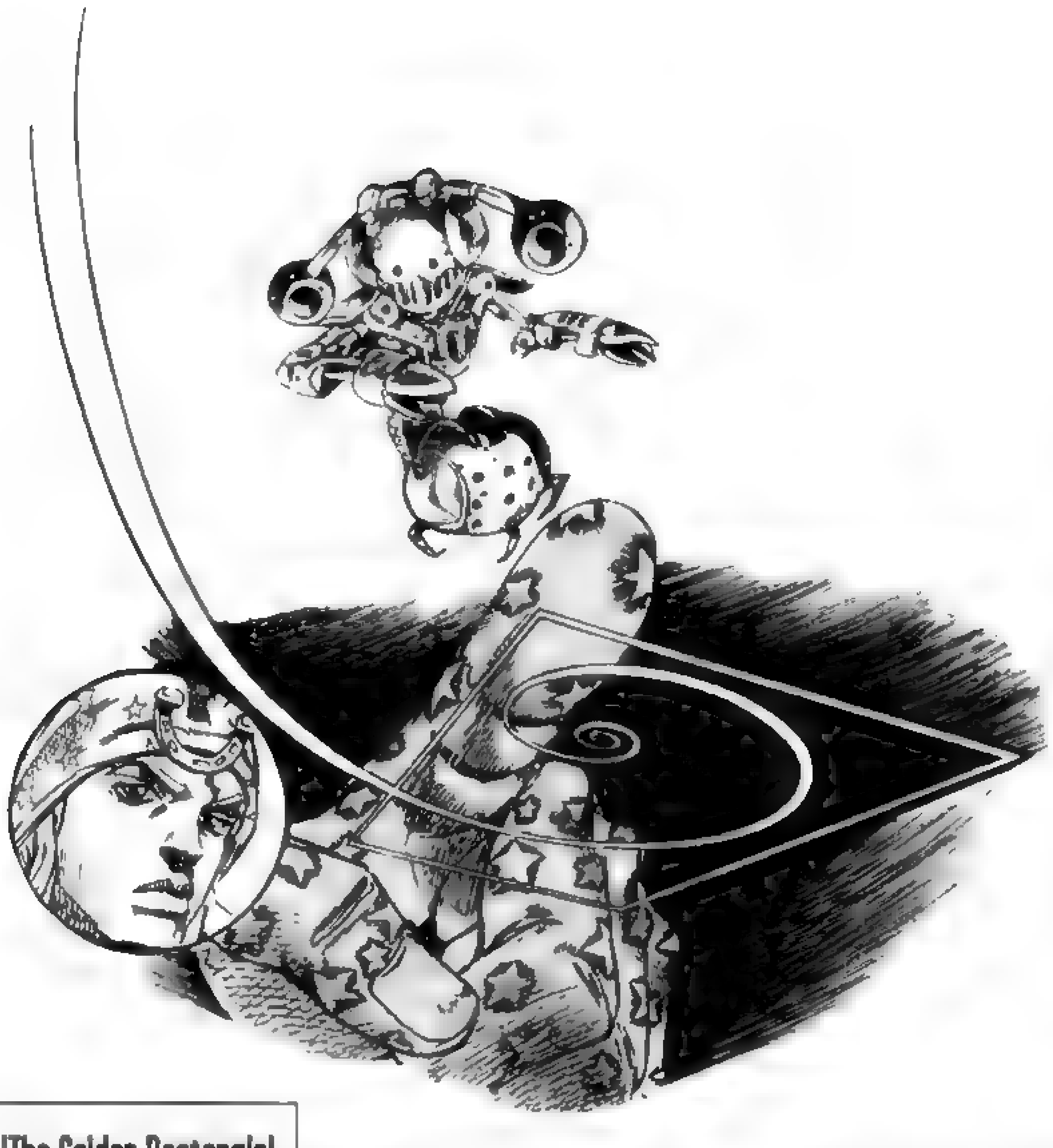
THAT 'CREST'...!
IT'S...
WHAT...?! WHAT IS THAT 'CREST'...?!
IT'S FROM... GYRO'S...!
WHAT?!

AGHHHH!!
WH... WHAT?! YOU...!
IT'S JUST FUTILE STRUGGLING.
DON'T MOVE...
IN YOUR CONDITION,

ドドドド
ドド
……
ドド
ド
ドドド

HM.
SO YOU CAN MOVE THEM.
AH!
OR... WAS THAT THE FIRST TIME THAT YOU DID...?
WELL... I DON'T INTEND TO STEAL YOUR 'ABILITY', ON TOP OF ALL THIS.
WAS IT UNCONSCIOUS?
UGH...

GYRO...
GYRO!
HER 'SPRAY'...
SHE...
SHE FIXED...
OUR 'WOUNDS'...
UH...
OUR HORSES ARE HERE, TOO... 'WHAT'S HER DEAL'...?!
HUH?
HN?
NORISUKE
!!



'The Golden Rectangle'

When Johnny creates a perfect rotation within a rectangle constructed in the ratio of 1:1.618, his 'nail bullets', in theory, take on the power of 'infinity'. This is the 'golden spin'. This power, in conjunction with Johnny's Stand, creates a 'moving hole' that automatically seeks out his target.

# CREDIT

# TRANSLATION: FRESHY
# EDITING: FREQUENCY

EDITOR'S NOTE: 'IN A SILENT WAY' LOOKS AN AWFUL LOT LIKE THE AZTEC GOD TEZCATLIPOCA, HERE'S A MASK OF HIM (HE HAS NO SKIN IN SOME STORIES)...

SORRY
NO 'OFFICIAL' CREDIT PAGE

#45
THE PROMISED LAND
SUGAR MOUNTAIN
PART 1

THE ZEPPELI FAMILY, FOR 350 YEARS, HAVE REMAINED SECRETIVE ABOUT THEIR TRUE IDENTITY AND THEIR TRUE PROFESSION,
UNLESS THERE WERE 'DIRECT ORDERS FROM THE KING'. THE ONLY ONES TO KNOW OF THEIR TRUE IDENTITY, EVEN WITHIN THE FAMILY, WERE RESTRICTED TO THE MAN OF THE HOUSE, HIS WIFE, AND THE ELDEST SON.
GYRO ZEPPELI WAS ALSO EDUCATED IN THAT LIFESTYLE, FROM A VERY EARLY AGE.
DURING THEIR DAILY LIVES, THE ZEPPELI FAMILY HAD A GOOD REPUTATION AS DOCTORS FOR THE COMMON PEOPLE, EARNING A STEADY INCOME.

THOSE 'FOOT-STEPS'...
'FOOT-STEPS'?
GET UP!
HE'S COMING THIS WAY! WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING?! PUT YOUR CLOTHES ON!
IF HE FINDS OUT THAT I'M DOING THIS, IN THE HOSPITAL, WITH HIS PATIENT, HE'LL KILL ME!
I'M IN SUCH DEEP SHIT!
I DON'T HEAR ANYTHING~.
OH, SHIT! IT'S FATHER!
COME ON! HE JUST TURNED THE CORNER!
HURRY UP! IF HE CATCHES YOU NOW, THEY'RE GONNA MARRY YOU OFF TO MAKE SURE YOU DON'T DO SHIT LIKE THIS AGAIN!
HUHH?! BUT I'LL NEVER MAKE IT IN TIME~!!

OH... FATHER.
EVERYTHING SEEMS FINE...
IT'S JUST SLIGHT MALNUTRITION.
I SUGGEST YOU EAT SOME LIVER AND ONIONS...IT PREVENTS JOINT PAINS, AS WELL.
NOW, YOU CAN GO CHANGE OVER THERE.
Drug
linked in study

I'LL BE RIGHT THERE.
YES, SIR.
WE HAVE A PATIENT WHO BROKE THEIR LEG...
COME HELP ME.
GYRO.
IT'LL LAST ABOUT...A WEEK OR SO.
SOME BITS OF YOUR BODY'S GONNA LIFT UP. THAT'S WHAT I CALL GRAVITY-DEFYING!
LOOK AT ME! I'M SAGGING ALL OVER! AND ALL THESE DAMN WRINKLES?!
WHAT THE HELL DO YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING?! TURN ME BACK!!
TURN ME BACK! IF YOU DO ANYTHING LIKE THIS AGAIN, I'LL KILL YOU!
I CAN DO THE OPPOSITE, TOO, YOU KNOW. YOU'LL BE THANKING ME IN A FEW SECONDS.
WHOA, CALM DOWN... DON'T GET ANGRY, ALRIGHT?

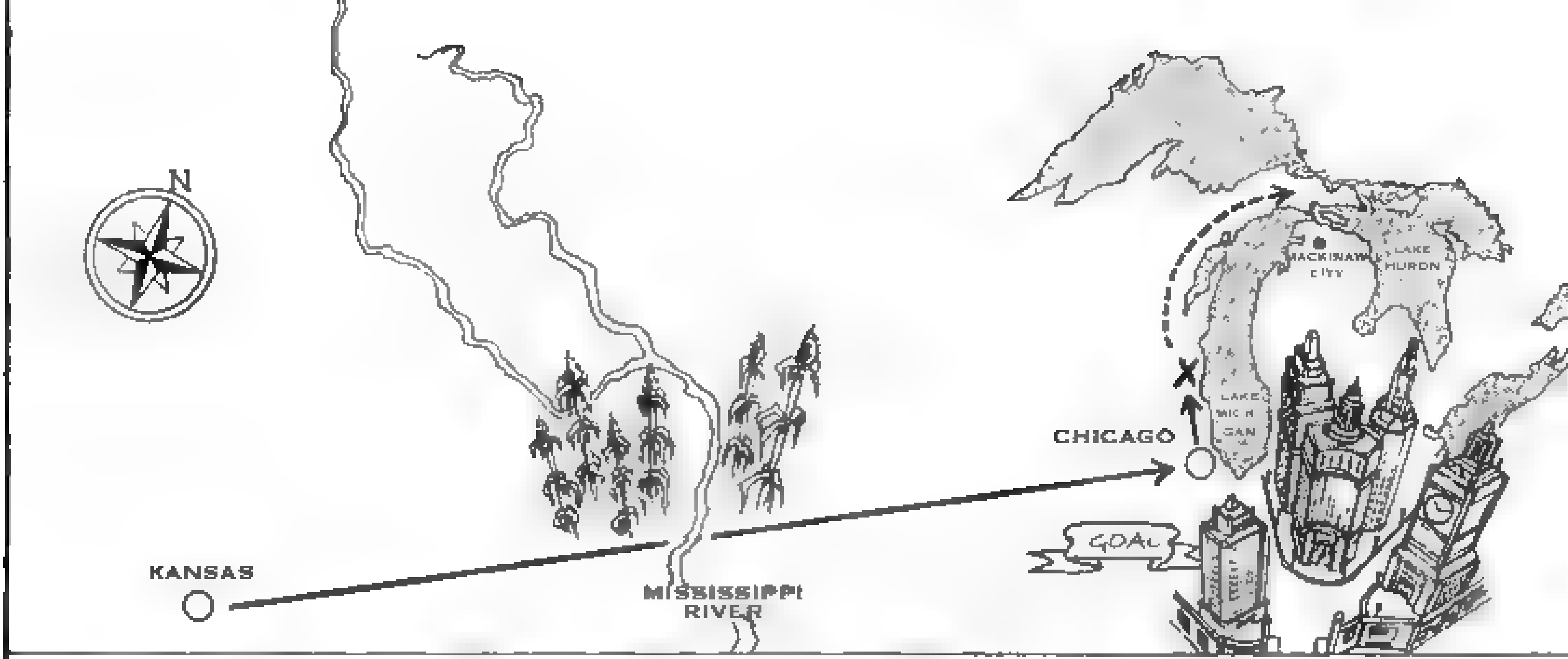
AHAHA HAHA~!
OHHH, STOP IT, STOP IT~!
I MEAN, I WON'T IF YOU DON'T WANT, BUT.
OR, I CAN EVEN TAKE CARE OF SHAVING, IF YOU WANT.
IF HE'D FOUND US, WE REALLY WOULD'VE BEEN KILLED...DO YOU USUALLY WEAR YOUR RING?
YOU'RE MARRIED, AREN'T YOU.
..... *GULP*
SHAPED LIKE A RING
NOW THAT THE WRINKLES ARE GONE, I CAN TELL THAT THERE'S A TAN LINE...
HUH...?
THIS RING FINGER ...

RUSTLE

!!
BRR..
THOUGHT IT WAS COLD...
....GUESS IT SNOWED WHILE I WAS ASLEEP, HUH?
LET'S EAT THE RABBIT LATER. I MADE PASTA.
YOU WANT SOME HERBAL TEA?
I PICKED SOME MINT THAT WAS GROWING OVER THERE.
AND,
I REALIZED SOMETHING...
I DON'T KNOW WHY, BUT IF I DRINK HERBS...MY NAILS SEEM TO GROW BACK MUCH FASTER.

SEE? THEY GROW BACK IN A MINUTE OR SO...
I TESTED IT, AND IT SEEMS LIKE CHAMOMILE IS THE MOST EFFECTIVE IN SPEEDING UP THE PROCESS.
I CAN GRATE CHEESE WITH THIS FINGER...
MUNCH
AND EAT SPAGHETTI WITH IT, TOO.
I CAN BRUSH MY TEETH, TOO.
I SEE... DAMN, I'M JEALOUS.
BUT ANYWAY, I JUST FELT HOOVES POUNDING ON THE SNOW...
DRRR
SOMEONE'S COMING.
ONLY ONE PERSON? WHERE ARE THEY?
ABOUT 10KM SOUTH.

LOOKS LIKE OUR DAY'S JUST STARTED...
ALSO, WE'VE ALREADY PASSED 40 DEGREES NORTH LATITUDE.
THERE'S ONLY 2 OR 3 PEOPLE WHO ARE FARTHER NORTH THAN US.




# 5TH. STAGE

(START) 'KANSAS CITY' ——→ (GOAL) 'CHICAGO'

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| TOTAL DISTANCE APPROXIMATELY | 780km | PARTICIPANTS: | 441 |
| ESTIMATED RUNNING TIME | 14 DAYS | RETIREES: | 67 (INCLUDING SANDMAN AND DOT KHAN) |

| | NAME | 5TH STAGE RUNNING TIME | ACQUIRED POINTS | TOTAL POINTS | TIME BONUS | CURRENT PLACEMENT |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | POCOLOCO | 14 days, 2 hours, 11 minutes, and 5 seconds | 100 | 233 | 1 HOUR | 1ST |
| 2 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 14 days, 2 hours, 15 minutes and 38 seconds | 50 | 188 | 1 HOUR | 5TH |
| 3 | HOT PANTS | 14 days, 2 hours, 23 minutes and 30 seconds | 40 | 215 | 1 HOUR | 2ND |
| 4 | GYRO ZEPPELI | 14 days, 2 hours, 35 minutes and 17 seconds | 35 | 146 | — | 6TH |
| 5 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 1/2 a horse's length | 30 | 195 | — | 3RD |
| 6 | SLOOP JOHN B | 14 days, 6 hours, 16 minutes and 47 seconds | 25 | 73 | — | 7TH |
| 7 | CARAVAN SERAI | 14 days, 6 hours, 30 minutes and 8 seconds | 20 | 52 | — | 8TH |
| 8 | NIGHTFLY | 14 days, 7 hours, 3 minutes and 44 seconds | 15 | 25 | — | 14TH |
| 9 | DIXIE | | | | | |
| 10 | BABA | | | | | |
| 11 | NELLY | | | | | |
| 12 | IGLE | | | | | |
| 13 | CUN | | | | | |
| 14 | BILLY | | | | | |
| 15 | SHIG | | | | | |
| 16 | TAR | | | | | |
| 17 | JOE | | | | | |
| 18 | MISTER | | | | | |
| 19 | MACK | | | | | |

| | CURRENT PLACEMENT | TOTAL POINTS | TIME BONUS |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | POCOLOCO | 233 | 1 HOUR |
| 2 | HOT PANTS | 215 | 1 HOUR |
| 3 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 195 | — |
| 4 | DIEGO BRANDO | 190 | 1 HOUR |
| 5 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 188 | 1 HOUR |
| 6 | GYRO ZEPPELI | 146 | — |

NO...
THE ONE COMING HERE IS DIO?
CAN IT BE THAT...
HE'S 2 TO 3 DAYS BEHIND US...
JUDGING FROM THE 5TH STAGE RACE RESULTS, HE HASN'T RETIRED FROM THE RACE YET, BUT HE'S STILL TAKING TIME TO LET HIS HORSE RECOVER.
BUT...WE CAN'T FORGET THAT HE WAS BEHIND SANDMAN ATTACKING US AT THE MISSISSIPPI.
THEN... MAYBE 'HOT PANTS'.

YOU SAID THAT YOU DIDN'T KNOW ANYTHING ABOUT 'HOT PANTS'...
...AND I'LL BELIEVE YOU ON THAT...
BUT...HE'S COLLECTING THE 'CORPSE PARTS' TOO. AND NOT FOR THE PRESIDENT, EITHER.
...HE HAD A BAG WITH YOUR COUNTRY'S CREST ON IT...
IT WAS DEFINITELY THE ONE. I'M NOT MAKING A MISTAKE, IT WAS DEFINITELY THE SAME...
PLUS...HE DIDN'T TAKE THE ENTIRE 'CORPSE PART' THAT I HAD.
HE LEFT ME ONE OF THE SPINES...
HE LEFT ME WITH MY STAND ABILITY AND MY LIFE... SO, WHAT'S GOING ON HERE?

IN SHORT, HE'S NOT AN 'ENEMY', BUT SOMEONE 'YOUR COUNTRY' SENT IN TO ENTER THIS RACE!
...OR, RATHER...
THE MOMENT YOU ASKED YOUR 'COUNTRY' WHO THE CORPSE WAS... HE STARTED TO APPROACH US...
EVEN THOUGH THEY TOLD US THAT THERE WERE NO KNOWN 'SAINTS' ON THIS CONTINENT...
THE ONE COLLECTING THE 'CORPSE PARTS' IS ACTUALLY YOUR COUNTRY...!
GYRO.
YOU ALREADY HAVE A GOOD IDEA OF WHO THIS 'SAINT' IS, DON'T YOU?
THE IDENTITY OF THIS 'CORPSE' THAT DOESN'T EVEN SEEM TO ROT...?!

DO YOU WANT THE 'CORPSE', JOHNNY?
WOULD YOU STILL RISK YOUR LIFE TO GET 'ALL' OF IT? DO YOU STILL FEEL THAT WAY?
YEAH...OF COURSE.
MY SOUL WAS DYING SLOWLY BEFORE I ENTERED THIS RACE... NOW I FEEL LIKE IT'S REBORN...
ONCE I GIVE UP COLLEC-TING THE 'CORPSE PARTS', I FEEL LIKE MY SOUL WILL START DYING AGAIN.
THEN LET'S FIND THEM.
IT DOESN'T MATTER TO US WHO THE 'CORPSE' IS...
DON'T BE CARELESS WITH THIS SUBJECT... IF WE WERE MEANT TO FIND OUT, WE'LL FIND OUT, SOONER OR LATER...

JOHNNY...
I SAID BEFORE THAT I ONLY HEARD THE SOUND OF ONE PAIR OF HOOVES...
BUT SOMETHING IS OFF.
IT LOOKS LIKE I WAS WRONG.
WHAT DO YOU MEAN, YOU WERE WRONG?
THIS IS A STEEL BALL THAT I JUST MADE BY SCRAPING METAL OFF OF A TRAIN TRACK.
ABOUT THE HORSE?
OR THE NUMBER OF PEOPLE?
I CAN ONLY HEAR ONE PAIR OF APPROACHING HOOVES...
BUT THEY'RE 'OVER-LAPPED'.
SEVERAL OTHER HORSES ARE PERFECTLY MATCHING ONE HORSE'S FOOTSTEPS... IN SHORT, THEIR RHYTHMS ARE EXACTLY THE SAME.

THEN, HOW MANY OF THEM ARE COMING?
TWO?
THREE?
ELE......
ELEVEN.

MY 'SPINE' CAN MAKE MAPS WITH SNOW, OR SAND...
THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART' (THE EARS) IS CLOSE BY.
サラサラ
WE NEED TO USE THIS MAP AND FIND THEM!
DON'T WANT THEM CATCHING UP TO US. LET'S GO.
サラサラ
THE OTHERS ARE STILL ABOUT 10KM AWAY.
WE'VE GOT ENOUGH TIME.
JOHNNY, IT LOOKS LIKE THIS AREA IS A SWAMP.
NOTHING TOO DEEP, BUT THERE'S A SPRING HERE, TOO.
WE'RE BY THE 'MICHIGAN LAKESIDE' ...
MAYBE THE 'CORPSE PARTS' ARE UNDERWATER ...
ドドドドドドドド
ARE YOU SERIOUS?
BUT, WHY...? WHY WOULD THEY...
THEY'RE TRYING TO MAKE US THINK THAT THERE'S ONLY ONE OF THEM...
SO THEY'RE HIDING 11 HORSES INTO ONE FOOTSTEP.
THESE GUYS ARE DEFINITELY OUR 'ENEMY'... THEY'RE TRYING TO ATTACK US AS A TEAM.

......
THAT'S WEIRD...
THIS SPRING SHOULDN'T BE TOO DEEP...
WHERE DID MY 'STEEL BALL' GO...?

JOHNNY, LOOK...WHAT THE HELL IS THAT?
WHEN THE HELL DID THAT KID GET HERE?
......
HEY YOU! WHAT DO YOU THINK YOU'RE DOING?!
HUH?
SHE STOLE MY GOD-DAMN STEEL BALL!

CHASE HER, JOHNNY!
SHIT! I JUST MADE THAT ONE, TOO!
COME ON, WE'RE GONNA GO AFTER HER!
......
THAT'S WHERE THE 'CORPSE PART' IS SUPPOSED TO BE...
...IN THE SAME DIRECTION
SHE'S RUNNING THAT WAY...
WHAT SHOULD I DO? SHOULD I SHOOT HER?
I CAN REACH HER.
HUH?
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?
YOU'RE THE GENIUS JOCKEY HERE, AREN'T YOU? GO CATCH HER.

ドドド
……

WHAT THE HELL IS THIS PLACE...?
IS THIS A TREE? LOOKS LIKE IT'S BEEN HERE FOR AT LEAST 1000 YEARS...MAYBE 2000?!
THE 2 'CORPSE PARTS'! THEY'RE CLOSE!
GYRO, YOUR STEEL BALLS ARE IMPORTANT TOO, BUT...
SOME-THING'S HERE...
IT'S SUPPOSED TO BE AROUND HERE...
WHOA WHOA WHOA WHOA
WHOA WHOA WHOA

SPLASH
THE PARTS ARE SOMEWHERE IN THIS AREA.
MAYBE THEY'RE UNDER-GROUND ...?
'BOTH EARS', AND 'THE RIGHT ARM'! THE MAP SAYS THAT BOTH OF THEM ARE SOMEWHERE AROUND HERE!
AND THERE ARE '2' OF THEM.
WHAT IF THEY'RE HIDDEN 'IN' THAT TREE?
MAYBE THEY'RE HIDDEN TOGETHER!
IT'S POSSIBLE.

ALMOST...
WE'RE GONNA SEE DADDY VERY SOON...
AND MOMMY'S GONNA BE THERE TOO...
SO LET'S JUST MAKE DINNER, AND WAIT UNTIL THEN...
JOHNNY... SHE'S TALKING TO SOMEONE...
LOOK OUT FOR ANYONE THAT MIGHT BE HIDING AROUND HERE...I'LL GO IN FIRST.

WHISPER
WHISPER
LISTEN TO MOMMY...

'DON'T PLAY WITH YOUR HAIR WHILE EATING DINNER'.
'GIRLS ARE SUPPOSED TO EAT LESS THAN THEIR BOYFRIENDS. AND YOU HAVE TO STOP BUYING LOLITA CLOTHES AND CUTSIE THINGS!'
'POTATO CHIPS AREN'T A MEAL'.
'IT'S RUDE TO BITE YOUR NAILS AND IT'S ALSO RUDE TO SNICKER'.
'BE SURE TO NOT EAT GARLIC OR MAKE EXCUSES IN EXCESS'.
'AND STOP PRETENDING TO CRY ALL THE TIME'.
'STOP MAKING THOSE POOR [redacted]S WHO YOU DON'T EVEN LIKE DO YOUR ERRANDS, TOO'.
HEY, THERE. I GUESS IT'S KIND OF RUDE OF ME TO SAY THIS AFTER BARGING IN UNINVITED...
BUT WHO THE HELL ARE YOU?
WHO DO YOU LIVE HERE WITH?
AHHHHHHHH!!
JUMP

THAT'S THE COUPLE'S BEDROOM!
YOUR FOOT!
HOW RUDE!
PLEASE, COME IN THROUGH THE FRONT DOOR!
MY FOOT?
FRONT DOOR
KITCHEN
HALL
BEDROOM
STUDY
BEDROOM
OH...
EH-HEM...
MY BAD.
PLEASE, DO COME IN.
MY NAME IS 'SUGAR MOUNTAIN'.
THIS DOLL IS 'CANDY'.
IT'S NICE TO MEET YOU... PLEASE, MAKE YOURSELF AT HOME.
KITCHEN
HALL
FRONT DOOR
BEDROOM
LIVING ROOM

PLEASE, DO EAT SOMETHING WHILE YOU'RE HERE.
CANDY AND I,
WE'LL PREPARE THE FOOD FOR YOU.
BUT THAT GIRL...
I THINK SHE HAS BARELY ANY 'EYESIGHT'.
THERE ARE TRACES OF A 'CANE' BEING USED...
TO FEEL HER WAY AROUND.
GYRO,
IT DOESN'T SEEM LIKE ANYONE'S OUTSIDE...
THERE'S ONLY ONE FOOTPRINT IN THE SNOW, AND IT BELONGS TO HER.
......

BUT SHE WAS PRETTY GOOD ABOUT RUNNING AWAY AFTER SHE TOOK MY GOODS.
SHE'S PRETTY FAST, TOO.
OH.
COULD IT BE, MY DEAR GUEST,
THAT YOU DROPPED SOMETHING IN THE SPRING?
WAS THIS WHAT YOU DROPPED?
OR WAS IT THIS ONE, IN MY 'LEFT' HAND?

YOU TOOK MY 'STEEL BALL' DIDN'T YOU?! NO, YOU STOLE IT! WHERE THE HELL DID YOU HIDE IT?!
HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY...
WHAT THE HELL IS UP WITH THIS LITTLE GIRL...?
LOOKS LIKE SHE NEEDS MORE BRAINS, NOT EYESIGHT!
I DON'T HAVE TIME TO BE PLAYING DOLLY WITH YOU, ALRIGHT?

OH,
'STEEL BALL'...?
IS THIS YOUR 'STEEL BALL'?
ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT THIS ONE? WHAT AN HONEST MAN...
TO SUCH AN HONEST MAN, I'LL GIVE YOU ALL THREE!
ALL THREE OF THEM ARE YOURS NOW, HERE YOU GO! ♥
......

...
HEY, JOHNNY ...
HOLD THESE FOR A SECOND.
IT CAN'T BE...
FEEL HOW 'HEAVY' IT IS.
I'M NOT TALKING ABOUT MY 'STEEL BALL'... THE 'STEEL BALL' IS THE SAME SHAPE AND SIZE AS ALWAYS. I'M SURE ABOUT THAT...
BUT I'M TALKING ABOUT THESE TWO.
AND THIS SHINE...

WHAT IS THIS...? WHERE THE HELL DID YOU GET THIS?!
DO YOU EVEN KNOW WHAT THIS IS?! WHY WOULD A KID LIKE YOU HAVE A REAL, SOLID PIECE OF GOLD?! THIS GEM HERE ISN'T JUST A PIECE OF GLASS, EITHER!
WHERE ARE YOUR PARENTS?!
THE OTHER GENTLEMAN THERE, YOU 'DROPPED' SOMETHING IN THE SPRING TOO, DIDN'T YOU?
DID YOU DROP THESE MUSHROOMS ?
OR THESE MUSH-ROOMS?
?

COME TO THINK OF IT, I DROPPED THE MUSHROOMS THAT YOU HAVE IN YOUR RIGHT HAND INTO THE WATER...
YOU WERE ALREADY INSIDE THIS TREE WHEN IT HAPPENED, AND I WAS OUTSIDE...!
BUT WHY WOULD YOU KNOW THAT?
......
?
OH!
I'LL GIVE YOU THESE 'MATSUTAKE' MUSHROOMS!
THEY'RE FROM CANADA, THOUGH. OH, BY THE WAY, THE ONES IN MY RIGHT HAND ARE POISONOUS.
SO HONEST~!
TO HONEST PEOPLE... HERE!
HEY HEY HEY....
HEY, HEY...

BUT YOU SAID THAT THE 'CORPSE PARTS' ARE SOMEWHERE AROUND THIS TREE...
I'M STARTING TO GET THE FEELING THAT THEY'RE 'IN' THIS TREE... NO, I'M DAMN SURE THAT THEY'RE HERE...
YEAH...
GYRO... LET'S GO OUTSIDE.
THERE'S SOMETHING STRANGE ABOUT THIS GIRL...
MY NAME IS 'SUGAR MOUNTAIN'.
MY MOMMY AND DADDY ARE SOME-WHERE FAR AWAY.
THEY SOMETIMES COME HERE TO GIVE ME FOOD.
SO THAT'S WHY I STAY HERE. I WAIT FOR THEM.
THERE'S NO WAY YOU'RE LIVING HERE BY YOURSELF, EITHER! BUT WHATEVER, WE'RE IN A HURRY!
HEY! THIS MIGHT BE ILLEGAL, BUT I'M GONNA HAVE TO SEARCH THIS PLACE, STARTING FROM THAT BOX!
AHHH! STOP IT, STOP IT~!

YOU HAVEN'T ANSWERED ANY OF OUR DAMN QUESTIONS.
YEAH, WHATEVER STUPID!
...
JUST A COUPLE OF LEAVES AND TWIGS.
WHAT THE HELL IS THIS? THIS BOX IS FILLED WITH DOLLHOUSE SHIT.
THAT'S MY BEDROOM!!
THIS IS UNBE-LIEV-ABLE!
YOUR FOOT!
DON'T TOUCH MY UNDER-WEAR!! PERVERT! PERVERT!

WAHHH, WAHHHH!
KEEP LOOKING!
MAYBE IT'S HIDDEN INSIDE A CRACK OR A DENT...
SOB..
SOB SOB
I'LL TRY TO FEEL THEM OUT WITH MY 'SPINE' AND TRY TO NARROW DOWN OUR POSSIBILITIES.
......

THE 'FOOD' THAT YOU JUST DROPPED INTO THE SPRING...
DID YOU DROP THE MEAL ON THE RIGHT?
OR DID YOU DROP THE FULL-COURSE MEAL THAT I MADE OUT OF MUD AND LEAVES?

WAIT
WAIT WAIT WAIT
JOHNNY, DON'T LOSE YOUR COOL.
THIS FOOD...WHERE DID IT COME FROM? THIS GIRL... SHE... SHE'S A 'STAND USER'...!
HEY HEY HEY HEY...

PLEASE CHOOSE.
WHICH ONE?
IS SHE AN 'ENEMY'?
BUT WAIT... IF SHE WAS ON THE 'PRESIDENT'S' SIDE...
BUT THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE.
CALM DOWN! I THINK I'M STARTING TO GET IT!
THINK ABOUT IT!
JUST WAIT, JOHNNY!
STOP MESSING AROUND! WHO ARE YOU?!
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE FOR THE 'ENEMY' TO HAVE REACHED THIS PLACE BEFORE US.
IF I'D PURPOSELY ANSWERED THAT I REALLY DROPPED THE 'GOLD' INSTEAD OF MY STEEL BALL...
WHAT WOULD HAVE HAPPENED?
LITTLE GIRL...IF I'D GIVEN YOU THE WRONG 'ANSWER' BEFORE...
OUR CURRENT ENEMY IS ABOUT 10KM TO THE SOUTH OF US...THE NAMELESS 'ELEVEN'.
THIS GIRL...

THIS WOULD HAVE EMBEDDED ITSELF INTO YOUR TONGUE,
AND IT WOULD HAVE GONE DOWN YOUR THROAT AND PULLED YOUR INNARDS OUT.
IF YOU'D BEEN GREEDY AND ANSWERED THAT YOU DROPPED THE 'GOLD' OR THE 'DIAMOND'.
NYOHO HOHO HO!
THE ONE I DROPPED WAS THE MEAL MADE OF 'MUD AND LEAVES'.
I THINK I'M STARTING TO UNDERSTAND MORE AND MORE OF THIS.
!...

LET'S GET THIS OUT OF YOUR WAY.
ENJOY! ♥ DO YOU WANT COFFEE? TEA?
DO YOU WANT MILK AND SUGAR WITH THAT?
HERE'S A MORNING SERVICE TO THE GOOD, HONEST GENTLEMAN!
CORREEEE EEECT~! ♥
A NEWSPAPER'S FINE TOO. GIVE ME ALL OF IT.
DO YOU HAVE 'PAPER'? THE ONES WE USE TO WIPE OUR ASS.
JOHNNY
WHAT IS THIS ...?
THIS GIRL,
IS SHE A HUMAN? OR...?
AND GIVE ME THIS WATCH, TOO!
JUST HAND THEM OVER.
HUH?
WHAT?

THIS 'STACK'?
OR THE PAPERS IN MY LEFT HAND?
THE WATCH, TOO, DID YOU DROP THE BULGARI ONE?
OR THIS ONE, WITH THE CRACKED FACE?
IS THE 'PAPER' THAT YOU DROPPED..
GYRO!
WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!
THIS GIRL... WHAT IS SHE TRYING TO DO?!
NYO HO HO HO HO HO!!

THE THINGS THAT WE DROPPED IN THE SPRING... LISTEN UP, HERE'S MY ANSWER...
AND THE DIRTY, PIECE OF SHIT WRIST-WATCH!
WERE THE NEWS-PAPER!
HAHAH AHAHA HA~!!
SHE'S ONE CRAZY LITTLE GIRL, BUT I GET IT NOW!
HO, HO, HO~!!
NYOHO HOHO, I DID IT!
JOHNNY, GO TO THE HORSES! GO GET THAT RABBIT WE CAUGHT!
WE NEED THAT RABBIT.
GYRO! I'M ASKING YOU WHAT YOU'RE DOING!
HERE, HAVE THE BUL-GARI.

OR...
DID YOU DROP THESE RABBIT EARS INTO THE SPRING?

THESE HUMAN EARS?

THAT THING THAT YOU'RE HOLDING IN YOUR HANDS...! WHERE DID YOU GET THEM?! I...IMPOSSIBLE!
IT...IT CAN'T BE! THOSE...
THE FIRST TIME SOMETHING LIKE THIS'S HAPPENED...
THIS IS...
SHE'S... PROBABLY SOMETHING LIKE A 'GUARDIAN'.
THIS GIRL... SHE WAS 'PROTECTING' THEM.
A 'GUARDIAN' THAT THE CORPSE 'ASSIGNED' HERE...
I GUESS THAT'S WHAT THIS STAND IS SUPPOSED TO DO...
HOW LONG HAVE YOU LIVED HERE FOR?
LOOKS LIKE SHE DIDN'T UNDERSTAND IT HERSELF...

AND THEY TOLD ME TO 'WAIT' HERE.
EVER SINCE I WAS STILL A LITTLE GIRL...
SINCE MOMMY AND DADDY DROPPED THE 'IRON AXE' INTO THE SPRING...
'WHICH ONE'?
'WHICH ONE' DID YOU DROP IN THE SPRING?
ANSWER ME...
......
......
JOHNNY, ANSWER HER! BUT...YOU GET IT, DON'T YOU?
HOW YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO ANSWER...!
IT CAN'T BE! THOSE...!
A...ARE THOSE REAL...?
THOSE 'EARS'...!

YEAH...
THE ONE THAT WE DROPPED IN THE SPRING...
IS THE PAIR OF 'RABBIT EARS'.
G...GYRO!
AHHHHH!

THE CORPSE PARTS ARE DRAWN TOGETHER...
IT MEANS THAT THEY'RE 'REAL'.
AGHHH! IT... IT WENT INSIDE MY FACE!
I'LL TELL YOU THIS...
BUT SINCE MOMMY AND DADDY TOLD ME TO BE 'HONEST',
IT'S YOUR CHOICE TO LEAVE.
THE THINGS THAT I GAVE YOU HERE...
'EVERYTHING' ... ARE YOU LISTENING? I'M BEING HONEST WITH YOU...
NOW WE'VE GOT TO FIND THE 'RIGHT ARM'! THE GUYS WHO WERE 10KM AWAY FROM US ARE NOW ONLY 5KM AWAY!
SINCE YOU'RE SO HONEST...
I'LL GIVE YOU BOTH OF THEM.
ALL RIGHT, TAKE THEM, JOHNNY! AND LET'S GET THE HELL OUT OF HERE!

YOU HAVE TO USE ALL OF IT UP.
YEAH...
SURE, WHATEVER... I'LL GLADLY TAKE ALL OF THESE THINGS!
ALL RIGHT? BY SUNSET, YOU HAVE TO USE THEM ALL.
LAST CALL IF YOU WANT THEM BACK.
YOU HAVE TO USE THAT 'GOLD', AND THAT 'DIAMOND', AND THAT 'MONEY', HOWEVER YOU WANT.
I'M GLAD I MET YOU TWO.
THE MUSH-ROOMS, TOO.
YOU JUST HAVE TO USE THEM ALL.
GOODBYE.
SO NOW I'M RELIEVED.
I JUST EXPLAINED EVERYTHING TO YOU, I HOPE YOU UNDERSTAND.
I DID...
?
GYRO, DON'T GO YET. LET'S LISTEN TO HER FOR A SECOND.
WHAT YOU JUST SAID...
...WHAT DO YOU MEAN, 'USE THEM UP'?

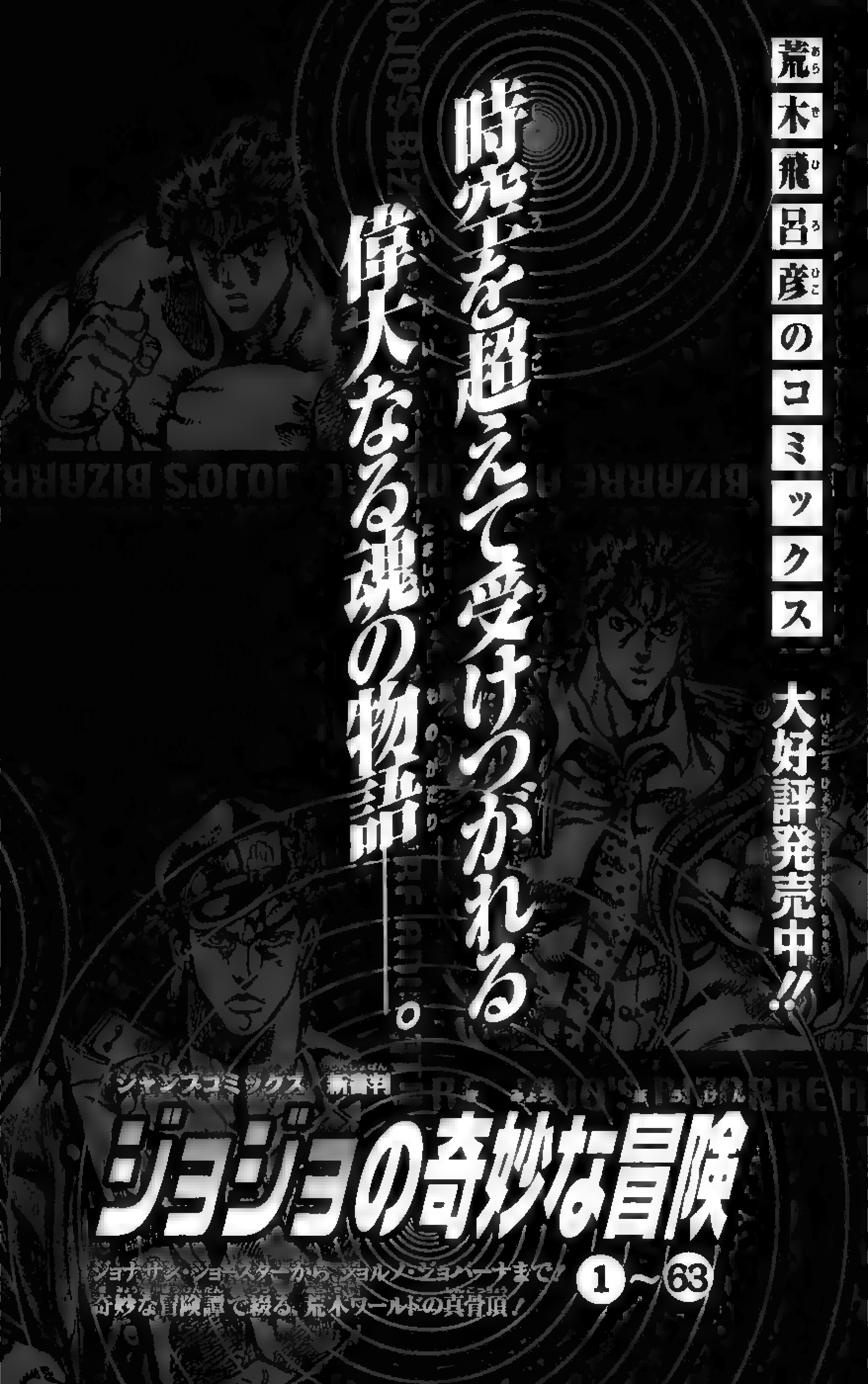
HEY, JOHNNY! LET'S GET GOING!
THAT'S THE RULE...I DON'T KNOW WHO MADE THESE RULES,
BUT THAT'S WHAT 'MOMMY AND DADDY' TOLD ME.
SO, PLEASE, BE SURE TO USE EVERYTHING UP.
BUT YOU HAVE TO DO IT BY THE TIME THE SUN SETS IN THE WEST.
?
'TURN'?
YOU DON'T HAVE TO WORRY ABOUT ME...
I CAN LEAVE THIS PLACE, ONCE THE SUN SETS...
MY 'TURN' IS OVER NOW.
I UNDERSTAND NOW THAT YOU'RE NOT OUR 'ENEMY'... BUT I STILL DON'T UNDERSTAND WHAT YOU'RE SAYING.
BUT DO YOU WANT TO COME ALONG AS WELL?
WE COULD TAKE YOU INTO TOWN, IF YOU WANT.
GYRO! JUST WAIT A SECOND!

THE... UH, 'DIAMOND' AND THE 'MONEY' AND THE 'GOLD'...
GYRO SAYS THAT HE'S GOING TO TAKE THEM.
BUT, I DON'T THINK WE SHOULD...THE 'EARS' ARE DIFFERENT, BUT...
DON'T THESE THINGS BELONG TO YOUR PARENTS? WE'LL RETURN THEM.
GYRO!
WE DON'T REALLY NEED THEM.
BUT YOU CAN'T RETURN THOSE ITEMS ANYMORE.
YOU HAVE TO USE THEM!
IF YOU DON'T USE THEM UP, YOU'RE GOING TO HAVE TO LINE UP WITH THE REST OF THEM.

THE FIRST TWO IN LINE ARE MY MOMMY AND DADDY...
I WONDER HOW LONG IT'S BEEN...
HOW MANY YEARS HAS IT BEEN?
MY DADDY DROPPED THE 'IRON AXE' INTO THE SPRING, AND WE COULDN'T USE UP OUR NEW 'GOLDEN AXE' BY SUNSET...
SO THAT'S WHY THE SPRING TURNED US INTO THIS TREE'S 'FRUIT'...
NO MATTER WHERE YOU RUN, YOU'LL BE TURNED INTO THE 'FRUIT'... YOU WON'T DIE, BUT YOU WON'T AGE...
THE PEOPLE BEHIND DADDY ARE THE ONES WHO'RE STILL WAITING IN LINE.
EVERYONE... THEY WERE HUNTERS AND EXPLORERS WHO FOUND THEIR WAY TO THESE SPRINGS...
AND THEY WERE ALL HONEST, BUT THEY WERE ALL UNABLE TO USE THEIR GOODS UP...
ONCE ONE PERSON TURNS INTO A 'FRUIT',
ONE OTHER PERSON CAN LEAVE... WE HAVE TO 'TAKE TURNS' TO BECOME A GUARDIAN.
IF 'YOU TWO' BECOME FRUITS TONIGHT...

GYRO, I'M TELLING YOU TO WAIT! LISTEN TO WHAT THIS GIRL IS SAYING!!
MOMMY AND DADDY'S TURN WILL COME,
AND THEY'LL BE ABLE TO GET OUT OF THAT TREE!

ドドド
ドドド
ドドド
ドドド
ドドド
11 CREATE THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE! (END)


荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
大好評発売中!!
時空を超えて受けつがれる
偉大なる魂の物語――。
ジャンプコミックス 新書判
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
①～63
ジョナサン・ジョースターから、ジョルノ・ジョバァーナまで、
奇妙な冒険譚で綴る、荒木ワールドの真骨頂！

ジャンプコミックス 新書判 ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part6

# ストーンオーシャン ①～⑰

六代目ジョジョはなんと女性！空条徐倫は、恋人との
ドライブ中に交通事故に遭遇。元恋人と恋人にハメられ
15年の刑務所行きが確定して……！？

●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 ①～㊴ 以下続刊

●豪華本

JOJO6251 荒木飛呂彦の世界

デビュー時からJOJO第4部までのイラスト他、自身の作品背景や秘密を
語ったロングインタビューも収録。

JOJO A GO!GO!

独特の色づかいが魅力の荒木イラスト集他、第5部までのスタンドを解説した
スタンド本、取材を元に「作家・荒木飛呂彦」の本質に迫る荒木本の3冊セット。
美麗ケース入り。

●JUMP j BOOKS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険

原作／荒木飛呂彦 著者／大塚ギチ・山口 宏

JOJO第3部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー！承太郎とディオの
激闘は灼熱の砂漠を抜け、エジプト・カイロへ。果てしなく広がる砂の海で、
彼らの行く手を阻むものは何か…！

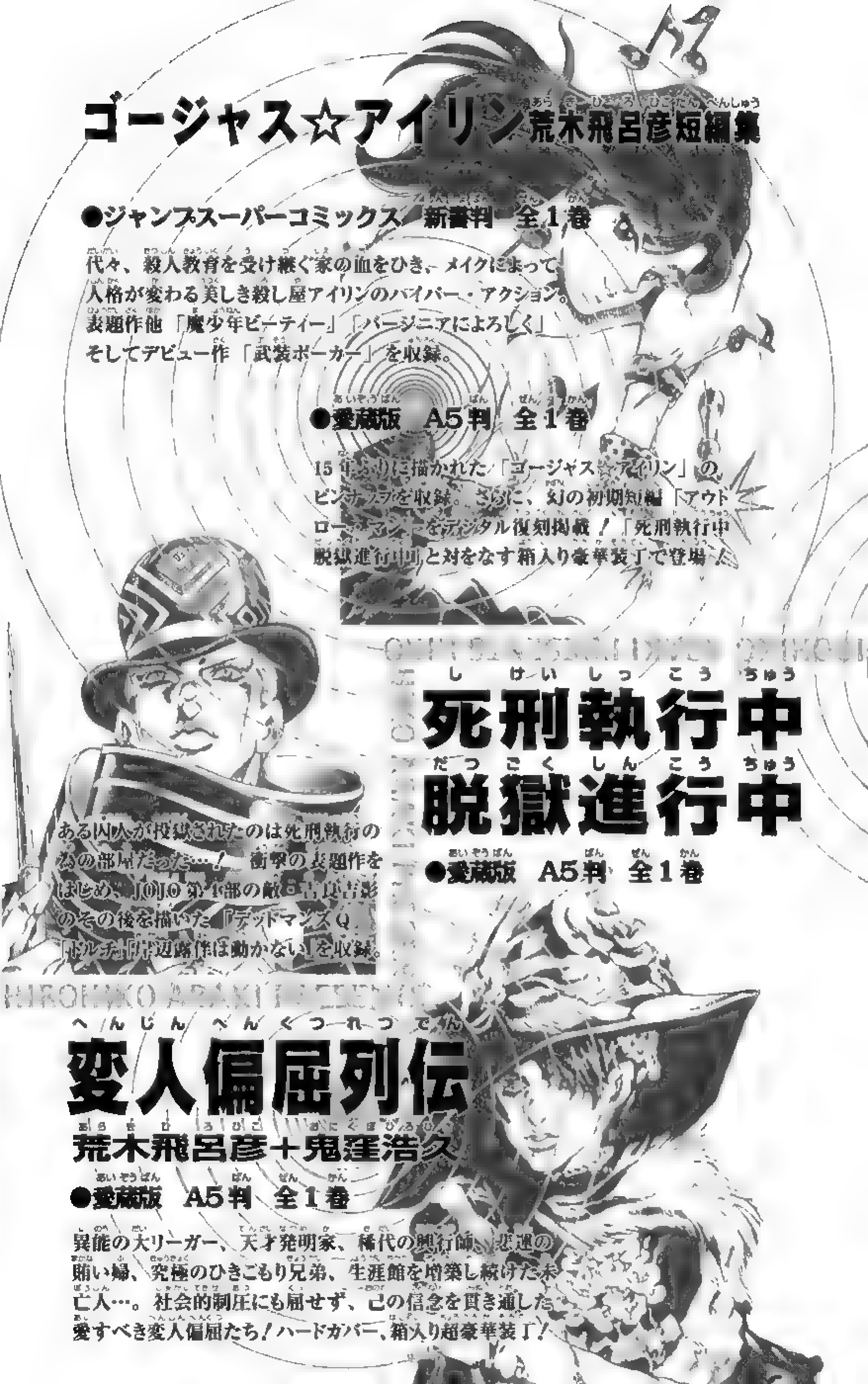
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険Ⅱ

ゴールデンハート／ゴールデンリング

原作／荒木飛呂彦 著者／宮 昌太朗・大塚ギチ

JOJO第5部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー第2弾！
ヴェネチアで次々と起こる大量殺人事件。そしてその現場には、
あのパンナコッタ・フーゴの姿が…！

荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
荒木世界を読みつくせ!!
ありとあらゆる手品やトリックを、自在にこなす不思議な転校生ビーティー。友人の公一と魔少年ビーティーが体験する様々な怪事件に、数々の奇抜なトリックが登場する！ 荒木飛呂彦渾身の連載デビュー作！
魔少年ビーティー
●ジャンプコミックス 新書判 全1巻
●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞ 全1巻
大好評発売中!!
秘密機関ドレスが創り出した最強の生物兵器・バオー。橋沢育朗に寄生し、ドレスから脱走したバオーに、暗殺者たちが次々と襲いかかる！ その時、育朗の中に眠る無敵の生命・バオーが覚醒する!!
バオー来訪者
●ジャンプコミックス 新書判 全2巻
●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞ 全1巻


ゴージャス☆アイリン 荒木飛呂彦短編集
●ジャンプスーパーコミックス 新書判 全1巻
代々、殺人教育を受け継ぐ家の血をひき、メイクによって人格が変わる美しき殺し屋アイリンのハイパー・アクション。表題作他「魔少年ビーティー」「バージニアによろしく」そしてデビュー作「武装ポーカー」を収録。
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
15年ぶりに描かれた「ゴージャス☆アイリン」のピンナップを収録。さらに、幻の初期短編「アウトロー・マン」をデジタル復刻掲載！「死刑執行中脱獄進行中」と対をなす箱入り豪華装丁で登場！
死刑執行中脱獄進行中
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
ある囚人が投獄されたのは死刑執行のための部屋だった…！ 衝撃の表題作をはじめ、JOJO第4部の敵役・吉良吉影のその後を描いた『デッドマンズQ』『ドルチ』『岸辺露伴は動かない』を収録。
変人偏屈列伝
荒木飛呂彦＋鬼窪浩久
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
異能の大リーガー、天才発明家、稀代の興行師、悲運の賄い婦、究極のひきこもり兄弟、生涯館を増築し続けた未亡人…。社会的制圧にも屈せず、己の信念を貫き通した愛すべき変人偏屈たち！ハードカバー、箱入り超豪華装丁！

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

11 黄金長方形をつくれ!

2007年3月7日　第1刷発行

著者　荒木飛呂彦

©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS 2007

編集　ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(5211)2651

発行人　鳥嶋和彦

発行所　株式会社　集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
03(3230)6236(編集部)
電話　東京　03(3230)6191(販売部)
03(3230)6076(読者係)

Printed in Japan

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社

造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社読者係宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

ISBN978-4-08-874336-3 C9979

PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
VOLUME 11, CHAPTER 3
TRANSLATION: FRESHY — EDITING: SHIZUKA JOESTAR
SPECIAL THANKS: FREQUENCY AND JOSEPHSK

project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
VOLUME 12, CHAPTER 1

荒木飛呂彦

There are things called 'angry seasons' for me. It's a time when I strangely start to get aggravated by the world's rules and regulations; but even more bizarrely, when that phase goes away, I start to think that those same things that I was irritated by are now great!

Most recently, two horror movies called 'The Texas Chainsaw Massacre: The Beginning' and 'The Texas Chain Killer: Beginning' came out, and mistakenly I bought the wrong DVD. Hey! (Note: 'The Texas Chain Killer: Beginning' is called 'Hoboken Hollow' in America)

But when my 'angry season' passes, I'll probably think that it was good that I bought two interesting-looking horror movies.

STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン
12

荒木飛呂彦
集英社


9784088743622
1929979003906
ISBN978-4-08-874362-2
C9979 ¥390E
定価 本体390円+税
雑誌 42989−62

ミシガン湖畔の泉でダイヤや札束、そして2つの遺体を手にしたジャイロ達。だが泉には、入手したものを日没までに使いきらなければ「木の実」にされるという恐るべきルールが—!! 謎の敵達が迫る中、条件クリアなるか!?

ジャンプ・コミックス


ジャンプコミックス

★各巻とも好評発売中!!

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| ONE PIECE | 1〜45 | 尾田栄一郎 |
| テニスの王子様 | 1〜37 | 許斐剛 |
| NARUTO−ナルト− | 1〜37 | 岸本斉史 |
| HUNTER×HUNTER | 1〜23 | 冨樫義博 |
| こちら葛飾区亀有公園前派出所 | 1〜154 | 秋本治 |
| アイシールド21 | 1〜24 | 稲垣理一郎・村田雄介 |
| BLEACH | 1〜27 | 久保帯人 |
| ピューと吹く!ジャガー | 1〜12 | うすた京介 |
| 真説ボボボーボ・ボーボボ | 1〜4 | 澤井啓夫 |
| DEATH NOTE | 1〜12 | 大場つぐみ・小畑健 |
| 銀魂−ぎんたま− | 1〜18 | 空知英秋 |
| 家庭教師ヒットマンREBORN! | 1〜15 | 天野明 |
| D.Gray-man | 1〜11 | 星野桂 |
| ムヒョとロージーの魔法律相談事務所 | 1〜11 | 西義之 |
| 魔人探偵脳噛ネウロ | 1〜11 | 松井優征 |
| 太臓もて王サーガ | 1〜6 | 大亜門 |
| メゾン・ド・ペンギン | 1〜3 | 大石浩二 |
| エム×ゼロ | 1〜3 | 叶恭弘 |
| To LOVEる-とらぶる- | 1〜3 | 矢吹健太朗・長谷見沙貴 |
| OVER TIME | 1〜3 | 天野洋一 |
| P2! -let's Play Pingpong!- | 1〜2 | 江尻立真 |
| BLUE DRAGONラルΩグラド | 1 | 鷹野常雄・小畑健 |
| 神力契約者M&Y | 1〜2 | 暁月あきら |
| 重機人間ユンボル | | 武井宏之 |
| DRAGON BALL | 1〜42 | 鳥山明 |
| SLAM DUNK | 1〜31 | 井上雄彦 |
| 武装錬金 | 1〜10 | 和月伸宏 |
| 謎の村雨くん | 1〜3 | いとうみきお |
| HAND'S | | 板倉雄一 |
| 冒険王ビィト | 1〜12 | 三条陸・稲田浩司 |
| 風飛び一斗 | 1〜25 | 門馬もとき |
| CLAYMORE | 1〜12 | 八木教広 |
| 魔砲使い黒姫 | 1〜12 | 片倉・狼組・政憲 |
| ギャグマンガ日和 | 1〜8 | 増田こうすけ |
| 黒いラブレター | 1〜6 | 東谷文仁 |
| NORA−ノラ− | 1〜9 | 筧一成 |
| ロザリオとバンパイア | 1〜8 | 池田晃久 |
| たたかえ!たらんてら | 1〜3 | 葉生田采丸 |
| 動乱 | 1〜3 | 松元桜・大賀浅木 |
| テガミバチ | 1 | 浅田弘幸 |
| 警察犬キンゾー | 1 | 佐々木恵 |
| BASTARD!! | 1〜24 | 萩原一至 |
| STEEL BALL RUN | 1〜12 | 荒木飛呂彦 |
| 忍空〜SECOND STAGE 干支忍編〜 | 1〜3 | 桐山光侍 |
| 遊☆戯☆王R | 1〜4 | 高橋和希・伊藤彰 |
| 遊☆戯☆王GX | 1 | 高橋和希・影山なおゆき |
| スライムもりもり | 1〜2 | かねこ統 |
| デジモンネクスト | 1〜2 | 浜崎達也・岡野剛 |

インターネットでも集英社のコミックスが購入できます。
書店受取なら送料無料!
http://www.s-manga.net/

JUMP COMICS

JOJO'S BIZARRE ADVENTURE Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

Qualifications for the Corpse, Qualifications for Friendship

vol.12

# ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE
1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を明けた！5th.STAGE、新たな回転の技術により威力を増した爪弾で、サンドマンを倒したジョニィ。しかし、負傷したジャイロ達のもとにやってきたホット・パンツに、ジョニィの持つ遺体「左腕」「脊椎」を奪われてしまった！6th.STAGE、「両耳」「右腕」のあるミシガン湖畔へやってきた
全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！
GOAL NEW YORK
1st.STAGE 15,000m
2nd.STAGE 1,200km
3rd.STAGE 510km
4th.STAGE 1,250km
5th.STAGE 780km
6th.STAGE 690km
START SAN DIEGO
ジャイロ達は、大木の中で暮らす謎の少女と出会う。そして、大木の横の泉に落とした物が、高価な物と共に現れる事を知る。泉の能力で、ダイヤや札束…そして「両耳」「右腕」を手に入れたジャイロ達。しかし、少女は「それらを日暮れまでに使い切らないと、泉により『木の実』にされてしまう」と忠告してきた…。謎の11人の追っ手が迫る中、泉のルールをクリアする事ができるのか!?
『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km 優勝賞金5千万ドル!!(60億円)
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！
そして1890年9月25日 午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！
ジャイロ・ツェペリ
ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家転覆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。
ジョニィ・ジョースター
元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見い出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。「脊椎の一部」を持つ。
ファニー・ヴァレンタイン
第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。遺体の一部「心臓」を持つ。
ホット・パンツ
何者かの命で遺体を集めているが、大統領側の人間ではないらしい。遺体の一部「左腕」、「脊椎」を持つ。
ディエゴ・ブランドー
通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。
ルーシー・スティール
スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!? 遺体の一部「右眼」を持つ。
スティーブン・スティール
40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.12

## CONTENTS

**Qualifications for the Corpse, Qualifications for Friendship**

#46
THE PROMISED LAND: SUGAR MOUNTAIN ② 7

#47
THE PROMISED LAND: SUGAR MOUNTAIN ③ 71

#48
TUBULAR BELLS ① 125

#46
THE PROMISED LAND
SUGAR MOUNTAIN
PART ②

Milwaukee
Railroad
Lake Michigan
Current Position
Woods
Location of Sugar Mountain's Tree
To Chicago
THAT 'GIRL'...
SHE SAID FOR US TO 'USE EVERYTHING UP'...
ALL OF THE MONEY...
AND THOSE PEOPLE THAT WERE IN THE TREE... WHAT WAS THAT? WERE THOSE 'ENGRAVINGS'?
I GET IT ALREADY, JOHNNY...!
I KNOW THAT WE HAVE TO USE THE MONEY, BUT...
THAT'S NOT THE BIG ISSUE HERE...! IT'S EASY ENOUGH TO SPEND MONEY.
BUT WHAT'S MORE IMPORTANT HERE IS...
THE 'ELEVEN' ENEMIES THAT ARE ONLY 30 MINUTES AWAY FROM US.
THEY HAVEN'T SPED UP, BUT THEY HAVEN'T CHANGED THEIR PACE AT ALL, EITHER...
I DON'T KNOW WHO THE HELL THESE GUYS ARE, BUT I DON'T WANT TO HAVE TO FIGHT THEM... THEY'RE 'TOO' ORGANIZED, EVEN MORE THAN ARMY MEN.

HOW FAR ARE WE FROM MILWAUKEE?
ABOUT SIX TO SEVEN HOURS.
AND IT'S STARTING TO SNOW AGAIN... I HOPE IT'LL HIDE OUR 'TRACKS'.
WE'LL GET THEM OFF OUR TRAIL.
HEY, JOHNNY... HOW MUCH CASH DO WE HAVE AGAIN?
WE HAVE ABOUT... 50,000 DOLLARS IN CASH, AND A PIECE OF SOLID GOLD.
OH, AND A DIAMOND.
HEEEEY! YOU THERE, OLD GUY!
CAN I HAVE A BIT OF YOUR TIME?
I WANT TO ASK YOU SOMETHING... YEAH, YOU!

......
IS ALL OF THIS YOUR LAND?
YOU OWN IT, RIGHT?
I KNOW IT'S SUDDEN, BUT WE WANT TO BUY THIS LAND.
WE DON'T CARE IF IT'S JUST A BARREN PIECE OF LAND ON THE EDGE OF THIS FIELD. YOU UP FOR SELLING IT?
WE HAVE 50,000 IN CASH RIGHT HERE. WE NEED TO BUY IT RIGHT NOW.
WE'LL EVEN GIVE YOU SOME 'GOLD'.
THIS 'DIAMOND', TOO. AMAZING, HUH? IT'S PROBABLY THOUSANDS OF CARATS...
THIS IS A GREAT DEAL, YOU KNOW... I THINK IT'S DEFINITELY FOR YOUR BENEFIT.
...

JOHNNY!
SCORE!
(EVEN IF WE DID GET TOTALLY RIPPED OFF... IT WAS A PIECE OF CAKE, RIGHT?)
(USING UP MONEY IS NOTHING.)
YOU WANT LAND? WE'VE GOT LOTS OF USELESS LAND.
AND YOU WANT THEM?
BUT I REFUSE.
HUH?!
YOU TWO ARE TRYING TO SWINDLE ME, AREN'T YOU?!
I'M NOT FALLING FOR YOUR DIRTY FAKE MONEY!
NO WAY!
YOU DAMN FOREIGNERS! I'LL KILL YA!

I'VE NEVER EVEN SEEN A HUNDRED-DOLLAR BILL IN MY LIFE! THEY'VE GOTTA BE FAKE!
HEH, SURE, HOT SHOT!
DON'T YOU HAVE ONE-DOLLAR BILLS, OR COINS?!
AND BESIDES, I HAVE A GOOD EYE! THAT GOLD AND THAT DIAMOND, THEY SHINE TOO MUCH, THEY'VE GOTTA BE FAKE! DUMBASS!
IF WE WERE GONNA RIP YOU OFF, WE'D DO IT BETTER! JUST STOP AND THINK ABOUT IT FOR TWO GODDAMN SECONDS! OF COURSE THEY'RE REAL!
HEY, CAREFUL WITH THAT SHOTGUN, YOU BASTARD!
FAKE?
THIS FINE CRAFTSMANSHIP... ANYONE COULD TELL THAT IT'S REAL. RIGHT?
HERE, TRY IT ON.
THEN I'LL GIVE YOU THIS WATCH.
IT'S A FAMOUS AND RENOWNED BRAND WATCH.
HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY....
HE'S STARTING TO PISS ME OFF...
IT'S NO USE, GYRO.
WE NEED TO GO TO A TOWN... WE CAN'T SPEND OUR MONEY AT A PLACE LIKE THIS.

GYRO...
...DOWN...
LOOK DOWN...!
Y... YOUR FEET...!
LOOK AT YOUR FEET!
SEE?
CRACK CRACK
......
......

GYRO!
?
THE WATCH, GYRO!
GET THAT 'WRISTWATCH' BACK!
W... WHOA, WHAT THE HELL IS THIS?!
IT'S... COMING OUT OF THE 'GROUND'...!
MY LEGS! TH...THIS...!
HURRY UP AND GET THAT WATCH BACK FROM THE MAN, RIGHT NOW!

Is Sugar Mountain a 'Stand user'? The 'Stand User' is probably this 'tree'.
If you drop something in the 'spring' near the tree...
It reappears as an expensive and/or improved version of the same object!
This one, or that one, which?
Did you drop the 'golden axe'? Or the 'iron axe'?
If you answer truthfully:
'Honest'. You get to keep the expensive items.
If you lie:
'Greedy'. The tree will rip your tongue out and kill you.
But the items you obtained must be used up by sundown through 'buying and selling'.
If you couldn't use everything up:
The 'tree' will turn you into its fruit.
The honest people who've in line for years and years
Once their turn comes, they have to fulfill their role as the guardian of the tree until someone else drops something in the spring.
Until then, they cannot wander away from the realm of the tree.
You can't just give away the things given to you and you can't just throw them away, either.
If you use them up, you're free.
Name: Sugar Mountain
Age is estimated to be around 66 (?)
How long has she been here for?
We estimate that to be around 50 years.

I'M GLAD I WAS ABLE TO MEET YOU TWO! WHAT WAS I THE GUARDIAN OF, ALL THESE YEARS? I FINALLY FEEL LIKE I KNOW, NOW...
THOSE 'TWO CORPSE PARTS'... THEY WERE WAITING FOR THE 'CHOSEN' ONES... THE ONES WHO 'DESERVED' TO HAVE THEM...
AND THAT'S WHY WE WERE KEPT HERE FOR SO LONG... AND NOW, ALL OF US, INCLUDING MY MOMMY AND MY DADDY, CAN LEAVE THIS PLACE.
AS I TOLD YOU, YOU TWO HAVE TO KEEP ON USING, AND USING, AND USE EVERYTHING UP...
YOU'RE NOT 'ALLOWED' TO GIVE THEM AWAY, NOR CAN YOU ALLOW THEM TO BE STOLEN.
BUT SUNDOWN... ALL RIGHT...?

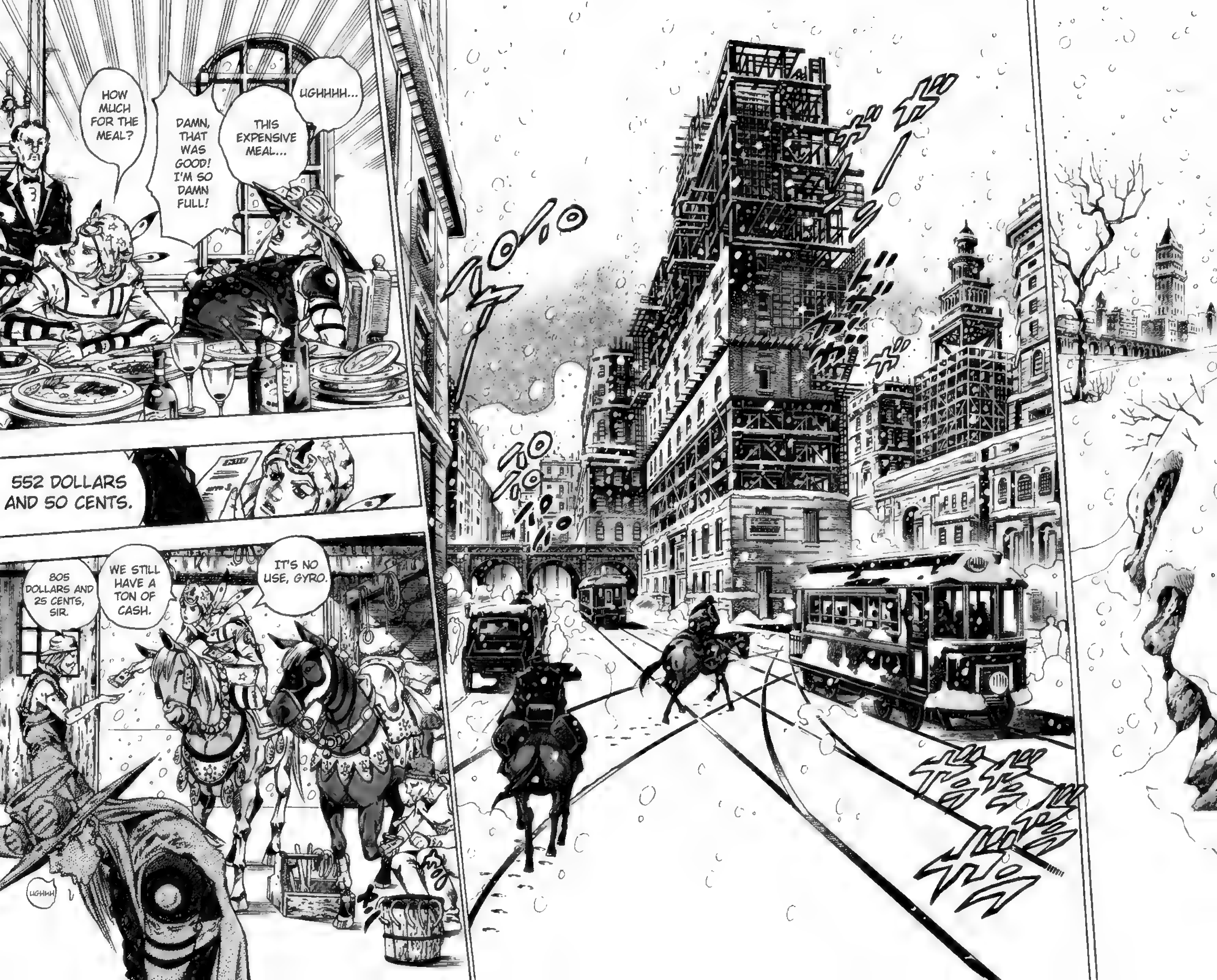
!!
......
ALL RIGHT! THE 'RIGHT ARM' WENT INTO MY OWN, JOHNNY!
NOW WE HAVE 'BOTH' CORPSE PARTS! ONCE WE FINISH OUR BREAKFAST, WE'RE GETTING BACK ON OUR HORSE!
WE'RE GONNA GET OUT OF HERE!

COME ON, GYRO!
THE WRISTWATCH!
GET THAT WRISTWATCH BACK! WE HAVE TO HAVE A FAIR, EQUAL TRADE!

……
……
THAT TREE IS A 'DEVIL'S PALM'.
GYRO.

WHENEVER WE WERE ABOUT TO GET A 'CORPSE PART', EVER SINCE ARIZONA, THERE'S ALWAYS BEEN SOME SORT OF TEST...
THAT 'SPRING' IS PART OF THAT 'DEVIL'S PALM'.
WE'RE BEING 'TESTED', TO SEE IF WE'RE WORTHY OF THE 'CORPSE PARTS'!
THAT'S THE MOST IMPORTANT ISSUE AT HAND, RIGHT NOW...!
WE HAVEN'T TRULY GOTTEN THE 'CORPSE PARTS' YET!

IS THAT A 'MATSUTAKE'..? HOW DIDJA MANAGE TO GET ONE IN THIS SNOW?
IN YOUR LUGGAGE...
LOOKS GOOD... I'M WILLIN' TO TRADE, FOR THAT.
IF YOU'RE FINE WITH THAT 'HILL' ALL THE WAY IN THE BACK.
YOU TWO, WHAT THE 'ELL ARE YA PRATTLIN' ON ABOUT OVER THERE?!
THIS AIN'T GOOD FOR MY SON! IF YOU DON'T WANNA BE SHOT, SCRAM! GET OFF OF MY LAND!
...WAIT! WAIT A SECOND, YOU TWO...
THIS IS BAD, GYRO... WE HAVE TO HURRY...
BUT IT'LL SMOOTH OVER ONCE WE GET TO TOWN... LET'S GET THIS OVER WITH...
YEAH... I WAS TAKING THIS TOO LIGHTLY. WE'VE GOTTA GO WITH WHAT THAT 'GIRL' SAID.
......
FOR THAT HILL...
YOU GOT A DOCUMENT OF OWNERSHIP?


UGHHHH...
THIS EXPENSIVE MEAL...
DAMN, THAT WAS GOOD! I'M SO DAMN FULL!
HOW MUCH FOR THE MEAL?
552 DOLLARS AND 50 CENTS.
IT'S NO USE, GYRO.
WE STILL HAVE A TON OF CASH.
805 DOLLARS AND 25 CENTS, SIR.
UGHHH

HEY, HEY, HEY, YOU.
DON'T THROW AWAY THOSE OLD 'HORSESHOES' JUST YET.
PUT THOSE ONTO THOSE TWO HORSES OVER THERE.
AND LET THEM RUN AROUND FOR A WHILE UNTIL SUNSET.
HOW MUCH DO YOU WANT FOR IT?
MAYBE WE CAN CONFUSE THE 'ELEVEN' GUYS ON OUR TRAIL, WITH THAT.

AGHH! NEVER MIND!
FORGET IT, MY MISTAKE!
HEY, LADIES...
YOU WANT A DRINK ON ME?
THIS IS A MAGNIFICENT DIAMOND...
45 CARATS! IT'S WORTH AT LEAST FIVE HUNDRED MILLION.
AS FOR THE GOLD, IT'S WORTH ABOUT THIRTY MILLION.
FIVE...
ALL RIGHT...
EXCHANGE IT FOR CASH!

NEXT WEEK...
IT'S A VERY GOOD EXCHANGE.
PLEASE COME CLAIM YOUR MONEY NEXT WEEK, ON MONDAY MORNING.
WE NEED YOU TO EXCHANGE IT NOW.
IMPOSSIBLE, SIR.
WE SIMPLY DON'T HAVE THAT MUCH CASH IN THIS TOWN AT THE MOMENT.
LISTEN UP...! WE NEED THAT MONEY RIGHT NOW! WE WANT TO EXCHANGE IT NOW!
I DON'T CARE HOW MUCH, HOW MUCH CASH CAN YOU GIVE ME?
GYRO!

IS THERE ANYTHING IN THIS TOWN THAT WE COULD BUY IMMEDIATELY FOR THIS DIAMOND AND OUR MONEY?! TELL ME!
SHIT!
I GET IT, I'M NOT SUPPOSED TO JUST GIVE IT AWAY, FINE!
ALL RIGHT, ALL RIGHT, ALL RIGHT ALREADY!
FINE! THEN TELL ME THIS...
?
......
WELL, THAT BUILDING IS CURRENTLY UP FOR SALE...
IF YOU GIVE THEM EXTRA, YOU'LL BE ABLE TO BUY IT IMMEDIATELY.
IF YOU WANT, I'LL HANDLE THE EXCHANGE AND ALL THE CALCULATIONS MYSELF, SIRS.

A BUILDING...
ALL RIGHT!
GOOD! I'LL BUY THAT BUILDING, THEN!
AHH, IT'S LIKE A MASSIVE WEIGHT'S BEEN LIFTED OFF MY SHOULDERS... I WAS WORRIED THERE FOR A BIT, BUT SEE, JOHNNY? IT WAS NOTHING.
SO...
THIS IS YOUR 'CHANGE' FOR HAVING BOUGHT THE BUILDING WITH YOUR GOLD AND YOUR DIAMOND...
THIS, I AM ABLE TO GIVE YOU IN CASH. 2,362,5000 DOLLARS.
IN ADDITION, THERE IS A RESTAURANT AND PAYING TENANTS ALREADY PRESENT IN SAID BUILDING...
THIS IS THEIR RENT PAYMENTS, AS WELL AS ADDITIONAL MONEY EARNED.

IT IS CURRENTLY 4 O'CLOCK, BUT EVERY DAY, BEFORE 5, YOU'LL GET AN ADDITIONAL TENANT PAYMENT.
AND, IN REGARDS TO THIS PIECE OF LAND THAT YOU OWN...
THEY FOUND AN IRON VEIN RIGHT UNDERNEATH YOUR LAND.
THEY'VE ALREADY PAID YOU IN FULL FOR RIGHTS TO INVESTIGATE SAID PROPERTY.
WHAT?! WE HAVE EVEN MORE CASH NOW!
I'M GLAD TO BE OF SERVICE.
H... HOW ARE WE... SUPPOSED TO USE EVERYTHING UP..? NO, JUST... IT'LL BE EASY TO USE UP CASH...
GYRO... WHAT TIME DO YOU THINK SUNSET IS FOR TODAY?
A LITTLE PAST 5...?

OUTSIDE...
LOOK AT THAT, GYRO.
THOSE TWO HORSES THAT THEY'RE LEADING...

THOSE ARE THE HORSES THAT WE...
EXCHANGED OUR 'HORSE-SHOES' WITH, AND SET LOOSE OUTSIDE...!
(THEY'VE BEEN CAUGHT!) SO THAT MEANS THAT THEY'RE THE ONES...!

THERE ARE ELEVEN OF THEM!

?
......
THEY'RE GOING TO FIND US HERE!
THIS IS BAD! EVEN MORE THAN THE SUN SETTING, OR HAVING TO USE UP OUR MONEY!

SHIT! HOW MUCH MONEY DO WE HAVE NOW?!
IN TOTAL, WE HAVE ABOUT 30 MILLION DOLLARS!
AND WE HAVE TO GET RID OF THAT BUILDING CONTRACT, TOO!
IT WAS ONLY 500 DOLLARS FOR THE MOST EXPENSIVE BOTTLE OF WINE IN THE MOST EXPENSIVE RESTAURANT HERE, GYRO!
HOW ARE WE SUPPOSED TO USE ALL OF THIS UP?!
SHOULD WE BUY A CAR? OR MAYBE HIRE A FAMOUS ACTRESS TO PUT ON A SHOW?
HEY, I'M NOT GONNA BE THE ONE HAVING TO DEAL WITH THAT, ALRIGHT?!
HOW ABOUT YOU MARRY SOMEONE AND DIVORCE HER RIGHT AWAY AND GIVE HER COMPENSATION?

IT...SHIT, IT'S NOT JUST MY FEET, NOW...!
THERE'S SOMETHING IN MY GODDAMN EYE, TOO!
BUT JOHNNY... WAIT A SECOND.
I'VE GOT IT!
THAT'S THE ONE WAY WE CAN LOSE ALL THIS SHIT BEFORE THE OTHERS CATCH UP TO US!

10 5 24 16 33
キャ キャ
1000

GYRO, THIS IS IMPOSSIBLE!
IMPOS-SIBLE
WE CAN'T USE THIS MONEY ON A GAMBLE WHERE THE BASIS OF IT IS US 'LOSING'!
(TO LOSE...)
NO!
I DON'T THINK SO, JOHNNY.
I ALREADY PLACED A BET, BUT NOTHING'S HAPPENING.
THIS ROULETTE WHEEL DOESN'T HAVE A 'OO' SPOT.
SO...IF WE BET ON EITHER RED OR BLACK, THE CHANCES OF US WINNING ARE 50:50.
IF THE PROBABILITY IS 50:50, THEN WE'RE NOT NECESSARILY PLAYING TO LOSE.
RED, 14.
IT'S RED, 14.
!!!

ACTU-ALLY,
'EVERY-THING', ON 'RED'...
NEVER MIND. 'RED'.
JOHNNY, OUR ENEMIES ARE ON OUR TRAIL.
WATCH THE ENTRANCE FOR ME.
WE DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME, SO ONCE WE GO BROKE, WE'RE OUTTA HERE.
YEAH.
RED?
WE JUST WON, GYRO!
NOW WE HAVE 1000 MORE DOLLARS!
YEAH, WELL.
THAT'S GAMBLING, JOHNNY.
......
HEY,
CAN WE GO ALL IN? 30 MILLION...
ALL ON 'BLACK'!

ザイン
......
......
...AND HERE'S THE SPIN...

GYRO!? THERE'S SOMETHING WRONG! MY FACE...
G...

ギョロ

GYRO, W...WHAT IS THIS?!
WHAT'S GOING ON?!
SHIT, THIS IS BAD!
I CAN'T MOVE MY ARMS, THEY'RE ALREADY STUCK TO THE TABLE!
THIS DEALER... HE JUST...!
THE WAY HE FLICKED THE BALL IN...!
I SAW IT...HE'S 'CHEATING'!
AND THE WAY THAT THE 'BALL' IS SPINNING ...
HE'S THE KIND THAT CAN AIM THE BALL SO IT LANDS ON A CERTAIN SPOT!
THE WAY IT'S SPINNING, IT'S GONNA FALL IN A 'BLACK' SPACE!
AND I SAW IT HAPPEN!

SHIT! NOW I KNOW THAT I'M GOING TO LOSE THIS ROULETTE!
AND THAT'S WHY I'M TURNING INTO THAT TREE'S GODDAMN 'FRUIT'!
WE'RE GONNA BE IN DEEP SHIT IF YOU DON'T!
JOHNNY! THIS BET IS VOID, NOW THAT THE BASIS OF IT IS FOR US TO LOSE! HURRY UP AND TAKE THE CHIPS OFF THE TABLE!

PLEASE BE CAREFUL, SIR, THE BET HAS 'ALREADY BEEN CALLED'.
YOU'RE NOT ALLOWED TO TAKE BACK THE BETS THAT YOU'VE MADE.
PLEASE, LET GO OF THOSE CHIPS.
PLEASE,
IMME-DIATELY GET YOUR HANDS OFF OF THE TABLE.

WHO THE FUCK CARES ABOUT THOSE BASTARDS!? JUST TAKE THE CHIPS OFF OF THE TABLE!
JOHNNY, THIS THING IS TRYING TO DRAG US UNDER-GROUND!
I...I CAN'T, GYRO...
MY FINGERS... AND MY HANDS, TOO! THEY'RE BOTH STUCK TO THE TABLE!
THE BALL IN THE ROULETTE... GYRO...
WHAT 'NUMBER' IS IT GOING TO FALL IN?! WHICH 'BLACK' SPACE?!

WHAT ARE YOU TWO DOING?
THIS IS YOUR LAST WARNING. I'M TELLING YOU...
TO TAKE YOUR GODDAMN HAND OFF OF THE TABLE!

ドド
ドドドドド

OH SHIT... THEY FOUND US.
GYRO!! I'M ASKING YOU 'WHICH SPACE' THE BALL IS GOING TO LAND ON!!
ANSWER ME!! WHAT NUMBER?!
NUMBER 6, JOHNNY! 'BLACK, 6'!

THE BALL HAS LANDED ON NUMBER...
'6, BLACK'.

'RED, 27'...
'TUSK'... MY MOVING BULLET-HOLE!
I MADE A 'HOLE' ON THE SIDE OF THE 'BLACK, 6' SPOT.
BUT..SHIT! NOW WE HAVE DOUBLE THE MONEY! 60 MILLION BUCKS!
THE ROOTS ARE GONE NOW...

JOHNNY, BEHIND YOU! ONE OF THE 'ENEMIES' IS COMING CLOSER!

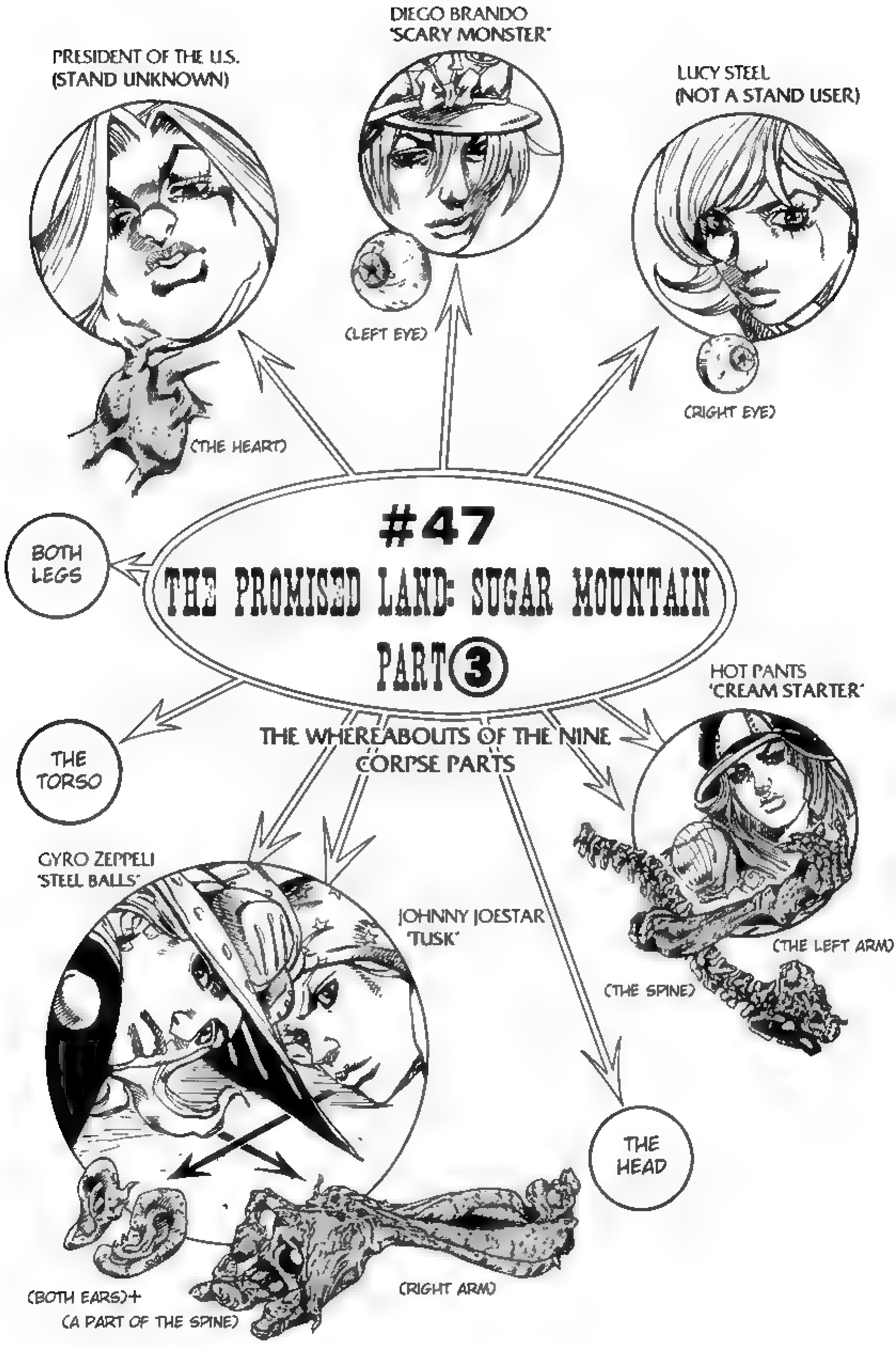
ズン
ズン
ドドドド

GUH

## 'SUGAR MOUNTAIN'S SPRING'

ANYTHING DROPPED IN THE FOUNTAIN WILL COME BACK AS SOMETHING INCREDIBLY RARE OR VALUABLE. FOR EXAMPLE, AN IRON AXE WILL BECOME A 'GOLD OR SILVER' AXE... BUT, THOSE THINGS MUST BE COMPLETELY USED UP BY SUNDOWN. THOSE THAT FAIL ARE DOOMED TO BECOME A 'GUARDIAN' OF THE SPRINGS.

JoJo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 12, Chapter 2
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar



#47
THE PROMISED LAND: SUGAR MOUNTAIN
PART 3
THE WHEREABOUTS OF THE NINE CORPSE PARTS
PRESIDENT OF THE U.S.
(STAND UNKNOWN)
(THE HEART)
DIEGO BRANDO
'SCARY MONSTER'
(LEFT EYE)
LUCY STEEL
(NOT A STAND USER)
(RIGHT EYE)
BOTH LEGS
THE TORSO
HOT PANTS
'CREAM STARTER'
(THE LEFT ARM)
(THE SPINE)
GYRO ZEPPELI
'STEEL BALLS'
JOHNNY JOESTAR
'TUSK'
THE HEAD
(BOTH EARS)+
(A PART OF THE SPINE)
(RIGHT ARM)

I GOT SHOT FROM BEHIND?!
BE-HIND ME!

GUH!

DIE.
WHAT !?

ギャル ギャル ギャル ギャル

UGH!
GUH... URGH...

WHAT'S GOING ON...?!
WH...WHAT ARE THESE PEOPLE...?!
'TWO PEOPLE CAME OUT OF ONE MAN'S BACK'...!
HN.
EVEN THOUGH MY 'NAIL BULLET' WENT RIGHT THROUGH THE FIRST MAN, THE OTHER TWO JUST SPRUNG UP FROM BEHIND, COMPLETELY UNHARMED...
AT LEAST, THAT'S WHAT IT LOOKED LIKE!

THEY'RE COMING AGAIN!
...
NO, JOHNNY!
THE BODY ON THE FAR RIGHT!
THEY'RE COMING OUT OF THE 'RIGHT' —

N...
NO!
WHAT?!
SHIT...
HIDE, JOHNNY...
HIDE! GO TO THE BACK OF THE ROOM!

THEY'RE GOING TO ATTACK US FROM ALL OVER!

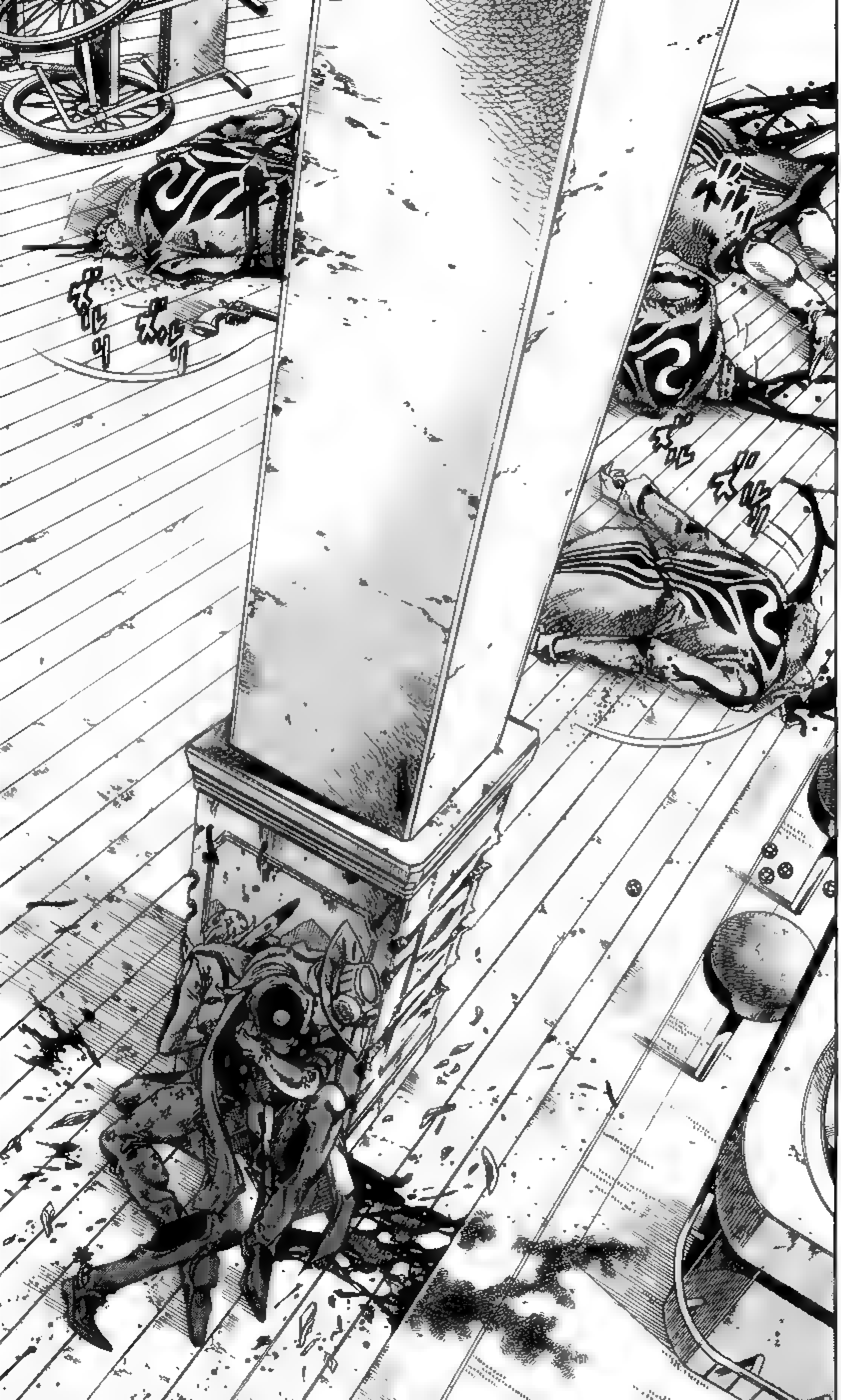
……
THOSE 'MARKINGS'! GYRO!
THOSE GUYS CAME OUT OF THE 'MARKS' ON THE MAN'S BACK! THAT'S WHAT THIS 'STAND' DOES! AND IF THERE WERE ELEVEN OF THEM INITIALLY…
THAT MEANS THAT THERE ARE STILL SEVEN MORE OF THEM, HIDDEN IN THOSE CORPSES!
YEAH, AND TO MAKE THINGS WORSE…
THEY'RE JUMPING FROM 'CORPSE TO CORPSE', FROM 'MARK TO MARK'…
LOOKS LIKE THEY CAN HOP BETWEEN THEIR BUDDIES, NO PROBLEM.
THEY'RE GONNA COME OUT OF THE GUY WHO YOU JUST TOOK OUT…

SLIDE
HOW MANY 'NAIL BULLETS' DO YOU HAVE LEFT?!
DON'T WASTE YOUR BULLETS, JOHNNY!
HOW MANY DID YOU ALREADY USE?
AH!
AT THE ROULETTE WHEEL...I'D ALREADY FIRED ONE AT THAT POINT...
ONLY ONE MORE... I REMEMBER ...!

THE SEVEN GUYS THAT ARE LEFT PROBABLY DON'T KNOW HOW MANY BULLETS WE'VE GOT LEFT, BUT MY 'STEEL BALL' CAN ONLY TAKE DOWN TWO OF THEM AT ONCE.
AND SHIT, THEY SHOT MY RIGHT ARM...
THEY SEVERED MY ARTERY... IN THIS CONDITION, I'LL BLEED TO DEATH IN A MINUTE OR TWO.
THAT'S PRETTY DAMN SOON.
HAHH
HAHH
HAA HH
HAHH
...IS IT POSSIBLE TO ESCAPE FROM HERE...?
TO GET OUT OF THIS GAMBLING ROOM...
IN SHORT, AWAY FROM THOSE BASTARDS

I NEED TO SEW THIS UP, OR ELSE I'M IN DEEP SHIT.
JOHNNY, DO YOU HAVE A PIECE OF 'STRING'?
?
A PIECE OF 'STRING'! I DON'T CARE WHAT KIND IT IS!
I NEED TO SEW THIS UP RIGHT NOW! IF I DON'T FIX THIS SEVERED ARTERY, I'M DONE FOR!
I...I DON'T HAVE ANY, GYRO.
I DON'T HAVE ANY 'HERBAL TEA', EITHER.
IF I HAD SOME, MY 'TUSK' WOULD RECOVER FASTER...
BUT THE 'MINT' AND THE 'STRINGS' ARE BOTH IN MY BACKPACK.
OUR THINGS ARE OVER THERE, WHERE THE 'ENEMIES' ARE!
HANH
HANH
HEY, YOU GUYS, OVER THERE.
YEAH YOU, THE ONES UNDER THE TABLE...
CAN YOU GET ME SOME 'STRING'?

FRANKLY, THIS IS A BIG HASSLE FOR ALL OF US. EITHER GET THE HELL OUT OF HERE, OR HURRY UP AND GET SHOT AND GET THIS THING OVER WITH.
LISTEN UP, TOUGH GUY.
WE'RE STILL IN THE MIDDLE OF GAMBLIN'.
I'VE GOT A DATE IN A FEW, TOO. THIS HAS NOTHIN' TO DO WITH US.
SOME 'STRING'.
PLEASE!
I NEED YOU GUYS TO FIND ME A PIECE OF 'STRING' ...!
THERE'S NO TIME FOR THAT! THIS IS REALLY GETTING BAD...!
G...
GYRO!
4 HUNDRED THOUSAND, JUST FOR A PIECE OF 'STRING'.
IT'S WORTH AT LEAST 3 OR 4 HUNDRED THOUSAND.
HOW ABOUT FOR THAT WATCH?
RIGHT NOW! COME ON, HURRY IT UP!



THE CORPSE IS COMING CLOSER!
THE GUYS HIDDEN IN THE MARK ARE DRAGGING HIM OVER HERE! THEY'RE GOING TO TRY TO GET AROUND US!
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH....

GYRO! THE DEAD GUY'S 'PISTOL' IS STILL LYING THERE ON THE GROUND...
THERE ARE STILL SOME BULLETS LEFT IN THERE... ALONG WITH MY REMAINING NAIL BULLET AND YOUR 'STEEL BALL'...
IF WE CAN JUST GET TO THAT PISTOL...

WE'LL STILL HAVE A CHANCE AT GETTING OUT OF HERE ALIVE!
MUMBLE MUMBLE
GYRO, ARE YOU LISTENING ?!
THERE'S NO WAY THAT HE'LL LET US HAVE THAT GUN... FORGET IT.
RIGHT NOW, WE NEED 'STRING'.
HE'S TRYING TO LURE US OUT WITH THAT PISTOL... IF WE TRY TO GET IT, WE'LL DIE, FOR SURE.
BUT THAT'S THE ONLY THING WE CAN DO!
EVEN IF IT'S A TRAP... IT'S OUR ONLY CHANCE.
SHIT, THEY'RE HERE! THEY'VE SURROUNDED THIS PILLAR!
THEY'RE COMING...!

THEY'RE GOING TO ATTACK US FROM ALL SIDES!
UGH!
GUH!
MY LAST SHOT...!

I MADE HIM TURN HIS WRISTS WITH MY NAIL BULLET'S SPIN! NOW! WE NEED TO GET THAT PISTOL!
I'M TELLING YOU THAT YOU'LL BE SHOT! STAY DOWN!
THAT PISTOL IS USELESS, THEY'LL NEVER LET YOU HAVE IT!
WHAT?!

AGHHH!

UGH!
GUH!
TH... THEY'RE GOING TO KILL US...
EITHER WAY, THEY'D ALREADY CORNERED US...
WHAT HAVE YOU DONE, GYRO?!
WE COULD HAVE PICKED UP THAT 'PISTOL'...!
EVEN IF WE FAILED, THERE WAS STILL THAT CHANCE...!

WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU PEOPLE DOING?!
!?

ドド
ドドド

HERE'S YOUR 'STRING'!
REMEMBER, WE HAD 60 MILLION THAT WE NEEDED TO SPEND, RIGHT...?
JOHNNY ...
GYRO, WHAT'S GOING ON?!

IT'S BECAUSE WE WON THAT ROULETTE.
AND WITH THAT 60 MILLION, I JUST HIRED THESE GUYS AS OUR 'BODYGUARDS'!
TO KILL AN 'ASSASSIN', WE GOTTA HIRE 'ASSASSINS' OF OUR OWN.
IT WAS A GOOD TRADE...A NICE 'PURCHASE'.
YO, BIG GUY...
BESIDES THIS 60 MILLION...
YOU PROMISED THAT YOU'D GIVE US LAND, AND RIGHTS FOR SOME BUILDING OR OTHER. RIGHT? WHERE ARE THE PAPERS?
YOU'VE GOTTA CHANGE THE NAME ON IT, REMEMBER THAT!

OF COURSE, GLADLY!
... JOHNNY, WHAT TIME IS IT?
I GAVE THEM THE WATCH, TOO.
IT'S STILL BEFORE SUNSET, GYRO!
WE'VE STILL GOT TIME BEFORE THE DAY ENDS!
WE SUCCESSFULLY USED UP ALL OUR THINGS, JOHNNY!
LOOKS LIKE WE'RE NOT GONNA BE TURNING INTO A TREE AFTER ALL!
OUR TRANSACTION WITH THAT GIRL IS FINALLY OVER!

WE'LL BE FINE BY THE END OF THIS 6TH STAGE RACE.
IT'LL TAKE ABOUT SEVEN DAYS FOR OUR WOUNDS TO HEAL COMPLETELY, RIGHT?
BUT IT LOOKS LIKE THE PRESIDENT'S BECOMING MORE PERSISTENT IN HIS ATTACKS.

THERE ARE PROBABLY OTHER ENEMIES ON THEIR WAY.
PLUS, THE 'LEFT ARM', THE 'BACKBONE', AND THE 'RIGHT EYE', ALL THE CORPSE PARTS THAT 'HOT PANTS' HAS...
THEY PROBABLY THINK WE STILL HAVE THEM ALL.
LET'S GET OUT OF THIS TOWN BEFORE IT STARTS TO GET DARK.
GYRO ?

J...
JOHNNY ...WHAT IS THIS?

TH... THIS...!
WHAT THE HELL...?! JOHNNY, I'M TURNING INTO THE GODDAMN TREE AGAIN! THE WALL, IT SUDDENLY...
GYRO!

WHAT IS THIS?! I'M BEING PULLED INTO THE WALL!!
THAT LITTLE BITCH! THE 'TRANS-FORMATION' HASN'T STOPPED AT ALL!
WE USED UP ALL THE MONEY! ALL OF THAT CASH THAT WE GOT AT THE SPRING...
WE DIDN'T USE ALL OF IT! NOT EVERYTHING!
BUT WHAT WE GOT THERE...

GYRO! THE OTHER THINGS THAT YOU GOT!
THE THINGS THAT YOU GOT FROM THROWING THAT RABBIT INTO THE 'SPRING'!
MY BODY HASN'T BEEN AFFECTED BY THE TREE YET...
ONLY GYRO... I'M STILL SAFE...
WE HAVEN'T USED UP THE 'CORPSE PARTS' YET!
IF WE HAVE TO USE UP 'EVERYTHING' THAT WE GOT AT THAT 'SPRING', THEN THAT MUST INCLUDE THE 'CORPSE PARTS', TOO!

AM I SUPPOSED TO GIVE THEM AWAY?! TO 'LOSE' THESE 'CORPSE PARTS'...?! I... I DON'T WANT TO...
'USE THEM UP'?!
UNTIL 'SUNSET'
...

STAND NAME:

## 'TATTOO YOU!'

THE SAME SYMBOL IS DRAWN ON THE BACKS OF THE ELEVEN MEN. THEY'RE ABLE TO TRAVEL THROUGH EACH OTHER'S MARK. THE ELEVEN TEAM MEMBERS ALL SHARE THIS ONE STAND ABILITY.

THERE IS PROBABLY A LEADER OF THE TEAM, BUT ONLY THEY KNOW WHO IT IS.

Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 12, Chapter 3
Translation: Freshy - Editing: Frequency

#48
TUBULAR BELLS
PART ①
GYROOOOO!!

WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO DO?!
WHAT SHOULD I DO?!
WE USED EVERYTHING...! WE USED ALL OF THE 'MONEY' THAT WE GOT FROM THE SPRING...
AND NOW... WE HAVE TO 'GIVE UP' THESE TWO 'CORPSE PARTS' AS WELL...?
MY ONLY HOPE IN LIFE...I PUT MY LIFE ON THE LINE IN ORDER TO GET THESE! AND NOW THEY'RE TELLING ME TO GIVE THIS UP AS WELL?!

UGH...!
I ENTERED THIS RACE AND CAME ALL THE WAY HERE, AND WHAT FOR?! AND HOW WOULD I EVEN GO ABOUT GETTING RID OF THESE...? I DON'T WANT TO DO IT!
I...I DON'T WANT TO!

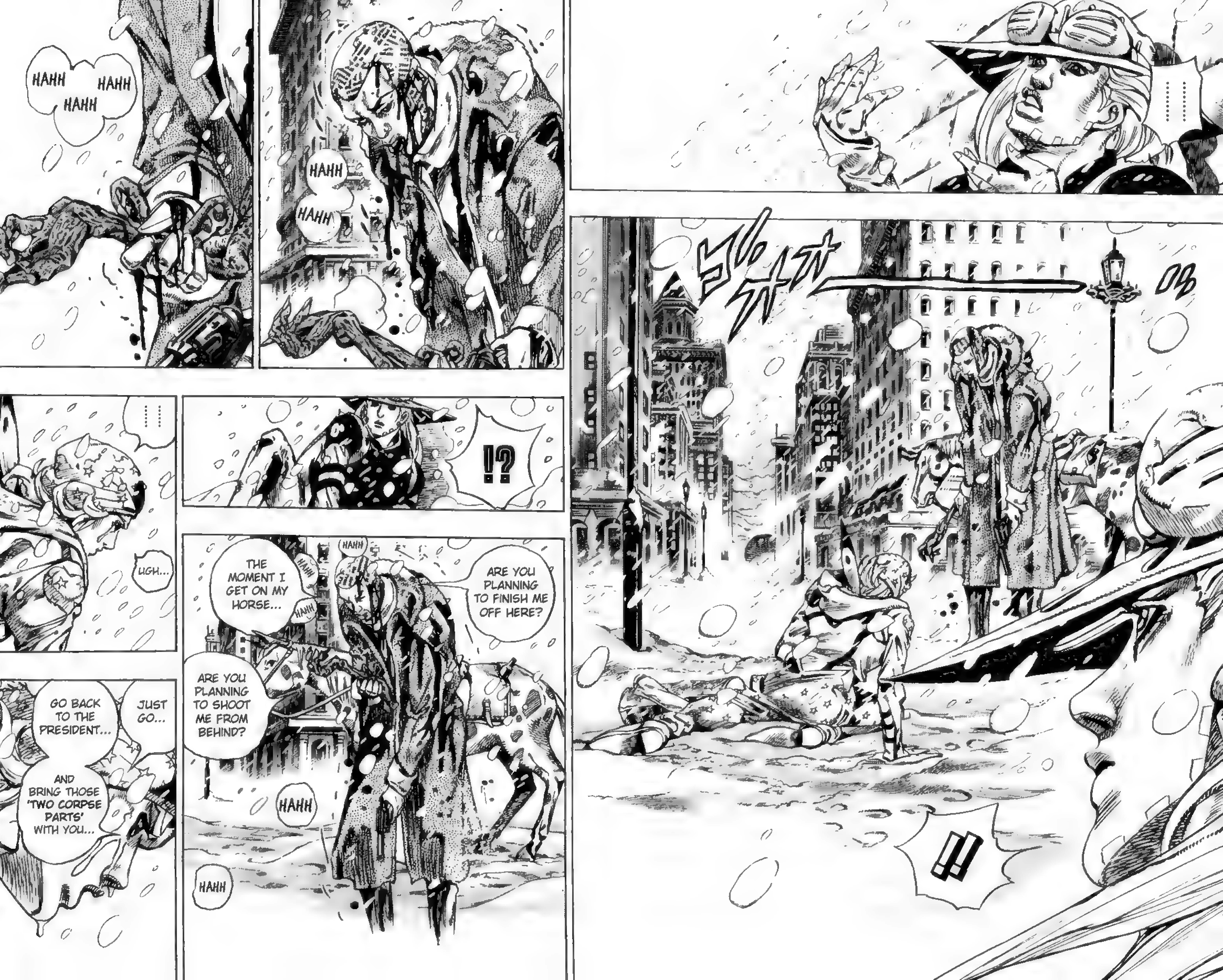
THERE'S NOTHING WRONG WITH ME RIGHT NOW...THE ONLY ONE THAT'S BEING TURNED INTO A TREE IS GYRO... ONLY GYRO...
RIGHT NOW...!
UGH!
J...
JOHNNY...
!

JOHNNY?
HEY...
UH....
I'M SORRY, GYRO, I'M SORRY...
AGHH -HHHH -HHH!!

......
THEY FAILED...
THOSE TWO, TOO...
I THOUGHT THAT...
'THOSE TWO' WOULD BE ABLE TO END THE CURSE ON THIS 'SPRING'...
I THOUGHT THAT WE'D BE ABLE TO LEAVE THIS FOREST, ALL OF US, TOGETHER...
HOW DISAPPOIN-TING...

BUT... ONCE SOMEONE BECOMES A PART OF THE TREE, THEN ANOTHER CAN LEAVE.
THAT MEANS THAT MY ROLE AS 'GUARDIAN' IS DONE...
I WONDER HOW LONG UNTIL SOMEONE ELSE COMES... IT'S MOMMY AND DADDY'S TURN TO KEEP WATCH NEXT.
WELL, IT DOESN'T SEEM THAT WAY...
MY DARLING DAUGHTER, SUGAR.
......
DADDY! MOMMY!
THAT MAN'S 'FRUIT' IS GETTING SMALLER...
IT MUST BE OVER NOW. THEY USED EVERYTHING UP... WE CAN FINALLY LEAVE.
HE'S SHRINKING BACK... AND RETURNING TO WHERE HE CAME FROM...

HIC
SOB
UHH...
UHHH...
UH...
UHH!
HIC
AH!



......
!!
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
!?
......
UGH...
JUST GO...
GO BACK TO THE PRESIDENT...
AND BRING THOSE 'TWO CORPSE PARTS' WITH YOU...
HAHH
ARE YOU PLANNING TO FINISH ME OFF HERE?
HAHH
THE MOMENT I GET ON MY HORSE...
HAHH
ARE YOU PLANNING TO SHOOT ME FROM BEHIND?
HAHH
HAHH

AND IF YOU EVER SHOW YOUR FACE TO ME AGAIN, EVER...
I'LL FINISH YOU OFF, RIGHT THEN AND THERE... THIS IS THE END OF OUR 'DEAL'.
ドドドド
ドド
ドドドド
ドド
ドド

ドドドドドド
THE 'CORPSE PARTS'... YOU HANDED IT OVER TO THE LAST GUY LEFT?
...YOU GAVE IT TO HIM?
... UGH...!
UH...!
AGH,

......
NO...
THE RULES WERE TO 'USE THEM UP'...
I 'TRADED' THEM.
SO I EXCHANGED THEM...
WITH THIS OPENED BOTTLE OF WINE...
......

JOHNNY...
THIS IS ALL WE CAN DO FOR THESE PATIENTS, GYRO.
WE ONLY HAVE ENOUGH BLOOD FOR ONE PERSON, RIGHT NOW.
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE FOR US TO SAVE BOTH OF THEM.
WE NEED TO CHOOSE.
THE MOTHER? OR HER SON? WE CAN ONLY SAVE ONE...

OR ELSE BOTH OF THEM WILL DIE.
WE HAVE TO CHOOSE ONE OR THE OTHER, IN ORDER FOR ONE OF THEM TO SURVIVE.
SHOULD WE TRANSFER THE MOTHER'S TISSUES TO THE CHILD...?
OR SHOULD WE GIVE THE MOTHER THE CHILD'S TISSUES...?
GYRO, YOU CHOOSE WHICH ONE TO SAVE.
THE MOTHER?
OR THE CHILD?
FATHER! THERE MUST BE A WAY TO SAVE BOTH OF THEM! THERE MUST BE! WE NEED TO TRY!
HURRY UP AND CHOOSE! I'LL DO THE PROCEDURES!
F, FATHER ...
WHAT...?

...THERE MIGHT.
A MIRACLE MAY OCCUR, IF WE MAKE THAT ATTEMPT.
BUT WE HAVE NO RIGHT TO ENDANGER OUR PATIENTS IN THAT WAY.
WE DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME, GYRO! HURRY AND CHOOSE!
WE SHOULD LET THE WOMAN'S HUSBAND CHOOSE...!
THE HUSBAND IS WAITING OUTSIDE, IN THE HALL!
DO YOU THINK THAT IF YOU SAVE THE MOTHER, THAT SHE CAN HAVE ANOTHER CHILD?
OR DO YOU THINK THAT THE SON, BEING THE SOLE SUCCESSOR, IS MORE IMPORTANT?
TO LEAVE THIS IN THE OPINIONS OF MAN...
LISTEN, GYRO... DURING THE SPORT OF TENNIS... THERE MAY BE A TIME WHEN THE BALL HITS THE NET.
WHICH SIDE OF THE NET WILL THE BALL FALL ON...? THAT IS SOMETHING THAT NO ONE CAN KNOW.
THAT IS IN THE 'REALM OF GOD'.

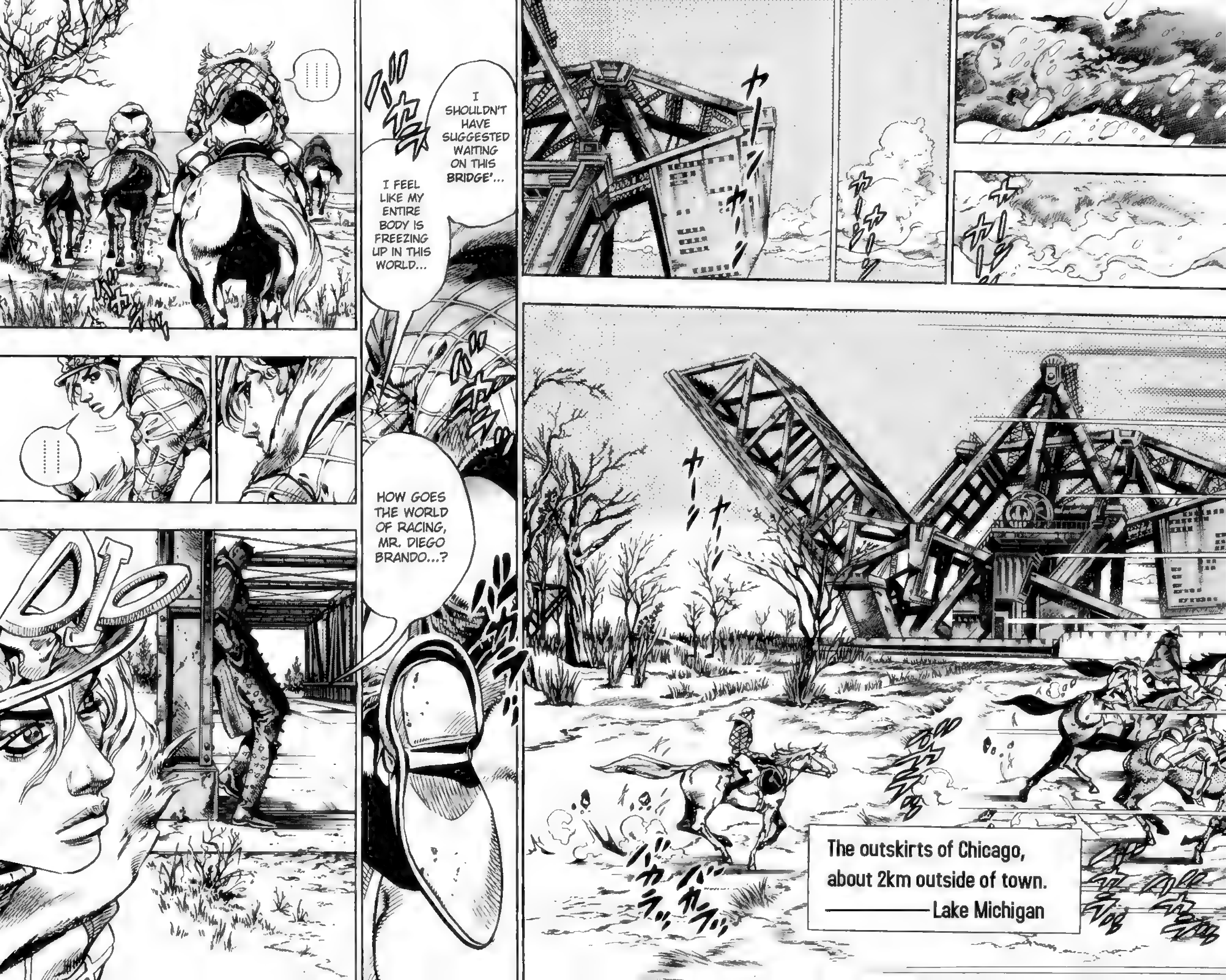
WHICH SIDE WILL IT FALL ON? THAT DECISION IS WITHIN THE REALM OF 'INFINITY'.
CAN THIS DECISION REALLY BE MADE RIGHT NOW, ON THE BASIS OF ONE MAN'S OPINION?
DON'T TELL HIM... IT'S BETTER THAT HE KNOW NOTHING.
SO YOU CHOOSE, GYRO.
THIS IS OUR FAMILY'S ...
'OBLIGATION', AND 'DUTY'...

SUGAR!
COMING.
THEY USED EVERYTHING...
THOSE TWO... THEY'RE LEFT WITH 'NOTHING', NOW...
BUT.
THOSE THAT ARE WILLING TO 'LOSE'...
THEY'RE THE ONES THAT ULTIMATELY 'GAIN' EVERYTHING.
THAT'S THE ONE THING I'VE COME TO UNDERSTAND WHILE I'VE BEEN GUARDING THESE SPRINGS.
THAT'S THE TRUTH...
AND THOSE TWO HAVE 'EARNED' THAT RIGHT.

THE SNOW... IT'S FALLING PRETTY HARD NOW...

THE SUN'S JUST ABOUT TO SET.
YEAH...
MAYBE...
YEAH...
IT'LL WARM US UP A LITTLE, HUH?
DO YOU WANT A DRINK, GYRO...?
WE HAVE TO GET RID OF THIS WINE, TOO...
HOW 'BOUT WE MAKE A TOAST, BEFORE WE GET OUR HORSES?
HEY...
TO WHAT...? WE'VE LOST EVERYTHING.
......

HOW ABOUT A TOAST, 'TO THE BALL THAT HIT THE NET'?
?
WHAT DO YOU MEAN...?
DON'T LIKE IT?
THEN, TO THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'...
THE NEXT 'PART', HUH...?
THAT'S GOOD...
I LIKE IT.
TO THE NEXT 'PART', AND TO THE GOAL.
TO THE NEXT 'PART', AND THE GOAL.



The outskirts of Chicago,
about 2km outside of town.
———Lake Michigan
I SHOULDN'T HAVE SUGGESTED WAITING ON THIS BRIDGE'...
I FEEL LIKE MY ENTIRE BODY IS FREEZING UP IN THIS WORLD...
HOW GOES THE WORLD OF RACING, MR. DIEGO BRANDO...?
DIO

MY HORSE'S CONDITION IS GETTING BETTER AND BETTER, IT SEEMS.
BUT... HAVE WE MET BEFORE?
YOU DON'T LOOK LIKE A MEMBER OF THE RACE...
YOU NEED NOT BE CONCERNED ABOUT MY WORLD.
YESTERDAY, WE GAINED POSSESSION OF 'BOTH EARS' AND 'THE RIGHT ARM'...

IN SHORT... YOU GOT RID OF JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI?
NO...
BUT IN ANY CASE, THE REASON I CAME HERE IS...
TO MAKE SURE THAT YOU'RE HOLDING TRUE TO YOUR 'PROMISE'.
REGARDING THAT, IT SEEMS THAT THE BOTH OF THEM, THEIR WORLDS, WERE ABLE TO ESCAPE...
SO WE'VE NOTHING TO DO BUT LEAVE THEM.
THEY MIGHT BE ABLE TO FIND THE NEXT 'CORPSE PARTS' FOR US, IN THE NEXT STAGE'S WORLD...
WE NEED YOU TO...
TELL US ABOUT THE 'TRAITOR' THAT'S WITHIN OUR RANKS.
ON THAT STORMY NIGHT, RIGHT BEFORE 'THE 4TH STAGE GOAL IN KANSAS CITY'...
YOU KNOW WHO IT WAS THAT MET WITH ZEPPELI AND JOESTAR, DO YOU NOT?

I'D FORGOTTEN ABOUT THAT.
YEAH... ......
THIS INFORMATION IS IN A WORLD THAT IS MOST IMPORTANT TO US.
THAT WAS MY PROMISE, WASN'T IT... THOUGH SANDMAN'S FAILURE WAS DISAPPOINTING ...
YOU WERE ABLE TO IDENTIFY THE TRAITOR BY THE TRACKS, YES?
THERE'S NO USE CONCEALING IT, I GUESS... THE PERSON IS A 'WOMAN', WHO WEIGHS LESS THAN 51KG.
THE TRAITOR IS A 'WOMAN'... THIS SHOULD BE GOOD ENOUGH FOR YOU.
......
HOW CAN YOU SAY FOR CERTAIN THAT IT IS A 'WOMAN'...? I DO NOT KNOW ANY WOMAN WHO HAS THE CAPABILITY TO RIDE A DISTANCE OF 50KM IN ONE NIGHT, ON HORSEBACK.
THEN YOU CAN INCLUDE SMALLER MEN, OR SOMEONE ELDERLY, IN YOUR LIST OF POSSIBILITIES. WHATEVER YOU WANT.
I'M TELLING YOU THAT I KNOW THIS, BECAUSE OF THE PRINTS... I DON'T KNOW WHO, BUT IT WAS A 'WOMAN' THAT RODE WITH JOHNNY JOESTAR THAT NIGHT.
I PROBABLY DON'T HAVE TO TELL YOU THIS, BUT IT'S 51KG, INCLUDING CLOTHING AND ANY LUGGAGE.
SO NOW WE SHOULD BE EVEN REGARDING OUR TRADE.

..........
HOPE 'YOUR WORLD' HAS A GREAT TIME LOOKING FOR HER.
THAT'S 'A WORLD' THAT I, DIO BRANDO, HAVE NO INVOLVEMENT IN. TRASH...
HMPH...
..........
Official Residence, Chicago
NO... IT'S NOT POSSIBLE...

......
THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE...
THE 'TRAITOR' IS A 'WOMAN'?
NO 'WOMAN' COULD HAVE GAINED ENTRANCE INTO THAT GOVERNMENT BUILDING IN KANSAS CITY...

BUT PERHAPS THE TRAITOR IS INVOLVED IN THE WORLD OF 'STANDS'...?!
THAT IS WHAT I INFORMED DIO.
THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE, AS WELL.
SEEING AS HOW THE TRAITOR HAD TO ASK 'MOUNTAIN TIM' FOR ASSISTANCE IN ESCAPING THE BUILDING.
I'VE RUN A BACKGROUND CHECK ON MOUNTAIN TIM'S ACQUAINTANCES FOR HITS, BUT I HAVEN'T FOUND ANYTHING RELEVANT.
I UNDERSTAND.
I'VE CREATED A HYPOTETICAL LIST OF POSSIBLE ENEMIES.
THERE WERE APPROXIMATELY 1364 MEMBERS OF OUR GOVERNMENT, RACE STAFF, AND THEIR FAMILIES PRESENT THAT DAY, IN KANSAS CITY.
AND WITHIN THAT NUMBER, I'VE REDUCED THE POSSIBLE SUSPECTS TO 282, BASED ON THE WEIGHT RESTRICTION OF 51KG. 147 FEMALES, AND 135 MALES... THIS IS THE CORRESPONDING DATA FILE.

HMM....
I THOUGHT THAT IT WAS IMPOSSIBLE...
BUT IF THAT DIO INSISTS THAT IT WAS A 'WOMAN', THAT MIGHT BE THE CASE...
ALL RIGHT, I'VE MADE A DECISION.
CONTINUE INVESTIGATING, ON THE PREMISE THAT THIS TRAITOR IS A 'WOMAN'... SHE MUST BE SOME SORT OF INSIDER.
INVESTIGATE THE WOMEN IN THIS FILE... ALSO, THIS WOMAN MUST ALSO KNOW THE ART OF 'READING LIPS'.

I WOULD LIKE TO KNOW BOTH THE 'IDENTITY' AND THE 'MOTIVE' OF THIS TRAITOR BEFORE WE DISPOSE OF HER...
...THOUGH IT WOULD BE IMPOSSIBLE TO INTERROGATE 'ALL 147' OF THESE WOMEN LISTED...
HOW ARE YOU PLANNING TO CAPTURE HER, MIKE O.?
...
......
BY USING THIS.

FFFFTT
I TOOK THE LIBERTY OF BRINGING THIS HERE TO YOU.
THIS 'TELEPHONE'... THE 'INTRUDER' IN KANSAS CITY USED THIS 'TELEPHONE' TO CALL MOUNTAIN TIM FOR HELP BEFORE HE OR SHE ESCAPED.

FFFTTTTTTTT-

ビュヨーーン
ギュウッ
ギュッ

フワ

THIS 'NAIL' HAS NOW MEMORIZED...
THE 'SCENT' OF THE ONE WHO LAST PLACED A CALL ON THIS TELEPHONE.
IT WILL NOW ATTACK THE WOMAN WHOSE 'SCENT'...

MATCHES THE ONE THAT IT HAS JUST MEMORIZED. THAT IS THE WORLD IN WHICH MY BALLOON DOGS, 'TUBULAR BELLS', OPERATES IN.
AND IF THIS DOG INVADES SAID TRAITOR'S BODY...
HUFF, HUFF, HAHH!
HAHH, HAHH!
HAHH!

MY PRESIDENT... PERMISSION TO 'EXECUTE' THE TRAITOR IF FOUND.
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
......
FINE.
PERMISSION GRANTED... IF IT MEANS THAT..
EXECUTION IS THE ONLY WAY TO FIGURE OUT THE TRAITOR'S 'IDENTITY'...
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF
HUFF

MR. STEEL...
I...
THEY'VE BEEN ASKING IF 'WE WENT OUT OF TOWN THAT NIGHT',
AND 'WHERE OUR WIFE AND DAUGHTERS WERE THAT NIGHT'...
ON THAT DAY, BEFORE THE END OF THE KANSAS CITY STAGE...
ALSO IF WE 'REALLY WEIGH LESS THAN 51KG', AND IF 'WE KNOW ANYONE THAT CAN READ LIPS'.
DID... DID SOMETHING HAPPEN...?
I'VE BEEN PERSISTENTLY CALLED BY GOVERNMENTAL OFFICIALS TO ANSWER THESE BIZARRE QUESTIONS...
IT'S BEEN 2 WEEKS SINCE THAT NIGHT, AND THEY'RE STILL ASKING US ALL THESE QUESTIONS ABOUT IT!
HAVE I DONE ANYTHING AGAINST THE LAW WITHOUT KNOWING, I WONDER?!
........

HAVE YOU?
YES, THAT'S THE ONE! NO ONE WOULD HAVE LEFT TOWN DURING SUCH A TERRIBLE STORM!
I HAVEN'T BEEN INFORMED OF ANY OF THIS... THE KANSAS CITY STAGE...
?
ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT THAT NIGHT, WHEN THE STORM HIT?
O, OF COURSE NOT!
I HAVE NO IDEA WHERE ALL OF THIS IS COMING FROM!
HMM...
THERE ARE MANY THINGS ABOUT THIS COUNTRY THAT I DON'T KNOW...
I DON'T THINK IT'S ANYTHING SERIOUS... DON'T WORRY. BUT I'LL LOOK INTO IT, JUST IN CASE.

LUCY.
I'M GOING TO STOP BY THE RACING OFFICE FOR A BIT...
CAN YOU GET TO THE HOTEL FROM THE LIBRARY ON YOUR OWN?
......
OF COURSE...
COME BACK TO ME SOON.
KISS ♡
......

NO...! IT CAN'T BE...IT CAN'T BE...! THEY'RE...THEY'RE 'SEARCHING'...
THEY'RE LOOKING FOR ME...!
'WEIGHS LESS THAN 51KG'?!
HOW COULD THEY HAVE FOUND OUT...?
'CAN READ LIPS'...?!
'WIFE AND DAUGHTER'?!
THEY'LL FIND ME...!
THEY MIGHT BE COMING FOR ME AT THIS VERY MOMENT...! THEY'LL CATCH ME!
WE REFUSE...! WE'RE NOT GOING TO HELP YOU.
IF YOU SWORE YOUR LOVE TO HIM WHEN YOU MARRIED HIM, THEN PROTECT HIM!
HAHH
HAHH
LISTEN! YOU HAVE TO DO THIS! YOU HAVE TO STEAL THE 'HEART' FROM THE PRESIDENT...!
YOU HAVE TO BE THE ONE TO DO IT, MRS. STEEL!
IF YOU HOLD THIS 'RIGHT EYE' NEAR HIS CHEST...
EVEN IF YOU DON'T HAVE A STAND ABILITY, THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH FOR YOU TO TAKE THE 'HEART'.

IT'S NOW OR NEVER, MRS. STEEL!
IF YOU DON'T... YOU AND YOUR HUSBAND WILL BOTH BE KILLED!
OHHH...
UH...
SOB
OHHH...
ポタ
ポタ

FLINCH
I DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME! THEY'RE GOING TO COME FOR ME!

I – J
Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde
A Secret Engagement
Philadelphia Views
The Sign of Four
The Sign Of Four
'THE SIGN OF FOUR'.
EXCUSE ME.
I'M LOOKING FOR SEVERAL BOOKS THAT ARE LISTED ON THIS CARD.
DO YOU HAVE THEM?
A Secret Engagement
A Secret Engagement
The Sign of Four

'A SECRET ENGAGEMENT'.
A Secret Engagement
OH MY...!

.........
YOUR NAME WAS... LUCY, WAS IT?
THAT IS CORRECT, YES?
OHHHHHH, MRS. STEEL...!

OH...
HOW DO YOU DO?
THE PROMOTER OF THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE...
MR. STEEL'S YOUNG WIFE, YES?
I MET YOU AT A PARTY ONCE, DIDN'T I? ♥
OH, NO, NO.
PLEASE, SIT DOWN...
WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE...?
I'M JUST IN THE MIDDLE OF A LITTLE WALK.
I WAS RESTING...
OH MY~!! ♥ THAT'S 'THE SIGN OF FOUR'!
THAT'S THE NEWEST INSTALLMENT IN THE SHERLOCK HOLMES SERIES, ISN'T IT?! IT JUST CAME OUT! WHAT A COINCIDENCE...! I ABSOLUTELY ADORE THAT BOOK!
I JUST RESERVED IT FROM THE LIBRARY AND READ IT A FEW DAYS AGO!
The Sign of Four
Arthur Conan Doyle

......
OH PLEASE, DON'T TELL ME HOW IT ENDS!
I'M STILL IN THE MIDDLE OF IT, BUT I CAN TELL THAT IT'S GOING TO BE A GREAT BOOK...
MM, MAYBE I'LL TELL~ ♥
OH...
I'M SORRY... I... I FEEL...
......

I... I'M SO SORRY... !
I JUST FELT A BIT FAINT FROM SUDDENLY STANDING UP
I... HOW RUDE OF ME, I'LL LEAVE...

OH...
...I FEEL DIZZY AGAIN...
LICK
ARE YOU ALRIGHT, MY FIRST LADY?! PLEASE, LEAVE HER TO US...
IT'S FINE...
IT'S ALRIGHT.
IT'S FINE, LUCY.
YOU MUST BE TIRED FROM THE TRAVELING... YOU CAN RELAX.
ARE YOU ALRIGHT?
JUST RELAX...
I'M CERTAIN OF IT...
'THIS WOMAN' ...
I KNOW NOW, FOR SURE. 'SCARLET VALENTINE, THE FIRST LADY'...
'LIKES OTHER WOMEN'.
12 QUALIFICATIONS FOR THE CORPSE, QUALIFICATIONS FOR FRIENDSHIP (END)

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

⑫遺体への条件 友情への条件

2007年5月7日 第1刷発行

著者 荒木飛呂彦
©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS 2007
編集 ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話 東京 03(5211)2651

発行人 鳥嶋和彦

発行所 株式会社 集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
03(3230)6236(編集部)
電話 東京 03(3230)6191(販売部)
03(3230)6076(読者係)

Printed in Japan

印刷所 中央精版印刷株式会社

造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社読者係宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。
本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

ISBN978-4-08-874362-2 C9979

# *Volume 12 Editor's Notes*

Hello readers! We here at JoJo Project like to try and make reading Steel Ball Run a totally natural experience for English-speaking audiences, but there are still some things from the original Japanese that we feel could use some additional explanation.

**'Matsutake mushrooms'** - It may seem strange for a mushroom from Canada to have a Japanese name, but it really is accurate! Matsutake are found not just in Asia, but also in the Pacific Northwest of North America and some parts of Europe. They're rather expensive; according to Wikipedia, the average cost for matsutake produced outside of Japan is $90 per kilogram, but the top quality Japanese matsutake can be worth up to $2,000 per kilogram.

**'President of the U.S.'** - In the original Japanese text of the chart on the beginning of chapter 47, he is labeled not as being President of the United States of America, but as being "President of the United States of Valentine." This was too long to easily fit into the chart, so we abbreviated it to just the U.S.

**'Mike O. and the word *'world'*'** - In the original Japanese, Mike O. has a strange verbal quirk; he ends many of his sentences with the phrase "na sekai da", which loosely translates to "~'s world." As this is exceedingly awkward in English, our translator has instead worked the word "world" into Mike O.'s sentences or phrases as naturally as possible whenever the original quirk was used.

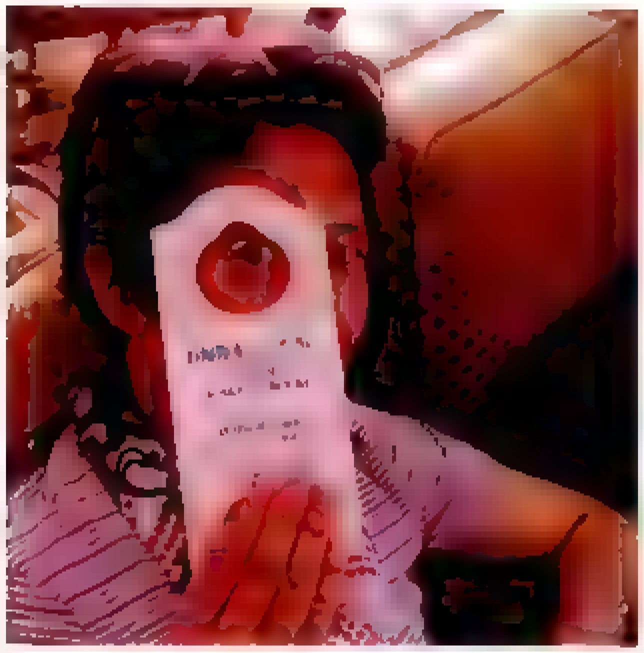
**'The Sign of Four'** - Originally serialized as *The Sign of the Four*, this, the second Sherlock Holmes novel, was originally serialized in 1890, which just happens to be the year in which Steel Ball Run is set. What's more interesting in terms of Steel Ball Run, however, is the title of the first Sherlock Holmes novel - *A Study in Scarlet*. If you feel like doing a bit of "research," both books are in the public domain and can be freely read on Project Gutenberg.

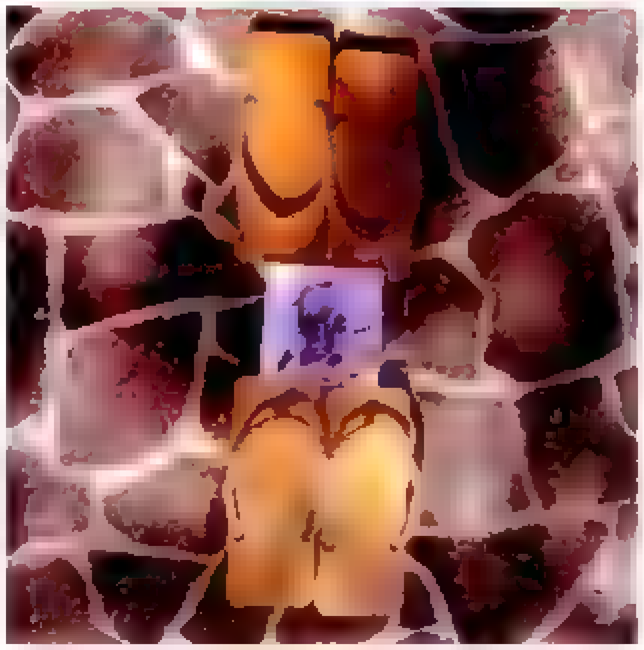
Thank you for following our releases. We hope you'll stick with us and continue to enjoy the story in the future!

*JoJo Project*
*September 2009*

Jojo project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 13, Chapter 1
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

荒木飛呂彦

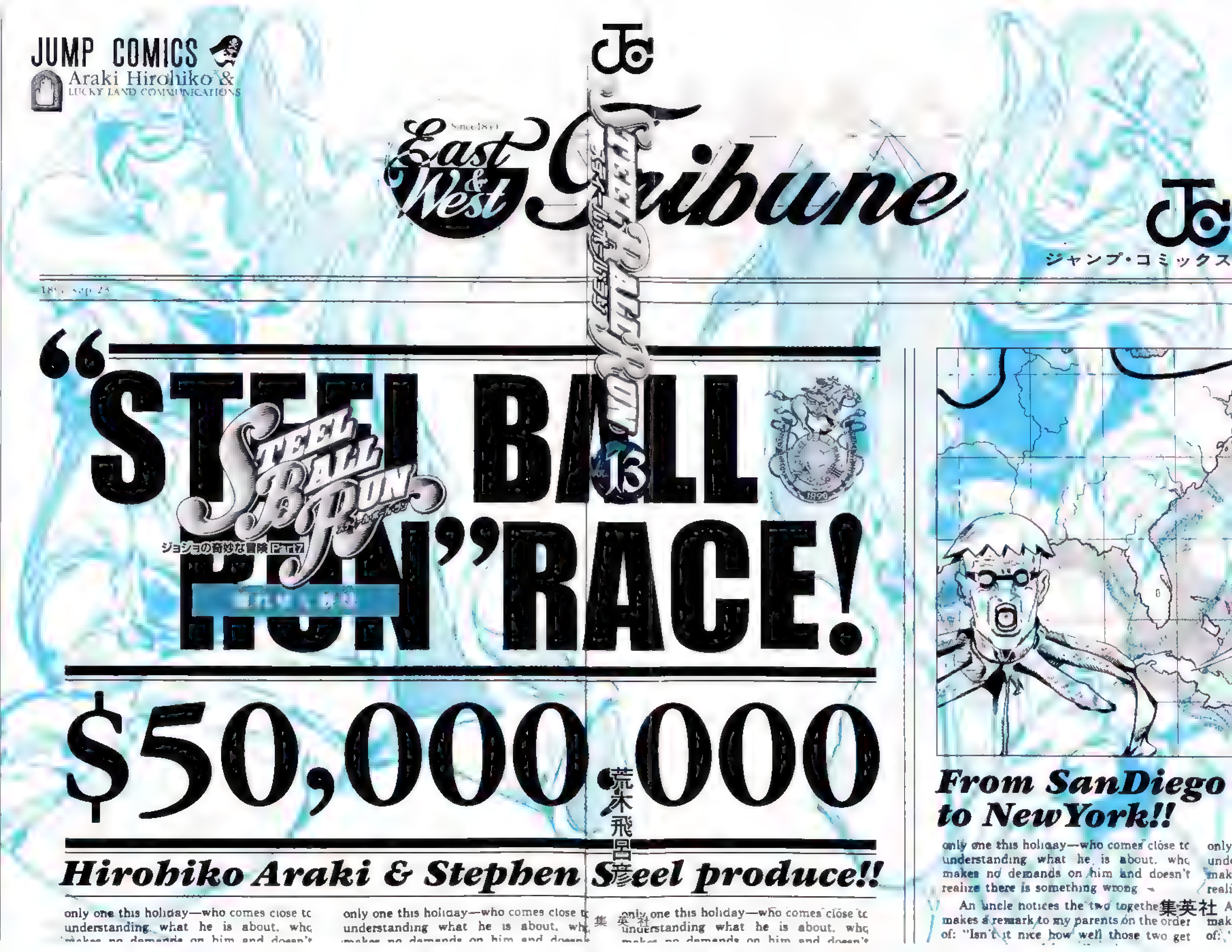




●ウルトラジャンプ・H19年5月号～7月号掲載分収録

荒木飛呂彦

集英社



JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
13
1890
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
集英社
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong
An uncle notices the two together makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

WRECKING BALL vol.13

## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家叛逆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。

元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。「脊椎の一部」を持つ。

第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。遺体の一部「心臓」、「両耳」、「右腕」を持つ。

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。
なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を明けた！
6th.STAGE、ミシガン湖畔の泉で、ダイヤや札束と共に『両耳』、『右腕』を手に入れたジャイロ達。大統領からの11人の追っ手を倒し、「泉で手に入れた物を日暮れまでに使い切らないと『木の実』にされてしまう」というルールをクリアしたはずが、再びジャイロの『木の実』化が進行！

全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！

その時、遺体すらも使い切らなくてはならない事に気付いたジョニィは、苦悩の末、遺体を生き残った追っ手の持つワインと交換する事に。ようやく泉のルールをクリアするが、２つの遺体は大統領の下に渡ってしまった！　一方、大統領から『心臓』を奪う決意を固めたルーシーは、政府公邸に入る為、大統領夫人・スカーレットに接触する事に成功した…。

## 『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは

太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!(60億円)
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！

そして1890年9月25日、午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

何者かの命で遺体を集めているが、大統領側の人間ではないらしい。遺体の一部「左腕」、「脊椎」を持つ。

通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。

スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!?　遺体の一部「右眼」を持つ。

40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.13
## CONTENTS

WRECKING BALL


#49
TUBULAR BELLS ② 7

#50
TUBULAR BELLS ③ 69

#51
WRECKING BALL ① 133

#49
TUBULAR BELLS
PART②

I'M UTTERLY SPEECH-LESS...
I SINCERELY APOLOGIZE FOR THIS...
I SHOULD...
BE LEAVING SOON.

HOW ARE YOU FEELING, LUCY? BETTER?
YOU HAVE SUCH A CUTE NOSE, DON'T YOU?
CALL ME 'SCARLET' ...
WE'RE FRIENDS NOW... IT'S FINE, RIGHT? COME NOW, LUCY... CALL ME SCARLET.
SAY 'SCARLET', LOUDLY, NOW!
EVERYONE CALLS ME 'FIRST LADY'...
PLEASE ...
I WANT YOU TO CALL MY NAME, LUCY.
I WANT YOU TO SAY IT LIKE YOU'RE REPROACH-ING ME...
MRS. VALENTINE... FIRST LADY.
I COULDN'T...
I COULDN'T POSSIBLY CALL YOU BY NAME.

......
MUMBLE
......
SCARLET!
OHHHH, SO GOOD!
GOOD! THAT'S ABSOLUTELY WONDERFUL!
WOULD YOU LIKE SOME TEA?
YOU'LL SPEND THE AFTERNOON HERE, YES?
BUT I WOULD BE BOTHERING EVERYONE'S WORK...
OH, IT'S FINE.
MY HUSBAND'S ROOM IS THREE DOORS DOWN, ANYWAY.

BESIDES, IT'S TIME FOR HIS AFTERNOON BREAK.
YOU'RE AWARE, RIGHT? THE PRESIDENT ALWAYS TAKES AN AFTERNOON NAP, FOR ABOUT 20 TO 30 MINUTES...
NO...
THIS IS THE FIRST I'VE HEARD OF IT.
REALLY ?
THAT SHOULDN'T BE THE CASE...
WE WERE ON THE SAME TRAIN DURING THE INITIAL CROSS-COUNTRY TRIP, WEREN'T WE?
REALLY ..?
I WASN'T AWARE...
WELL, YOU'RE RIGHT! ♥ WHETHER OR NOT THE PRESI-DENT TAKES A NAP DOESN'T MATTER...
BY THE WAY, LUCY, ARE THINGS GOING WELL BETWEEN YOU AND YOUR HUSBAND?
YOU TWO HAVE MORE THAN A 35 YEAR AGE DIF-FERENCE, RIGHT? OH, HOW SCAN-DALOUS! ♥

THINGS AREN'T GOING WELL BETWEEN ME AND MY HUSBAND.
BECAUSE I MARRIED HIM JUST FOR HIS 'POWER' AND HIS 'MONEY'.
I'M JUST KIDDING~!
WE MET 15 YEARS AGO. I WAS A STUDENT, AND HE WAS FROM MY HOMETOWN.
?......
WHAT DO YOU MEAN...?
WE DANCED TOGETHER AT A PARTY. BUT, THE STRANGE THING IS, I COULD NEVER HEAR HIS 'FOOTSTEPS'...
NO MATTER WHERE HE WALKED, HE DIDN'T MAKE A SOUND. AND THAT MADE ME FALL FOR HIM.
HE CAN WALK WITHOUT MAKING FOOT-STEPS! NO MATTER WHAT KIND OF FLOOR IT IS...
NO MATTER WHERE HE IS.
HE CAN STILL DO IT NOW, TOO. IT'S SEXY.

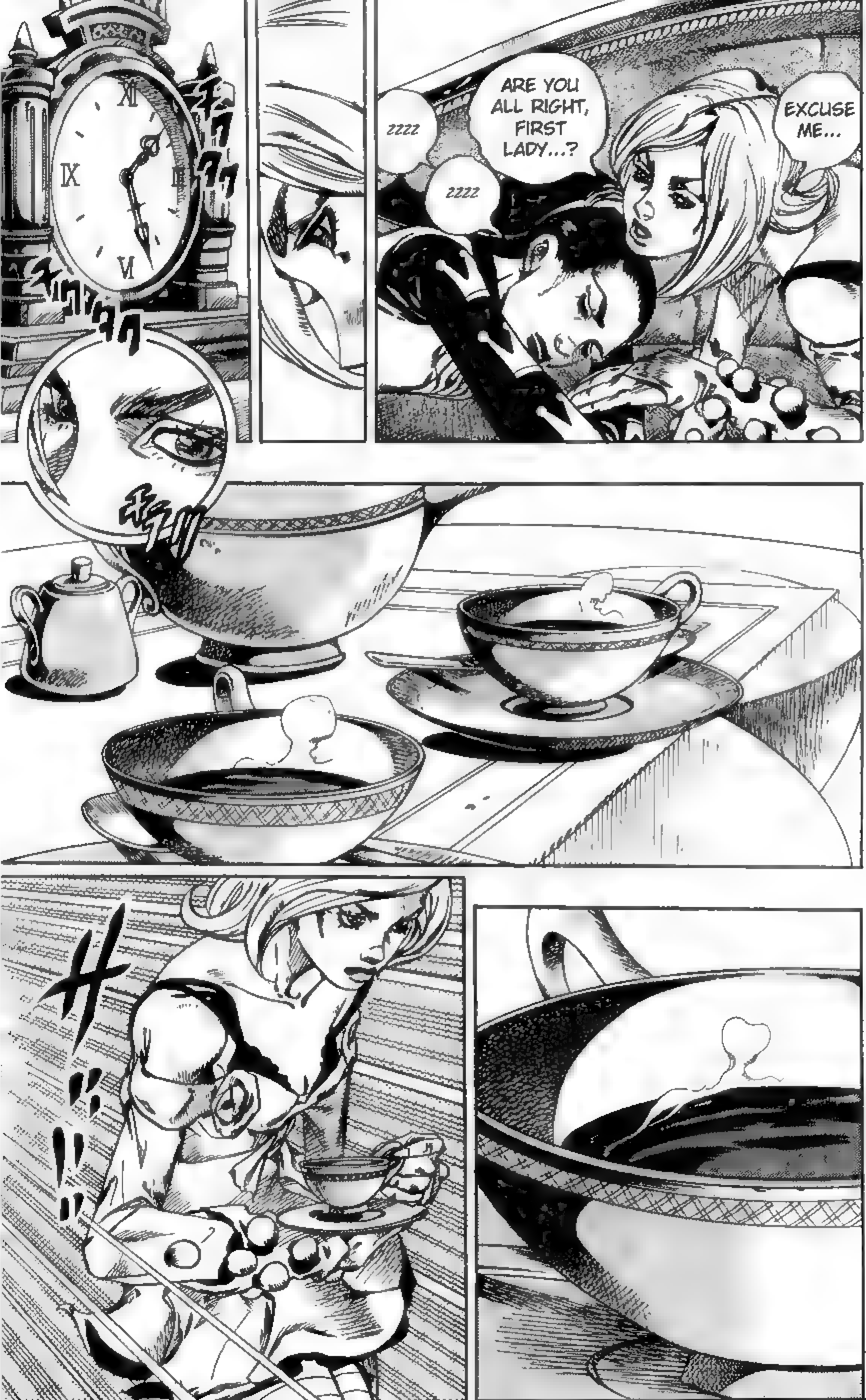
ON THE DAY OF THE PARTY, HE FOUND A MANDOLIN LYING ON THE CORNER OF THE DANCE HALL, AND SUDDENLY JUMPED ON IT...
HE CAN PLAY THE MANDOLIN WITH HIS FEET, YOU KNOW.
HE HOPS AROUND ON THE STRINGS, EVEN WITH ALL THAT WEIGHT.
HE PLAYED ME A MOZART PIECE... OR, AT LEAST, THAT'S WHAT IT SOUNDED LIKE.
AND TWO YEARS AGO, HE BECAME PRESIDENT.
HE'S AN EXTRAORDINARY DECISION-MAKER... AND PRECISE, TOO.
BUT HE ALSO HAS A WARMTH ABOUT HIM...
HE'S SHARP, BUT ALSO WARM-HEARTED.
I FELL IN LOVE WITH THAT...AND FOR 15 YEARS, THAT CHARAC-TERISTIC ABOUT HIM HASN'T CHANGED A BIT.

FIDDLE FIDDLE
THAT FACE, THE WAY YOU'RE JUST QUIETLY LISTENING...SO, SO, SO CUTE!
MMMMMMM~~~~!! ♥
LET ME FIDDLE YOUR NOSE!
CAN I DO IT WITH TWO FINGERS?
POKE POKE
POKE POKE
POKE POKE
CAN I PLAY WITH YOUR LIPS, TOO?
POKE POKE
POKE POKE

OHHHHH-HHHH~! ♥
SCARLET !!
AHH!
OH,
NOW CALL ME SCARLET!
CAN I PLAY WITH YOUR CHEEKS, TOO?
SQUISH
SQUISH
SQUISH
I WANT YOU TO SIT ON ME...
I WANT TO ASK YOU A FAVOR...
PLEASE, I WANT YOU TO.
I LOVE THE PRESI-DENT! ♥
BUT YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO HAS SUCH WON-DERFULLY PINCHABLE FEATURES, LUCY!
SQUISH SQUISH
SQUISH SQUISH
ONLY YOU! ♥

......
?
THAT'S FINE, RIGHT? NOW, SIT...
YES?
I WANT YOU TO SQUISH ME!
SQUISH ...?
YES?
ON MY FACE, LUCY!
I WANT YOU TO SQUISH ME WITH THAT CUTE LITTLE BUTT! OHH, HURRY!
WH- WHAT?!
SQUASH ME! UNTIL I CAN'T BREATHE ANYMORE!
THIS IS EXCITING ME, COME NOW! HURRY! IT'S TIME!
OH MY!
SQUISH MY FACE!

SIT ON ME HARDER, LUCY!
HARDER! MORE, MORE!
OHHH, SIT ON M...
ZZZ
ZZZ
......
......
......
SCARLET ...?
ZZZZZ
MMM


EXCUSE ME...
ARE YOU ALL RIGHT, FIRST LADY...?
ZZZZ
ZZZZ

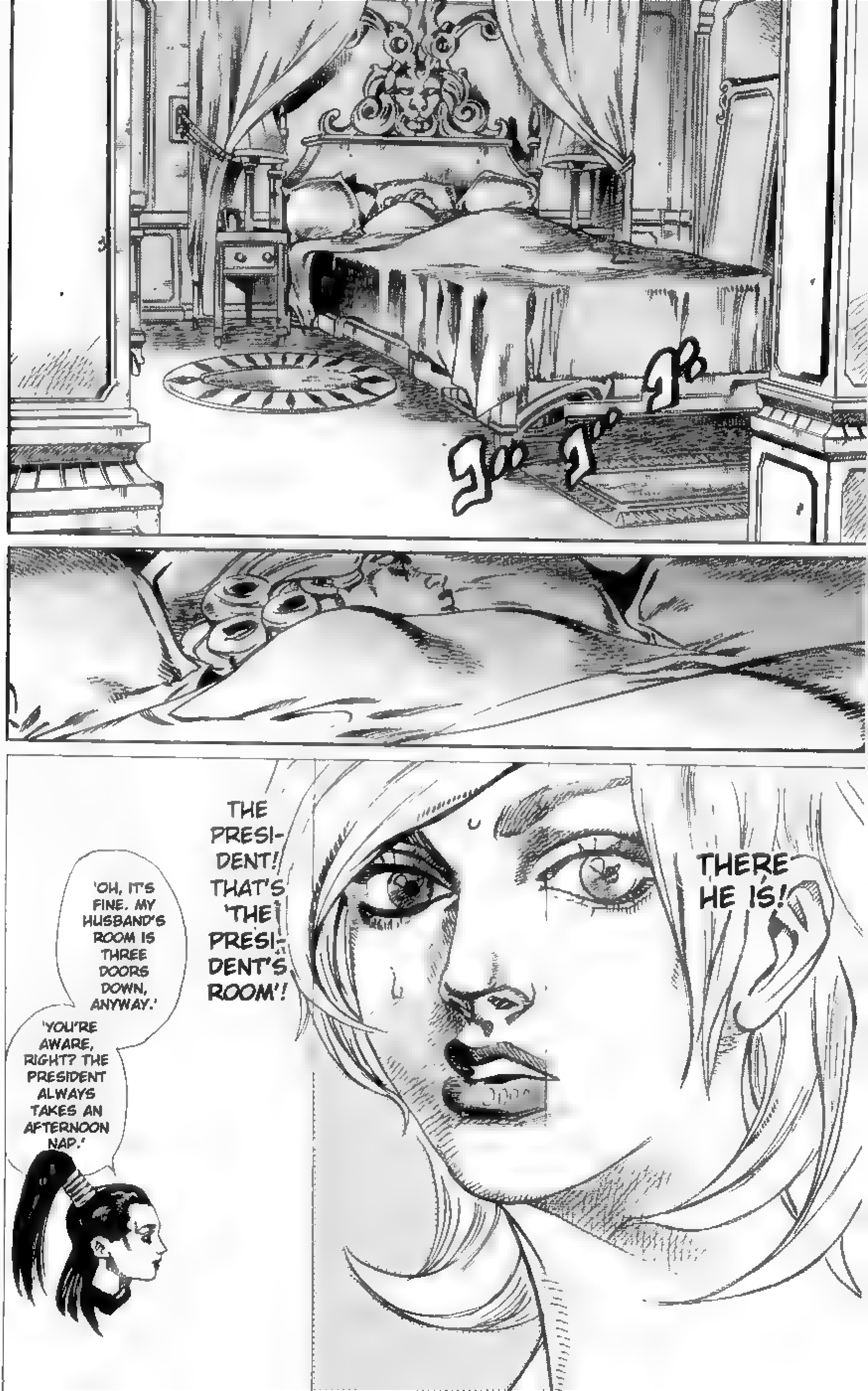
SHE'S ASLEEP...
THE 'SLEEPING DRUG' THAT I PUT INTO HER TEA WORKED...
AND NOW...

THERE'S NO WAY THAT I CAN BACK DOWN FROM THIS, NOW...
IF I DON'T DO IT, I'LL BE KILLED...
I NEED TO STEAL THE 'HEART' THAT THE PRESIDENT HAS...
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH

AND AFTER-WARDS, I HAVE TO ESCAPE FROM THIS MANSION ...!
I HAVE TO HELP DEFEAT THE PRESI-DENT...
'CORPSE PARTS' ARE DRAWN TO OTHER 'CORPSE PARTS'...
'IF YOU HOLD THIS 'RIGHT EYE' NEAR HIS CHEST, EVEN IF YOU DON'T HAVE A STAND ABILITY, THAT SHOULD BE ENOUGH FOR YOU TO TAKE THE 'HEART'.'

THERE ARE THREE GUARDS TO THE RIGHT, AND TWO TO THE LEFT, IN THIS HALL... AT LEAST, THEY'RE THE ONES I CAN SEE.
THERE'LL BE OTHERS IN THE YARD...
CLICK

......
'I'M GOING TO TAKE MY AFTER-NOON REST NOW.'
'COME WAKE ME UP 30 MINUTES LATER...'


THERE HE IS!
THE PRESIDENT! THAT'S 'THE PRESIDENT'S ROOM'!
'OH, IT'S FINE. MY HUSBAND'S ROOM IS THREE DOORS DOWN, ANYWAY.'
'YOU'RE AWARE, RIGHT? THE PRESIDENT ALWAYS TAKES AN AFTERNOON NAP.'

YES. .OF COURSE I KNEW THAT ALREADY, THAT HE ALWAYS TAKES TIME TO NAP IN THE AFTERNOON...!
ALL I HAVE TO DO IS APPROACH HIM .
AND HOLD THIS EYE OVER HIS CHEST...! THAT'S ALL I HAVE TO DO...!
WHO'S THERE ?
IT'S NOT SCARLET, IS IT?

SHOW YOUR-SELF...
WHO IS IT...?
I'M ONLY TELLING YOU ONE MORE TIME! COME OUT!

ギギギギ
ギギギ

......
HN...WHAT IS THIS ABOUT?
YOU KNOW THAT I VALUE MY AFTERNOON RESTS...
WE AGREED NOT TO DISTURB EACH OTHER DURING THIS TIME...
......

... SCARLET ?
LOOK AT THIS SPRAY, LUCY STEEL.
TURN TOWARDS THE NOZZLE OF MY SPRAY CAN.

AHHH!
ONLY ONCE...
JUST ONCE, YOU CAN BE ANYONE.
NOW YOU CAN 'DISGUISE' YOURSELF AS WHOEVER YOU WANT.
ONCE YOU TOUCH THE PERSON IN QUESTION, THE DISGUISE WILL TURN ON.
THIS IS MY 'MEAT SPRAY'... AND WHAT I JUST SPRAYED ONTO YOU IS NOW ADHERED TO YOUR SKIN. WHEN YOU WANT TO TAKE OFF YOUR 'DISGUISE', ALL YOU HAVE TO DO IS PEEL IT OFF.

I FOUND GYRO AND JOHNNY UNCONSCIOUS BY THE MISSISSIPPI RIVER, AND I SEARCHED THEM.
THEY DIDN'T HAVE THEIR 'RIGHT EYE' WITH THEM, WHEN I DID.
YOU CAN RUN IF YOU WANT...BUT YOU SHOULD CONSIDER ALL OF YOUR OPTIONS FIRST.
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
I KNEW THE 'CULPRIT' WAS YOU! AND LUCKILY FOR YOU, I FOUND YOU BEFORE ANYONE ELSE...
BUT THE PRESIDENT WILL FIND OUT SOON ENOUGH THAT YOU'RE THE ONE.
HAHH
HAHH
AND NOW, THIS NEWS OF THE GOVERNMENT SEARCHING FOR A 'WOMAN' IN CHICAGO...
WHO WEIGHS LESS THAN 51KGS!

HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
W-WHO ARE YOU?
WHO ARE YOU?!
VERY SOON... YOU'LL BE FOUND OUT!
I CAME HERE TO HELP YOU, RATHER THAN TO GO ON WITH THE RACE...
YOU'RE TRYING TO WARD OFF THE PRESI-DENT, AREN'T YOU?
WITH THAT 'RIGHT EYE' THAT'S IN YOUR POCKET...
I CAN'T SAY THAT I'M YOUR FRIEND, BUT I'M NOT AN 'ENEMY'.
I CAN'T TALK ABOUT THAT.
WHY IS EVERYONE COLLECTING THESE?
WHOSE 'CORPSE' IS THIS?
...WHAT IS THIS?

LISTEN, MRS. STEEL.
I'M NOT LOOKING TO DEFEAT ANYONE...
I'M JUST TRYING TO COLLECT THE CORPSE PARTS, WITH THIS RACE AS A PRETENSE.
ALL I CAN TELL YOU IS THAT IT HAS TO DO WITH 'THE VATICAN'...
THE 'SPRAY' CAN ALTER YOUR HAIR, YOUR EYEBROWS, YOUR EYES....EVEN YOUR VOICE. IF THE PERSON HAS A SCENT, IT CAN COPY THAT AS WELL.
YOU CAN APPROACH 'THE PRESIDENT' WITH THAT DISGUISE...
AND EVEN THOUGH HIS 'POWERS' ARE UNKNOWN TO US, ONCE YOU EXTRACT THE 'HEART', HE SHOULD BE RENDERED POWER-LESS.
THAT'S WHAT YOU HAVE TO DO!
ARE YOU READY?
IF NOT, YOU'LL BE CAUGHT AND 'EXECUTED' BY THEM!
YOUR HUSBAND, TOO...

JUST BY HOLDING THIS EYE OUT OVER HIS CHEST?
C...CAN I REALLY TAKE THE 'HEART' FROM THE PRESIDENT,
JUST TAKE IT LIKE I JUST DID... AND THEN ESCAPE.
Y...
YOU SHOULD DO IT, THEN!
HAHH, HAHH...

EVEN IF I COULD INFILTRATE THE PRESIDENT'S MANSION, ONLY YOU COULD BRING THE 'CORPSE PARTS' OUTSIDE...
AND YOU HAVE TO DO IT NOW... WHILE THEY STILL DON'T KNOW ABOUT YOU.
THAT'S 'IMPOSSIBLE'...
I CAN'T 'DISSOLVE' THESE CORPSE PARTS, LIKE I USUALLY DO...
MRS. STEEL...
'YOU HAVE TO STIFFEN YOUR RESOLVE',
ISN'T THAT WHY YOU RECIEVED THE EYE FROM GYRO?
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
CLICK
CLICK
CLICK
CLICK
I'M TELLING YOU TO STOP RIGHT THERE!
SCARLET!
WAIT, STOP! THERE'S SOMETHING OFF...

......
THIS IS THE FIRST TIME YOU'VE COME INTO MY BEDROOM...
WHY?
WHY AREN'T YOU SAYING ANYTHING?
WHAT'S WRONG, SCARLET? WHY ARE YOU SILENT?
GRRR RR
GRRR RR
GRR
GRRR RRR
GRRR RR
!!
!?

ウウウ〜〜ッ
GRR RRR RR
GRR RRR
SNIFF SNIFF
GRR RRR RR
GRRR
GRRR SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF
GRR RRR
WHAT ...?!
WHAT ARE THESE THINGS ...?!
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF

WHAT IS IT?! YOU'VE COME ALL THE WAY HERE...
WHY AREN'T YOU SAYING ANYTHING?!
WHY ARE YOU REMAINING SILENT?!
GRRR!
GRRRR
A 'STAND'?!
THIS IS THE PRESIDENT'S ABILITY...?!
N...NO, THAT'S NOT IT...
BESIDES, AM I... IS THE FIRST LADY SUPPOSED TO KNOW ABOUT 'STANDS'? DOES SHE KNOW THAT HER HUSBAND IS A 'STAND USER'...?
AND DOES SHE KNOW THAT THE PRESIDENT IS LOOKING FOR THE INTRUDER FROM BACK IN KANSAS...? NO, SHE MUST NOT KNOW...IF SHE DID, SHE WOULDN'T HAVE INVITED ME HERE...

GRR RR
WH...WHAT ARE THESE?
GRRR RR!
THEY'RE SCARY!
WHAT ARE THEY? THEY'RE GROWLING AT ME...
GRRR RRRR RRRR RR
TH, THEY'RE REALLY SCARING ME!
......
REALLY, NOW...?
THEY'RE CALLED 'TUBULAR BELLS'.
THEY'RE ADVANCED 'GUARD MECHANISMS'... BUT YOU DON'T NEED TO WORRY ABOUT THEM.
THAT'S RIGHT...YOU DIDN'T KNOW, DID YOU...
THERE WAS AN 'INTRUDER' A WHILE BACK...
AND 'TUBULAR BELLS' IS MADE TO 'TRACK' THE INTRUDER'S 'SPECIFIC SCENT'!
SCENT !?

SO YOU DON'T HAVE TO WORRY.
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF SNIFF SNIFF
EVEN IF YOU KICKED THEM, YOU'D BE FINE...
THEY WON'T ATTACK YOU...
'SCENT'? IS THAT WHAT HE SAID...?
A 'SCENT'... WHOSE SCENT...?
IT CAN'T BE...
IT CAN'T BE...

DID THEY GET MY 'SCENT' FROM SOME-WHERE?! NO! THIS IS TERR-IBLE!
?
!?

!!
!?
SCARLET!?
I JUST REALLY, REALLY...
WANTED TO DO IT...!
I CAME HERE TO PLAY WITH YOUR LIPS!
LUCY STEEL, ANOTHER THING.
I'LL SLIP SOME OF THE SLEEPING DRUG BEHIND YOUR NAIL, JUST IN CASE.
USE IT WHEN YOU HAVE TO!

PUT YOUR 'NAIL' INTO THE TEA.
IF THIS DRUG IS CONSUMED, YOU CAN MAKE THE TARGET FALL ASLEEP FOR EXACTLY 'TWO MINUTES'.
THE TARGET WON'T EVEN REALIZE THAT THEY WERE ASLEEP, IF THEY'RE ONLY KNOCKED OUT FOR SUCH A SHORT AMOUNT OF TIME.
TWO MIN-UTES!
IF YOU MANAGE TO RETRIEVE THE 'HEART' AND ESCAPE IN THAT AMOUNT OF TIME, NO ONE WILL SUSPECT THAT THE 'INTRUDER' WAS YOU, AND IT WOULD TAKE A FEW MOMENTS FOR THE PRESI-DENT TO EVEN REALIZE THAT THE HEART IS GONE!
SCAR ???....
......
...LET...

IT... CAME OUT...!
IT REALLY DID...
THE HEART...! FINALLY
...

AGHHHHHHH!
UGH!
AHHH!
WH...WHAT IS THIS?! DID IT BITE ME!?
IT'S... EXPANDING, LIKE RUBBER! IT...IT TORE OFF MY SKIN, AND...
NOW IT'S BURROWING INSIDE MY BODY!

I CAN TELL THAT IT'S 'INSIDE' MY LEG! IT'S CLIMBING UP THE MUSCLE!
AGH HHH HH!
AGHH!

はッ！
WH... WHAT'S THIS...?
HE DIDN'T JUST HAVE THE 'HEART' ...!
THERE ARE OTHERS... AN 'ARM'... AND 'EARS'!
THERE ARE THREE!

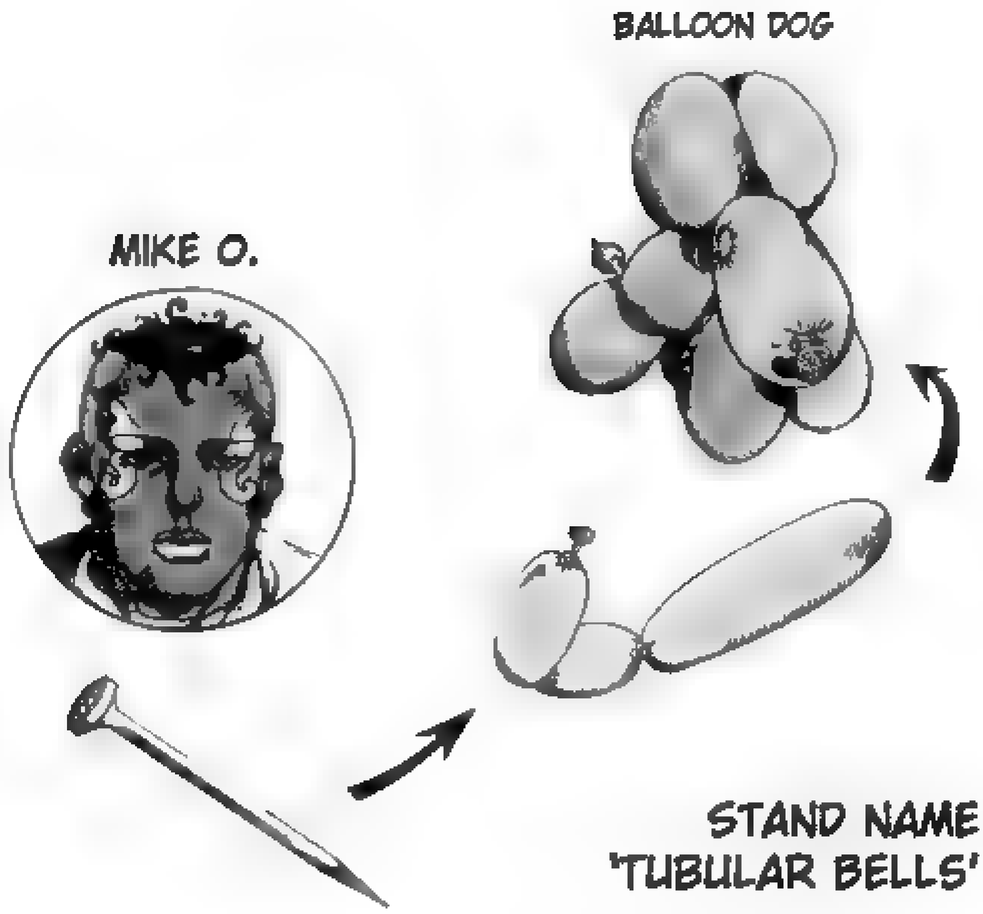
I...DIDN'T HEAR ANYTHING LIKE THIS FROM GYRO OR HOT PANTS...! THE PRESIDENT ALREADY HAS 'THREE' CORPSE PARTS...!
AM I ONLY SUPPOSED TO BRING BACK THE 'HEART'?
NO...IF THERE ARE THREE, THEN I SHOULD BRING BACK 'ALL THREE'!
AHHHHHH!!
I...
I CAN'T!
IT WON'T COME OUT! I'M JUST STRETCHING IT! IT'S BURROWING EVEN FARTHER INTO MY BODY!

AGHHHHH!!!

THERE ARE TWO MORE OF THEM!
AGHH!
WHAT'S GOING ON?
LUCY?
THIS COMMO-TION..
WHAT ARE YOU...
MM...

WHO ARE YOU?
WHAT ARE YOU DOING?
WHO?
WHAT...?! WHY...?!
IT CAN'T BE...
A...AT A TIME LIKE THIS...!
NO, NO ...!

AH...
AHHHH....!
YOU...
WHO ARE YOU?
WH
THAT FACE...!
!? THAT FACE!
LUCY ?!
THE PRESIDENT'S ROOM!
IT BURST!
ONE OF MY DOGS...
I'VE BEEN FOUND OUT...! IT'S ALL OVER... THEY KNOW WHO I AM NOW...




**STAND NAME**
**'TUBULAR BELLS'**

HAS THE ABILITY TO BLOW UP METAL LIKE A BALLOON. ONCE HE FORMS THE STAND INTO A SHAPE, SUCH AS A 'BALLOON DOG', IT GAINS THE ABILITY TO TRACK DOWN A 'TARGET'. IT BURROWS INTO THE TARGET'S BODY AND DESTROYS THEM.

PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 13, Chapter 2
Translation: Freshy
Editing: Frequency

# #50

# TUBULAR BELLS
## PART ③

LUCY?
ARE YOU LUCY?
THAT 'FACE'...
WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE? ...YOU LOOK SO DISTRESSED...
HAHH, HAHH...
AHH!
GRRR...
GRRR...
GRRR...

ARE YOU ALRIGHT...?
POOR THING... YOU LOOK SO FRIGHTENED...
SH... SHE SAW ME...! IT'S ALL OVER, MY 'HUSBAND' WILL BE HELD RESPONSIBLE FOR THIS, TOO...
I NEVER HAD ANY INTENTION TO DO ANYTHING WITH THE 'CORPSE PARTS', OR THE 'PRESIDENT', OR 'THIS COUNTRY'... I JUST WANTED THINGS TO GO BACK TO NORMAL. I JUST WANTED EVERYTHING TO BE NORMAL AGAIN.
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
BUT... YOU LITTLE BITCH! I'LL BLOW A HOLE IN THAT PRETTY FACE, LUCY...!
チャッ

SNIFF
SNIFF!
SNIFF!
SNIFF
SNIFF!
AGHH-HHHH!!
MM...
NN...
I DON'T KNOW WHAT YOU WANT, BUT YOU'RE A 'STAND USER'!
YOU USED ME TO GET IN HERE...!
I WAS STARTING TO LOVE YOU...
I WAS GOING TO TAKE YOU UNDER MY WING AND LET YOU BE WITH ME FOREVER...!

YOU LITTLE WHORE!
I'M GOING TO SCRAPE YOUR BREASTS OFF WITH MY BULLETS!
WHAT'S GOING ON?!
I HEARD GUNFIRE!
THIS IS IMPOSSI-BLE...
THE NOISE IS COMING FROM THE PRESIDENT'S BEDROOM...!
UH...
NN...
GRRR
GRRR

YOU FUCKING BITCH! DON'T YOU DARE TRY TO MOVE!

BITCH!!!
AGH!
UGH!

ジュル
ジュル

IT REMEMBERS THE INTRUDER'S SCENT!
IT WILL AUTOMATICALLY TRACK THE ENEMY...
IT... IT'S NO USE! IT'S BREAKING IN! IT WON'T STOP FOLLOWING ME...
UNTIL IT FINALLY BURSTS!
IT WON'T STOP FOLLOWING ME UNTIL IT LATCHES ON AND BURSTS!

KIEEE-EEEE-EEHH-HHH!!!...
I'M NOT GOING TO LET YOU OFF WITH JUST AN 'EXECUTION'...
THAT'S TOO EASY.
LUCY... HOW DARE YOU DO THIS TO ME... I'LL MAKE YOU PAY...
I'LL MAKE YOU SEE WHAT HAPPENS IF YOU DECIEVE ME...
AGHHH!
I'M GOING TO HAVE YOU JUST BARELY HANG ON, AND MAKE YOU LOSE EVERYTHING YOU HAVE, BEFORE YOU DIE!

AHHHHHHH!
MR. PRESIDENT!
MR. PRESIDENT!
......
UHH...

I'LL HAVE YOU GIVE ME THESE CUTE LEGS OF YOURS FIRST!
I'LL MAKE THESE 'DOGS'...
FEED ON THEM OUT OF MY HANDS!
AHHHHHH!
SNIFF
SNIFF
RUFF!

AHHH!
S... SCENT...
...THE ONE THAT'S CLOSER...
SNIFF

SNIFF
SNIFF

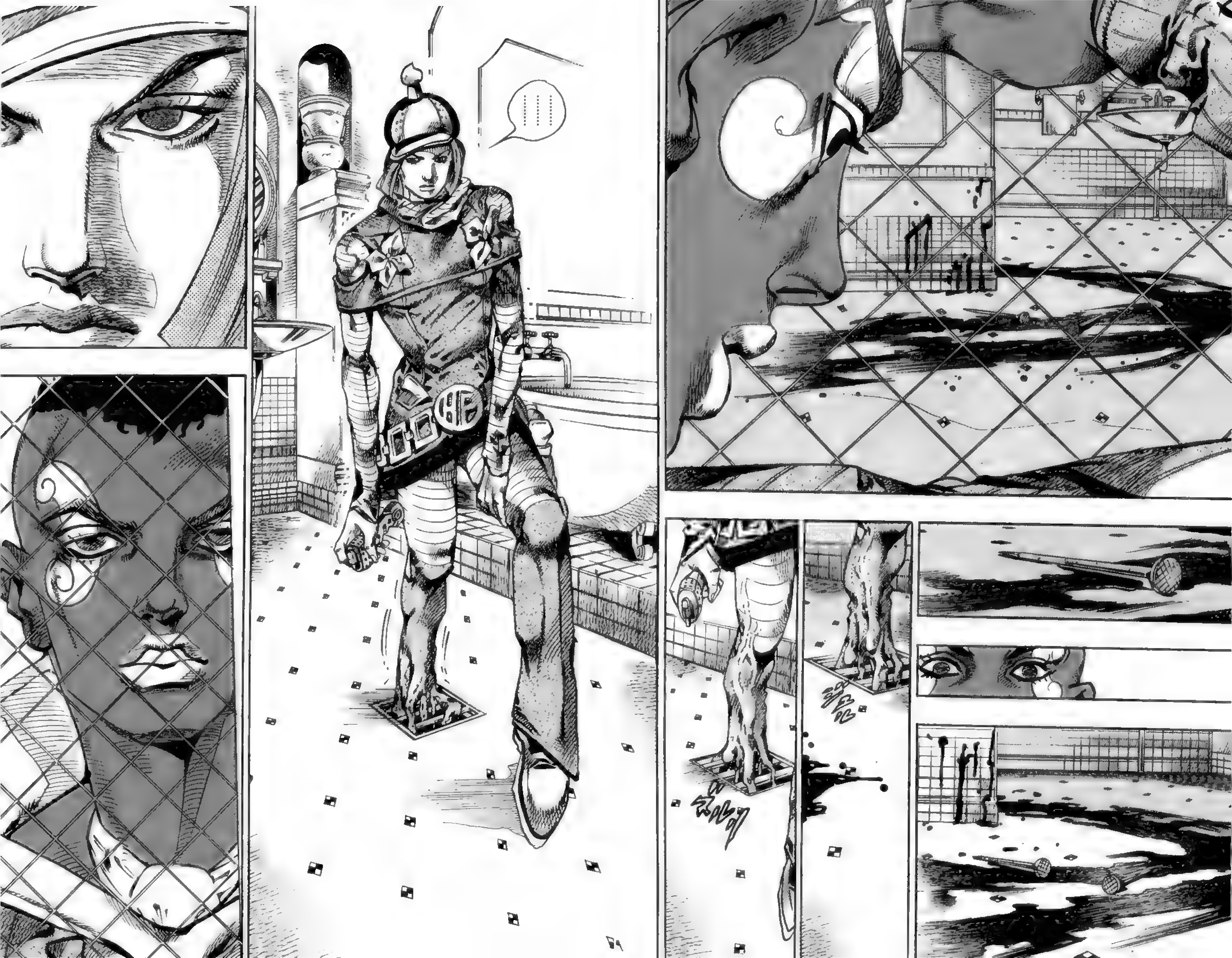
AHHHH!
AH

W...
CY...
BITCH
...
AAAAAHHHH!!

AHHHHH!
IF I DIDN'T... SHE WOULD HAVE KILLED ME!
WHAT... WHAT HAVE I DONE...?! I HAD TO KILL THE FIRST LADY... I HAD TO...
AHHHHHH!

MR. PRESIDENT! THERE'S BEEN GUNFIRE!
I'M IN THE MIDDLE OF MY NAP.
IT WAS COMING FROM THIS ROOM!
WHAT IS THIS?
WHAT IS THIS COMMOTION?
?
ARE YOU ALRIGHT?!
MR. PRESIDENT!
PRESIDENT VALENTINE!
HAHH, HAHH...
HAHH, HAHH...
THERE WAS AN INTRUDER IN THE ROOM!

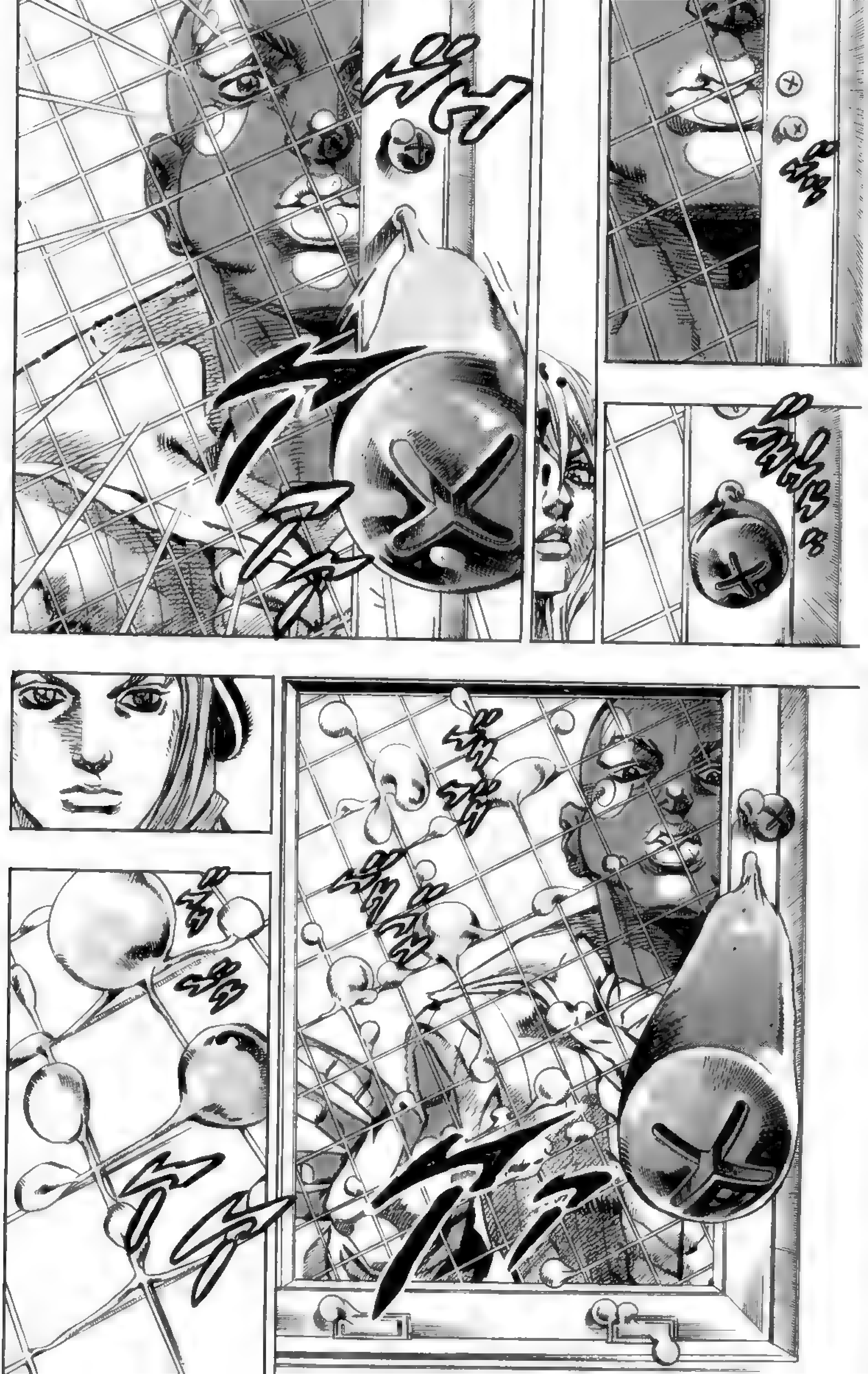
ドド
ドド
AHHHH!
ドドド
AHHH!
TUG
TUG
......



WHAT IS THIS...?
THIS BATHROOM'S WORLD...
AND YOU'RE...
'HOT PANTS', A MEMBER OF THE RACE.
......
HAHH, HAHH
HAHH, HAHH
LUCY, *MUMBLE*
THE 'HEART'...
WHERE ARE THE CORPSE PARTS?
WERE YOU ABLE TO GET THEM?
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...

I BROUGHT THEM ALONG IN MY BAG...
BUT IT WASN'T JUST THE 'HEART'...
THE 'RIGHT ARM' AND 'BOTH EARS'.
THERE WERE 'THREE' CORPSE PARTS...
I HAVE ALL THREE OF THEM HERE...!
......
チラリ
......
WHAT...!?
IT CAN'T BE...
THIS...
THIS FEELING...!

THIS...!
NO...!
'THREE', LUCY?
THIS IS UNEXPECTED ...
THERE ARE MANY PEOPLE IN THIS WORLD WHO WILL WILLINGLY GIVE UP THEIR LIVES IN ORDER TO OBTAIN THOSE 'CORPSE PARTS'...
FOR EXAMPLE, EVEN 'WOMEN'... EVEN SOMEONE LIKE A NUN...
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
IT'LL BE OVER SOON. THE ONLY ONE WHO SAW YOU IS THE ONE OUTSIDE THE WINDOW, RIGHT?
NOW...
WE'LL BOTH ESCAPE, ONCE I DISPOSE OF HIM.



ボン
ボン
ボン
ボン
ボン
ボン
ボン
AH!

TH... THEY'RE COMING!
THE 'METAL' WILL BLOW UP LIKE BALLOONS AND START FOLLOWING YOU!
ONCE IT GETS INSIDE YOU, IT'S ALL OVER! IT'LL BURROW INTO YOUR VEINS AND BURST! YOU'LL BE KILLED!
THERE'S NOTHING TO BE WORRIED ABOUT...
MY SPRAY, 'CREAM STARTER', ONLY NEEDS TO ATTACK THE 'USER'... IT ONLY NEEDS TO FINISH HIM OFF.
I ONLY NEED TO AIM FOR THE USER, NOT THE STAND!

'TUBULAR BELLS'... I'D ALREADY TURNED THE 'TIN SHUTTERS' ON THE WINDOWS...
INTO BALLOON BIRDS, AND FLOATED THEM AROUND MY WORLD...
I'LL FLOAT ALL OF THE SURROUNDING METALS AND DIRECT THEM TOWARDS YOU.
MY 'TUBULAR BELLS' WILL SERVE NOT ONLY AS MY DEFENSIVE TACTIC,
BUT THEY HAVE SENTENCED YOU TO A WORLD OF 'DEATH BY GUILLOTINE'!

THIS IS A WORLD IN WHICH YOU WILL NOT BE FORGIVEN... I'LL CAPTURE YOU AND TORTURE YOU SLOWLY. SO THAT YOU AND YOUR COUNTRY WILL LEARN NEVER TO INTERFERE WITH US, BY PUTTING YOU IN A WORLD OF PAIN AND TERROR!
HOW DARE YOU INVADE THIS TERRITORY...
DO YOU, HOT PANTS, HAVE AN ABILITY THAT ALLOWS YOU TO MELT YOUR BODY...?
YOU'VE PUT ME IN A WORLD WHERE MY NAME AS THE PRESIDENT'S GUARD HAS BEEN SOILED...

STAY STILL.
DON'T MOVE FROM WHERE YOU ARE.
AHHH!
HAHH, HAHH
IS THERE SOMEONE BEHIND THAT WALL...?
YOU'RE NOT THE ONLY INTRUDER?!

......
AGH!
UH, UGH!
Y... YOU...
WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE?
LUCY STEEL...
?
NO...
'SHE'S'...?!
THAT 'CORPSE' THERE...!
WHAT...?
IT CAN'T BE... IT CAN'T BE...!

MIKE O IS WITH SOMEBODY IN THE ROOM! THEY'RE ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE DOOR!
IN THE BATHROOM!
BUST THE DOOR DOWN!
......
HOT PANTS, WHAT HAVE YOU DONE TO THE PRESIDENT'S WIFE?!

HAHH,
HAHH,
HAHH,
HAHH...!
UGHH!
AGH... AHH...
YOUR SENTENCE TO TORTURE IS NOW REPEALED!
NOW! IMMEDIATELY! YOU ARE TO BE EXECUTED!

!?
WHA--
AGH?! GUH, GUH...
GUH,
GUH!
!?
AGHHHH!

STOP...
YOU'LL EVENTUALLY LOSE CONSCIOUSNESS, AND 'DIE' LIKE THAT...
THE PARTS OF MY 'LEFT ARM' THAT SCATTERED...
MY ATTACK TO YOU HAS BEEN OVER FOR A WHILE NOW.
MY BODY'S BEEN SPRAYED WITH MY STAND.
GUH
AGH
I DIDN'T SOIL YOUR GOOD NAME...
I SOILED YOUR FACE WITH MY 'MEAT SPRAY'. THE PARTS OF MY LEFT ARM HAVE INFILTRATED YOUR OWN FLESH AND ARE NOW IN YOUR THROAT AND YOUR LUNGS.
THE MORE YOU TRY TO BLOW SOMETHING UP,
YOU YOURSELF WILL INFLATE. IT'S OVER... THERE'S NO NEED FOR YOU TO DIE SHAMEFULLY. JUST DIE PEACEFULLY, AS YOU ARE.
GUH!
AGH!
KUH!
........

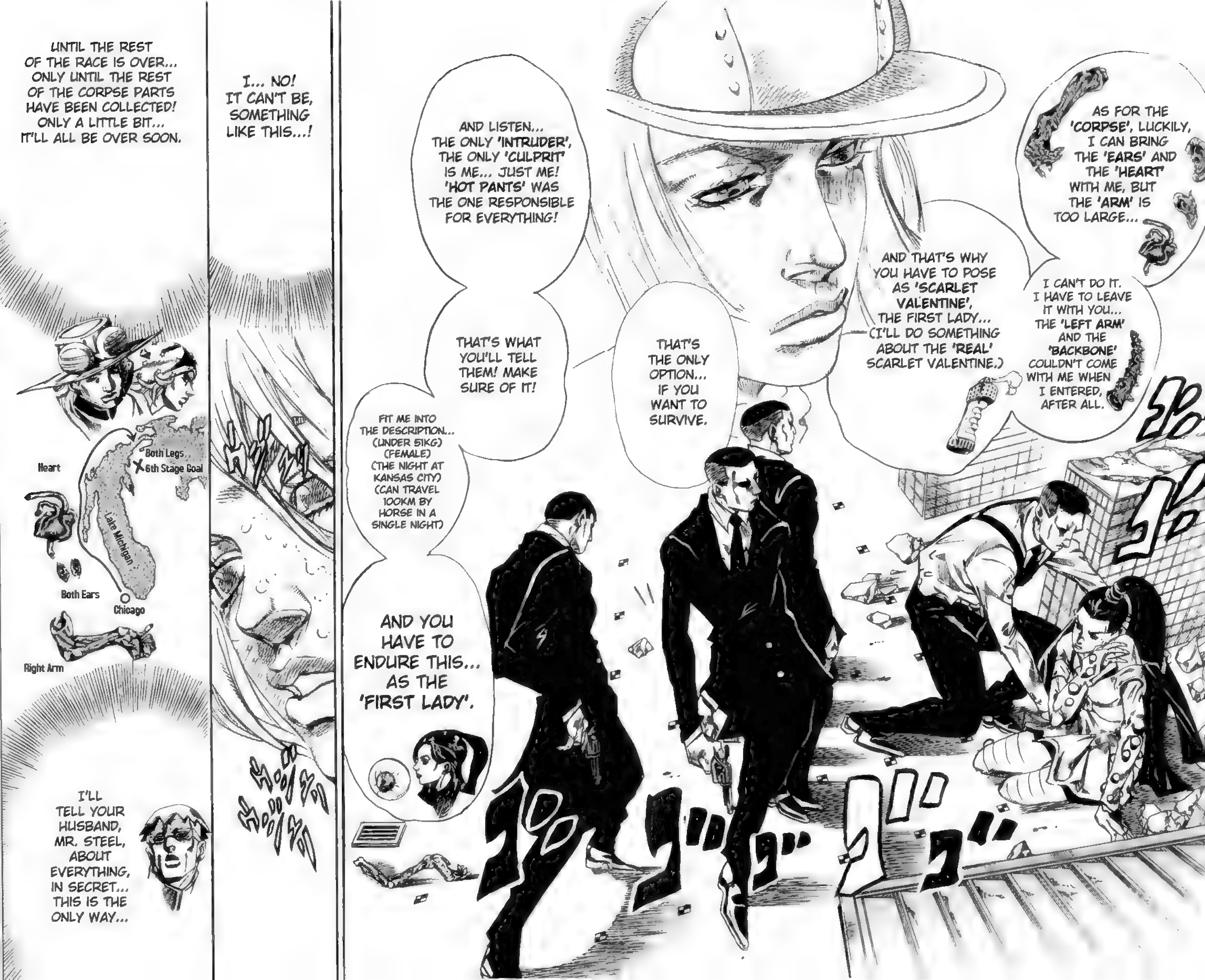
UOOO-
OOOO!
KUHH ...

ドカオーーン
ドドド
ドドド
ドドドド
ドドドド

A... ARE YOU ALRIGHT?!
WHAT COULD POSSIBLY HAVE HAPPENED ...?!
ARE YOU HURT?!
ARE YOU INJURED ANYWHERE!?

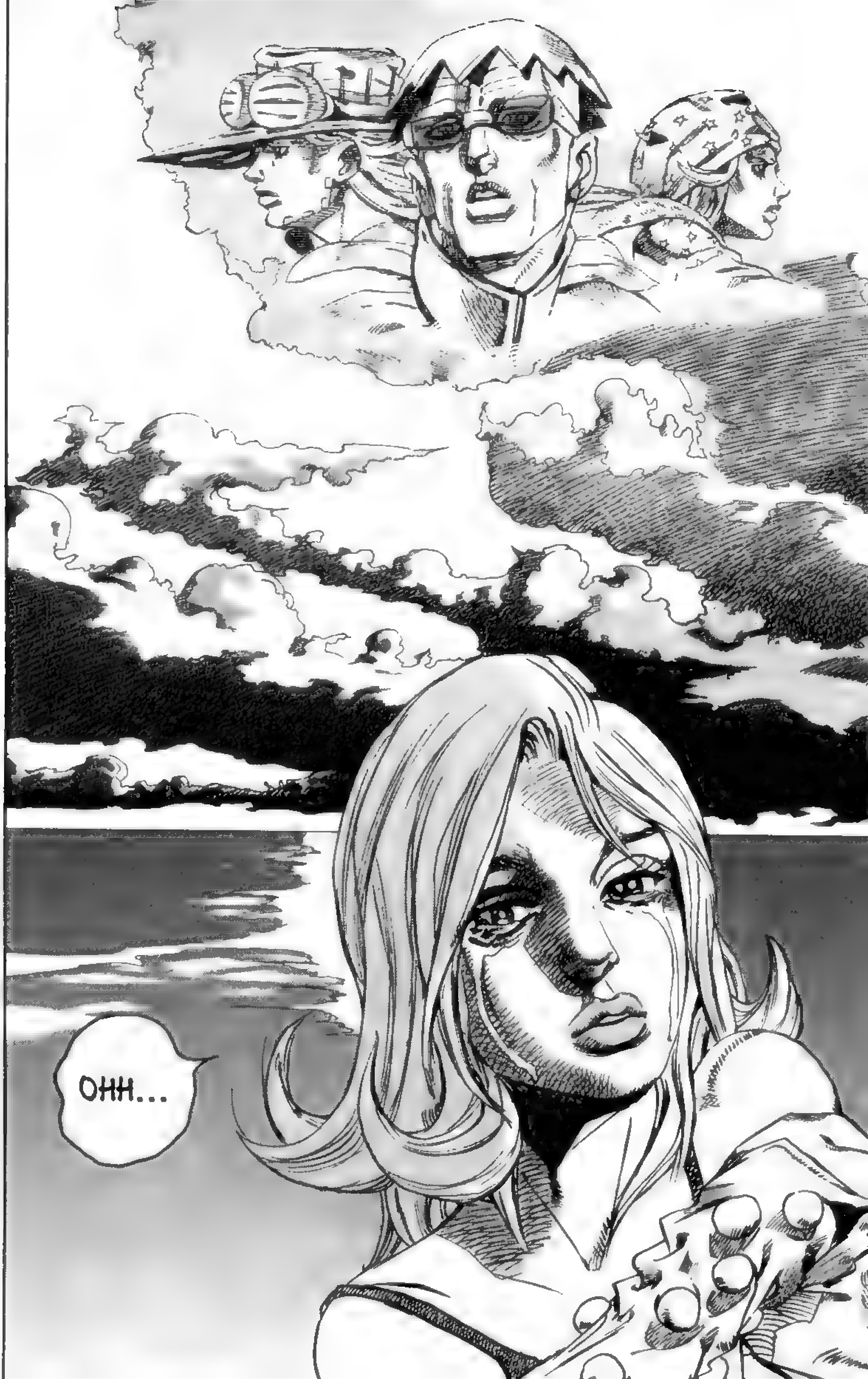
A DOCTOR!
SOMEONE CALL A DOCTOR!
'FIRST LADY'!
I... I'M NOT...
HURT. I'M ALRIGHT...
I'M ALRIGHT...
I'M FINE...

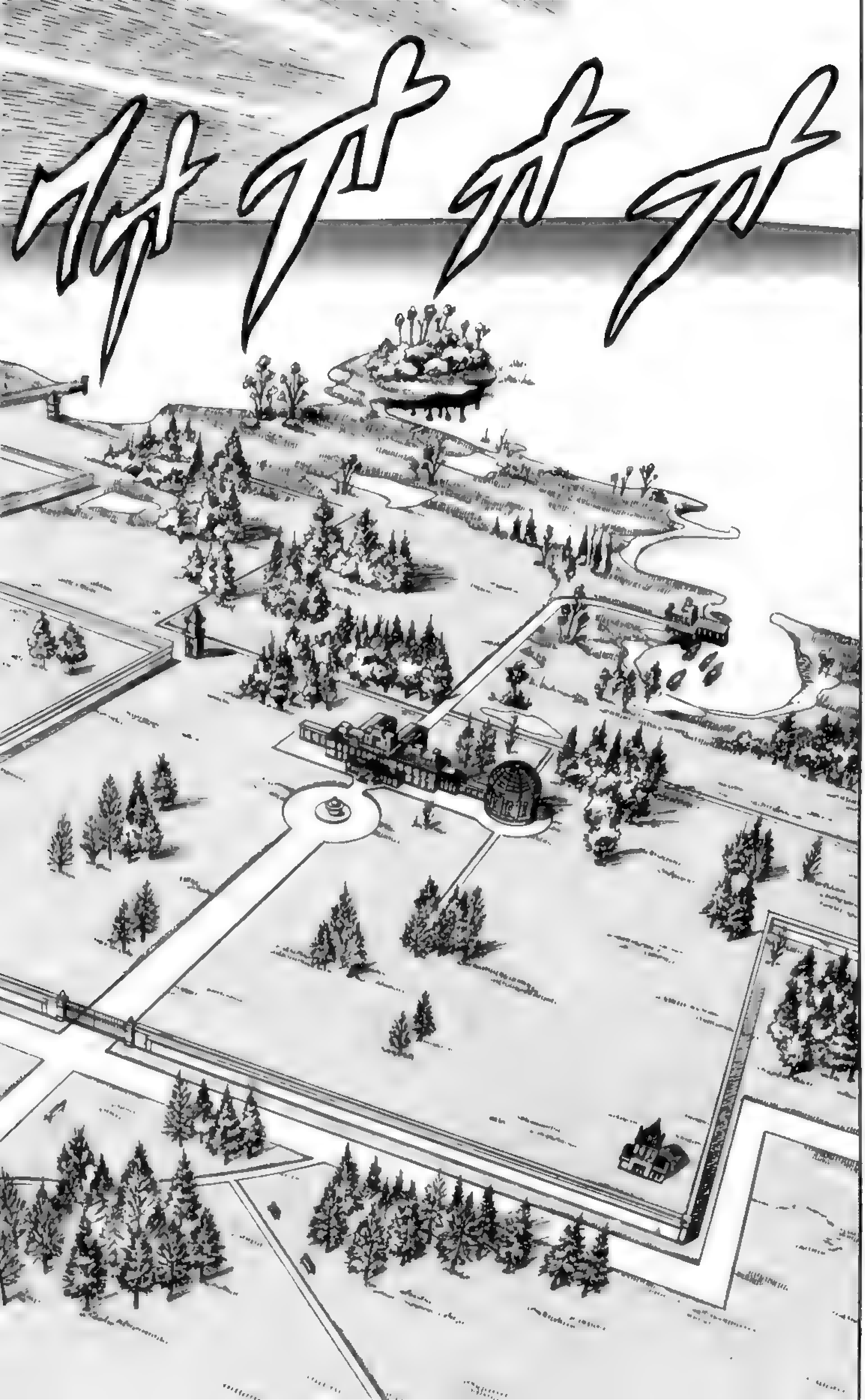
UNFORTUNATELY, LUCY...
IN THIS SITUATION... IT'S IMPOSSIBLE FOR ME TO HELP YOU ESCAPE.
EVEN IF I USE MY 'SPRAY' AND MELT YOU DOWN ENOUGH FOR YOU TO FIT IN THAT DRAIN, YOU'D MOST DEFINITELY DIE.
SLIP
SLIP


AS FOR THE 'CORPSE', LUCKILY, I CAN BRING THE 'EARS' AND THE 'HEART' WITH ME, BUT THE 'ARM' IS TOO LARGE...
I CAN'T DO IT. I HAVE TO LEAVE IT WITH YOU... THE 'LEFT ARM' AND THE 'BACKBONE' COULDN'T COME WITH ME WHEN I ENTERED, AFTER ALL.
AND THAT'S WHY YOU HAVE TO POSE AS 'SCARLET VALENTINE', THE FIRST LADY... (I'LL DO SOMETHING ABOUT THE 'REAL' SCARLET VALENTINE.)
THAT'S THE ONLY OPTION... IF YOU WANT TO SURVIVE.
AND LISTEN... THE ONLY 'INTRUDER', THE ONLY 'CULPRIT' IS ME... JUST ME! 'HOT PANTS' WAS THE ONE RESPONSIBLE FOR EVERYTHING!
THAT'S WHAT YOU'LL TELL THEM! MAKE SURE OF IT!
FIT ME INTO THE DESCRIPTION... (UNDER 51KG) (FEMALE) (THE NIGHT AT KANSAS CITY) (CAN TRAVEL 100KM BY HORSE IN A SINGLE NIGHT)
AND YOU HAVE TO ENDURE THIS... AS THE 'FIRST LADY'.
I... NO! IT CAN'T BE, SOMETHING LIKE THIS...!
UNTIL THE REST OF THE RACE IS OVER... ONLY UNTIL THE REST OF THE CORPSE PARTS HAVE BEEN COLLECTED! ONLY A LITTLE BIT... IT'LL ALL BE OVER SOON.
Heart
Both Legs
6th Stage Goal
Lake Michigan
Both Ears
Chicago
Right Arm
I'LL TELL YOUR HUSBAND, MR. STEEL, ABOUT EVERYTHING, IN SECRET... THIS IS THE ONLY WAY...

WHAT HAPPENED HERE?
SCARLET...
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH,
...SCARLET?
HAHH...
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH....

'HOT PANTS'...
THE RACER...
SHE WAS IN YOUR BEDROOM...
I SHOT HER, AND THE BALLOON DOGS PROTECTED ME, BUT... SHE ESCAPED OUT OF THAT DRAIN...
THANK YOU.
YOU WERE THE ONE THAT PROTECTED ME...
HAHH, HAHH...
OHHHH ...
SOB, SOB
HAHH...


OHH...



JoJo Project

PRESENTS

# STEEL BALL RUN

Volume 13, Chapter 3

Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

# #51
# WRECKING BALL
# PART①

MUMBLE
IT'S 35 DEGREES BELOW ZERO...
35 DEGREES BELOW... THEN IT WOULD STILL BE 'TOO THIN'.

THEN...
THEY WON'T CROSS BY HORSE, HUH...
ACROSS THAT 'FROZEN STRAIT', I MEAN.
COUGH

...The man's younger sister...
She'd only heard of the ocean during the 17 years of her life,
but had never seen it before.
The first time she'd ever left her hometown to see the ocean...
...Was on her wedding day.
Her husband was the son of a wealthy financial commissioner
which meant that his position, wealth, and status were all secured...
And, in fact, the one that had pushed for this engagement to happen was none other than the girl's brother, seven years her elder.

The man... his name is Wekapipo.
Wekapipo was a member of the country's highest-ranking guard troop working directly for the royal family.
His sister's husband was a friend from the same line of work.
But after six months of their marriage it became evident that this marriage was a failure... No, perhaps...
It had been a failure from the very start.

One night, when Wekapipo visited his sister's residence...
WHAT'S WRONG? WHY ARE YOU CRYING IN THE DARK?
SOB, SOB
OH...
IS YOUR HUSBAND OUT?
OHH...
?
WHAT'S ...
HIC
Y... YOU...!
AH ...!
AHHH!

SHIT, THAT BASTARD!! WHERE IS HE?!
PLEASE, PLEASE, BROTHER!
PLEASE BE CALM!
THIS IS BETWEEN ME AND MY HUSBAND!
IT WAS SOMETHING INSIGNIFICANT, BUT I WAS THE CAUSE OF IT... IT WAS BECAUSE I WAS BEING SELFISH...
AND TO THINK, I'M SUPPOSED TO BEHAVE WELL FOR HIM...
SO THAT HE CAN LOVE ME, AS HIS WIFE...
HOW LONG HAS THIS BEEN HAPPENING?! THIS ISN'T THE FIRST TIME, IS IT?!
PLEASE...
IT'S MY FAULT, IT'S BECAUSE I ANGERED HIM...
PLEASE! THIS ISN'T HIS FAULT!
HOW MANY TIMES HAS HE DONE SOMETHING LIKE THIS TO YOU?!
!

OH?
?
IT... NO, YOUR 'EYE'...
WHY DID YOU JUST KNOCK THAT VASE OVER...?
YOUR 'LEFT EYE'... NO...!
WH... WHAT...?
IT CAN'T BE...
YOU...?
AH...!
HOW COULD THIS BE...? AHHHHH!!
YOU CAN'T SEE OUT OF IT?!
NO! THAT'S NOT... NO, BROTHER...!
THIS IS... THIS IS JUST TEMPORARY! IT WILL GET BETTER SOON! I PROMISE!

And decided to recieve permission to annul the marriage from the `church` and the `pope`.
The only saving grace was that his sister hadn't had a child with him yet...
Wekapipo immediately pulled a few strings.
He blamed himself... And he was prepared to lose his position after annuling this marriage.
It was he who had forced this marriage in the first place.
It was his `punishment` for thinking that being married to `a wealthy family` would mean `happiness` for his sister...
This was all his fault...
But that only served to incur his sister`s husband`s wrath!

PLEASE!
PLEASE DIVORCE MY SISTER! IF THINGS ARE NOT GOING WELL BETWEEN THE TWO OF YOU, IT SHOULD BE THE ONLY LOGICAL THING TO DO!
I BEG OF YOU, PLEASE!
THE FAULT IS ALL MINE! I WILL ATONE FOR EVERY-THING, I PROMISE YOU!
AGH!
KUH...

DO YOU REALLY THINK THAT THAT'S ALL THERE IS TO THIS?
THE 'POPE' GAVE YOU HIS PERMISSION?
WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO ME?
YOU'VE SHAMED ME...
WHAT DO YOU THINK MY FATHER AND HIS FRIENDS WILL SAY ABOUT ME NOW?
LISTEN UP...
YOUR SISTER, WEKAPIPO... SHE WAS ONLY GOOD IN BED WHEN I BEAT THE CRAP OUT OF HER WHILE WE WERE DOING IT.
OTHERWISE, IT FELT LIKE SHIT... SHE WAS A BORING LAY, YOUR SISTER.
UGH...
GUH...
UGH...
YOU'LL TAKE THE RESPONSIBILITY?
FINE, WEKAPIPO.
I'LL TAKE YOUR LIFE, THEN.
WE'LL HAVE OURSELVES A 'DUEL'.

BROTHER...
OH...
TOMORROW MORNING, AT DAYBREAK!
JUST NORTHWEST OF THE CASTLE BOUNDARIES! DON'T BE LATE!
YOU ARE STILL YOUNG, SISTER...
YOU WIL MARRY AGAIN...AND I PROMISE YOU, YOU WILL BE HAPPY.
THERE IS NOTHING TO WORRY ABOUT.
I WILL BE BACK SOON.
IT WILL BE FINE...
OHHH...
......

OHH...
HIC, SOB
THE MEN AROUND US ARE HERE TO OBSERVE.
THEY'LL MAKE SURE THAT THIS DUEL IS DONE FAIRLY AND IN HONOR, RATHER THAN IN BLOOD-LUST.

LET'S BEGIN.
THERE'S NO REASON TO DELAY...
LET'S DECIDE THIS IN ONE STRIKE.
OF COURSE... WILL WE BE USING 'SWORDS'?
'STEEL BALLS', OF COURSE!
THE 'STEEL BALLS' THAT HAVE BEEN PASSED DOWN FROM GENERATION TO GENERATION!
THAT IS THE TRADITION!

ギャル

ドドドド

I SEE... SPLENDID! THE 'DUEL' IS NOW OVER...
YOU WERE FINISHED, FROM THE VERY BEGINNING.
THERE WAS NO OTHER OPTION FOR YOU.
BUT, WEKAPIPO ...
!!
AH!
UGH!
WH... WHAT...
THIS WAS A FORMAL 'DUEL'!
AGH!
I HAVE RECIEVED PERMISSION FROM THE POPE HIMSELF TO ANNUL MY SISTER'S MARRIAGE...
GUH!
WHAT IS THIS ... ?!
THERE SHOULD BE NO PROBLEM! I AM NOT A CRIMINAL!

UNFORTUNATELY, THAT DOESN'T END YOUR PROBLEMS.
HIS FATHER IS AN INFLUENTIAL FIGURE IN THIS COUNTRY.
HE IS IN A DIFFERENT LEAGUE FROM YOU... YOU WILL BE 'ERASED'. THAT'S HOW THINGS WORK...
BUT I'LL MAKE IT SO THAT YOU'RE 'ERASED' ON PAPER.
...LEAVE THE COUNTRY.
YOU ARE FORBIDDEN FROM RETURNING TO 'THE KINGDOM OF NAPLES'...
EXILE ?!
WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO MY SISTER IF THE COUNTRY TURNS ITS BACK ON HER?! SHE CANNOT FEND FOR HERSELF!
SHE IS ALMOST COMPLETELY BLIND! PLEASE, LET ME SPEAK TO THE KING!
HOW DARE YOU! THAT WILL SHAME MY FAMILY NAME!
PLEASE, LET ME SPEAK TO THE POPE!
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE, WEKAPIPO...
CURSE YOU, YOU DOGS!

OUR PRIORITY IS TO RETRIEVE THE 'CORPSE PARTS' IN THE 6TH STAGE.
AND THE 'ASSASSINATION' OF JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI.
IF YOU SUCCEED, I WILL GIVE YOU 'CITIZENSHIP' AND THE RIGHT OF 'PERMANENT RESIDENCE'... AS WELL AS A 'HIGH-RANKING' POSITION IN THE GOVERNMENT.
IF YOU WISH... FOR YOUR FAMILY, AS WELL.
I THANK YOU VERY MUCH.
BUT AS FOR FAMILY...
I HAVE NONE.
MY SISTER... SHE DIED LAST YEAR.
A REWARD FOR ONE WILL BE SUFFICIENT.

……
'WEKAPIPO'
'MAGENTA MAGENTA'

HURGHH, GAHH! KOFF, KOFF
EGHH, GUH! KOFF, KOFF
......
SNIFF SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
LICK
LICK

...HEY... COUGH
JUST THOUGHT OF A FUNNY JOKE...
CRITIQUE IT FOR ME, WILL YA? IT'S A GAG USING THIS CHUNK OF ICE.
FIRST, YOU GOTTA PRETEND TO CRY WITH ME. ALRIGHT...? PRETEND TO CRY.
OH... HEH, WERE YOU WATCHIN'?
OHHHHHH, I'M SO SAA-AAAAAD....
OHHHHH, IT HURTS SO BAD.....
YOU HAVE TO GET INTO IT, BE REAL SAD...
TOGETHER NOW, ALRIGHT?
WAAAAHHH, I'M SAAAAAD ....
'TEARS OF A HIMALA-YAN YETI'...

LAKE SUPERIOR
LAKE MICHIGAN
AND THAT'S THE GAG...
COUGH
TCH!
HEY... MISTER WEKAPIPO, HAVE YOU HEARD?
APPARENTLY SOME GUY INVENTED A MACHINE THAT CAN FLY IN THE SKY, LIKE A CONDOR!
NOT A HOT-AIR BALLOON...IT'S GOT BIG WINGS, AND IT'S CALLED AN 'AIRPLANE' OR SOMETHING LIKE THAT.
IT TOOK US TWO GODDAMN WEEKS TO GET TO THIS SHITHOLE FROM CHICAGO...
BUT USING THAT MACHINE, WE'D HAVE GOTTEN HERE IN NO TIME, NOT EVEN ENOUGH TIME TO FEEL COLD!
WISH THEY'D INVENTED THAT SOONER, HUH?

A MACHINE THAT CAN FLY?
YUP! THAT'S IT!
REALLY DAMN FAST, TOO!
WE'RE APPROACHIN' A GOLDEN AGE, YOU KNOW?!
THEN THAT WOULD MEAN THAT PEOPLE LIKE US WILL NO LONGER BE OF ANY USE.
IF THINGS WERE SO CON-VENIENT, THEN ANYONE COULD HAVE BEEN STANDING WHERE WE ARE NOW.
SOMEONE ELSE WOULD HAVE HAD THIS JOB.
......
YA KNOW ...
DO YOU EVER, YOU KNOW, HAVE FUN? EVER?
YOU EVER HAVE DAYS WHEN YOU SMILE? MR. DOOM-AND-GLOOM...
YOU'RE TOO DAMN ANALYTI-CAL!
...ARE YOU DONE TALKING ?

I WILL FAITH-FULLY COMPLETE THIS ASSIGN-MENT ...
AND RECEIVE MY MONEY AND MY RESIDENCE, AND LIVE A PEACEFUL LIFE IN THIS COUNTRY.
THAT IS ALL.
LET ME GIVE YOU ONE PIECE OF ADVICE...
IF YOU ARE REGARD-ING JOHNNY JOESTAR AND GYRO ZEPPELI LIGHTLY, DO NOT DO SO.
THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S 'STEEL BALLS' HAVE A HISTORY AND POWER THAT SUR-PASSES YOUR KNOWLEDGE.
BUT I AM AWARE OF WHAT THEY ARE... AND I WILL SURPASS THEM, IN ORDER TO ELIMINATE THEM.
THAT'S SETTLED, THEN.

THAT'S NOT IT, EITHER... '*HAVE RESPECT FOR THE ZEPPELIS' STEEL BALLS*'.
I'M NOT WORRIED ABOUT IT.
I KNOW...YOUR 'STEEL BALLS' ARE MORE ADVANCED THAN THE ZEPPELIS', RIGHT?
THAT IS ESSENTIAL.
IF YOU DO, THERE IS NO POSSIBILITY OF FAILURE... WE WILL WIN...

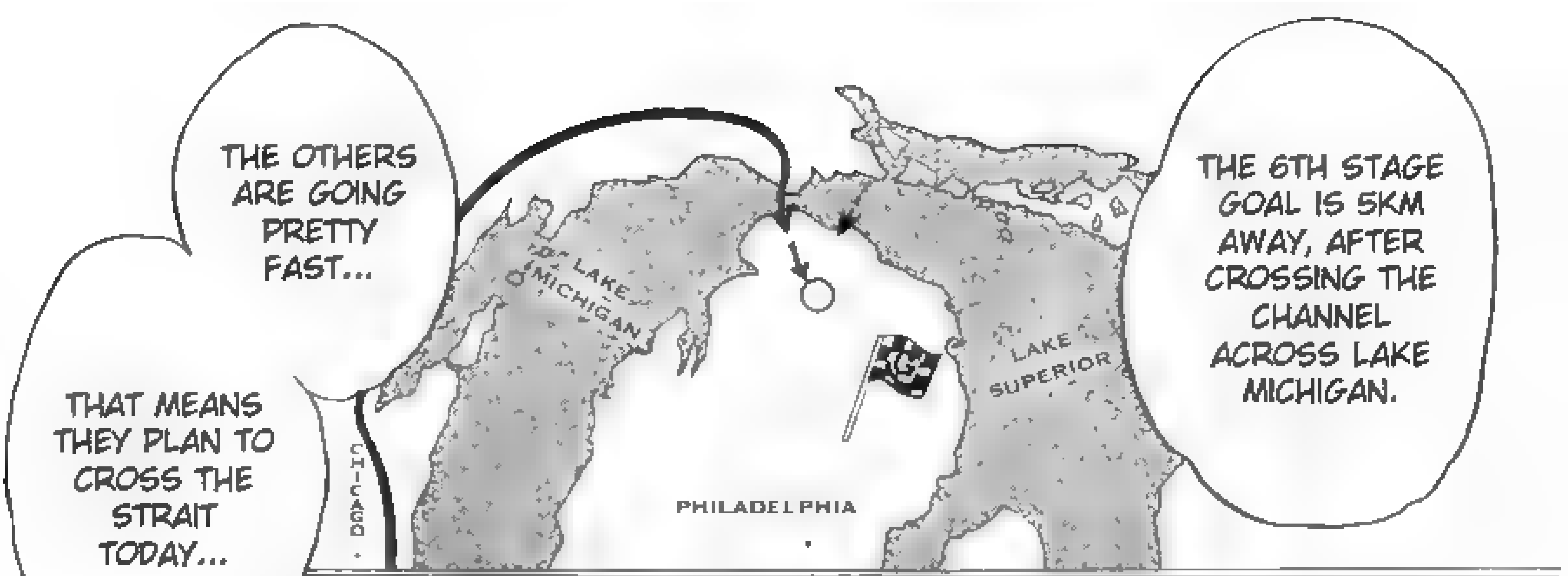
ザアァッ

STILL TOO THIN...
THE ICE IS ONLY ABOUT 43CM THICK.
CROSSING THIS PLACE ON OUR HORSES IS RISKY... WISH IT WAS A LITTLE THICKER...

THEN WE'LL HAVE TO FIND A 'FERRY'...
THEY'RE STATIONED ABOUT 12KM FROM HERE.
THEY'RE FERRYING PEOPLE ACROSS NEAR LAKE SUPERIOR, WHERE THE WATER HASN'T FROZEN.
IT'S FOLLOWING US.
...BUT...I DON'T KNOW FOR SURE...
IT'S A WEIRD THICKNESS...
IT'S ALWAYS LIKE THIS, ALL THE IMPORTANT DECISIONS ARE HARD ONES...
WE MIGHT BE ABLE TO CROSS...
WE HAVE TO DECIDE QUICKLY.
LOOK, IT'S TRAILING US AGAIN.
IT'S...

WHAT THE HELL?! IT MIGHT BE AFTER OUR HORSES!
NO, GYRO... LOOK.
YOU'RE NOT SUPPOSED TO FEEL SORRY FOR IT!
YOU GAVE IT FOOD THIS MORNING, DIDN'T YOU?! OUR SCRAPS?
EVEN IF IT IS A STARVING WOLF CUB, THAT THING COULD GO AFTER OUR HORSES!
THAT'S WHY I TOLD YOU NOT TO DO IT...
BEHIND THAT WOLF...
WAY BEHIND THE WOLF, OVER THE HILL, NEAR THOSE TREES, THERE...

POCO-LOCO'S COMING!
IT'S POCOLOCO.
I KNEW HE'D BE NEARBY!
POCO-LOCO'S IN THE LEAD!
BEHIND HIM IS BABA YAGA AND NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA!




| TOTAL RANKING POSITION | | TOTAL POINTS EARNED | FINISHING IN 1ST, 2ND, 3RD, 4TH, 5TH RACES |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | POCOLOCO | 233 | 3RD-9TH-5TH-2ND-1ST |
| 2 | HOT PANTS | 215 | 6TH-5TH-1ST-7TH-3RD |
| 3 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 195 | 5TH-2ND-2ND-4TH-5TH |
| 4 | DIEGO BRANDO | 190 | 2ND-1ST-3RD-OUT OF RANKING-OUT OF RANKING |
| 5 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 188 | 19TH-6TH-12TH-1ST-2ND |
| 6 | GYRO ZEPPELI | 146 | 21ST-4TH-4TH-3RD-4TH |

| POINTS EARNED PER RANK | |
|---|---|
| 1ST | 100P |
| 2ND | 50P |
| 3RD | 40P |
| 4TH | 35P |
| 5TH | 30P |
| 6TH | 25P |
| 7TH | 20P |
| ⋮ | ⋮ |
| UNTIL | |
| 21ST | 1P |

PLUS...
THIS'S BEEN BOTHERING ME FOR A WHILE NOW, BUT THE NEXT CORPSE PART SHOULD BE INCREDIBLY CLOSE!
'BOTH LEGS' ARE NEAR THE GOAL, AS I THOUGHT! NEAR THE SHORE OF THE LAKE!
IT COULD EVEN BE UNDERNEATH ALL THIS ICE!
HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY....

POCOLOCO CHANGED DIRECTIONS!
HE'S GOING TO TRY TO CROSS...!
THEY'VE DECIDED TO CROSS OVER THE ICE ON THEIR HORSES!
JOHNNY'S MAIN GOAL IS TO COLLECT ALL THE 'CORPSE PARTS'...
BUT MINE IS... SOLELY...
TO WIN THIS RACE....
I NEED TO BE IN '1ST PLACE' IN THIS 6TH STAGE...I HAVEN'T GOTTEN '1ST' IN ANY OF THESE STAGES...IF POCOLOCO GETS ANOTHER 100P...

TOTAL RANKING POSITION
TOTAL PO... EARNED
POCOLOCO 233
HOT PANTS 215
JOHNNY JOESTAR 195
DIEGO BRANDO
5 NORISUKE HIGASHIKA
6 GYRO ZEPPE
THERE ARE ONLY 3 MORE STAGES LEFT! MY CHANCE TO 'WIN' IS GOING TO BE PRETTY DAMN SLIM!
GYRO... WHAT SHOULD WE DO?
WE NEED TO 'DECIDE'... BUT IF THE ICE 'BREAKS'...
OUR HORSES MIGHT NOT MAKE IT OUT ALIVE.
POCOLOCO ...
HE MIGHT HAVE 'FOUND IT'.
THE 'NATIVES' ROUTE'...

THERE ARE LOGS UNDER THE ICE SOMEWHERE.
THE ICE WON'T BREAK AS EASILY THEN, RIGHT? I WAS LOOKING FOR THAT, BUT I COULDN'T FIND IT, UNDERNEATH ALL THIS SNOW...
BUT THE WAY POCOLOCO IS RUNNING...
THERE'S A HIGH POS-SIBILITY THAT HE FOUND IT ALREADY. THAT'S WHY HE'S GOING TO CROSS OVER THE ICE...
THE 'NATIVES' ROUTE'?
IT'S SOMETHING I HEARD...
SO THAT THEY COULD CROSS OVER THE LAKE EVEN WHEN THE ICE WAS THIN,
THE NATIVES AROUND HERE FLOATED LOGS UNDER THE ICE WHEN WINTER CAME, TO MAKE 'TRAILS' UNDER THE ICE...
YEAH...
THE 'NATIVES' ROUTE'... IS THAT INFORMATION RELIABLE?
THE SHORTEST DISTANCE ACROSS THIS STRAIT IS STILL AT LEAST 8KM...
ARE YOU SURE THAT THEY'VE MADE A TRAIL FOR THE WHOLE '8KM', AND NOT ONLY 'PART OF THE WAY'?
I WAS THINKING IT COULD BE A LIE. THAT'S WHY I WAS LOOKING FOR IT.

BUT WE'RE GOING TO 'CROSS' TOO, AREN'T WE?
IN THIS SITUATION... YOU'VE ALREADY MADE THE DECISION TO GO ACROSS THE 'ICE'.
....RIGHT ?
YOU'RE OKAY WITH IT, YEAH?
YEAH...
THAT'S RIGHT.
AND MAKE SURE NOT TO GIVE WOLVES OUR SCRAPS AGAIN!

HEY, HEY,
HEY, HEY,
HEY....

WHO THE HELL ARE THOSE TWO?
HOW MANY POINTS DO THEY HAVE?
NO... I'VE NEVER SEEN THEM BEFORE...
THERE ARE OTHERS BEHIND POCOLOCO...
I DON'T THINK THEY'RE RACE PARTICIPANTS. ONE OF THEM'S ON A SLED...
REALLY... ?
THAT GUY ON THE RIGHT,
I KNOW HIM... I'VE SEEN HIM SOMEWHERE BEFORE.
I'VE MET HIM SOMEWHERE.

THEY'RE... THEY'RE 'ENEMIES'!
'THEY'RE' ....
GYRO... 'THOSE TWO' ARE HEADED OUR WAY...
NOT FOLLOWING POCOLOCO! THEY'RE COMING OUR WAY! THEY'RE NOT TRYING TO CROSS THE STRAIT!
NO! THAT CAN'T BE!
THE 'ENEMY' MIGHT BE CLOSE, BUT WE HAVEN'T FOUND THE 'CORPSE PART' YET!
THEY SHOULD ONLY ATTACK US 'AFTER' WE FIND IT!

I'VE... MET HIM BEFORE, I KNOW IT...
BUT 'WHO' IS THAT...?
ドドドド
GYRO, AS WE THOUGHT, POCOLOCO IS GOING TO HEAD ACROSS THE ICE!
HE MUST HAVE FOUND THE LOGS!
HEY, JOHNNY! THAT GUY JUST THREW SOME-THING!

BE CAREFUL! SOME-THING'S COMING!
THIS...! NO WAY!
H... HE'S...!
NO FUCKING WAY...!

IT'S A 'STEEL BALL'! GYROOOOOOO !!
WHAT...?!

I REMEMBER NOW...
THAT GUY...! HE'S FROM MY COUNTRY...!
JOHNNY, GET DOWN!
THE 'SATELLITES' ARE GOING TO HIT US NEXT!

THEY'RE DEFIN-ITELY ENEMIES !

ドドドド
ドドドド
BUT WE HAVEN'T EVEN FOUND THE 'CORPSE PARTS' YET!
WE HAVEN'T EVEN STARTED 'LOOKING'!
THEY'RE ALREADY ATTACKING US! PLUS...
WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON!? THAT MAN ON THE RIGHT, HE...
ギャルギャル
HE'S USING A STEEL BALL TOO!?

'WEKA-PIPO'!
THAT'S DEFINITELY HIM... BUT... HE'S SUPPOSED TO BE DEAD!
!?
......
HUH?

UGHH!
WHAT!?
GYRO...!
WH... WHAT'S GOING ON?!
DON'T PANIC...
CALM DOWN, JOHNNY...
THE ZEPPELIS ...
THE STRENGTH TO THEIR 'STEEL BALLS' IS...
'THE USE OF THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE'...
WE MUST SURPASS THAT POWER!
13 WRECKING BALL (END)

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

⑬壊れゆく鉄球

2007年9月9日　第1刷発行
2007年10月10日　第2刷発行

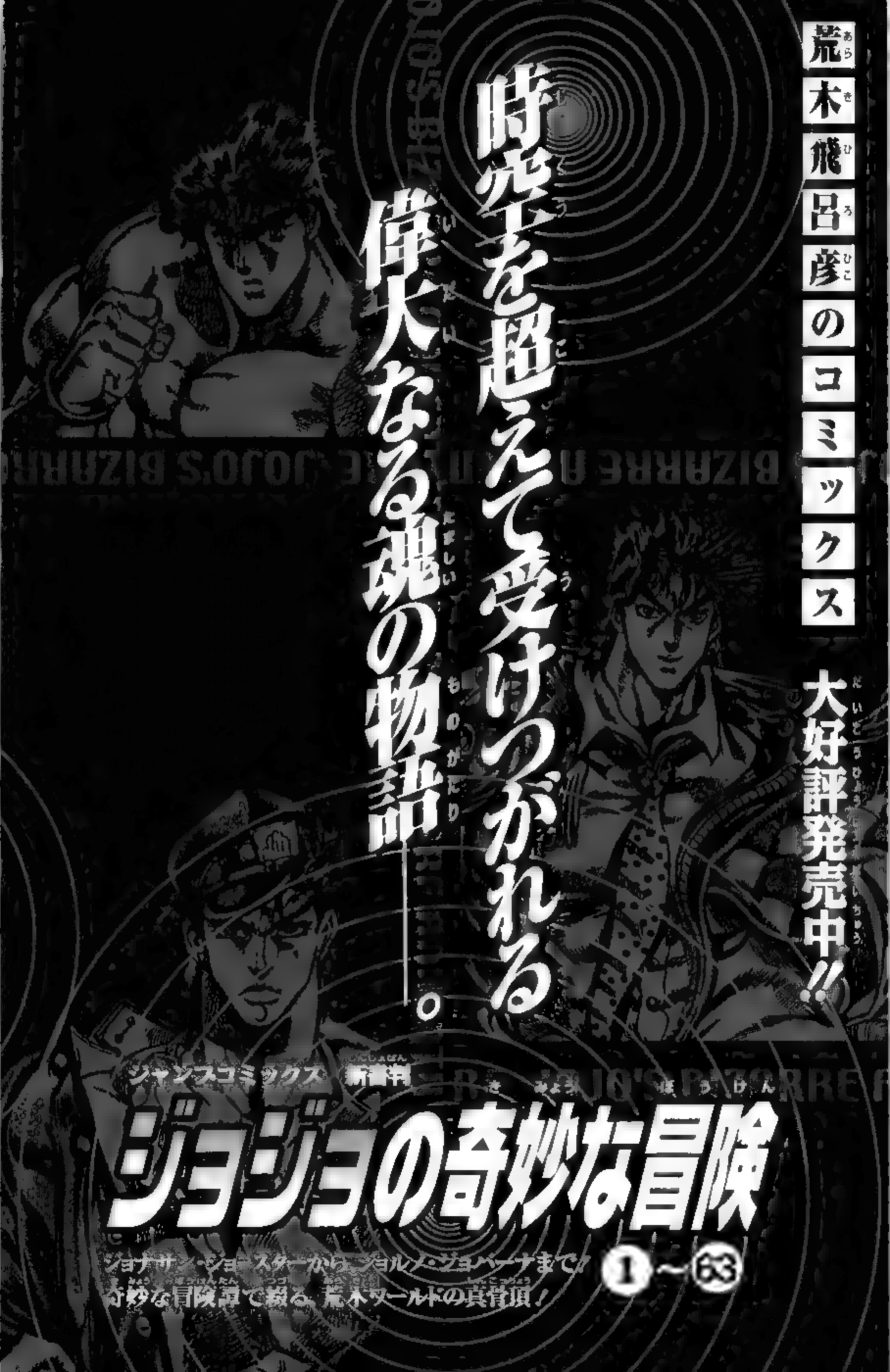
著者　荒木飛呂彦
©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS 2007
編集　ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(5211)2651

発行人　鳥嶋和彦

発行所　株式会社　集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101 8050
03(3230)6236(編集部)
電話 東京 03(3230)6191(販売部)
03(3230)6076(読者係)

Printed in Japan

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社
造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社読者係宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。
ISBN978-4-08-874420-9 C9979


荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
大好評発売中!!
時空を超えて受けつがれる
偉大なる魂の物語――。
BIZARRE ADVENTURE JOJO'S BIZARRE
ジャンプコミックス 新書判
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
1～63
ジョナサン・ジョースターからジョルノ・ジョバァーナまで!!
奇妙な冒険譚で綴る、荒木ワールドの真骨頂!

ジャンプコミックス 好評発売中 ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part6

# ストーンオーシャン ①～⑰

六代目ジョジョはなんと女性！ 空条徐倫は、恋人との
ドライブ中に交通事故に遭遇。弁護士と恋人にハメられ、
15年の刑務所暮らしが確定してしまうが…!?

●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞
## ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 ①～㊴ 以下続刊

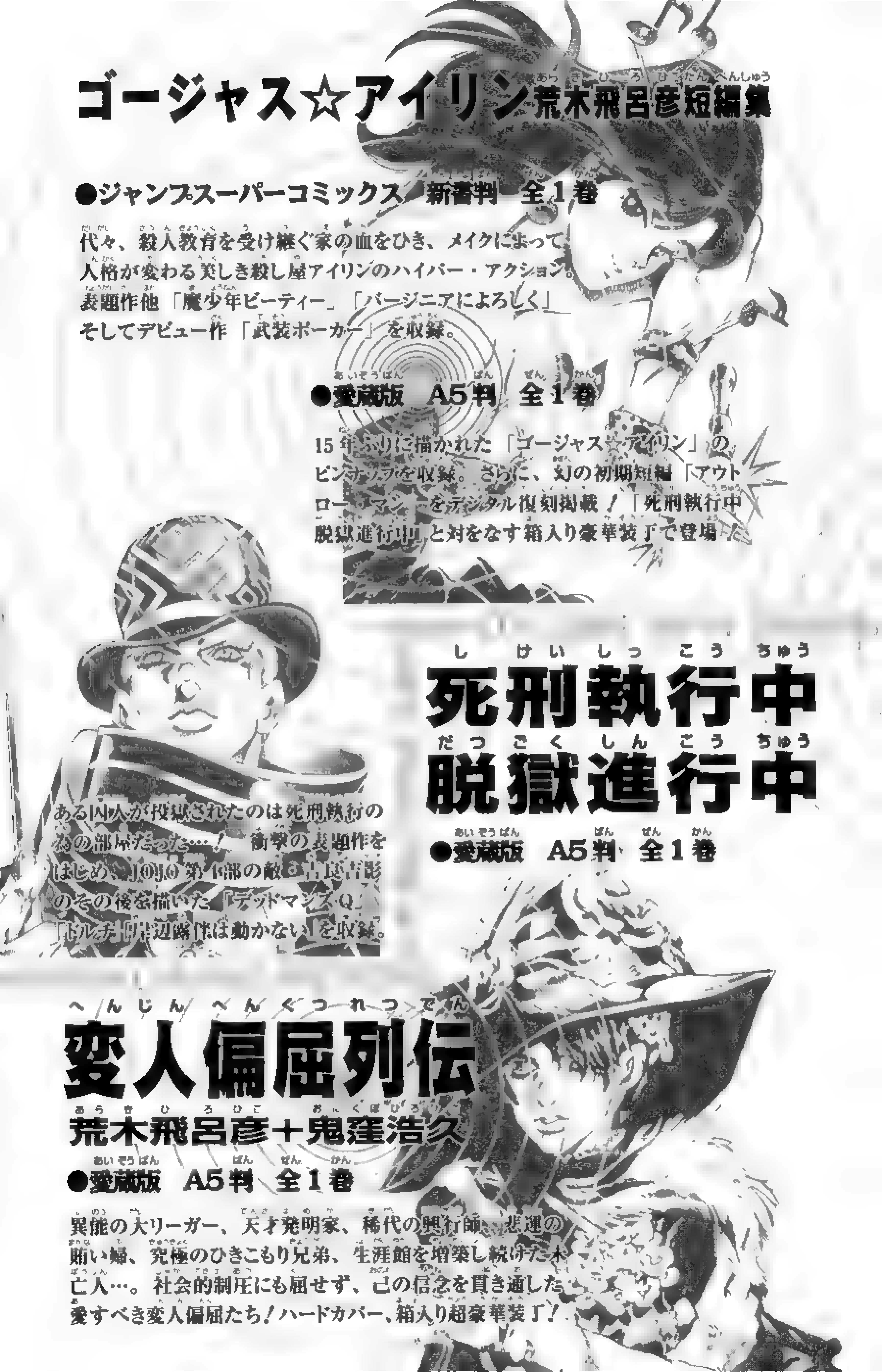
●豪華本
## JOJO6251 荒木飛呂彦の世界
デビュー時からJOJO第4部までのイラスト他、自身の作品背景や秘密を語ったロングインタビューも収録。

## JOJO A GO!GO!
独特の色づかいが魅力の荒木イラスト集他、第5部までのスタンドを解説したスタンド本、取材を元に「作家・荒木飛呂彦」の本質に迫る荒木本の3冊セット！ 美麗ケース入り。

●JUMP j BOOKS
## ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
原作／荒木飛呂彦 著者／関島眞頼・山口 宏
JOJO第3部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー！ 承太郎とディオの激闘は灼熱の砂漠を抜け、エジプト・カイロへ。果てしなく広がる砂の海で、彼らの行く手を阻むものは何か…！

## ジョジョの奇妙な冒険Ⅱ
ゴールデンハート／ゴールデンリング
原作／荒木飛呂彦 著者／宮 昌太朗・大塚ギチ
JOJO第5部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー第2弾！ ヴェネチアで次々と起こる大量殺人事件。そしてその現場には、あのパンナコッタ・フーゴの姿が…！

荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
荒木世界を読みつくせ!!
ありとあらゆる手品やトリックを、自在にこなす不思議な転校生ビーティー。友人の公一と魔少年ビーティーが体験する様々な怪事件に、数々の奇抜なトリックが登場する！荒木飛呂彦渾身の連載デビュー作！
魔少年ビーティー
●ジャンプコミックス 新書判 全1巻
●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞ 全1巻
大好評発売中!!
秘密機関ドレスが創り出した最強の生物兵器・バオー。橋沢育朗に寄生し、ドレスから脱走したバオーに、暗殺者たちが次々と襲いかかる！その時、育朗の中に眠る無敵の生命・バオーが覚醒する!!
バオー来訪者
●ジャンプコミックス 新書判 全2巻
●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞ 全1巻



ゴージャス☆アイリン 荒木飛呂彦短編集
●ジャンプスーパーコミックス 新書判 全1巻
代々、殺人教育を受け継ぐ家の血をひき、メイクによって人格が変わる美しき殺し屋アイリンのハイパー・アクション。表題作他「魔少年ビーティー」「バージニアによろしく」そしてデビュー作「武装ポーカー」を収録。
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
15年ぶりに描かれた「ゴージャス☆アイリン」のピンナップを収録。さらに、幻の初期短編「アウトロー・マン」をデジタル復刻掲載！「死刑執行中脱獄進行中」と対をなす箱入り豪華装丁で登場だ。
死刑執行中脱獄進行中
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
ある囚人が投獄されたのは死刑執行の為の部屋だった…！衝撃の表題作をはじめ、JOJO第4部の敵「吉良吉影」のその後を描いた「デッドマンズQ」「ドルチ」「岸辺露伴は動かない」を収録。
変人偏屈列伝
荒木飛呂彦＋鬼窪浩久
●愛蔵版 A5判 全1巻
異能の大リーガー、天才発明家、稀代の興行師、悲運の賄い婦、究極のひきこもり兄弟、生涯館を増築し続けた未亡人…。社会的制圧にも屈せず、己の信念を貫き通した愛すべき変人偏屈たち！ハードカバー、箱入り超豪華装丁！

# VOLUME 13 EDITORS' NOTES

Hello, readers! We here at JoJo Project like to try and make reading Steel Ball Run an entirely natural experience for English-speaking audiences, but there are still some things from the original Japanese that we feel could use additional explanation or commentary.

**"Tubular Bells"** – This famous almost 50 minute long song is by Mike Oldfield. It's best known as the theme from *The Exorcist*, and a shorter version is popular around Halloween.

**"Wekapipo and Magenta Magenta's names"** – These two characters mark a notable first in the history of JoJo's Bizarre Adventure because they're the first characters to appear who are named after a Japanese music reference. Both '**Magenta Magenta**' and '**Wekapipo**' (also known as '**Wake Up People**') are songs by a Japanese hip-hop group called SOUL'd OUT. The group is known for being JoJo fans, and in fact the music video for Magenta Magenta is littered with assorted JoJo references. Araki himself has drawn cover artwork for one of their singles, one of the group members did the screentones for a page of Steel Ball Run, and they contributed the theme song '**Voodoo Kingdom**' to the ill-fated Phantom Blood movie. It's not surprising that if a Japanese music artist got a shout-out in Steel Ball Run, it would be SOUL'd OUT. Try checking out their music videos. They're pretty awesome.

**"Magenta Magenta's voice"** – Because the English language doesn't offer quite the same phonetic spelling capabilities as Japanese, something that is (sadly) lost in translation is exactly how annoying Magenta Magenta's voice is. It's whiny and nasal and gravelly and gross. You would definitely want to cover your ears if you heard him speaking in real life. Imagine a more coherent and whiny Donald Duck or a male Fran Drescher and you've pretty much got the right idea.

Thank you for following our releases! We hope you'll stick with us and continue to enjoy the story together in the future!

*JoJo Project*
*October 2009*

painted by S.Y.

## Hirohiko Araki

●ウルトラジャンプ・H19年8月号～11月号
掲載分収録

I often see the phrase 'horse and man as one' in racing magazine or in historical novels, and it supposedly means that the rider can synchronize his or her movements with their horse, so that they're almost one entity.

When I draw Gyro and the others on their horses, I feel like I really understand what that phrase means, though I don't ride horses myself.

I can't tell you specifically which ones they are, but when I sometimes get a racing panel to look just right, it feels good, because the figures seem to fit well with one another. It just leads me to believe that humans and horses are biologically (?) suited for one another.

LOVE

J・C

JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko & LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
Since1840
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890.sep 23
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
14
1890
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
集英社
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together and makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

★この作品はフィクションです。実在の人物・
団体・事件などには、いっさい関係ありません。

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

THE QUALIFICATIONS FOR THE VICTOR

vol.14

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# "STEEL BALL RUN" RACE

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。
なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を開けた！
6th.STAGE、ホット・パンツの能力で大統領夫人スカーレットに変装したルーシーは、スタンド使いマイク・Oの能力「バブル犬」に襲われながらも、大統領の体から『心臓部』、『両耳部』、『右腕部』の遺体を奪う事に成功。そして、自分の身を守る為、事態に気付き現れたスカーレットを、「バブル犬」の標的の身代わりにしてしまった！ルーシーを助けに来たホット・パンツは、死闘の末、マイク・Oを倒し、『心臓部』、『両耳部』を持ち政府公邸から脱出。逃げ出せなかったルーシーは再びスカーレットに成り切る事に…。
一方、ゴール間近、凍ったマキナック海峡の上で、ジャイロ達は突如、２人組の刺客に襲われる。その内の１人はジャイロとは異なる能力の「鉄球使い」であった！

**『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは**
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!(60億円)
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！

そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

**ジャイロ・ツェペリ**
ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家反逆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。

**ジョニィ・ジョースター**
元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。「脊椎の一部」を持つ。

**ファニー・ヴァレンタイン**
第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。遺体の一部「右腕」を持つ。

**ホット・パンツ**
何者かの命で遺体を集めているが、大統領側の人間ではないらしい。遺体の一部「左腕」、「脊椎」、「心臓」、「両耳」を持つ。

**ディエゴ・ブランドー**
通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。

**ルーシー・スティール**
スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!? 遺体の一部「右眼」を持つ。

**スティーブン・スティール**
40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.14

## CONTENTS

THE QUALIFICATIONS FOR THE VICTOR


#52
WRECKING BALL PART ② 7

#53
WRECKING BALL PART ③ 53

#54
WRECKING BALL PART ④ 101

#55
THE QUALIFICATIONS FOR THE VICTOR 163

#52
WRECKING BALL
PART 2

!!
WHAT HAPPENED?
IT WAS AN ACCIDENT...
SHE FELL DOWN SOME STEPS WHILE SHE WAS WORKING... SHE HAS A LARGE BRUISE ON HER HEAD, AND HER LEFT SHOULDER IS BROKEN.

MOTHER...
WHERE'S FATHER?
GYRO... WHAT ARE YOU THINKING?
DON'T THINK ABOUT EXTRANEOUS THINGS... JUST FOCUS ON THE TREATMENT AT HAND
......
...HE'S IN FIRENZE.
EVEN IF WE CALL HIM NOW,
IT'LL TAKE AT LEAST 3 DAYS FOR HIM TO RETURN.
I'VE MET THIS WOMAN BEFORE.
SHE WAS ONE OF FATHER'S PATIENTS.
HER OPTIC NERVE...THE NERVE IN THE BACK OF HER EYE IS DAMAGED.
THEN YOUR FATHER WOULD HAVE THIS TO SAY.
TALK TO YOUR FATHER ABOUT THAT. THIS WOMAN...
APPARENTLY, HER VISION WAS IMPAIRED. THAT MIGHT BE WHY SHE HAD THIS ACCIDENT IN THE FIRST PLACE.
BUT ALL THAT ASIDE...AS FOR HER CURRENT INJURIES, ARE THEY SERIOUS?
NO, THEY'RE NOT A PROBLEM...
SHE WON'T DIE FROM THEM.

'IF WE CAN SAVE HER LIFE, THEN WE SHOULD BE THANKFUL FOR IT.'
'DON'T OVERSTEP YOUR BOUNDAR-IES'.
WHY DIDN'T FATHER DO SOMETHING ABOUT HER EYES?
IT'S DEFI-NITELY A HARD WOUND TO MEND...
BUT USING THE ROTATION OF THE STEEL BALL, WE COULD OPERATE ON HER. WE MIGHT BE ABLE TO GET HER VISION BACK...
LOOK, THIS PORTION, HERE...
THIS PORTION OF THE OPTIC NERVE.
IF THE ROTATION IS PRECISE, WE CAN USE THAT ROTATION TO TURN THIS NEEDLE...
AND SEW THE SEVERED NERVE BACK TOGETHER.
THEN, THE LIGHT IN THIS WOMAN'S EYES WILL BE RESTORED...

GYRO...
I DON'T HAVE MUCH MEDICAL 'EXPERTISE', NOR DO I HAVE THE ABILITY TO USE THE 'STEEL BALLS'. BUT LET ME TELL YOU THIS...
THIS WOMAN'S VISUAL IMPAIR-MENT IS IS UNRELATED TO WHAT WE HAVE TO DO NOW...
RIGHT NOW, ALL YOU SHOULD DO IS FIX THE INJURIES FROM HER ACCIDENT.
I DIDN'T SEE ANYONE WAITING OUTSIDE IN THE HALL...
DOES THIS PATIENT HAVE FAMILY?
...NO ONE CAME. SHE...
HAS NO ONE.
I'VE HEARD THAT HER BROTHER, A FORMAL IMPERIAL GUARD, WAS KILLED IN A DUEL, REGARD-ING HER DIVORCE PROBLEMS...
SHE WAS BROUGHT HERE, BUT... IT'S A TABOO FOR ANYONE TO TAKE CARE OF HER.
FORMER IMPERIAL GUARD...

SHE'S A TABOO, GYRO! DON'T STEP OUT OF THE LINE CONCERNING THIS WOMAN!
WHICH SIDE WILL THE BALL FALL, AFTER 'HITTING THE NET'?
BUT THAT CASE DOESN'T APPLY TO THIS WOMAN!
IF WE DON'T DO ANYTHING, SHE'LL BE LEFT FLOATING IN THE DARKNESS ...
THE BALL WON'T FALL ON EITHER SIDE.

WHAT?! THE STEAM...

TH... THIS...!
WHAT THE ...?
WH, WHAT IS THIS, GYRO?!

HALF OF YOUR BODY'S...!
AND MY 'LEFT HALF', TOO...!
CALM DOWN, JOHNNY.
DON'T PANIC!

THIS IS... 'LEFT-HALF ATAXIA'!
IF HIS 'STEEL BALL' HAD ACTUALLY HIT US STRAIGHT-ON, IT WOULD HAVE KILLED US... BUT THE SHOCK WAVE FROM THE THROW AFFECTS US, TOO!
HIS NAME... HE 'USED TO BE AN IMPERIAL GUARD IN MY COUNTRY'... 'WEKAPIPO'.
HIS TECHNIQUE IS DIFFERENT FROM THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S...! IT'S AN ABILITY THAT WAS CREATED FOR THE SPECIFIC USE OF GUARDING THE IMPERIAL FAMILY!
IT'S CALLED 'WRECKING BALL'...!
'LEFT HALF'?
WHAT?
WHAT DID YOU SAY ABOUT MY 'LEFT SIDE'?!

'LEFT'! YOU CAN'T SEE THINGS THAT ARE ON THE 'LEFT' SIDE OF YOUR BODY!
BECAUSE OF THE SHOCK WAVE, EVERYTHING LOOKS LIKE THEIR 'LEFT HALF' IS MISSING!
THAT'S HIS ABILITY!
BUT YOUR LEFT ARM AND LEFT LEG ARE STILL THERE!
YOU COULD BE LOOKING DIRECTLY AT THEM, BUT YOUR BRAIN DOESN'T REGISTER IT!
THAT'S WHAT THE ABILITY DOES!
TH... THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE!
L, LOOK! I CAN'T EVEN TOUCH IT!
EVEN IF I LOOK FOR MY LEFT ARM WITH MY RIGHT, I CAN'T FIND IT! IT'S NOT HERE!
THAT'S WHAT HE'S MADE YOU TO THINK! EVEN IF YOU'RE TOUCHING IT, YOUR BRAIN THINKS THAT IT'S NOT THERE, ANYWAY!
LISTEN, STAY CALM! THE EFFECTS OF THE SHOCK WAVE ONLY LAST A FEW SECONDS!
EVERYTHING WILL BE BACK TO NORMAL SOON!

THE BIGGER PROBLEM IS THAT OTHER GUY, WHO WAS ON THE SLED! HE MOVED OVER TO OUR LEFT SIDE!
WE CAN'T SEE HIM, SINCE HE'S ALREADY MOVED OVER TO THE LOST 'LEFT HALF'!
THE OTHER GUY SHOULD BE CLOSE BY!
HUH?
THIS IS MY COUNTRY'S IMPERIAL GUARDS' 'OFFEN-SIVE STRATEGY'!

YOU CAN SEE YOUR 'RIGHT SIDE', RIGHT?!
!?
SO GIVE UP!
LISTEN, JOHNNY! RIGHT NOW, WE CAN'T PERCIEVE ANYTHING ON OUR 'LEFT SIDE'...
SO YOU JUST KEEP ON LOOKING TO YOUR 'RIGHT'!
YOU MAKE A FULL TURN, THAT'S WHAT! KEEP ON LOOKING TO YOUR 'RIGHT', AND FIND THAT OTHER GUY!
IF YOU KEEP ON LOOKING TO THE 'RIGHT',
AND KEEP ON TURNING YOUR HEAD THAT WAY, WHAT HAPPENS?
THE 'RIGHT', JOHNNY!
THE LEFT SIDE OF THE MOUNTAIN! IT'S GONE!
E...EVEN THE 'MOUNTAINS' LOOK LIKE THEY'RE MISSING A HALF...
THERE'S NO SOUND OF HOOVES OR A SLED DRAGGING ON THE GROUND! I CAN'T HEAR ANYTHING!
IS THE OTHER ONE REALLY COMING OUR WAY?!

THE RIGHT!
THE RIGHT!
AH!
GYRO
OOOO
!!

'THE SON OF THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'...
ABOUT MY IDENTITY...
SO YOU DID KNOW, GYRO ZEPPELI...
AND ABOUT MY ABILITY... ABOUT 'WRECKING BALL'.
!?

パシャア
ァ
ァ
ァァ
!!
バギ

ブワァァ
ボドボド
ボド
GYRO!
ORAAAA!

D...

DID YOU DO IT, GYRO?!
DID YOU KILL HIM?!
!?
THAT GUY ON THE LEFT...
HE'S NOT MOVING!
BUT... IT SEEMS LIKE THE IMPACT OF THE HIT IS MOVING AWAY FROM HIM, AND TRAVELING ACROSS THE ICE!
IT CAN'T BE... DID HE GUARD AGAINST IT!? IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE MY NAIL BULLETS OR THE STEEL BALL DID ANY DAMAGE!

HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY
...
THE 'NAIL BULLETS' ARE MOVING AWAY FROM THE TARGET...
IT DEFINITELY SEEMS LIKE THE FORCE OF THE IMPACT IS BEING SCATTERED AWAY FROM HIM!

GYRO! DO YOU KNOW THOSE TWO?!
I ONLY KNOW THE GUY ON THE RIGHT, 'WEKAPIPO'.
BUT I'VE ONLY *HEARD* ABOUT HIM.
JOHNNY... HE'S GOING TO THROW HIS 'STEEL BALL' AGAIN!
GET READY FOR THE NEXT THROW!
REMEMBER HIS ABILITY!
IF THE 'SATELLITES' ON HIS STEEL BALL HIT US...
THE 'SHOCK WAVE' FROM THE THROW GIVES US 'LEFT-HALF ATAXIA'!

IF OUR 'LEFT HALF' DISAP-PEARS AGAIN BECAUSE OF THE 'SATEL-LITES'...
THEIR STRATEGY IS TO USE THAT GUY TO MOVE IN, AND ATTACK US...!
HE'S GONNA SHOOT US FROM THE SIDE, HUH...
IT TAKES A FEW SECONDS FOR MY NAILS TO GROW BACK, EVEN IF I EAT THE HERBS!
BUT...WHAT DO THESE TWO WANT?!
I DON'T UNDER-STAND WHY THEY'D BE ATTACKING US HERE, AND NOW!
THE ICE COULD BREAK FROM UNDER US AT ANY GIVEN MOMENT!
THEY KNOW THAT WE DON'T HAVE ANY CORPSE PARTS...! EVEN IF THEY WERE HERE TO GET RID OF US, THEY SHOULD BE DOING IT AFTER WE FOUND ANOTHER PART!

KNOWS WHERE 'THE LEGS' ARE!
IT COULD BE THAT WEKAPIPO...
HE MIGHT ALREADY HAVE FOUND OUT 'WHERE' THE NEXT CORPSE PART IS, BEFORE US...!
MAYBE THEY FOUND OUT WHEN THEY FOUND US HERE!
TH... THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE!
ONLY THE 'BACKBONE' HAS THE 'MAP' TO THE NEXT PART...!
'HOT PANTS' HAS THE BACKBONE NOW .. THERE'S NO WAY THAT HE COULD KNOW WHERE THE NEXT PART IS!
IF SO... THEY'D TRY TO GET RID OF US FIRST.

PANT
PANT
PANT
WHEN THE LAST OF THE 'ELEVEN MEN' MANAGED TO...
RETURN WITH THE 'RIGHT ARM' AND THE 'EARS', AFTER TAKING THEM FROM JOHNNY JOESTAR...
HE SAID...
WHEN I RECIEVED THE 'ARM' AND THE 'EARS'... IT WAS ONLY FOR A SPLIT SECOND, BUT A 'MAP' APPEARED N THE GROUND.
BY JOHNNY JOESTAR'S FEET...

IT WAS A ROUGH MAP, BUT IT SHOWED THE MACKINAC STRAIT.
ALSO...
ALONG WITH THE MAP, FOR A BRIEF MOMENT, THERE WAS AN IMAGE OF AN 'ANIMAL' IN THE SNOW, TOO.
I DEFINITELY SAW IT. THE 'ANIMAL'...
ONCE I TOOK THE 'ARM' AND THE 'EARS', IT IMMEDIATELY DISAPPEARED.
'LISTEN, WEKAPIPO ... JUST BECAUSE IT IS A 'CORPSE', THERE IS NO GUARANTEE THAT IT WILL BE HIDDEN BENEATH THE GROUND.'
IT MIGHT BE 'MOVING ON ITS OWN'.
IT MIGHT HAVE COMBINED WITH AN 'ORGANISM', OR PERHAPS EVEN WITH SOME 'SAND'...
'FOLLOW JOHNNY JOESTAR, AND OBSERVE THEM...' 'THE CORPSE CHOOSES THE 'STAND USER', AFTER ALL.'

PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
PANT
THAT WOLF AGAIN...
IT DOES NOT SEEM TO BE AFTER THE HORSES...
BUT IT HAS BEEN FOLLOW-ING THE TWO SINCE LAST NIGHT.
THOUGH THEY DO NOT UNDERSTAND ITS SIGNIFI-CANCE...
I KNOW FOR SURE, NOW.

GYRO...
IT LOOKS LIKE MY 'NAILS' HAVE GROWN BACK.
BUT... WELL,
AS FOR MY NAIL BULLETS' ROTA-TIONS,
I ALWAYS USE OUR HORSES' 'MANES' AS A REFERENCE TO SPIN THEM.
OR SOMETIMES TWIGS AND LEAVES, AND IF THEY'RE CLOSE ENOUGH, BIRDS' WINGS...
I'M TALKING ABOUT THE GOLDEN ROTATION!
IF I HAD SPUN MY NAILS MORE ACCU-RATELY, THEY MIGHT HAVE HIT THAT OTHER GUY FASTER...
BUT I COULDN'T DO IT. HOW ARE YOU DOING IT?
HOW ARE WE SUPPOSED TO USE THE GOLDEN ROTATION HERE?!

I'M TALKING ABOUT THE 'GOLDEN RECT-ANGLE'! I DON'T KNOW WHAT TO DO...
WE'RE ALREADY TOO FAR AWAY FROM THE TREES ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE BANK.
THERE ARE NO 'PLANTS'... WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO USE AS A REFERENCE TO SPIN MY 'NAIL BULLETS'?

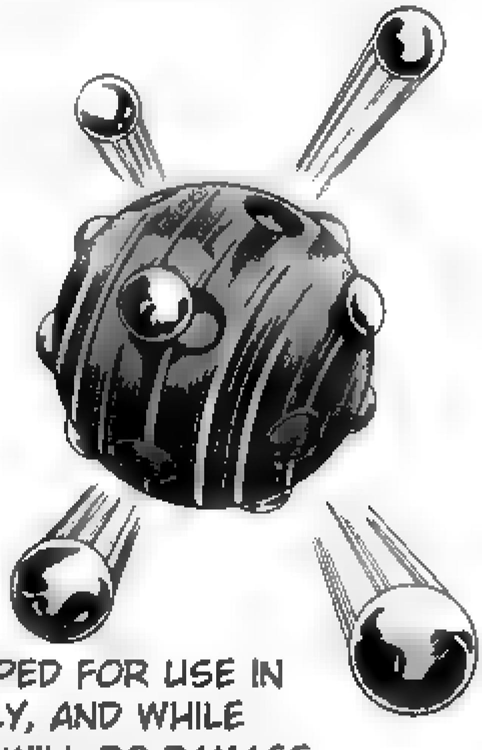
GYRO, HE WENT FOR THE NEXT THROW!
THE NEXT ONE'S COMING OUR WAY!
HE THREW 'TWO' OF THEM!
THERE ARE 'TWO' COMING OUR WAY!!

IT CAN'T BE... GYRO'S STEEL BALLS...!
TH... THEY WERE DEFLECTED?!
WHAT THE ZEPPELI FAMILY SEEKS... THEY GAIN FROM 'THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE'! THEIR INFINITE ROTATION...
IT IS BORN FROM A CLOSE OBSERVATION OF 'LIFE' AND THE POWER OF 'NATURE'...
THAT IS HOW ONE WOULD PAY 'RESPECT' TO THEIR STEEL BALLS.
BUT THIS IS A 'WORLD OF ICE'.
WHERE WOULD THEY BE ABLE TO FIND THAT 'GOLDEN SCALE'?

WEKAPIPO

— STEEL BALL USER —

'WRECKING BALL'



- A STEEL BALL THAT HAS 14 SMALLER PARTS ATTACHED TO IT, CALLED 'SATELLITES'.

※ THIS WAS A WEAPON DEVELOPED FOR USE IN GUARDING THE IMPERIAL FAMILY, AND WHILE BEING HIT BY THE SATELLITES WILL DO DAMAGE, WHAT IS MORE FRIGHTENING IS THE LOSS OF SENSATIONS IN THE LEFT SIDE OF THE TARGET'S BODY FROM THE SHOCKWAVES. THE FEELING PERSISTS FOR A FEW SECONDS.

PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 14, Chapter 1

# #53 WRECKING BALL

## PART③

スッ

DO
SHIT!
IT WASN'T THE GOLDEN ROTATION ...
MY STEEL BALL'S ROTATION WASN'T PERFECT...
THAT WAS A SURGERY THAT SHOULDN'T HAVE FAILED...! THAT TIME...
THAT SLIGHT PRESSURE APPLIED TO MY FINGERS DURING THE SURGERY... THAT INVISIBLE 'COINCIDENCE'!
THAT VAPOR, THE STEAM ...!
WHY DID STEAM COME OUT...?!

THIS PERSON WILL NEVER SEE THE LIGHT AGAIN...
MY 'ROTATION' WAS A FAILURE...
I CAN'T MAKE ANY EXCUSES ...
IT WAS ALL MY...
ALL MY FAULT ...
YOUNG DOCTOR ...
WHY ARE YOU ANGRY...?
I HAVEN'T BEEN ABLE TO SEE FOR SOME TIME NOW.
I AM GRATEFUL TO YOU. YOU TENDED TO THE WOUNDS FROM MY ACCIDENT...
I REALLY, TRULY AM...

THAT'S NOT IT... THAT'S NOT IT AT ALL...
NO...
THANK YOU VERY MUCH.
IF IT WERE FATHER, THE SURGERY WOULD HAVE BEEN A SUCCESS... SHE SHOULD HAVE BEEN CURED... THE ONE WHO RUINED IT WAS...
IT WAS ME...

GYRO... DON'T TRY TO STEP INTO BOUNDARIES OF THE HUMAN HEART. THAT IS THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S TASK...
'NO ONE KNOWS WHICH SIDE THE BALL WILL FALL ON AFTER IT HITS THE NET.'
TH... THIS IS A 'WORLD OF ICE'... YOUR 'STEEL BALLS' WERE OVERPOWERED! THEY WERE DEFLECTED!
IT CAN'T BE! YOUR 'GOLDEN ROTATION' FAILED?!

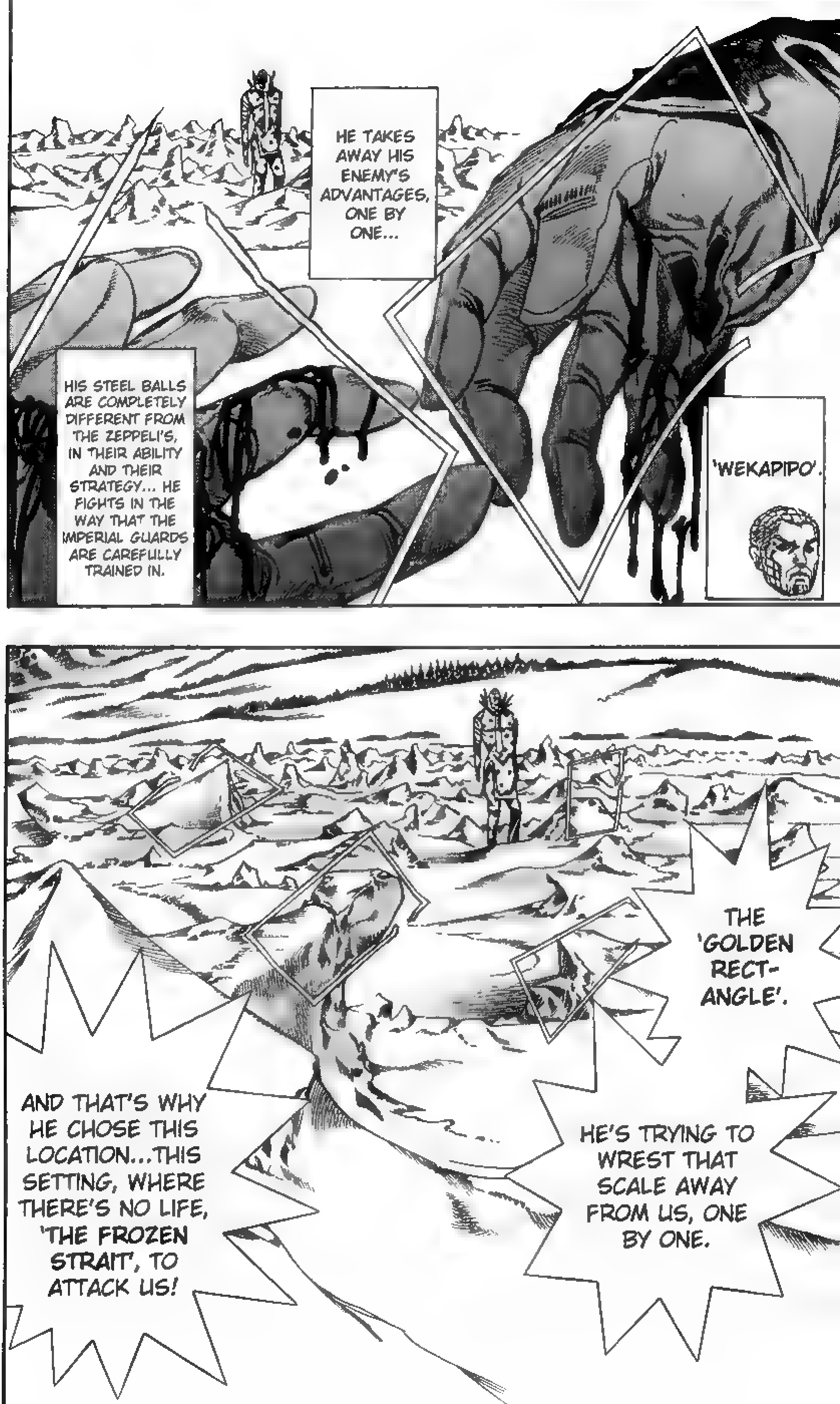
JOHNNY, SHOOT IT DOWN! THE SAT-ELLITES ARE COMING!
SFX: SMALL EXPLOSIONS

HOWL
WHIMPER
WHAT?!
WHAT DID HE JUST SHOOT?!
THAT GUY ON THE LEFT... EVEN THOUGH WE WERE A CLEAR TARGET...?
THAT CRY JUST THEN... THE 'WOLF'?! DID HE JUST SHOOT THE WOLF?!

JOHNNY, THERE ARE STILL TWO SAT-ELLITES LEFT!

スパァァ
アァ
ギャルン
ギャルン
ギャルン

WE MANAGED TO AVOID THE 'SATELLITES', BUT...
GYRO, I HAVE BAD NEWS.
I USED UP ALL 10 OF MY 'NAIL BULLETS'.
IT'LL TAKE AT LEAST A FEW SECONDS FOR THEM TO GROW BACK...


HE TAKES AWAY HIS ENEMY'S ADVANTAGES, ONE BY ONE...
HIS STEEL BALLS ARE COMPLETELY DIFFERENT FROM THE ZEPPELI'S, IN THEIR ABILITY AND THEIR STRATEGY... HE FIGHTS IN THE WAY THAT THE IMPERIAL GUARDS ARE CAREFULLY TRAINED IN.
'WEKAPIPO'.
THE 'GOLDEN RECT-ANGLE'.
HE'S TRYING TO WREST THAT SCALE AWAY FROM US, ONE BY ONE.
AND THAT'S WHY HE CHOSE THIS LOCATION...THIS SETTING, WHERE THERE'S NO LIFE, 'THE FROZEN STRAIT', TO ATTACK US!

FOR NOW, WE HAVE...
SECURED OUR CLAIM TO THE 'CORPSE PART'... WE CAN ELIMINATE JOESTAR AND HIS PARTNER WITHOUT WORRYING ABOUT 'IT' GETTING AWAY...
AND THE SHOCKWAVE FROM MY STEEL BALL SHOULD BE AFFECTING THEM SOON.
HM...
THIS IS GOOD.
YOU HAVE DONE WELL, 'MAGENTA MAGENTA'.
THE 'LEFT-HALF ATAXIA' SHOULD BE TAKING HOLD!

GYRO, EVERYTHING TO THE 'LEFT' IS DIS-APPEARING AGAIN!

HE'S COMING !
HE'S GOING TO COME FROM THE LEFT! WE DON'T HAVE TIME TO LOOK ALL THE WAY AROUND, EITHER!

CRUNCH
CRUNCH
JOHNNY JOESTAR'S OUT OF 'NAIL BULLETS', ANYWAY! HE'S NOTHIN', HE'S AS GOOD AS DEAD!
ALRIGHT.
FIRST, I'LL TAKE CARE OF GYRO ZEPPELI.
ALL WE CAN DO IS TO TRY AND MAKE OUT WHERE HE MIGHT BE FROM THE 'MARKS ON THE ICE'!
THERE ARE MARKS ON THE ICE FROM WHEN WE ATTACKED HIM WITH THE STEEL BALLS AND YOUR NAIL BULLETS!

BUT... SHIT! THOSE MARKINGS ARE STARTING TO FADE OUT FROM THE LEFT TOO, THE MORE I LOOK AT THEM!
CHK
ORAAAA!

!!
WHAT?! WHOA, IT'S COMING THIS WAY! HEY, HEY....
H... HE MISSED?!
I CAN'T EVEN TELL IF HE MISSED OR NOT!

Y... YOU DID IT!
HE'S OVER THERE! IT HIT!
N... NO, IT'S NOT OVER YET! THE WOUND'S NOT DEEP!
IT ONLY GRAZED AT HIM, IT DIDN'T DO MUCH DAMAGE!
JOHNNY, GET DOWN!

G... GOD-DAMMIT! SHIT, THAT HURTS!
SPURT
SPURT
SPURT
......

WEKAPI-POOOOO! HE TOOK OUT A CHUNK OF MY SHOULDER!
WHAT THE FUCK, HE'S NOT SUPPOSED TO BE ABLE TO SEE HIS LEFT, RIGHT?! GOD DAMN IT!
WHAT THE HELL IS THIS ABOUT!? THOSE BASTARDS ARE DEAD!
NO, YOU WERE LUCKY.
IF HIS STEEL BALL HAD BEEN THROWN IN THE GOLDEN ROTATION, YOUR ENTIRE ARM WOULD HAVE BEEN WRENCHED OFF.

UGH!

GYROOOOOO!
UOOOOOO!
IT SHOULD BE AROUND HERE! THE OTHER ONE! IT HAS TO BE SOME-WHERE AROUND HERE!
STOP IT, JOHNNY! WE CAN'T LOOK FOR THE STEEL BALL THAT FELL TO OUR LEFT!
EVEN IF YOU TOUCHED IT, YOU WON'T BE ABLE TO REGISTER THAT YOU DID!
BUT IT SHOULD BE AROUND HERE SOME-WHERE!

BUT... RELAX, JOHNNY.
REGARDING THE ENEMY THAT'S TO OUR LEFT, WE'RE GOING TO BEAT HIM.
I JUST GOT 'OUR THIRD STEEL BALL'.
GOUGE
GO TO HELL !
MAGENTA! SHOW SOME HUMILITY!
ARE YOU BEING CAREFUL?!
...I AM TALKING ABOUT THE 'BULLET' THAT YOU JUST SHOT GYRO WITH!
THOUGH THE ZEPPELIS ARE KNOWN FOR BEING EXECUTIONERS, THEY ARE DOCTORS, AS WELL!

HE MUST HAVE LET YOU SHOOT HIM ON PURPOSE.
THAT 'BULLET'...
HE WILL TRY TO USE IT AS A SPARE 'STEEL BALL'.
WHAT...?!
......

ギャアアアアアア
ギョ
ドパアアアアア

...!!
YES...
VERY GOOD.
ドド
H... HE GUARDED AGAINST IT!?
ドドドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドドド

WHOA!
YOU GONNA PICK THAT UP?
YOU GONNA TRY TO GET THAT STEEL BALL, THERE?
LOOKS LIKE YOU CAN SEE TO YOUR LEFT AGAIN, HUH?

WHY DON'T CHA PICK IT UP...? YOU KNOW,
IT'S WORTH GIVIN' IT A SHOT.
I DON'T REALLY CARE EITHER WAY.
YOU...
THAT 'WOLF' THAT YOU JUST KILLED...
IS THAT 'WOLF' THE NEXT 'CORPSE PART'...?
ARE THE CORPSE'S LEGS 'INSIDE' THAT WOLF'S BODY? IS THAT IT?
MAGENTA! WHY ARE YOU CONVERSING WITH THE ENEMY? GYRO IS PLANNING SOMETHING!

DISPOSE OF HIM, NOW!
YEAH... YOU'RE RIGHT...!

UGH
YOUR DEFEN-SIVE STAND ...
SHOULD HAVE KEPT IT ON FOR A BIT LONGER, DON'T YOU THINK?
AT LEAST UNTIL THE BULLET THAT WENT UP IN THE AIR CAME BACK DOWN AGAIN.

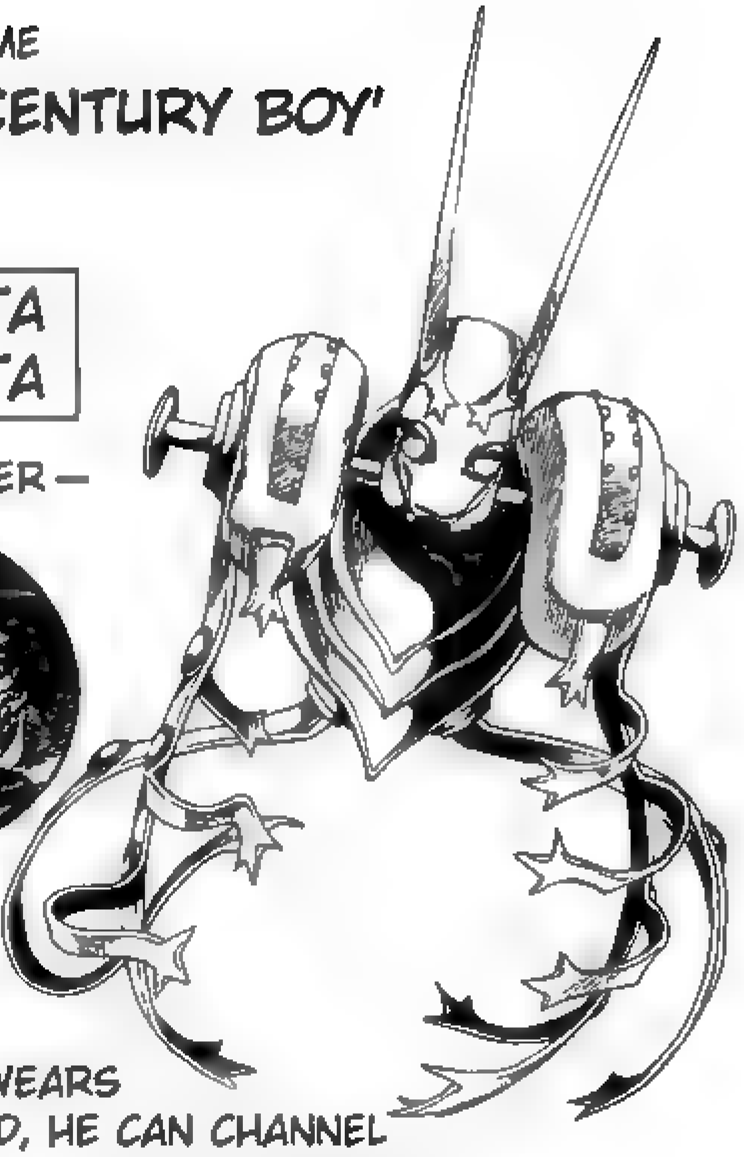
.......
JOHNNY, HE'S COMING AGAIN! HAVE YOUR 'NAIL BULLETS' GROWN BACK YET?!
GET READY TO SHOOT!
BANG

STAND NAME

## '20TH CENTURY BOY'

MAGENTA
MAGENTA

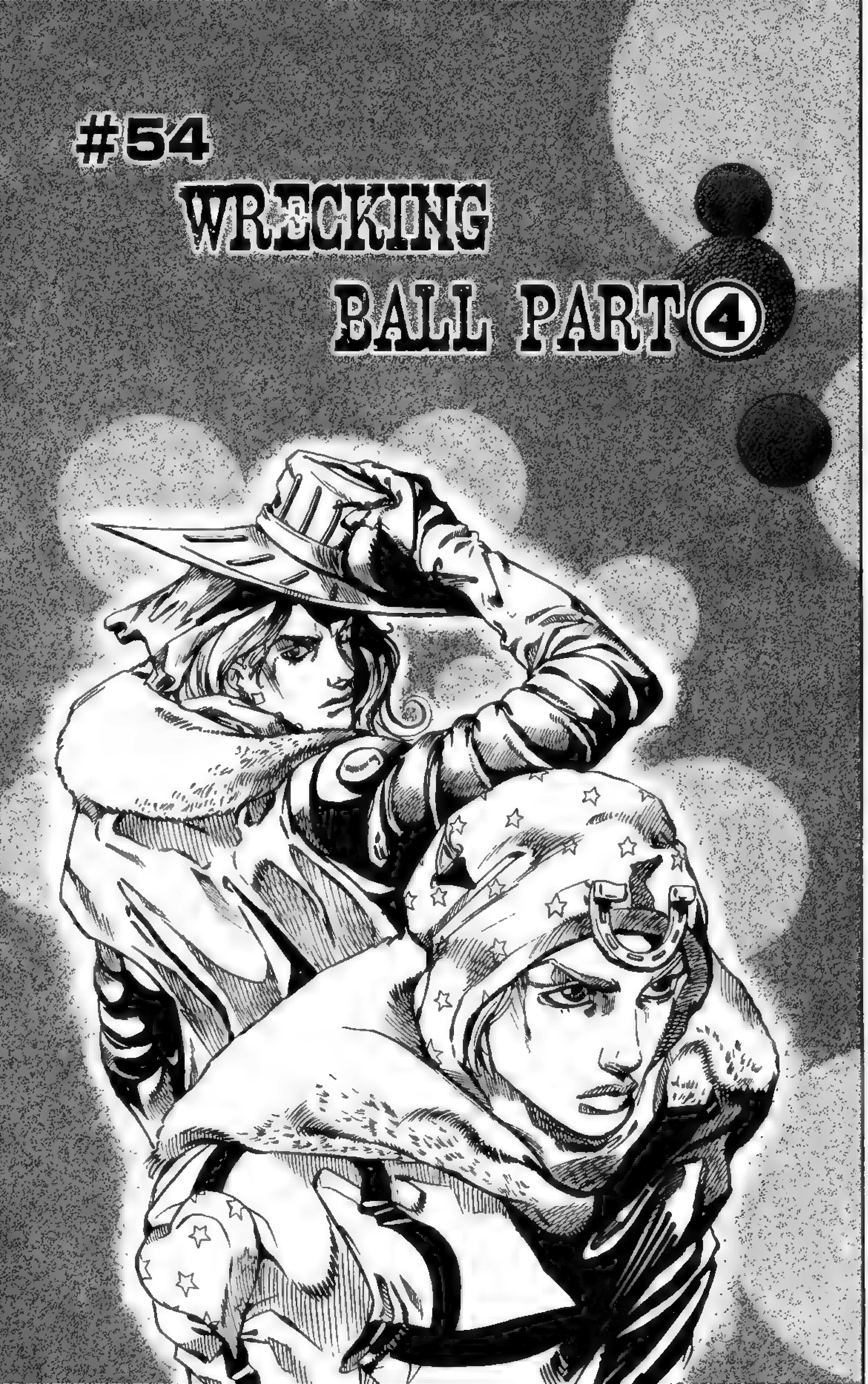
—STAND USER—



- ONCE HE WEARS THIS STAND, HE CAN CHANNEL THE FORCE OF ANY ATTACK INTO THE GROUND, AND DIRECT IT AWAY FROM HIMSELF.

* HOWEVER, WHILE WEARING THIS STAND, MAGENTA CAN'T MOVE ANY PART OF HIS BODY.

Jojo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 14, Chapter 2
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar


#54
WRECKING
BALL PART④

WEKAPIPO!
HE'S COMING THIS WAY ...!
HAHH
HAHH
crunch
crunch
crunch
crunch
crunch

MY NAILS ARE BACK, GYRO!
I CAN SHOOT! WHAT SHOULD I DO?!
WHAT DO YOU WANT ME TO DO?!
WHAT WE REALLY NEED IS 'THE GOLDEN ROTATION'.

crunch
crunch
crunch
WE HAVE TO MAKE A PERFECT 'GOLDREN RECTANGLE' FROM NATURE! THAT'S WHAT WE NEED TO DO RIGHT NOW!
WE NEED TO BE ABLE TO USE THAT POWER! UNLESS WE CAN USE THAT ROTATION, WEKAPIPO'S 'WRECKING BALL' WILL DEFINITELY OVERPOWER US!
I KNOW THAT ALREADY! BUT WHAT ARE WE SUPPOSED TO DO?! WE'RE IN A 'WORLD OF ICE'!
HE'S GETTING READY TO THROW!
JOHNNY, JUST BACK ME UP...
I'M GOING TO GO OVER TO WHERE THAT 'WOLF' IS.

!!
RIGHT NOW... IF THERE'S ANYWHERE WHERE THERE MIGHT BE A 'NATURAL' RECTANGLE, IT WOULD BE WHERE THAT WOLF IS...
PLUS, THAT'S WHERE 'BOTH LEGS' ARE... WHICH MEANS THAT THE 'CORPSE PART' SHOULD ALSO BE SCALED ACCORDING TO THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'.
IF WE CAN GET THERE, WE CAN WIN!
HAHH, HAHH

There's the throw!
HE DIDN'T THROW TWO AT ONCE...
ONLY ONE OF THEM!
ONLY ONE OF THEM IS COMING!

ザクォォ

......
GYRO... HE DIDN'T TRY TO KNOCK WEKAPIPO'S STEEL BALL AWAY...
HE DIDN'T CHOOSE TO DEFEND AGAINST THE THROW...! HE BYPASSED IT!
HE CHOSE TO HIT WEKAPIPO 'DIRECTLY'!
TH... THAT MEANS I HAVE TO STOP THIS STEEL BALL BY MYSELF!

JOHNNY, YOU HAVE TO STOP IT NO MATTER WHAT!
YOU HAVE TO STOP HIS FIRST THROW! KNOCK IT DOWN! YOU HAVE TO!
UOOOOOO!

UOOOOOO!
G... GOOD! I CAN KNOCK IT DOWN!
I THINK I CAN MANAGE, BUT...
I ONLY HAVE 10 NAIL BULLETS!
I CAN KNOCK THIS THROW DOWN, BUT...
BUT ONLY THIS ONE THROW...
WHAT IF HE THROWS ANOTHER ONE?
I DON'T HAVE...
ANY 'BULLETS' LEFT...!

UGH!

AGH...I, I DID IT, GYRO! I KNOCKED IT AWAY!
GO, GYRO! GO!

AGHH!
Y...

YES! HE DID IT!
IT HIT!
N... NO...!

GUH...!

AGH...
GUH...
IT... IT CAN'T BE...!
THAT STEEL BALL ON HIS LEFT HAND... THAT 'ROTATION'...!
'THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S ROTATION'...! I GUESS WEKAPIPO, BEING A FORMER SOLDIER...
ALSO KNOWS HOW TO USE THAT GUARD TECHNIQUE...
AS GYRO SAID, WE HAVE TO BE ABLE TO USE THE 'GOLDEN ROTATION'... WITHOUT THE 'RECTANGLE', WE CAN'T WIN!

WHAT I SHOULD PAY MY 'REPECTS' TO... IS THAT ATTITUDE. A WILLINGNESS TO LEARN FROM NATURE, WHICH IS THE SOURCE OF HIS ROTATION'S 'POWER'...
HOWEVER.
THAT ATTITUDE IS SOMETHING I SHOULD BE WARY OF, AS WELL. THAT DETERMINATION...
THAT DRIVE TO FIND THE 'RECTANGLE', NO MATTER WHAT!
GYROOOO! HE'S GOING TO THROW HIS SECOND STEEL BALL!!
ドドドドドド

シル

ド

IT WAS TO BE EXPECTED THAT YOU WOULD SEEK THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE FROM THE WOLF'S CORPSE!
TO COMPLETE MY VICTORY, I SIMPLY HAD TO GET RID OF IT...
H...
HE AIMED FOR... THE 'WOLF', FIRST!
THE WOLF WENT UNDERNEATH THE ICE!
ALL OF THE RECTANGLES ARE GONE NOW! YOU CANNOT POSSIBLY ADAPT TO THIS SITUATION!

GYRO!
BOTH OF HIS
STEEL BALLS
ARE RETURNING
TO HIM!

......
NO WAY... DID ONE OF THE SATELLITES HIT US...?!
OUR LEFT SIDE IS DISAPPEARING!! GYRO CAN ONLY USE ONE OF HIS STEEL BALLS NOW...!!
'LEFT-SIDE ATAXIA'... CURRENTLY, I HAVE TWO THROWS.

ONE STEP!
IT SEEMS THAT I AM ONE STEP 'AHEAD' OF YOU.
!!
UGH ...!
DAMN... I... I CAN'T FIND ANY...!
NO WAY!
THERE ARE NO 'GOLDEN RECTANGLES' ANYWHERE...!
FORMER IMPERIAL GUARD, WEKAPIPO ...
I... I ALWAYS THOUGHT...
I ALWAYS THOUGHT THAT IF I FOLLOWED THE 'RIGHT PATH', IT WOULD ALWAYS LEAD ME TO THE 'LIGHT' ...
THE 'LIGHT' THAT WOULD ALWAYS LEAD ME TO VICTORY... THAT'S HOW I CAME ALL THE WAY HERE! BUT RIGHT NOW... I CAN'T SEE IT! THERE'S NOTHING HERE! GOD DAMN IT!

IN A PLACE LIKE THIS... IN THIS WORLD OF ICE... AND, DAMN IT, THERE'S STILL MORE THAN 1500KM TO GO UNTIL THE END OF THIS RACE... I HAVEN'T FINISHED ANYTHING THAT I'VE STARTED...!
HAS WEKAPIPO ALREADY CORNERED ME...?! ALREADY?!
ALREADY?!
I HAVEN'T SETTLED ANYTHING YET! I HAVEN'T DONE ANYTHING YET!
I CAN'T FINE THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE' ANYWHERE... IS THIS WHERE MY JOURNEY ENDS...?!

GYROOOOO!

GYRO.
THERE IS AN UNFORTUNATE BOUNDARY LINE BETWEEN SOCIETY AND THE HUMAN SOUL...
'EXECUTIONS', 'ARBITRARY PROLONGING OF LIFE'. THESE ARE SPECIAL CASES THAT ARE CONTRADICTORY IN NATURE.
WE, THE ZEPPELI FAMILY, ARE NOT ALLOWED TO INTERVENE IN THE THOUGHTS OF THE SOCIAL ORDER. THAT IS OUR FAMILY'S PLACE...
WE ARE THE BALL THAT HAS HIT THE NET.

BUT, THE ZEPPELI FAMILY ALSO BELIEVES IN 'MIRACLES'.
LET US PRAY FOR 'MIRACLES' TO OCCUR.
FOR THE BALL TO FALL ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE NET...
IT'S... STARTED TO SNOW...
SNOW...

...MY STEEL BALL...?! WHAT? WHAT IS THIS? WHAT IS GOING ON?!
IT... IT BROKE?!
WEKAPIPO'S STEEL BALL...
BUT GYRO'S IS STILL FINE!

THE SNOW...
THE SNOW IS FALLING.
IT'S... IT'S ONLY FALLING OVER THERE!
ONLY WHERE THOSE TWO ARE...
BUT IT'S STILL 'SNOWING'!
SNOW ...?
!?
AH!

...THE 'WOLF'!
SINCE WEKAPIPO BROKE THE 'ICE' WHERE THE 'WOLF' WAS, WITH HIS SATELLITES...
THE WATER THAT FLEW UP IN THE AIR FROM THAT IMPACT LINGERED... AND IN THIS COLD, ALMOST INSTANTLY BECAME 'SNOW'...
I CAN'T BELIEVE IT ...!
I CAN SEE THE 'SNOWFLAKES' THAT'VE FORMED IN THE AIR! THE 'SNOWFLAKES' ARE 'RECTANGLES' ...!

THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'!
GYRO CAN USE THESE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLES' TO HIS ADVANTAGE, NOW!

ドド
ドド
ドド
ドド
ドド
ドド
!!

THE SNOW...
I SEE, THE 'SNOWFLAKES'...
GYRO ZEPPELI. HOW DID YOU MANAGE TO MAKE IT SNOW?
NO... IT MUST BE BECAUSE... I HIT THE 'WOLF' WITH MY SATELLITES...
AND BROKE THE 'ICE'...

HAHH, HAHH
THE SNOW.
GYRO HAS ONE MORE STEEL BALL LEFT! HE HAS ANOTHER ONE IN HIS LEFT HAND!
H... HE DID IT!
THAT'S WHY WEKAPIPO AND HIS COMPANION TARGETED THE 'WOLF' FIRST.
BACK AT THAT CASINO.. WHEN I
HANDED THE LAST OF THE 'ELEVEN MEN' THE 'RIGHT ARM' AND 'BOTH EARS'...
THE 'ELEVENTH MAN' MUST HAVE COINCIDENTALLY SEEN THE IMAGE OF THE 'WOLF' THAT APPEARED ON THE SNOW.
BECAUSE THEY KNEW THAT THE WOLF HAD THE 'CORPSE PART' IN ITS BODY... IT WAS ALL DUE TO 'COINCIDENCE'! BECAUSE OF COINCIDENCE, WEKAPIPO HIT THE WOLF!

NONE OF MY OPTIONS WERE OPEN TO ME...
IT WAS BY CHANCE THAT IT STARTED SNOWING.
A COINCIDENCE.
YOU DEFINITELY WOULD HAVE BEEN THE SUCCESSOR.
GYRO ZEPPELI. YOU WERE 'CHOSEN'... SOME 'FORCE OF NATURE' CHOSE YOU AS THE VICTOR.
IT WHISPERED THAT YOU WOULD BE THE ONE TO CONTINUE ON YOUR JOURNEY...
THE ONLY THING OF IMPORTANCE IS THE 'RESULT'.

YOU WERE 'CHOSEN'... IT WAS A 'MIRACLE', GYRO ZEPPELI.
THE SNOW FALLING WAS A MIRACLE THAT WAS BOUND TO HAPPEN.
NOT A COINCIDENCE.

GYRO!
'ONE STEP'...
I'M 'ONE STEP' AHEAD OF YOU, WEKAPIPO!

UGH!
KILL ME!
FINISH ME OFF!
THERE IS NOWHERE FOR ME TO RETURN TO!
DO YOU THINK THAT THEY WILL KEEP ME ALIVE AFTER THIS FAILURE?!
!!!!
SO...
YOU'RE SAYING THAT YOU HAVE NOWHERE TO GO?
THAT WOMAN IS 'KEPT ALIVE' BECAUSE OF THE FACT THAT SHE IS BLIND.
GYRO.
IF SHE STILL HAD HER VISION, THEN HER FORMER HUSBAND'S FATHER WOULD HAVE ASSASSINATED HER LONG AGO. HE HAS THE AUTHORITY TO DO SUCH A THING...
THEY THINK THAT SHE WILL DIE ON HER OWN, ANYWAY. THAT'S WHY IT IS GOOD THAT SHE WON'T RECOVER.

IF YOUR SURGERY HAD SUCCEEDED...
SHE WOULD HAVE FACED A MUCH MORE TRAGIC FUTURE.
THAT'S HOW IT IS RIGHT NOW...
WHAT DID YOU JUST SAY, GYRO?
WHAT ...?
YOU...
......
I MESSED UP ON HER EYE SURGERY, AFTER ALL... I KNOW FOR SURE THAT SHE'S ALIVE BACK IN OUR COUNTRY. MY FATHER HAS HER HIDDEN SOMEWHERE IN THE COUNTRYSIDE.
PROBABLY.
I THINK... SHE WAS YOUR SISTER.
NOPE, I'M DEFINITELY SURE. SHE WAS YOUR SISTER.

WHAT...?
OUR HORSES.

PANT PANT
PANT PANT
PANT PANT
W... WHAT?
THAT WOLF...
HOW IS IT RUNNING?!
IS THAT THE SAME 'WOLF'?!
LOOK, JOHNNY.
UNDER THE ICE...
WHERE THE WOLF WAS SHOT.

A LOG...
THAT 'WOLF'... GUESS THAT BULLET ONLY GRAZED IT.
THERE'S A PIECE OF 'WOOD' UNDERNEATH THE ICE...
HEY, THIS MUST BE THE 'PATH' UNDERNEATH THE ICE. THE SHOTGUN WENT THROUGH THE ICE AND HIT THE 'LOG', I GUESS.
A 'PATH'?
HUH?!
THE ONE WE WERE LOOKING FOR?!
WE'VE FOUND IT, JOHNNY!
THIS IS THE ROUTE THAT THE NATIVES MADE...
THE ROUTE THAT WE CAN TAKE TO CROSS THE LAKE.
THE NATIVE'S TRAIL... I CAN'T BELIEVE IT...
IT DOES EXIST.
THAT MEANS... POCOLOCO HASN'T REALLY FOUND THIS TRAIL YET!
HE SHOULD BE TREADING CAREFULLY AND SLOWLY OVER THE LAKE RIGHT NOW!
YEAH.

SFX:*WHISTLE*
JOHNNY, ONCE WE TAKE CARE OF OUR WOUNDS, WE'RE HEADING OUT!
GET OUR HORSES BACK OVER HERE!
A 'MIRACLE' ...
'BELIEVING IN MIRACLES' ...
...I SEE.

RIGHT NOW... I CAN'T TELL YOU WHAT EXACTLY, BUT LUCY STEEL'S IN A 'STICKY SITUATION'. I'M TALKING ABOUT STEEL'S LITTLE WIFEY.
HER LIFE'S IN DANGER...
OH YEAH...
I REMEMBER, THERE'S ANOTHER REASON WHY YOU SHOULD STAY ALIVE, WEKAPIPO.
I MEAN, WE SHOULD BE THE ONES DOING IT, BUT UNFORTUNATELY, WE'RE BUSY WINNING THIS 'RACE' AND COLLECTING THESE 'CORPSE PARTS'.
ARE YOU ONLY OBLIGATED TO GUARD 'KINGS' AND 'PRESIDENTS'..? A 'GIRL' IS FINE TOO, YEAH?
ONCE YOU TAKE CARE OF YOUR WOUNDS, I WANT YOU TO GO AND KEEP AN EYE ON HER.

Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 14 / Chapter 3
Translation: Freshy
Editing: Frequency

# VOLUME 14 EDITORS' NOTES

Hello, readers! We here at JoJo Project like to try and make reading Steel Ball Run an entirely natural experience for English-speaking audiences, but there are still some things from the original Japanese that we feel could use elaboration, explanation or commentary.

**Wrecking Ball** — [illegible] Emmylou Harris. The title song was written by Neil Young, [illegible] **Harvest** [illegible]

**20th Century Boy** — No, this isn't named for the Naoki Urasawa manga [illegible] however, [illegible] the same song **20th Century Boy** by [illegible] T. Rex. It's impossible to [illegible] character design [illegible] based on the singer, Marc Bolan [illegible]

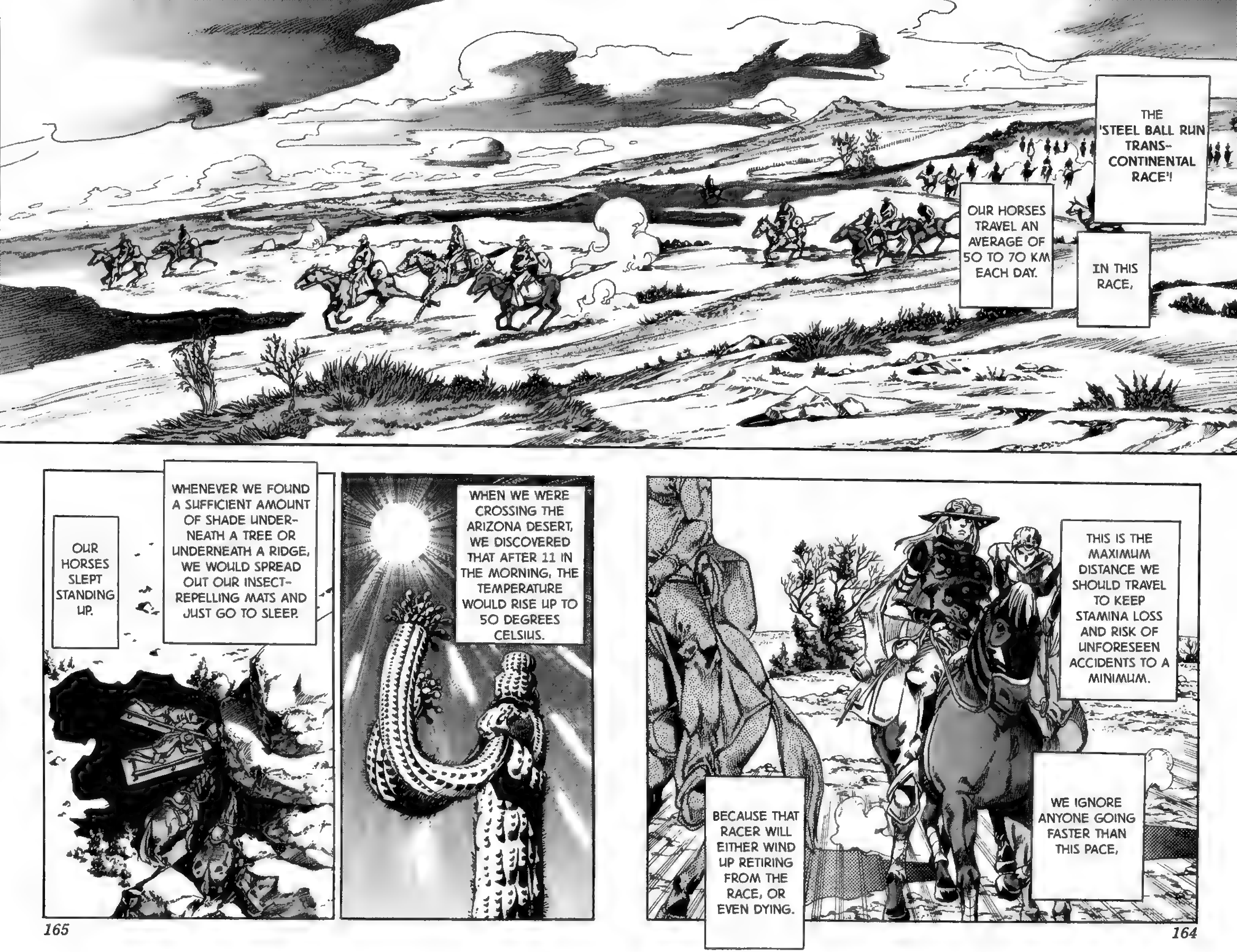
**Natives' Path** — [illegible] coffee to horses, either.

Thank you [illegible] our releases! [illegible] story together in the future!

***JoJo Project***
***November 2009***

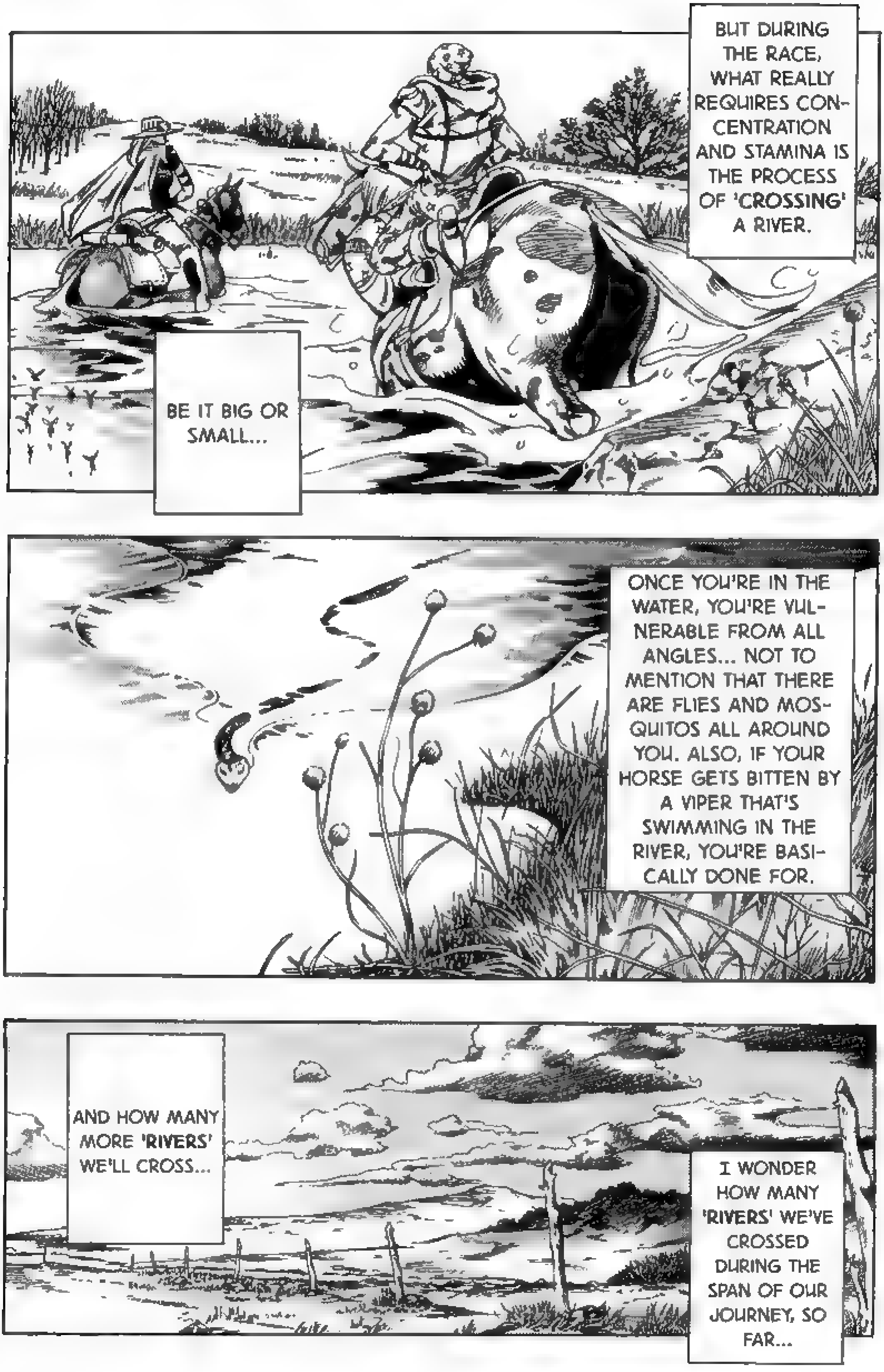
# #55

# THE QUALIFICATIONS FOR THE VICTOR


THE 'STEEL BALL RUN TRANS-CONTINENTAL RACE'!
IN THIS RACE,
OUR HORSES TRAVEL AN AVERAGE OF 50 TO 70 KM EACH DAY.
THIS IS THE MAXIMUM DISTANCE WE SHOULD TRAVEL TO KEEP STAMINA LOSS AND RISK OF UNFORESEEN ACCIDENTS TO A MINIMUM.
WE IGNORE ANYONE GOING FASTER THAN THIS PACE,
BECAUSE THAT RACER WILL EITHER WIND UP RETIRING FROM THE RACE, OR EVEN DYING.
WHEN WE WERE CROSSING THE ARIZONA DESERT, WE DISCOVERED THAT AFTER 11 IN THE MORNING, THE TEMPERATURE WOULD RISE UP TO 50 DEGREES CELSIUS.
WHENEVER WE FOUND A SUFFICIENT AMOUNT OF SHADE UNDER-NEATH A TREE OR UNDERNEATH A RIDGE, WE WOULD SPREAD OUT OUR INSECT-REPELLING MATS AND JUST GO TO SLEEP.
OUR HORSES SLEPT STANDING UP.

ONCE THE SUN STARTED TO SET, WE WOULD START MOVING AGAIN. IF THERE WAS ENOUGH MOON-LIGHT, WE WOULD TRAVEL DURING THE NIGHT.
IF IT WAS TOO DARK, WE WOULD IMMEDI-ATELY SET UP CAMP IN ORDER TO AVOID THE RISK OF OUR HORSES COMING INTO CONTACT WITH POISONOUS PLANTS OR TRIPPING OVER ROCKS
OUR HORSES COULD GO ABOUT 4 DAYS WITHOUT DRINKING WATER.
IT WAS NECESSARY TO BRUSH OUR HORSES' HAIR THOROUGHLY FOR A FEW HOURS-- NOT ONLY DOES IT SERVE TO MASSAGE THEIR MUSCLES, BUT IT ALSO HELPS TO WARD OFF INSECTS AND KEEP THE HORSE CLEAN AND DISEASE-FREE.
EVEN WHILE CAMPING DURING THE NIGHT, WE WERE BUSY.

WHILE TRAVELING, IF OUR LINE OF VISION GREW NARROWER,
OR IF THERE WERE WOODEN CROSSES LIT-TERING OUR PATH, IT WAS A CAUSE FOR CONCERN.
IN THE PAST, BANDITS WOULD ATTACK TRAVELERS ALONG THE ROAD-- CHANCES WERE THAT THE PLACE WE WERE IN WAS ONE OF THOSE PLACES. THE KIND OF 'GEOGRAPHY' THAT ALLOWS FOR SURPRISE ATTACKS.
TO GO THE LONGER ROUTE, EVEN IF THERE MIGHT NOT BE ANY ENEMIES...
OR TO PREPARE OURSELVES FOR BATTLE AND PUSH THROUGH. THOSE WERE OUR ONLY OPTIONS.


BUT DURING THE RACE, WHAT REALLY REQUIRES CONCENTRATION AND STAMINA IS THE PROCESS OF 'CROSSING' A RIVER.
BE IT BIG OR SMALL...
ONCE YOU'RE IN THE WATER, YOU'RE VULNERABLE FROM ALL ANGLES... NOT TO MENTION THAT THERE ARE FLIES AND MOSQUITOS ALL AROUND YOU. ALSO, IF YOUR HORSE GETS BITTEN BY A VIPER THAT'S SWIMMING IN THE RIVER, YOU'RE BASICALLY DONE FOR.
I WONDER HOW MANY 'RIVERS' WE'VE CROSSED DURING THE SPAN OF OUR JOURNEY, SO FAR...
AND HOW MANY MORE 'RIVERS' WE'LL CROSS...

IT'S AS BLACK AND THICK AS TAR, AND YOU MIX THE SAME AMOUNT OF SUGAR AS THE AMOUNT OF COFFEE BEFORE YOU DRINK.
THE ITALIAN COFFEE THAT GYRO MAKES IS A SPECIAL TREAT, ESPECIALLY DURING A JOURNEY LIKE THIS.
GYRO SOMETIMES GIVES SOME OF IT TO OUR HORSES TO DRINK, AFTER HE'S COOLED IT DOWN A BIT.
ONCE I DRINK TWO SHOTS OF THIS, ALL OF MY FATIGUE INSTANTLY GOES AWAY AND I'M SUDDENLY FILLED WITH A SURPRISING AMOUNT OF ENERGY.
IT SMELLS INCREDIBLY DELICIOUS, AND IT MAKES ME OPTIMISTIC AND ENTHUSIASTIC ABOUT OUR JOURNEY AHEAD.
THE COFFEE IS REALLY A GODSEND.

AT ANY RATE, THIS RACE REQUIRES YOU TO READ THE LAND AND THE CLIMATE IT ALSO FORCES YOU TO PAY ATTENTION TO YOU AND YOUR HORSE'S MENTAL AND PHYSICAL STRENGTH AS YOU KEEP ON GOING
IF YOU DON'T CONSERVE YOUR ENERGY, YOU'LL LOSE.
AND LIKE THIS..
THE PRESSURE IS INTENSE
THINGS PASS...
AND WHEN WE WE'RE FINALLY FORCED TO OUR LIMITS...!
EVEN FOR TWO OR THREE DAYS, WE WAITED PATIENTLY. IMPATIENCE WOULD ONLY HAVE LED US TO RUIN.
AFTER WE CROSSED 45 DEGREES NORTH LATITUDE, WE ONLY TRAVELED WHEN THE SNOW AND THE WIND WERE BLOWING BEHIND US OR HITTING US FROM THE SIDE.
IF THE WIND WAS HITTING US FROM THE FRONT EVEN SLIGHTLY, WE WOULD FIND A COTTAGE OR DIG A HOLE WHERE WE COULD REST UNTIL THE WIND CHANGED.

THAT'S WHEN WE FINALLY START SEEING THE STAGE'S 'GOAL'.

WHEN WE START TO APPROACH THE GOAL...
IS SOMEONE SENDING A SIGNAL? IT EVEN SEEMS THAT WAY, BECAUSE THERE SHOULD BE A DIS-CREPANCY BETWEEN ALL OF THE RIDERS IN THE DISTANCE THEY TRAVEL. BUT...!
AND THIS IS THE CURIOUS PART.. I HAVE NO IDEA WHY, AND IT REALLY PUZZLES ME ..
ALL THE OTHER RACERS ARE RUSHING TO FINISH AT THE SAME EXACT TIME!

IN THIS LAST STRETCH, THEY ALL USE THE LAST BIT OF ENERGY THAT THEY HAVE LEFT, THAT THEY'VE BEEN CONSERVING!
GYRO! IT'S POCOLOCO!
FOLLOWING HIM IS HIGASHI-KATA!
I CAN TELL, JUST BY LOOKING AT HIM...HIS RIDING TECHNIQUE... AS A RIDER, HE'S THIRD-RATE!
POCOLOCO IS RIGHT BEHIND US! ...BUT FRANKLY, I DON'T SEE HIM AS MUCH OF A PROBLEM!
GLANCE

YOU THINK SO, JOHNNY?
THEN WHY IS IT THAT HE'S...
CUR-RENTLY IN FIRST PLACE?
YO!
YO, YO, YO, YO, YO...!
POCO-LOCO, BABY~!
DON'T GET YO' PANTIES IN A TWIST, YO, YO!
COME ON NOW, RELAX! COME ON, COME ON~!
THIS BLIZZARD'S HITTIN' US THE RIGHT WAY, POCOLOCO, BABY~!
KEEP ON FOLLOWIN THE WIND!

O' COURSE!
OH, OH OH~!
HEY, YOU GIVIN' ME ADVICE?
USE THE WIND...JUST LET YOURSELF RIDE ON IT, YEAH?
ALL YOU'VE GOT IS LUCK! GOOD LUCK, ALL THE WAY!
YOU GOT LADY LUCK ON YOUR SIDE, HUH?
YOU KNOW I'M YOUR BUDDY, ME AND THE WIND!
THAT'S IT! YOU'VE GOT LUCK ALL AROUND YOU!
THAT WAS WHAT THEY SAID, YEAH?
WHEN EVERYONE'S FIGHTIN' FOR THE GOAL, WHEN EVERYONE'S AT THEIR LIMITS .. WHADDAYA THINK PUTS SOMEONE ABOVE THE OTHERS?
YOU HAVEN'T LAGGED BEHIND, YOU HAVEN'T GOTTEN INTO ANY ACCIDENTS...
ONLY 'GOOD LUCK'.
YOU CAUGHT UP TO THEM, DIDN'CHA?
GYRO FOUND THE TRAIL BEFORE WE DID.
BUT WHEN WE WERE CROSSIN' THE STRAIT...
THAT'S PROOF THAT YOU'VE GOT LUCK ON YOUR SIDE, BUDDY.
THIS BLIZZARD ...
SO WHAT?

IT'S BLOWIN' FOR *YOU!*
WE CAN'T LOSE TO ANYONE HERE, GOT IT?! WE'VE ONLY GOT 3 STAGES LEFT IN THE RACE!
WE NEED TO GET POINTS FROM THIS STAGE! WE *NEED* THEM!

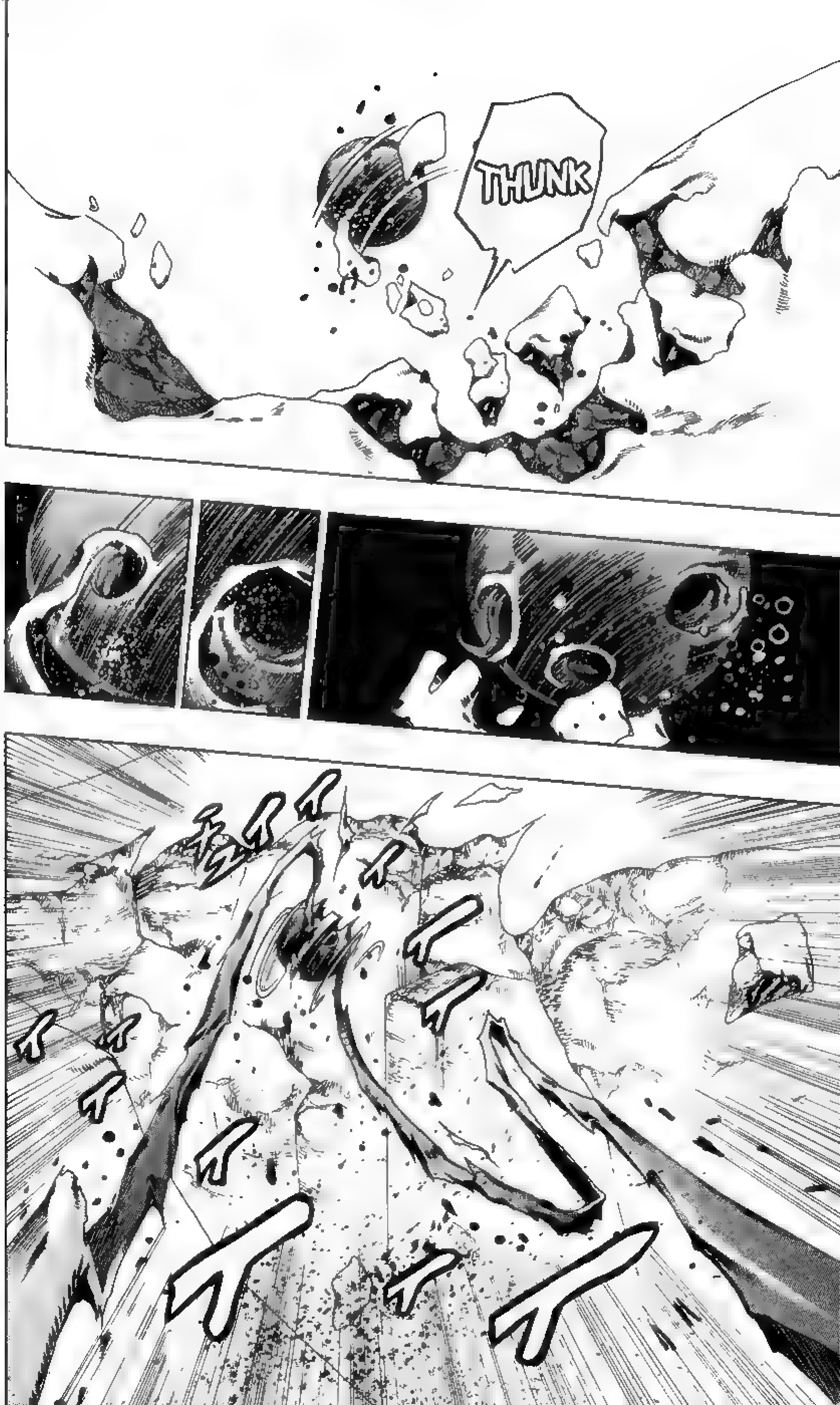
JOHNNY, HOW MUCH MORE DISTANCE DO WE NEED TO COVER?
CONSIDERING THE AMOUNT OF STEPS WE'VE TAKEN SO FAR...I'D SAY ONLY ABOUT 600 OR 800 METERS.
DON'T YOU THINK 200 METERS IS A PRETTY WIDE GAP IN SPECULA-TION?!
THEN TAKE THE MIDDLE. 700 METERS.
!!
JOHNNY! THE BLIZ-ZARD'S DYING DOWN!

WHAT DID I TELL YA, POCO LOCO, BABY~!?!
LOOK, YOU DID IT, POCOLOCO~!
LOOK AT WHERE THOSE TWO ARE HEADED, HUH!? RIGHT FOR A CREVASSE, A BIG GAPIN' GAP!!

THEY'VE GOT NO CHOICE BUT TO TAKE THE LONG WAY AROUND IT!
HOW MANY THROWS?!
JOHNNY!
SHOULD I THROW 'ONE' SHOT?! OR 'TWO'?!
YOU ONLY NEED TO MAKE ONE THROW! DON'T SLOW DOWN, EITHER!
GOLDEN RECT-ANGLE... 'TUSK'!

ドドドドドド
ドドドドド

UOOOOOOOOO!
UOOOOOOOOOOO.....!
ORA!


THUNK

CLACK
WHA ...
WHAT THE HELL IS THAT ....?!

A... WIRE...
I DUNNO WHAT HAPPENED, BUT THEY HIT THE STEEL BALL WITH SOMETHIN'...
AND SCRAPED IT INTO A WIRE SO THAT THEY COULD CROSS THE CREVASSE!
D...
DAMN BASTARDS!
THE HELL WAS THAT?!
THEY CROSSED THAT CREVASSE LIKE IT WAS NOTHIN'!

ワァ ワァ ワァ
GOAL
ワァ ワァ ワァ
ワァ
ドドドドド
ドドド
ドド
ドドドド

GYRO ZEPPELI! GYRO ZEPPELI! GYRO ZEPPELI! GYRO ZEPPELI! AND FOLLOWING HIM, JOHNNY JOESTAR!
THE ONE THAT CONQUERED THE BLIZZARD AND THE DREADED FROZEN STRAIT IS GYRO ZEPPELI!
GYRO ZEPPELI FINISHES IN FIRST!

ドワァ

# 7th. STAGE

## 'PHILADELPHIA TRIANGLE'

**7TH STAGE**
MACKINAW CITY, LAKE HURON TO PHILADELPHIA
(TOTAL DISTANCE ESTIMATED AT 1300KM)
(ESTIMATED TIME: ABOUT 22 DAYS)

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

⑭勝利者への資格

2007年12月9日　第1刷発行

著者　荒木飛呂彦

©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
2007

編集　ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(5211)2651

発行人　鳥嶋和彦

発行所　株式会社　集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
03(3230)6236(編集部)
電話　東京　03(3230)6191(販売部)
03(3230)6076(読者係)

Printed in Japan

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社

造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社読者係宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

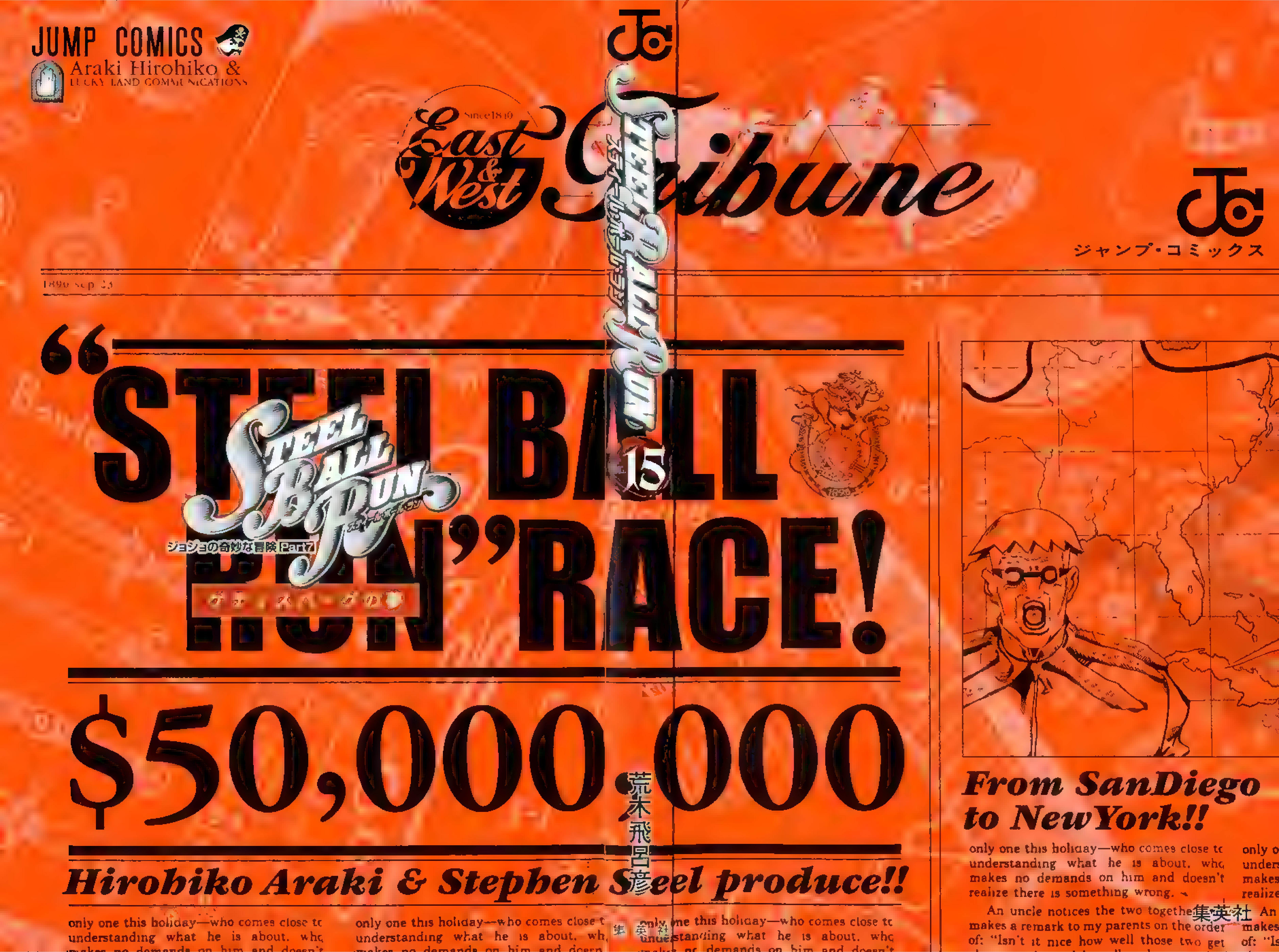
ISBN978-4-08-874438-4 C9979

Jojo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 14; Chapter 4
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 15, Chapter 1
Translation: Freshy
Editing: Frequency

荒木飛呂彦

So I've recently found out that some people are intimidated by me-- people I've met for the first time during interviews always say "man, I was so nervous the whole time!" That worries me.
Apparently, people perceive me as similar to a character that I made in the past, 'Rohan Kishibe', and that's why they get so nervous. I'm not the same as him, though.
I'm the type of person that, when eraser bits or a drop of ink gets into my tea during work, will drink it anyway.
I really want people to say "man, I always relax in front of Araki", instead. I guess I need to work on myself more.


JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
Since 1840
East & West Tribune
1890 Sep 25
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
15
$50,000,000
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
荒木飛呂彦
集英社
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together and makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get
ジャンプ・コミックス

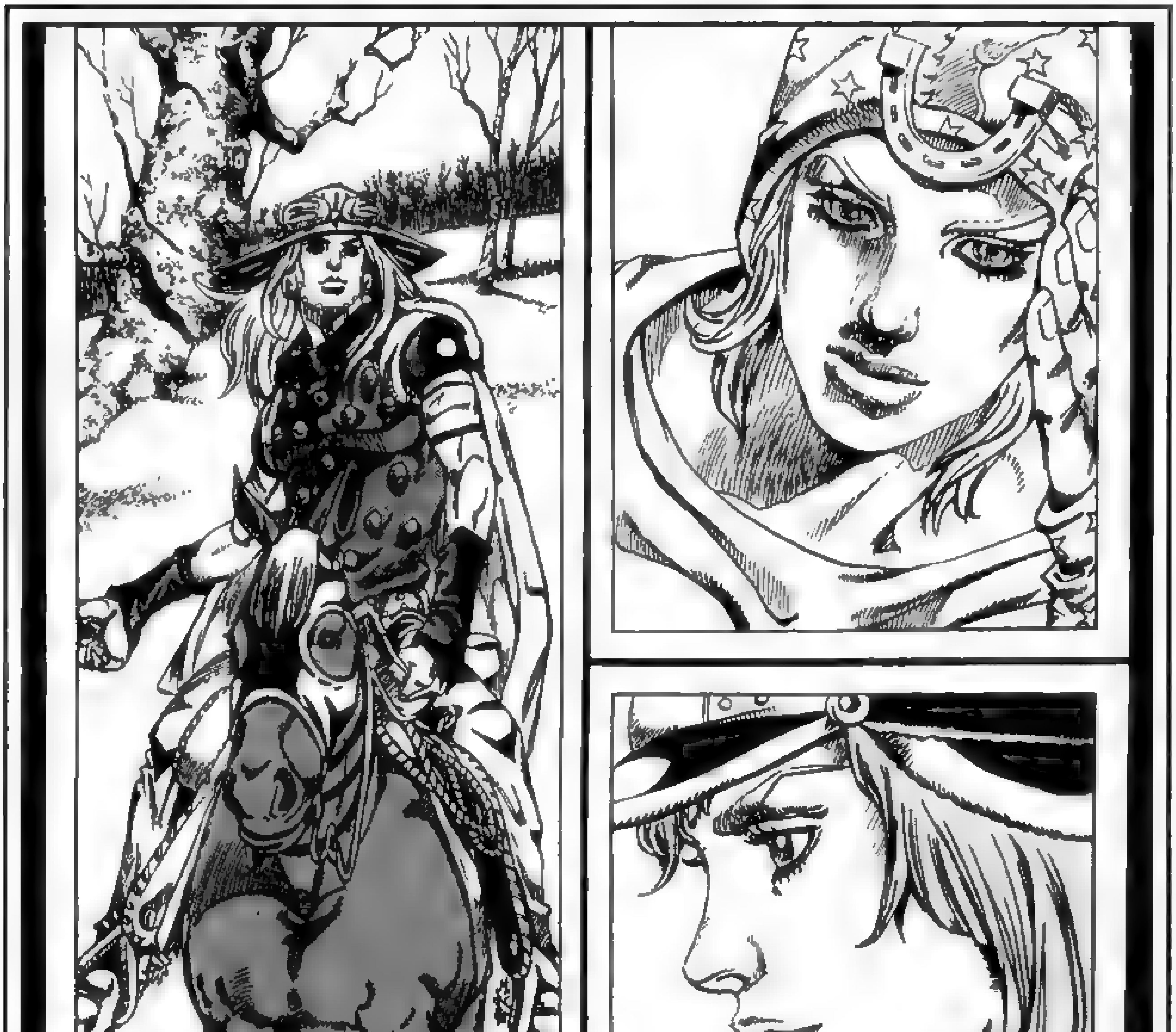
JUMP COMICS

JoJo's Bizarre Adventure Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

## Gettysburg's Dream

vol.15




ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！
戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。
なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！
その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を明けた！
6th.STAGEゴール間近、『両脚部』の遺体があると思われる凍ったマキナック海峡の上で、ジャイロ達を2人組の刺客が襲う。ジャイロとは異なる鉄球を操るウェカピポ、あらゆる攻撃を受け流すスタンド使いのマジェント・マジェントに対し、生命のない氷の世界で「黄金長方形のスケール」を見つけられないジャイロ達は絶体絶命に！
氷の陰にいた狼の体に黄金長方形のスケールを見出そうとするが、その狼すらウェカピポの鉄球が湖に沈めてしまう。
だが、その時、割れた氷の下から吹き上げた水しぶきが雪になり、黄金長方形を形作った！
形勢を逆転したジャイロ達は刺客を倒し『両脚部』を入手。そして氷の海峡を越え、ジャイロは6th.STAGEを初の1着でゴールした！

全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！

『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！

そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

ジャイロ・ツェペリ

ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家叛逆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。

ジョニィ・ジョースター

元天才騎手だが、傷心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。「脊椎(一部)」、「両脚」を持つ。

ファニー・ヴァレンタイン

第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。遺体の一部「右腕」を持つ。

ホット・パンツ

何者かの命で遺体を集めているが、大統領側の人間ではないらしい。遺体の一部「左腕」、「脊椎」、「心臓」、「両耳」を持つ。

ディエゴ・ブランドー

通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。

ルーシー・スティール

スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!? 遺体の一部「右眼」を持つ。

スティーブン・スティール

40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.15

## CONTENTS

**Gettysburg's Dream**


#56
Civil War Part ① 7

#57
Civil War Part ② 41

#58
Civil War Part ③ 103

#59
Gettysburg's Dream 155

# #56

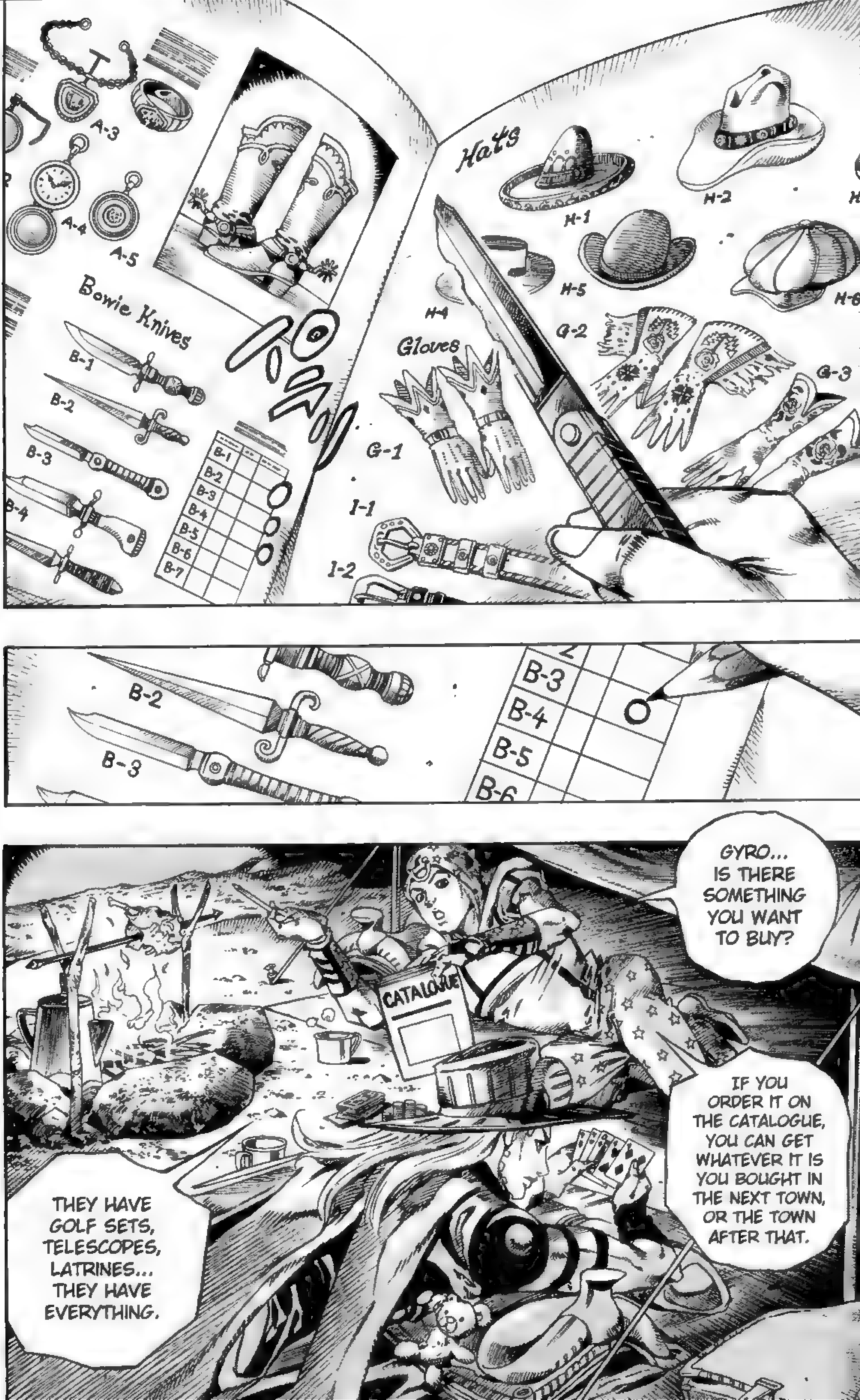
## CIVIL WAR PART ①

ドドドドド
THE CAUSE OF DEATH SEEMS TO BE A HEAD INJURY...
AHHHHHHH!!
PLEASE CALM DOWN!
MR. STEEL!
...FROM THE IMPACT OF WHEN SHE HIT THE RIVER...!
PLEASE! PLEASE! CALM DOWN!
SHE SAID SHE WAS GOING TO COME HOME FROM THE LIBRARY...
WHY?!
AH...
WHY DID SHE COME HERE?!
AHHHH!

LUCY! AHHHHH!
4 weeks ago--
--Southern outskirts of Chicago--
Off the shore of Lake Michigan, near the Fox River
PLEASE, GET A HOLD OF YOURSELF!
BRING THE CARRIAGE HERE!
HURRY! GET MR. STEEL AWAY FROM HERE!
AH!

HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
BRING THE CARRIAGE OVER HERE!
LUCY...
THAT'S ...?
......

I CAN TELL... WHAT IS THIS...?!
THAT'S NOT LUCY.
HER FACE IS UNMISTAKEABLY LUCY... BUT... 'WHO' IS THAT ...?!
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
WHAT ...?
THAT'S NOT...
Mackinac Strait
---7th Stage---
12th day
--About 145km east of Philadelphia
Gettysburg
Philadelphia
Gettysburg

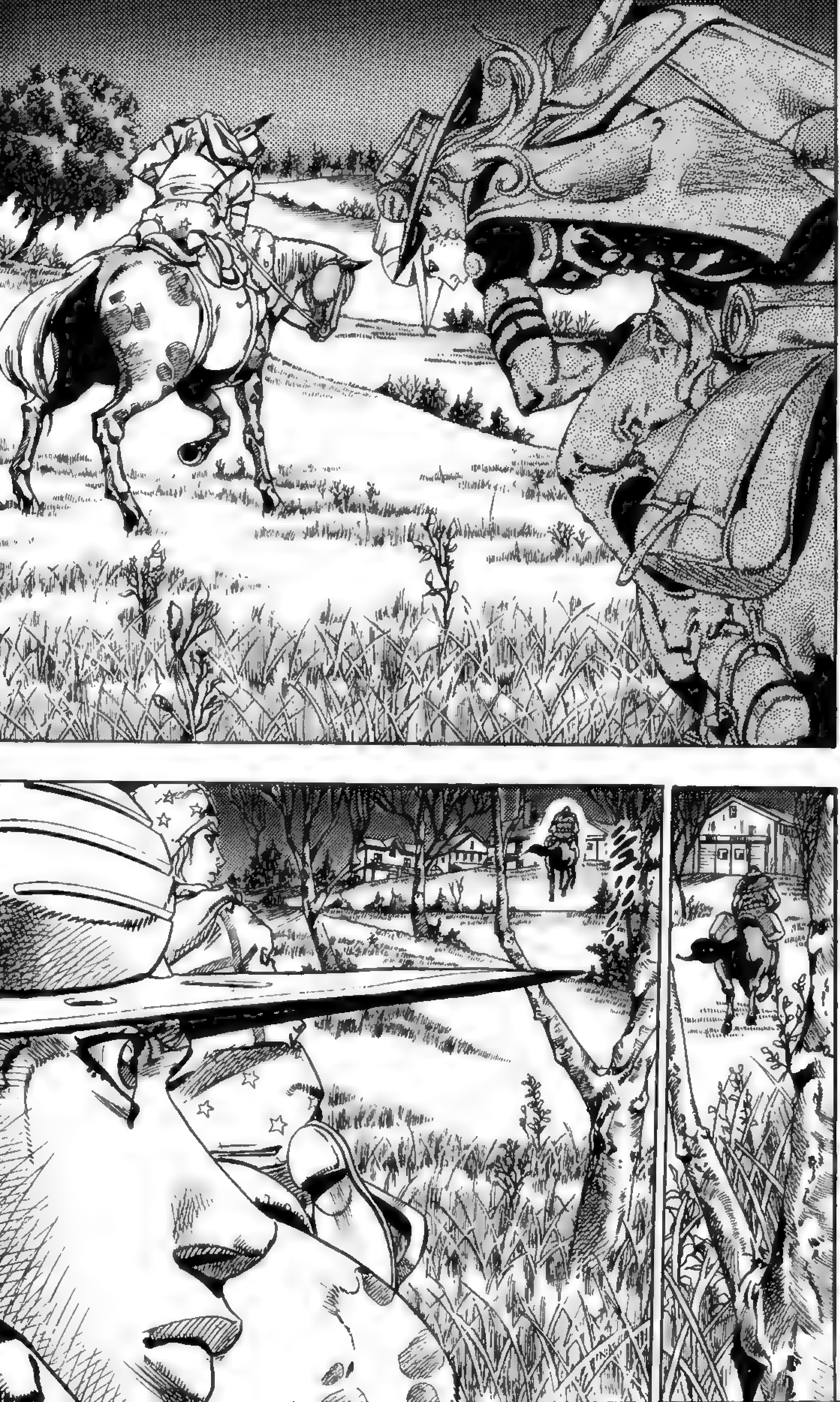

A-3
A-4
A-5
Bowie Knives
B-1
B-2
B-3
B-4
B-1
B-2
B-3
B-4
B-5
B-6
B-7
Hats
H-1
H-2
H-5
H-4
Gloves
G-1
G-2
G-3
I-1
I-2
B-2
B-3
B-3
B-4
B-5
CATALOGUE
GYRO... IS THERE SOMETHING YOU WANT TO BUY?
IF YOU ORDER IT ON THE CATALOGUE, YOU CAN GET WHATEVER IT IS YOU BOUGHT IN THE NEXT TOWN, OR THE TOWN AFTER THAT.
THEY HAVE GOLF SETS, TELESCOPES, LATRINES... THEY HAVE EVERYTHING.

THINGS ARE GETTING MORE CONVENIENT.
GIVE ME 5 CARDS.
YOU MAKE ME WAIT FOR A BILLION GODDAMN YEARS, AND YOU'RE TAKING 5?!
CATALOGUE
DO THEY HAVE AXLE GREASE IN THAT CATALOGUE?
THE OINTMENT WE BOUGHT LAST TIME HAD 'LARD' IN IT, SO IT ATTRACTS BUGS.
AXLE GREASE IS BETTER.
HEY!
Teddy
(boy)
(girl)
Teddy (boy)
Teddy (girl)
......
(boy)
(girl)
Teddy (boy)
Teddy (girl)

GYRO, LOOK!
ドドドドドド

IT'S 'HOT PANTS'!
THAT BASTARD... WHY THE HELL IS HE IN SUCH A HURRY? HE'S RUNNING LIKE A CHICKEN WITH DIARRHEA... HE'S NOT EVEN A PART OF THIS RACE ANYMORE!
LOOKS LIKE HE HASN'T NOTICED THAT WE MADE CAMP HERE, EITHER. SEEMS LIKE HE'S IN A RUSH TO GET AWAY FROM SOMEONE...
ALRIGHT! LET'S FOLLOW HIM!

WE NEED TO GET BACK THE 'CORPSE PARTS' THAT THAT ASSHOLE TOOK FROM US!
PUT THE FIRE OUT AND GATHER OUR STUFF!
YEAH ...!



WHICH WAY DID HE GO?!
WHAT THE HELL IS HE UP TO?! DID HE REALIZE THAT WE WERE FOLLOWING HIM?!
WHY WOULD HE BE IN SUCH A RUSH TO GET TO THIS TOWN?!
NO...
IT DOESN'T SEEM THAT WAY YET.

HEY, GYRO...
WHAT ARE YOU PLANNING ON DOING WHEN WE CATCH UP TO 'HOT PANTS'?
BEAT THE SHIT OUT OF HIM...
AND BEAT HIM UP SOME MORE!
HE'S NOT AN ENEMY, BUT I'M STILL GONNA MAKE HIM TALK ABOUT WHAT HIS TRUE OBJECTIVES ARE! I'M GONNA MAKE HIM TELL ME EVERYTHING!

CLENCH
ABOUT WHO THE 'CORPSE' IS, AND WHAT HE'S PLANNING TO DO WITH IT...

……
チラッ
ギョロ

A MAN JUST CAME IN HERE!
HOW BIG IS THE BACK OF THIS BUILDING?!
AH!

OH...
EXCUSE ME, SISTER.
WE'RE NOT TRYING TO MAKE TROUBLE HERE.
I'M SORRY, BUT IS THIS A RELIGIOUS ESTABLISHMENT?
IF IT IS, IT DOESN'T LOOK SO WELL-KEPT...
AND ONE MORE THING!
DO YOU KNOW WHO 'HOT PANTS' IS?

THIS IS JUST THE TOWN'S GARBAGE DUMP.
THIS IS...
THE FIRST TIME I'VE COME HERE TO THROW SOMETHING AWAY.
I DON'T KNOW HOW BIG IT IS.
'SOMETHING ...'
'FINALLY, SOMETHING'S UP, I CAN FEEL IT...'
I DON'T KNOW WHAT HOT PANTS IS UP TO, BUT 'THIS MIGHT BE WHERE HE'S HIDING THE 'CORPSE PARTS' ...
AND THE NEXT PART, THE 'TORSO', MIGHT BE AROUND HERE SOMEWHERE!
JOHNNY, KEEP AN EYE ON THAT SISTER!
...I'LL GO CHECK THE BACK.
WAIT FOR MY SIGNAL!

THAT YOU'RE A 'WOMAN'.
HOT PANTS!
I HAVEN'T TOLD GYRO YET.
I DIDN'T THINK I HAD TO.
I DON'T REALLY KNOW WHY I HAVEN'T TOLD HIM YET...
TELL US WHAT YOU'RE DOING.
WHY ARE YOU COLLECTING THE CORPSE PARTS?!
EVEN IF YOU'RE A WOMAN, I WON'T BE SO NICE TO YOU WHEN GYRO COMES BACK!
WE'VE BEEN RISKING OUR LIVES TO DO THIS!

IF YOU'VE OBTAINED THE 'LEGS' AT THE FROZEN STRAIT...
MAKE SURE YOU DON'T LET GO OF IT.
THE ONE WHO HAS IT RIGHT NOW... JOHNNY...
IS IT YOU...?
HEY!
DON'T UNDERESTIMATE ME! I'M THE ONE ASKING THE QUESTIONS HERE.
ANSWER ME, HOT PANTS!

ARE YOU A NUN?
WHEN YOU'RE AT YOUR HOMETOWN... DO YOU SPEND YOUR DAYS AS A REGULAR WOMAN?
...HAVE YOU FALLEN IN LOVE WITH PEOPLE?

IF YOU CALL GYRO BACK HERE, BOTH OF YOU WILL DIE.
THAT'S WHY I MADE HIM GO TO THE BACK.
ALL OF MY 'CORPSE PARTS' HAVE BEEN TAKEN FROM ME.
YOU CAN'T LET GO OF THEM.
I COULDN'T DO ANYTHING ABOUT IT... I HAD TO THROW THEM AWAY.
HAD TO GIVE EVERYTHING UP...
OH...
LORD, I...

AH!
JOHNNY.
YOU CAN'T THROW THEM AWAY.
EVEN MY 'SPRAY' DOESN'T WORK... I CAN'T EXTRACT THEM OUT OF MY BODY.
IT'S BECAUSE I THREW THEM AWAY.
BIG SISTERRRRRR
SISTERRRR
WHAT?!
'HOT PANTS', WHAT'S GOING ON?!

JOHNNY, I CAN'T BEAR THIS ANY LONGER.
EVEN WHEN I BECAME A MEMBER OF THE CHURCH... EVEN WHEN I BECAME A CHILD OF GOD, IT DIDN'T WORK...
BECAUSE 'I SACRIFICED HIM'...
MY HEART CAN'T TAKE IT ANYMORE...
I WASN'T ABLE TO COLLECT ALL OF THE 'HOLY BODY PARTS'...
AN 'ENEMY'?!
'HOT PANTS'! WERE YOU ALREADY ATTACKED BY SOMEONE?!
YOU HAVE TO PURIFY IT... WITH 'WATER', JOHNNY...

IF YOU HAVE NO CHOICE BUT TO SACRIFICE SOMETHING...
YOU HAVE TO 'PURIFY' IT...
GYROOOOOO--!!!
COME BACK, GYRO!! THERE'S AN 'ENEMY' HERE
'HOT PANTS'... WHAT IS SHE TALKING ABOUT?!
IS 'SOMEONE ELSE' HERE?! AN 'ENEMY'?! IS THERE SOMEONE NEARBY?!

...THIS
...!

'HUMANS MUST SACRIFICE IN ORDER TO PROGRESS'.
OR...
'ARE YOU GOING TO RETRIEVE THAT'?

ゴゴゴ
ゴゴ
ド
ゴゴ

'WHAT THE HELL IS THAT?'
AN 'ENEMY'?!
ON THE GROUND, THAT'S...!
!!
IS THAT THE 'CORPSE'?!
THE PARTS ARE ALL THERE!
AH!
何ッ!!

JoJo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 15, Chapter 2
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

#57

# CIVIL WAR PART②

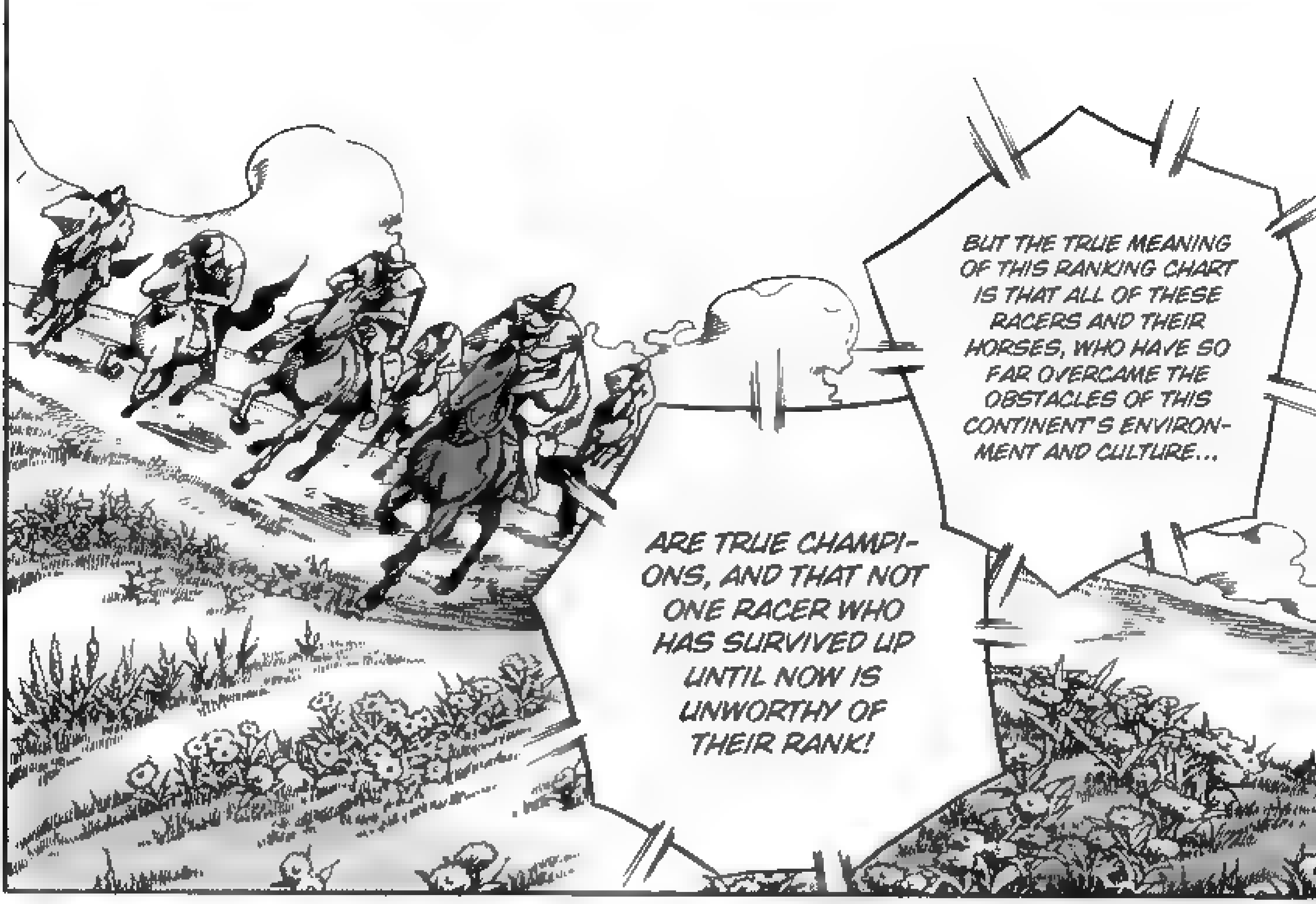
## 'TOTAL RANKING CHART' AS OF THE 6TH STAGE

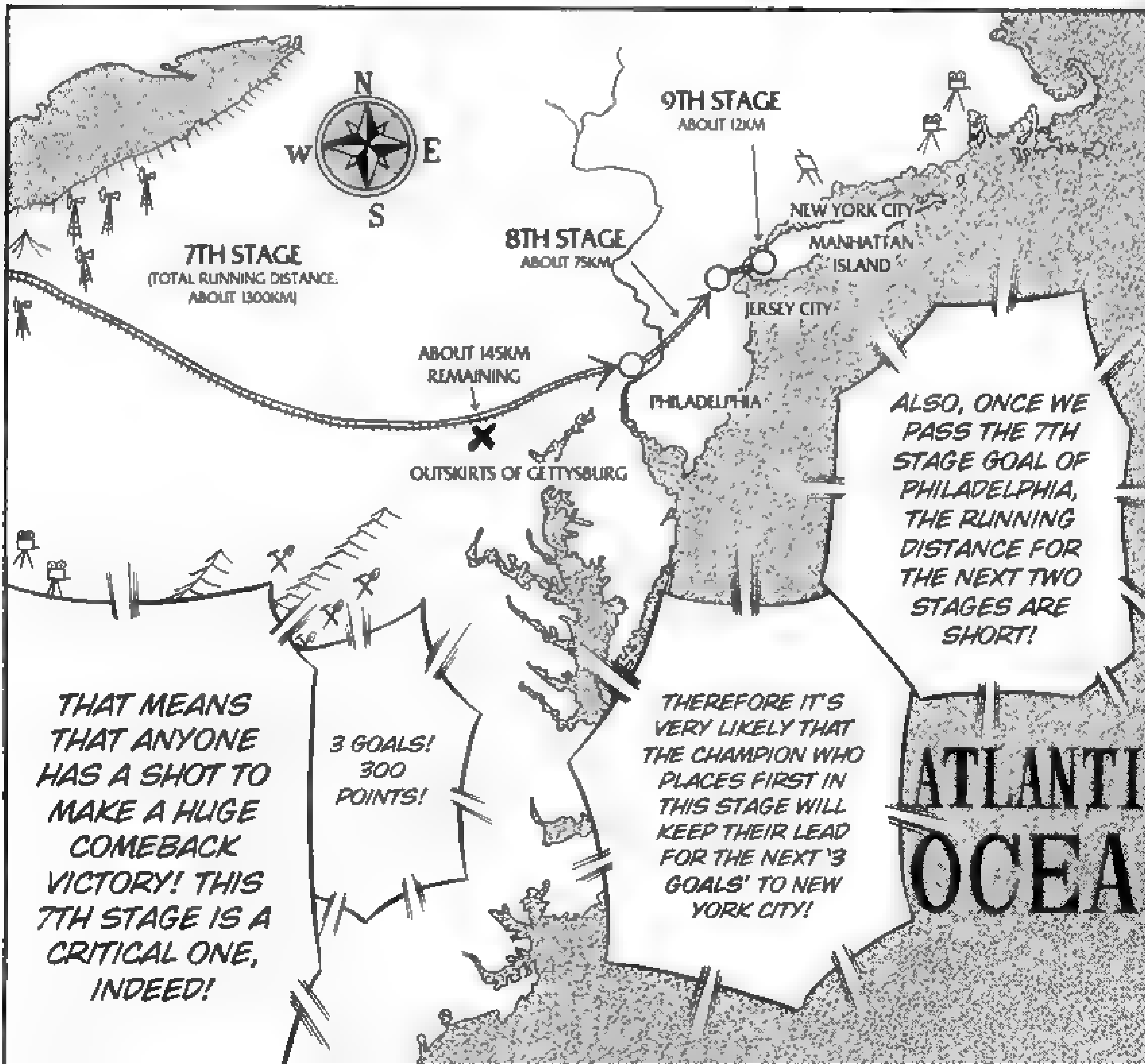
CHICAGO →MICHIGAN, LAKE HURON/MACKINAC STRAIT, EST. DISTANCE 690KM
TOTAL RACERS IN THE END: 61
RETIREES: 380 (INCLUDING HOT PANTS)

| RANK | RACER NAME | TOTAL POINTS EARNED | PLACEMENTS SO FAR 1ST · 2ND · 3RD · 4TH · 5TH · 6TH | TIME BONUS |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | POCOLOCO | 273 | 3-9-5-2-1-3 | 1 HOUR |
| 2 | GYRO ZEPPELI | 246 | 21-4-4-3-4-1 | 1 HOUR |
| 3 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 245 | 5-2-2-4-5-2 | — |
| 4 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 223 | 19-6-12-1-2-4 | 1 HOUR |
| 5 | DIEGO BRANDO | 192 | 2-1-3-OUT - OUT - 20 | 1 HOUR |
| 6 | SLOOP JOHN B | 79 | 20-10-OUT-8-6-6 | — |
| 7 | BABA YAGA | 72 | 14-15-8-OUT-10-5 | — |
| 8 | | | | |
| 9 | | | | |
| 10 | | | | |
| 11 | | | | |
| 12 | | | | |
| 13 | | | | |
| 14 | | | | |

### 6TH STAGE FINAL RANKING

| | NAME | EARNED POINTS |
|---|---|---|
| 1 | GYRO ZEPPELI | 100 |
| 2 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 50 |
| 3 | POCOLOCO | 40 |
| 4 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 35 |
| 5 | BABA YAGA | 30 |
| 6 | SLOOP JOHN B | 25 |
| 7 | GEORGIE PORGIE | 20 |
| 8 | ZENYATTA MONDATTA | 15 |


BUT THE TRUE MEANING OF THIS RANKING CHART IS THAT ALL OF THESE RACERS AND THEIR HORSES, WHO HAVE SO FAR OVERCAME THE OBSTACLES OF THIS CONTINENT'S ENVIRONMENT AND CULTURE...
ARE TRUE CHAMPIONS, AND THAT NOT ONE RACER WHO HAS SURVIVED UP UNTIL NOW IS UNWORTHY OF THEIR RANK!


N
W
E
S
9TH STAGE
ABOUT 12KM
8TH STAGE
ABOUT 75KM
7TH STAGE
(TOTAL RUNNING DISTANCE. ABOUT 1300KM)
NEW YORK CITY
MANHATTAN ISLAND
JERSEY CITY
ABOUT 145KM REMAINING
PHILADELPHIA
OUTSKIRTS OF GETTYSBURG
ATLANTI
OCEA
ALSO, ONCE WE PASS THE 7TH STAGE GOAL OF PHILADELPHIA, THE RUNNING DISTANCE FOR THE NEXT TWO STAGES ARE SHORT!
THEREFORE IT'S VERY LIKELY THAT THE CHAMPION WHO PLACES FIRST IN THIS STAGE WILL KEEP THEIR LEAD FOR THE NEXT '3 GOALS' TO NEW YORK CITY!
3 GOALS! 300 POINTS!
THAT MEANS THAT ANYONE HAS A SHOT TO MAKE A HUGE COMEBACK VICTORY! THIS 7TH STAGE IS A CRITICAL ONE, INDEED!

AND THAT MAY BE THE REASON FOR THIS, BUT...
THE FAN-FAVORITES IN THE SBR RACE BET ARE...
YES, YOU GUESSED IT, 'GYRO ZEPPELI'!
COMING IN SECOND IS 'JOHNNY JOESTAR'!

FROM SAN FRANCISCO TO NY, FROM LONDON, PARIS, AND EVEN TOKYO, BETS ARE BEING PLACED LEFT AND RIGHT ALL OVER THE WORLD!
PEOPLE FROM AROUND THE WORLD ARE HOPING THAT EITHER ONE OF THE TWO WILL BE THE WINNER!
11
THOSE 'TWO'...
THEY DEVIATED FROM THE COURSE ROUTE SLIGHTLY, AWAY FROM THE LEADING RACERS...
THAT MEANS...
...THEY 'FOUND' IT.
THE 'TORSO', AND THE REST OF THE 'CORPSE PARTS'...

THEY DEVIATED FROM THE ROUTE TO GO TO GETTYS-BURG, IN ORDER TO GET THE 'TORSO'...
EVERYTHING IS GOING AS PLANNED... FINALLY!
IT'S TIME FOR ME TO 'COLLECT' THE PARTS...
WITH THE 'HEAD' REMAINING, IT IS TIME FOR ME TO 'COLLECT' ALL OF THE OTHER PARTS!
AN 'ENEMY' ...?
WH... WHAT THE...?!
IS THAT THING AN 'ENEMY'?!

THIS BEAR!
THIS IS MY BEAR!
WHAT?! WHY THE HELL IS IT HERE?!
IT SANK...!? MY BEAR...IT SANK UNDER-NEATH MY ARM?! WHERE DID IT GO!? ....WAS THAT THE REAL THING? AM I BEING ATTACKED?!
HUMANS CANNOT PROGRESS WITHOUT 'SACRIFICING' SOMETHING.
OR...

....WILL YOU 'RETRIEVE' WHAT YOU LEFT BEHIND?
GYRO ZEPPELI.
ORA AA!

URYAA!
SMIRK
!!
A 'STAND'!
IT EVADED MY ATTACK BY BREAKING OFF INTO DIFFERENT PARTS!
WAS IT ABLE TO DISCERN MY STEEL BALL'S ATTACKS...?!
THE 'USER' IS AROUND SOME-WHERE...!
THE 'USER' MUST BE NEARBY... WHICH MEANS HE'S WATCHING ME AS WE SPEAK!

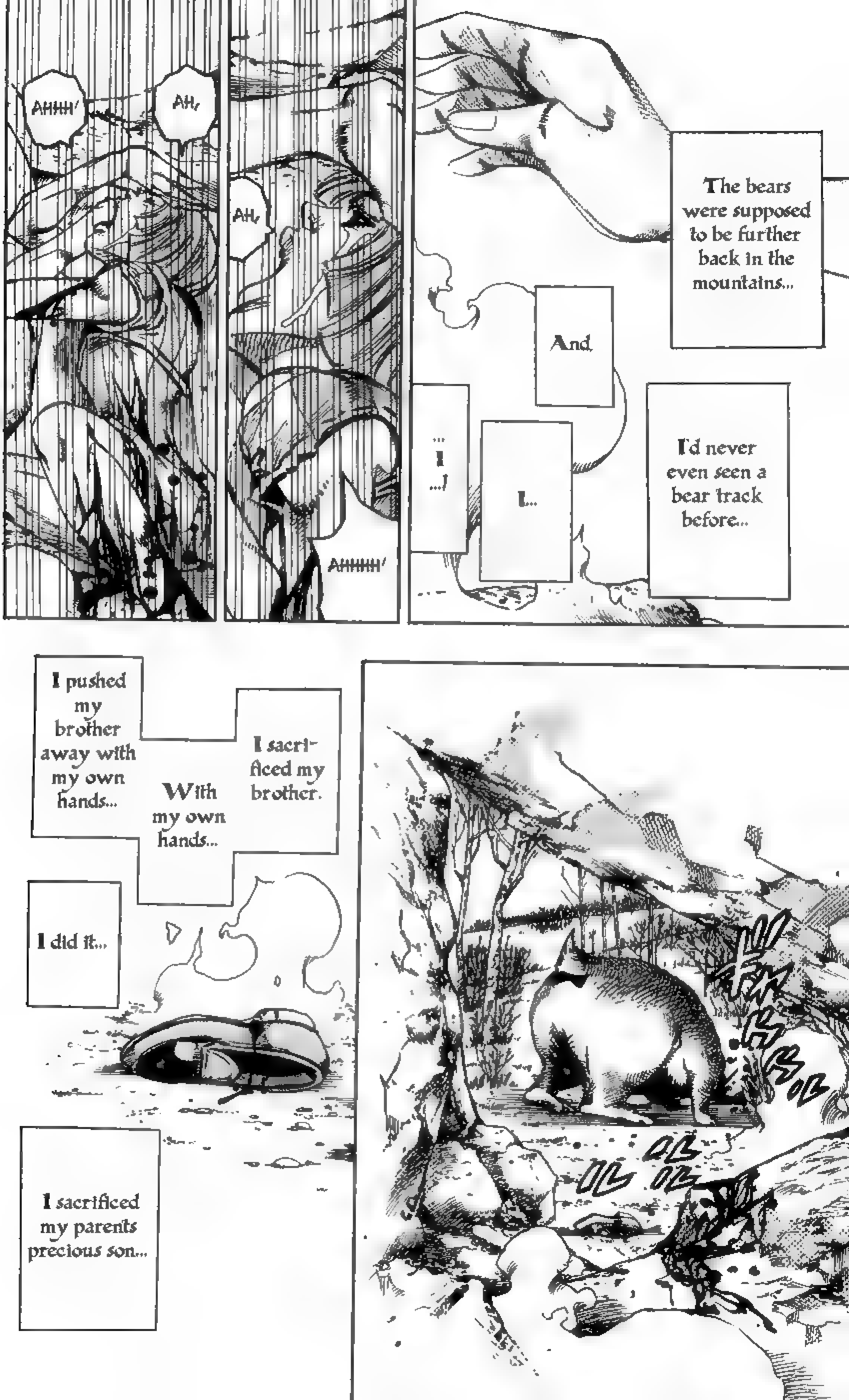
WHAT ...?
WHAT...
WHAT'S UP WITH ALL THIS GARBAGE...?

TH, THIS KNIFE WITH THE WORN BLADE...!
AND THIS PIECE OF CHICKEN!
I THOUGHT I THREW THESE THINGS AWAY BACK AT CAMP! IT... IT'S GOING INTO MY BODY!
JOHNNY...
HURRY...
YOU HAVE TO GET AWAY FROM HERE...

H.P.
I PROMISE, I'LL HELP YOU.
NO...YOU CAN'T...
YOU CAN'T THINK OF SAVING ME OR GYRO...
YOU CAN'T GO 'HELP' GYRO...
OR ELSE YOU'LL BE FORCED TO 'SACRIFICE' SOMETHING...
BIG SIS-TERRRR
BIG SIS-TERRRRRR

GRR RRR AAAA RRR!
AHHH!
BIG SIS!! WAHH HH!

AHHHH!
AGH!
WAHHHHHH! AHHH!
That day... I don't remember who suggested that we go out.
...We were attacked by a Grizzly bear...
...when I went to the woods to collect nuts with my brother.



AHHH!
AH,
AH,
AHHHH!
The bears were supposed to be further back in the mountains...
And
I...
... I ...!
I'd never even seen a bear track before...
I pushed my brother away with my own hands...
With my own hands...
I sacrificed my brother.
I did it...
I sacrificed my parents precious son...

I was the only one to know about this.
Everyone in town...they were all kind to me and my parents about the tragic 'accident'...
But I couldn't bear living with my parents any longer.
The only place I could go was to a convent.
I had to become a servant of God... I wanted to be forgiven...
My sins... I wanted my brother to forgive me.
IF I WAS ABLE TO COLLECT ALL OF THE 'PARTS'...
AND IF I HAD HIS 'CORPSE'...
I THOUGHT HE WOULD FORGIVE ME.
......

BUT IT WAS NO USE...
BECAUSE HIS 'SHOE' WAS HERE...
I CAN NEVER ESCAPE FROM THE THINGS THAT I GAVE AWAY.
BUT YOU... YOU STILL HAVE A CHANCE, JOHNNY!
YOU CAN STILL PURIFY THEM!
YOU HAVE TO WASH THAT KNIFE WITH PURE WATER!
BEFORE YOUR HEART TELLS YOU THAT YOU CAN'T BEAR IT!

HOT PANTS!

THAT MEANS THAT THE 'ENEMY' TOOK THE 'CORPSE PARTS'...!
AND...
THAT THE ENEMY USED H.P. TO LURE ME AND GYRO OVER HERE!
THE ENEMY IS IN THE BACK OF THE BUILDING... GYRO!
THIS KNIFE...!
IT'S DEFINITELY MINE! IT'S THE KNIFE THAT I 'THREW AWAY'!
WHAT IS THIS ATTACK...?!

YOU HAVE TO PURIFY IT WITH 'WATER' ...

'WATER', RIGHT...? MY 'CANTEEN'! I PROMISE TO SAVE YOU...
HOT PANTS ...

WHAT...!?
WH... !?

ゴロ ゴロ ゴロ
HAHH, HAHH
HAHH, HAHH

TH...THAT WAS... NO WAY!
IT'S NOT POSSIBLE!
IT'S COMING TOWARDS ME...
THAT WAS 'DANNY'!
BROTHER ...
NICHOLAS I CAN'T DROWN HIM IN THE LAKE...
THAT WHITE MOUSE PASSED BY AND FRIGHT-ENED THE HORSE!

ドドドドド
THESE ARE MY 'STEEL BALLS'!
ALL... 'ALL' OF THESE!

NONE OF THESE ARE OTHER PEOPLE'S STEEL BALLS!
THEY'RE DEFINITELY MINE...!
BUT...
I HAVE A FEELING THAT TAKING ONE IS BAD NEWS... THIS IS THE 'ENEMY'S' ATTACK.
(EXCLUDING THE TWO THAT I JUST THREW...) LOOKS LIKE...SHIT, LOOKS LIKE TOUCHING ANY OF THE OTHER ONES IS A BAD IDEA!

GUH!
JO...
JOHNNY ...!

JOHNNY! CAN YOU HEAR ME?! IT'S AN ENEMY! THE 'USER' IS NEARBY!
LET'S PLAY IT 'FAIR'.
A STAND BATTLE... REQUIRES A DEGREE OF 'FAIRNESS', EVEN IF THAT MEANS THAT YOU HAVE TO DIVULGE YOUR WEAKNESSES...
IN ORDER TO DRAW ON YOUR STAND POWER TO ITS FULLEST.
'COWARDICE' DOESN'T EQUATE WITH 'STRENGTH'.
MY WEAKNESS, GYRO ZEPPELI... IS BEING PURIFIED WITH 'WATER'.
IF YOU WASH YOURSELF OFF WITH 'CLEAN' WATER... YOU'LL BE FREED.
FROM THE BURDENS OF THOSE THAT YOU SACRIFICED.
IT'S FINE IF YOU DON'T BELIEVE ME... BUT IT'S NOT A 'TRAP'. YOU SHOULD ATTEMPT IT.
BY THE WAY, JOHNNY ALREADY KNOWS ABOUT THIS.
YOU...
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH
DON'T FUCK WITH ME...!

THIS...! THIS 'STEEL BALL'...!
ONE MORE BLOW WITH THE STEEL BALL!
GYRO, WHAT ARE YOU DOING?
END HIS SUFFERING!
FINISH THIS PRISONER OFF!
HE'S SUF-FERING!
THIS ...! I...!

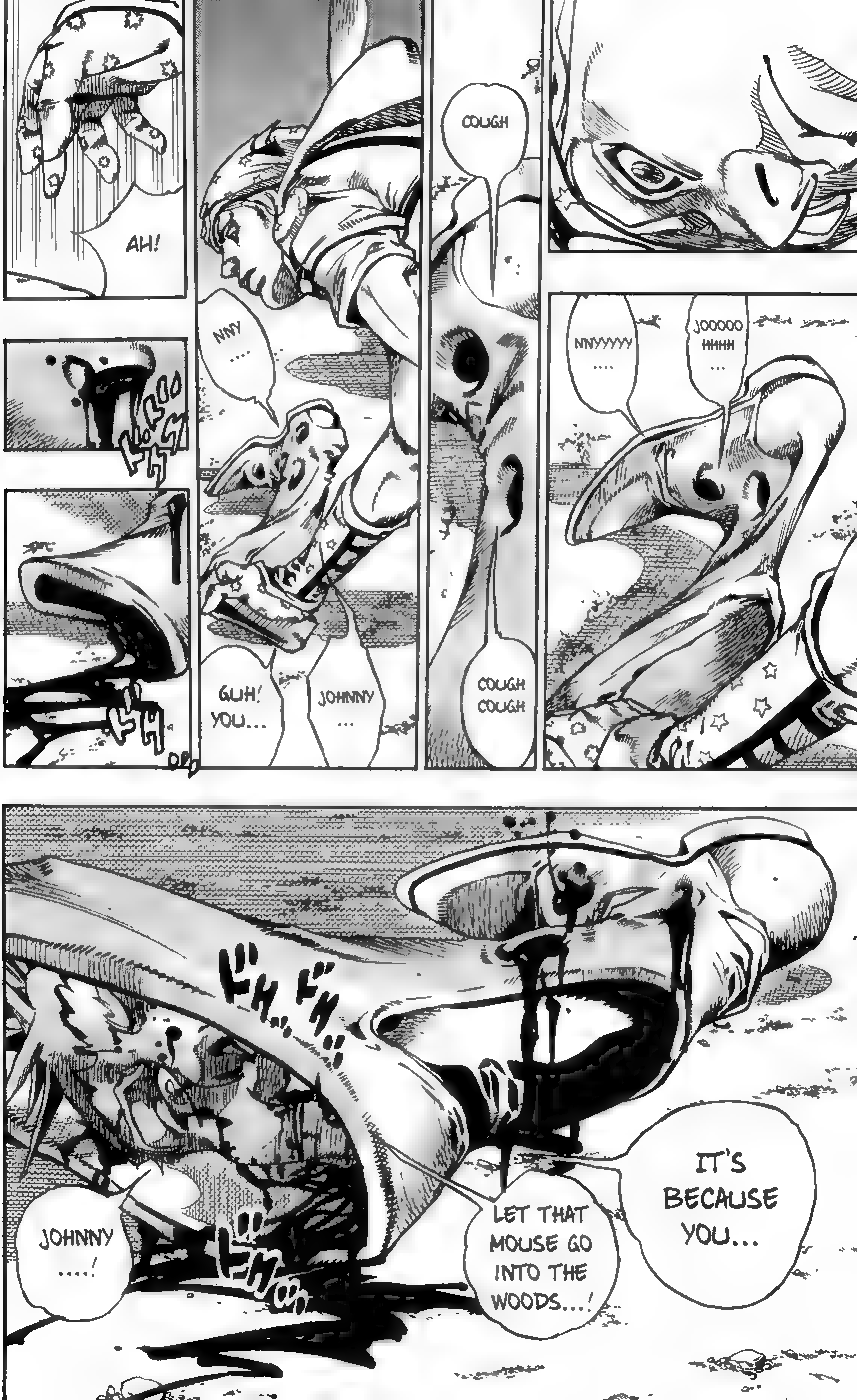
THIS IS FROM WHEN I SCREWED UP AN EXECUTION SUPERVISED BY MY FATHER...!
THIS STEEL BALL...! I DEFINITELY THREW IT AWAY!
I 'GOT RID OF IT'! BACK IN MY HOMELAND!
WHY THE HELL IS IT HERE?!
UOO OO! JOHNNY!!

GYRO...!
THAT WAS GYRO'S SCREAM!

DAMN IT!
IT'S COMING THIS WAY AGAIN!
THAT'S NOT 'DANNY'!
IT CAN'T BE 'DANNY'.
THIS IS AN 'ILLUSION'! THE ENEMY IS SHOWING US AN ELABORATE 'ILLUSION'...!
IT'S THE SAME THING I SEE IN MY DREAMS ALL THE TIME... BUT, EVEN IF THAT MOUSE IS AN 'ILLUSION', I HAVE TO STOP IT.
'I CAN SHOOT IT'.

ギャル
ギャル
ギャル

IT'S TRAPPED!
I HIT IT!
I, I DID IT!


JOOOOO HHHH ....
NNYYYYY ....
COUGH
COUGH COUGH
NNY ....
JOHNNY ...
GUH! YOU...
AH!
IT'S BECAUSE YOU...
LET THAT MOUSE GO INTO THE WOODS...!
JOHNNY ....!

AH! AHHHH!
TH... THIS...!
IF YOU'D DROWNED THAT MOUSE IN THE LAKE, LIKE FATHER SAID...
NONE OF THIS WOULD HAVE HAPPENED...
IF THAT'S NOT THE CASE, THEN EXPLAIN IT TO ME.
I FELL OFF OF MY HORSE, BECAUSE OF YOU.
YOU DID THIS TO ME!
YOU DID THIS TO ME!
YOU KILLED ME!!

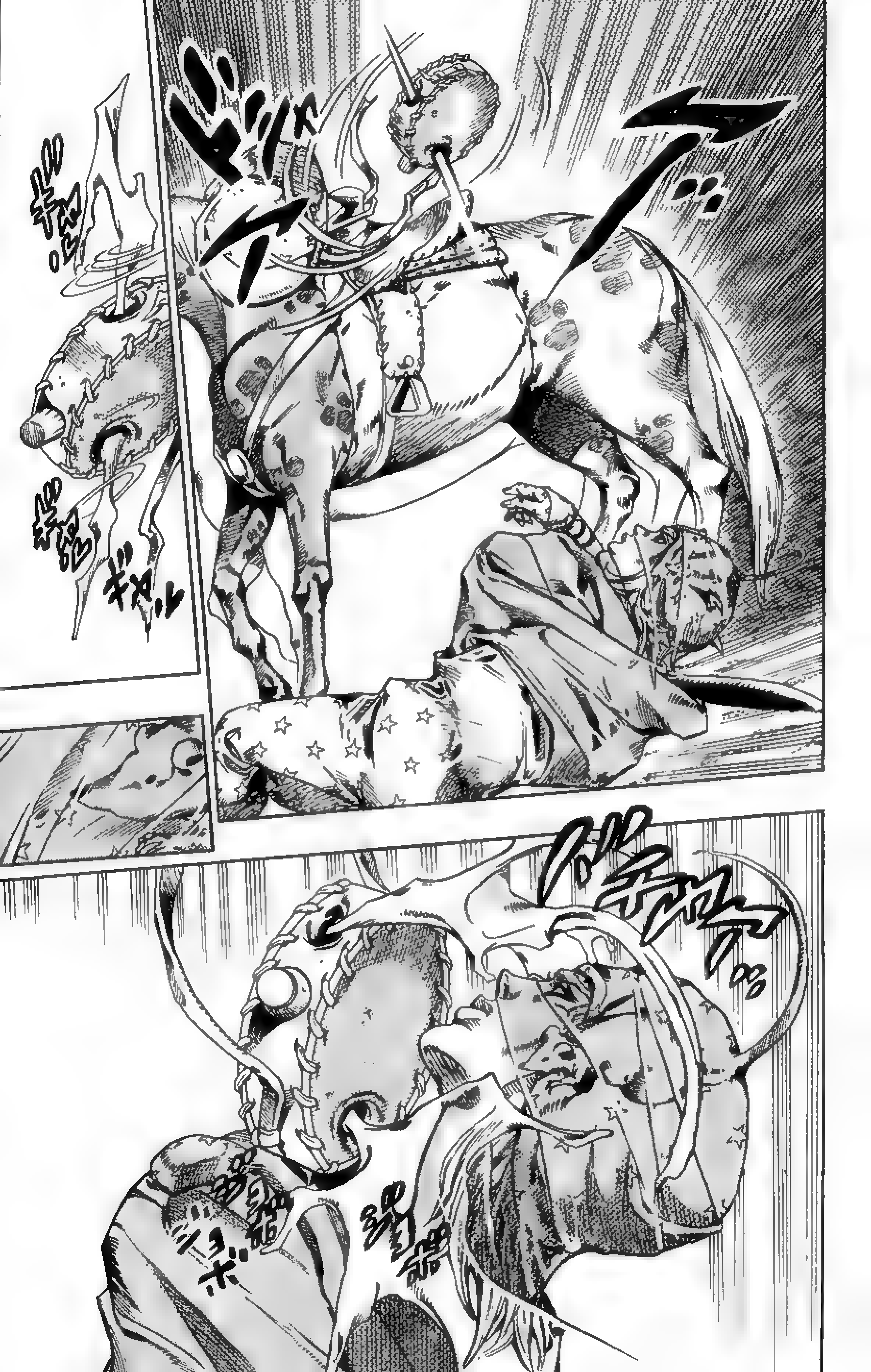
THESE 'BOOTS'... THEY WERE NICHOLAS' 'BOOTS'...!
'THE WRONG SON'...
'OH, GOD...YOU TOOK THE WRONG SON...'
THESE BOOTS!
HOO OOO!
AHH HHH!

AGHH!
W... 'WATER' ...
I NEED TO...
P...
PURIFY IT WITH WATER!
THE 'CANTEEN' ...
I NEED TO GET TO WHERE IT IS...!

ドシュ
THIS 'ENEMY'! I'M DEFI-NITELY GONNA KILL HIM!
GOD DAMN IT!

!!!!
DODGE

DAMN IT... THIS 'WHITE MOUSE'...
BUT... I DIDN'T AIM FOR YOU WHEN I SHOT MY NAIL BULLET...
I'LL DEFINITELY GET RID OF YOU, LATER...
BUT THERE WAS SOMETHING I NEEDED TO SHOOT, FIRST.
AND THAT'S WHAT I DID.



HAHH,
HAHH,
HAHH
HAHH,
HAHH,
HAHH

HAHH, HAHH, HAHH
I AIMED FOR THE 'CANTEEN' ...
BUT THAT'S NOT THE ONLY THING I AIMED FOR.
THERE'S AN 'OLD WELL' ON THIS PROPERTY.

THE 'WELL' MIGHT HAVE DRIED UP, BUT...
IT'S THERE.
SO,
THAT MEANS THAT THERE HAS TO BE A WATER SOURCE JUST UNDER THE GROUND, SOMEWHERE.
AND MY NAIL BULLETS CAN EASILY REACH 10 METERS DOWN!
ABOUT 10 METERS DOWN OR SO.
THERE HAS TO BE RUNNING WATER UNDER THE GROUND...

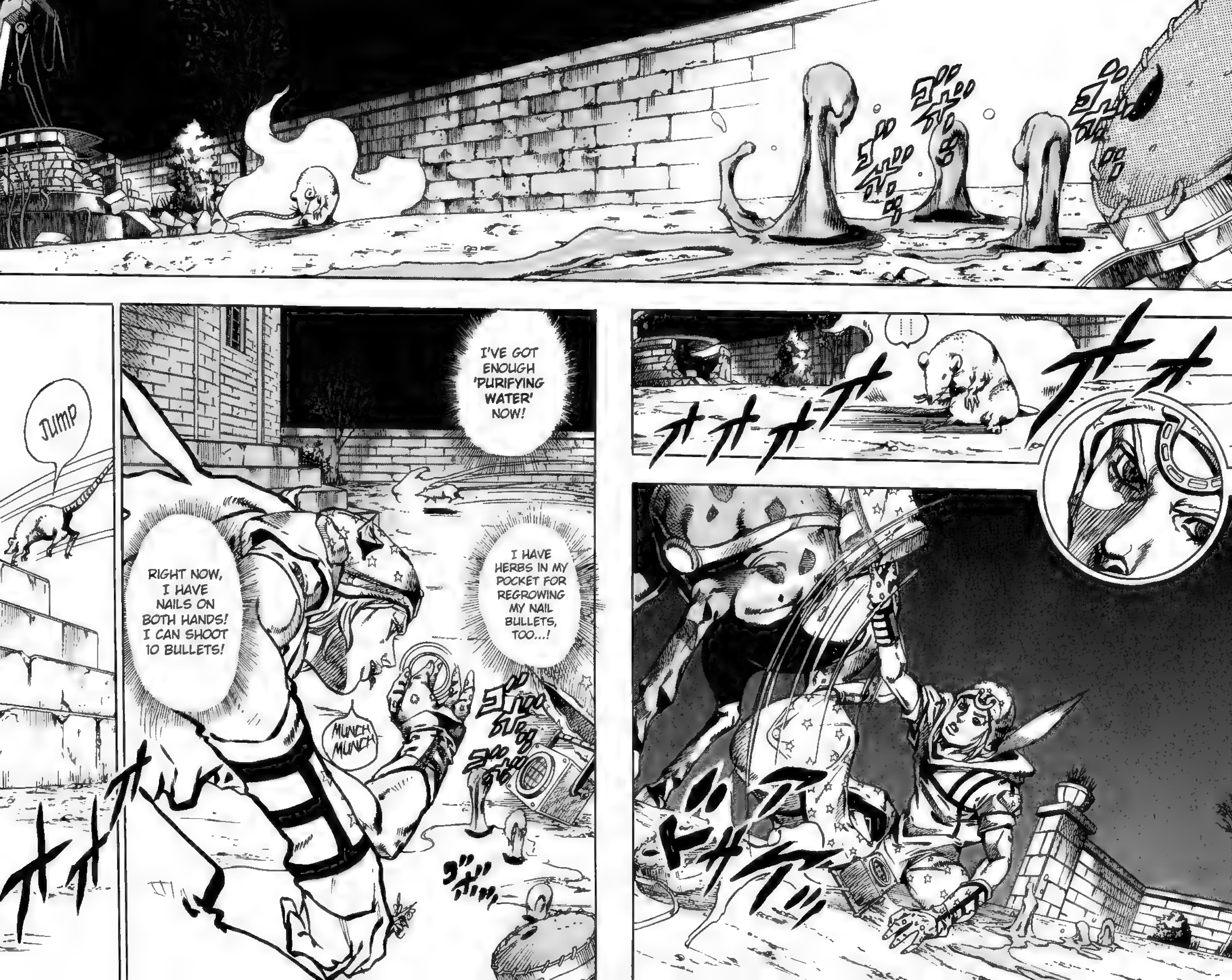
GLUB
GLUB
HAHH, HAHH
HAHH, HAHH
I HAVE PLENTY OF 'WATER' FOR PURIFI-CA-TION!
I'M GOING TO GO TO GYRO! I'M DEFINITELY GOING TO GET THE 'CORPSE PARTS' FROM THIS ENEMY!
......
NOW I'M CERTAIN... THE ONE WHO HAS 'BOTH LEGS' IS...
JOHNNY.

JoJo Project
SBR Volume 15
Chapter 58

Translation: Freshy
Editing: Frequency

# #58

# CIVIL WAR PART ③


!!
I'VE GOT ENOUGH 'PURIFYING WATER' NOW!
I HAVE HERBS IN MY POCKET FOR REGROWING MY NAIL BULLETS, TOO...!
RIGHT NOW, I HAVE NAILS ON BOTH HANDS! I CAN SHOOT 10 BULLETS!
MUNCH MUNCH
JUMP

UGH...
IF YOUR HEART IS WAVERING...
JOHNNY JOESTAR.
DO NOT SHOOT.
!!

!?
LISTEN WELL... IF YOUR HEART IS WAVERING...
THEN DO NOT SHOOT.
BECAUSE THEN, THE DOOR TO A 'NEW PATH' WILL BE OPEN TO YOU...

WHAT?!
WHAT WAS THAT, JUST NOW?!

!!
B...
BEHIND ME! JUST NOW...
WHO WAS THAT?!
A... ANOTHER ILLUSION?
NO, IT CAN'T BE!
SOMEONE WAS DEFINITELY STANDING BEHIND ME JUST NOW!
IT WASN'T LIKE AN ILLUSION... I COULD HEAR HIS BREATHING AND FEEL HIS BODY HEAT! THERE WAS DEFINITELY A MAN THERE, AND...!

AND WHAT'S GOING ON WITH MY LEGS...?! THEY'RE NOT SUPPOSED TO MOVE LIKE THIS!
THEY'RE TWITCHING...
NOTHING LIKE THIS HAS EVER HAPPENED BEFORE...
AH!
MY LEGS ARE MOVING! THAT MAN, WHERE DID HE COME FROM?! IT CAN'T BE...!

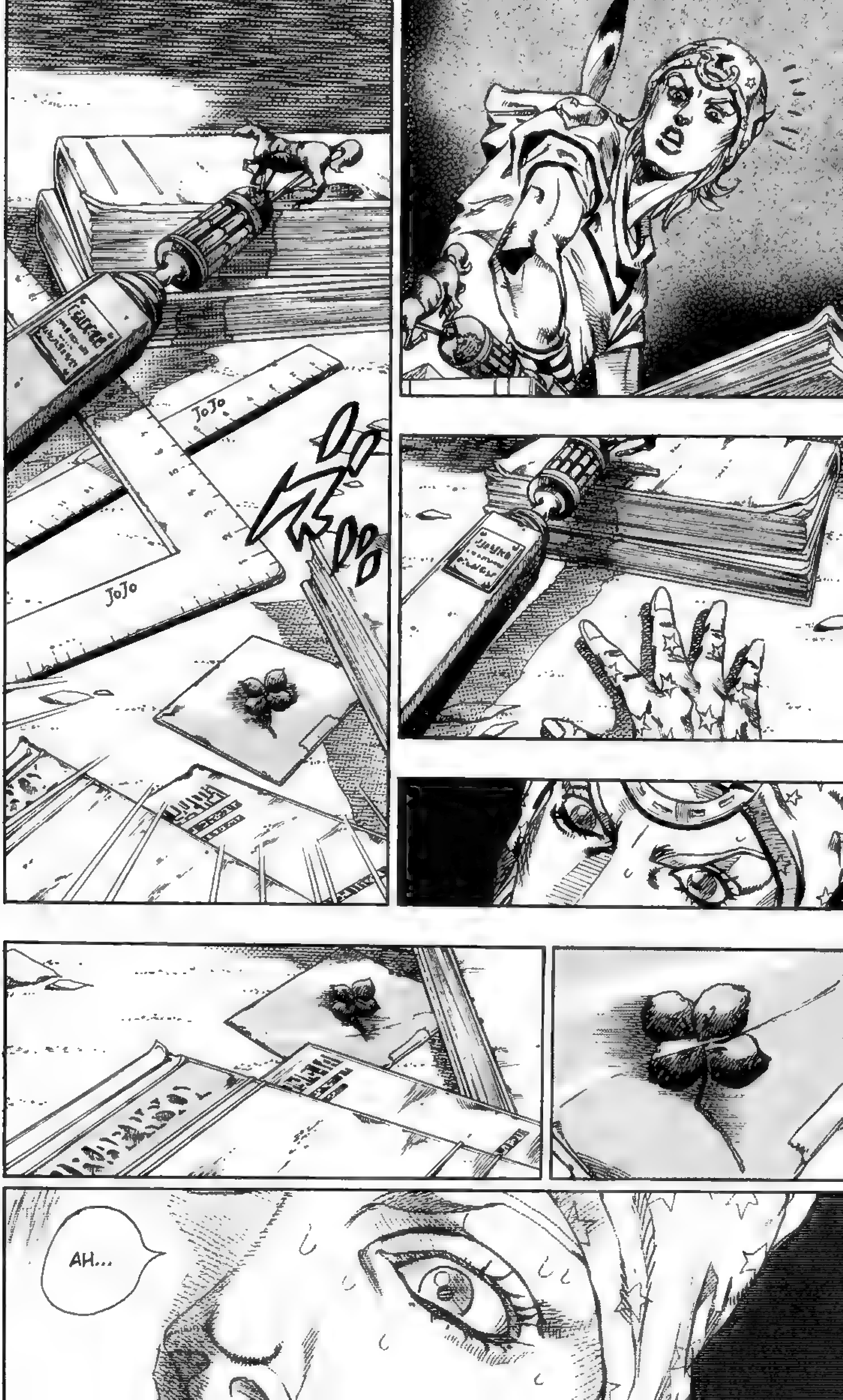
ドバッ

HAHH,
HAHH, HAHH
STEP
PEOPLE MUST SACRIFICE SOMETHING IN ORDER TO ADVANCE.
IN ORDER TO OBTAIN THE 'CORPSE'... YOU SHOULD BE PREPARED.
IF I LET MY GUARD DOWN, HE'LL DEFEAT ME.
THAT I NEED TO 'HUNT' JOHNNY JOESTAR THOROUGHLY NOW.
THE FIGHT IS JUST BEGINNING. MY STAND, 'CIVIL WAR'S' ATTACK... IT'LL BE 'COMPLETED' SOON.
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH... B, BASTARD...!
THE ONE THAT HAS 'THE LEGS' IN HIS BODY RIGHT NOW...
IS JOHNNY JOESTAR, I SEE...
AND THAT WOULD MEAN...
GYRO,
I'M COMING OVER THERE, RIGHT NOW!

GYRO, WHERE ARE YOU?!
JOHNNY.
UGH!

JOHNNY...
THE 'USER' IS NEARBY.
GYRO!
THE 'USER' IS SOMEWHERE AROUND HERE!
AIM FOR THE 'USER'!
GYRO, IS HE OVER THERE?!
OVER THERE?!

I HAVE TO GET RID OF THAT WHITE MOUSE, RIGHT NOW!
I HAVE TO SHOOT IT... IF I DON'T 'ERASE' ITS EXISTANCE RIGHT NOW, I DON'T THINK I'LL EVER BE ABLE TO FIND THE 'STAND USER'.
I HAVE TO BEAT THE 'USER'...! OF COURSE ...
... BUT NOT JUST THE 'USER'...


JoJo
JoJo
AH...

THESE ARE ALL 'MY BOOKS'.
TH...
THIS 'BOOK'...
THESE ARE... 'BOOKS' THAT I THREW AWAY ON THE WAY TO SCHOOL, BECAUSE I DIDN'T WANT TO READ THEM ANYMORE!
HAPPY
AND THIS 'SET SQUARE'... BECAUSE THE FRIEND I LENT IT TO CAUGHT A BAD CASE OF THE EPIDEMIC...
I THREW IT OVER A CLIFF, USING STICKS TO HOLD IT... I REMEMBER.
AND THAT'S MY 'RULER'.
AND THAT FOUR-LEAF CLOVER... I'D FORGOTTEN ALL ABOUT IT... A GIRL GAVE IT TO ME ON MY BIRTHDAY.
JoJo
JoJo
AFTER WE WEREN'T IN THE SAME CLASS ANYMORE... I DON'T EVEN REMEMBER WHAT HAPPENED TO HER AFTER THAT...
THIS TROPHY... SHIT! I THOUGHT I DESTROYED THIS THING...
AND... THIS TROPHY.

IT'S MY 2ND PLACE TROPHY FROM WHEN I COULDN'T BEAT DIO!
W...WHY?! ALL OF THESE THINGS, ALL OF THE TRASH THAT'S COLLECTED HERE...!
THEY'RE ALL THINGS I'VE THROWN AWAY IN THE PAST!
AH!
UGH!

I...
I DID IT!
A CLEAN HIT! IT'S DISAPP-EARING!
AH!

AGH!
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...TH, THAT'S...! F, FA...
GOD...
TOOK THE WRONG SON...
WHY NICHOLAS...? HE SHOULD NEVER HAVE FALLEN OFF THAT HORSE...

AH...F, FATHER...!
AHHH!
IF GOD HAD TO TAKE ONE OF MY SONS, IT SHOULD HAVE BEEN YOU!
NICHOLAS DIED BECAUSE OF YOU.
IT CAN'T BE MY FATHER, MY FATHER IS ALIVE AND HE'S IN KENTUCKY...
THIS IS JUST LIKE THAT 'WHITE MOUSE', IT'S JUST AN ILLUSION.
S... STOP IT! THIS IS JUST AN ILLUSION...

SH... SHIT! I...I'LL SHOOT IT!
THIS IS A STAND ATTACK! IF THIS ILLUSION TOUCHES ME, IT'S ALL OVER! I CAN 'SHOOT' IT! I'LL DESTROY THIS THING WITH MY 'NAIL BULLETS'!
IF YOUR HEART IS WAVERING...
DO NOT SHOOT.
YOU WILL GROW... ONCE MORE SHALL THE GATES LEADING TO 'A NEW PATH' OPEN FOR YOU.

IT CAN'T BE! IT CAN'T BE, HE'S...!
A...AGAIN!
WHO WAS THAT?!
THE 'SACRED' CORPSE... N, NO, IT CAN'T BE! AND WHAT DOES HE MEAN BY 'DON'T SHOOT'? IF I DON'T, I'M DONE FOR... THIS IS AN 'ENEMY'! IT'S A STAND!
'JESUS CHRIST' ...?!

ドーン
AHHHHHHH!

AHHHHHH! FATHER...
HAHH, HAHH...
UGH... HAHH...
D... DON'T MOVE!
I DON'T WANT TO SHOOT! PLEASE, DON'T COME ANY CLOSER...
JOHNNY...
HAHH...
THE 'BREATHING'... THIS FEELING...!

IT'S DEFINITELY THE SAME AS MY FATHER'S ...!
HAHH...
AGH....
HAHH...
I DIDN'T THROW YOU AWAY! YOU THREW 'ME' AWAY! 'YOU DIDN'T EVEN COME TO MY RACES!' 'YOU DIDN'T EVEN COME TO SEE ME IN THE HOSPITAL WHEN I GOT SHOT!'
DON'T MOVE! DON'T COME ANY CLOSER!
STOP! DON'T COME NEAR ME!!

JOHNNY, YOU DID WELL!
I KNOW WHERE THE 'USER' IS NOW!
I WAS USING THE ECHOES THAT THE ROTAION OF MY STEEL BALLS MADE TO FIND HIM! HE'S TO YOUR LEFT!
HE'S TRAVELING THROUGH THE SHADOWS OF THE RUBBLE TO FINISH YOU OFF! I CAN FEEL HIS 'LOCATION'!
RIGHT THERE! HE JUST STOPPED!

......
IT HIT!
AGH!

GUH...
YOU... DID IT.
GOOD JOB, JOHNNY!
......
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH....

YES...
GOOD, JOHNNY... UGH...
THIS IS GOOD...
MY FINAL ATTACK... IS...
GUH!
FINALLY 'COMPLETE' ...
UGH... PEOPLE MUST...
'SACRIFICE' SOMETHING IN ORDER TO MOVE FORWARD.
!!?

YOU... JOHNNY.
......
YOU'VE SACRIFICED 'ME'... IN ORDER TO ADVANCE.
SINCE YOU'VE 'SHOT' ME...
THAT IS WHAT YOU'VE DONE.
YOU'VE FINALLY 'KILLED ME'.
YOU 'SACRIFICED' ME... DO YOU UNDERSTAND?
THIS IS WHAT I WANTED YOU TO DO IN THE END, ALL ALONG.
AND THAT'S WHY YOU, JOHNNY JOESTAR, WILL 'BEAR THE BURDEN' OF EVERYTHING I'VE DISCARDED!
YOU'LL RECEIVE ALL OF THE SINS THAT I'VE DISCARDED IN MY PAST.

NOW, MY PAST IS 'PURIFIED'.
WHAT WAS HE TALKING ABOUT...?
JUST NOW... WHAT WAS HE SAYING?
I TOLD YOU... I'M 'PURIFIED' NOW.

UGH?!
AH, AGH!
HUH?!
FINALLY, MY 'STAND'...
'CIVIL WAR'...

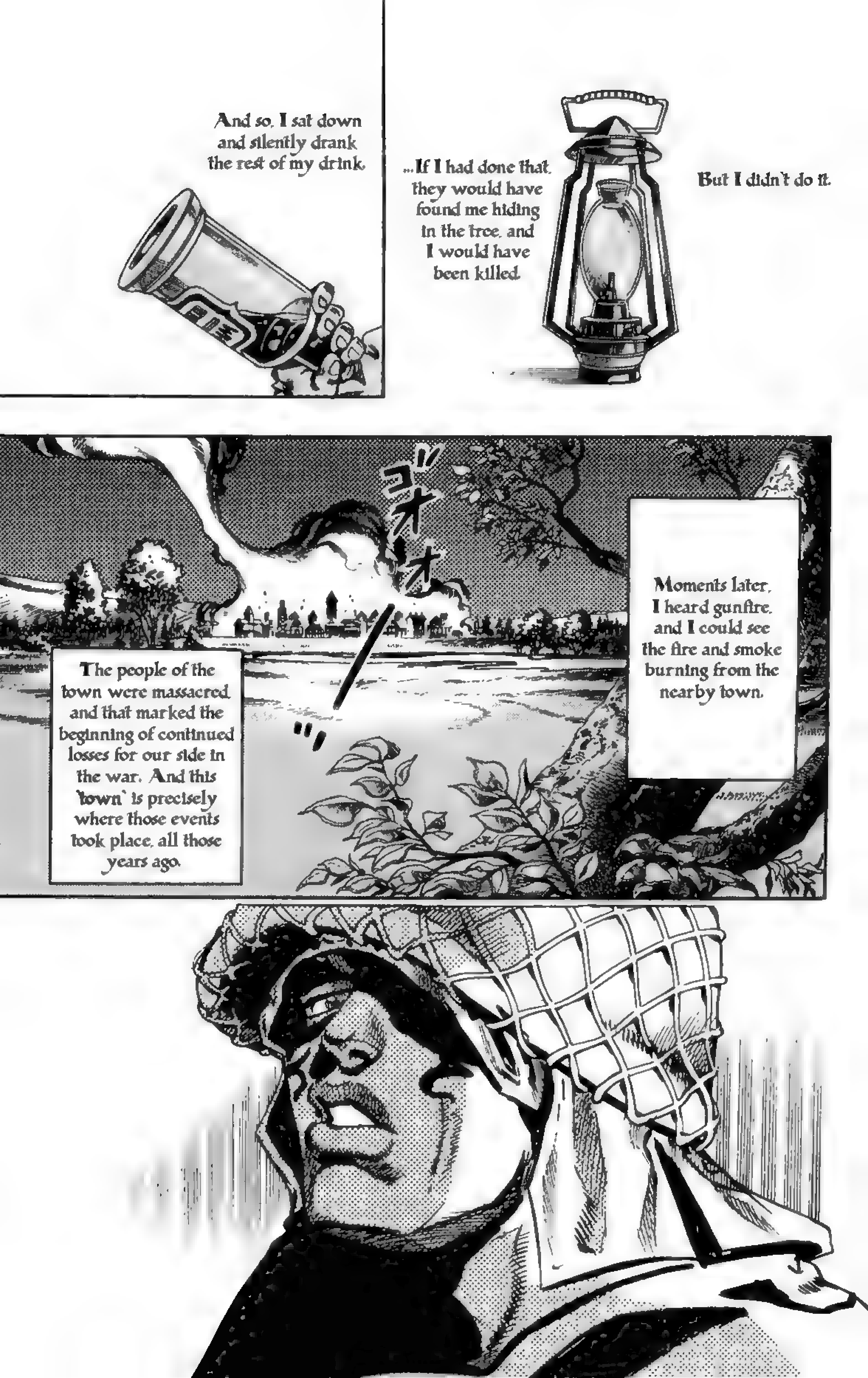
IS
'COMPLETE'.
BASTARD!
……

THESE...
ARE THE SINS YOU NOW HAVE TO BEAR.

WHAT THE HELL IS THIS?!
AGH!
PERHAPS THAT'S WHY I RECEIVED A 'STAND' LIKE THIS.
...I'VE 'SACRIFICED' MANY THINGS IN ORDER TO ADVANCE TO WHERE I AM NOW.
AND IN ORDER TO GET THE 'CORPSE',
EVEN MORE SO THAN NORMAL PEOPLE.
I GAVE YOU ALL OF MY SINS... THE MOMENT YOU KILLED ME, EVERYTHING THAT WAS THROWN AWAY HERE BECAME YOURS, AND THUS I WAS ABLE TO COME BACK.
I'VE ALWAYS WANTED TO 'PURIFY' MY SINS.

At the time. I was broken. in heart and soul.
IT ALL HAPPENED BACK IN 1863...
THAT PLACE...
THAT TIME...
SKEY
Those days when I was still young... I'd always wanted to be a musician like Dvořák... but I was enlisted to the army...
And was ordered to be a lookout in the most remote town I had ever known.

Day after day, my only companions were the terror of impending war and a silent darkness...
I couldn't bear it, so I took to alcohol.
And it was on the one day that I overslept...
That the enemy troops advanced on the town...
When I woke up, the 'enemy' was already passing the tree where I was hidden.
'Light the lamp in order to warn the soldiers nearby of an incoming enemy troop'.
That was all I had to do.


But I didn't do it.
...If I had done that, they would have found me hiding in the tree, and I would have been killed.
And so, I sat down and silently drank the rest of my drink.
Moments later, I heard gunfire, and I could see the fire and smoke burning from the nearby town.
ゴオオ
The people of the town were massacred and that marked the beginning of continued losses for our side in the war. And this 'town' is precisely where those events took place, all those years ago.

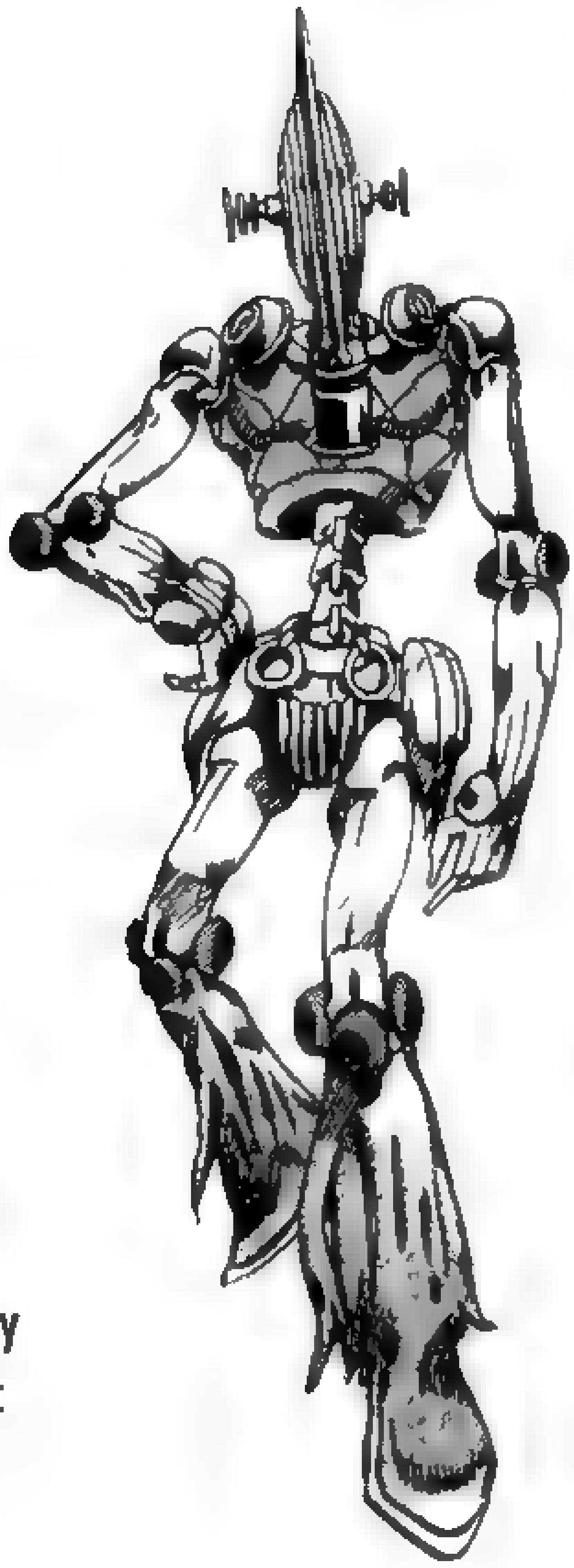
THESE PHANTOMS ARE THE PEOPLE I 'SACRIFICED' SO THAT I COULD LIVE!
AND NOW, YOU'LL BEAR THE BURDEN OF THEIR SACRIFICE!

AGH!
I'VE RETURNED 'PURIFIED'!
AND NOW I HAVE THE RIGHT TO CLAIM THOSE 'CORPSE LEGS'!

AGHHHHHHH!
AGHHHH!
AHHH!
AHHHHH!
DO NOT SHOOT.
YOU WILL NEVER FIND THE 'NEW PATH' THAT WAY.
IF YOUR HEART IS WAVERING, JOHNNY JOESTAR...
I UNDERSTAND NOW.
I'M NOT LOST ANYMORE ...
I'VE REALIZED!
WHERE I SHOULD SHOOT MY NAIL BULLETS ...!

I HAVE TO SHOOT MYSELF!
'THE GOLDEN ROTATION'.
IT'LL TAKE ME TOWARD 'A NEW PATH'!

**Axl Ro**



**Stand Name: "Civil War"**

'Civil War' creates a dimension where the sins of the past are collected. There is no way to rid oneself of these past sins, and in order to purify oneself they must have someone else bear that burden.

Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 15, Chapter 4
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

#59
GETTYSBURG DREAM

#59
GETTYSBURG DREAM

ギン
メキャ メキャ

...JOHNNY!
FINALLY ...
'BOTH LEGS'!
NOW I HAVE...

I'VE GOT THEM!
NAME: AXL RO
STAND NAME
'CIVIL WAR'
HAS THE ABILITY TO SUMMON THINGS THAT HIS OPPONENT HAS SACRIFICED IN THE PAST ALSO HAS THE ABILITY TO MOUNT HIS OWN SINS UPON SOMEONE ELSE IN ORDER TO PURIFY HIMSELF
SCRAPE
SCRAPE
SCRAPE
......

SCRAPE
SCRAPE
WHERE'S THE UPPER HALF OF THE BODY?
JOHNNY SHOULD STILL HAVE PART OF THE 'SPINE' IN BACK...
'RETRIEVE' ALL OF THE CORPSE PARTS!
WHERE DID JOHNNY'S SEVERED UPPER BODY GO?
......

CHU...
CHUMIMI~N

SUH!
'JOHNNY' ?!
GAH!

WHAT ...?!
WHAT IS THIS ...?
!?

JOHNNY'S BODY WASN'T... TORN INTO PIECES...
OH YEAH, HE... (I THINK)...
A FEW SECONDS AGO, JOHNNY (EVEN THOUGH I DIDN'T KNOW WHY)...
'SHOT HIMSELF' !!

AGH!

FROM THAT 'HOLE'...
HIS 'LEFT ARM' IS MOVING WITH THAT 'HOLE'! THE ARM IS EXTENDING FROM THAT HOLE!
KUH...
THE 'GOLDEN'...
THE 'GOLDEN ROTATION'!
THAT ROTATION IS A PATH LEADING TO INFINITY...
IF JOHNNY SHOT HIMSELF WITH THAT ROTATION, USING HIS 'NAIL BULLETS'...
THEN THE BULLET HOLE...
THAT 'POINT' WHERE THE ROTATION OF THE BULLET SPIRALS INTO...
THAT INFINITE 'LOCATION' THAT THE SPIRAL SPINS INTO, THAT SMALLEST POINT POSSIBLE...
IS WHERE JOHNNY SUCKED HIS BODY INTO!

AND IF JOHNNY WAS ABLE TO ATTAIN A PERFECT ROTATION, THEN THEORETICALLY, HE CAN MOVE WITHIN THAT INFINITE SPACE FREELY!
FOR THE FEW SECONDS THAT JOHNNY'S 'STAND ABILITY' IS ACTIVATED!
THIS IS A NEW PATH THAT EVEN THE ZEPPELI FAMILY'S NEVER TAKEN!
MY GHOSTS! DON'T LET JOHNNY GO!
GRAB ONTO HIM AND TEAR HIS BODY APART!

ベギャン!!
ガシャ

GOOD, I CAN SEE BETTER THIS WAY.
NICE! THIS MEAN THAT USING 'THE FINAL POINT OF INFINITY' IS AN ABILITY THAT...
JOHNNY CAN HARNESS NOW.

IF YOU'RE WAVERING, JOHNNY ..
THEN DO NOT SHOOT.
......

UGH...
HEY! JOHNNY ...
I WOULD CONGRATU-LATE YOU FOR FINDING A NEW USE FOR YOUR STAND ABILITY, BUT...
LISTEN.

THINK ABOUT IT.
WHY ARE YOU PLACED IN THIS SITUA-TION RIGHT NOW?
WHY ARE THESE GHOSTS HERE IN THE FIRST PLACE?
THERE'S NO FUTURE FOR YOU ANYMORE, JOHNNY...
IT DOESN'T MATTER IF YOU GAIN ANOTHER ABILITY, OR IF YOU SOMEHOW ATTAIN MORE 'POWER'...
MY EXIS-TENCE HERE IS PROTECTED BECAUSE OF YOUR 'SINS'.

JOESTAR! YOU'RE ALREADY CARRYING THE 'SINS OF MY PAST'.
BECAUSE OF MY STAND, 'CIVIL WAR'.
HAVE YOU FORGOTTEN? MY 'SIN', THE PEOPLE OF THIS TOWN THAT I'VE SACRIFICED... THE BURDEN THAT YOU NOW BEAR.
THE GHOSTS THAT USED TO BE MINE ARE NOW YOURS, JOHNNY JOESTAR.
I'LL TELL YOU ONE MORE TIME... I WAS 'REVIVED' BECAUSE YOU SACRIFICED ME!
THAT'S MY STAND, 'CIVIL WAR'... I LIVE WITHIN YOUR 'SINS'!
AND THAT'S WHY YOU'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO KILL ME!
NO MATTER WHAT YOU DO!

IT LOOKS LIKE YOUR STAND HAS AWAKENED AND FOUND A NEW 'ABILITY', BUT...
THIS BATTLE IS ALREADY OVER!
MY GHOSTS HAVE ALREADY TAKEN THE PART OF THE 'SPINE' THAT YOU WERE CARRYING WHEN THEY GRABBED YOU!
MY ONLY GOAL IS TO COLLECT THE CORPSE PARTS AND TO BE COM-PLETELY 'PURIFIED' !
ONLY ONE MORE PART! IF I FIND THE SKULL, ALL 9 PIECES WILL BE IN PLACE!

SH... SHIT ...!
HE'S GOING TO GET AWAY ..!
NO...! HE'S GOING TO LEAVE US HERE...!

AGH...! HE GOT AWAY...

A... AMAZING ...
THIS IS HIS BODY...
AND IT'S...
BECOMING ONE WITH MY OWN BODY...!
AND NOW I'LL BE COM- PLETELY 'PURIFIED'!
YES...! I LEFT MY 'SINS' BEHIND WITH ALL THE OTHER GARBAGE, IN THAT DUMP...

WHAT?!
JOHNNY JOESTAR! (HIS HAND...!)

A LAST RESORT, HUH?!
SHIT!
AH!
....HE'S NOT HERE.
UGH!
........

IT'S OVER, JOHNNY JOESTAR... IT'S ALL OVER FOR YOU.
EVEN IF YOU GRAB ONTO THE 'CORPSE' THROUGH THAT 'HOLE',
YOU'LL JUST BE TORN APART BY THOSE GHOSTS ANYWAY.
WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO DO...?
SN AP
JOHNNY...

CRA CK
WHAT?! WHAT IS THAT? HE'S BREAKING THE CORPSE'S BONES!
DON'T PULL IT! IT'S GOING TO BREAK THE 'CORPSE'... WHAT THE HELL IS HE PLANNING?!
SNAP
CRACK
SN AP
TUG
CRA CK
!! ......
JOHNNY ...?!

LET GO!
BAST-ARD! L...
WHIRR
CRACK

WHAT ?
THIS 'ROTATING HOLE' ...
WHAT WOULD HAPPEN IF SOMETHING BESIDES JOHNNY'S BODY WENT IN...?
IF THE 'CORPSE' WERE TO BE SUCKED INTO THIS HOLE...
IT CAN'T BE... HE CAN'T BE THINKING THAT, SINCE HE WON'T BE ABLE TO HAVE THE CORPSE FOR HIMSELF...
THAT HE'LL JUST 'DESTROY IT'?!
YOU FUCKING BASTARD, LET GO OF IT!

AHHH!
HEY, JOHNNY!
JOHNNY, WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU DOING?!
I DAMAGED THE CORPSE...
WHIRR
CRACK
SNAP
SNAP
THAT 'EXPRES-SION'... ON JOHNNY'S FACE...
HEY... THAT 'LOOK'...!

WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!
BASTARD!
DO YOU UNDERSTAND WHAT YOU'RE DOING!? DO YOU EVEN KNOW WHOSE 'CORPSE' THIS IS?! STOP! YOU CAN'T WIN!
JOHNNY! THAT 'LOOK'...
THAT'S THAT 'DARK INTENTION' THAT THE GUNMAN, 'RINGO', SAW IN HIM...
IT'S THAT DARK SIDE OF JOHNNY THAT CAN KILL WITHOUT A MOMENT'S HESITATION IF HE'S DRIVEN TO IT.
THOSE ARE A KILLER'S EYES.
JOHNNY'S PREPARED TO THROW EVERYTHING AWAY...
EVEN HIS 'HUMANITY'...

JOHNNY, STOP!
IF THE POPE IS LOOKING FOR THAT 'CORPSE', IT MUST BE SOMETHING IMPORTANT!
EVEN IF WE LOSE NOW,
IT'S WRONG TO DESTROY IT! JUST GIVE IT OVER TO HIM!
GYRO ...
IF MY HEART IS WAVERING ...
... 'DON'T SHOOT' !
BUT I'M NOT 'WAVERING' ANYMORE.

YOU HAVE NO RIGHT TO EVEN TOUCH THIS 'CORPSE'! I'LL TEACH YOU...
JUST HOW LOW YOU ARE!
YOU FUCKING PIECE OF IGNORANT TRASH!
JUST HOW MUCH OF A PIECE OF TRASH YOU REALLY ARE!!

AGHH
HHHH
!!
GUH!

AGH HH!
I...I DID IT! I 'WON'!
MY KNIFE REACHED THE OTHER SIDE OF THE HOLE!
ROT IN HELL! VICTORY IS MINE!

JOHNNY!
JO...
YOU'RE WRONG...
NO...
THE VICTORY IS MINE.

ARE YOU REGRETTING WHAT YOU'VE DONE?
I MADE YOU KILL ME ON PURPOSE.
YOU KILLED ME RIGHT THEN, WITH THAT KNIFE.
WHOOPS... THAT'S A 'SIN', ISN'T IT.
YOUR STAND ABILITY DEALS WITH THOSE THAT ARE 'SACRIFICED', DOESN'T IT? THAT WOULD MEAN THAT THE 'SINS' THAT YOU MADE ME BEAR GO STRAIGHT BACK TO YOU!

BECAUSE YOU 'PURIFIED' ME.
THAT'S WHY I WAS REVIVED.
OOO OHH...
OOOH ...
OOOHH ...
YOUR 'GHOSTS' ARE GONE, TOO.
THEY'VE GONE BACK TO YOU...
OOOH ...

YOUR STAND'S RANGE ONLY EXTENDS 'WITHIN' THIS BUILDING...
LEAVE THE 'CORPSE' THERE, AND LEAVE!
OR ELSE,
IT'LL BE A PIECE OF CAKE FOR ME TO 'LEAVE' THIS BUILDING AND FINISH YOU OFF.
VICTORY ...
IS OURS.
HAHH, HAHH
HAHH
HAHH, HAHH

ONE MORE TIME...
I'LL MAKE YOU KILL ME...
KILL ME...
KILL ME AND ROT IN HERE WITH THE REST OF THE TRASH!

GUH!
......
AH ...
GUH ...
AGH!
!?
NO...
HOW...
AHHH ...!
Y, YOU'RE ...!
WHY... WHY WOULD YOU...

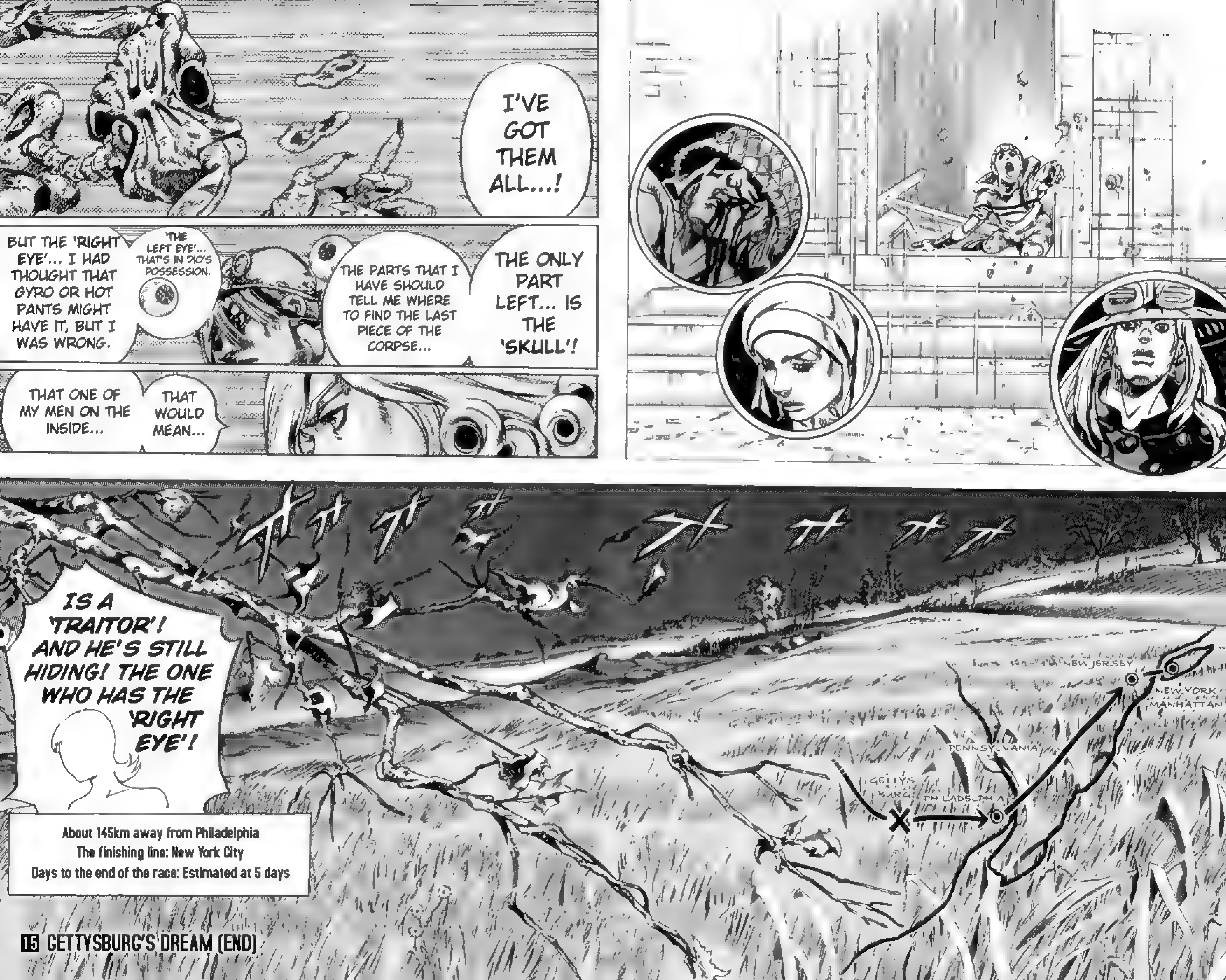
YOU DID WELL ...
AXL.
YOU WON'T DIE STRAIGHT AWAY...
I PURPOSELY MISSED YOUR VITALS.
GLANCE
W, WHO'S THERE ?!

ズルッ
ズルッ
ズルッ
ドドドド

WHAT...? WHY... WHY ARE YOU HERE?!
YOU'RE ...!
I SAVED YOU FROM AXL, WHO WAS ATTACKING YOU WITH THAT AXE.
IT WAS A LEGITIMATE CAUSE. I STOPPED AXL FROM ATTACKING YOU.
BESIDES, AXL IS STILL ALIVE... HE STILL HAS WORTH, IF ONLY FOR A FEW MORE MINUTES.
SO 'CIVIL WAR' CAN'T AFFECT ME. HIS 'SINS' WILL NOT BE MINE TO BEAR.
WHAT?! HOW LONG WERE YOU WATCHING ?!

P...
PRESI-DENT...!
THIS WAS ALL SO I COULD GET ALL OF THE CORPSE PARTS 'AT ONCE'...
SO THAT I WOULD BE ABLE TO ATTAIN "ALL 9 PARTS' FOR OUR COUNTRY...
THAT WAS WHY I HELD THE 'STEEL BALL RUN' RACE IN THE FIRST PLACE.
AXL! DON'T DIE JUST YET. USE YOUR REMAINING STRENGTH TO KEEP JOHNNY AND GYRO HERE WITH YOUR STAND, 'CIVIL WAR'.
I HAVE NO INTENTION OF 'SINNING' BY STAYING HERE ANY FURTHER.
AGHHHHHHH!

ドドドド
AGHHHHH!
AHHHHHHHHH!


I'VE GOT THEM ALL...!
THE ONLY PART LEFT... IS THE 'SKULL'!
THE PARTS THAT I HAVE SHOULD TELL ME WHERE TO FIND THE LAST PIECE OF THE CORPSE...
'THE LEFT EYE'... THAT'S IN DIO'S POSSESSION.
BUT THE 'RIGHT EYE'... I HAD THOUGHT THAT GYRO OR HOT PANTS MIGHT HAVE IT, BUT I WAS WRONG.
THAT WOULD MEAN...
THAT ONE OF MY MEN ON THE INSIDE...
IS A 'TRAITOR'! AND HE'S STILL HIDING! THE ONE WHO HAS THE 'RIGHT EYE'!
NEW JERSEY
NEW YORK MANHATTAN
PENNSYLVANIA
GETTYSBURG
PHILADELPHIA
About 145km away from Philadelphia
The finishing line: New York City
Days to the end of the race: Estimated at 5 days
15 GETTYSBURG'S DREAM (END)

#35
追憶の館④
巻頭カラーで連載再開ッ!!
信念、誇り、そして
勇気ッ——!!

# VOLUME 15 EDITORS' NOTES

Hello, readers! We here at JoJo Project like to try and make reading Steel Ball Run an entirely natural experience for English-speaking audiences, but there are still some things from the original Japanese that we feel could use additional explanation or commentary.

**Hot Pants' dialogue** - While English is a rather gender-neutral language, Japanese speech tends to be highly gendered. Different pronouns, verb endings, and vocabulary are used to convey the speaker's gender, attitude, and politeness level. When she was first introduced during the True Man's World arc, Hot Pants spoke in an aggressively masculine fashion, much like Jotaro from part 3. By the beginning of the Civil War arc, her speech has shifted to a more polite and gender-neutral form, suitable for use by almost anybody; however, in her flashback, she uses an extremely girlish form of speech.

**Axl Ro'** - named for Axl Rose, the lead vocalist of Guns N' Roses.

**Civil War (song)'** - A 1990 anti-war protest song by Guns N' Roses. It is unusual for a song of its nature in that it isn't referring to any specific war, but rather to the practice of war in general.

**Civil War (event)'** - The American Civil War was fought between 1861 and 1865. Eleven slave-owning Southern states declared secession from the United States to form the Confederate States of America, also known as the Confederacy. The rest of the United States, referred to as the Union forces, rejected the legitimacy of the secession, and embarked on war to put down what they saw as a Southern rebellion. What ensued was the bloodiest war in American history, with over 620,000 soldiers dead and massive societal upheaval throughout the entire country. The war may have ended 100 years ago, but it is still a major force even today in American history and culture. There are many, many books and articles on the subject; if you find history fascinating, it's a particularly interesting period to read about, but for a slightly more detailed summary than this volume note, try Wikipedia's page (American Civil War).

**Battle of Gettysburg** - The Battle of Gettysburg was fought between July 1 and July 3, 1863, in Gettysburg, Pennsylvania. It was the single bloodiest battle in the entirety of the American Civil War, with between 46,000 and 51,000 casualties. While the war would continue for two years afterwards, in retrospect the Battle of Gettysburg marked not only the end of General Lee's invasion of the North, but also the turning point which culminated in the Union's victory and the abolishment of slavery in the United States. It is particularly cemented in United States history because of President Abraham Lincoln's famous Gettysburg Address, honoring the fallen from both sides of the battle and exhorting the union of the United States and the freedom of all people. The battlefield of Gettysburg is currently home to a poignant cemetery memorial.

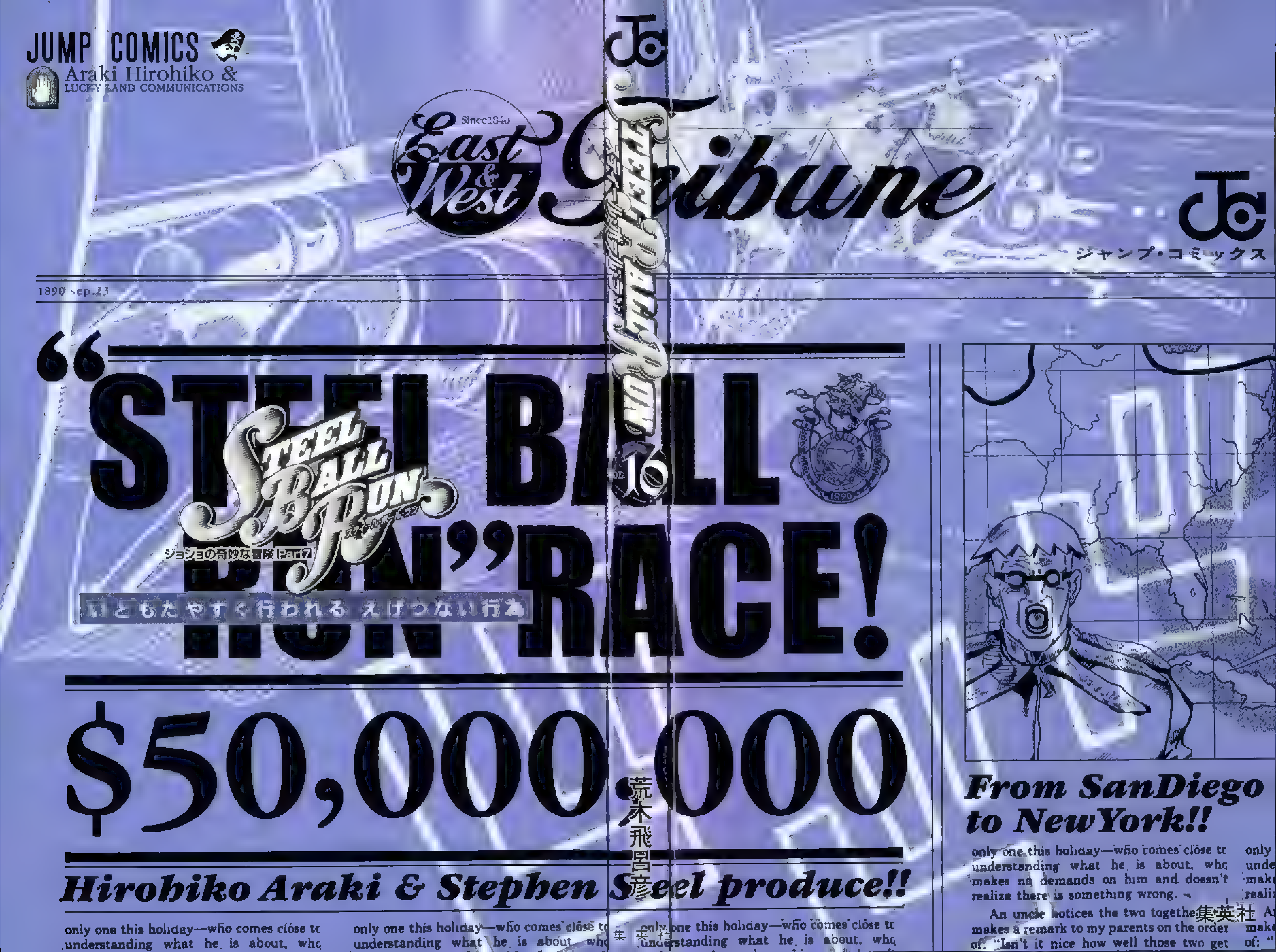
Thank you for following our releases! We hope you'll stick with us and continue to enjoy the story together in the future!

***JoJo Project***
***February 2010***

Jojo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 12, Chapter 1
Translation:
Editing: Frequency &

## 荒木飛呂彦

I love horror movies more than eating a good three meals a day. The cheaper they are, the more B-rated they are, the more I love them. I watch these movies with the utmost respect for them, and their cinematic vision somehow gives me a sense of ease.
However. There are some elements of horror movies that I can never agree with. Number 1: whenever one of the characters try to call someone on their cell phones, they either have no service, or they've run out of batteries. Number 2: Even though the character only has a limited number of bullets, they get trigger-happy during the worst times and then they run out of bullets later. Number 3: When the camera slowly zooms in on the main character's back, but when he or she turns around to look behind him or her, no one is there. What's the point of using that camera technique if no one is there?! I, I can't forgive this. I always want to tell them to go and redo the damn scene.


JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890 sep.23
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
いともたやすく行われるえげつない行為
VOL.16
1890
$50,000,000
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get
荒木飛呂彦
集英社

JUMP COMICS

JoJo's Bizarre Adventure Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP

vol.16

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を明けた！7th.STAGE終盤のゲティスバーグで、ジャイロ達はリタイアしたはずのＨ・Ｐを目撃。彼女に奪われた遺体を取り戻すべく後を追うが、辿り着いた所で、大統領の刺客アクセル・ROが待ち受けていた！過去に犯した罪をおっかぶせて支配する能力により、すでに倒されていたＨ・Ｐ。遺体の一部『左胸部』、『脊椎部』、『心臓部』、『両耳部』は奪われ、新たな遺体『胴体部』までもが揃っていた！敵スタンドのかつてない能力で、ジャイロ達もまた過去の罪に捕われ、『脊椎の一部』、『両脚部』を奪われたジョニィは絶体絶命の状況に。だが、その時、背後に突如現れた『謎の男』の助言で、ジョニィは新たな能力に目覚める！そして形勢を逆転し、アクセル・ROを追い詰めるも…、突如現れた大統領に全ての遺体を持ち去られてしまった！

全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！

## 『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは

太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！

そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

### ジャイロ・ツェペリ

ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家反逆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。

### ジョニィ・ジョースター

元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。

### ファニー・ヴァレンタイン

第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。「眼球」、「頭」以外の全ての遺体を持つ。

### ホット・パンツ

遺体を集める修道女。遺体をすべて揃えれば、過去の過ちを許されると思っている。

### ディエゴ・ブランドー

通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。

### ルーシー・スティール

スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!? 遺体の一部「右眼」を持つ。

### スティーブン・スティール

40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.16

## CONTENTS

DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP


#60
Both Sides Now - Part ① 7

#61
Both Sides Now - Part ② 61

#62
Dirty Deeds Done Dirt Cheap 123

#63
A Week in 7 Days 185

#60
BOTH SIDES NOW
PART①

バカラッ
バカラッ
パカラ
パカラ

AND HERE WE ARE, IN ONE OF THE COUNTRY'S OLDEST CITIES, OUR FORMER CAPITAL, WHERE FAMOUS MEN SUCH AS BENJAMIN FRANKLIN AND THOMAS JEFFERSON HAVE RESIDED!
THIS BRAND-NEW PARKWAY WAS ALSO THE SITE OF THE 1876 CENTENNIAL EXPOSITION!
AND NOW, APPROACHING US FROM THE SOUTHERN RESIDENTIAL DISTRICT, ARE...
Benjamin Franklin Parkway
Philadelphia, Pennsylvania
December 28th, 1890, 3:51 in the afternoon
'GYRO ZEPPELI', COMING IN AT 6TH! AND IN 7TH PLACE IS 'JOHNNY JOESTAR'!
BUT IT LOOKS LIKE OUR TWO RACERS HAVE THOROUGHLY EXHAUSTED THEMSELVES DURING THIS STAGE...
GYRO ZEPPELI EVEN HAS HIS EYES CAST DOWN TOWARDS THE GROUND.
THEY'VE FINISHED ROUGHLY 45 MINUTES BEHIND 1ST PLACE.
THIS IS ESPECIALLY DISAPPOINTING CONSIDERING THAT THEY WERE THE FAN-FAVORITES IN THIS STAGE'S 'BET'!

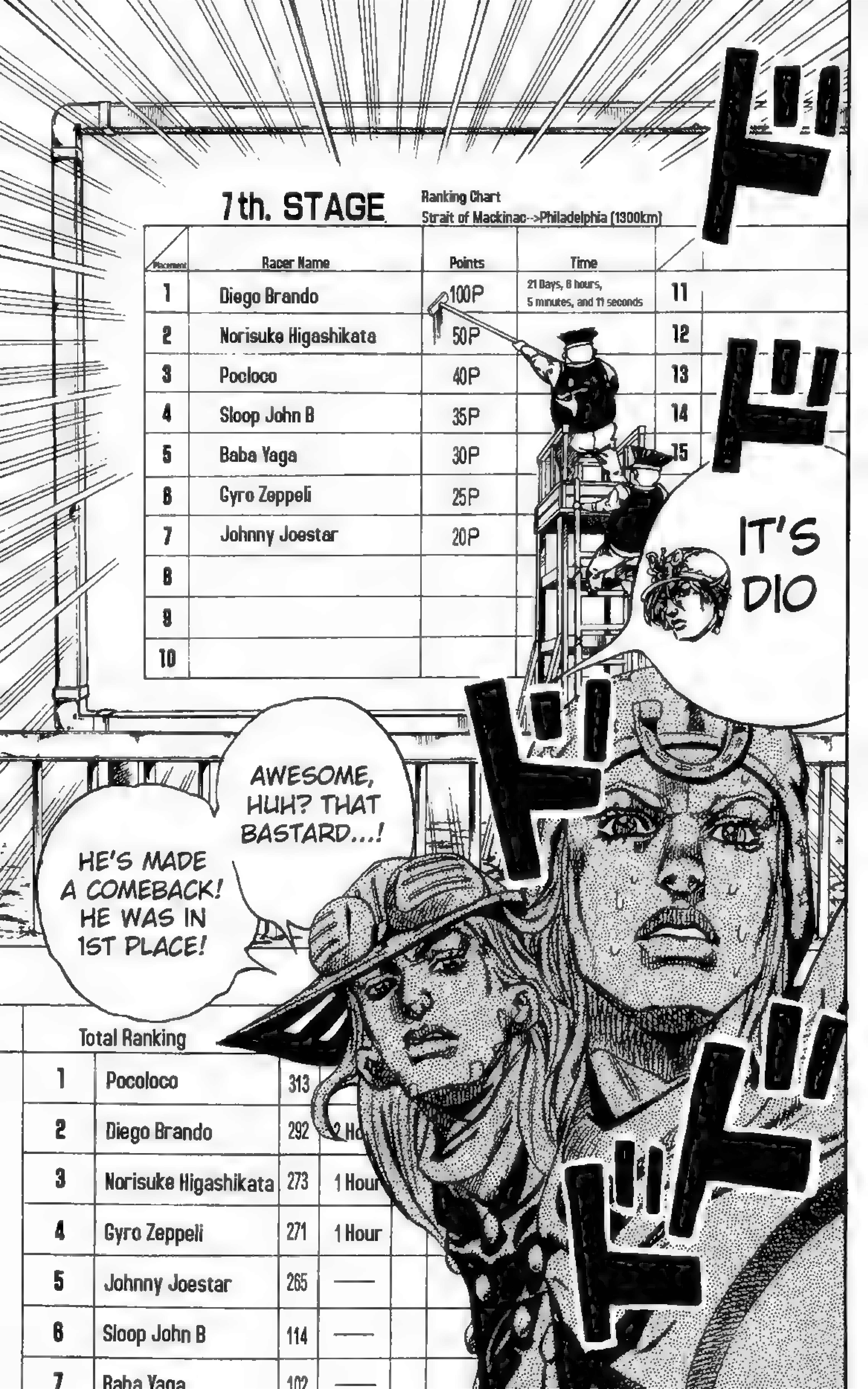
WE'LL NEVER BE ABLE TO FIND THE FINAL PART THAT SHOULD STILL BE HIDDEN SOMEWHERE, THE REMAINING 'HEAD'...
WHAT SHOULD WE DO, GYRO...?
WE HAVE NOTHING TO WORK OFF OF, ANYMORE...
HE TOOK ALL OF THE CORPSE PARTS... THE 'PART OF THE SPINE'... THE 'LOWER HALF'... ALL OF IT.
......
...WE DON'T HAVE MUCH TIME.
WHAT AM I SUPPOSED TO DO NOW...?

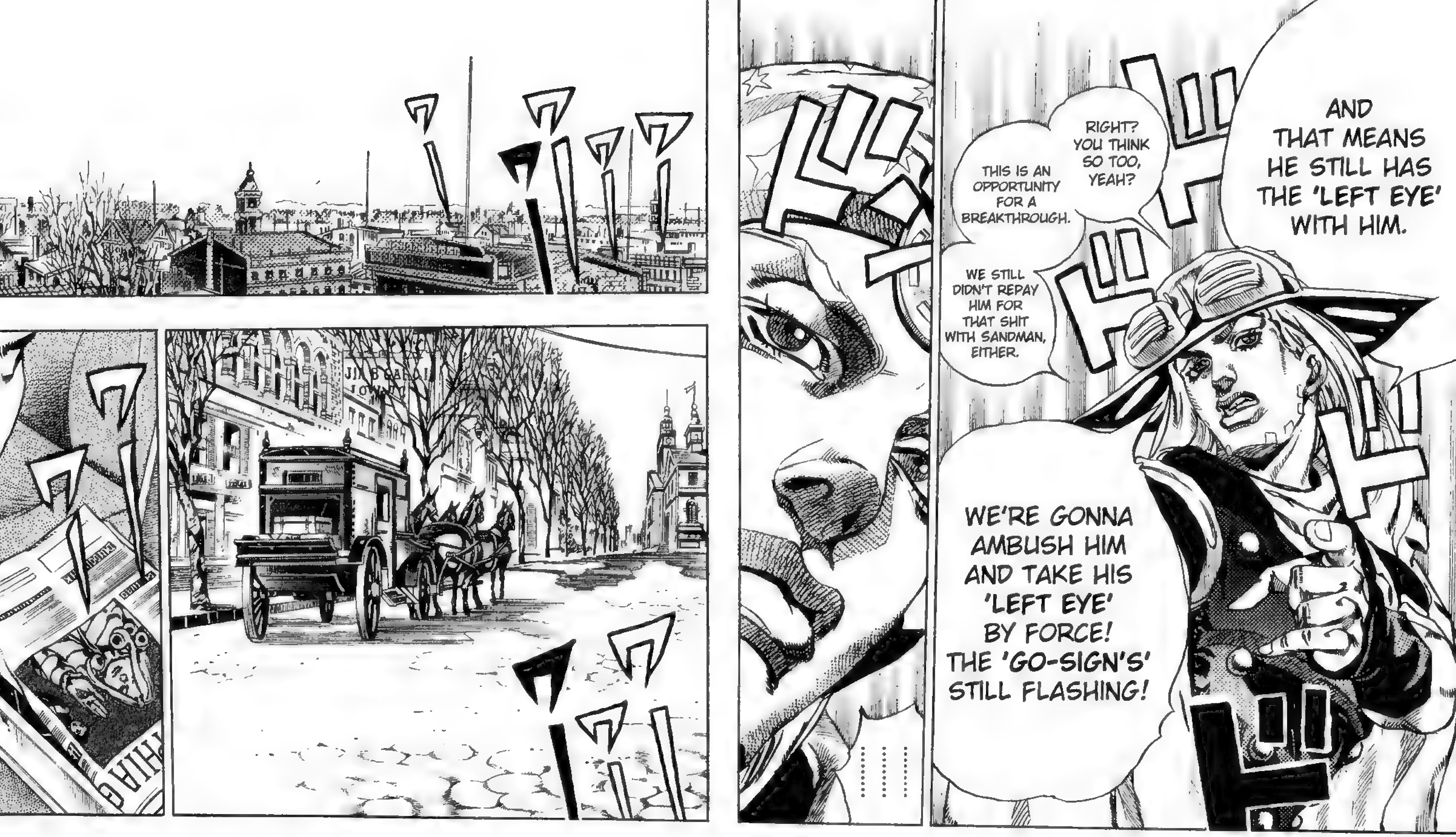
UGH!

AGHHHH!
!!?
!?

UGH!
I'M SURE THE PRESIDENT WON'T HESITATE TO HUNT US DOWN. THE ONLY THING HE HAS LEFT TO DO IS TO DISPOSE OF US...
AND BESIDES, IT SEEMS LIKE THE ONLY REASON WE WERE GATHERED HERE IN THIS RACE ACROSS THE CONTINENT WAS TO SEEK OUT THE 'CORPSE PARTS'.

I THINK JUST BEING ABLE TO FINISH THIS RACE IN ONE PIECE,
IS A DAMN GOOD CONSOLATION PRIZE.
THE PRESIDENT WASN'T ABLE TO FINISH US OFF BACK THERE... HE DIDN'T EVEN MANAGE TO WOUND YOU BACK IN GETTYSBURG.
......
LISTEN, JOHNNY...
LOOK.
IT LOOKS LIKE LUCK IS ON OUR SIDE... TAKE A LOOK AT THE RANKING CHART.
THAT'S WHAT I CALL BEING GIVEN ANOTHER CHANCE. WE HAVEN'T BEEN FORSAKEN JUST YET.
Placement
Racer Name
1
Diego Bra


7th. STAGE
Ranking Chart
Strait of Mackinac->Philadelphia (1300km)
Placement
Racer Name
Points
Time
1 Diego Brando 100P 21 Days, 6 hours, 5 minutes, and 11 seconds
2 Norisuke Higashikata 50P
3 Pocloco 40P
4 Sloop John B 35P
5 Baba Yaga 30P
6 Gyro Zeppeli 25P
7 Johnny Joestar 20P
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
ドドド
IT'S DIO
ドドド
AWESOME, HUH? THAT BASTARD...!
HE'S MADE A COMEBACK! HE WAS IN 1ST PLACE!
Total Ranking
1 Pocoloco 313
2 Diego Brando 292
3 Norisuke Higashikata 273
4 Gyro Zeppeli 271 1 Hour
5 Johnny Joestar 265
6 Sloop John B 114
7 Baba Yaga 102
ドドド




# 8th. STAGE "BOTH SIDES NOW"

Philadelphia (Pennsylvania)--> New Jersey (New Jersey)
Race Distance: About 140km

Estimated time: 2 days (will continue straight to the 9th Stage, New York City)
Participants: 52

OH...
OHHH...
OH...
OH...
THAT WAS 'LUCY'...
NO MATTER HOW I LOOK AT IT, THAT WAS MY BELOVED LUCY...
BUT IT COULDN'T HAVE BEEN THE REAL LUCY...
I CAN TELL... THERE'S DANGER AFOOT. I BURIED HER AND DECLARED HER DEAD, BUT... THAT WAS A DIFFERENT WOMAN.
THEN... WHO WAS IT THAT REALLY DIED, AND... WHERE IS MY LUCY, NOW?

IS IT MY FAULT?
I CAN'T TELL ANYONE ABOUT THIS.
THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE, UNBE-KNOWNST TO ME,
WAS FILLED WITH PEOPLE CALLED 'STAND USERS'...EVEN THE PRESIDENT IS INVOLVED...
AND IF THERE WAS A 'STAND' THAT HAD THE 'ABILITY' TO MIMIC 'FACES', OR 'FIGURES'...
BUT...
WHY WOULD SOMEONE CHOOSE TO IMPERSONATE MY WIFE, AND NOT 'ME'...? LUCY IS JUST A HOUSEWIFE, SHE HAS NO INVOLVEMENT IN POLITICS OR EVEN THIS RACE...
WHAT IS IT, THEN? WHAT HAS SHE GOTTEN INVOLVED IN? OH...PLEASE, LET HER BE ALRIGHT...
PHILADELPHIA

......
......
WHAT'S WRONG? YOU CAN'T SLEEP BECAUSE YOU'RE WORRIED ABOUT THE RACE?
YOU WERE HAVING A BAD DREAM...
DO YOU LEARN HOW TO 'READ LIPS' IN THE ARMY? LIKE ONE WOULD LEARN HOW TO COOK?
I'M GOING TO TAKE A QUICK STROLL BEFORE I COME HOME.

THE LAST PERSON TO SEE LUCY IN CHICAGO WAS...
IT WAS... "THE FIRST LADY".
AND AFTER THAT, SHE DROWNED...
PHILADELPHIA

ズリ…
ズズ…
!!
ピクッ
!
WHAT…? WHAT IS HAPPENING TO LUCY RIGHT NOW?!
IT CAN'T BE! IT CAN'T BE! THIS…!

'CUSE ME...
CAN I HAVE A MOMENT?
CAN YOU HOLD THIS FOR ME? *SNIFF*
SNIFF
SNIFF
......

IF WE JUST HAD AIRPLANES...
IT WOULD'VE BEEN FINE.
I COULD'VE TAKEN CARE OF MY WOUND FASTER...
WITHOUT HAVING HAD TO STAY IN THAT SHIT-FREEZING COLD FOR 2 DAMN WEEKS!
NOW I GET THESE DAMN MIGRAINES AND I SNOT AND DROOL LIKE FUCKIN' CRAZY ALL THE TIME.
OH.
'CUSE ME... CAN YOU HOLD THAT RULER SIDEWAYS? YEAH, LIKE THAT... I CAN'T GET A GOOD GRASP OF DISTANCE, YA KNOW?

WANT SOMETHIN'?
NOPE, I DON'T REALLY NEED ANYTHIN' RIGHT NOW...
SNIFF
WHO ARE YOU?
DO YOU WANT SOMETHING?
......
WE DON'T NEED YOU ANYMORE.
AROUND HERE...
2 CM TO THE LEFT.

GYRO... THIS IS THE UNFOR-TUNATE REALITY.
...'MRS. STEEL' WAS FOUND DEAD ON THE BANK OF THE CHICAGO RIVER.
I SAW THE CORPSE THAT THEY BURIED WITH MY OWN EYES... PROTECTING HER WAS NO LONGER POSSIBLE.
DIDJA SHAVE?
5 DAYS AGO, DECEMBER 23RD
............
NO... THAT WAS HOT PANTS. THAT'S HIS ABILITY.
THERE'S GOTTA BE SOMETHING ELSE.
LOOK INTO THIS A BIT MORE. H.P. PROBABLY WON'T TELL YOU ANYTHING ABOUT LUCY, BUT LUCY'S PROBABLY WHERE THE PRESIDENT IS.
I UNDER-STAND...
BUT I WILL NOT KILL THE PRESIDENT... I WILL PROTECT MRS. STEEL WITH EVERYTHING THAT I HAVE, BUT I REFUSE TO COLLECT THE CORPSE PARTS, NOR WILL I GO AGAINST THIS COUNTRY.

BUT, PLEASE! LUCY PROBABLY LOOKS LIKE SOMEONE ELSE AT THE MOMENT, AND MR. STEEL MIGHT HAVE CAUGHT ON BY NOW...
WE DON'T HAVE A LOT OF TIME! FIND HER, AND PROTECT HER!
YOU'RE A COMPLICATED ONE, WEKAPIPO.
I HAD MADE MYSELF A SERVANT OF THIS COUNTRY ONCE...I CANNOT BREAK MY OWN RULES.

MR. STEEL?
....
MR. STEEL?

IT CAN'T BE...
WHAT IN THE WORLD ...?

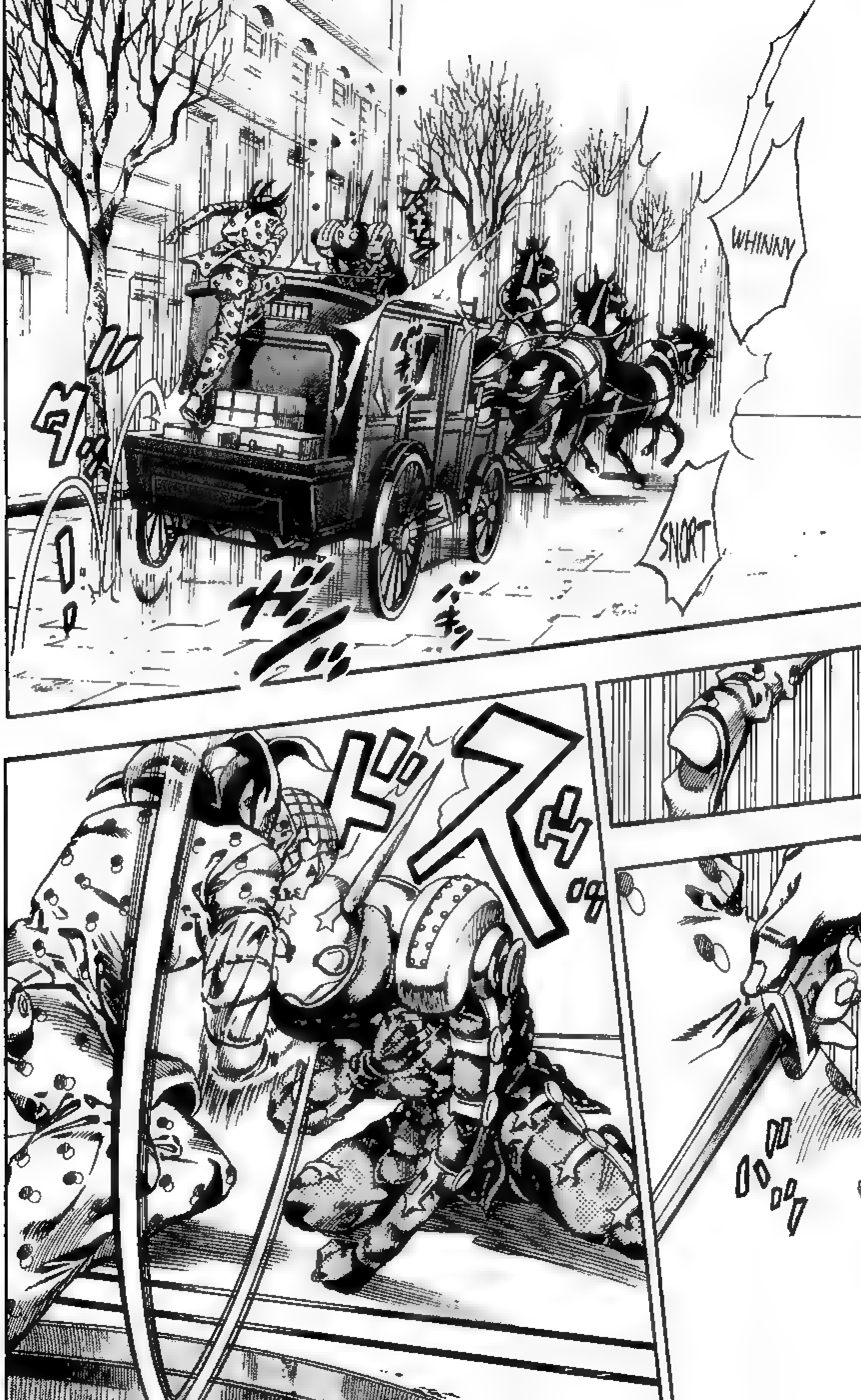
ドドドド
ドド
SNO RT
SNO RT
!!

UGHH!
AGHH!
SHIT!

DAMN!
JEEZ ...
......
!?
......
WHAT ...?
IMPOS-SIBLE!
NO...!
WAS THAT...?

TCH!
WEKAPIPO! I THOUGHT I'D FIND YOU EVEN-TUALLY, IF I KEPT ON TRACKING STEEL...
I PUR-POSELY DIDN'T HIT YOU RIGHT IN THE VITALS!
SINCE YOU'RE OLDER, I'LL BE MORE RESPECTFUL! I'LL RIP YOUR LIMBS APART FIRST, ONE BY ONE... FOR YOU, I'LL...
MAKE SURE TO LET YOU HAVE A TASTE OF THE WORST KIND OF LIVING HELL, AND KILL YOU SLOWLY...
MR. 'HIGH-AND-MIGHTY'!
GLANCE

バキッ
バギッ
バギッ


WHINNY
SNORT

TUG
WHAT IS THE MEANING OF THIS?
IT'S 'MAGENTA'.
HE SURVIVED IN THE FROZEN STRAIT...
I CANNOT KILL HIM UNTIL MAGENTA HIMSELF DEACTIVATES HIS DEFENSIVE 'STAND'...
BUT MORE IMPORTANTLY, WHAT IS HE DOING HERE? WHY WOULD UNDERLING TRASH LIKE MAGENTA BE HERE, TRACKING MR. STEEL, ON HIS OWN?

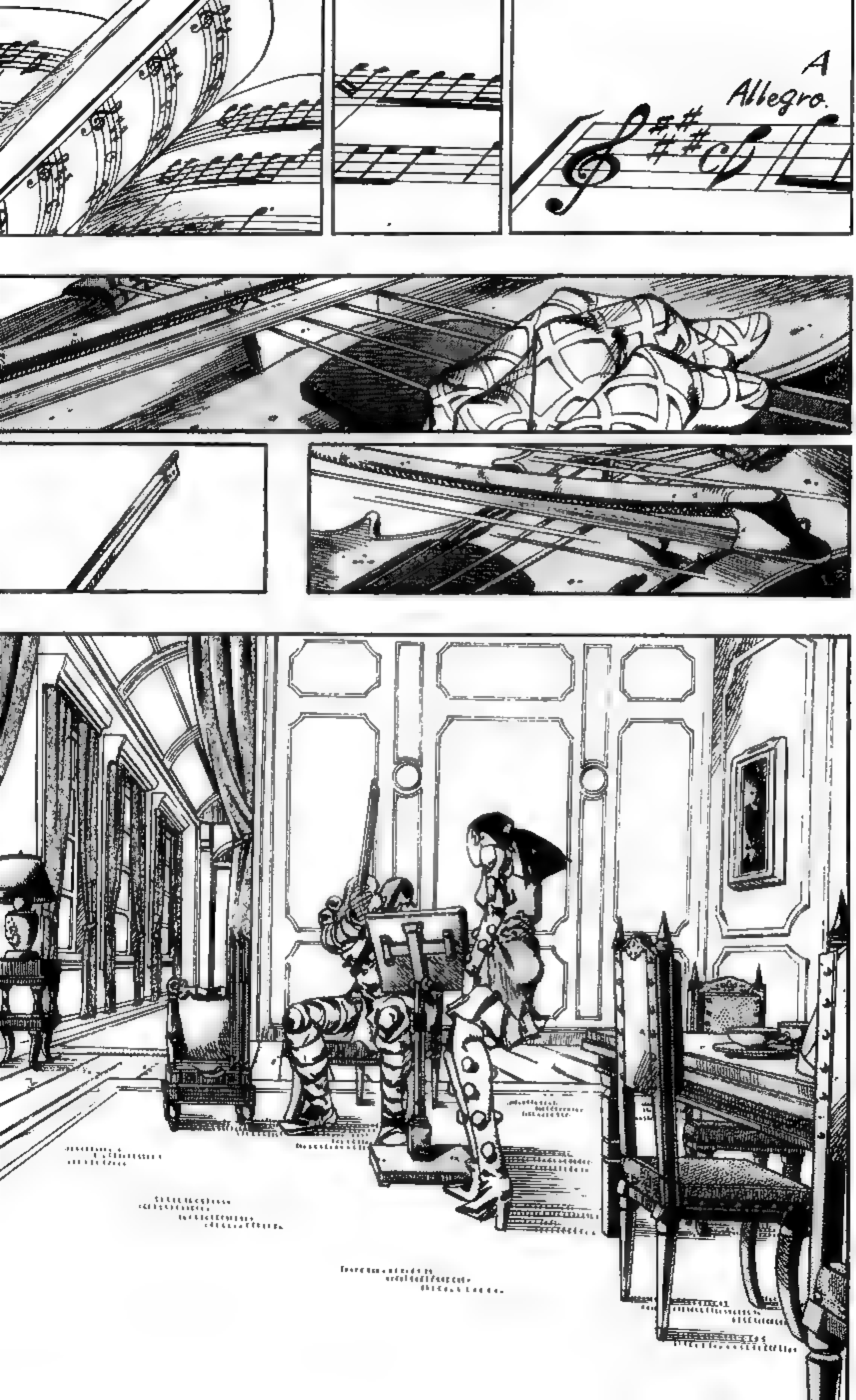
COULD IT BE...
THAT HE'S LOOKING FOR LUCY STEEL?
BACK AT THE STRAIT ...
HE MUST HAVE BEEN LISTENING TO OUR CON-VERSATION... AND, NOW, HE'S HERE FOR THE 'MONEY' AND 'REVENGE'...
!?
......

MR. STEEL!
MR. STEEL! CAN YOU HEAR ME?
I AM NOT YOUR ENEMY!
YOUR WOUND IS NOT FATAL!
I CANNOT LET YOU DIE HERE! PLEASE, TRY TO HOLD ON!

YOU! WHAT ARE YOU DOING ON TOP OF MR. STEEL'S CARRIAGE?!
STOP THE CARRIAGE THIS INSTANT!
ANY FURTHER, AND YOU WILL BE TRESSPASSING ON MAXIMUM-SECURITY GOVERNMENT PROPERTY! IF YOU DO NOT STOP THE CARRIAGE, WE WILL BE AUTHORIZED TO SHOOT!
ドドドドドドドド
ドドドドドドド
……

IF I KEEP ON GOING, I WILL REACH THE 'PHILADELPHIA INDEPENDENCE SQUARE'.
PRESIDENT VALENTINE IS PRESENTLY IN THAT BUILDING!
I MUST DISPOSE OF MAGENTA RIGHT HERE, RIGHT NOW.
HE KNOWS LUCY STEEL'S IDENTITY.
'LUCY' IS 'THE FIRST LADY'.
HEY, YOU!

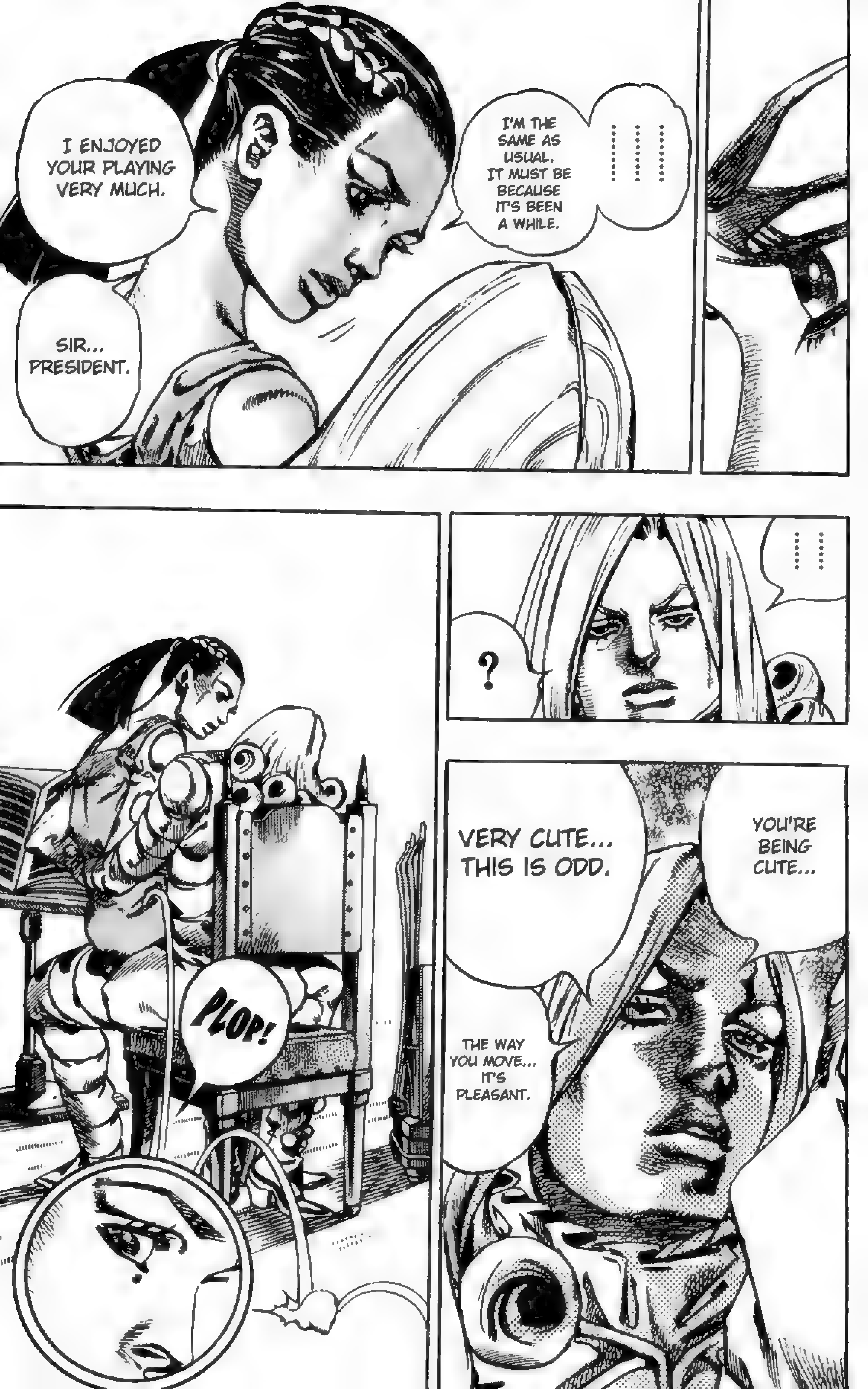
!?
December 28th, 2:45 in the afternoon
Gyro Zeppeli
Johnny Joestar 1 hour until they reach the goal
LEFT-SIDE ATAXIA.

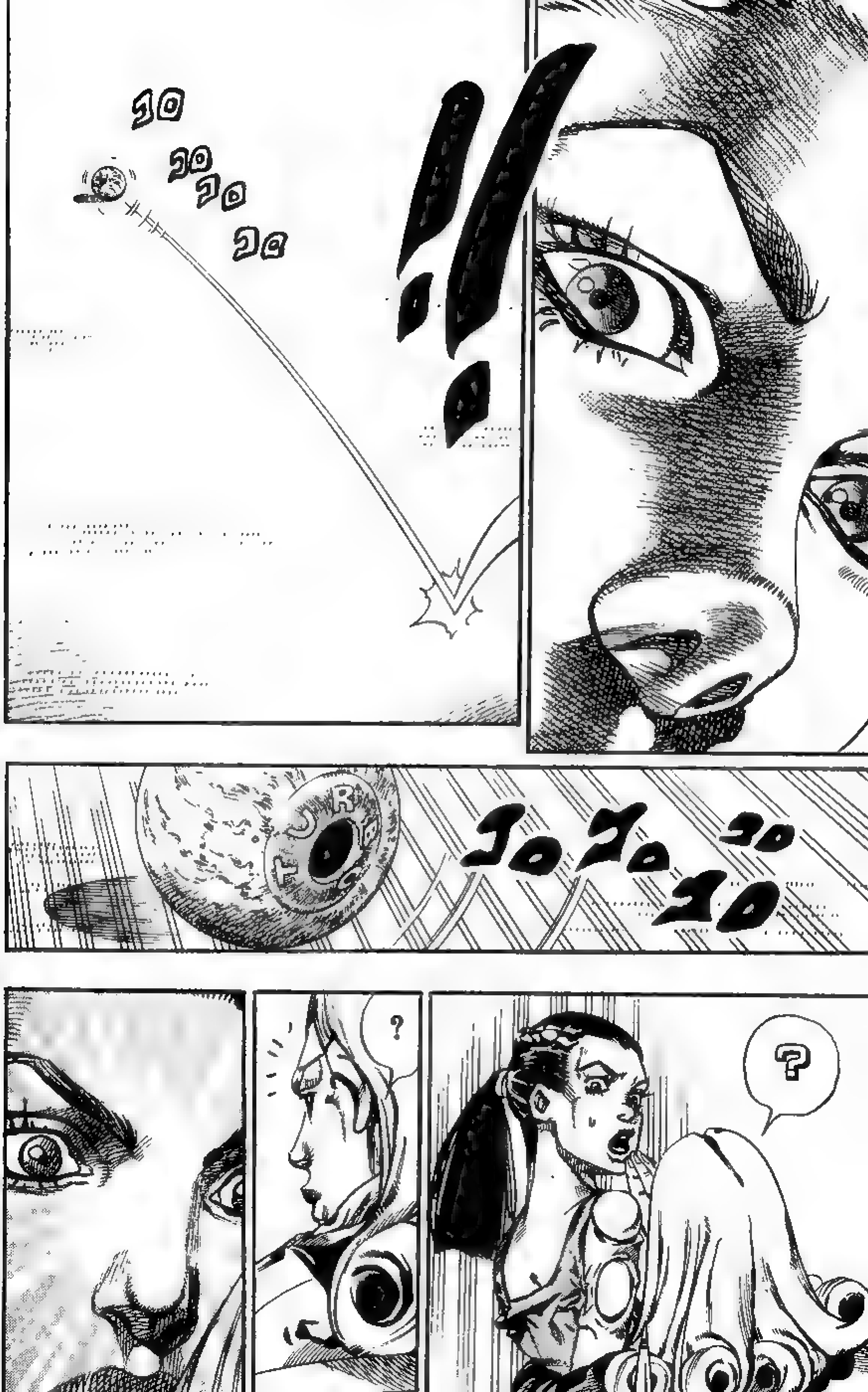

A
Allegro.

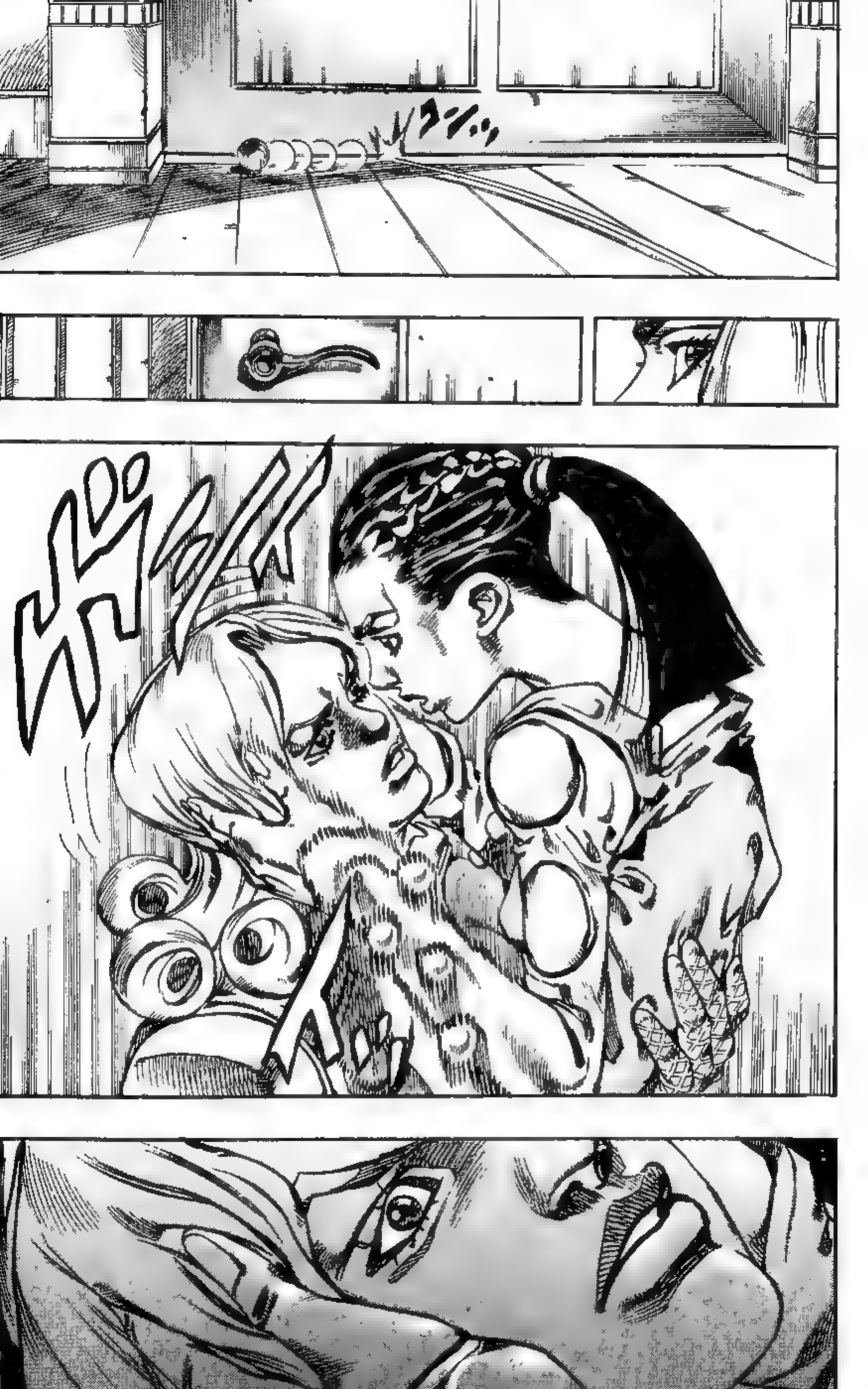
CLANK
IT'S BEEN A WHILE SINCE I SAW YOU LAST.
THE LAST TIME WE DID THIS... DRINK TEA TOGETHER, PLAY MUSIC TOGETHER, RELAXED TOGETHER...
WAS IN CHICAGO, I BELIEVE...

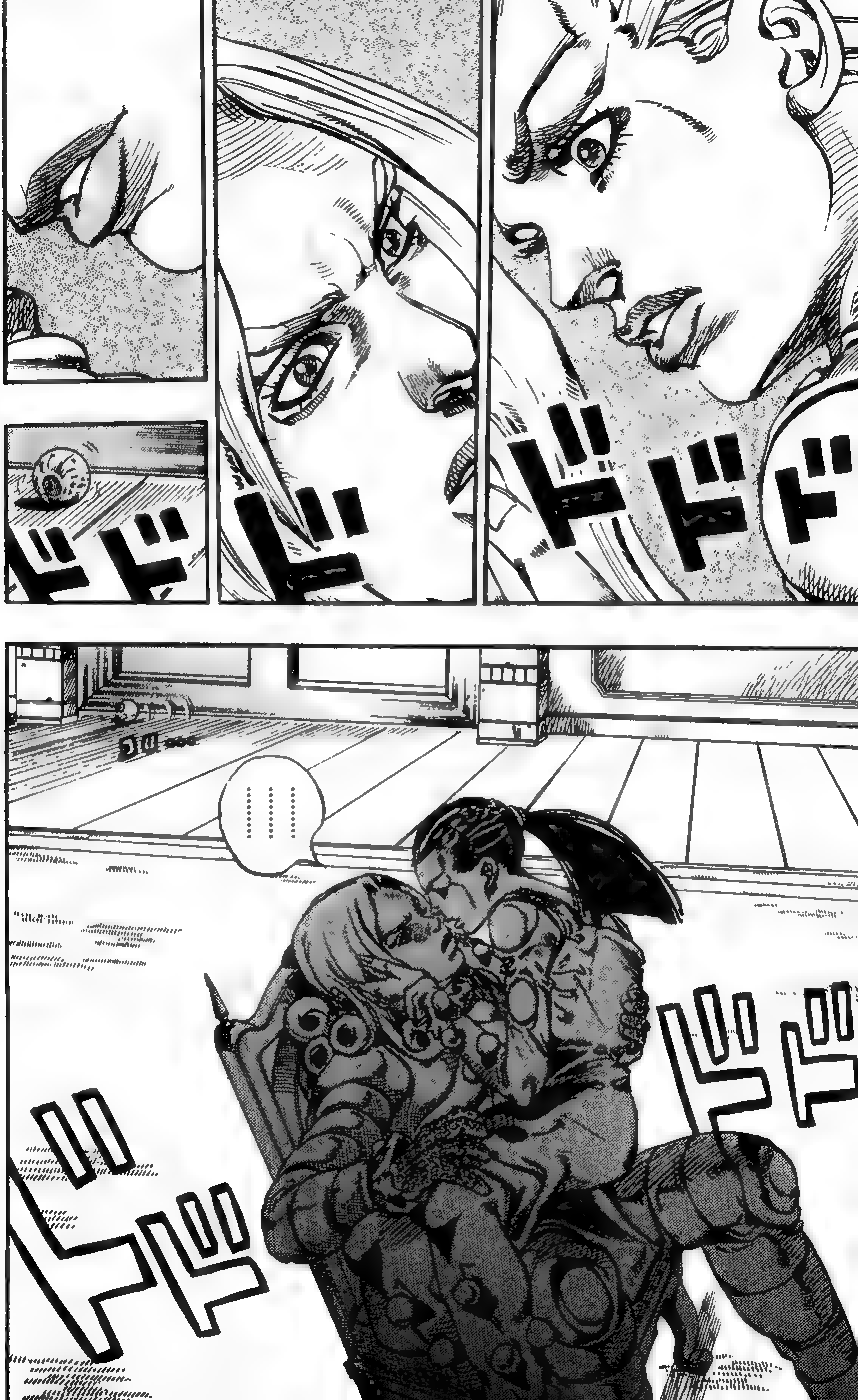
THE MASSIVE AMOUNTS OF WORK THAT I'VE BEEN DOING SINCE THE START OF THIS RACE WILL COME TO AN END SOON.
!
BUT YOU...
'SOMETHING'...
SOMETHING ABOUT YOU IS 'DIFFERENT', TODAY.

YOUR PAGE-FLIPPING IS EXPERTLY DONE TODAY...
MUCH BETTER THAN BEFORE.
THE TIMING OF YOUR FLIPS WERE PERFECTLY SYNCHRONIZED WITH MY PLAYING...
YOUR INSTINCT WAS COMPLETELY SPOT-ON... VERY PLEASANT.
SUP
IF... THIS 'HAND' THAT'S TOUCHING ME RIGHT NOW...
IF IT SLIDES ANY HIGHER... AND EVEN IF HE IS THE PRESIDENT, IF HE TRIES TO KISS ME...
I'LL BITE MY TONGUE OFF AND DIE...
AND IF HE FIGURES OUT MY 'IDENTITY', I'LL BITE MY TONGUE OFF, TOO.


I ENJOYED YOUR PLAYING VERY MUCH.
SIR... PRESIDENT.
I'M THE SAME AS USUAL. IT MUST BE BECAUSE IT'S BEEN A WHILE.
......
......
?
YOU'RE BEING CUTE...
VERY CUTE... THIS IS ODD.
THE WAY YOU MOVE... IT'S PLEASANT.
PLOP!





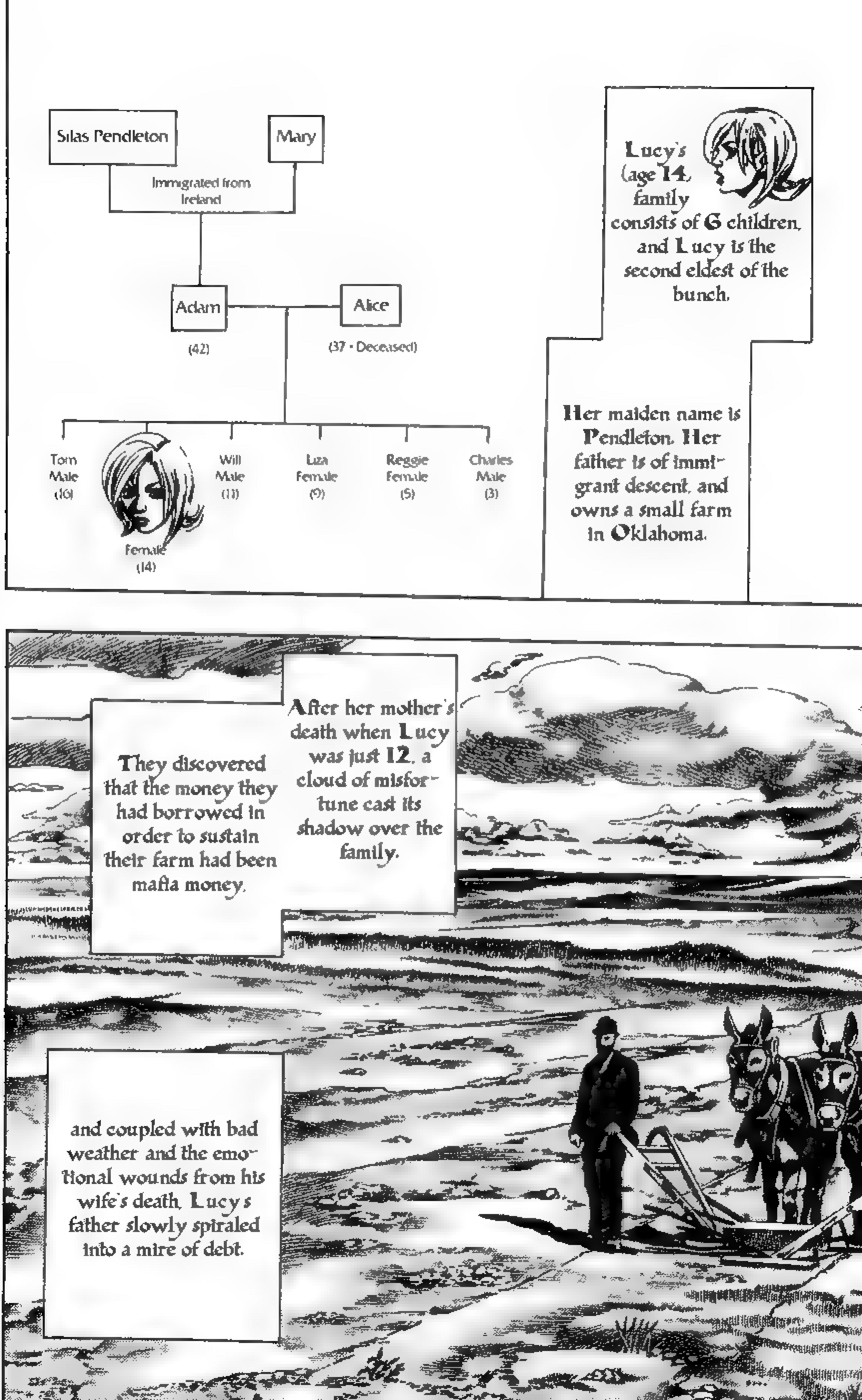


ドドド
ドド
ドド
……
ドド
ドド

TH...THE 'EYE'...
IT FELL FROM MY POCKET... BY ITSELF... WHY...?
ARE THE OTHER 'CORPSE PARTS' NEARBY?! THE 'EYE' IS REACTING TO SOMETHING... THE PRESIDENT... HE MUST HAVE GOTTEN ALL OF THE 'PARTS'!
IS EVERYTHING NEARING AN END ALREADY? HERE, IN PHILADELPHIA? IT CAN'T BE...!

PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 16, Chapter 2
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

#61
BOTH SIDES NOW
PART②


Silas Pendleton
Mary
Immigrated from Ireland
Adam
(42)
Alice
(37 • Deceased)
Tom Male (16)
Female (14)
Will Male (11)
Liza Female (9)
Reggie Female (5)
Charles Male (3)
Lucy's (age 14) family consists of 6 children, and Lucy is the second eldest of the bunch.
Her maiden name is Pendleton. Her father is of immigrant descent, and owns a small farm in Oklahoma.
After her mother's death when Lucy was just 12, a cloud of misfortune cast its shadow over the family.
They discovered that the money they had borrowed in order to sustain their farm had been mafia money,
and coupled with bad weather and the emotional wounds from his wife's death, Lucy's father slowly spiraled into a mire of debt.

Will they take the 'land'?
Or the 'children'?
The mafia's policy is never to take something from a family that only has one possession.
However if the family is in possession of 'two or more things', the mafia will inevitably request one of those things.
Lucy's father had to make a decision.
If the mafia took their 'land' either way the family would be scattered...but Lucy's father couldn't bear to give his 'eldest son' away.
And so, the only alternative was to send his eldest daughter Lucy to them to pay off his debt because she was the only other child that was old enough to work— as a 'servant'.

It was when Lucy's father had made this decision that someone visited the farm.
The man's name was Stephen Steel.
Steel told Lucy's father:
"A few years ago...when I was in the deepest moments of despair, I was saved by your daughter's kind words and was able to stand on my own feet again." He also explained that he "wanted to repay his savior and repay the man who had raised her."
But Lucy's father
After ushering the other children inside, said that it was "too late."
That "Lucy was no longer there".
Thus, he informed Steel of the situation.
Though Steel was quite surprised by the situation, he recovered quickly.

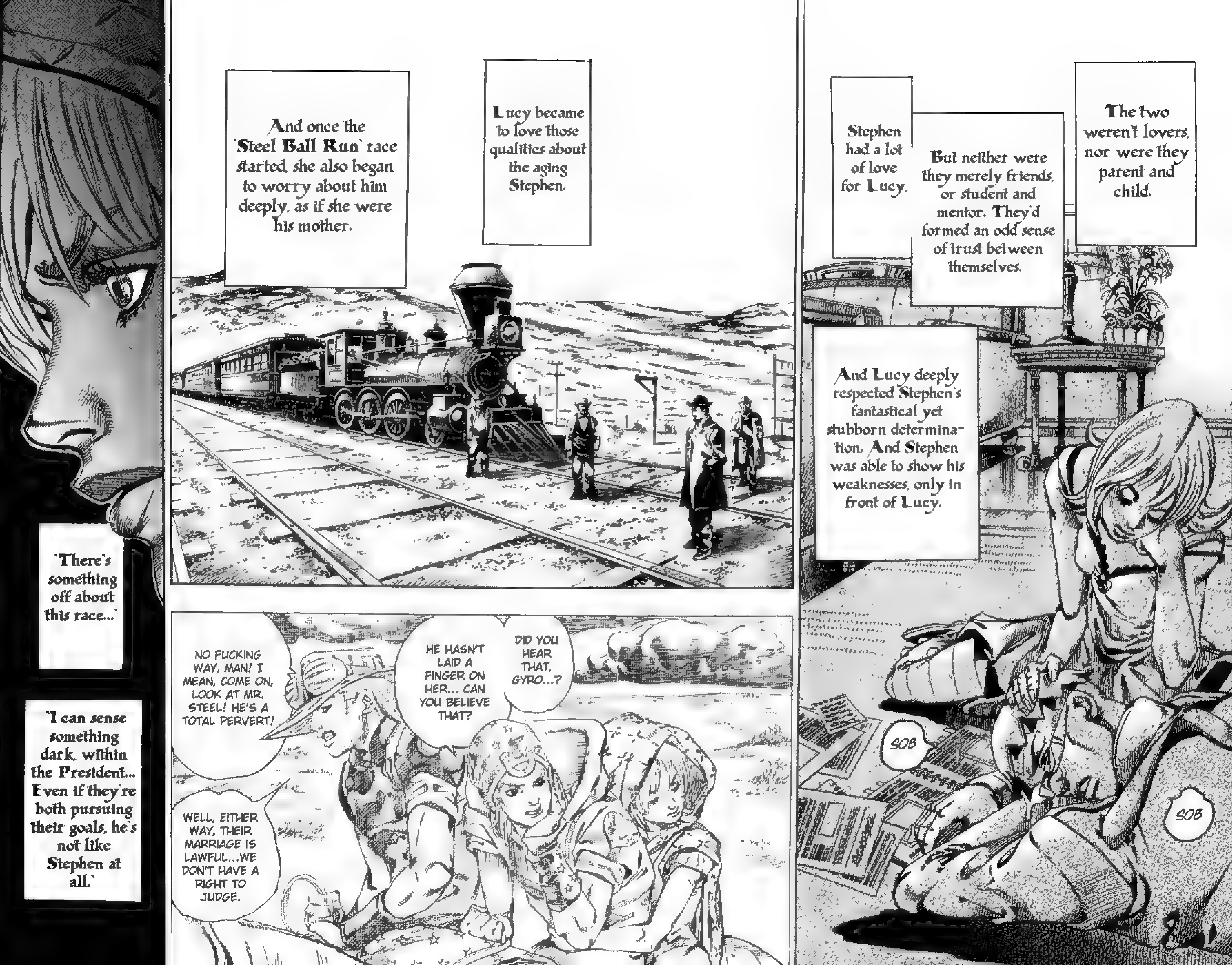
Always being respectful, Steel made his polite proposition.
"I beg of you."
"I would like to handle your debts and take care of them."
Steel, after a few moments of consideration, replied quietly that...
The most important thing was Lucy's father's determination as a parent to save Lucy from this predicament. He explained that he knew a thing or two about how the mafia operated, and so there was still time... all Lucy's father had to tell them was that Lucy was 'damaged goods'.
......
"It's impossible."
"This isn't just a matter of money anymore. The mafia have their own rules, and once they decide to take something, they'll take it. I can't change anything anymore. I've already made my decision about my daughter."
OHH...

WHAT DID YOU SAY?! YOU BASTARD! ARE YOU TRYING TO INSULT MY FAMILY?!
That Steel had already lawfully married her.
And after that, he would handle the rest of the dealings with them.
LISTEN. OPEN YOUR EYES...
WHAT THEY WANT IS HER 'VIRGINITY'. IF YOU LEAVE HER LIKE THIS, SHE'LL BE FORCED TO LIVE LIKE A PROSTITUTE, OR EVEN WORSE.
ONCE SHE SEES THAT KIND OF HELL, SHE WON'T EVEN LIVE TO BE 25.
I'VE ALWAYS LIVED THINKING ONLY OF MYSELF... THOSE WERE UNHAPPY TIMES.

PLEASE, LET ME, STEPHEN STEEL, LOOK AFTER YOUR DAUGHTER FOR YOU.
AND IT WAS YOUR DAUGHTER WHO SAVED ME FROM THAT UNHAPPY LIFE.
I WANT TO HELP YOUR DAUGHTER... TO REPAY HER IS IMPERATIVE TO ME!
YOU....YOU PERVERT! HOW THE HELL DO YOU EXPECT ME TO BELIEVE SOMETHING LIKE THIS?!
YES...NO ONE WILL BELIEVE ME.
BUT EVERYONE WILL BELIEVE YOU IF YOU SAY THAT YOUR DAUGHTER IS 'DAMAGED'.
THE MAFIA, EVEN MORE SO.
OHH...
...And in this way, Lucy was saved by Stephen Steel.
OHHH
And became Lucy Steel. And one day, Lucy told Stephen:

I DON'T KNOW WHY, BUT I REMEMBER VERY CLEARLY THAT ONE TIME THAT I FIRST MET YOU, WHEN I WAS YOUNG.
YOU LOOKED SO MIS-ERABLE, BUT YOU HAD AN INNOCENT STRENGTH ABOUT YOU, AS IF YOU COULD PULL AND MOVE A TRAIN WITH THAT STRENGTH, EVEN WITH YOUR SKINNY ARMS. THAT'S WHY I TALKED TO YOU.
I DON'T MIND, SO...
IF YOU'D LIKE...
ONLY IF YOU'D LIKE, THOUGH.
PLEASE, MAKE ME YOUR REAL WIFE ONE DAY.
LISTEN, LUCY.
YOU DON'T HAVE TO THINK ABOUT THINGS LIKE THAT, SO NEVER SAY SOMETHING LIKE THAT AGAIN.

THIS IS WHAT I TOLD YOUR FATHER, BUT I DID THIS ALL FOR MYSELF.
THE ONE WHO REALLY SAVED YOU WAS YOUR FATHER, AND HIS DETERMINATION AS A PARENT TO PROTECT YOU.
DO NOT FORGET THAT.
I WON'T LAY A FINGER ON YOU, NOT NOW, NOT EVER... DON'T WORRY.
YOU SHOULD GO TO SCHOOL.
AND ONE DAY, YOU'LL FALL IN LOVE. AND WHEN YOU WANT TO LEAVE OUR HOUSE, YOU CAN DO SO ANYTIME.
BUT PLEASE, SPARE ME THE TROUBLE OF YOUR FUTURE BOY-FRIEND BEING A MAFIA MEMBER.
......
giggle



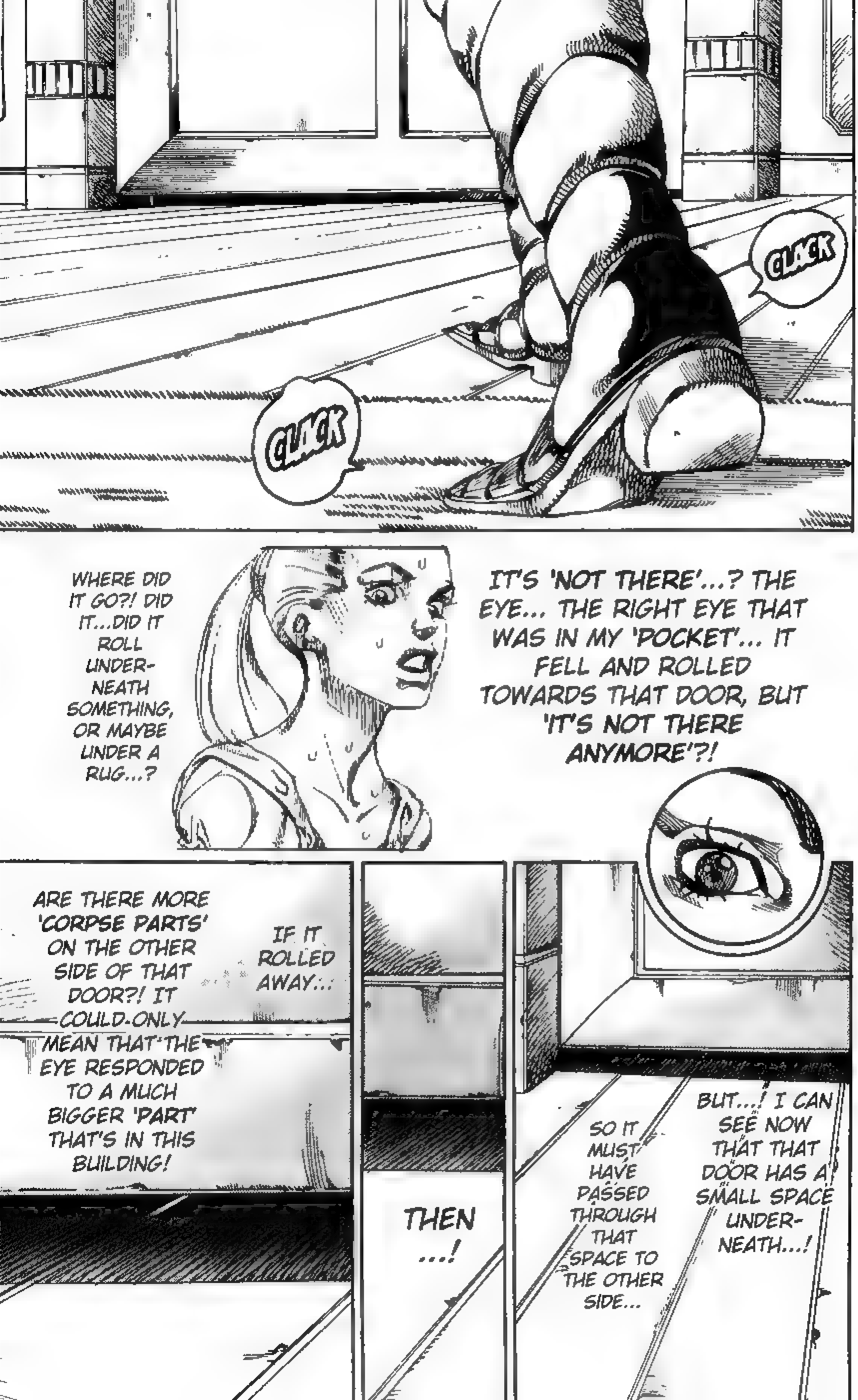
Stephen had a lot of love for Lucy.
The two weren't lovers, nor were they parent and child.
But neither were they merely friends, or student and mentor. They'd formed an odd sense of trust between themselves.
And Lucy deeply respected Stephen's fantastical yet stubborn determination. And Stephen was able to show his weaknesses, only in front of Lucy.
SOB
SOB
Lucy became to love those qualities about the aging Stephen.
And once the 'Steel Ball Run' race started, she also began to worry about him deeply, as if she were his mother.
DID YOU HEAR THAT, GYRO...?
HE HASN'T LAID A FINGER ON HER... CAN YOU BELIEVE THAT?
NO FUCKING WAY, MAN! I MEAN, COME ON, LOOK AT MR. STEEL! HE'S A TOTAL PERVERT!
WELL, EITHER WAY, THEIR MARRIAGE IS LAWFUL...WE DON'T HAVE A RIGHT TO JUDGE.
'There's something off about this race...'
'I can sense something dark, within the President... Even if they're both pursuing their goals, he's not like Stephen at all.'

KNOCK
KNOCK
KNOCK
KNOCK
KNOCK
KNOCK
WHAT IS THAT SOUND?
WHAT ARE YOU LOOKING AT, SCARLET?
DID SOME-THING... JUST FALL ON THE FLOOR?

HE'S GOING TO FIND IT!

……
……
AH?!
……

CLACK
CLACK
CLACK


CLACK
CLACK
WHERE DID IT GO?! DID IT...DID IT ROLL UNDERNEATH SOMETHING, OR MAYBE UNDER A RUG...?
IT'S 'NOT THERE'...? THE EYE... THE RIGHT EYE THAT WAS IN MY 'POCKET'... IT FELL AND ROLLED TOWARDS THAT DOOR, BUT 'IT'S NOT THERE ANYMORE'?!
BUT...! I CAN SEE NOW THAT THAT DOOR HAS A SMALL SPACE UNDERNEATH...!
SO IT MUST HAVE PASSED THROUGH THAT SPACE TO THE OTHER SIDE...
THEN ...!
IF IT ROLLED AWAY...
ARE THERE MORE 'CORPSE PARTS' ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT DOOR?! IT COULD ONLY MEAN THAT THE EYE RESPONDED TO A MUCH BIGGER 'PART' THAT'S IN THIS BUILDING!

LUB DUB
LUB DUB
LUB DUB
WHAT WERE YOU DOING WHILE YOU WERE HOLDING MY FACE IN PLACE?
I ASKED YOU WHAT FELL ONTO THE GROUND.
SCARLET...
ANSWER ME! YOU WERE LOOKING AT THAT DOOR, WEREN'T YOU?
LUB DUB
LUB DUB
LUB DUB
ARE YOU SO INTRIGUED BY WHAT COULD BE BEHIND THAT DOOR?
SCARLET.

LUB DUB
LUB DUB
LUB DUB
THE PRESI-DENT... HE CAN'T...
NO... HE CAN'T! NOT YET... IF HE DID, THEN HE WOULD HAVE TAKEN THE 'EYE' FROM ME, A LONG TIME AGO.
DOES HE ALREADY KNOW WHO I AM...?
HE CAN'T POSSIBLY KNOW MY TRUE IDENTITY. HE CAN'T BE ASKING ME THESE QUES-TIONS ON PURPOSE..
......
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
LUB DUB
LUB DUB
LUB DUB
I HAVE TO MAKE A DECISION!
OH MY! ♡ IS THERE SOMETHING FANTASTIC BEHIND THAT DOOR?
SOMETHING SO FANTAS-TIC THAT YOU'RE HIDING IT FROM ME?
LET ME SEE! ♡
NO, WAIT.
STOP RIGHT THERE!

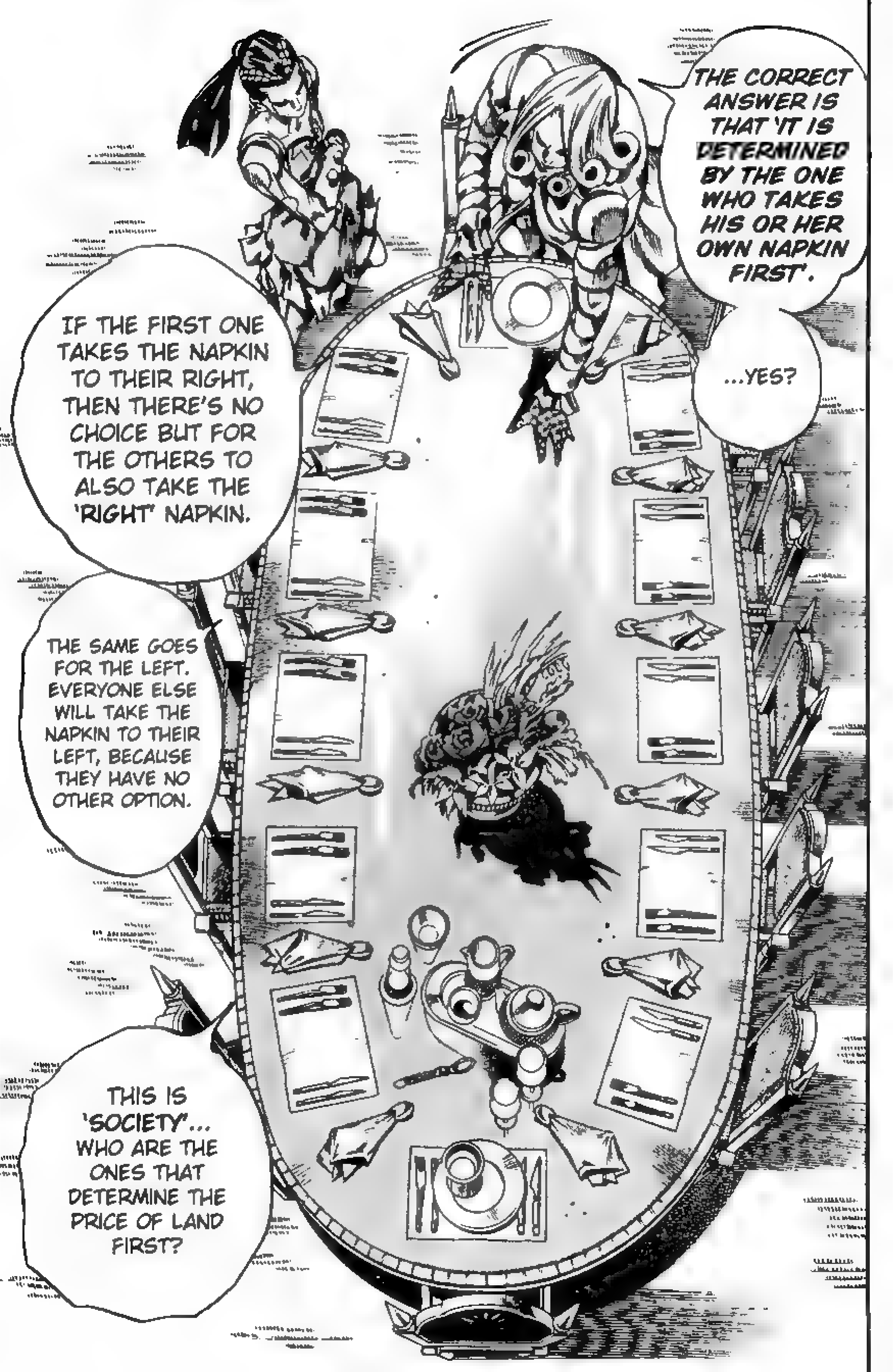
……
……
HMMM...
YOU'RE ACTING CUTE.
PLEASE, DON'T THINK THAT I'M MERELY REPEATING MYSELF... YOUR EXPRESSIONS TODAY..THEY'RE EXPRESSIONS OF AN INNOCENT, CURIOUS CHILD. ADORABLE.
LET ME KISS YOU.
BUT MAY I ASK YOU A QUESTION, FIRST?

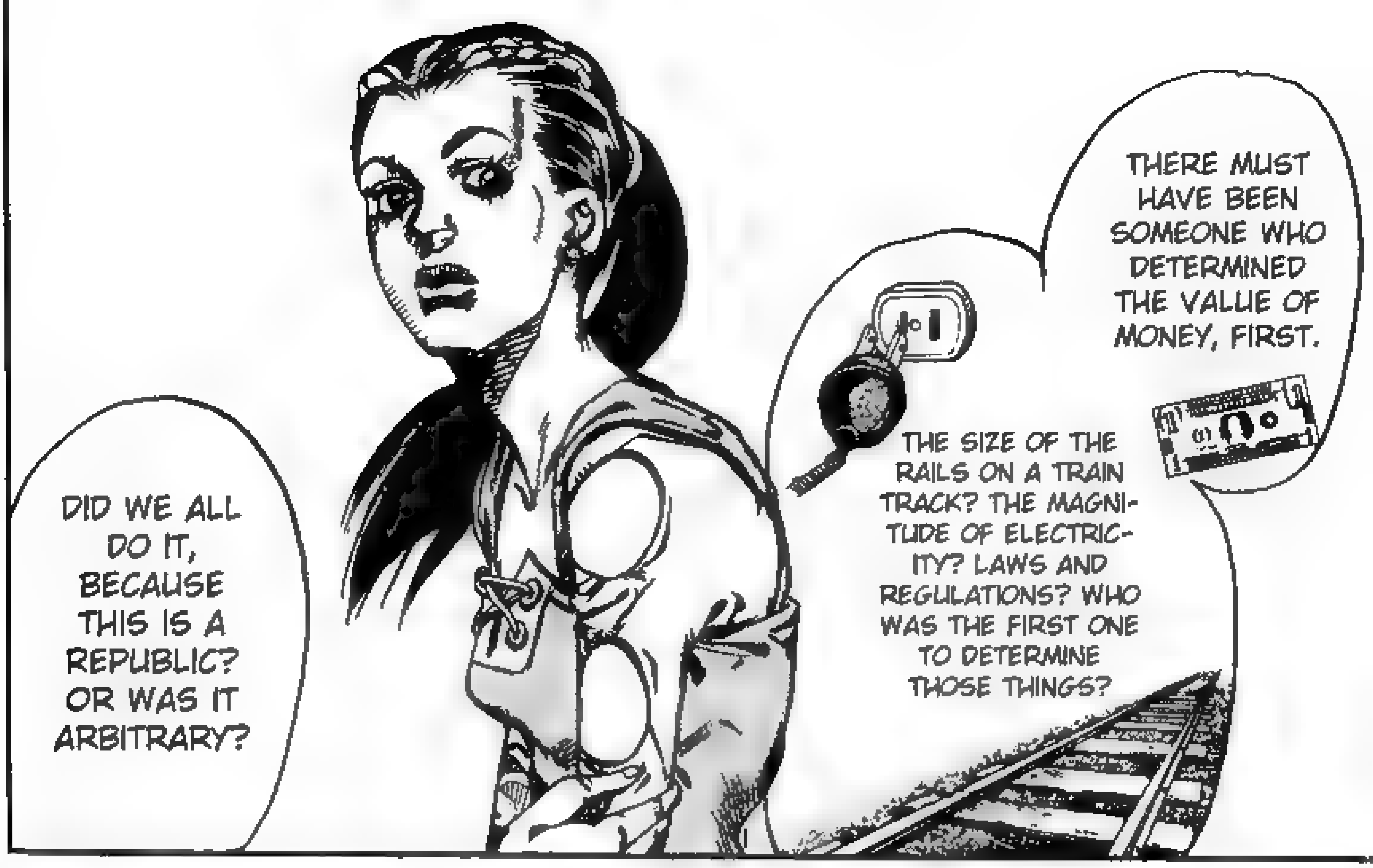
NO...
ABOUT THE 'STEEL BALL RUN' RACE.
......
IF YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT WHAT'S BEYOND THAT DOOR, THERE'S NOTHING THERE THAT'LL INTEREST YOU.
ABOUT THE RACE..?
...WHAT OF IT?
IF YOU ASK ME...
THIS MIGHT BE DISRESPECTFUL TO THE PARTICIPANTS, BUT THIS IS JUST A 'RACING GAME'.
SOMEONE LIKE YOU, THE PRESIDENT OF A COUNTRY...
WHY WOULD YOU BE SO INVESTED IN SOMETHING THAT'S MERELY FOR SPORT?
YOU'VE BEEN FOLLOWING THIS RACE AND TRAVELING ACROSS THE COUNTRY SINCE IT STARTED!

YOU'VE BEEN AWAY FROM THE CAPITAL FOR TWO MONTHS.
IS THIS RACE REALLY SO VALUABLE?
DIDN'T I EXPLAIN THIS BEFORE? THE WHOLE COUNTRY IS WATCHING THIS RACE. IT'S POPULAR.
HMPH! A GOOD QUESTION.
FINE, THEN.
THIS IS AS GOOD A TIME AS ANY.
I WILL EXPLAIN TO YOU WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO THIS WORLD ONCE THIS RACE ENDS.

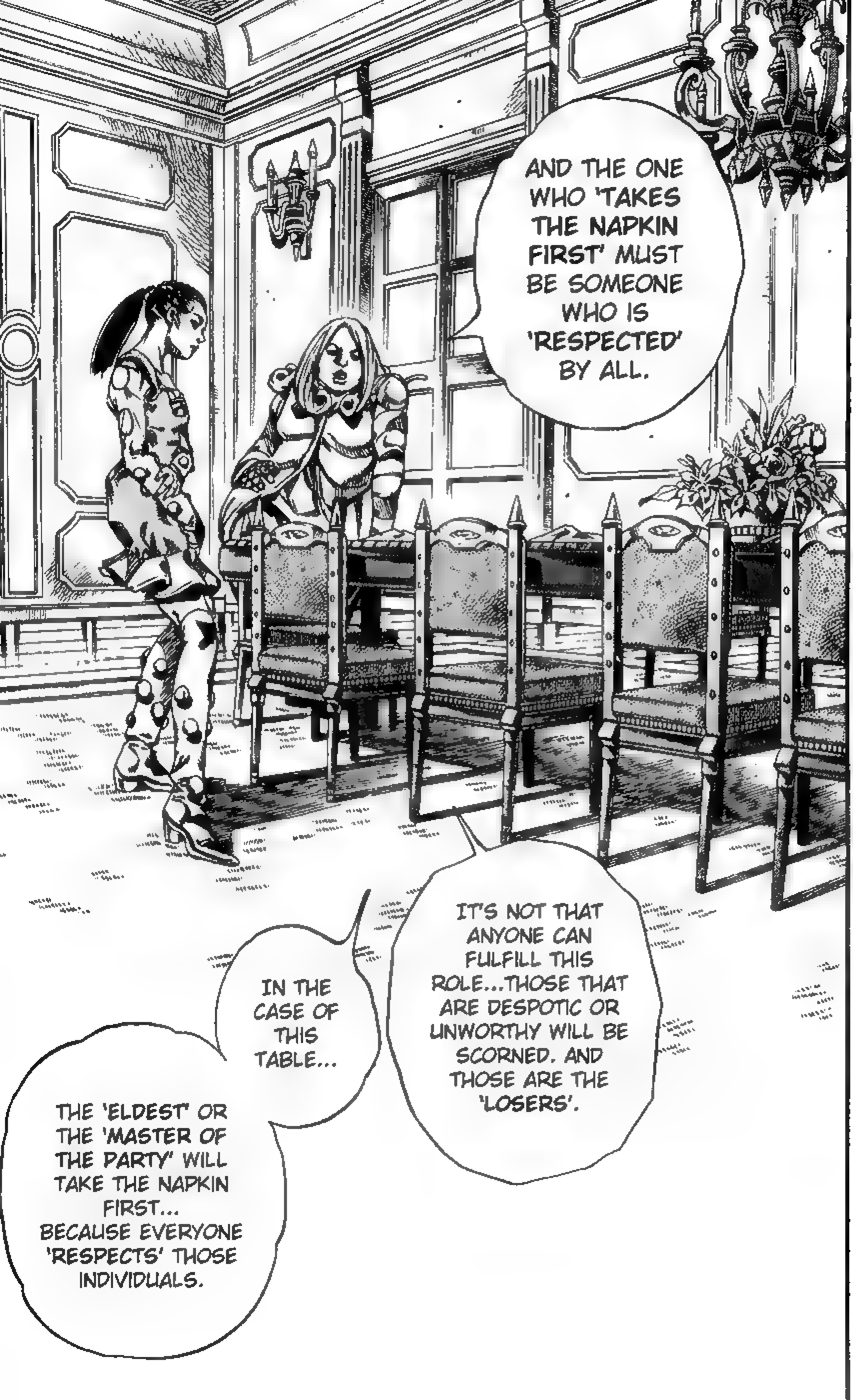
SUPPOSE THAT...
YOU WERE SITTING DOWN AT THIS TABLE.
THE NAPKINS ARE IN FRONT OF YOU...
WHICH NAPKIN WOULD YOU TAKE?
THE ONE ON YOUR 'LEFT'? OR THE ONE ON YOUR 'RIGHT'?
THE ONE ON YOUR LEFT SIDE?
OR THE ONE ON YOUR RIGHT SIDE?

WELL, USUALLY...
I WOULD TAKE THE ONE ON MY 'LEFT'.
HM.
...THAT IS 'CORRECT', TOO.
BUT, IN A LARGER SENSE OF 'SOCIETY', THAT IS WRONG.
PERHAPS I COULD EVEN SUBSTITUTE 'SOCIETY' WITH THE 'UNIVERSE'.
....THE UNIVERSE?


THE CORRECT ANSWER IS THAT 'IT IS DETERMINED BY THE ONE WHO TAKES HIS OR HER OWN NAPKIN FIRST'.
...YES?
IF THE FIRST ONE TAKES THE NAPKIN TO THEIR RIGHT, THEN THERE'S NO CHOICE BUT FOR THE OTHERS TO ALSO TAKE THE 'RIGHT' NAPKIN.
THE SAME GOES FOR THE LEFT. EVERYONE ELSE WILL TAKE THE NAPKIN TO THEIR LEFT, BECAUSE THEY HAVE NO OTHER OPTION.
THIS IS 'SOCIETY'... WHO ARE THE ONES THAT DETERMINE THE PRICE OF LAND FIRST?

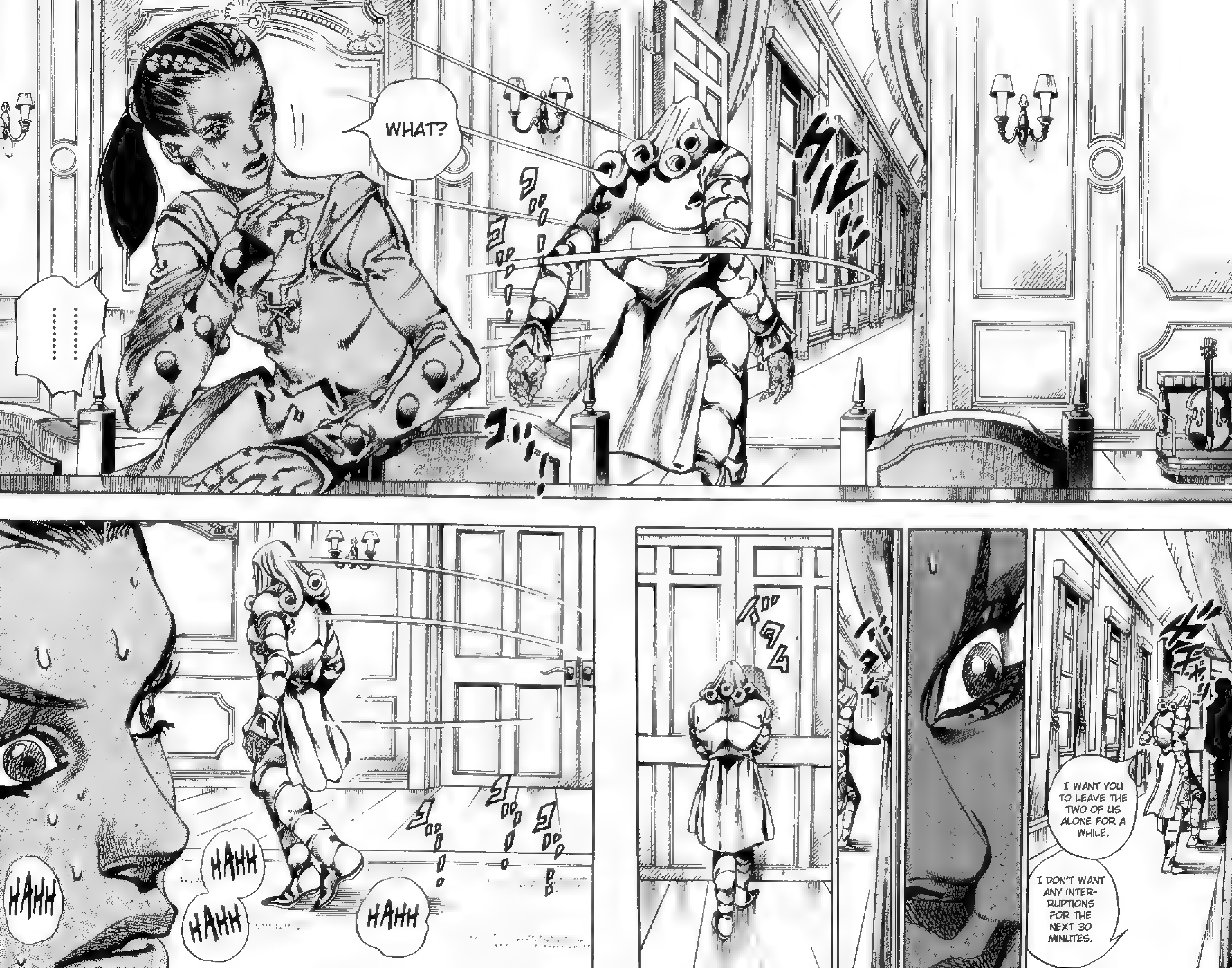

THERE MUST HAVE BEEN SOMEONE WHO DETERMINED THE VALUE OF MONEY, FIRST.
THE SIZE OF THE RAILS ON A TRAIN TRACK? THE MAGNITUDE OF ELECTRICITY? LAWS AND REGULATIONS? WHO WAS THE FIRST ONE TO DETERMINE THOSE THINGS?
DID WE ALL DO IT, BECAUSE THIS IS A REPUBLIC? OR WAS IT ARBITRARY?

NO!
THE ONE WHO TOOK THE NAPKIN FIRST DETERMINED ALL OF THESE THINGS!
THE RULES OF THIS WORLD ARE DETERMINED BY THAT SAME PRINCIPLE OF 'RIGHT, OR LEFT?'! IN A SOCIETY LIKE THIS TABLE, A STATE OF EQUILIBRIUM, ONCE ONE MAKES THE FIRST MOVE, EVERYONE MUST FOLLOW!
IN EVERY ERA...
THIS WORLD HAS BEEN OPERATING BY THIS NAPKIN PRINCIPLE.


AND THE ONE WHO 'TAKES THE NAPKIN FIRST' MUST BE SOMEONE WHO IS 'RESPECTED' BY ALL.
IT'S NOT THAT ANYONE CAN FULFILL THIS ROLE...THOSE THAT ARE DESPOTIC OR UNWORTHY WILL BE SCORNED. AND THOSE ARE THE 'LOSERS'.
IN THE CASE OF THIS TABLE...
THE 'ELDEST' OR THE 'MASTER OF THE PARTY' WILL TAKE THE NAPKIN FIRST... BECAUSE EVERYONE 'RESPECTS' THOSE INDIVIDUALS.

FOR EXAMPLE, IF 'JESUS CHRIST' WERE SITTING AT THIS TABLE,
NO MATTER WHO YOU ARE, EVEN IF YOU ARE THE POPE, YOU WOULD HAVE NO CHOICE BUT TO TAKE YOUR NAPKIN AFTER JESUS CHRIST, YES?
......
JESUS CHRIST...
?
WHAT DO YOU MEAN?
WHAT DOES THAT HAVE TO DO WITH THE RACE?
I'M TALKING 'HYPOTHETICALLY'.
'HY-PO-THE-TI-CALLY'.
I'M TRYING TO SAY THAT ONCE THIS RACE ENDS, IT WILL MEAN THE BEGINNING OF OUR RISE TO POWER.
SOON, I WILL OBTAIN THAT POWER...THE 'OBJECT' THAT ALL WILL PAY THEIR RESPECTS TO.
SOMETHING IRREFUTABLE, SOMETHING IMMOVABLE.

THAT IS 'TRUE POWER'.
AND THOSE UNDER THIS POWER'S INFLUENCE CAN ONLY BE 'ALLIES'.
I WILL BECOME THE ONE THAT CAN TAKE THE NAPKIN FIRST. I, 'FUNNY VALENTINE', WILL BE THE ONE SITTING AT THAT 'TABLE'.
WHAT IS IT, SCARLET? THAT EXPRESSION... IT'S ADORABLE.
I'M GETTING EXCITED... TAKE YOUR CLOTHES OFF.


WHAT?
......
I WANT YOU TO LEAVE THE TWO OF US ALONE FOR A WHILE.
I DON'T WANT ANY INTER-RUPTIONS FOR THE NEXT 30 MINUTES.
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH

I'M HAVING A DRINK, MYSELF...
DO YOU WANT ANYTHING TO DRINK?
HAHH
HAHH
'BEFORE' HE CLOSED THE DOOR...I... I HAVE TO GET AWAY FROM HERE...
...WHAT DID HE JUST SAY? BEFORE HE APPROACHED HIS GUARDS, BEFORE HE TOLD THEM TO STAY AWAY...
HAHH
HAHH

HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH

D... DOES HE KNOW ABOUT MY IDENTITY? NO, HE CAN'T HAVE FOUND OUT...
HE TOLD ME TO 'TAKE MY CLOTHES OFF'... IT CAN'T BE...!
!?
DOESN'T IT EXCITE YOU TO BE DOING THIS ON TOP OF A TABLE, WHERE WE INVITE GUESTS?
IN THE YEAR 1776, THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE WAS CREATED IN THIS VERY BUILDING... PERHAPS IN THIS VERY ROOM...
DOES IT EXCITE YOU?! THIS TABLE HAS BEEN HERE FOR AT LEAST 100 YEARS. THIS IS A PRIVILEGE THAT ONLY THE FIRST LADY WOULD HAVE!
SCARLET!

THESE WOUNDS... USUALLY, THEY TWINGE, STING...
THESE OLD SCARS THAT I GOT FROM BEING TORTURED DURING MY DAYS AS A SOLDIER...
FOR SOME ODD REASON... THEY'VE JUST STOPPED HURTING.
HAHH
IF... IF I RUN AWAY NOW, HE'LL FIND OUT MY 'IDENTITY'...
BUT I HAVE TO GET AWAY...
I HAVE TO GET OUT OF THIS ROOM!
HAHH
OH...
OHH...

IT MUST BE BECAUSE MY BODY IS YEARNING TO CREATE ANOTHER LIFE!
ONCE I GAIN MY 'TRUE POWER'...
I WILL BE IN NEED OF OFF-SPRING... A 'POWER' ONLY THRIVES ONCE IT'S BEEN PASSED DOWN!
AH!
DO YOU WANT ME TO BERATE YOU, THE WAY YOU PREFER IT?!
TAKE OFF YOUR CLOTHES, SCARLET!
AH!
AHH!
AHHHH!

AH! AHHH, AHHH!
AHHH!
OH...
ADORABLE!
SIMPLY ADORABLE!
AHH!
AH!
I CAN'T DO THIS...
I'M AT MY LIMIT...
IT WAS STUPID OF ME TO THINK THAT I COULD HAVE DONE ANYTHING ABOUT THE 'CORPSE'...
FROM THE VERY BEGINNING, I WAS POWERLESS... I'M...
I'M 'AT MY LIMIT'.

HAHH, HAHH ...
HAHH...
HAHH HAHH
I THOUGHT SO...
SO THE 'TRAITOR' WAS YOU ALL ALONG...
MY SUS-PICIONS ARE CON-FIRMED.
HAHH
...YOU LOOK LIKE MY 'WIFE'...BUT YOUR 'REAL IDENTITY'...
...THAT WOULD BRING UP THE QUESTION OF WHERE MY REAL WIFE IS. HOWEVER...
THAT IS NO LONGER OF MY CONCERN.
HAHH! HAHH!

HAHH
FOR SOME REASON, THE TWO OF US HAD NEVER BEEN BLESSED WITH A CHILD...
HAHH
AND RIGHT NOW, I'VE TAKEN A GREAT LIKING TO YOU.
YOU'RE... HOW SHOULD I SAY THIS, HOW SHOULD I DESCRIBE THIS...
IN ANY CASE, I'M INFATUATED WITH YOU.... YOU INFATUATE ME.
HAHH
HAHH HAHH
HAHH
AH!
ARE YOU TRYING TO BITE YOUR TONGUE OFF?
I WON'T LET YOU DO THAT...
HAHH
HAHH HAHH
UGH...! AGH!
GUH!

I'LL HAVE YOU BE THE REPLACE-MENT FOR MY WIFE.
ALL I WANT YOU TO DO IS TO BEAR MY CHILD.
AH... AHHHH!
GUH.... N, NO...!
NOOO! N...NO!
SOMEBODY ...! AHHHH!
NOOO OOOO!

ド!!

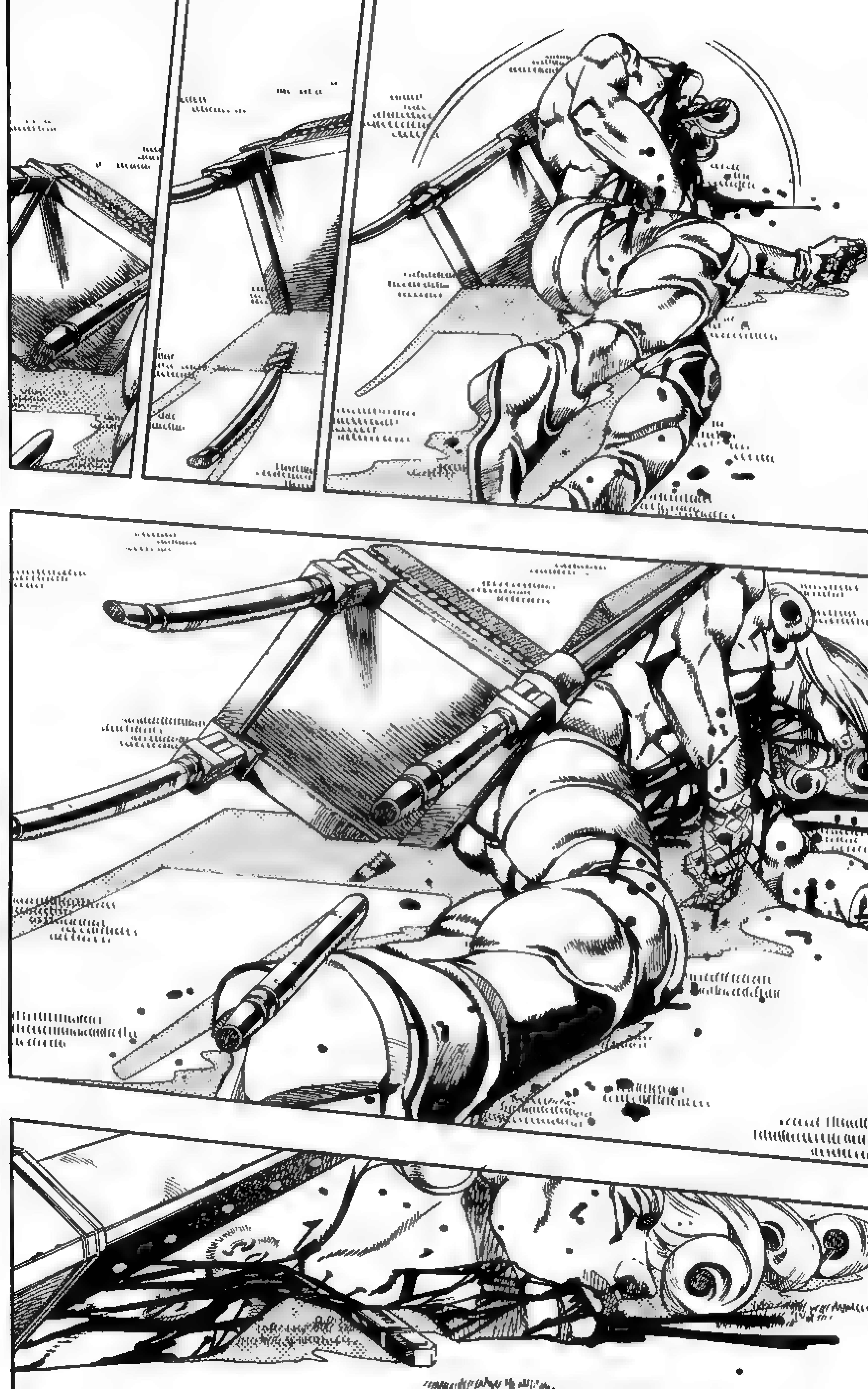
GUH...!
AGH...
WHAT ...?!
THAT'S ....
THIS 'SKIN'...
YOU'RE...?! YOU'RE 'STEEL'S'...
AH!

AHHHHH
!!

......
?
AHHHH!!
?
....WHAT ...?
AHHHH!
...GUH...
AGH...
UGH!
YOU ...
YOU ...!

AHHHH HH!
AHHH!
W... WAIT..
UGH!
YOU'RE LUCY STEEL...
WHAT IS YOUR MOTIVE? WHY WOULD STEEL'S WIFE...
GUH!
AHHHH HH!
GUHHH!

AHHH HH!
KUH...
GUH!
S...SOME ONE...
S....
SOMEONE... COME...
COME....



パタン
……
HAHH!
HAHH!
HAHH!
HAHH!

HAHH!
HAHH! HAHH!
HAHH! HAHH!
HAHH! HAHH! HAHH!
OH
OH!
OHH
OHHH
OHH!
OHHH!

AHH H!
AHH...
AAAH HHH!

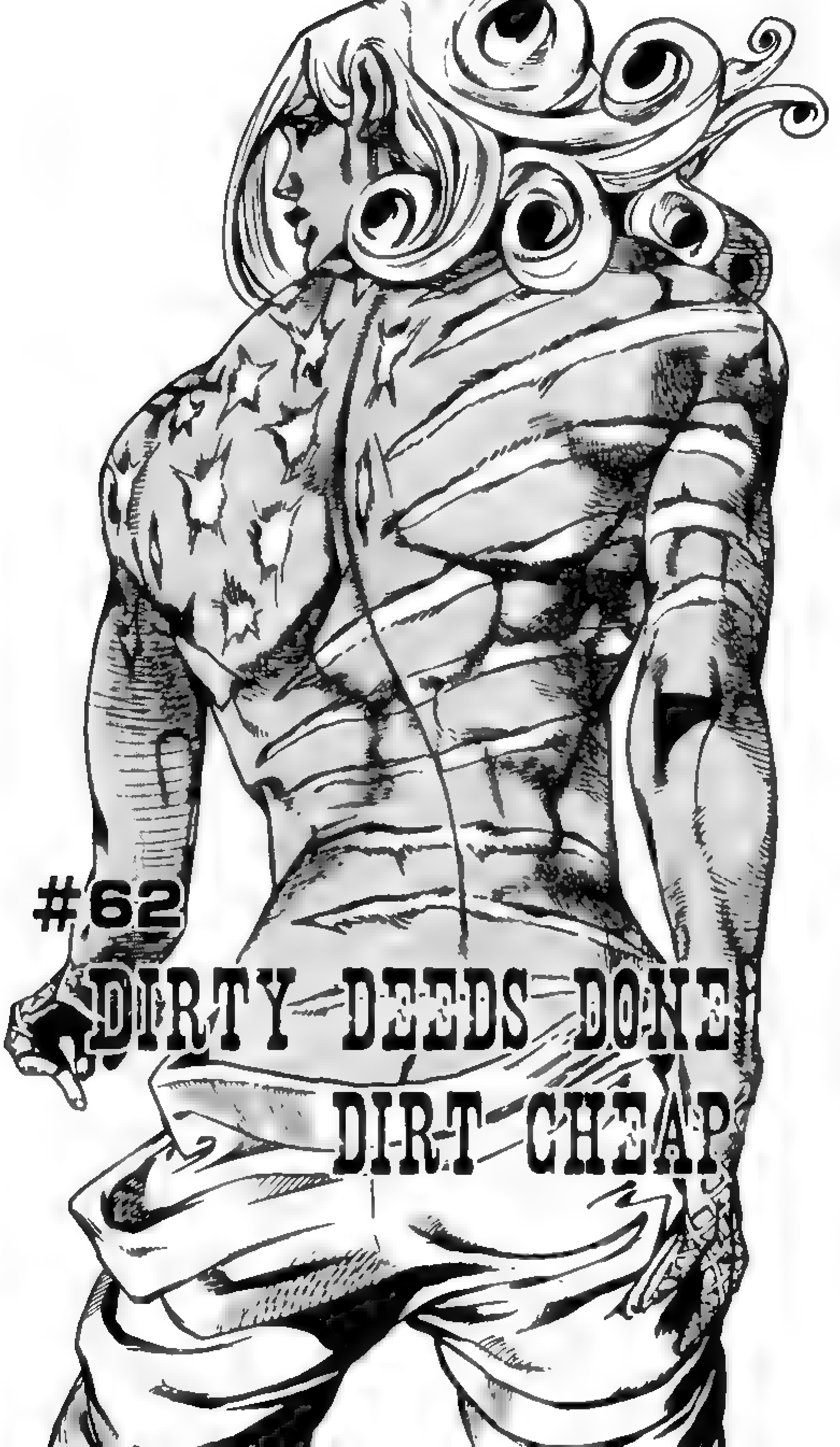
AHH H!
HAHH!
HAHH! HAHH!!
HAH! HAHH!
HAHH!
HA HH HH!
HAHH! HAHH! HAHH!
HAHH! HAHH! HAHH!

ドドドド
HAHH!
HAHH!
ドドドド
HAHH! HAHH! HAHH!
HAHH! HAHH!
ドドドド
AAA HHH !!!

HE'S...! THIS COUNTRY'S PRESIDENT...
AS I THOUGHT, THE PRESIDENT IS...!

AHHHHH!
A 'STAND USER' ...
AND 'THE DEVIL'.

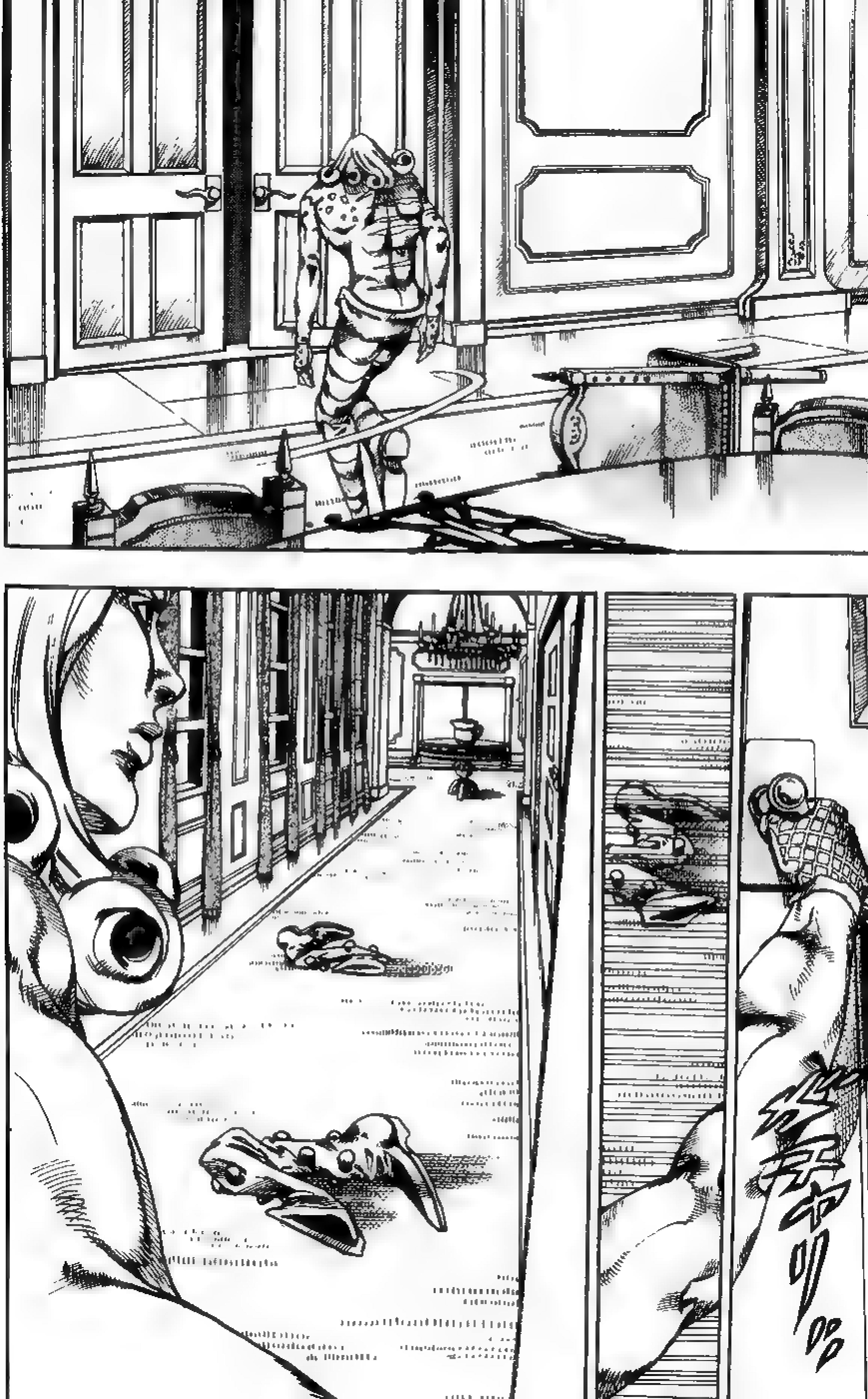
Jojo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 16, Chapter 3
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

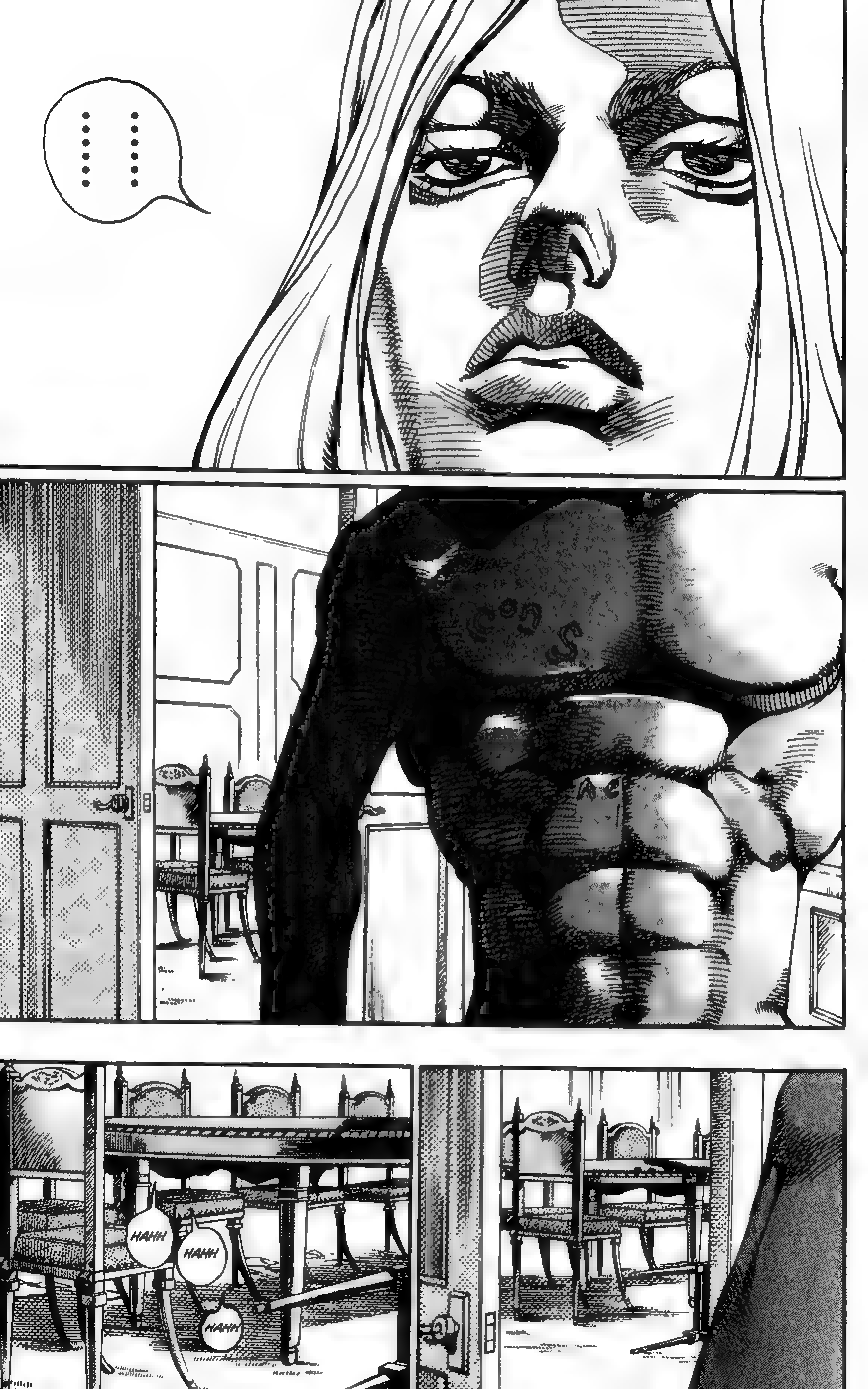

#62
DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP

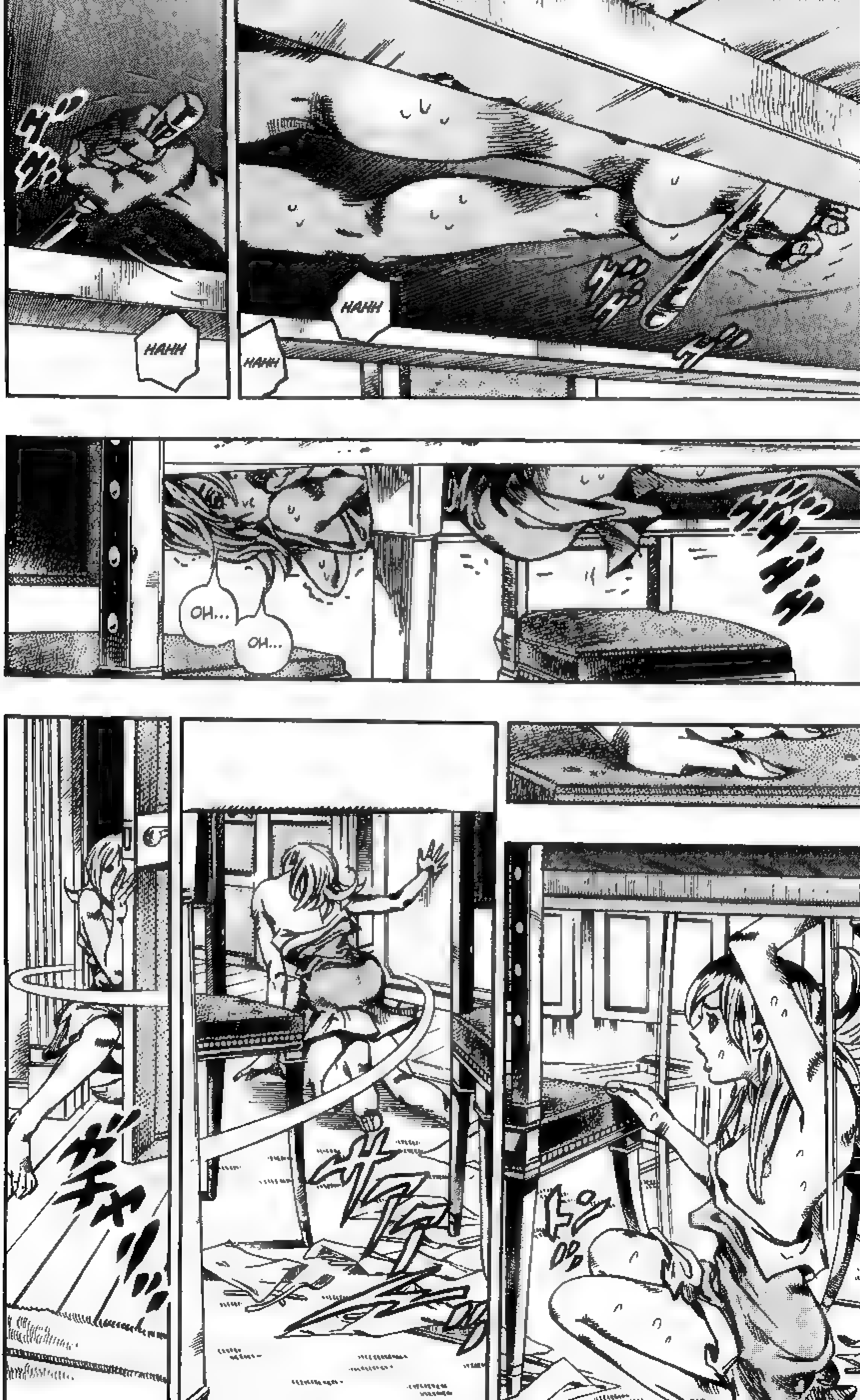
OHHH...
I... IT'S NO USE...
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
AHH...
IT'S ALL MY FAULT.
IT'S...
ALL MY FAULT ...
HAHH, HAHH
HAHH, HAHH
HAHH

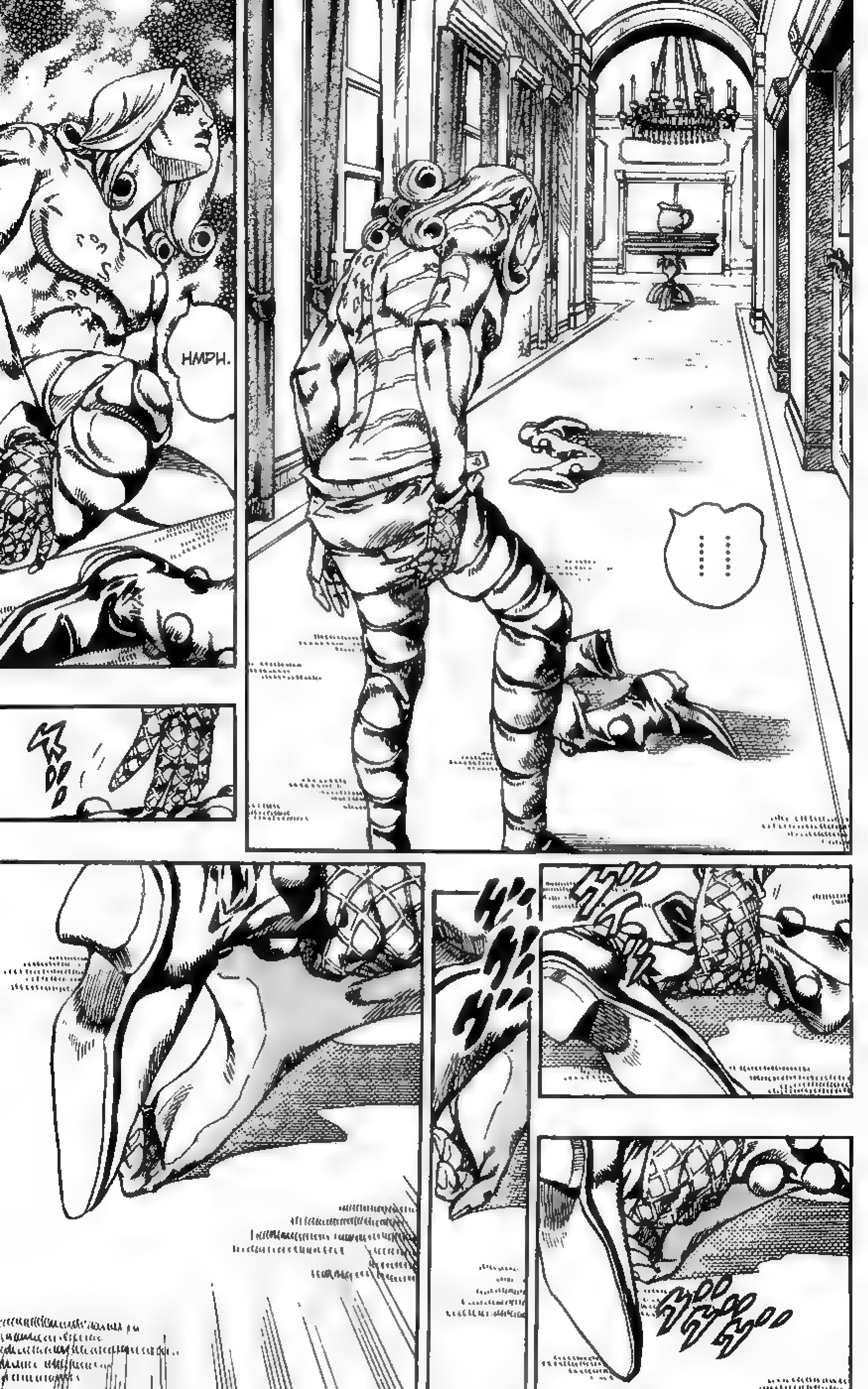
ドドド
HAHH
HAHH
WHAT JUST HAPPENED ...!?
HAHH
ド
I HAVE NO IDEA...HE DISAPPEARED UNDER THE 'CHAIR'... AND THE 'CHAIR' DISAPPEARED BEHIND HIS BACK. THE WOUND ON HIS THROAT IS GONE, TOO...
ドド
AHH... OHHH...
HE'S THE DEVIL...
...THE DEVIL'S ON HIS SIDE...NO MATTER WHO IT IS, I DOUBT THAT THEY'LL BE ABLE TO STOP THE PRESIDENT.
ド
ドド
IT'S...IT'S ALL MY FAULT. IF I HADN'T DONE THOSE THINGS AT KANSAS CITY...
PLEASE... PLEASE, AS LONG AS STEPHEN'S...

PLEASE, GOD, PROTECT HIM...!
OHHH...
PLEASE KEEP HIM SAFE...! FOR THAT, I...
TO PROTECT HIM, I'LL ...
I'LL GIVE UP ANYTHING ...!




......
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH


HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
OH...
OH...


HMPH.

SO IT WAS STEEL'S 'YOUNG WIFE' WHO'D BEEN IMPER-SONATING SCARLET...!

BUT NOW I'M EVEN MORE INTRIGUED.
EVEN MORE SO... I WON'T LET HER GET AWAY.
I... I HAVE TO ESCAPE!
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH

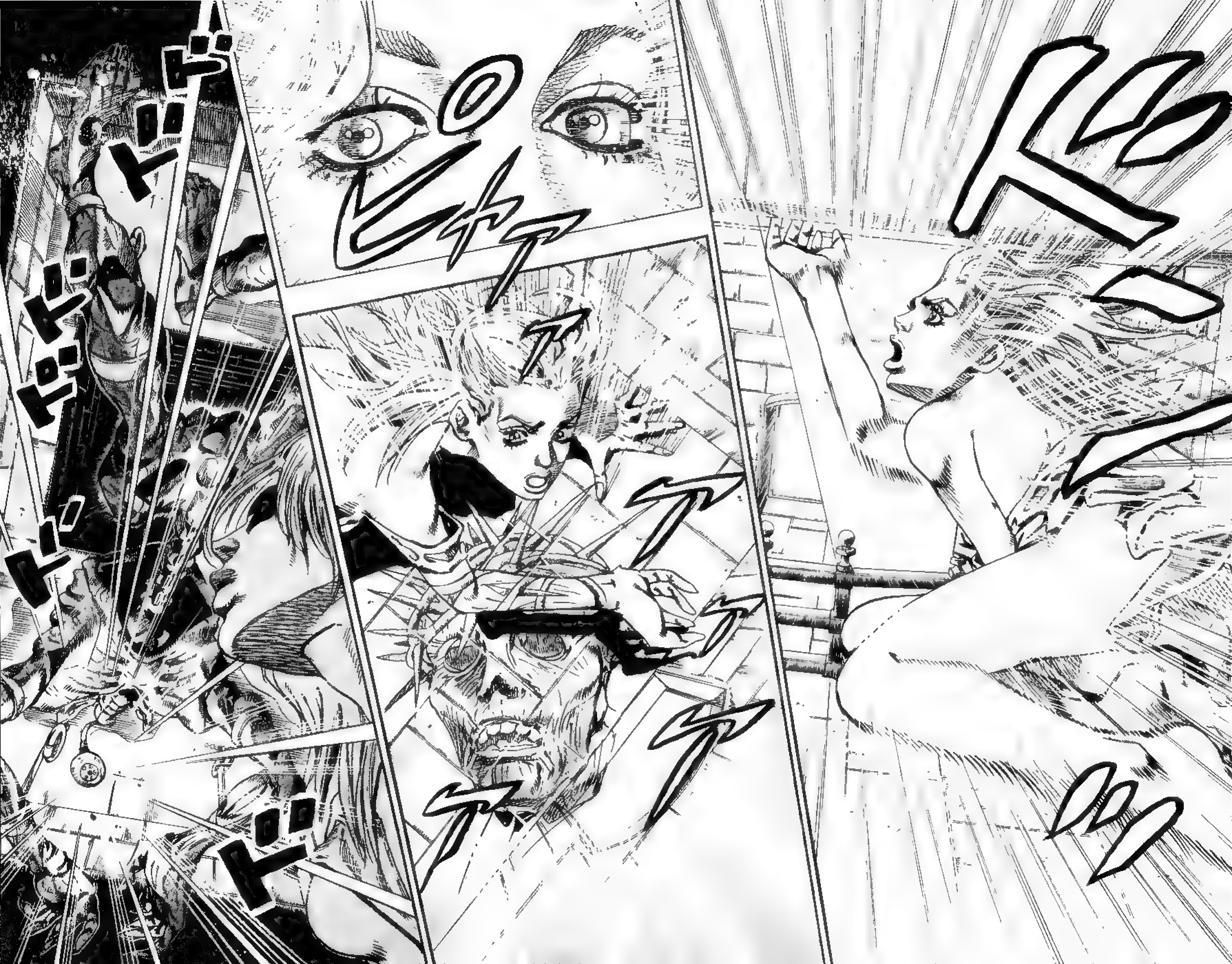
I HAVE TO ESCAPE!
HAHH... HAHH...
I HAVE TO ESCAPE!
I HAVE TO GET OUT OF THIS BUILDING SOMEHOW AND GET BACK TO STEPHEN!
HAHH. HAHH.
A WINDOW ?!
AHHH!
AHHH !
OH... NO...!
HAHH
HAHH ...
HAHH HAHH

THE 'RIGHT EYE' THAT FELL OUT OF MY POCKET A WHILE BACK...
IT DEFINITELY ROLLED UNDERNEATH THE DOOR INTO THIS ROOM...!
WHERE DID IT GO?!
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
WHERE IS IT?
IT SHOULD HAVE BEEN DRAWN TO THE OTHER 'CORPSE PARTS' IN THIS BUILDING AND ROLLED INTO THIS ROOM...
IF ONLY I COULD FIND IT, IT SHOULD SHOW ME 'AN ESCAPE ROUTE'!
PAUSE

HE CAME BACK! IT'S ALL OVER, HE'S FOUND ME!
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
'LUCY STEEL'...
YES, OF COURSE YOU DON'T.
I DO NOT KNOW WHY YOU'VE COME HERE...
AND WHAT HAPPENED TO MY REAL WIFE...I WILL INQUIRE ABOUT THOSE THINGS LATER. (THOUGH I DON'T MUCH CARE...)
WAS THAT 'HOT PANTS' ' STAND'S DOING? IF I REMEMBER CORRECTLY, YOU DO NOT HAVE A STAND ABILITY...
THE 'MEAT SPRAY'... NOW I UNDERSTAND. YOU CAME HERE UNDER HOT PANTS' ORDERS...

LISTEN. WHAT I AM TRYING TO SAY IS...
NOT FOR YOU TO OPEN THE DOOR.
I WILL NOW PROCEED TO BREAK THIS DOOR DOWN BY FORCE, BUT...
IF YOU DIE...
I WILL KILL YOUR HUSBAND, FIRST! AND THEN, YOUR FATHER...THIS IS A PROMISE.
DO NOT ATTEMPT TO COMMIT 'SUICIDE' IN FRONT OF ME.
IF YOU HAVE SIBLINGS, I WILL KILL THEM AS WELL. I'LL ELIMINATE THEIR EXISTENCE.
OH!
AHHH...
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
IS THAT FINE?
I'M COMING IN, LUCY.
IF YOU DON'T TRY ANYTHING, I WILL NOT DO ANYTHING... EVERYONE WILL BE HAPPY.
AHHHH!

AH!
BUT...
!?
A 'FIRE-PLACE'...
OHHH...!
THIS IS A FIRE-PLACE!
I CAN SEE A FAINT LIGHT...
A CHIMNEY...
THERE'S NO WAY I CAN CLIMB THIS...! IT'S SUCH A SMALL SPACE, AND TO HAVE TO CLIMB 'UP'...



ドドドドド
ドドド
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
THIS... ?!
ドドド
ドドドド

AAAA
IIIIIIII
EEEEE
EEEEEEE
EEEEEEE!!!

バキバキ
cons

HAHH
......
HAHH
HAHH

HAHH
HAHH HAHH
HAHH!
HAHH!
HAA
HAA
HAHH !
HAHH HAHH
HAHH HAHH
HAHH...
HAHH!
HAHH
GLANCE

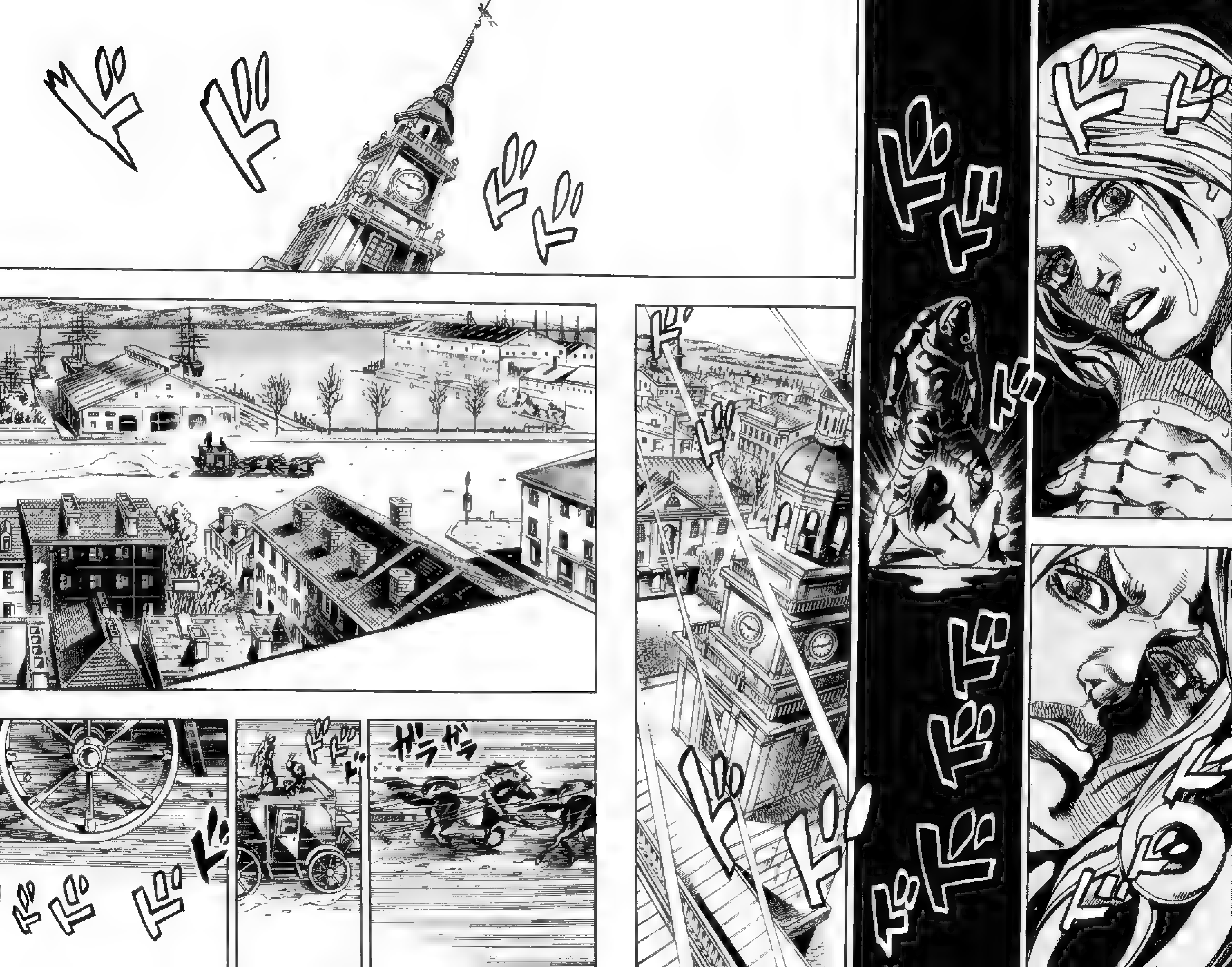
DID YOU SEE IT?
DID YOU SEE 'HIM' IN THE FIRE-PLACE?
I HID HIM IN THE CHIMNEY ...
'HIS' 'CORPSE'.
YOU KNEW ABOUT HIM, AND THEREFORE DECIDED TO INFILTRATE THIS BUILDING TO OBTAIN THE CORPSE...
THE REST OF IT IS SOMEWHERE ELSE.
ALL I MUST DO...IS FIND THE 'HEAD'.
AS I PROMISED, NO MATTER WHAT YOUR MOTIVES WERE, IF YOU DON'T DO ANYTHING DRASTIC, I WILL NOT DO ANYTHING, EITHER...
OF COURSE, EXCLUDING WHAT ALMOST OCCURRED ON TOP OF THAT TABLE.
NOW I UNDERSTAND WHY I FOUND YOU TO BE SO CUTE.
AND NOW, I FIND MYSELF EVEN MORE INFATUATED WITH YOU... I'VE TAKEN A LIKING TO YOU.
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH...
HAHH ...

HAHH
HAHH
I'D LIKE TO HAVE THE 'RIGHT EYE' BACK IN MY POSSESSION.
YOU SHOULD HAVE IT. WHERE IS IT? GIVE IT TO ME.
OH, YES...
WHERE HAVE YOU HIDDEN THE 'EYE' THAT GYRO GAVE YOU?
I REMEMBER! BEFORE I TAKE THOSE REMAINING CLOTHES OFF OF YOU...
SOMEONE TALKED TO ME, THEY TALKED TO ME, IN THAT CHIMNEY...
IS THERE.... IS THERE 'SOMEONE' IN THAT CHIMNEY?
HAHH
HAHH
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT?
HAHH

I WAS COVERED IN LIGHT... AND IT 'TALKED'...
THE 'LIGHT' TALKED...
HE SAID THAT I WOULD 'BEAR' IT...
NOT BY YOU... NOT BY YOU, PRESIDENT... IT TOLD ME THAT THIS WAS INEVITABLE...
LUCY STEEL! I'M TALKING ABOUT THE 'EYE'! WHERE HAVE YOU HIDDEN IT?!
GIVE ME THE 'EYE', RIGHT NOW!
I WAS SUR-ROUNDED BY LIGHT IN THAT CHIMNEY!
WHERE IS IT?! GIVE IT TO ME!

ドド…

THE LAST LOCATION OF IT...!
THE LAST 'CORPSE PART'... THE 'HEAD'!
LUCY STEEL, YOU...
THAT... THAT FACE, IMPRINTED ONTO YOUR SKIN...
WHAT...? IT CAN'T BE...
IT'S 'INSIDE' OF YOU...! YOU'VE BEEN ENDOWED WITH IT...
AND THIS WILL END WHEN IT'S BIRTHED...



ドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドドド
ドドドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドド
ドドド
ドド
ドドド
ガラガラ
ドドド

ELIMINATING 'MAGENTA'...

THAT CAN ONLY BE DONE WHEN HE 'DEACTIVATES HIS OWN STAND'....
THERE IS NO DOUBT THAT I CAN ACCOMPLISH THIS.
THE PROBLEM IS 'LUCY STEEL' ...
IF SHE IS CURRENTLY DISGUISED AS THE 'FIRST LADY', IN THAT BUILDING... IF THIS IS ALL TRUE,
WHEN CONSIDERED IN ANOTHER LIGHT,
IF LUCY IS ABLE TO SUCCESSFULLY DECIEVE THE PRESIDENT...

THE CHANCES OF GYRO OBTAINING THE 'CORPSE' INCREASES SIGNIFI-CANTLY.
HOWEVER! MY MAIN OBJECTIVE AND PRIORITY IS TO PROTECT LUCY.
...I MUST GO AND SAVE HER AT ONCE...! HER 'IDENTITY' IS ALREADY BECOMING REVEALED!
IN ANY EVENT, 'MAGENTA' KNOWS ABOUT THIS....
MR. STEEL!
CAN YOU HEAR ME? THERE WILL BE A BIT OF A SCUFFLE, SO BRACE YOURSELF!
I GUAR-ANTEE THAT I WILL HELP YOU!

WHAT WAS THAT...?
SOMETHING JUST JUMPED OUT OF MAGENTA'S COATTAILS...
...A 'LIZARD'?
WHY WOULD MAGENTA BE HIDING A 'CREATURE'...?
HE'S NOT THE TYPE TO TAKE CARE OF 'ANIMALS'... DID IT SOMEHOW LATCH ON TO HIM SOMEWHERE?
AND WHY WOULD IT SUDDENLY DECIDE TO DETACH ITSELF FROM HIM 'NOW'...?
AH!

EVEN WITH YOUR MINISCULE BRAIN, YOU'VE MANAGED TO STRATEGIZE.
IMPRESSIVE, MAGENTA ...

...
'DYNAMITE'. DAMN IT ALL...
HE MUST HAVE 'LIT' IT BEFORE HE ACTIVATED HIS STAND...
MR. STEEL, YOU ARE GOING TO FEEL A BIT OF A SHOCK! BEAR WITH IT!

'HARDENING OF THE BODY'... AND 'LEFT-SIDE ATAXIA'.
THE HORSES WILL NOT BE ABLE TO 'PERCEIVE' THEIR LEFT SIDE.

ドス!
ドス!
ドス!
ドス!
AGHH!

SNAP
UGH ...
MR. WEKAPIPO-OOOO.
FROM THE FIRST TIME WE MET, YOU'VE LOOKED DOWN ON ME, MADE ME LOOK LIKE AN IDIOT...
DON'T FUCK WITH ME, HUH?!
AND TO THINK, I KINDA LIKED YOU FOR A BIT, YOU KNOW?!
GUH'
GUH...

UGH...
GAAH!
ONCE I DECIDE TO 'TAKE REVENGE', I ALWAYS 'TAKE REVENGE'.
FIRST, I'M GONNA RIP OUT ONE OF YOUR EYES, LIKE WHAT HAPPENED TO ME.
I MISSED MY SHOT JUST NOW THOUGH, BY TWO CENTI-METERS TO THE LEFT!

THAT'S FOR TREATING PEOPLE LIKE ME LIKE SHIT!
LOOKS LIKE I'M GONNA HAVE TO TEACH YOU THAT PEOPLE WHO DON'T HAVE ANYTHIN' TO LOSE ARE THE SCARIEST TYPES, MR. SMARTASS!
!!

AGH
!
WHA
...?!
!!
WHAT
?!
WHAT
?!
THE TIRE AXLE FROM THE CARRIAGE ...AND THESE WIRES...
THAT'S... WEKAPIPO'S 'STEEL BALL'! THE ONE THAT HE THREW AT THE HORSES!

SHIT! I CAN'T BREATHE!
'20TH CENTURY BOY'!

YOU TRULY FRIGHTENED ME WITH YOUR STRATEGY OF 'EXPLO-SIVES', MAGENTA...
I BELIEVE I INFORMED YOU OF THIS BACK AT THE FROZEN STRAIT...
BUT AS ALWAYS, YOU MAKE ME REPEAT MYSELF.
TO HUMBLE YOURSELF, AND 'DEAL THE FINISHING BLOW QUICKLY'...

A PITY. EVEN IN THE WATER, WHERE YOU CAN'T BREATHE...
ONCE YOU TAKE YOUR DEFEN-SIVE STANCE, THERE IS NOT A SINGLE SOUL WHO COULD DEFEAT YOU...
WAIT...
THAT WAS...THAT 'CREATURE' THAT JUMPED OUT OF MAGENTA'S COATTAILS...
IT WAS NOT A LIZARD!
.... THOUGH IT WAS SMALL...
WAS IT NOT A 'DINOSAUR' ...?!
NO, IT CAN'T BE, THAT WAS...!
THAT WOULD MEAN THAT DIO HAS NOW HEARD ABOUT LUCY!

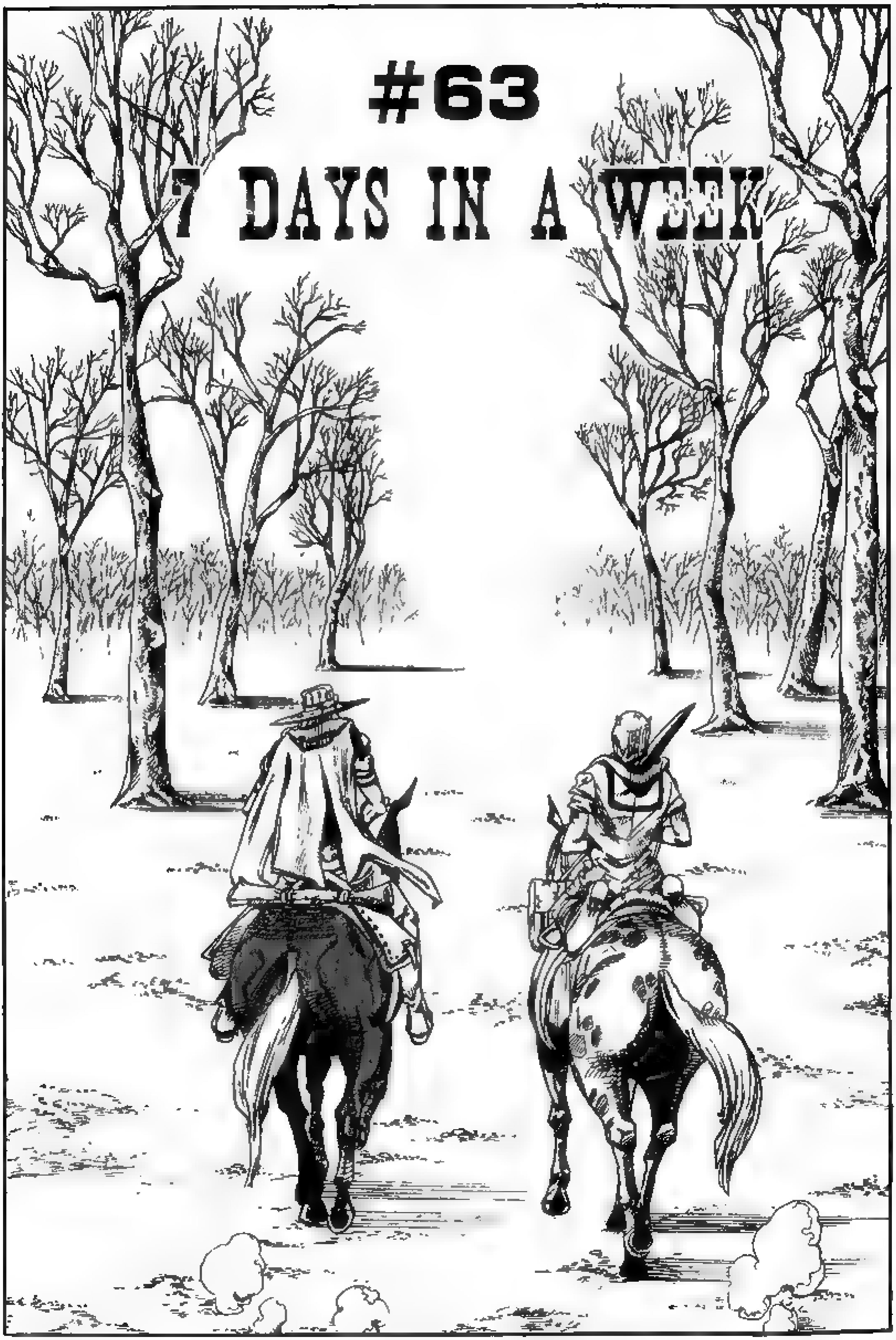
SHIT...
I'LL DEFI-NITELY ...
GET THE FUCK OUT OF HERE AND GET REVENGE, DAMN WEKAPIPO...
BUT... HMM, WHAT TO DO...
I WANT TO GET THESE GODDAMN WIRES OFF OF ME AS SOON AS POSSIBLE..
BUT IF I DEACTIVATE '20TH CENTURY BOY' HERE, I WON'T BE ABLE TO HOLD MY BREATH, AND I'LL DROWN.
BUT IF I DON'T DEAC-TIVATE MY ABILITY, I CAN'T GET THESE WIRES OFF...

'HE' JUST HAPPENED TO PASS BY, AND SAVED ME... I WAS SAVED BECAUSE 'HE' AND 'I' ARE BOUND TOGETHER BY SOME SORT OF FATE.
BACK AT THE FROZEN STRAIT,
I KNOW... 'HE'LL' COME HELP ME.
HMMM ... SHIT, WHAT SHOULD I DO?
HE'LL COME SOON... I WANNA SEE HIM... I'LL WAIT A LITTLE LONGER.
WISH 'DIO' WILL COME HELP ME SOON...
'DIO' WILL DEFINITELY LIKE ME, IF I TOLD HIM.
AND I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO KNOWS THAT 'THE FIRST LADY'S' REAL IDENTITY IS 'LUCY STEEL'. WEKAPIPO DOESN'T KNOW ABOUT IT, EITHER! IF I TELL 'HIM' ABOUT IT...
'DIO' WAS THE ONE WHO TOLD ME TO INVESTIGATE 'STEEL' IN THE FIRST PLACE! SO HE MUST BE WORRIED ABOUT ME RIGHT ABOUT NOW.

ドドドドドドド
ド
ドドドド
ドド

NEW YORK
MANHATTAN
PHILADELPHIA
THE WATER OF THE DELAWARE RIVER KEPT UP ITS CONSTANT RHYTHM AS IT FLOWED PAST THE RIVER BOTTOM... AND AS TIME PASSED, 'MAGENTA MAGENTA'...
STOPPED WAITING.
AND STOPPED THINKING.

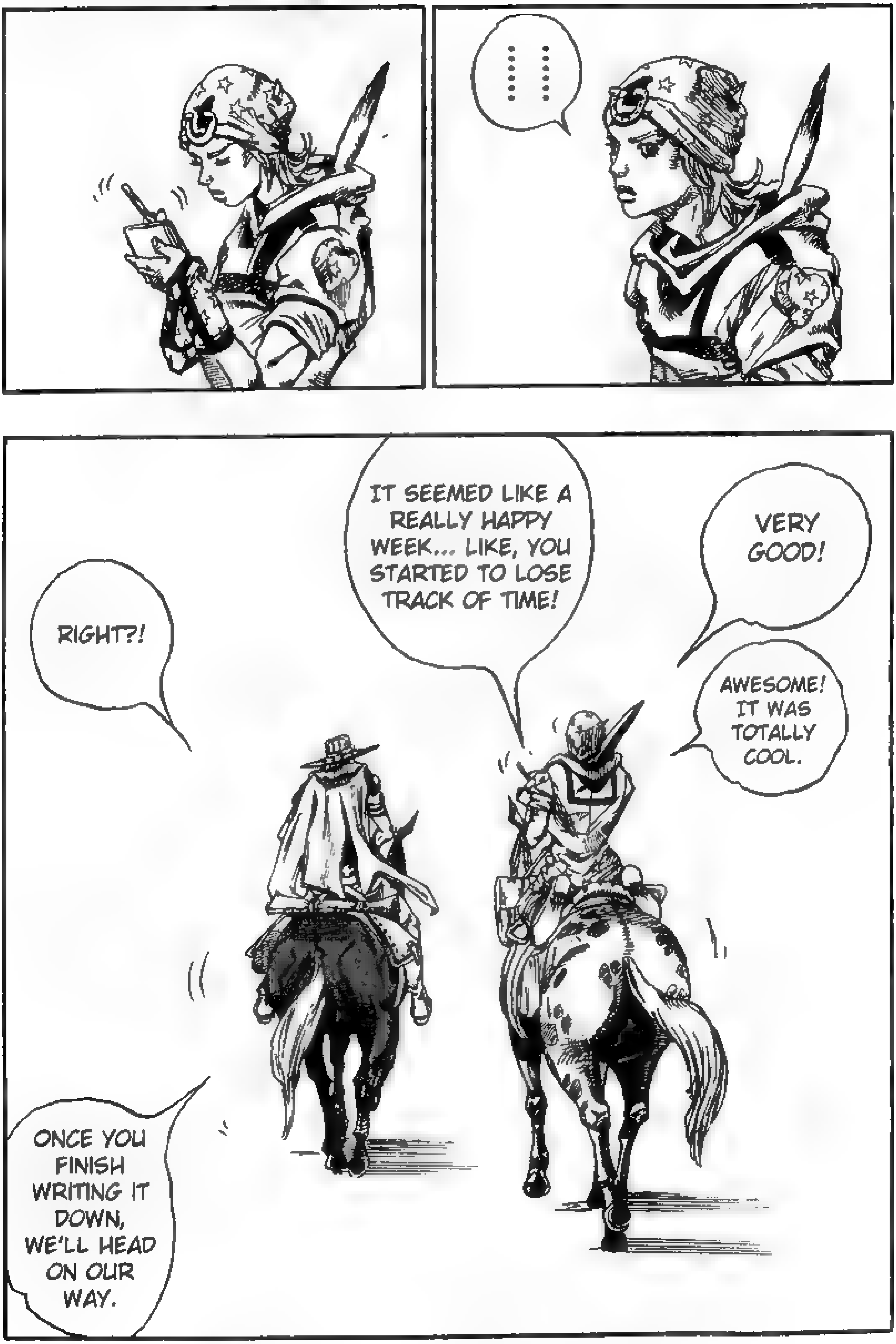
JoJo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 16, Chapter 4
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar


#63
7 DAYS IN A WEEK

BUT I JUST CAME UP WITH A 'GAG'.
SO, JOHNNY.
I KNOW THIS IS GONNA SOUND LIKE A RIPOFF OF SOMETHING ELSE...
......
THE TITLE IS "THIS IS HOW I SPEND MY WEEK"...
BUT,
I'M GONNA SAY THE 'DAYS OF THE WEEK' IN ITALIAN, STARTING FROM 'MONDAY' ALL THE WAY TO 'SUNDAY'.
I'M GONNA TURN STUPID ON 'WEDNESDAY', AND THEN MAKE SOME ESPRESSO ON 'THURSDAY'.

'SUNDAY' IS A DAY OF REST.
ON 'FRIDAY', I'LL MIX IN THE SUGAR, AND ON 'SATURDAY' I'LL DRINK IT.
ALRIGHT, HERE I GO.
'LUNEDI', MONDAY! 'L-U-N-E-D-I'!
ANSWER. LUNEDI
'MARTEDI', TUESDAY! 'M-A-R-T-E-D-I'!
ANSWER. MARTEDI
'ME....'
WHAT WAS IT AGAIN?! I FORGOT! AHA-HAHAHAHAHA!
ANSWER. MERCOLEDI

WHAT WAS IT? WHAT WAS IT? EHEHEHE-HEHEHE!
ANSWER GIOVEDI
UM, WHAT WAS IT AGAIN? EEEEEEEEEHE-HEHEHEHEHE!
ANSWER. VENERDI
'DOMENICA', SUNDAY.
ANSWER DOMENICA
AAAA HAHA-HAHA-HAHA!
I COMPLETELY FORGOT!
ANSWER SATURDAY. 'SABATO'






16 DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP (END)

# Volume 16 Editors' Notes

Hello, readers! We here at JoJo Project like to try and make reading Steel Ball Run an entirely natural experience for English-speaking audiences, but there are still some things from the original Japanese that we feel could use additional explanation or commentary.

**'Stephen Steel'** - Named for musician Stephen Stills, who is a solo artist, a member of the band Buffalo Springfield, and the Stills in Crosby, Stills, and Nash (or occasionally Crosby, Stills, Nash, and Young when they performed with Neil Young, who is himself a music reference in the fourth JoJo arc with his album Harvest). Shizuka highly recommends reading the Lucy and Stephen flashback scene in this volume while listening to Crosby, Stills, and Nash performing "Teach your Children".

**'Funny Valentine'** - named for the classic jazz song, My Funny Valentine. This is, incidentally, the same song for which Faye Valentine (of Cowboy Bebop fame) was named. You are now imagining Funny Valentine dressed as Faye Valentine.

**'Immaculate Conception'** - If you didn't realize what was going on with Lucy and the Corpse's head, please look up the phrase "Immaculate Conception" on Wikipedia or somewhere. We'd really rather not get roasted over hot coals for messing up editors' notes on religious matters.

**'Magenta's Death'** - We're pretty sure it's a shoutout to the "deaths" of Cars in part 2 and Anubis in part 3.

Thank you for following our releases! We hope you'll stick with us and continue to enjoy the story together in the future!

***JoJo Project***
***April 2010***

So SEXY …
A SPECIAL GIFT FROM JOJO PROJECT'S SPECIAL FRIEND, JOSEPHSK.

JUMP COMICS
STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン
荒木飛呂彦
VOL.17 ( D4C )

★この作品はフィクションです。実在の人物・
団体・事件などには、いっさい関係ありません。

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

D4C vol.17

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# "STEEL BALL RUN" RACE

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中、ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。
なんとＳＢＲレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を明けた！
アクセル・ROとの死闘の果てに、遺体を全て大統領に奪われてしまったジョニィ。その後、7th.STAGEを７着で、ジャイロは６着でゴールした。そして、残る遺体『頭部』の手がかりが無い２人は、ディオの持つ『左眼球部』を奪い取る事に。
一方、大統領夫人になりすましていたルーシーであったが、遂に正体を知られてしまう！ 迫る大統領から逃げる中、謎の光に包まれたルーシーは、なんと最後の遺体「頭部」をそのお腹に宿していた!! その頃、ジャイロ達に頼まれ、ルーシーを護衛しに来たウェカピポは、なぜかスティールを襲っているマジェントに遭遇。苦戦の末、マジェントを倒すが、ルーシーの正体をディオに盗み聞きされてしまった…。8th.STAGE開始直後、遺体を狙う男たちがフィラデルフィアに集結!!

全行程中にニューヨークを含め９ヵ所のチェックポイントを設定。そこでレース順位、走行タイム、不正行為を確認する。そして各チェックポイント間のレースを『STAGE』と呼び、STAGEごとにトップ通過者には賞金とタイムボーナスが与えられる！

START
SAN DIEGO

1st. STAGE 15,000m
2nd STAGE 1,200km
3rd.STAGE 510km
4th STAGE 1,250km
5th STAGE 780km
6th STAGE 690km
7th STAGE 1,300km
8th.STAGE 240km

GOAL
NEW YORK

## 『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは

太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km　優勝賞金5千万ドル!!(60億円)
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！

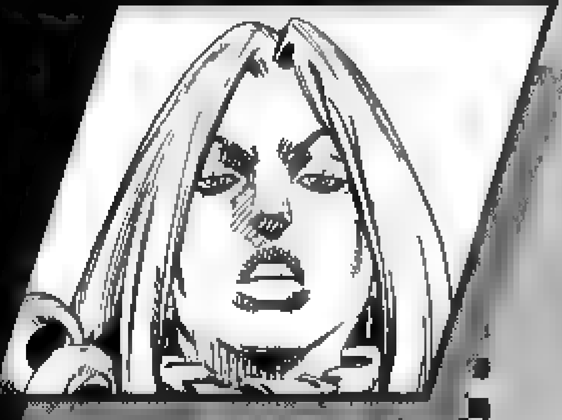
そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

**ジャイロ・ツェペリ**

ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家叛逆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。

**ジョニィ・ジョースター**

元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。



**ファニー・ヴァレンタイン**

第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。ＳＢＲレースを利用して、遺体を集めようとしている。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。「頭」「左眼」以外の全ての遺体を持つ。

**ウェカピポ**

ネアポリス王国の元王族護衛官にして鉄球使い。ジャイロ達に頼まれ、ルーシーを護衛する。

**ディエゴ・ブランドー**

通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。ＳＢＲレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。遺体の一部「左眼」を持つ。

**ルーシー・スティール**

スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は弱冠14歳!? 遺体の一部「頭」をお腹に宿している。

**スティーブン・スティール**

40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。ＳＢＲの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.17

## CONTENTS

D4C


#64

CHOCOLATE DISCO PART① 7

#65

CHOCOLATE DISCO PART② 41

#66

D4C PART① 75

#67

D4C PART② 119

#68

D4C PART③ 167

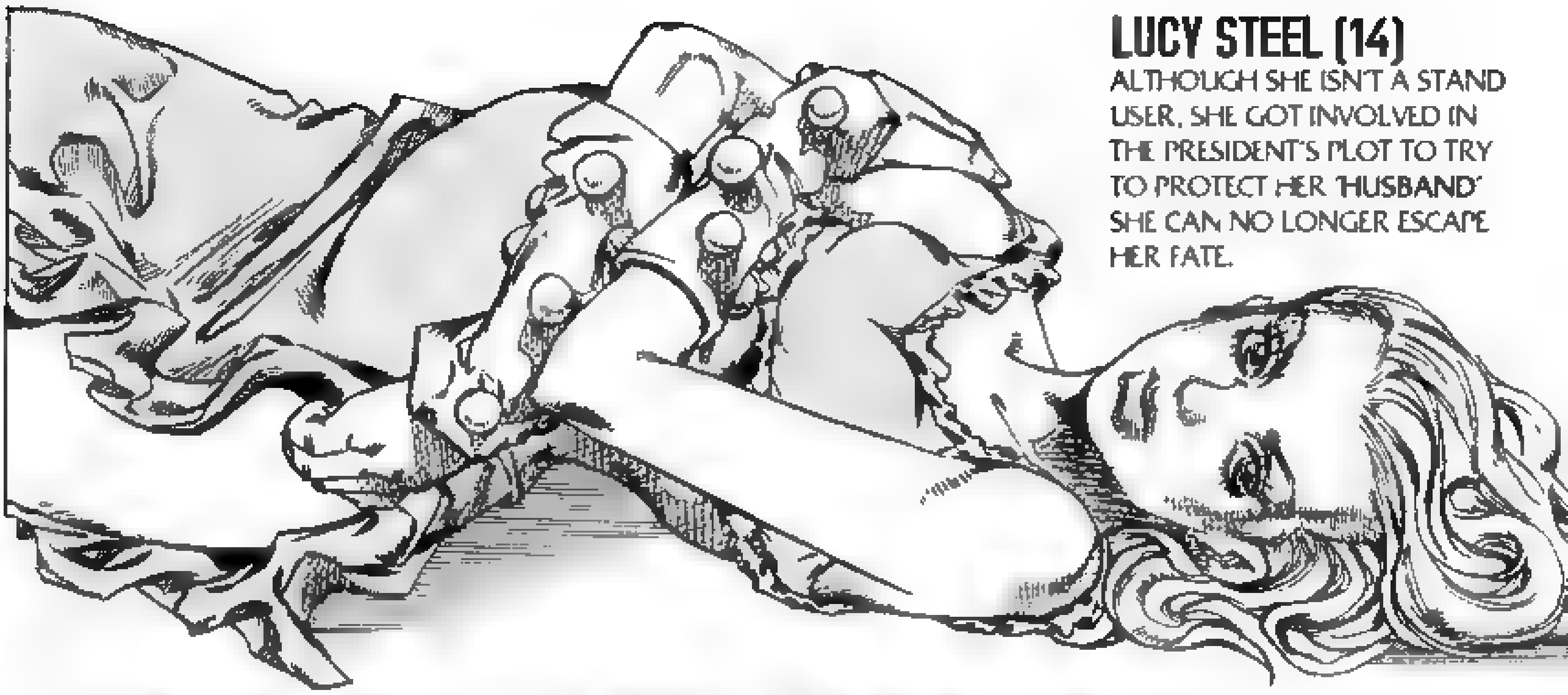
# #64
# CHOCOLATE DISCO
## PART ①

**DIEGO BRANDO (20), COMMONLY KNOWN AS 'DIO'**

A STAND USER WHO HAS THE ABILITY TO CONTROL 'DINOSAURS', WHO IS CURRENTLY IN POSSESSION OF THE 'LEFT EYE' (A CORPSE PART). HE'S A GENIUS JOCKEY WHOSE GOAL WAS TO WIN THE SBR RACE FOR THE FAME, BUT HIS AMBITIONS SKYROCKETED ONCE HE FOUND OUT THE TRUE MEANING BEHIND THIS EVENT. NOW WHAT HE REALLY DESIRES IS POWER AND REVENGE AGAINST SOCIETY.

## LUCY STEEL (14)

ALTHOUGH SHE ISN'T A STAND USER, SHE GOT INVOLVED IN THE PRESIDENT'S PLOT TO TRY TO PROTECT HER 'HUSBAND.' SHE CAN NO LONGER ESCAPE HER FATE.



**PRESIDENT VALENTINE OF THE UNITED STATES OF VALENTINE (48):** A STAND USER, IN POSSESSION OF ALL THE CORPSE PARTS SAVE FOR THE LEFT EYE.HE USED THE SBR RACE AS A PRETENSE IN ORDER TO GAIN THE 'MYSTERIOUS CORPSE' THAT MADE HIM A STAND USER. HE BELIEVES THAT THE CONSOLIDATED 'HOLY CORPSE' IS A POWER THAT IS NECESSARY TO CREATE AN 'EVERLASTING EMPIRE'.

## WEKAPIPO (31)

A FORMER MEMBER OF THE ELITE GUARD OF THE KINGDOM OF NAPLES. A STEEL BALL USER. WHILE HE'S DISTANCING HIMSELF FROM THE 'CORPSE' ORDEAL, HE STILL DESIRES TO RETURN TO THE COUNTRY THAT HAS SHUNNED HIM.

## STEPHEN STEEL (53)

THE PROMOTER OF THE SBR RACE, AND LUCY'S HUSBAND ON PAPER. ALL HE WANTS IS THE RACE'S SUCCESS AND LUCY'S HAPPINESS.

## HOT PANTS (23)

A STAND USER, AND A NUN OF THE VATICAN. SHE BELIEVES THAT THE ONLY WAY SHE CAN BE 'FORGIVEN' FOR LETTING HER YOUNGER BROTHER DIE IS RETRIEVING SOMETHING 'HOLY', AND THUS SHE JOINED THE RACE TO COLLECT THE CORPSE PARTS FOR THE VATICAN. SHE'S CURRENTLY WITHDRAWN FROM THE RACE.

## GYRO ZEPPELI (24)

AN ASSISTANT TO THE KINGDOM OF NAPLES' EXECUTIONER. A STEEL BALL USER. HE JOINED THE SBR RACE IN ORDER TO PARDON A SMALL BOY WHO WAS WRONGFULLY ACCUSED. HE HAS 'PRIDE' IN HIS STATUS THAT HAS BEEN HANDED DOWN THE FAMILY LINE, BUT HE BELIEVES THAT HE ALSO NEEDS TO 'UNDERSTAND' IT. HIS PRIDE WON'T ALLOW THE PRESIDENT TO GET A HAND ON THE 'CORPSE'

## JOHNNY JOESTAR (19)

A STAND USER AND A FORMER JOCKEY. ALTHOUGH HE JOINED THE SBR RACE TO CONFRONT HIS CURSED FATE, HE NOW BELIEVES THAT THIS MYSTERIOUS 'CORPSE' WILL SAVE HIM. THAT'S WHY HE CAN'T LET THE PRESIDENT HAVE THE 'CORPSE'.

カッ
カッ
カッ
ガッ

RERO RERO
RERA
IT'S HIS HORSE'S.
HE CAME HERE 5 OR 6 MINUTES AGO...
SPIT!

LOOKS LIKE HE'S NOT ABOUT TO LEAVE PHILA-DELPHIA ANYTIME SOON...
BUT WHERE IS HE GOING? ...HE'S NOWHERE NEAR THE COURSE ROUTE FOR THE 8TH STAGE.
LIBERTIES
IT CAN'T BE, THAT BASTARD... DO YOU THINK HE'S GOING TO MAKE A DEAL WITH THE PRESIDENT AND HAND THE 'EYE' OVER?!
NO!
THAT'S IMPOS-SIBLE.
DIO DOESN'T COOPERATE WITH ANYONE... THAT'S JUST HOW HE IS.
THE REASON HE TEAMED UP WITH SANDMAN BACK IN MISSISSIPPI WAS JUST SO HE COULD USE HIM. IT WAS JUST FOR SHOW...
BESIDES, THE 'LEFT EYE' THAT DIO HAS RIGHT NOW IS HIS 'TRUMP CARD'!
HE'D NEVER GIVE IT UP LIKE THAT, IN A NEGOTIA-TION.
DIO MUST ALSO BE LOOKING TO GET 'ALL' THE CORPSE PARTS IN THE END!
HE'D PROBABLY ... IF HE WAS PUSHED TO IT, HE'D PROBABLY ATTEMPT TO ASSAS-SINATE THE PRESIDENT.
......
GYRO, NOT IN THAT DIREC-TION.
THE OTHER WAY. WE NEED TO TRAVEL 'DOWNWIND'... HE'S A 'DINOSAUR', HE'LL BE ABLE TO TRACK OUR SCENT.
AND SOME-THING...
I FEEL LIKE SOME-THING'S OFF...

WE'RE ON A BRICK ROAD, SO THE TRACKS AREN'T VERY CLEAR, BUT...
I THINK SOMEONE ELSE IS ALSO TRACKING DIO DOWN, TOO...
'SOME-ONE ELSE'.
..........
IF YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT THAT TRACK THERE, THE ONE WE CAN'T IDENTIFY...
IT PRO-BABLY HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH US.
IT MIGHT JUST BE ME, BUT I THINK I SAW THE SAME TRACK A WHILE BACK.
....I SEE.
THEN I GUESS IT'S NOT JUST YOU.

IT'S POSSIBLE THAT THE PRESIDENT SENT SOMEONE TO KEEP AN EYE ON DIO.
THEY CAN'T JUST LET DIO DO WHATEVER THE HELL HE WANTS, AFTER ALL.
BUT I THOUGHT THAT THE PRESIDENT WOULD MOVE TO GET RID OF DIO AFTER HE FOUND THE CORPSE'S 'HEAD'.
MAYBE... HE FOUND THE 'HEAD' ALREADY.
3:39 PM PHILADELPHIA INDEPENDENCE HALL, 400M TO THE SOUTH
HE MIGHT HAVE 'FOUND IT'...
WE SHOULD HURRY. OH, AND...
INCLUDING DIO'S TRACKER, HOW MANY ENEMIES DO WE HAVE, AGAIN...?

GYRO... I FOUND HIM.
IT'S DIO, I SAW HIM.
HE JUST WENT INTO THAT ALLEY ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE PARK!
DID HE NOTICE YOU AT ALL?
I DON'T THINK SO...

BEYOND THAT ALLEY... IS INDEPEN-DENCE HALL...
ALRIGHT...
I'LL GO AROUND THE RIGHT SIDE OF THE PARK. YOU FOLLOW HIM DOWN THE ALLEY...
WE'LL SANDWICH HIM FROM BOTH SIDES.
WAIT, GYRO!
WAIT!

STRIDE !!
THAT'S 'WEKA-PIPO'!
WEKAPI-PO'S HERE!
WEKAPIPO'S GOING AFTER DIO!
?
WHAT THE HELL? WEKAPIPO... ISN'T HE SUPPOSED TO BE LOOKING FOR LUCY STEEL?
WHY IS HE GOING AFTER DIO? WERE THOSE "TRACKS' FROM BEFORE WEKAPIPO'S?
NO, I KNOW WEKAPIPO'S HORSE... THOSE ARE COMPLETELY DIFFERENT FROM THE 'HOOFPRINTS' BACK THERE.

I HAVE NO GODDAMN CLUE WHY HE'S HERE...
ANYWAY, OUR FIRST PRIORITY IS DIO... RIGHT NOW, WE NEED TO CORNER DIO AND BEAT HIM DOWN!
...ALRIGHT. NOW, GYRO, THERE'S JUST ONE THING...
THAT I WANT TO CLARIFY WITH YOU.
WE'RE GOING TO GO AND CORNER DIO AND TAKE THE 'LEFT EYE'.
BUT, OF COURSE... HE'LL RETALIATE, USING HIS 'STAND'. IF WE EASE UP ON HIM, HE'LL KILL US BOTH.
...I JUST WANT TO KNOW WHAT YOU'LL DO WHEN HE STARTS FIGHTING BACK.

JOHNNY HAS THE ABILITY TO DISCARD ANYTHING.
JOHNNY'S EYES ARE 'KILLER'S EYES'.
IT'S WRONG TO DESTROY THE 'CORPSE'... STOP! JUST GIVE THE 'CORPSE PART' TO HIM!
JOHNNY! STOP! EVEN IF WE LOSE HERE...
EVEN HIS 'HU-MAN-ITY'.
JOHNNY! DON'T KILL HIM...
.... ALRIGHT !?
I'M PREPARED TO 'SHOOT' HIM, IF NEED BE.

......
DON'T KILL HIM?

HEY!
DON'T GET THE WRONG FUCKING IDEA!
THERE'S ONE THING I WANNA CLARIFY WITH YOU!
OUR ONLY OBJECTIVE IS THE 'CORPSE'! ...WE'RE NOT GODDAMN TER-RORISTS!
WE'LL PUMMEL HIM AND TAKE THE 'LEFT EYE'! TO GET THE 'HOLY CORPSE'!
THAT'S IT! WHAT ELSE IS THERE?!
......
ALRIGHT.... ALL WE'RE GOING TO DO IS...
TAKE THE 'LEFT EYE' FROM DIO...

......
A PERSON'S 'ANGER' CAN BUILD... 'JUST TAKE THE EYE'? ...HOPE-FULLY, IT'LL BE THAT SIMPLE...
......

A HORSE.
I SEE SOMEONE'S HORSE ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT BUILDING... THAT HORSE IS...?

CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
!

WHAAAAAT?!

IMPOSSIBLE! IT CAN'T BE! THAT'S ...! HE'S...!
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK

GYRO, BEHIND YOU!
HE'S BEHIND YOU!
THAT'S THE PRESIDENT! WHAT'S GOING ON!? HE'S ALONE?! HE'S OUT IN THE OPEN!

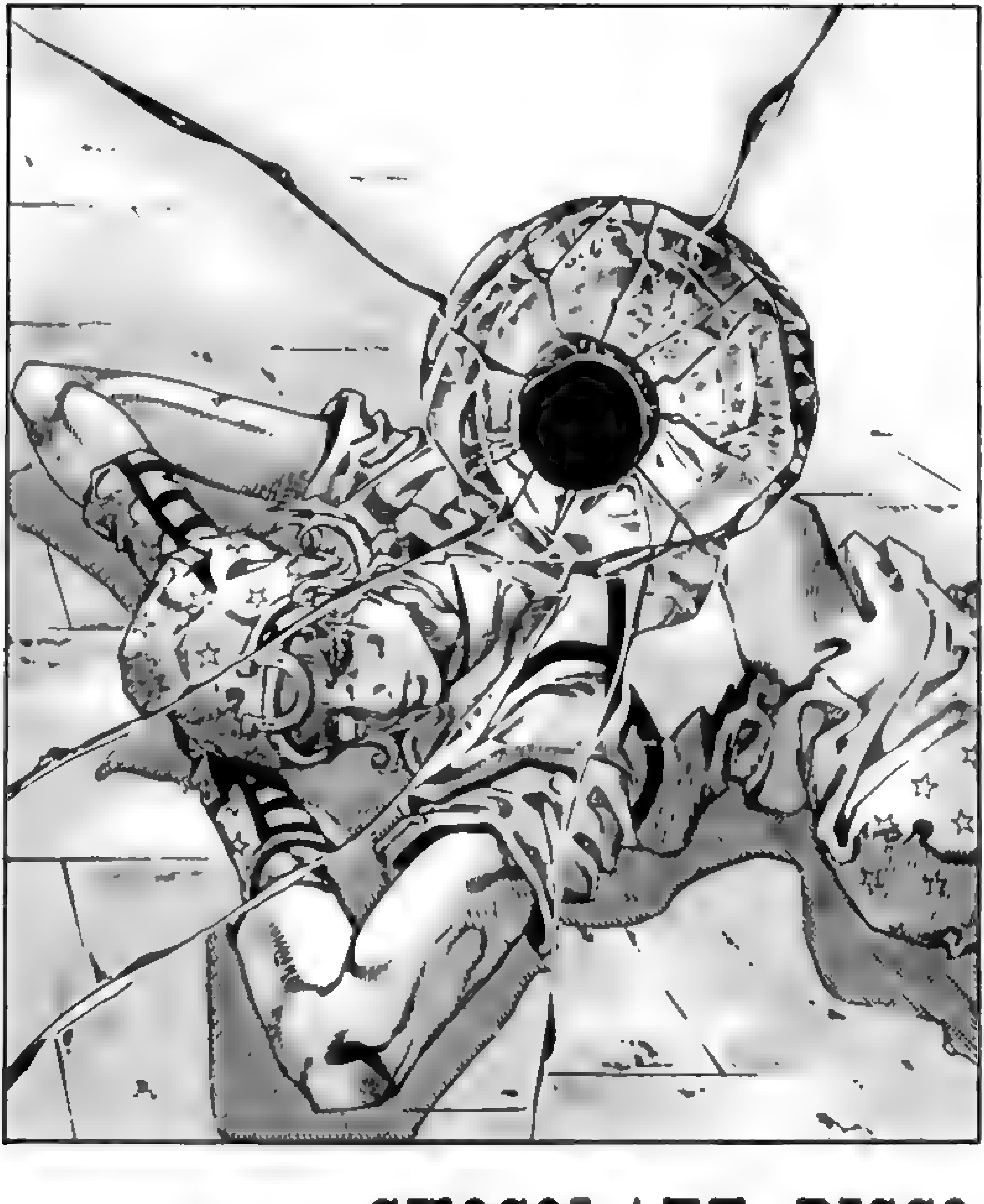
GYRO!? WHAT ARE YOU DOING?! BEHIND YOU! THERE'S SOMEONE APPROACHING YOU FROM BEHIND!!
GYRO!
JOHNNY ?

AH!
GYROOOOOOOOOOO!
(WHY DOESN'T HE REALIZE?!)

YOU...
GUH...
UGH...

ドドドド
ドド

Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 17, Chapter 1
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar
Special Thanks to #jojopro and Hox



# #65 CHOCOLATE DISCO PART②

ド
WHAT ...?
?
ME ...?
ド ド ド
WHAT JUST HAPP- ENED?
I...I GOT SHOT! I...? WH, WHAT...?
ド ド ド ド ド
......

ドドドド
ドドド
ドド
ドド
......
ドド
JOHNNY?!
A GUN-SHOT?
AH ?!
!?
'BEHIND THAT TREE'...

HEY! YEAH, YOU! STAY RIGHT THERE!
DON'T FUCKING MOVE!

……
ドドドド
!?……
ドドドド

STEP
STEP
ドドド
ドドドド
ドド

GUH
...
FWEH...
NEIIIGH

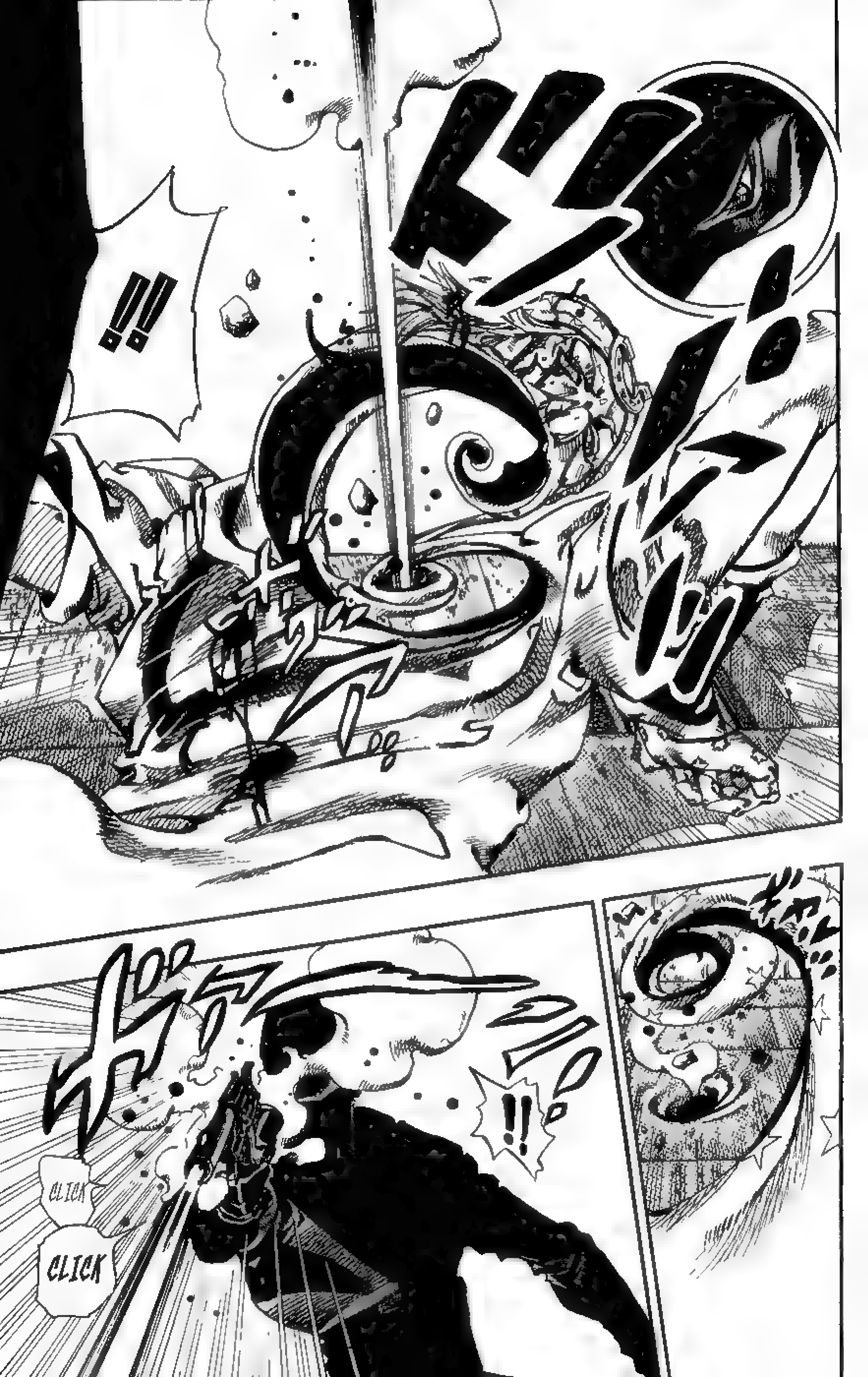
AGH!

......
AH...
GUH...
AGH..
SLIDE
DRAG
DRAG
YOUR LEGS ...
Y...
YOU...
YOU'RE ...
HOW...
THIS 'STAND'...

AHHH HH!
AHHH HH!
WAAA HHH!
WHAT THE HELL!? (ANOTHER GUNSHOT!)
JOHNNY !
AH!

YOU BASTARDS!
HOW MANY OF YOU ARE THERE?!
STAND USERS'
AT LEAST COUNTING THIS GUY...
AND THE GUY BEHIND THAT TREE
AND THE ONE WITH JOHNNY
...THERE ARE AT LEAST 3 OF THEM!

AH...
AGH...


!!
!!
CLICK
CLICK

JOHNNY JOESTAR.
HIS LEGS MOVED...
INTO THE GUTTER...
JOHNN YYYY!!
ドドドド

BUT, IN ANY CASE, JOHNNY IS DISPOSED OF...
HIS WOUNDS ARE FATAL.
CLACK

YOU! I TOLD YOU TO STAY, SO...
STAY THERE, GOD-DAM-MIT!
JOHNNY... J...
W... WHERE DID HE GO?!
WHAT ?!
THAT WAS... WEKAPIPO?!
WHAT WAS THAT, JUST NOW?!

BEEP

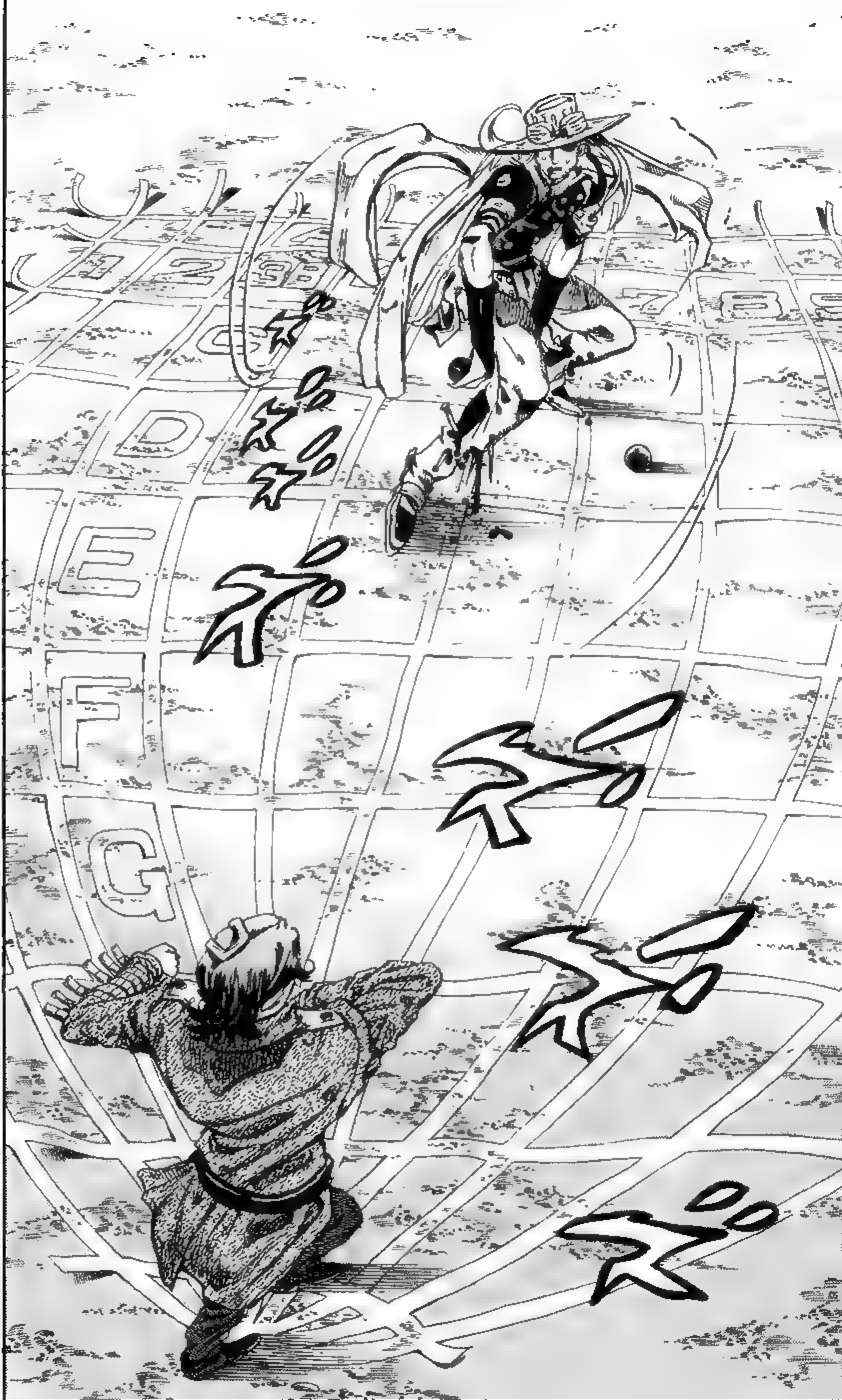
GUH!

M...
MY...
SLIP
MY 'STEEL BALL'?!
!?
AH!

BEEP
ドス
ドス
AGH!
ドス
ドス

WHO AAA!
H... HE...!
BASTARD!

CLACK
CLACK
CLACK

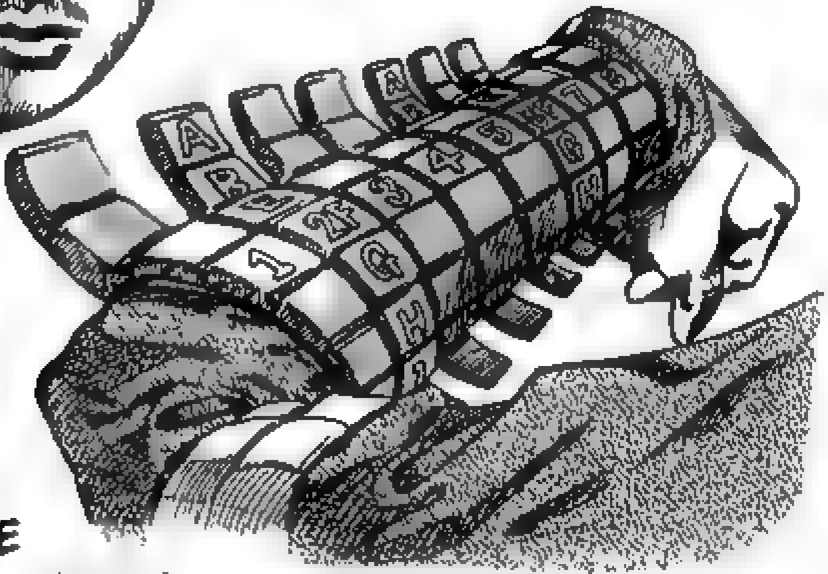

D
E
F
G

THESE BOXES ...!
PLUS, WHAT'S WORSE IS...
THE SITUATION WITH JOHNNY!! WHO ATTACKED HIM, AND WHERE DID HE GO?! SHIT! HE GOT SHOT! I CAN SEE THE BLOOD RUNNING INTO THAT GUTTER...
ALSO, THAT WAS WEKAPIPO BY OUR HORSES... WHAT THE HELL WAS THAT ABOUT?
THIS 'ENEMY'S' ABILITY...! IT'S HOMING IN ON ME!
AND DIO...
IT SEEMS LIKE... EVERYONE ALL STARTED MOVING AT THE SAME TIME, HERE, IN PHILADEL-PHIA...
THIS ...
CAN ONLY MEAN THAT THE 'HEAD' IS ALREADY IN THE PRESIDENT'S POS-SESSION... SO THAT WOULD MEAN THAT WE'RE NOT THE ONES DOING THE PURSUING...
WE'RE THE ONES WHO ARE GOING TO BE ELIMINATED...!

FWIP
......
SIZZLE

HEY...
WHAT THE... THAT'S ...
IT CAN'T BE...
SHIT... YEAH, TRY IT, WHY DON'T YOU? ... D, DAMMIT! H, HEY... NEVER MIND, STOP!

DI•S•CO



STAND NAME
'CHOCOLATE DISCO'

NO MATTER THE TIMING, NO MATTER THE ANGLE OR DIRECTION OF THE ATTACK GEARED TOWARDS HIMSELF, HE HAS THE ABILITY TO DROP THE SAME ENERGY AND OBJECT TO THE CORRESPONDING X-Y COORDINATE. IT'S A SIMPLE AS THAT, AND THAT'S ALL HE HAS TO SAY.

Jojo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 17, Chapter 2
Translation:
Editing: Shizuka, Joestar & Frequency

# #66 D4C PART ①

HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
THAT STUFF 'INSIDE THE BOTTLE'...
HAHH
AND HIS WAY OF ATTACK-ING WITH GRIDS...
AND DEFEND-ING HIMSELF, TOO...
HAHH
COME TO THINK OF IT...
HAHH
HAHH
THIS GUY'S PRETTY 'INVIN-CIBLE'...
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
OR, AT LEAST, HIS 'STAND ABILITY' IS.
...ISN'T IT?! GODDAMN!

WHAT?
......
UHHH....?
'CHOCO-LATE DISCO'.
'CHOCO-LATE DISCO'.
THAT'S MY ABILITY'S 'STAND NAME'.
THAT'S ALL I'M GOING TO SAY.
I'M DONE. THAT'S ALL.

I HAVE NOTHING ELSE TO SAY... I HAVE NO OTHER WORDS... REGARDING WHAT I'M WILLING TO EXPLAIN TO YOU.
GULP

BEEP
BEEP

AH!

!
?
……
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル

HAHH
HAHH
HAHH
HAHH

BEEP
BEEP
!!

!?
?
シュー
シュー
シュー

AH...
?
STRIDE
STRIDE
STRIDE

BEEP
!!!
THUD?!

THE ROTATION OF THE TWO STEEL BALLS
THAT I THREW EARLIER,
IS GATHERING THE AIR FROM AROUND THEM AND REFRACT-ING THE LIGHT WITH THE PRESSURE EXERTED.
SOME-TIMES, I REALLY HAVE TO...
STOP AND THANK MY ANCESTORS.
MY STEEL BALL'S 'ROTATION' IS SOMETHING THAT THE ZEPPELI FAMILY SPENT CENTURIES PER-FECTING.

......

SO WHERE I ACTUALLY AM AND WHAT YOU'RE SEEING...
YOU CAN SAY IT'S PRETTY DISTORTED.
LONG STORY SHORT,
I'VE CREATED A 'LENS' OF AIR BETWEEN YOU AND ME...
LENS
AIR
THAT'S WHY YOUR ATTACKS AREN'T HITTING ME.

HAHH, HAHH, HAHH
HAHH, HAHH, HAHH
FWIP
SO YOU GO TO 'GUNS' WHEN YOU'RE CORNERED, HUH.
YOU SHOULD PROBABLY STOP DOING STUFF LIKE THAT.

THIS IS SOMETHING I SHOULD PROBABLY BE SAYING TO MY GIRLFRIEND, BUT...
THIS 'LENS' ...
IT DOESN'T SHOW THAT WE'RE A LOT CLOSER TO EACH OTHER THAN YOU THINK.
AH...
U, UH...

AGH
HHH
HH!

GUH!
CAN YOU SAVE THE SCREAMING UNTIL YOU'RE IN THE HOSPITAL?
I'M IN A HURRY RIGHT NOW, SO SPILL IT!
WHO ATTACKED JOHNNY?!
TELL ME!
UGH
TELL ME HIS NAME!
SHIT! AGAIN WITH THE DAMN GRIDS!
SO YOU'RE NOT GONNA TALK AS LONG AS YOU CAN USE YOUR STAND ABILITY, HUH?!
THAT, OR THIS GUY DOESN'T KNOW ANYTHING!
GUH!

STAND NAME: 'CHOCOLATE DISCO'
NAME: 'DI·S·CO' (OUT OF COMMISSION)
SHIT! LOOKING AT THE BLOOD SPATTER, JOHNNY WAS ATTACKED FROM BEHIND...
AND IT LOOKS LIKE JOHNNY ESCAPED THROUGH THIS GUTTER.
BUT THIS AMOUNT OF BLOOD LOSS... I'M HERE, SO WHERE DID HE GO TO? HE NEEDS TREATMENT...
IS THIS WOUND FATAL ...?

OR... IS HE STILL RUNNING AWAY, BECAUSE SOME-ONE'S TRACKING HIM...?
'SOMEONE' CAME UP TO JOHNNY FROM BEHIND... CAME UP FROM BEHIND OUR HORSES AND SHOT HIM... HE SNUCK UP ON HIM FROM THE SHADOWS, INSTEAD OF COMING DIRECTLY AT HIM, LIKE THAT GUY JUST DID WITH ME.

HEY, WAIT! DON'T BE AFRAID OF ME!
COME BACK!
MY FRIEND IS DYING! I WANT TO KNOW WHO THE 'CULPRIT' IS! I WANT TO KNOW WHAT HAPPENED OVER AT THAT WALL!
YOU SHOULD HAVE SEEN SOMETHING FROM WHERE YOU WERE STANDING! TELL ME!
WAS THIS THE GUY THAT DID IT?!

IF I DON'T FIND OUT WHO IT WAS, WE'LL BE IN MORE DANGER! LOOK AT THIS PHOTO!
YOU SAW MY FRIEND GET SHOT, RIGHT!? HE'S A SUSPECT, IS HE THE ONE THAT DID IT?!
'DIO'...
TH... THAT BASTARD ...

THANKS.
SO THE MAN IN THIS PICTURE... CAME UP FROM BEHIND,
AND SHOT MY FRIEND, WHO WAS ON HIS HORSE... RIGHT?
........
...WHAT?
?
......
THE MAN ON THE BOTTOM!
NO, NOT HIM!
THAT'S NOT RIGHT!
ON THE 'BOTTOM'! HE WAS THE ONE THAT SHOT HIM!

NOT THAT HAND.
I'VE NEVER SEEN THAT OTHER MAN...
'ON THE BOTTOM'!
THE PHOTO IN YOUR 'RIGHT HAND'!
THE ONE THAT WAS BY THAT WALL AND SHOT YOUR FRIEND AND RAN AWAY WAS THE MAN ON THE BOTTOM PHOTO!
'BOTT-OM'?
HEY, WHAT ARE YOU GUYS TALKING ABOUT?
HEY, YOU WEREN'T EVEN THERE WHEN IT HAPPENED, SHUT UP!
THE GUY THAT WAS THERE WAS THIS ONE, THE GUY THAT WAS WEARING THE HELMET!
IT WAS HIM! HEY, YOU ALL AGREE WITH ME, RIGHT?
THIS GIRL HAS BAD EYES!
WHAT?! ARE YOU SURE YOU'RE RIGHT IN THE HEAD?!
WAIT! WHAT?!
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT? WAIT A SECOND!

WAIT!
DO YOU GUYS KNOW THESE GIRLS?
ARE YOU FRIENDS?
NO.
I DON'T EVEN KNOW WHO THESE BOYS ARE.
RIGHT?
RIGHT!
WE WERE JUST PLAYING.
AND WE WERE JUST BABY-SITTING OUR BROTHER.
THE CULPRIT IS THE MAN ON THE RIGHT!
......

JUST WAIT A SECOND !
A...ALRIGHT. I'LL ASK AGAIN, FROM THE TOP.
ALRIGHT. 'THE GUY ON THE HORSE OVER THERE WAS MY FRIEND'...
AND 'MY FRIEND WAS SHOT IN THE BACK BY SOMEONE'.
I WANT TO KNOW WHO DID IT. ARE YOU FOL-LOWING ME?
IF YOU DON'T KNOW, JUST SAY SO.
I WANT THIS TO BE CLEAR.
HOW MANY OF THEM WERE THERE?
ONE?
OR WERE THERE TWO OF THEM?
ONLY ONE.
ONE.
YEAH, ONE.
OF COURSE, THERE WAS ONLY ONE CULPRIT.
HE WAS ALONE! I DIDN'T SEE ANYONE ELSE!

OK! I SEE...
SO, 'WHICH ONE OF THESE GUYS SHOT MY FRIEND'?
AHHH! WERE YOU EVEN WATCHING, YOU GUYS?! I'VE NEVER EVEN SEEN THAT GUY!
THAT DOESN'T EVEN LOOK LIKE HIM, THEY'RE NOT EVEN THE SAME AGE!
YEAH!? I SAW HIM CLEARLY! IT WAS THIS GUY, THIS GUY WAS THE CULPRIT!

COME ON! ARE YOU GUYS EVEN HEARING YOUR-SELVES?!
THIS GIRL IS A LIAR!
THESE TWINS ARE TELLING A HUGE LIE!
YOU'VE GOT TO BE KIDDING! IS THAT DOG EVEN YOURS?!
MAKE IT SHUT UP! OR CAN YOU NOT EVEN TELL YOUR PET FROM OTHER DOGS?!
WHAT ...
WHO ARE THESE KIDS ?!

WHAT THE HELL IS UP WITH THESE KIDS...?!
...NO...IT CAN'T BE!! FOR WHAT PURPOSE?!
WHAT ARE THEY SAYING? ARE THEY TRYING TO CONFUSE ME...?
NO...I DON'T THINK THESE KIDS ARE LYING TO ME...
WE CAME TO THIS PARK AFTER THEM.
THEY WERE ALREADY PLAYING HERE WHEN WE GOT HERE...
IT'S NOT RATIONAL TO THINK THAT THE 'ENEMY' IS ONE OF THESE KIDS. BUT THEN, WHAT'S GOING ON...? IF THE KIDS AREN'T LYING,
THEN IT MUST BE 'DIO'...
OR 'WEKA-PIPO' ...
IT LOOKS LIKE AT LEAST ONE OF THEM WAS NEAR JOHNNY, FOR SURE...
COULD 'DIO' HAVE DIS-GUISED HIMSELF AS 'WEKAPIPO'...?

COULD THEY HAVE BEEN MADE TO SEE AN ILLUSION?
THAT CAN'T BE, EITHER.
IF HE DISGUISED HIMSELF, THEN THEY WOULDN'T HAVE IDENTIFIED TWO SUSPECTS... HE MUST HAVE LOOKED LIKE 'ONE OR THE OTHER'!
NO...THAT'S NOT RIGHT, EITHER! IF HE WAS GOING TO PLAY AROUND WITH ILLUSIONS, HE WOULD HAVE MADE ME SEE THEM!
BUT IT SEEMS LIKE THOSE KIDS DIDN'T SEE WHAT HAPPENED CLEARLY.
IT LOOKS LIKE SOMETHING GRAVE HAS HAPPENED...
YOU, THERE...
I SAW WHAT HAPPENED DEFINITIVELY.
......

THE ONE WHO SHOT AT YOUR FRIEND...
WAS THIS MAN.
HE WAS THE ONE.
THIS IS A PORTRAIT. I DREW WHAT I SAW.
!!
WAIT A SECOND ... WHAT?!
WHAT ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT, ALL OF A SUDDEN?!
HOW LONG WERE YOU THERE FOR...?! WHO ARE YOU?!
HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY, HEY ...

I'M JUST AN 'ARTIST' WHO LIVES IN THE AREA.
I ALWAYS DRAW IN THIS PARK.
THAT'S WHY I WAS HERE TO SEE EVEREYTHING HAPPEN BY THAT WALL.
I'M NOT GOING BY MEMORY. I CAN TESTIFY IN FRONT OF THE POLICE, THE MAN IN THIS PORTRAIT WAS THE ONE WHO SHOT YOUR FRIEND.
WHAT?! THAT'S PRESI-DENT VALEN-TINE!
THE PRESI-DENT WOULD NEVER COME TO A PARK BY HIMSELF!
PRESI-DENT...?
H... HE'S...?!

THAT'S CRAZY! ARE YOU TRYING TO MAKE OUR PRESIDENT THE BAD GUY?!
WHY WOULD THE PRESIDENT BE OUT ALONE AND SHOOT SOMEONE?!
YOU'RE A TRAITOR! I BET YOU WERE JUST DREAMING!
AH...
I DIDN'T SAY IT WAS THE PRESIDENT. I DIDN'T USE ANYONE'S NAME!
I JUST DREW THE MAN AS I SAW HIM! THIS IS MERELY A PORTRAIT.
THEN YOU'RE A LOUSY ARTIST! THAT DOESN'T EVEN LOOK LIKE HIM, THE CULPRIT WAS WEARING A RIDER'S HELMET!
NO, IT'S NOT HIM OR THE GUY WITH THE HELMET! HE WAS THE MAN IN THE OTHER PHOTO!
MY PICTURE ISN'T ANYTHING LIKE YOUR MEMORIES, IT'S THE FACT!
ゴゴゴ
ゴゴゴゴ
SHIT! WHAT IS THIS?! WHAT ARE THESE PEOPLE SAYING!? SOMETHING BAD IS GOING ON...
A STAND ATTACK ?!
WHAT ?!
IS SOME SORT OF BIZARRE STAND ATTACK ALREADY INITIALIZED...?
AND WAS JOHNNY ATTACKED BY THAT 'UNKNOWN POWER'?!
IT MAY VERY WELL BE 'DIO'...!
ゴゴゴゴ

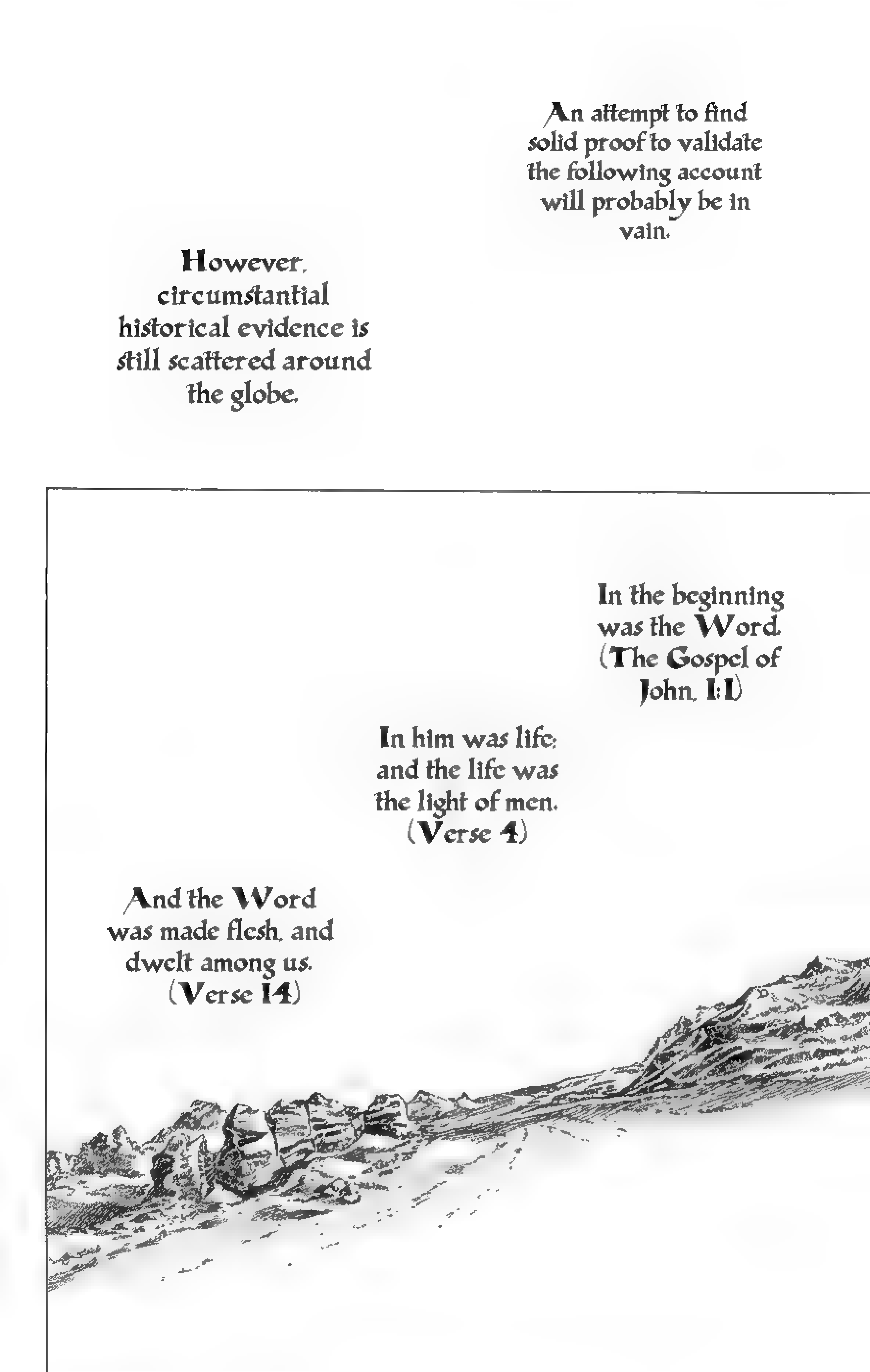
BUT THE ONE NEAR THE WALL, THAT WAS DEFINITELY 'WEKAPIPO' ...IT CAN'T BE...
BUT 'WEKA-PIPO' WAS DEFI-NITELY STANDING BY OUR HORSES ...
AND HE WAS THE ONE I SAW EARLIER... SHIT!
I HAVE NO IDEA WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON,
BUT I'LL TRY TO BE POSITIVE ... JUST LOOK AT THE GOOD SIDE.
I DEFEATED ONE ENEMY STAND USER. SO THERE'S ONE LESS...
AND JOHNNY IS PROBABLY STILL ALIVE... THAT'S DEFINITELY A GOOD THING...
ALRIGHT, I JUST HAVE TO KEEP ON GOING!
I'LL FIND JOHNNY, AND THEN THE 'CORPSE PARTS'.
NO MATTER WHAT HAPPENS, NO MATTER WHO THE ENEMY IS...

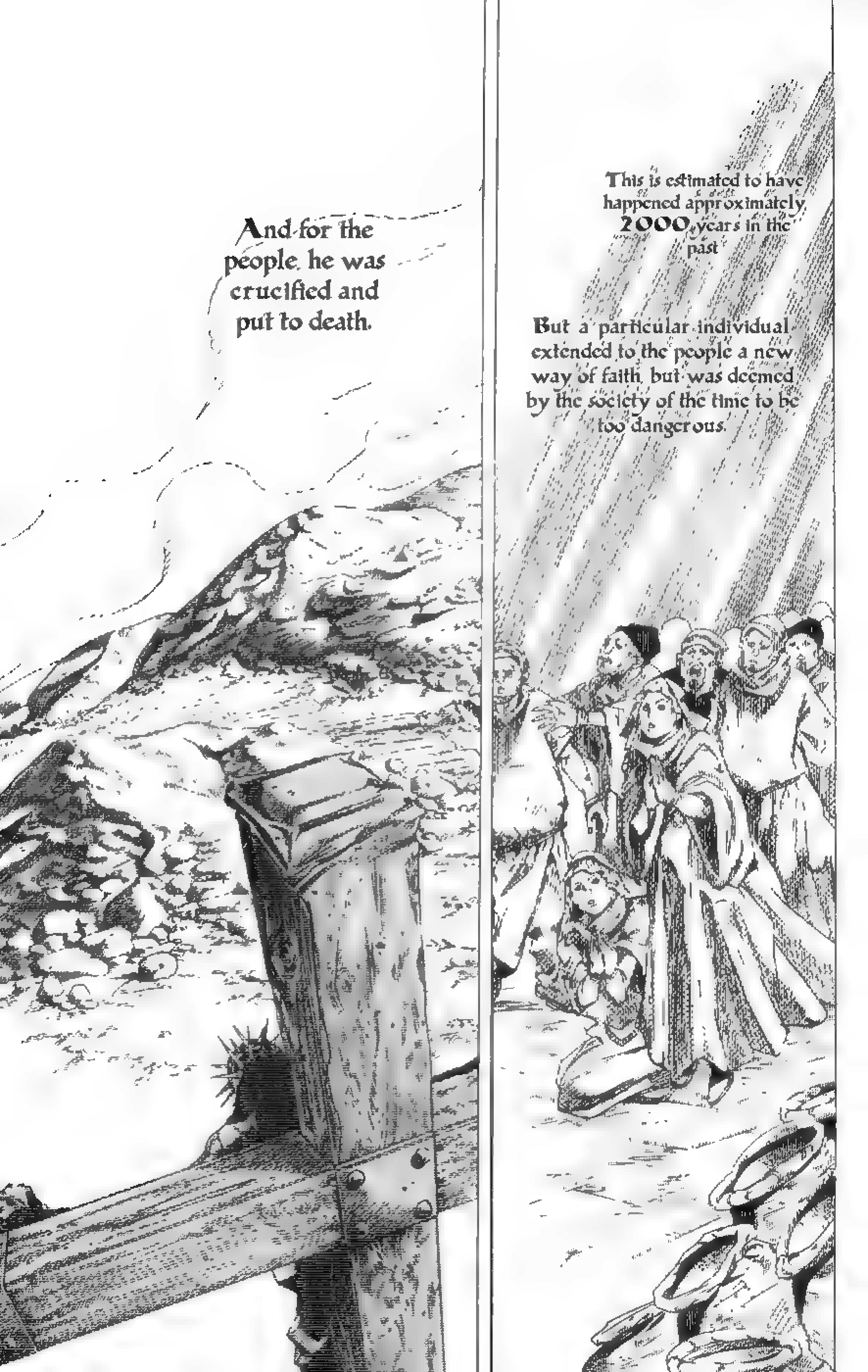
JOHNNY JOESTAR IS BETTER LEFT ALIVE.
ON THE VERGE OF DEATH, BUT NOT BEYOND...
RIGHT, WEKAPIPO?

YOU STAYED QUIET, YES, DIO...?
ABOUT THE FACT THAT MAGENTA WAS ALIVE...
I THOUGHT YOU AND MAGENTA GOT ALONG WELL... HMPH!
NEVER-THELESS... THIS IS ALL ACCORDING TO PLAN, RIGHT?

JoJo Project
PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 17, Chapter 3
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

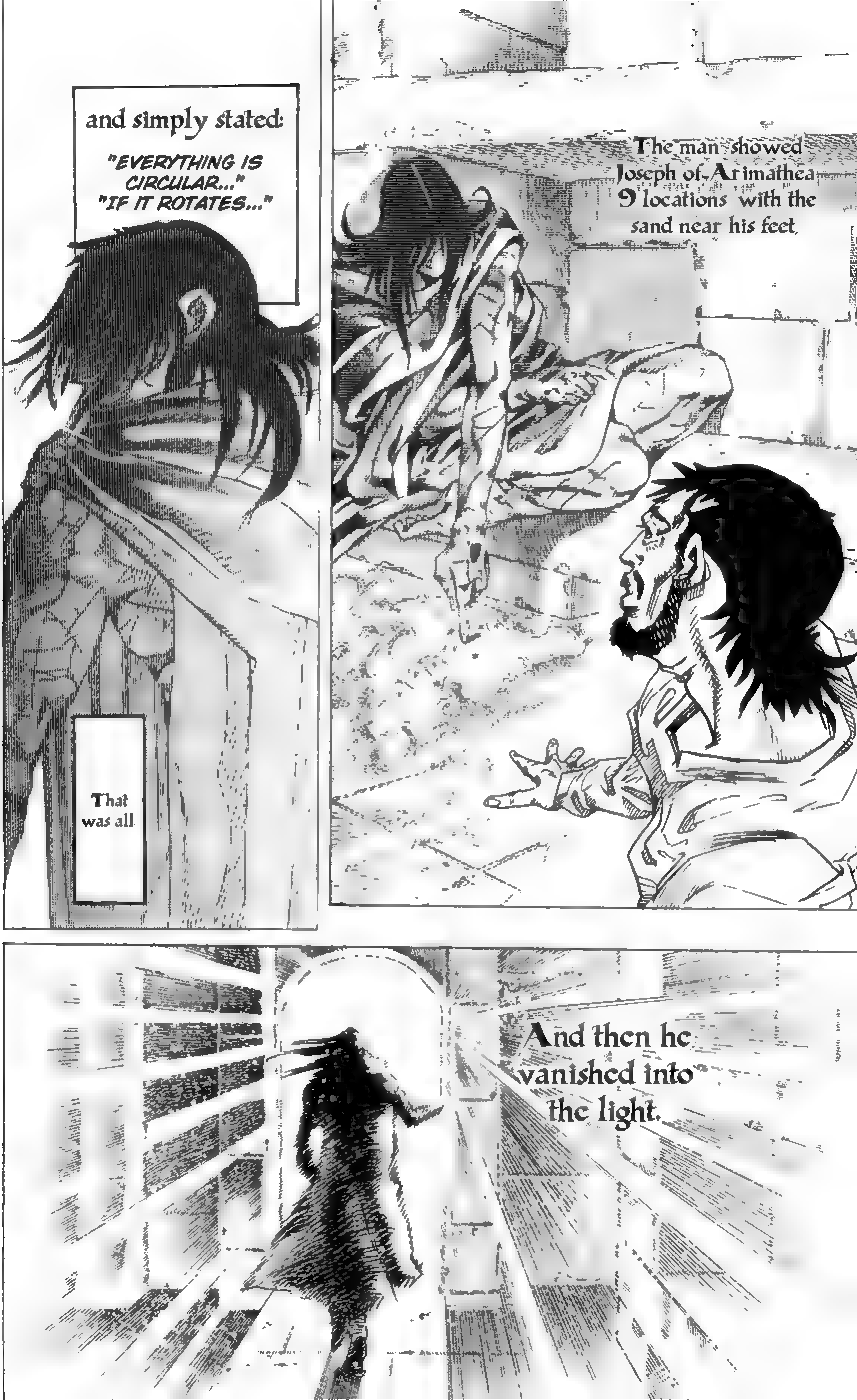
# #67
# D4C
# PART 4


An attempt to find solid proof to validate the following account will probably be in vain.
However, circumstantial historical evidence is still scattered around the globe.
In the beginning was the Word. (The Gospel of John, 1:1)
In him was life; and the life was the light of men. (Verse 4)
And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us. (Verse 14)

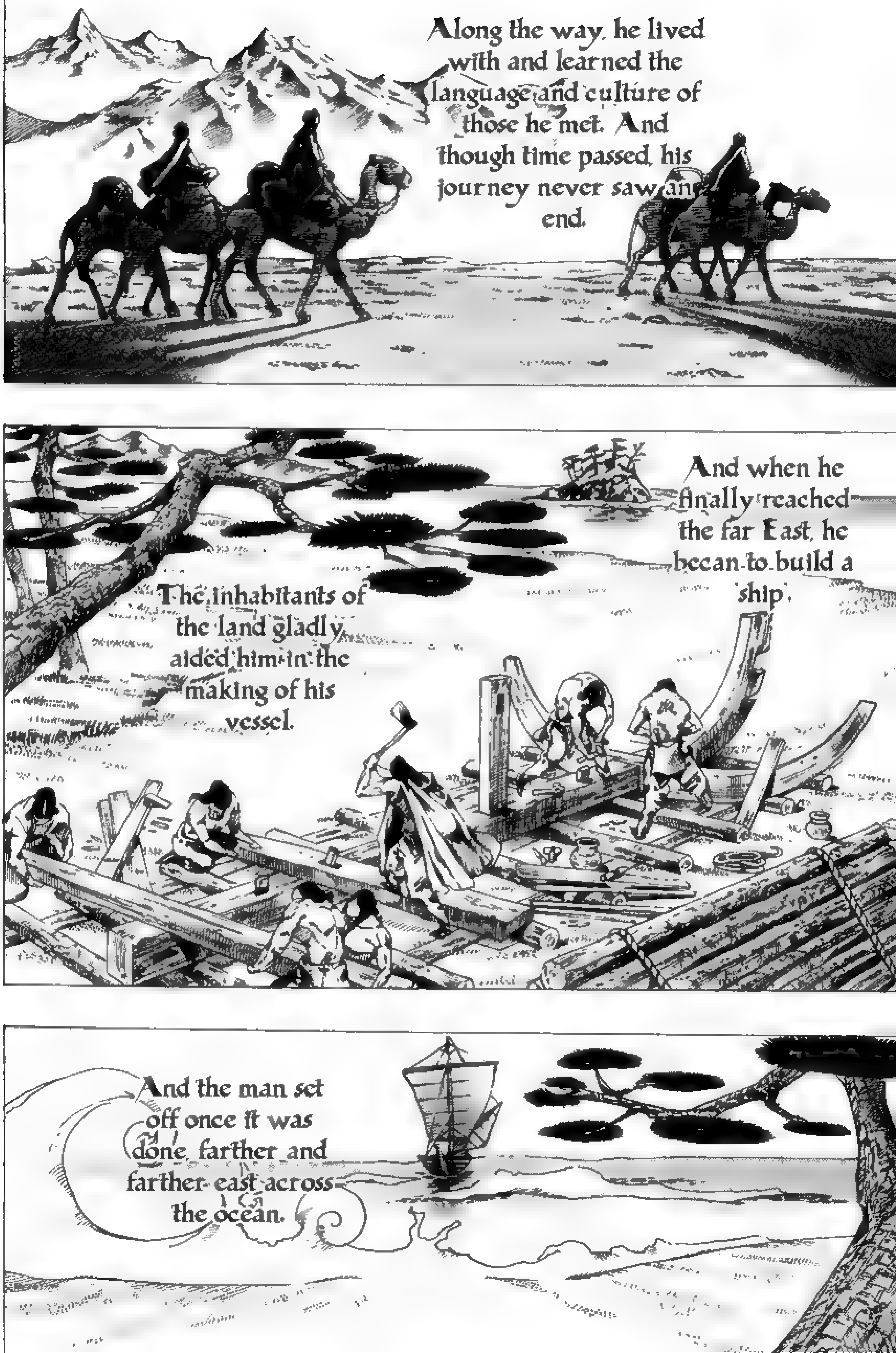

This is estimated to have happened approximately 2000 years in the past
But a particular individual extended to the people a new way of faith, but was deemed by the society of the time to be too dangerous.
And for the people, he was crucified and put to death.

Though his wounds were fatal, the individual arose three days after his execution and was revived.
However...how could this have happened...? Medically, it was impossible.
And the individual was found by Joseph of Arimathea, who wrapped his body in a flax cloth,
and to him who had treated his body with care, the man...
expressed his thanks and stated:

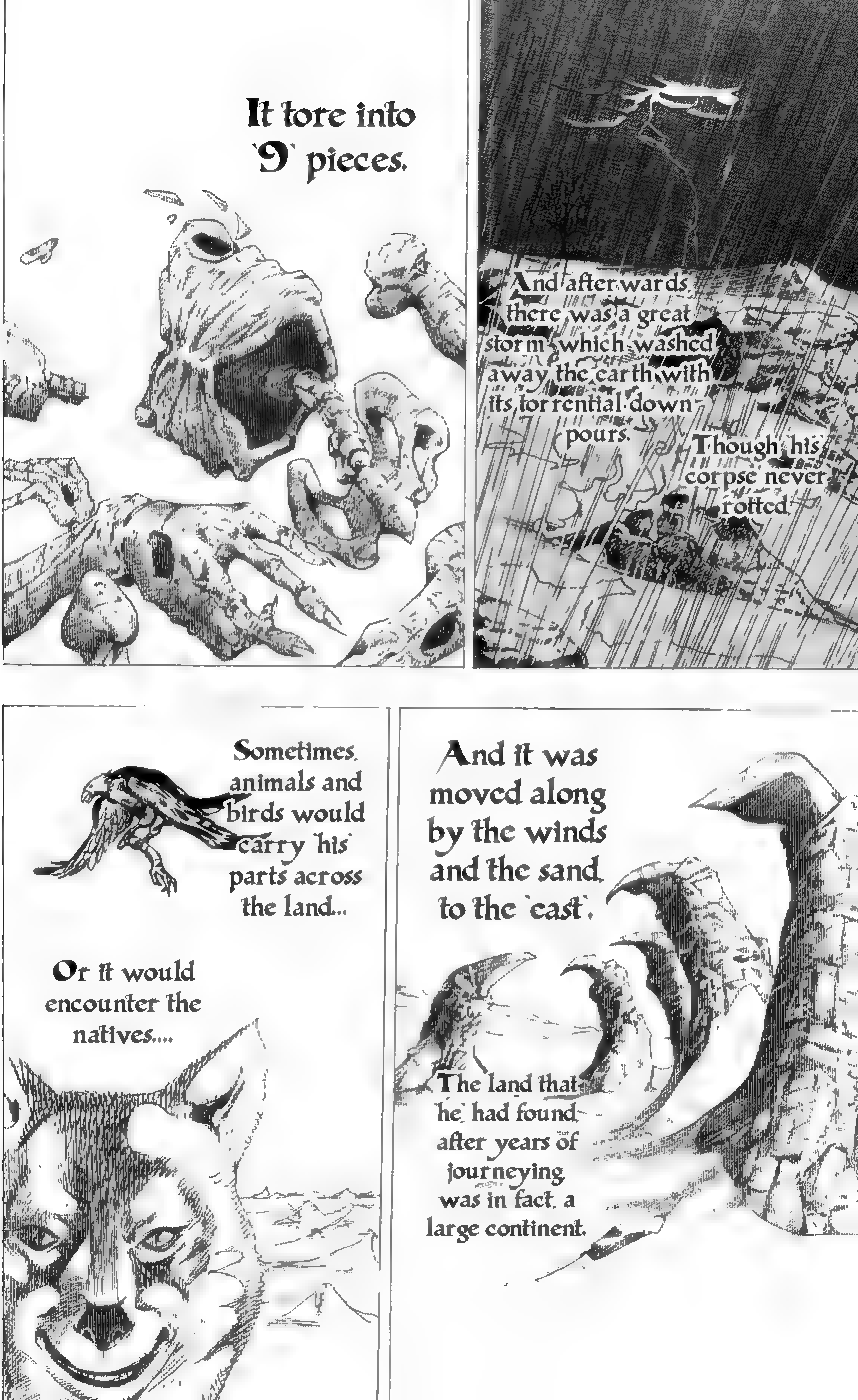
'I WILL GO EAST'.
"WILL I EVER SEE YOU AGAIN?"
With tears in his eyes, Joseph of Arimathea asked him:

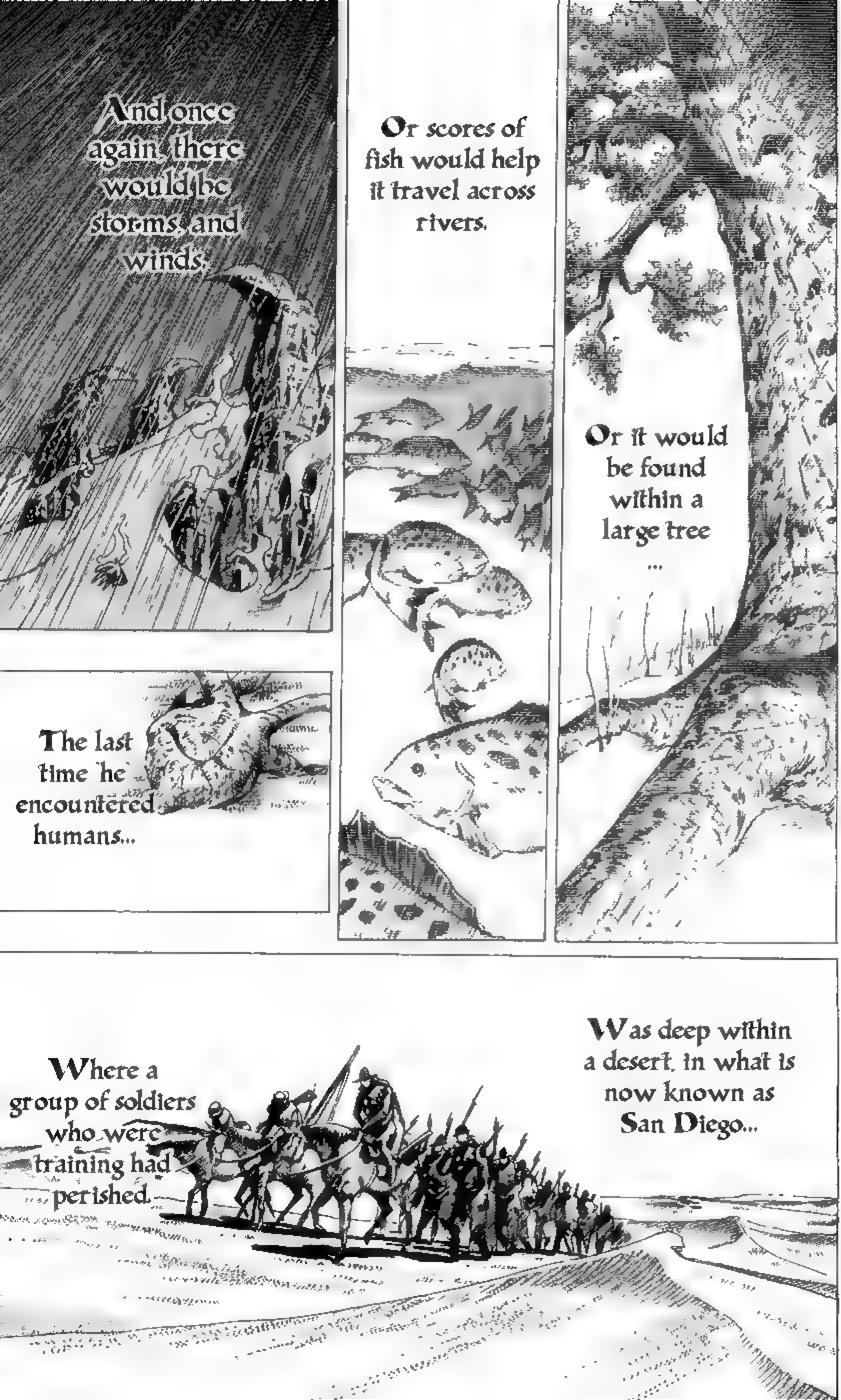

and simply stated:
"EVERYTHING IS CIRCULAR..."
"IF IT ROTATES..."
That was all
The man showed Joseph of Arimathea 9 locations with the sand near his feet,
And then he vanished into the light.

The 9 locations that the man pointed out seemed like places on a map.
But no one could figure out where they corresponded to, or what they meant. And besides, no one thought to believe such stories, either.
He documented the information and kept it close at all times
However, Joseph of Arimathea...
The man who had vanished from the public eye, kept of traveling towards the East...


Along the way, he lived with and learned the language and culture of those he met. And though time passed, his journey never saw an end.
And when he finally reached the far East, he began to build a ship.
The inhabitants of the land gladly aided him in the making of his vessel.
And the man set off once it was done, farther and farther east across the ocean.

'WE WISH TO SEE YOU AGAIN.'
The people who lived with him, said:
Once he had crossed the ocean and reached the farthest ends of the earth, 'he' lived out the rest of his days on that land.
How much time had passed since he had set out on his journey? How old was he now? No one knew. And when it came time for 'him' to breathe his last breath...
Shortly after his death, there came a large earthquake...
Which tore the ground apart with its force.


It tore into
`9` pieces.
And after wards, there was a great storm which washed away the earth with its torrential down- pours.
Though his corpse never rotted.
Sometimes, animals and birds would carry `his` parts across the land...
Or it would encounter the natives....
And it was moved along by the winds and the sand to the `east`.
The land that he had found after years of journeying was in fact, a large continent.


And once again, there would be storms, and winds.
Or scores of fish would help it travel across rivers.
Or it would be found within a large tree ...
The last time he encountered humans...
Was deep within a desert, in what is now known as San Diego...
Where a group of soldiers who were training had perished.

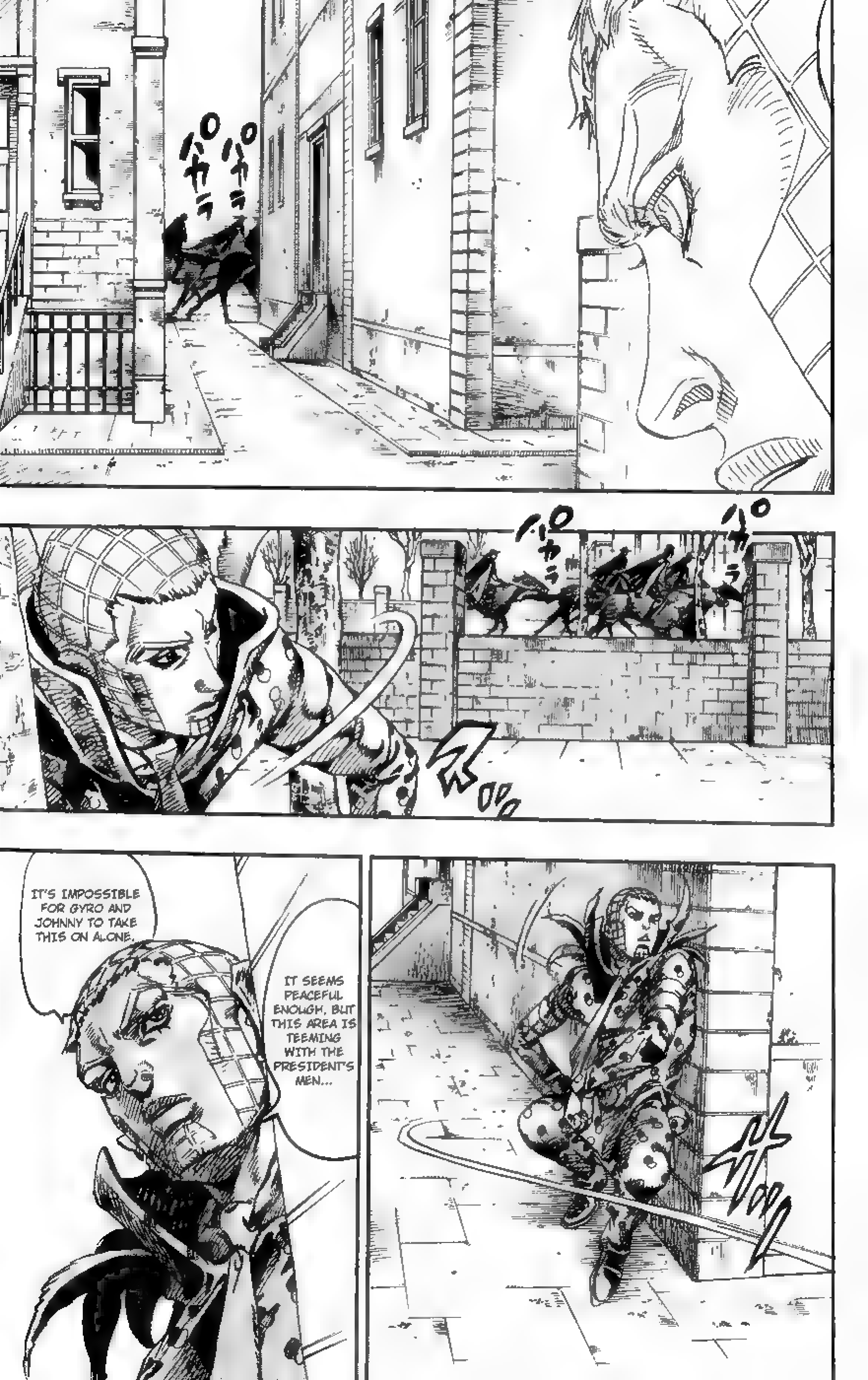
Within that desert, underneath the sands, was where his 'heart' was hidden...
And it was, by accident, found by a young soldier from the missing troop.

That soldier was the only one who made it back to civilization alive.

And afterwards... said soldier slowly rose to the top...
And he realized that there must be other body parts, aside from the heart that he had found. He had to find the rest of them.
This must be fate...
And once the soldier became the President of the country...

He started to pursue the buried secrets. The hidden legend.
(8 minutes ago) 16:05 Philadelphia Near Independence Hall

ワー
ワー
ワー
……
パカラッ
パカラ
パカラ



パカラ
パカラ
パカラ
パカラ
IT SEEMS PEACEFUL ENOUGH, BUT THIS AREA IS TEEMING WITH THE PRESIDENT'S MEN...
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE FOR GYRO AND JOHNNY TO TAKE THIS ON ALONE.

BY THE LOOKS OF IT... GYRO ZEPPELI AND JOHNNY JOES-TAR SEEM TO BE FOLLOWING 'DIO'S TRACKS' IN ORDER TO OBTAIN THE EYE...
BUT IT'S HIGHLY IMPROBABLE.
PRESIDENT VALENTINE AND HIS MEN ARE ALSO SEEKING TO END THINGS, HERE...
IT WOULD HAVE BEEN WISER TO UTILIZE THE SBR RACE TO ESCAPE FROM THIS CITY...
GYRO AND JOHNNY WILL PERISH, HERE IN PHILADELPHIA. EVEN BEFORE THEY REACH DIO.
BUT NOW, THEY WILL UNDOUBT-EDLY BE TRACKED AND ASSASSI-NATED BY THE PRESIDENT.

THERE HE IS... DIO.
!

NOW... IN THIS SITUATION, WHO AM I TO ALLY MYSELF WITH?
I WILL NOT ALLY MYSELF WITH THE LOSING SIDE.
IF I LOSE, THEN I WILL HAVE NO PLACE TO FALL. I WILL NEVER FOLLOW THAT PATH AGAIN...
WHEN SOMEONE TRIES TO SEIZE THE 'LEFT EYE' FROM HIM...
IF I AM TO DEFEAT THE PRESIDENT, THE ONLY CHANCE I HAVE IS WITH DIO.

I ONLY REQUIRE ONE MORE PIECE TO CREATE THE LARGER PICTURE. THE PRESIDENT HAS NO CHOICE BUT TO APPEAR, HIMSELF, IN FRONT OF DIO, AFTER ALL...
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK

WHERE DID HE GO...? DIO...
HOW IS HE PLANNING ON APPROACHING THE PRESI-DENT?

SNAP

A TRAP?
THE GUN IS FULLY LOADED...
WHY IS IT HERE?
WHO PLACED IT HERE?

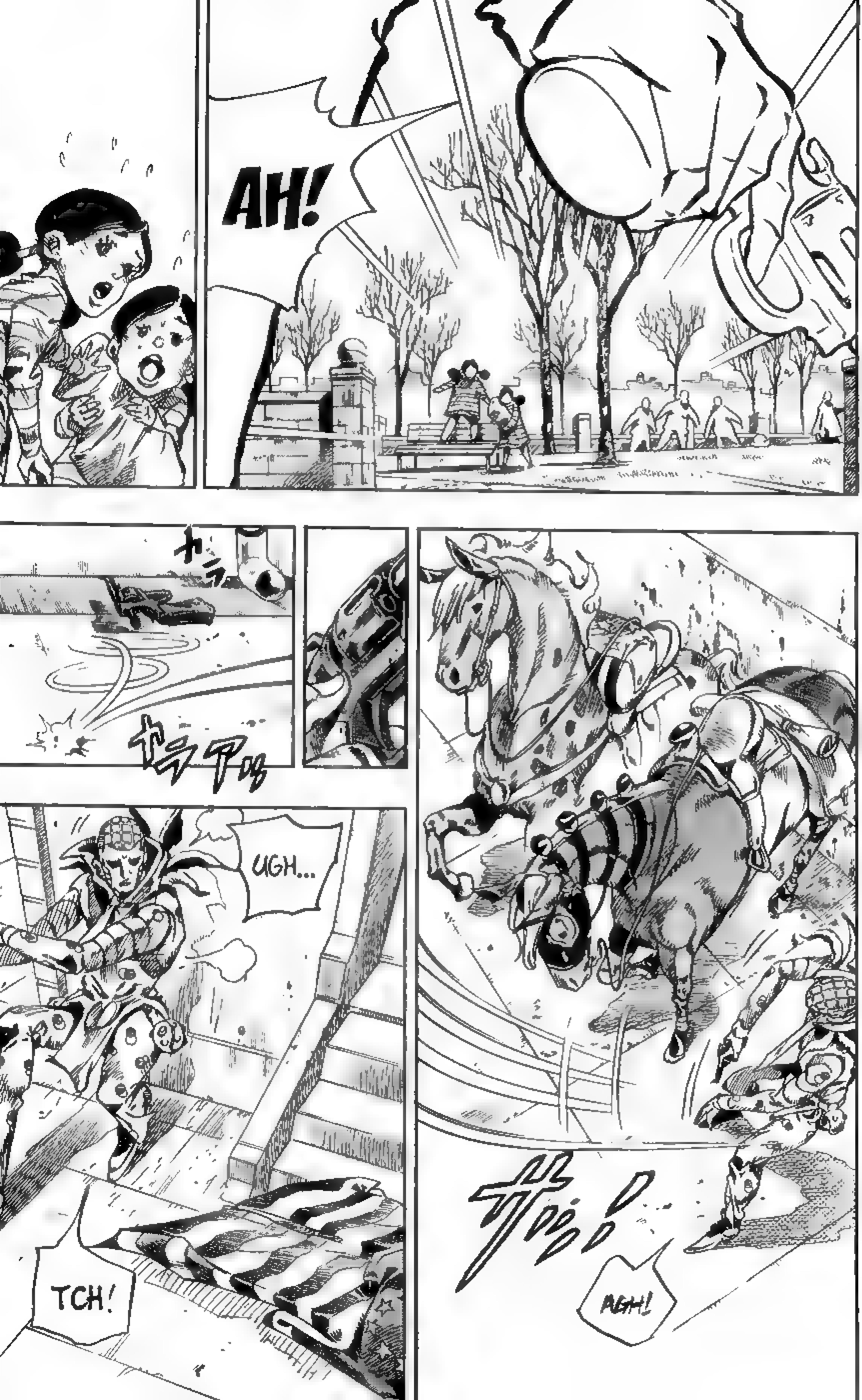
LEFT-SIDE
ATAXIA

AH!
ドドドド
ドドド

TH...
THIS..!?
YOU'RE ...?!
WHAT?!
WHAT?! IMPOS-SIBLE!

KUH ...
UHH...
HOW...
YOU...!
S... STOP!

HAHH!
HAHH!
HAHH!
カチッ
カチッ
HAHH!
JOHNNY JOESTAR...
HE CAN MOVE HIS LEGS...?
BUT HOW?


AH!
AGH!
UGH...
TCH!

W... WHAT? DOES THIS ALL MEAN!? JOHNNY JOESTAR...?!
WHY DID JOHNNY JOESTAR ATTACK ME?!
AND I, I SHOT HIM...
NO...BUT WAS THAT REALLY JOHNNY JOESTAR?
AND IF IT WERE, WHY WOULD HE CHOOSE TO ATTACK ME FROM BEHIND, AT SUCH CLOSE RANGE...?
AND FOR WHAT 'REASON'? WHY?
AT LEAST 4 BULLETS HIT JOHNNY...AM I DREAMING?
OR IS THIS THE WORK OF 'SOMEONE ELSE'...? PERHAPS IT IS SOME SORT OF UNKNOWN 'STAND ATTACK' BY AN 'ENEMY'...?
EVERYTHING IS GOING AS PLANNED.
JOHNNY JOESTAR IS BETTER LEFT ALIVE.
RIGHT, WEKAPIPO?

YOU! WHAT WERE YOU DOING, JUST NOW...?
MAGENTA WAS ALIVE.
YOU SHOULD HAVE KNOWN THAT I WAS TRACKING YOU, DIO.
WHAT DID YOU JUST SEE?
YOU LURED ME HERE, DID YOU NOT? WHY DID YOU LURE ME TOWARDS THE PARK?
......
AH.
I'D THOUGHT THAT YOU AND MAGENTA GOT ALONG WELL.

STEEL BALL RUN
SAN DIEGO
NEW YORK
1890

HOP
......

'LUCY STEEL', THE ONE THAT'S SUP-POSED TO BE DEAD, IS ASSUMING THE POSITION OF FIRST LADY!
I SEE ...
(8 MINUTES AGO)
16:05
NEAR INDEPENDENCE HALL

THE SPY THAT'S ON THE INSIDE IS LUCY STEEL, WHO'S FEIGNING AS THE FIRST LADY...
AND IF HER 'IDENTITY' IS STILL HIDDEN, THEN IT SHOULD BE A GOOD OPPORTUNITY FOR ME...
I, DIO, WILL 'SEIZE' ALL OF THE BODY PARTS THAT ARE BEING COLLECTED, HERE, IN PHILADELPHIA.
BUT THE WHOLE TOWN IS UNDER HIGH SECURITY.
THE PRESIDENT'S SOLDIERS ARE BEING RATHER... NOISY.
HEY!
WHERE ARE YOU GOING? STOP RIGHT THERE!

WHERE AM I GOING?
I'M GOING TO GO TO INDEPENDENCE HALL, WHICH IS WHAT YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO BE GUARDING.
TO ASSASSINATE YOUR BOSS, THAT IS.
LET'S CAMOU-FLAGE YOU.

SNIFF
SLAP
SLAP
SNIFF
SNIFF
THEY'RE NOT *BEING* COLLECTED...
NO... THAT'S NOT RIGHT.
THE 'CORPSE' IS COMPLETE...
THEY ALREADY *ARE.*
EVEN THE 'HEAD' IS HERE.
HM!

VALENTINE...
HE'S ALONE...
HE'S WALKING ALONE
WITHOUT BODYGUARDS! WHERE IS HE PLANNING ON GOING, ALONE? IS HE HERE TO SETTLE THINGS? NO! IT'S BECAUSE THE CORPSE IS 'COMPLETE'!!
I CAN ATTACK HIM, NOW...!
I CAN ASSASSINATE HIM, NOW!

Jojo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 17, Chapter 4
Translation: Freshy - Editing: Otafreek

#68
D4C
PART③

GLANCE
......

THAT'S ...!
THEY'VE ALREADY FIGURED OUT HER 'IDENTITY'! WHAT THE HELL HAPPENED?!
LUCY STEEL...!
YOU!
WHAT ARE YOU DOING THERE? YOU'RE SUPPOSED TO BE OUT-SIDE!
.........

LISTEN WELL! WE'VE BEEN GIVEN ADDITIONAL ORDERS REGARDING SECURITY!
THESE THREE, BE IT INDIVIDUALLY OR IN A GROUP, ARE UNDER SUSPICION OF AN ASSASSINATION ATTEMPT AGAINST THE PRESIDENT!
IF THEY APPROACH HEADQUARTERS, WE HAVE BEEN GIVEN PERMISSION TO SHOOT TO KILL! REMEMBER THEIR FACES!
......
SNIFF
SNIFF
SNIFF
......

SNIFF
SNIFF
WHAT ...?
THE PRESIDENT IS GOING OUTSIDE WITHOUT A SINGLE GUARD WITH HIM...
HE'S GOING PAST THE TREES AND INTO THE CIVILIAN AREA...?
HEEEEY! I'VE NEVER SEEN THIS MAN BEFORE!
WHO ARE YOU?! YOU'RE NOT A GUARD!
DO YOU WANT TO BE CAMOUFLAGED? DO YOU LIKE LAMPS? YOU WON'T LIGHT UP, UNFORTUNATELY.
THIS ISN'T GOOD ...
WHAT IS VALENTINE PLANNING? SOMETHING IS WRONG!

'LUCY STEEL' HAS BEEN FOUND OUT, AND KNOCKED UNCON-SCIOUS... WHAT THE HELL HAP-PENED?!
PLUS, THE 'CORPSE' IS HERE. BE-SIDES MY 'LEFT EYE', ALL OF IT IS SOMEWHERE INSIDE THIS BUILDING...
WHY DID THE PRESIDENT LEAVE? 'SOMETHING' IS HEADED HIS WAY, AND HE NEEDS TO SETTLE THE SCORE... WHICH MEANS THAT SOME-ONE MAY BE GETTING ONE STEP AHEAD OF ME...
I HAVE TO ASSASSINATE HIM NOW... OR ELSE SOMEONE IS GOING TO GET THE CRUCIAL UPPER HAND!

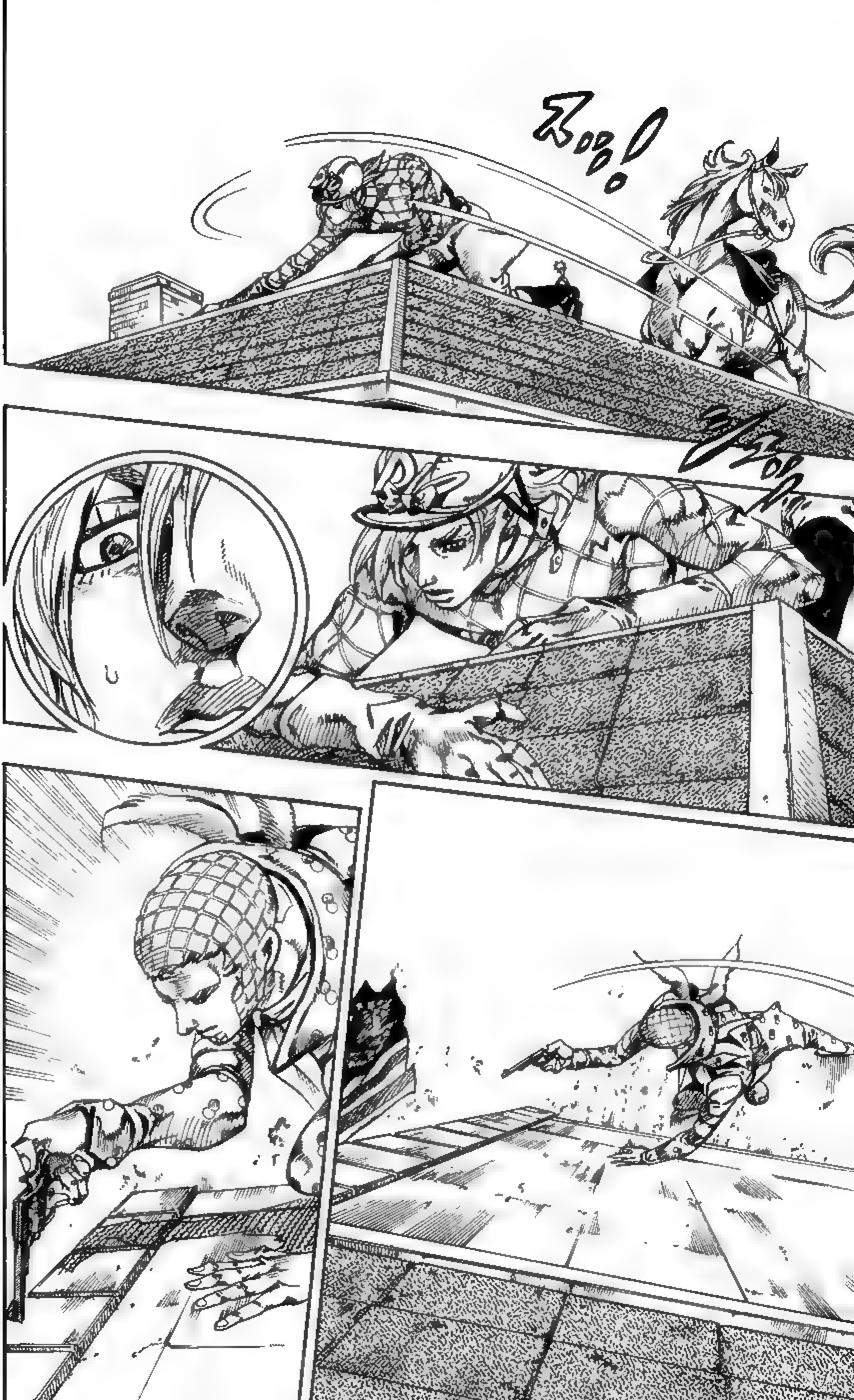
VALENTINE IS ALSO A 'STAND USER'! AND HIS ABILITY IS UNKNOWN
BUT...
CLOP
IT'S TOO MUCH OF A RISK FOR ME TO ATTACK HIM FIRST.
FIRST, I NEED TO SEE HIS ABILITY, AND FIND ITS WEAKNESSES.
AH, NOW I HAVE A GOOD PLAN!

'WEKAPIPO' WAS TRAILING ME, IF I REMEMBER CORRECTLY...
I'LL USE HIM.
SNIFF

THE PRESI-DENT IS STALL-ING, AHEAD ...
BEYOND THAT FLAG... JUST PAST THE CORNER OF THAT BUILDING, IN THE SHAD-OWS.
SNIFF
SNIFF
AND WEKA-PIPO BEHIND ME.

ド
ドドドド

NOW, THE PRESI- DENT...
AND WEKAPIPO SHOULD ENCOUN- TER EACH OTHER.
SOME- THING WILL HAPPEN ...
AND I'LL WATCH!



WHAT? WEKAPIDO ...? WHERE DID THE PRESIDENT GO?
!?
......?
TURN

WHAT?! WH... WHAT IS HE..?!
GAAAAAAH!
AGH!

TH, THIS...! GODDAMMIT, WEKAPIPO!
'LEFT-SIDE ATAXIA'... D-DAMN!

Y... YOU ...
HOW ...
!?
JOHNNY?! JOHNNY JOESTAR ...?!
WH... WHAT?! JO...
I...?!

WHAT'S GOING ON?! I SHOT JOHNNY?!
NO, THE 'SCENT' ...
HE'S HERE... I SMELL THE PRESI-DENT'S 'SCENT'.
HE'S NEARBY! I'M SURE OF IT!
WAS THAT THE REAL JOHNNY?! HIS LEGS... THEY MOVED?
IS THIS A DREAM ?!
!!?
AH!

?
!?
SNIFF
SNIFF
DAMN! HE'S NEARBY; THIS IS DEFINITELY VALENTINE'S SCENT..!
HE KNEW I WAS DIS-GUISED AS THE GUARD EARLIER, AND HE LURED ME HERE.

HE LURED ME HERE SO THAT HE COULD MAKE ME KILL JOHNNY...!
(I FEEL LIKE THAT'S NOT THE ONLY REASON, BUT...)
THOUGH, NOW I FEEL LIKE I'VE GOTTEN A GLIMPSE OF HIS 'ABILITY'...!
I THINK I UN-DER-STAND MORE ABOUT IT, NOW...!
MAYBE... NO, I'M FAIRLY CERTAIN, BUT I'LL FINISH VALENTINE OFF ONCE I'M ABSO-LUTELY SURE.
CLOP
CLOP
CLOP
CLOP

JOHNNY JOESTAR IS BETTER LEFT ALIVE.
ON THE VERGE OF DEATH, BUT NOT BEYOND...
RIGHT, WEKA-PIPO?
I THOUGHT YOU AND MAGENTA GOT ALONG WELL ENOUGH.
YOU STAYED QUIET, YES, DIO...?
ABOUT THE FACT THAT MAGENTA WAS ALIVE...
...SO, WEKAPIPO. I CAME HERE TO ASK YOU SOMETHING.

DID YOU SEE ME SHOOT JOHNNY?
SO.
JUST NOW...
I NEED TO KNOW, FOR CERTAIN.
LISTEN... TIME IS RUNNING OUT.
SNIFF
SNIFF
WHAT ...?

I NEED TO KNOW WHAT YOU JUST WIT-NESSED!
I 'DEFINITELY' JUST SHOT JOHNNY! AND HE FELL DOWN INTO THE DRAIN...
BUT IT WASN'T ME, WHO DID IT.
!!!
WHAT YOU'RE SAYING RIGHT NOW... IS BEYOND MY UNDERSTANDING.
THE ONE WHO SHOT JOHNNY WAS THE PRESIDENT.
LISTEN... STOP WITH THE ANNOY-ING ATTI-TUDE.
I CAN TELL, BE-CAUSE OF THE 'SCENT'.
WEKAPIPO! YOU REALIZE THAT IT'S FAR TOO LATE TO BE TALKING ABOUT ALLEGIANCES AND NEUTRALITY, RIGHT? YOU'LL BE KILLED, TOO...

WHAT I NEED TO KNOW FOR SURE IS THE MECHANISM BEHIND HIS 'ABILITY'!
......
YOU UNDERSTAND WHAT I'M SAYING, YES, WEKAPIPO?!
SNIFF
SNIFF

THE PRESIDENT...?
WHERE IS HE?
WHERE?
MY DINOSAURS WILL FIND HIM.
HE MAY BE 'INVISIBLE'.
IT CAN'T BE.
VALENTINE WANTS MY 'LEFT EYE'.
AND ON TOP OF THAT, TO END EVERYTHING.
HE'S PLANNING ON ENDING EVERYTHING HERE, IN PHILADELPHIA. BY KILLING US ALL.
IMPOSSIBLE.
IT IS COMPLETE? THE CORPSE...
HE'S HERE...
HE'S COMING THIS WAY, AS WE SPEAK...
WHAT?!

YOU TRIED TO LURE ME INTO A TRAP, JUST NOW...! YOU MADE ME FOLLOW YOU THERE!
IS IT THE TIME TO BE COMPLAINING ABOUT THINGS LIKE THAT?
WHY DO YOU THINK THE PRESIDENT IS COMING OUR WAY?
IT'S BECAUSE HE'S 'CONFI-DENT' THAT HE CAN WIN AGAINST US!
HE'S AN IN-CREDIBLY DECISIVE MAN! IF WE DON'T TEAM UP, YOU'RE GOING TO DIE, TOO!
I NEED TO KNOW WHAT VALENTINE'S 'ABILITY' IS! HURRY UP AND TELL ME WHAT YOU JUST SAW, WEKAPIPO!

WHAT WAS THAT, DIO?!
DID YOU SEE IT? WHAT JUST HAPPENED TO YOUR 'RAPTOR'...?
......
......
......
DIO?! ANSWER ME!
YOU SAW IT! TWO OF MY RAPTORS WERE SUD-DENLY KILLED!
MY DINOSAURS ARE ON HIS SCENT! IS THAT CIVILIAN IN DIS-GUISE...?!
IS THAT THE PRESIDENT...? IS HIS ABILITY THE ABILITY TO TRANSFIGURE HIMSELF?!

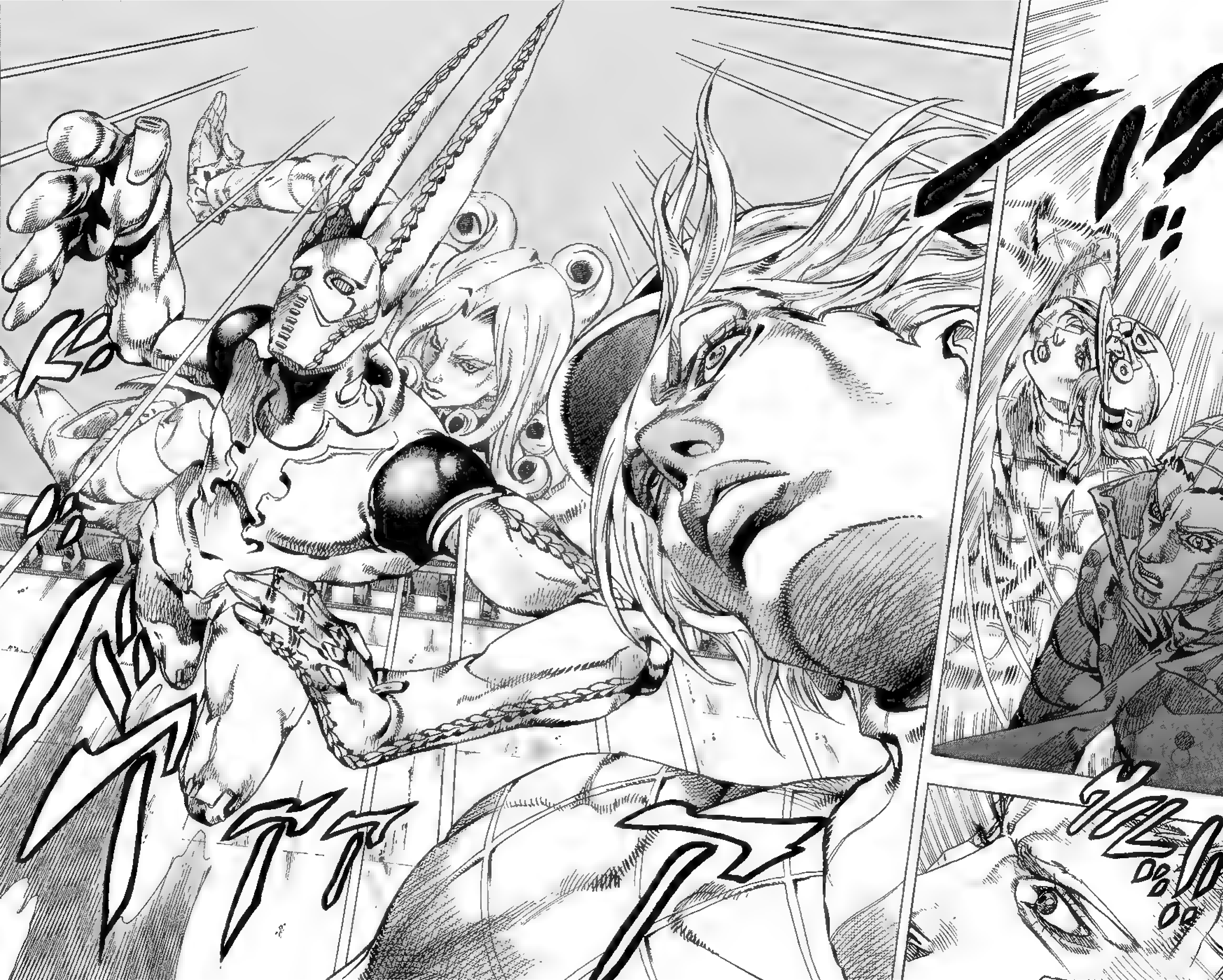
WHAT IS GOING ON, DIO?!
HE'S MUCH CLOSER THAN I ANTICI-PATED!
HE'S COMING CLOSER ...
THAT CI-VILIAN HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH IT.
ANOTHER ONE'S BEEN KILLED! BE-TWEEN THOSE BUILDINGS... OVER THERE!

RAP-TORS! BETWEEN THOSE BUILD-INGS!
ATTACK WHAT-EVER IS THERE!
DIO.
ARE YOU IMPLY-ING THAT YOU WERE THE ONE WHO SHOT JOHNNY, BEFORE?
I COULD NOT UNDER-STAND WHAT YOU WERE SAYING...
BECAUSE I WAS THE ONE WHO SHOT JOHNNY!
THAT IS WHAT I SAW! I HAD NO CHOICE BUT TO SHOOT HIM... I THOUGHT YOU HAD DRIVEN ME TO DO SO!

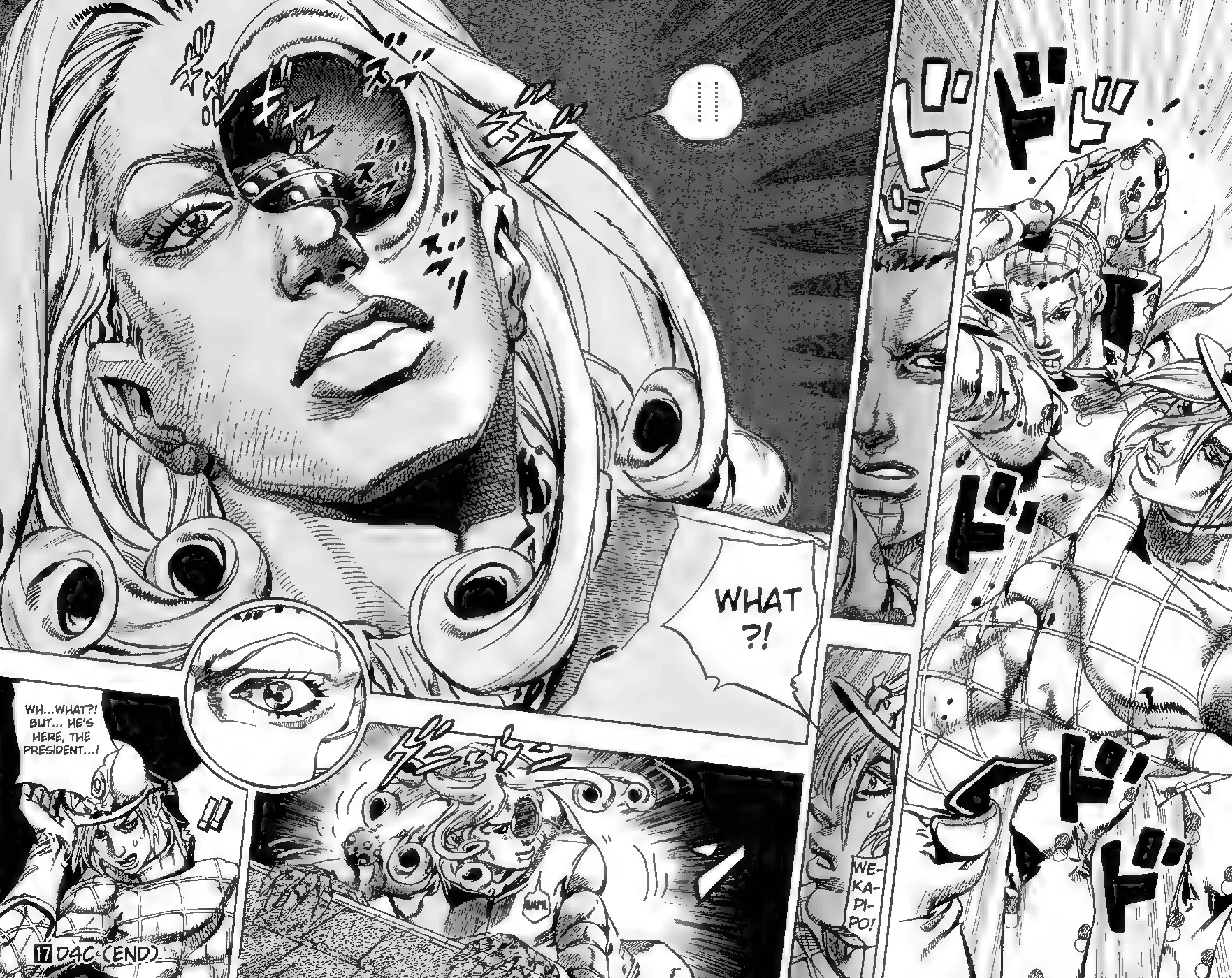
THE CULPRIT IS VALENTINE.
BUT.
WAS THE ONE WHO SHOT JOHNNY 'ME'? OR 'YOU'?
WHAT DID HE DO TO US? DO YOU UNDERSTAND?

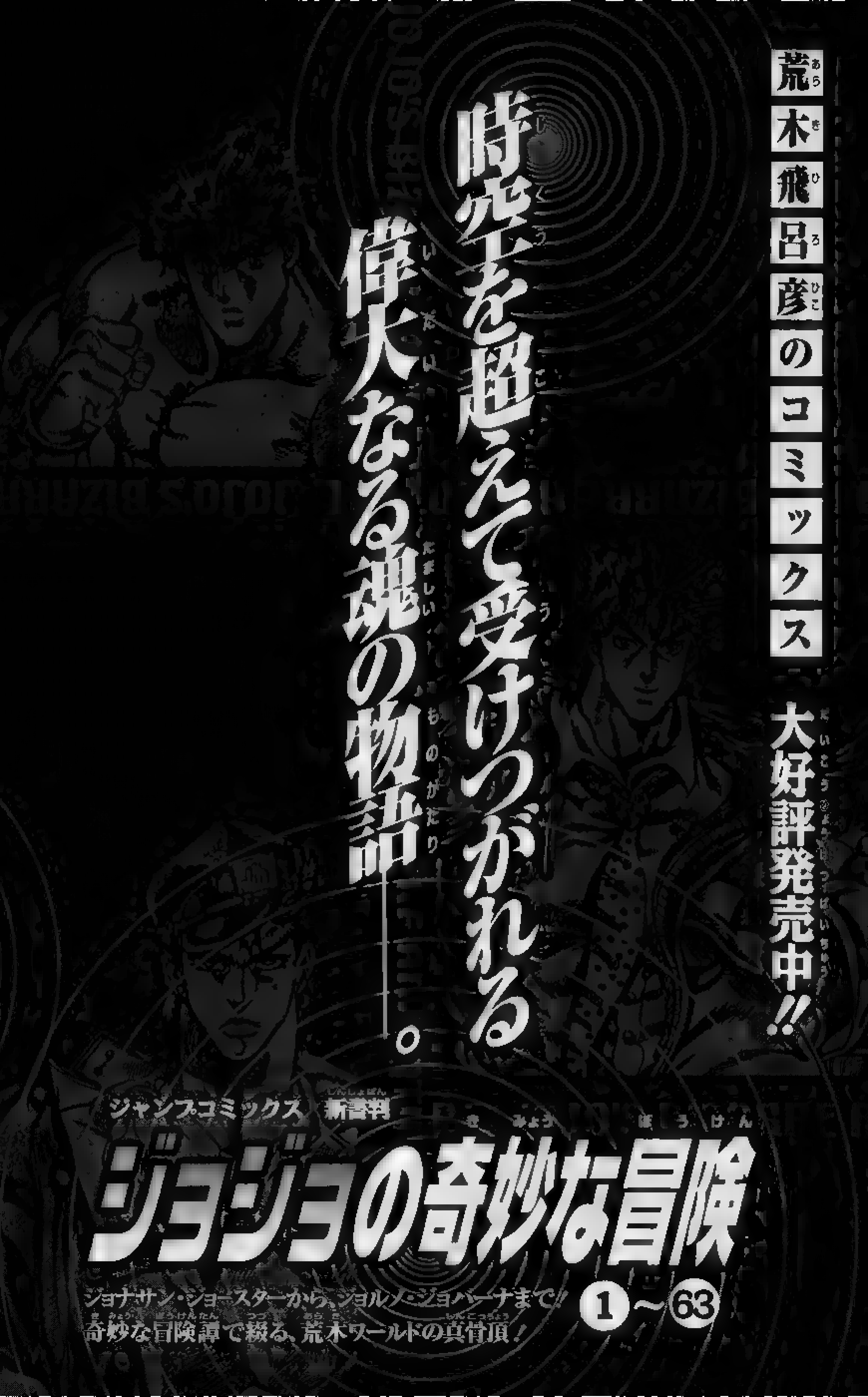
SHIT! ...NOW THE OTHER TWO'VE BEEN CAUGHT!
THEY'RE BEING PULLED AWAY, INSTEAD OF BEING KILLED! WHERE IS HE TAKING THEM?!
WHERE IS HE DRAG-GING THEM?!
THE 'SCENT' IS UN-MISTAKE-ABLY HIS!
BUT IT'S GETTING FARTHER AWAY! I WON'T BE ABLE TO TRACK DOWN THE SPECIFIC LOCATIONS OF MY RAPTORS!

WEKAPIPO, ARE YOU GOING TO WORK WITH ME!? HURRY UP AND DECIDE!
IF WE DON'T WORK TOGETHER, WE'RE BOTH GOING TO BE ATTACKED!
'ABOVE US'...! HE'S TAKEN THE UPPER GROUND! HE'S RIGHT ABOVE US, SHIT! HE'S JUST PLAYING WITH ME, TREATING MY RAPTORS LIKE GARBAGE BY GETTING THIS CLOSE...!



アッ


WHAT ?!
WE-KA-PI-PO!
WH...WHAT?! BUT... HE'S HERE, THE PRESIDENT...!
17 D4C (END)



荒木飛呂彦のコミックス
大好評発売中!!
時空を超えて受けつがれる
偉大なる魂の物語――。
ジャンプ・コミックス　新書判
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
ジョナサン・ジョースターから、ジョルノ・ジョバーナまで!!
①～63
奇妙な冒険譚で綴る、荒木ワールドの真骨頂!

ジャンプ・コミックス　新書判　ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part6

# ストーンオーシャン

①～⑰

六代目ジョジョはなんと女性！ 空条徐倫は、恋人とのドライブ中に交通事故に遭遇。弁護士と恋人にハメられ、15年の刑務所暮らしが確定してしまうが……!?

●集英社文庫＜コミック版＞

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 ①～㊿ 以下続刊

●豪華本

JOJO6251 荒木飛呂彦の世界

デビュー時からJOJO第4部までのイラスト他、自身の作品背景や秘密を語ったロングインタビューも収録。

JOJO A-GO！GO！

独特の色づかいが魅力の荒木イラスト集他、第5部までのスタンドを解説したスタンド本、取材を元に「作家・荒木飛呂彦」の本質に迫る荒木本の3冊セット!! 美麗ケース入り。

●JUMP j BOOKS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険

原作／荒木飛呂彦　著者／関島眞頼・山口宏

JOJO第3部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー！ 承太郎とディオの激闘は灼熱の砂漠を抜け、エジプト・カイロへ。果てしなく広がる砂の海で、彼らの行く手を阻むものは何か…！

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険Ⅱ

ゴールデンハート／ゴールデンリング

原作／荒木飛呂彦　著者／宮昌太朗・大塚ギチ

JOJO第5部をベースにした小説版オリジナルストーリー第2弾！ ヴェネチアで次々と起こる大量殺人事件。そしてその現場には、あのパンナコッタ・フーゴの姿が…！

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

17 D4C（ディ・ファイ・シン）

2009年3月9日 第1刷発行

著者 荒木飛呂彦

©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS 2009

編集 ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話 東京 03(5211)2651

発行人 鳥嶋和彦

発行所 株式会社 集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
03(3230)6236(編集部)
電話 東京 03(3230)6191(販売部)
03(3230)6076(読者係)

Printed in Japan

印刷所 中央精版印刷株式会社

造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社読者係宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。
本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

ISBN978-4-08-874648-7 C9979

JASRAC出 0901578-901

JoJo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 17, Chapter 5
Translation: Freshy — Editing: Shizuka Joestar

# VOLUME 15 EDITORS' NOTES

Hello, readers! We here at JoJo Project like to try and make reading Steel Ball Run an entirely natural experience for English speaking audiences, but there are still some things from the original Japanese that we feel could use additional explanation or commentary.

**D4C (volume name and chapter name)** - Sadly, you'll have to wait until the next volume or so to find out what D4C is really short for!

**Di•s•co and "Chocolate Disco"** - Both of these are references to the song "Chocolate Disco" by the Japanese electropop group Perfume. This is only the third character or Stand to reference a Japanese musician in all of JoJo! The reason his name is written Di•s•co is because in Japanese, it is written as DI•SU•KO; it makes a lot more sense if you've heard the song with its refrain ending with "Di su ko ko ko." There was no way to make this not look weird in English since "Disco" might be three syllables in Japanese, but it only has two in English. We decided to keep the dots, however, as a throwaway reference to the insanely catchy nature of the original song.

**Gyro making a lens** - This would have been total scientific brilliance if this were really pulled off in 1890. It deserves a mention and shoutout for being one of the few "scientific" things in SBR which isn't entirely "bad science" and remotely makes sense. Please enjoy this moment of SCIENCE while it lasts.

**Wekapipo's abilities** - In case you're forgetting what Wekapipo can do, please refer to previous volumes for a refresher on how his Steel Ball abilities affect the perception on the victim's left side.

**Diego's abilities** - Starting in this volume, Diego starts exhibiting powers he had not previously been shown capable of using, such as turning other people or objects into dinosaurs or dinosaur variants. No explanation for this is given in the actual manga or in any official source any of us have found. Perhaps Diego is just learning to control his half of Ferdinand's stolen Stand a lot better.

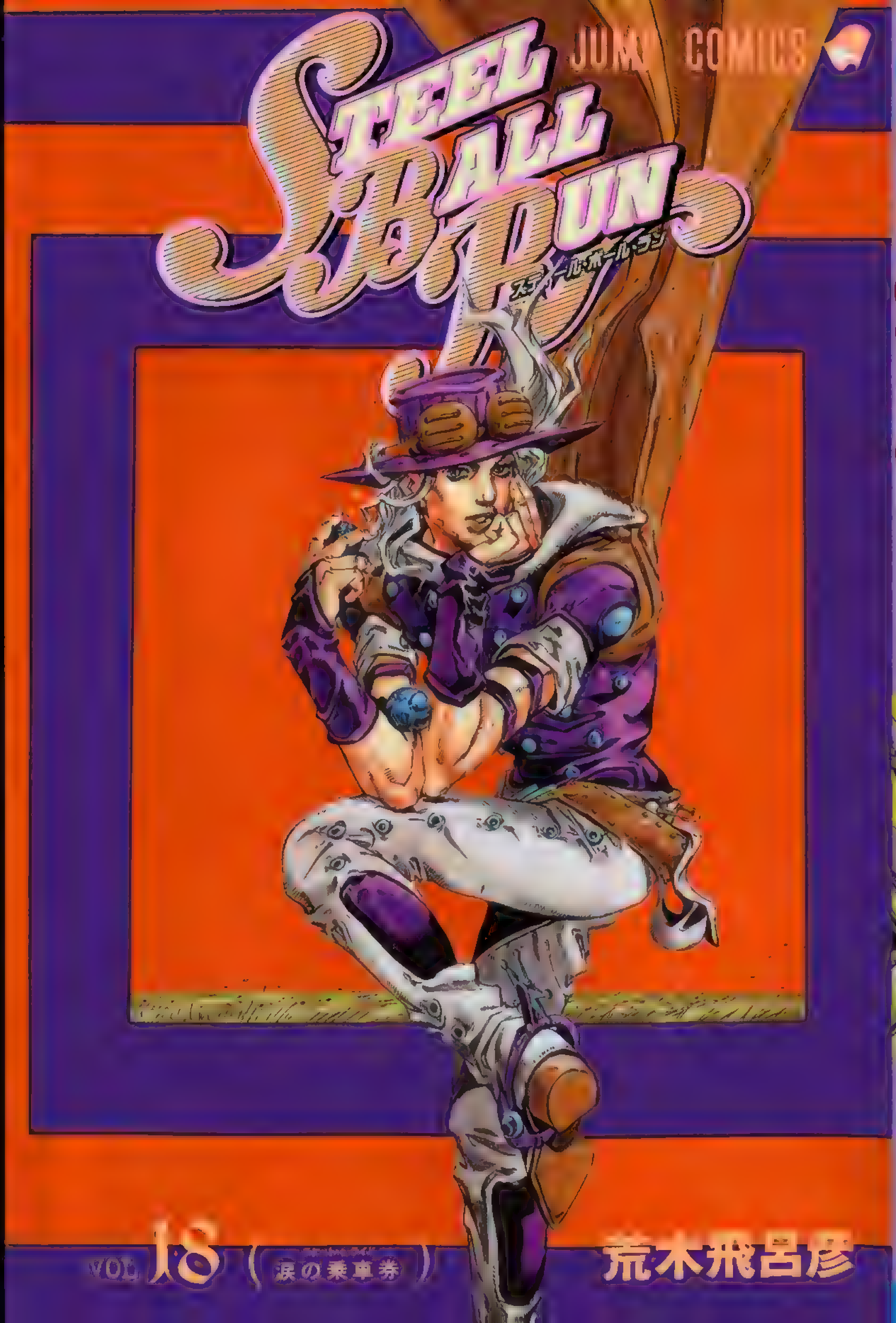
**Everything going on in the last few pages** - Again, you'll have to wait for the full explanation of what's going on! Interestingly enough, if you had been an astute enough reader in Japan and had followed everything Araki ever wrote closely enough, at least some of the President being the boss villain would not have surprised you in the least. Araki mentioned watching Independence Day and shortly after this, having "a fighting President" being one of the inspirations for SBR in an interview with CLAMP. This interview has been fan translated into English and you can find it if you search the Internet.

Thank you for following our releases! We hope you'll stick with us and continue to enjoy the story together in the future!

*JoJo Project*
*December 2010*

## 荒木飛呂彦

WHILE WRITING "STEEL BALL RUN", I RECENTLY NOTICED A COMMON FEATURE AMONG THE CHARACTERS THAT APPEAR IN IT, AND THAT IS THAT THEY ALL SEEM TO HAVE THE DESIRE TO GO HOME. THAT IS, THEY'RE LOOKING FOR PLACES TO GO HOME TO AND MEANINGS FOR THEIR GOING HOME. THE LATTER AT LEAST IS FOR GYRO WHOM HAS HOMETOWN TO GO BACK TO. SO FAR THE ONLY ONE AMONG ALL THE CHARACTERS WHOM WAS ABLE TO FIND THAT WAS "MOUNTAIN TIM". EVEN AS THE AUTHOR WRITING "SBR", AS I WRITE IT SOMETHING FEELS REALLY HARSH AND IT MAKES ME REALLY WANT TO LEAVE THIS RACE AND GO HOME. BUT I CAN'T GO HOME YET. NOT UNTIL I CAN FIND THE MEANINGS FOR THE CHARACTERS TO GO HOME.



9784088747255

1929979004002

ISBN978-4-08-874725-5

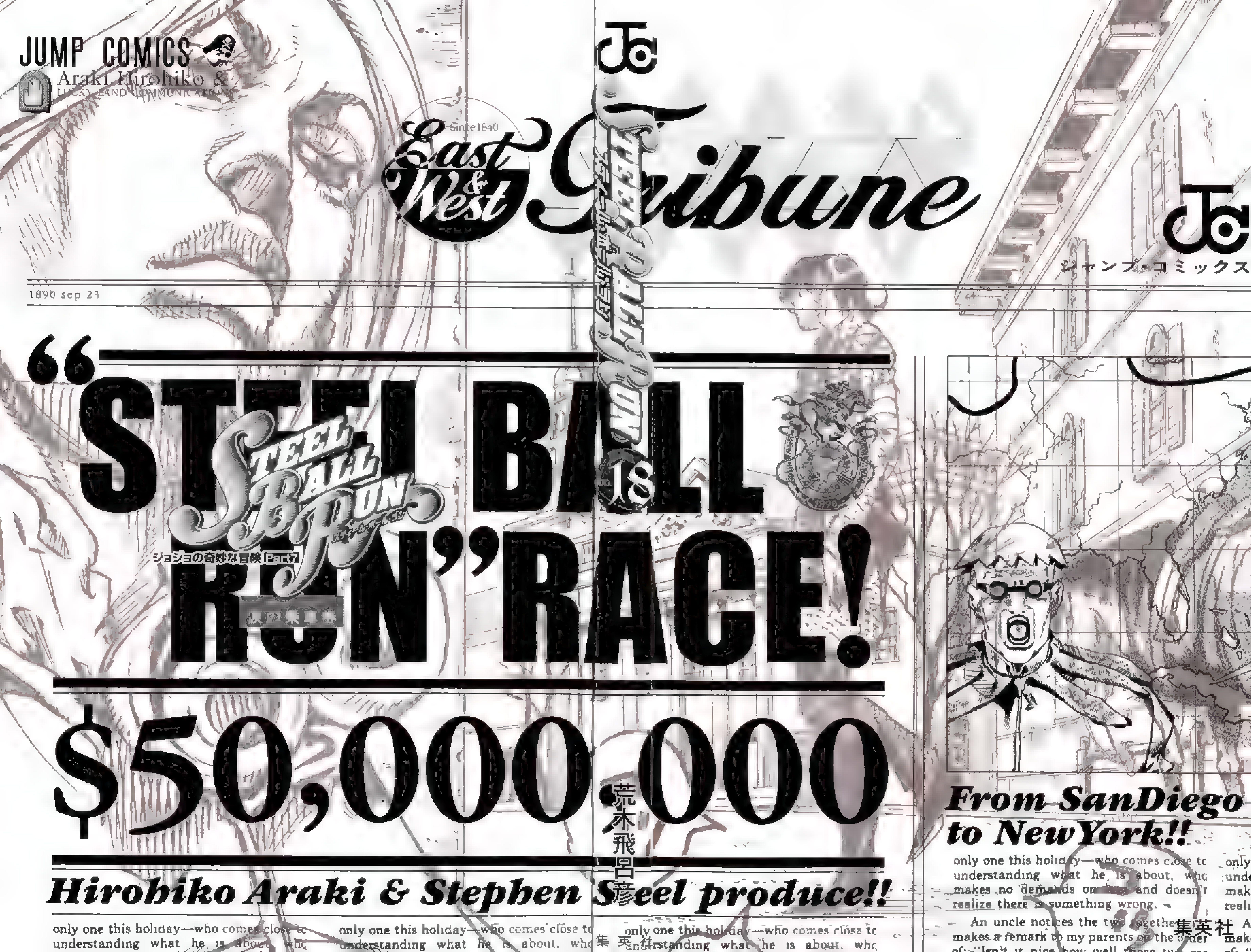
C9979 ¥400E

定価 本体400円+税

雑誌 43089－25


Dioの持つ「左眼球部」を奪い、遺体に関わる者全てを始末するべく動き出した大統領。その突然の襲撃を受けたDioとウェカピポは、手を組まざるを得ない状況に。未だ見えぬ大統領のスタンド能力、その正体とは…!?

ジャンプ・コミックス


JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
Since1840
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890 sep 23
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
18
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
集英社
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together makes a remark to my parents on the order of "Isn't it nice how well those two get along"

★This is a work of fiction. Actual characters, organizations, or events are entirely unrelated.

JUMP COMICS

JOJO'S BIZARRE ADVENTURE Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

TICKET TO RIDE vol.18

# ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.18

## CONTENTS

**TICKET TO RIDE**

#69
D4C PART 4 — 7

#70
D4C PART 5 — 55

#71
TICKET TO RIDE PART 1 — 103

#72
TICKET TO RIDE PART 2 — 133

#69
D4C
PART④

ドドド
NOW...
THERE IS NOWHERE LEFT FOR ME ON THIS EARTH.
NO... THERE WAS NEVER ANYWHERE FOR ME TO GO, IN THE FIRST PLACE.
I SHOULD BE SATISFIED, JUST TO BE ABLE TO PROTECT A 'GREATER GOOD'...
BY MY NATURE, THAT IS ALL I'VE EVER BEEN ABLE TO DO...
ドド

'LUCY STEEL'...FOR JUST A SMALL YOUNG GIRL, ONE THAT I'VE NEVER EVEN MET...
I'VE MADE AN ENEMY OF THIS ENTIRE COUNTRY.
BUT...WELL, I SUPPOSE IT HAPPENS.
BESIDES, I FEEL...
STRANGELY SERENE.

ドドドド
ドドド
ドド
ドド

WHAT IN THE WORLD IS HE?!
HIS ABILITY...?! IT'S NOT LIKE 'VANISHING' OR 'TRANSFORMING' ...
IT'S NOTHING LIKE THAT...!

'DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP'
ドドド
AH...!
TH... THIS CAN'T BE GOOD.
ドド

......
DIO!
!!
AH?!
THIS TIME, HE VANISHED! BUT I DEFINITELY FELT HIM!
TH... THIS...?!
HE VANISHED?!
WHAT?!
I CAN SMELL HIM! THERE'S NO MISTAKING IT, HE'S 'HERE'!
SNIFF
SNIFF
HE'S DEFINITELY HERE!

DIO!!
ド
ド
ド
ド
ド
ド

'DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP'.
OOH ...!

ボッ
ボッ
ボッ！

NAPLES GUARD-STYLE COMBAT STEEL BALLS: 'LEFT-SIDE ATAXIA'!
DIO!
THE ATAXIA WILL ONLY LAST A FEW SECONDS!
SHOULD WE 'ESCAPE'? OR FINISH VALENTINE OFF?
IN EITHER CASE, WE NEED TO MOVE TO HIS 'LEFT SIDE'!
......

I'LL GIVE YOU MY
THANKS, WEKAPIPO!
I CAN FINISH HIM!

HE'S MINE...!

BUT I CAN SMELL HIS RESIDUAL SCENT!
SHIT! A...AGAIN!
HE'S HERE! HE'S DEFINITELY HERE!
SNIFF
HIS ABILITY IS TO BE ABLE TO HIDE HIMSELF BY SEEMINGLY 'MELTING'...!
SNIFF
BUT... HE'S 'HIDING', SOMEWHERE! BEHIND 'SOME-THING'...

HE'S A FEW CENTIMETERS BELOW FROM WHERE MY FOOT IS...!
HE'S UNDERNEATH THAT FLAG!
DIO! THE ATAXIA IS GOING TO FADE AWAY!
GET AWAY FROM THERE!
NO! I HAVE TO FIGURE OUT WHAT THIS IS...!
I HAVE TO SEE IT WHILE THE ATAXIA IS STILL INTACT... IF I RUN, I'LL NEVER HAVE THIS OP-PORTUNITY AGAIN!

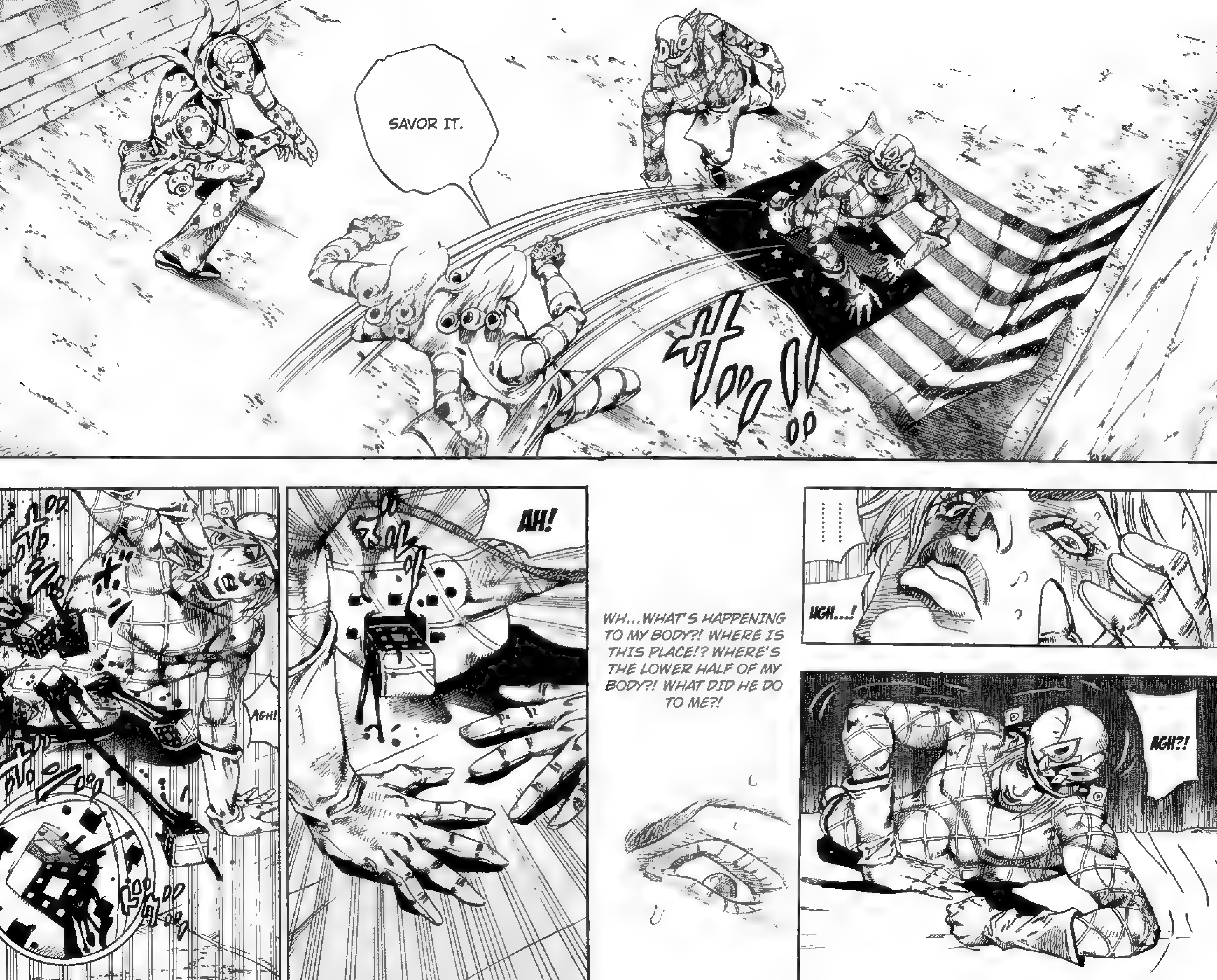
A 'FLAT SURFACE'?
URYYYYYYY

UGH!

TH... THIS...!
DIO!
AH!
DIO!
TH... THIS...!
!?

AND ANOTHER PRESIDENT!? FROM WITHIN THAT 'FLAG'...!
WHAT?! WHO IS THIS?!
WHAT?! WHO IS THIS?!
T... TWO DIOS ...?!
'DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP'! I'LL LET YOU ENTER THIS SIDE...BUT ONLY HALF OF YOUR BODY!

A A AA AA AAA AAA GGH!
AA AA GH!
NOW I AM FINALLY IN POSSESSION OF THE 'LEFT EYE'!
AND THE ONLY WAY THAT ONE CAN FREELY PASS THROUGH THIS 'NEIGHBORING' PLACE IS THROUGH MY ABILITY...
AND WHAT DO YOU THINK WILL HAPPEN WHEN YOU, WHO HAVE BEEN DRAGGED INTO THIS SIDE, MEETS THE 'OTHER' YOU? WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO YOUR BODY?


SAVOR IT.
UGH...!
AGH?!
WH...WHAT'S HAPPENING TO MY BODY?! WHERE IS THIS PLACE!? WHERE'S THE LOWER HALF OF MY BODY?! WHAT DID HE DO TO ME?!
AH!
AGH!

DI...
DIO! THE HALF OF DIO'S BODY! WHAT'S HAPPENING TO IT...!?
WHAT?!

(8 MINUTES AGO)
16:10 PM
NEAR INDEPENDENCE HALL

CLACK
CLACK
CLACK
パカラ
パカラ
CLACK
CLACK
CLACK

I SEE.
GOOD.
SO YOU'VE COME AFTER ME, DIO.

BEHIND YOU, GYRO! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!
HE'S BEHIND YOU!

AH!

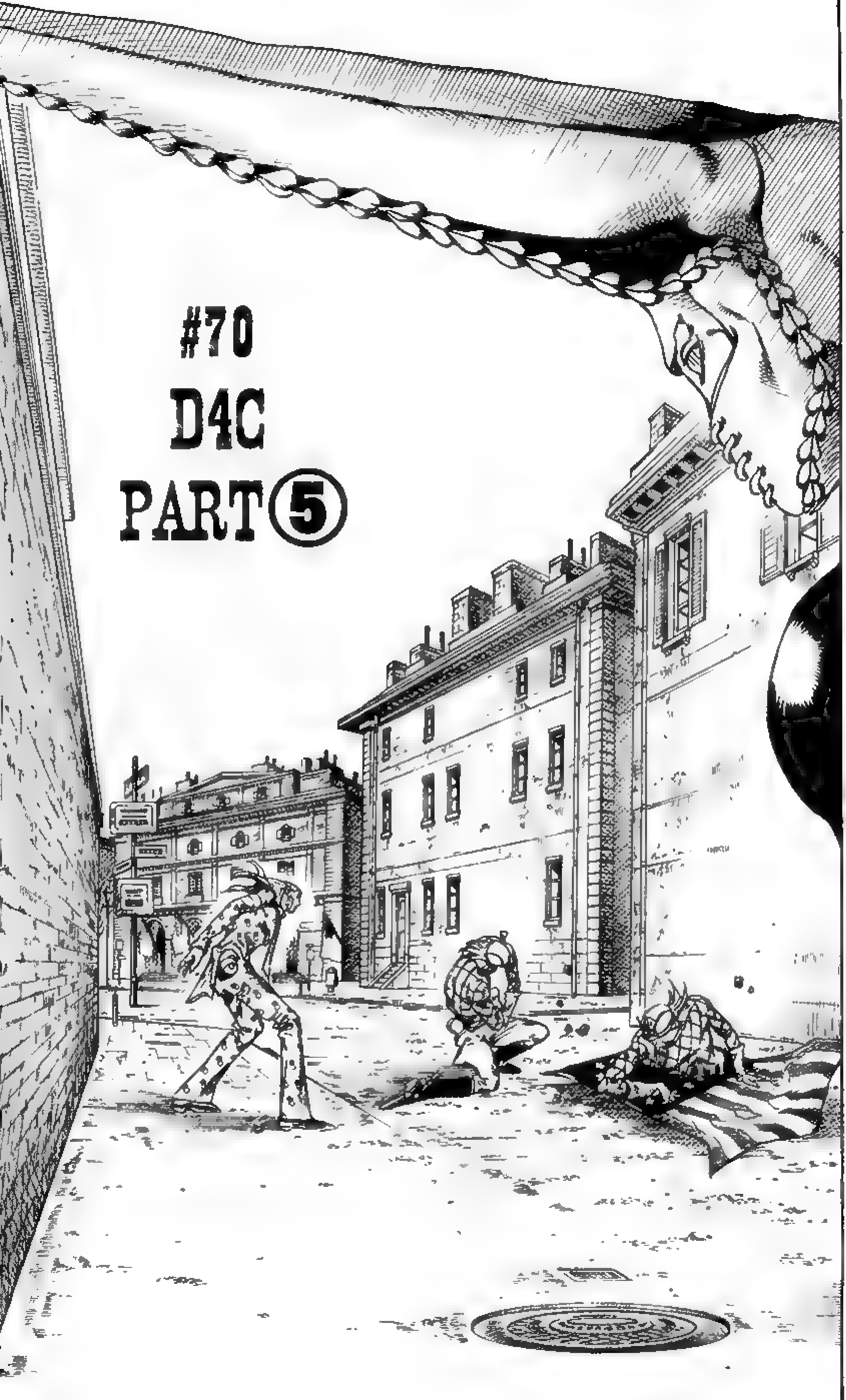
....SO HIS LEGS MOVE.
JOHNNY JOESTAR...

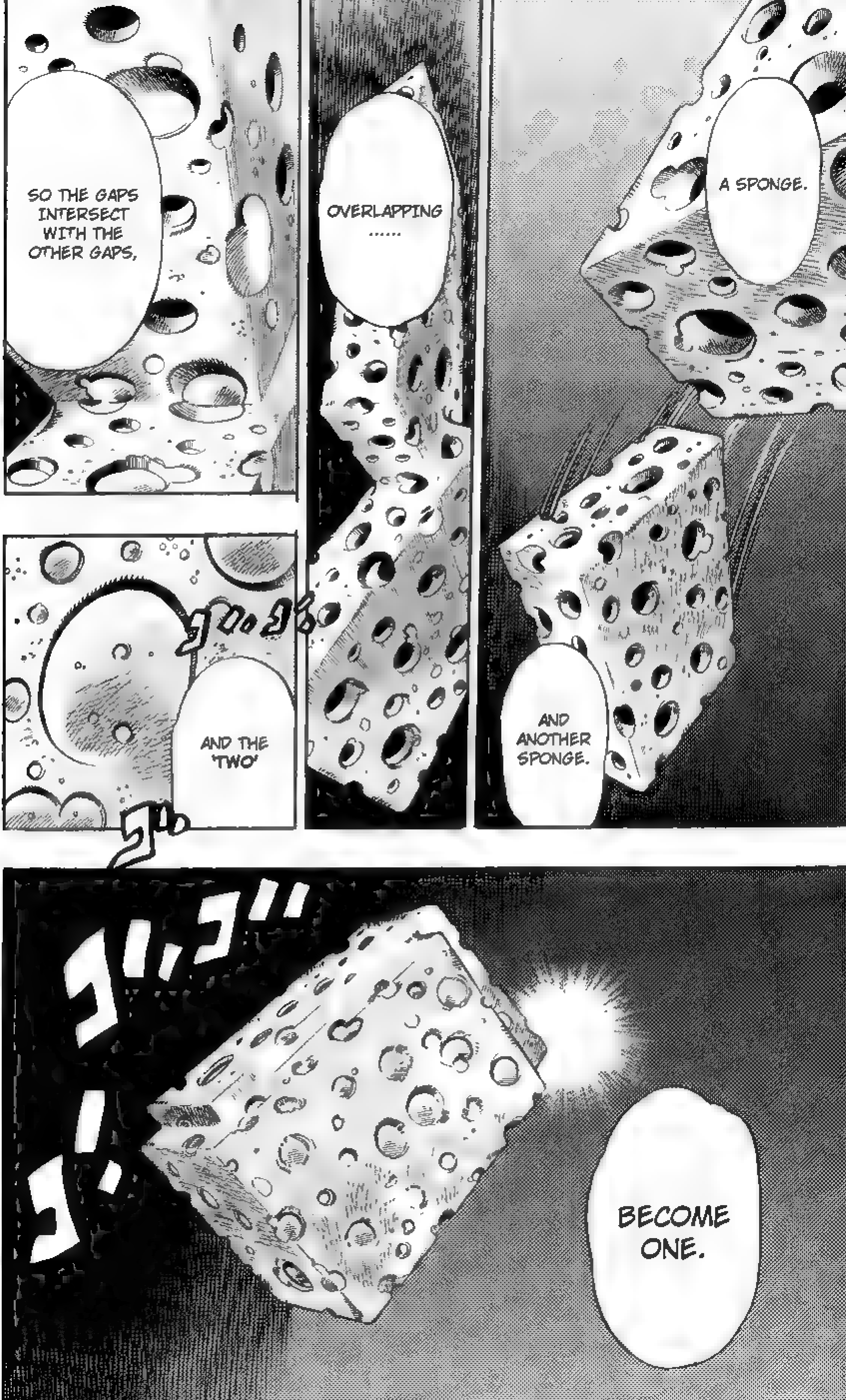
ド
ドド
ドド
ド
ドドド

16:13
PHILADELPHIA
NEAR INDEPENDENCE HALL
THIS CAN'T BE...
I...
!! I SHOT JOHNNY JOESTAR?!
I... I SHOT JOHNNY JOESTAR?!
ALLOWING NEIGHBORING WORLDS TO EXIST SIMULTANEOUSLY IN THE SAME LOCATION. THAT IS MY STAND ABILITY, 'DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP'.

PRESENTS
STEEL BALL RUN

Jojo Project
Presents
STEEL BALL RUN
Volume 18, Chapter 2
Translation: Kewl0210 — Editing: Otafreek


#70
D4C
PART⑤

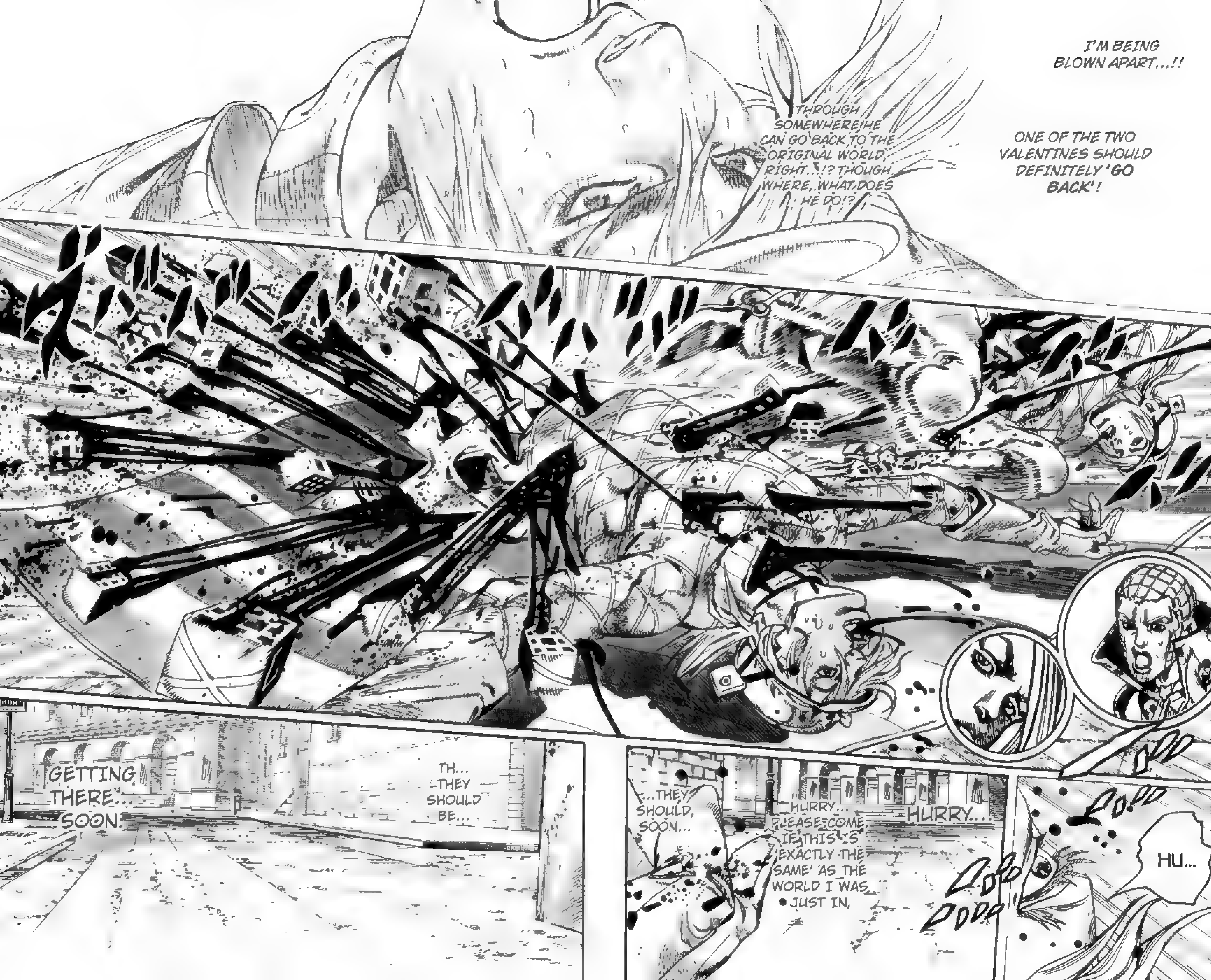

A SPONGE.
AND ANOTHER SPONGE.
OVERLAPPING ......
SO THE GAPS INTERSECT WITH THE OTHER GAPS,
AND THE 'TWO'
BECOME ONE.

THE PRESIDENT IS...
AND I, DIO!!
THERE ARE 'TWO OF ME'!
THE PRESIDENT IS...!!

MY WAIST... IT'S BREAKING APART INTO LITTLE SPONGE-LIKE PIECES!
IF ANOTHER FIVE OR SIX HOLES OPEN IN MY BODY LIKE THIS...!!
THERE ARE 'TWO OF ME' HERE!!
I'LL END UP CUT IN HALF!

ONLY THE PRESIDENT CAN COME AND GO FREELY!
BUT I WAS DRAGGED INTO THIS 'DIFFERENT WORLD'!!
IN EXACTLY THE SAME WAY, THOUGH JUST PARTIALLY, INTO A 'NEIGHBORING WORLD'!!
DIO!
HAH!
UGHOH!!
UOHH.

UOOOOOO
O
O
O
NO PERSON CAN EXIST AS 'TWO OF THE SAME PERSON' IN THE 'SAME WORLD'... EXCEPT FOR ME, WITH MY STAND ABILITY...
DIOOOOOOOOO!


I'M BEING BLOWN APART...!!
ONE OF THE TWO VALENTINES SHOULD DEFINITELY 'GO BACK'!
THROUGH SOMEWHERE HE CAN GO BACK TO THE ORIGINAL WORLD, RIGHT...!? THOUGH WHERE, WHAT DOES HE DO!?
HU...
HURRY...
HURRY... PLEASE COME, IF THIS IS 'EXACTLY THE SAME' AS THE WORLD I WAS JUST IN,
...THEY SHOULD, SOON...
TH... THEY SHOULD BE...
GETTING THERE... SOON.

GOOD
GAHAH!

U...
KU...
KA-
KAAH!
KAH!

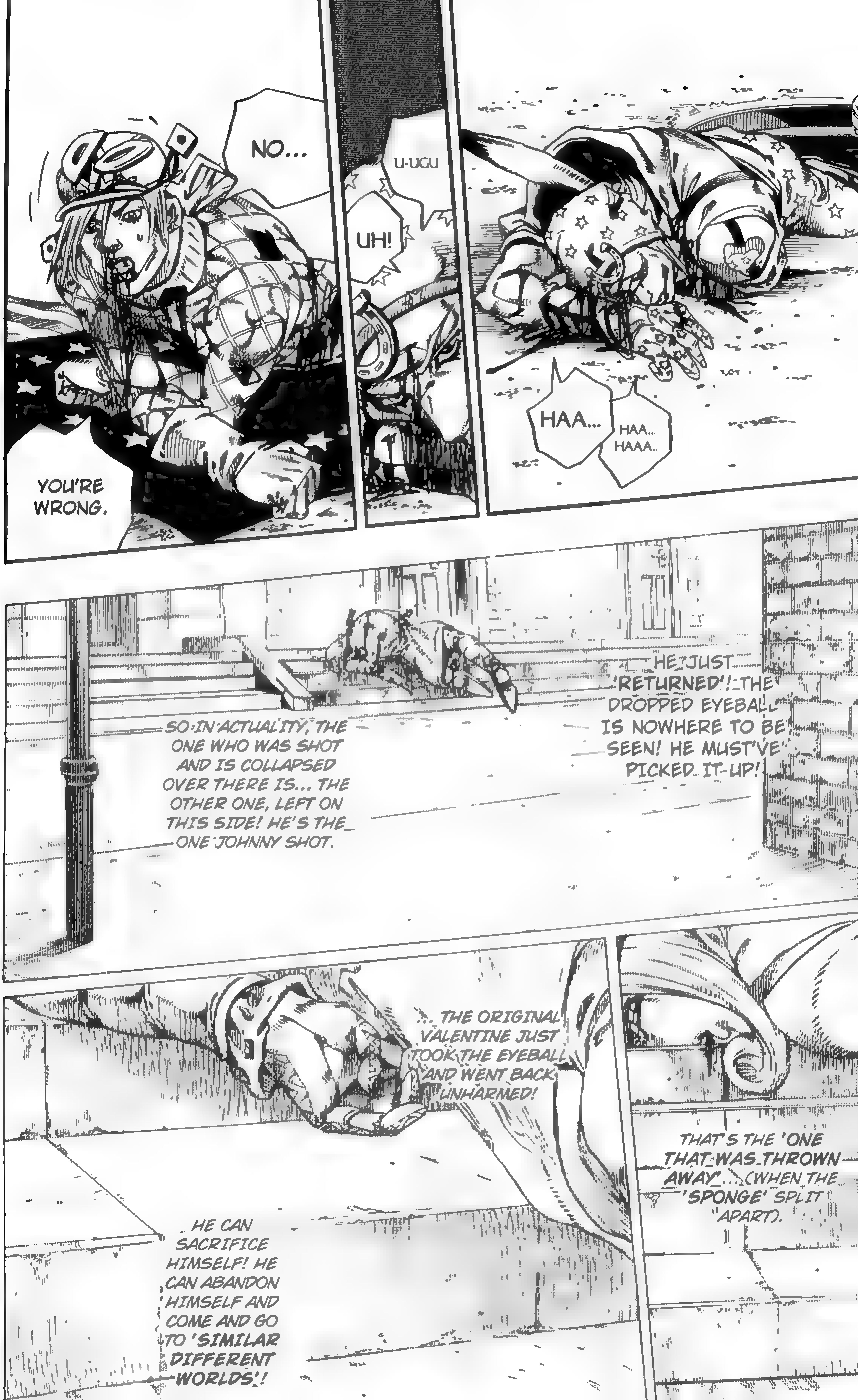
IT CAN'T BE, THIS IS!!
WHAT!!?
WHAT?!!

ドドドドド
Y... YOU DID IT...
GOOD JOB BRINGING HIM...

JOHNNY
JOESTA-
AAAAA
AAAAA
AAAAA
AAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAAA
AAAAR!!

DINOSAURS... GREAT JOB BRINGING... THE NEAR-DEAD JOHNNY...
AND GUIDING HIM HERE THROUGH THE SEWERS!
OOH!
WHAT?
UH...
JOHNNY'S LEGS ARE...
THAT'S... RIGHT...
TH...
UH
KUH.

HE'S DOWN!
YES!! YOU KILLED VALENTINE!!


NO...
YOU'RE WRONG.
U-UGU
UH!
HAA...
HAA.. HAAA..
HE JUST 'RETURNED'! THE DROPPED EYEBALL IS NOWHERE TO BE SEEN! HE MUST'VE PICKED IT UP!
SO IN ACTUALITY, THE ONE WHO WAS SHOT AND IS COLLAPSED OVER THERE IS... THE OTHER ONE, LEFT ON THIS SIDE! HE'S THE ONE JOHNNY SHOT.
... THE ORIGINAL VALENTINE JUST TOOK THE EYEBALL AND WENT BACK UNHARMED!
THAT'S THE 'ONE THAT WAS THROWN AWAY'... (WHEN THE 'SPONGE' SPLIT APART).
HE CAN SACRIFICE HIMSELF! HE CAN ABANDON HIMSELF AND COME AND GO TO 'SIMILAR DIFFERENT WORLDS'!

IF HE WENT BACK, THEN NOW MUST BE MY ONLY CHANCE TO GO BACK, TOO! I HAVE TO FIND SOME WAY BACK NOW!
THE DOOR! HE WENT BACK SOMEWHERE AROUND THAT DOOR!
WITH EVERYTHING UP UNTIL NOW... VALENTINE HAS GONE IN BETWEEN SOMETHING! HE'S DISAPPEARED OR APPEARED FROM BETWEEN TWO OBJECTS!

WHEN I PINNED VALENTINE BEFORE, HE WENT THROUGH TO MY BACK. AND NOW HE GOT CAUGHT IN BETWEEN THE CLOSING DOOR AND 'WENT BACK'!!
I HAVE TO GET BETWEEN 'SOMETHING'!! IF I CAN GET BETWEEN TWO OBJECTS, THEN I'M SURE I CAN GET BACK!!
SHIT! BUT HOW DO I DO THAT!?
NOW IS MY ONLY CHANCE TO GET BACK! HOW!?
AAH!!

UOOOOH! THE ME IN THIS WORLD IS DEAD!
ON GROUND
ON GROUND· PULL
ON GROUND· PULL MY LEGS, WEKAPIPO!

DIO!
THIS IS...
WHAT'S GOING ON HERE?!
DIO'S WRITING WITH HIS FEET!? HE'S ALIVE SOMEWHERE?!
PLEASE! WEKAPIPO!
COME HERE!!
!?

I KNOW THE 'TRUTH' OF HIS ABILITY! PLEASE COME HERE, I'M BEGGING YOU!
COME ON!!
JUST A LITTLE... CLOSER...
YEAH... THAT'S RIGHT!
I KNOW HOW TO GET OUT OF HERE.
COME HERE... I'LL TELL YOU.
'TRUTH'?

SORRY...
WEKAPIPO ...
I HAVE YOU TO THANK ..
NOW I'M PRETTY SURE I UNDERSTAND THE TRUTH OF VALENTINE'S ABILITY...
I'M GLAD I JOINED UP WITH YOU... THANKS TO YOU...

!?
...I ALONE UNDERSTAND...

I'M CAUGHT BETWEEN.
AH...
WEKAPIPO...

JUST AS I THOUGHT... I GOT BACK... TO MY ORIGINAL WORLD!!
PULL MY LEGS, WEKAPIPO
AND WEKAPIPO CAME TO THIS SIDE!!

YOU HAVE MY THANKS... GOODBYE, WEKAPIPO.
THINK OF THIS AS THE REASON YOU CAME TO THIS CONTINENT.

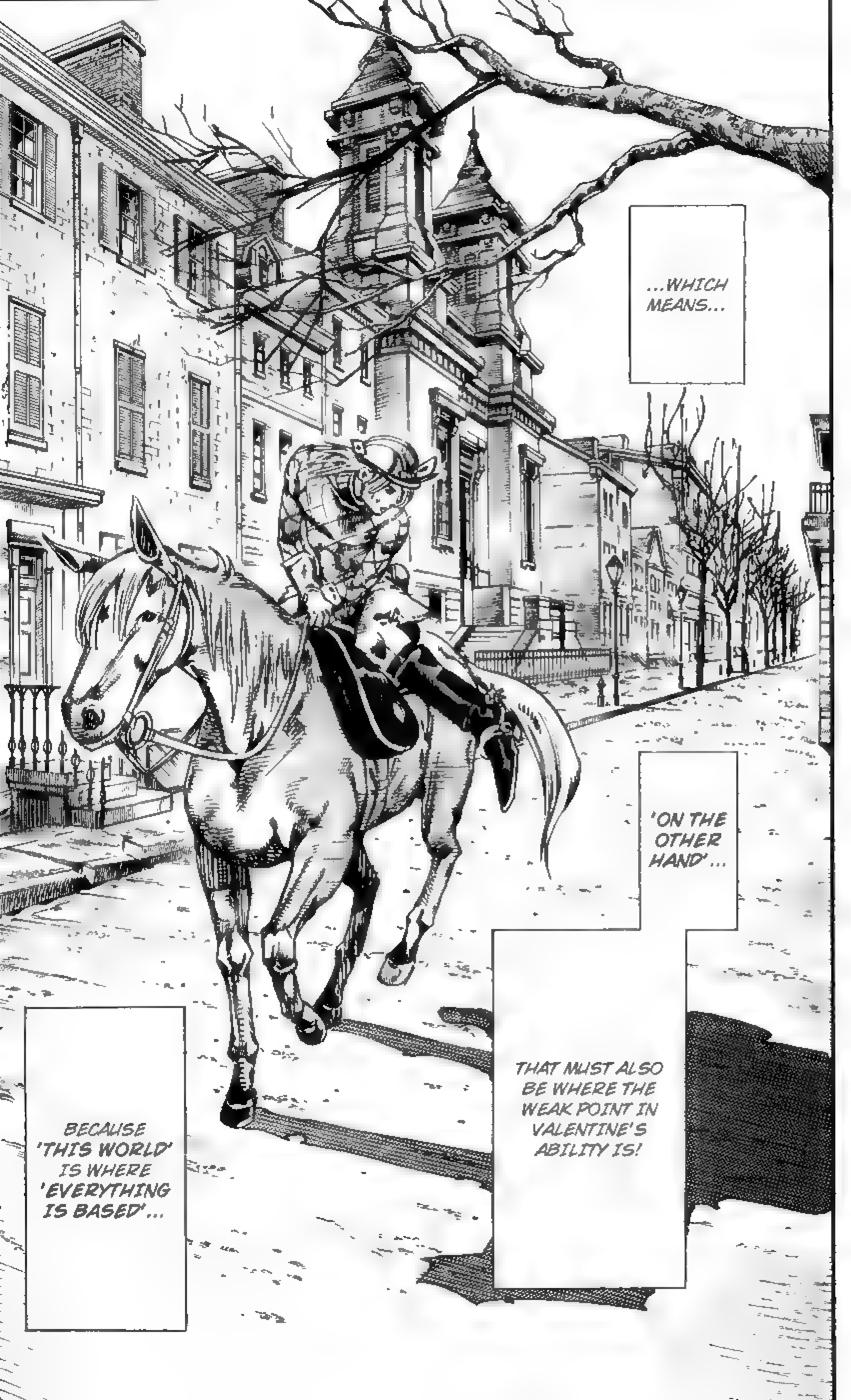
……
GLANCE

SHIT...
IT GOT STOLEN...
THE ENTIRE 'CORPSE'...
IS IN VALENTINE'S HANDS...

ALTHOUGH, THERE WAS ONLY...
'ONE LEFT EYE' EVEN IN THE 'NEIGHBORING WORLD'—
HE'S GOT HIS HANDS ON 'ONE'.
ONLY.
SINCE IT'S SUCH A SIMILAR NEIGHBORING WORLD... YOU WOULD THINK THERE WOULD BE ONE THERE, AS WELL... BUT THERE WAS 'ONLY ONE LEFT EYE'.
THAT IS AN INDISPUTABLY 'SURE FACT'.
IN OTHER WORDS... THAT GUY
PRESIDENT VALENTINE—
HAS THE ABILITY TO GO INTO A 'NEIGHBORING WORLD' SIMILAR TO THIS WORLD I'M IN.
WHAT'S MORE...
THERE ISN'T JUST ONE 'NEIGHBORING WORLD', THERE'S AN UNKNOWN NUMBER OF 'NUMEROUS PARALLEL WORLDS'.

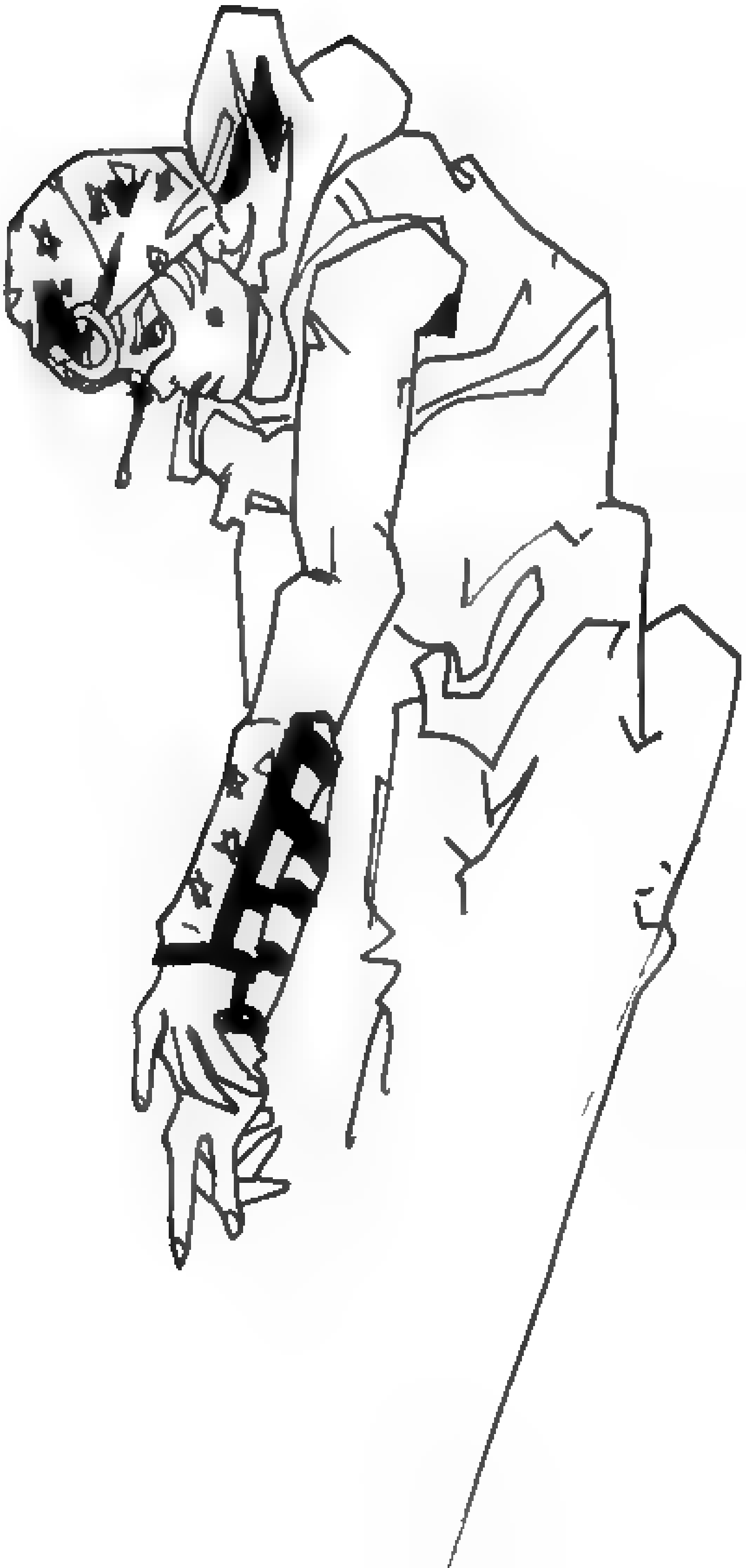
SO IF VALENTINE IS ATTACKED OR INJURED, HE CAN... 'CHANGE PLACES'.
WITH A HEALTHY SELF FROM A 'NEIGHBORING WORLD', AND BRING HIM HERE.
HE ABANDONS THE WOUNDED SELF 'IN THE NEXT WORLD' AND 'SWITCHES WITH HIM'.
BUT THAT 'EYE' ALONE IS DIFFERENT... A 'CORPSE' MUST NOT EXIST IN THAT 'NEIGHBORING' WORLD.
THERE'S ONLY 'ONE'.
EVEN INSIDE THE BREAKING DOWN AND DYING 'NEIGHBORING' BODY OF MINE... THERE WAS NO 'LEFT EYE' TO BE FOUND...

THE 'CORPSE' IS SOMETHING THAT BELONGS TO 'THIS WORLD' WITH NO SUBSTITUTE EXISTING IN ANY OTHER.
IN THE NEIGHBORING STEEL BALL RUN RACE, IT'S PROBABLY NOT A 'CORPSE'; IT'S PROBABLY A RACE WHERE THEY'RE COLLECTING DIAMONDS OR 'SOMETHING' (BECAUSE THE 'NEIGHBORING' VALENTINE DROPPED A DIAMOND ON THE GROUND)...
THAT'S ENOUGH TO PROVE HOW THAT 'HOLY CORPSE' IS ESPECIALLY A SERIOUSLY IMPORTANT THING. AND A MIRACLE THAT EXISTS IN ONLY ONE WORLD.
THIS WORLD IS WHERE 'EVERYTHING IS BASED'!!


...WHICH MEANS...
'ON THE OTHER HAND'...
THAT MUST ALSO BE WHERE THE WEAK POINT IN VALENTINE'S ABILITY IS!
BECAUSE 'THIS WORLD' IS WHERE 'EVERYTHING IS BASED'...

ONCE I'VE TESTED EVERYTHING I'VE JUST THEORIZED, I'LL BEAT HIM!
THE ENTIRE 'CORPSE' (NOW, WITH THE LEFT EYE) HAS BEEN TAKEN, BUT NOT KILLING ME WAS IS A MISTAKE IN HIS JUDGMENT!
I'LL MAKE YOU REGRET THAT...!!
THE WINDS OF VICTORY ARE BLOWING AT THE BACK OF ME, DIO...

IT'S JOHNNY...
IT'S JOHNNY...!! JOHNNY SAW 'SOMETHING'.
THE ONE I'LL FOLLOW NOW ISN'T THE PRESIDENT OR DIO,



VOLUME 18 CHAPTER 3

RAW: SHIZUKA JOESTAR

TRANSLATOR: KEWL0210

PROOFREADER: OTAFREEK

CLEANERS: ORTHIO, AVALONSAYAME, DATSNEAKYNDN, KUNDUMSTAF

TYPESETTERS: OTAFREEK, SHIZUKA JOESTAR

http://shizukajoestar.blogspot.com/

Jojo Project

RED HAWK SCANLATIONS

http://www.redhawkscans.com/

#71 TICKET TO RIDE PART ①

'CUT...' ...'LUCY'.
'CUT'...
4 39 PM
INDEPENDENCE HALL, PHILADELPHIA

'YOU HAVE TO CUT'...
...'CUT'...
'DON'T CRY...CUT'... A VOICE...
~WHISPER~ ~WHISPER~
RIGHT NOW WHERE
IS MR. PRESIDENT?
NO...

I'M NOT AWARE... WHERE IS HIS LOCATION?
THE PRESIDENT HAS GIVEN THE ORDER 'NOT TO TREAT' STEEL'S WOUNDS..
CURRENTLY... NO ONE...
OOH!
HAA... HAAA HAA...
HAAAA HAA HAA HAAAAA...
IN OTHER WORDS...
'GET RID OF HIM'...?
NOT TO 'TREAT' STEEL'S INJURIES... HE SAID...
NO... WE'RE NOT TO GO SO FAR... WE'RE ONLY...
HE MEANT NOTHING MORE THAN THAT.
HAA HAA HAA HAA ...

aah... aah...
aaah...
OOOOH!
HOW DO YOU FEEL IN REGARDS TO LUCY STEEL?
IT REALLY IS UNBELIEVABLE, BUT...
SHE WAS NOT IN THAT STATE UNTIL ONLY A FEW HOURS AGO...
SHE WILL PROBABLY EVEN GIVE BIRTH SOMETIME TONIGHT.
WHAT ON EARTH IS HAPPENING...? NO...
IT WOULD NOT BE ODD FOR HER TO START GOING INTO LABOR PAINS WITH THE CONDITION HER BODY IS IN...

HAAA..
HAAA
HAA...
ドン
DOD
DO
THE CHILD IN HER BELLY IS DOING WELL.
IT'S QUITE A HEALTHY FETUS!
HAAAA HAA...
HAAA HAA...
!
HAAAAAAAA HAA HAAA HAAAAA...

HAAA...
HAA...
HAAA...
OOOOH,
HAAA...
OOOH.
HAAA ...
HAA ...
MY, OH MY, SHE'S AWAKE...
THOUGH THE DRUGS WE GAVE HER SHOULD BE WORKING...
LET'S JUST INJECT YOU WITH A LITTLE EXTRA, AND MAKE YOU LIKE A WINTER CATFISH...
...DOCILE, AS PER THE PRESIDENT'S ORDERS.

'CUT.'
'DON'T CRY, YOU MUST CUT.'
!!
?
PLEASE CALM DOWN...
YOU MUSTN'T DO ANYTHING RASH...
CALM DOWN, LUCY STEEL.
UUUH!
UUH...
AAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAH!

WHY IS MY HUSBAND HURT?!! AAAAH!!
HE'S BEEN SHOT!! YOU HAVE TO TREAT HIM RIGHT AWAY! PLEASE HURRY AND GET STEPHEN MEDICAL CARE!
I UNDERSTAND... LUCY... WE'RE TRYING TO HELP YOU BOTH... WE'RE THINKING OF YOUR WELL-BEING.
SO PLEASE, DON'T GET WILD...
THINK OF THE CHILD IN YOUR BELLY.
CUT.
GAN

HEY! HURRY, CATCH HER!
HURRY AND RESTRAIN HER!!
ドドドド
UWAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAA!!

ドドド
CUT...
DON'T CRY...
YOU HAVE TO CUT...
GOOD! PUT HER TO SLEEP.
LIKE A WINTER CATFISH.

'YOU MUST CUT.'
'CUT.'

!!
HAH...!!
!?
!? ...

WHAT'RE YOU DOING?!
HEY! HURRY AND GIVE HER THE DRUG!
UAAAA!

......
H... HEY! WHAT'RE YOU DOING!?
SORRY! I SLIPPED ON A PUDDLE ON THE FLOOR.
F... FOLLOW HER!!
MAKE HER DOCILE, LIKE A WINTER CATFISH!

ドスッ
ドドド
WH... WHAT'S GOING ON!!?
UAAAAAH!
ズルッ

WHAT IS THIS?! WHAT IS WRONG WITH YOU!? WHAT'RE YOU DOING!?
HEY!!
I DON'T KNOW!! I SLIPPED!! SHE'S PREGNANT SO I NEED TO BE EASY WITH HER!!
FINE, JUST FOLLOW HER!!
SURROUND HER AND TRACK HER DOWN! THERE ARE GUARDS AT THE DOORS IN THE HALLWAY. SHE CAN'T ESCAPE! JUST DON'T HURT HER...!!
MAKE HER DOCILE, LIKE A WINTER CATFISH!!
......
HAA HAA HAA HAAAA...
HAA HAA HAA...
HAA HAA HAAAAA AAAAA!

YOU ABSOLUTELY MUST NOT RUN AWAY, NOR DO ANY MORE HARM.
LUCY STEEL,
YOU'D BEST CALM DOWN.
HAAH HAAH
HAAH HAAAH HAH!
HAH HAAH HAAH HAAH!
HAAH HAAH HAAH HAAH

WE HAVE THE WELL-BEING OF YOU AND THE CHILD IN YOUR BELLY AT HEART.
SQUEEAK!
AH!

HOOOH!
GACHARI!
UGAAAAAAAA!
AH.
WHAT THE HELL?!
WHY IS IT ALWAYS MY DAMN LEFT EYE...?! MAKE THAT WOMAN DOCILE LIKE A WINTER CATFISH, NOOOOW!
AH.
HEY... WHAT IS ALL THIS RUCKUS?
GUIIH
AH!

EH?
ドシュッ
UKAAAA!
AH!!

AAAAAH!!
SQUEAK
IT... IT WASN'T MY FAULT!! ... FOR A WHILE NOW, AT THE 'BOTTOM OF MY FEET'... FROM THE SAME PLACE... I KEEP FALLING!! A... AND HE KEEPS TAKING MORE AND MORE TO THE AREA AROUND HIS LEFT EYE...?!! WHAT ON EARTH...?!
WHAT?! WHAT THE HEEELL?!
......
!?

H... .HEY, WAIT!
AH.
HAAA!
HAAA!
WHAT ON EARTH!?
WHAT ON EARTH!?
HAAA HAAA...
HAAA HAAA ...

'CUT!' ...'DON'T CRY......!'
WHAT ON EARTH?! WHO HAS BEEN TRYING TO TALK TO ME?

VOLUME 18 CHAPTER 3

RAW: SHIZUKA JOESTAR

TRANSLATOR: KEWL0210

PROOFREADER: ANON

CLEANERS: KUNDUMSTAF, DIRNA, DRAIG, AVALONSAYAME

TYPESETTER: OTAFREEK

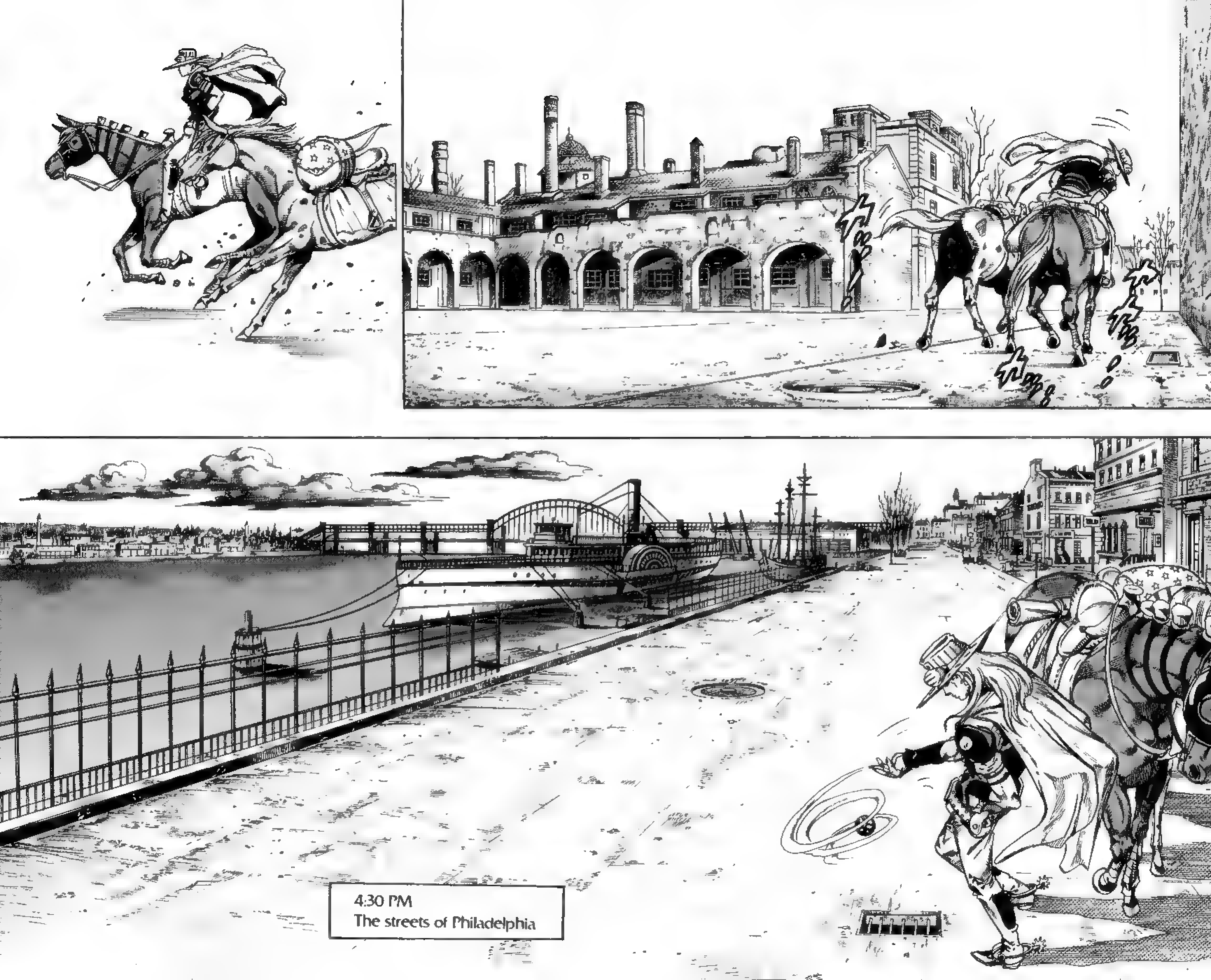
http://shizukajoestar.blogspot.com/

Jojo Project

RED HAWK SCANLATIONS

http://www.redhawkscans.com/

#72
TICKET TO RIDE
PART②


4:30 PM
The streets of Philadelphia

ドシュッ

ズズ

GYRO... I WAS SHOT BY............
BUT THE DAMAGE IS DONE... THIS TIME YOUR JOURNEY REALLY IS OVER.
DON'T TALK, JOHNNY.
I CAN STOP THE BLEEDING TEMPORARILY WITH THE STEEL BALL'S ROTATION, AND IF I STITCH THE WOUNDS WITH THE 'ZOMBIE HORSE' THREAD, I CAN HEAL THEM TO SOME EXTENT
I WAS SHOT BY..........

......
I WAS SHOT BY 'DIO AND WEKAPIPO'!
BUT IT WAS BECAUSE OF THE PRESIDENT'S 'ABILITY'.
I SAW IT! ...... THE PRESIDENT HAS THE ABILITY TO GO TO 'DIFFERENT WORLDS'!
PRESIDENT VALENTINE'S BODY 'WENT TO A DIFFERENT WORLD'.
AND HE BROUGHT ANOTHER DIO AND ANOTHER WEKAPIPO BACK FROM THAT WORLD AND ARRANGED IT TO MAKE THEM SHOOT ME.
CALM DOWN, JOHNNY......
I'M GONNA TREAT YOU NOW.
IT WAS JUST A NIGHTMARE.
WELL, IT WAS DEFINITELY THAT KIND OF ABILITY!
AT LEAST, THAT'S WHAT I SAW!

THE PRESIDENT LEFT 'THIS WORLD' WE'RE IN AND 'WENT' SOME-WHERE ELSE
........... AND THEN HE 'CAN COME BACK'.
HE CAN EVEN DO THINGS LIKE BRINGING BACK COPIES OF HIMSELF!
..........
THE 'WAY HE TRAVELS' IS...
......
HE GETS BETWEEN SOMETHING.

WHEN WE WERE IN THE PARK, I SAW HIM COME OUT FROM IN BETWEEN OUR HORSES.
AND THEN HE LODGED HIMSELF BETWEEN THE TWO HORSES AND DISAP-PEARED.
NEXT, WHEN THE PRESIDENT AND DIO WERE CAUGHT BETWEEN THE FLAG,
THEY DISAPPEARED INTO THE GROUND.
AND DIO AND WEKAPIPO
CAME BACK THROUGH THE FLAG.
AND ONLY HALF OF DIO'S BODY WAS LEFT BEHIND
...........

DIO GOT THROUGH, BUT
THEN THERE WERE TWO WEKAPIPOS
IN THIS WORLD
AND WEKAPIPO DIED!!
THAT'S ENOUGH JOHNNY, STOP......
I'LL LISTEN TO YOUR STORY LATER. WE'LL GO THROUGH THE WHOLE THING SLOWLY.
THERE'S A 'WORLD ON THE OTHER SIDE', AND THE WEKAPIPO THERE WAS BROUGHT HERE THROUGH THE FLAG.
WEKAPIPO NO LONGER EXISTS IN THIS WORLD .......
THE TWO WEKAPIPOS MET.......
AND THEN THEY WERE ANNIHILATED. IF ANOTHER ONE OF YOU IS BROUGHT BACK FROM THE OTHER WORLD,
BOTH OF THEM DIE.
WEKAPIPO IS DEAD!

THAT IS PRESIDENT VALENTINE'S 'ABILITY'.
AND THE PRESIDENT CAME BACK TO INDEPENDENCE HALL UNHARMED.
BUT THEN, WHAT HAPPENED TO THE 'EYE'?
THE LEFT 'EYE' THAT DIO HAD?
JOHNNY
I BELIEVE YOU SAW EVERYTHING YOU SAW.
RIGHT NOW... I DON'T HOLD ANY DOUBTS OR ANYTHING AS TO WHAT YOU SAID OR WHAT HAPPENED, AND I'M NOT GONNA TRY TO CONVINCE YOU THAT IT WAS AN ILLUSION OR ANYTHING.

THE PRESIDENT TOOK THE 'EYE' AND LEFT...
THAT'S WHAT I'M TALKING ABOUT, JOHNNY...
THE PRESIDENT USED HIS ENIGMATIC STAND ABILITY TO OBTAIN HIS GOAL, THE 'EYE'.
IT WAS ONLY BECAUSE HE HAD COLLECTED THE *ENTIRE* CORPSE, THAT HE WENT BACK TO HIS RESIDENCE WITHOUT TAKING YOUR LIFE! HE'S COMPLETED IT. ...HE HAS TO HAVE THE ENTIRE CORPSE AT HIS PLACE NOW.
IT'S ALL OVER NOW... THERE'S NOTHING WE CAN DO ANYMORE...
KNOWING WHEN TO GIVE UP REQUIRES 'COURAGE' TOO, DOESN'T IT? WITH THOSE WOUNDS WE'VE GOT NOTHING MORE WE CAN DO.

HEY... GYRO......!
MY LEGS MOVED BEFORE .........
......
......
YOUR LEGS CAN MOVE......?
I... LET ME SHOW YOU......
I CAN MOVE THEM......
I... LOOK, THEY MOVED!

L...... LOOK.
...............
...
LOO———K!!

SHIT. JUST A LITTLE MORE! DAMMIT!
I'M SURE IT'S JUST A LITTLE MORE!! I WANT TO GET MY HANDS ON THAT CORPSE NO MATTER WHAT!
I DON'T CARE ABOUT 'LIVING' OR 'DYING' OR WHO'S 'JUST' AND WHO'S 'EVIL'!! I DON'T EVEN GIVE A FUCK ABOUT THE 'CORPSE' BEING A SAINT OR WHATEVER!!

I'M STILL 'NEGATIVE'! I WANT TO GET UP TO 'ZERO'!
IF I CAN GET THE 'CORPSE' I CAN GET MY 'NEGATIVE' BACK TO 'ZERO'!!
DAMMIT, SHIIIIIIT!
......
NOW THAT IT'S COME TO THIS, I WISH I HADN'T KNOWN ABOUT THE 'CORPSE' IN THE FIRST PLACE!
JUST A LITTLE! IT'S JUST A LITTLE FURTHER!!

......
......
THE 'STIRRUPS' ON A HORSES SADDLE WERE INVENTED ..............
IN THE 11TH CENTURY.
UNTIL THEN, HUMANS ONLY RODE HORSES WITH SADDLES WITHOUT THESE 'STIRRUPS' TO SUPPORT THEIR WEIGHT.
DID YOU KNOW THAT? ONLY JUST THE 11TH CENTURY! ......
THEY RODE ON THEIR BACKSIDES AND LEFT THEIR LEGS DANGLING.

EVEN THE GENIUSES OF ANCIENT EGYPT THAT BUILT THE PYRAMIDS,
THE FATHER OF MEDICINE HIPPOCRATES, OR ALEXANDER THE GREAT WHO CONQUERED THE WORLD USING ARMIES MOUNTED ON HORSEBACK DIDN'T CONSIDER IN THE SLIGHTEST THAT YOU COULD RIDE A HORSE WITH YOUR LEGS.
DON'T YOU THINK IT'S STRANGE?
TO LEAVE THE LEGS DANGLING CAN CAUSE BLOOD CONGESTION.
......
THERE WERE NO 'STIRRUPS' FOR... THAT WHOLE TIME. YET HUMANS HAVE BEEN RIDING HORSES FOR THOUSANDS OF YEARS! AND DESPITE ALL THAT, THEY WEREN'T FINALLY INVENTED UNTIL PAST 1000AD.
DO YOU KNOW WHY THAT IS?
THE 'STIRRUPS' DON'T JUST SIMPLY GIVE YOU A PLACE TO PUT YOUR LEGS AND HELP KEEP YOUR ASS FROM SLIPPING.
YOU ABSORB THE HORSE'S POWER FROM THE LOWER HALF OF YOUR BODY AND FIGHT WHILE MOUNTED. IT WAS INVENTED FOR THE SAKE OF 'TECHNIQUE'.

THE HORSE'S POWER ENTERS THE RIDER'S HIPS..........
AND IT'S THEN SENT TO THE BACK AND SHOULDERS IN A HELIX SHAPE ...........
THEN ALL THE WAY TO THE ARMS TO USE TECHNIQUES WITH WEAPONS!! THE ONES THAT NEEDED THE STIRRUPS WERE THE 'KNIGHTS OF THE MIDDLE AGES'!
..........
.........

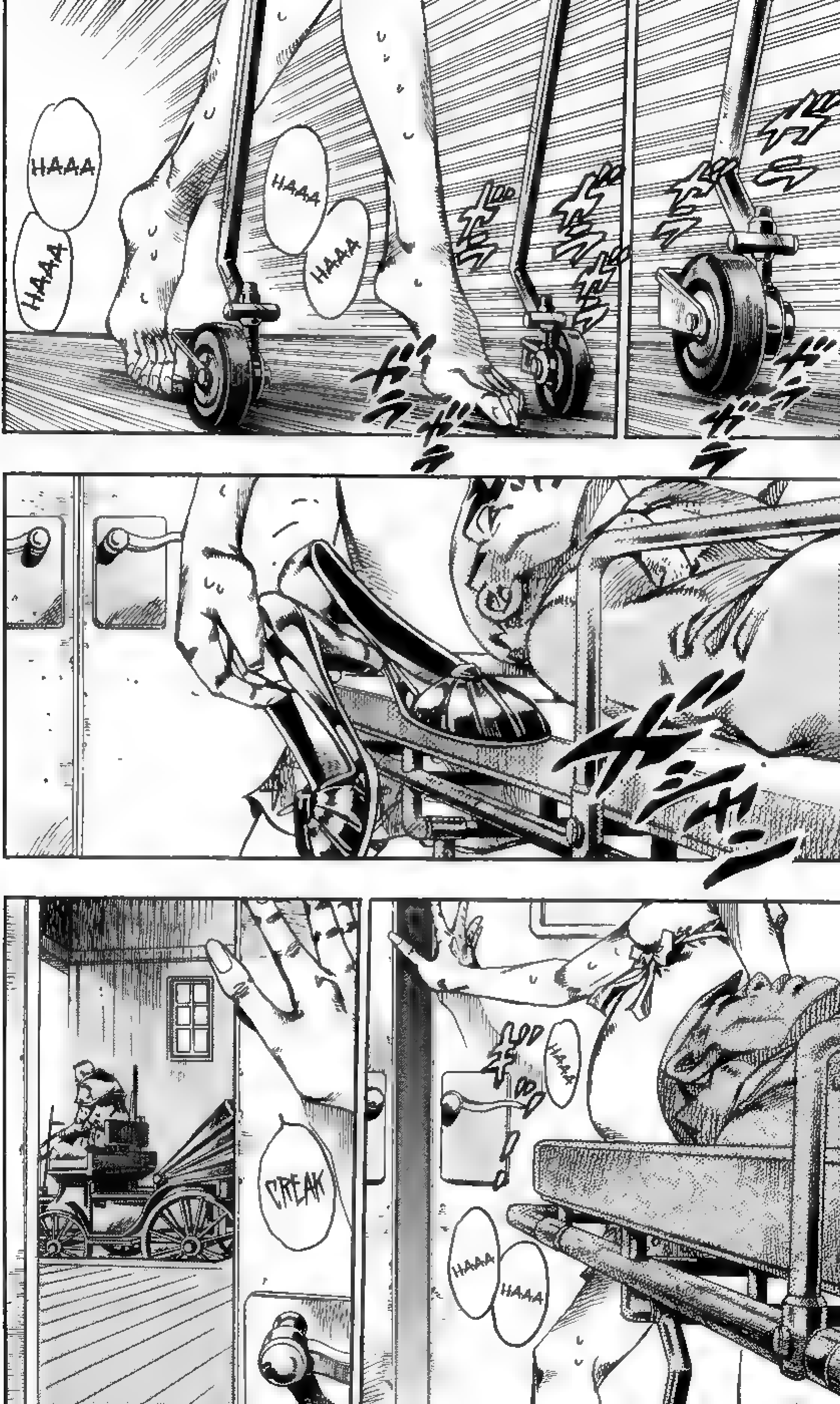
UNDERSTAND...? I'LL GIVE YOU AN EXPLANATION THAT'S A LITTLE MORE CONCRETE.
THE 'STEEL BALLS' ARE NOT SOMETHING ROTATED SIMPLY USING THE WRIST.
WE'RE TAUGHT THE 'INFINITE SCALE' FROM NATURE.
THE ENERGY FOLLOWS ALONG THE LOWER BODY FROM THE 'HIPS' TO THE 'SHOULDERS' TO THE 'ELBOWS', 'WRISTS' AND 'FINGERS', AND ONCE IT'S GONE AROUND YOUR ENTIRE BODY YOU OBTAIN INVINCIBLE ROTATIONAL POWER.
THERE ARE TECHNIQUES WHICH ARE HANDED DOWN THROUGH THE ZEPPELI FAMILY THAT CAN BE FURTHER STRENGTHENED BY THE HORSES POWER THROUGH THE 'STIRRUPS'!
IF YOU CAN PLANT BOTH FEET IN THE 'STIRRUPS' ............ JOHNNY,
AND PRODUCE THAT 'ROTATIONAL' ENERGY OBTAINED FROM THE HORSE ...............
THERE MAY BE A CHANCE TO STAND AGAINST THE PRESIDENT'S YET UNKNOWN STAND ABILITIES.

OBTAIN POWER FROM THE **'HORSE'**...
!?
WHAT KIND OF ROTATION IS THAT? WH... WHAT WOULD THAT KIND OF ROTATIONAL ENERGY DO?
UP TO NOW, I'VE NEVER ONCE USED THE HORSE'S POWER TO THROW A STEEL BALL. NOR HAVE I EVER EVER SEEN MY FATHER DO IT...... SO I DON'T EVEN KNOW FOR SURE IF THAT **'ROTATION'** REALLY EXISTS.
THIS IS NOTHING MORE THAN SOMETHING PASSED DOWN FROM DISTANT ZEPPELI FAMILY ANCESTORS. I DON'T KNOW ANYTHING ELSE ABOUT IT.
THE ZEPPELI FAMILY IS A FAMILY OF EXECUTIONERS. WE'RE NOT **'CAVALRY'**.
I HAVE NO WAY TO PROVE ANYTHING ABOUT WHAT I JUST SAID.
ALL I SAID IS WE *HAVE* A CHANCE.

THE JOESTAR FAMILY HAS A HISTORY OF BEING HORSEBACK RIDERS.
THAT'S WHY I EXPLAINED IT! IT'S LIKELY THE ONLY ONES WHO CAN USE IT ARE 'HORSEBACK RIDERS'!

..........
THANK YOU.
I HOPE YOU'LL PLEASE TREAT MY INJURIES SOON... GYRO.
SOON! I NEED TO HAVE MY INJURIES COMPLETELY HEALED... I WANT TO RIDE MY HORSE. ....
'THERE'S STILL LUCY STEEL'!!
PURSUING THE PRESIDENT...
AND FIGURING OUT WHERE THE 'CORPSE' IS MAY ALREADY BE IMPOSSIBLE, BUT...

SHE SHOULD STILL BE SOMEWHERE IN PHILADELPHIA. WE DON'T KNOW WHAT KIND OF SITUATION SHE'S IN RIGHT NOW,
BUT IF HER TRUE IDENTITY HASN'T BEEN REVEALED TO THE PRESIDENT YET,
SHE CAN GIVE US INFORMATION!
LET'S GO RESCUE 'LUCY STEEL'.
THERE'S STILL TIME .........!!
I CAN'T BELIEVE LUCY HAS ENDED UP AS OUR FINAL 'TRUMP CARD'...



HAAA
HAAA
HAAA
HAAA
CREAK
HAAA
HAAA
HAAA

CLACK

BE CAREFUL WITH THAT SHOTGUN......
OR I'LL 'CUT' YOU.
I HAVE A FAVOR TO ASK...
WITHOUT DOING ANYTHING ELSE, BRING THIS COACH OUTSIDE!
THAT WOULD BE NICE...
I NEED YOU TO BRING THIS COACH OUT IN ORDER TO TEST SOMETHING.
U... UNDERSTOOD.

I... I'M...
......DROPPING THE GUN NOW.
UGH.
AH!! IS THAT 'STEPHEN STEEL' IN THE SEAT!!?
WH... WHAT'RE YOU DOING!? WHAT HAPPENED TO THE OTHER GUAAAAARDS!?
HEY, YOU BASTARD, DON'T MOOOOOOOOVE!

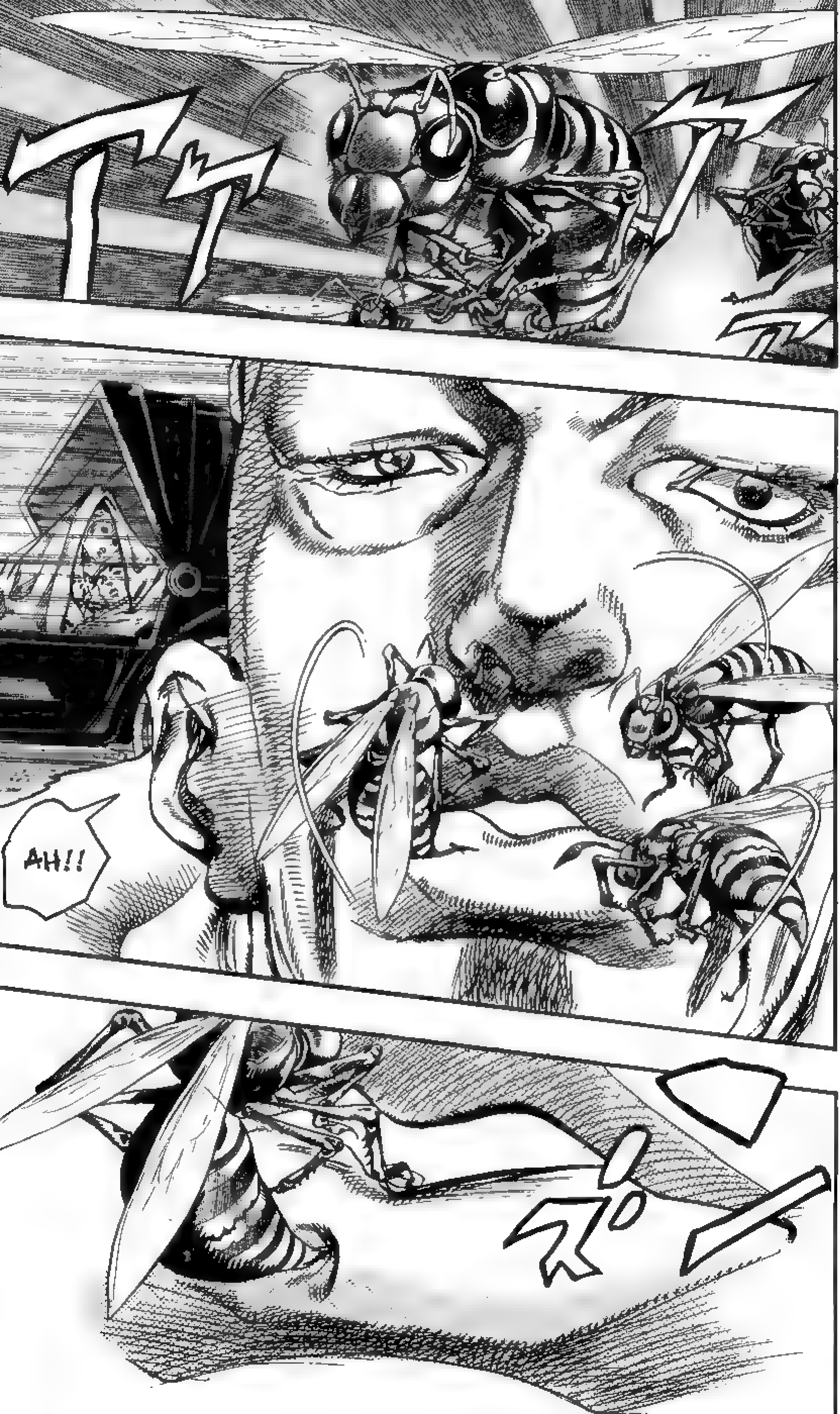
?
HAH
BUBUGH!!!

UGAAAAAAH!
APUGH!
APUGH!
HE'S BACK IN THE SEAT
AH!!
Y... YOU BITCH!! D... DON'T MOVE FROM THAT SPOT!!

NEIIIIGH!
AH!!
UWAAAAAA!

PLEASE SIT IN THE CAR AND DRIVE...... I'M LEAVING THIS GOVERNMENT BUILDING.
I REALLY NEED YOU TO SIT BACK IN THE DRIVER'S SEAT...
UGUA AAAA AAH!
UOH UOH
UGAAAH!

H... HELP!
ISN'T THERE ANYONE HERE!! SHE TOOK THE COACH! SHE'S ESCAPIIIIIING!


AH!!

UGAH? NNNGH!!
HIIIIH!!
......
HIIIIIIIII!

HE'S BACK IN THE SEAT.
UGAAAAH!
APUGH! APUGH!
SIR!

UGUGU
UGU
HIH
THE 'LEFT', LUCY, GO TO THE 'LEFT'!
GO 'LEFT' AT THE NEXT CORNER...
PLEASE TURN 'LEFT'.
GU

UGU
GUGU
UGU
WHERE ARE YOU TAKING ME...? (VOICE IN MY HEAD?)
'DELAWARE' RIVER?
ONCE YOU'VE TURNED, KEEP GOING STRAIGHT AHEAD...
GO TO THE 'DELAWARE RIVER'.

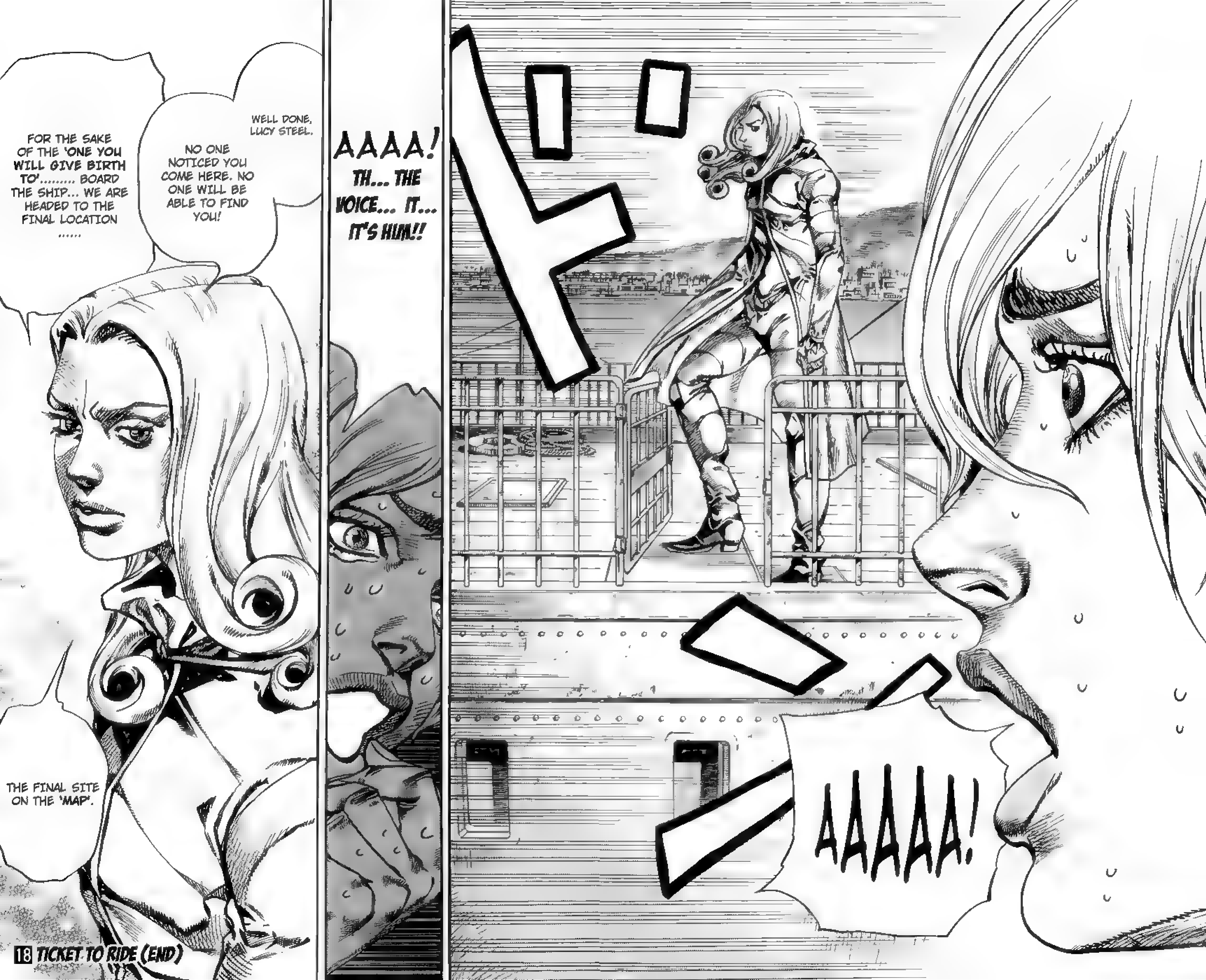
GO TO THE RIVER......
'WHO ARE YOU'?
AND THE 'TEAR CUTTER' ......
WHY DID YOU HELP ME OUT OF THE GOVERNMENT BUILDING?
WHAT ON EARTH.........
................
......
......

ONCE YOU'VE GONE TO THE 'RIVER'.........
LOOK FOR A SHIP......

THE 'LEFT EYE'.
AND THE 'RIGHT EYE'.
'GO TO A SHIP'......... LUCY.
'FIND A SHIP AND BOARD IT!'

THE 'CORPSE' .........
THE 'HOLY CORPSE' WHICH ENTERED INTO LUCY STEEL'S BODY IN THE FIREPLACE ROOM...
HAS CHOSEN THE ONE IS ABLE TO ASSEMBLE IT ALL, ME!!
THE 'CORPSE' ...
FAVORS ME, VALENTINE!!

THE CORPSE'S ABILITY THAT ACTIVATES THROUGH LUCY'S BODY IS MY ALLY.
IN THIS WORLD IT MOVES FOR MY PURPOSES!!

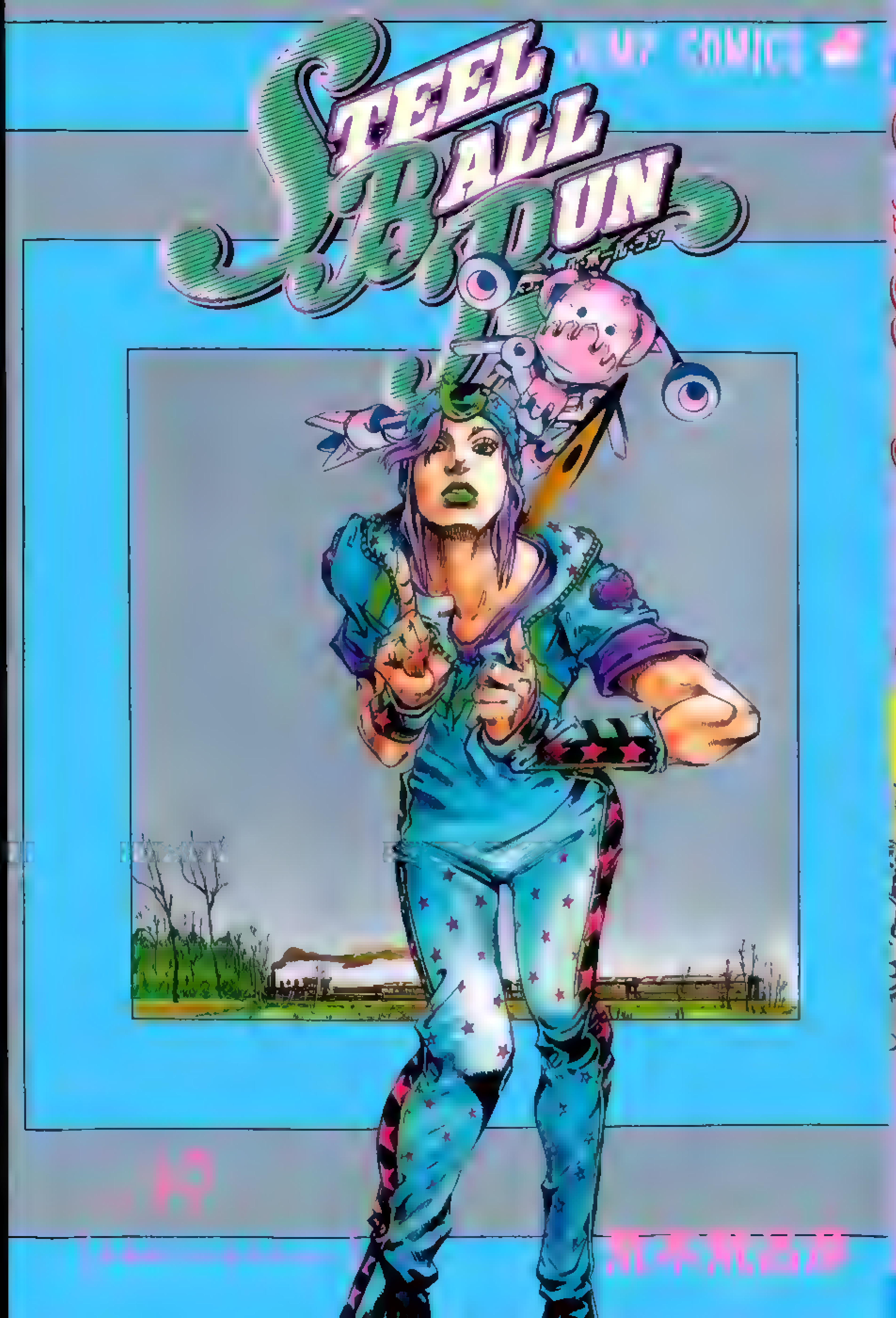



18 TICKET TO RIDE (END)

## HIROHIKO ARAKI

HEADS UP TO ALL THE YOUNG PEOPLE OUT THERE. STOP CLIMBING TREES AS SOON AS YOU READ THIS. HOWEVER, IGNORING MY FRIENDLY WISDOM IS EVEN MORE DANGEROUS. POLICEMEN ARE ALREADY LOOKING FOR YOU, ESPECIALLY THROUGHOUT THE TOKYO CITY CENTER. I KNOW, I KNOW, CLIMBING TREES IS JUST TOO DAMN COOL TO GIVE UP. BUT, CONSIDER THE FOLLOWING. THE MOMENT YOU RELINQUISH YOUR TREE-CLIMBING DESIRES IS THE MOMENT YOU AVOID FALLING ON YOUR ASS AND LOOKING LIKE A COMPLETE BUFFOON STUCK IN THE HOSPITAL. DISLOCATING YOUR PELVIS, SCRAPING YOUR KNEES, OR KICKING THE BUCKET CAN BE JUST THE BEGINNING. FURTHERMORE, YOUR MENTAL HEALTH COMES IN QUESTION THE SECOND YOUR FOOT ENCOUNTERS BARK. NOW, A SPECIAL MESSAGE TO ANY OF YOU CRAZIES READING THIS ADVICE WHILE HANGING OUT ON A TREE BRANCH, "RETURN TO EARTH!" I UNDERSTAND YOU WISH TO DEFY GRAVITY AND THE NATURAL ORDER OF THE ENTIRE PLANET, BUT CLIMBING TREES IS THE WRONG WAY TO DO IT. HOPEFULLY, THIS MESSAGE INSPIRES EVERY ONE OF YOU TO COME TO YOUR SENSES AND DISCOVER NEWFOUND RESPECT FOR YOUR OWN WELL-BEING.

LOVE




STEEL BALL RUN
19

荒木飛呂彦

集英社


9784088747699

1929979004002

ISBN978-4-08-874769-9

C9979 ¥400E

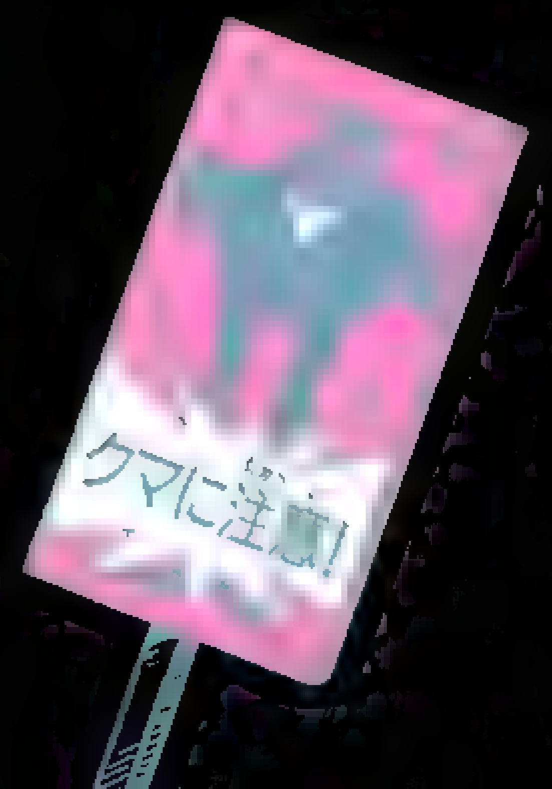
定価 本体400円＋税

雑誌 43089－69


何者かの声に導かれデラウェア河へ辿り着いたルーシー。だが、そこで待っていた声の主は、何と大統領だった…！遺体総取りを目前にして、船に乗り目指す場所とは？一方、大統領の弱点を見つけたDioが再び追跡を開始する！

ジャンプ・コミックス


ウルトラジャンプ
毎月19日発売!!
ウルトラジャンプの最新情報はこちらでチェック！
http://ultra.shueisha.co.jp/
コミックスの最新&既刊情報はこちらでチェック
http://www.s-manga.net/





JUMP COMICS

★この作品はフィクションです。実在の人物・
団体·事件などには、いっさい関係ありません。

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

AIN'T GOT NO MONEY vol.19

## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.19

## CONTENTS

### AINT GOT NO MONEY


#73
D 4 C PART ⑥ 7

#74
D 4 C PART ⑦ 57

#75
D 4 C PART ⑧ 111

#76
D 4 C PART ⑨ 161

#73
D4C PART ⑥

HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
The name of the ship is the S.S. Blue Hawaii
Lucy S.
BRING THE COACH ITSELF ONTO THE SHIP.
THEN HIDE IT IN THE SHIP'S HOLD.
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA

UUUH
UH
HAAA HAAA!
UH...
HAAA!
KUH.
HAA HAA HAAAA!
UH. KUH...
GLINT
THE ONLY ONE YOU NEED IS ME, ISN'T IT......?
HURRY AND TREAT STEPHEN'S WOUNDS! PLEASE!

......
COULD YOU COME DOWN OFF THE COACH? THERE'S NO NEED TO WORRY, LUCY STEEL.
AND THAT PLACE IS WELL EQUIPPED TO TREAT HIM.
THIS WON'T BE A LONG JOURNEY. WE'LL REACH OUR DES-TINATION WITHIN A FEW HOURS.
IT'S A LIE... THIS MAN'S A BIG LIAR.
UH...
UUH...

DUE SOLELY TO THE FACT THAT "CORPSE" INSIDE YOU SEEMS TO DESIRE TO TRAVERSE THIS CONTINENT,
THAT IS WHERE EVERYTHING WILL END.
IF YOU GO THERE SAFELY, THIS COUNTRY WILL BE WITHOUT TROUBLES............
AND EVERYTHING, EVERYONE'S HAPPINESS WILL BEGIN...
'HE'S A BIG LIAR'...........
HE ONLY USED STEPHEN TO MAKE SURE I WOULDN'T RUN AWAY.................... WHEN IT'S OVER, HE'LL KILL US... THIS PRESIDENT WILL DO ANYTHING...

......
HAA
HAA HAA
HAA HAA
IT IS THE NORM FOR MEN TO BE CHARMED BY WOMEN...
OR POSSIBLY FOR WOMEN TO BE CHARMED BY MEN..........
WHETHER YOU'RE IN 'LOVE' OR 'NOT', OR WHETHER YOU 'LIKE' THEM OR 'DISLIKE' THEM ARE NOT THE QUESTIONS...
IT IS A MATTER OF 'GOOD FORTUNE'.
IS THIS MAN, OR PERHAPS WOMAN FORTUNATE FOR YOU?
LUCY... YOURS IS AN EXISTENCE OF 'GOOD FORTUNE' TO ME.
I WISH TO BE THE SAME FOR YOU, WOULD YOU LIKE THAT?
HAA
HAA

I ALSO KNOW ABOUT THIS 'TEAR' ABILITY, SO NO MATTER HOW YOU MAY TRY TO CUT ME, IT IS IMPOSSIBLE.
BECAUSE THE 'CORPSE' INSIDE YOU IS ALREADY MY ALLY.
YOU HAVE ALREADY BECOME MY ALLY.
SURRENDER YOURSELF TO THE FLOW...... BECAUSE IT IS THAT 'FLOW' WHICH WILL BRING YOU HAPPINESS.
HAA HAA HAA
.............
MM?!
WHAT IS THIS?
YOUR SKIRT IS TORN, WHEN DID THAT HAPPEN?

HAAAAAH
HAAH HAAH!
キョロ
HAAH HAAH
HAAH! AAH!
HAAH! UUUUH
...

HAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAH
HAAAH

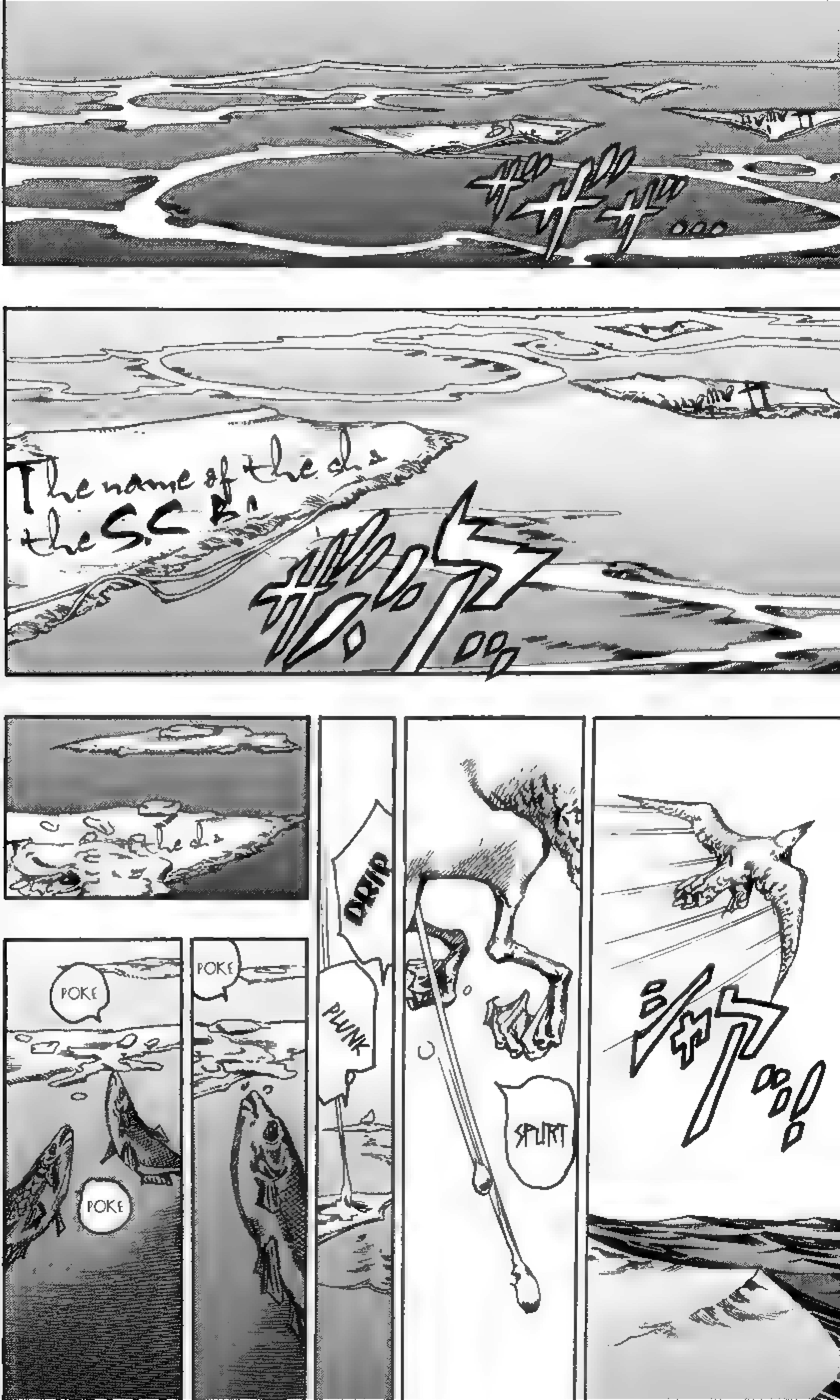
LET ME PROMISE ONE THING!
'I ABSOLUTELY WILL NOT KILL STEPHEN STEEL.' LUCY... IF THAT IS WHAT IS MAKING YOU UNEASY .................
AS A MAN STANDING BEFORE THE HOLY 'CORPSE' ......
HAAAH
HAAA HAAAH
HAAAH
IF THERE IS ANYTHING YOU DESIRE.........

TEAR
RIP
IS THIS PRESIDENT NOT 'EVIL'.........? THE 'CORPSE' IS HIS ALLY..................!!
THE PRESIDENT .........!!
WE'RE SETTING SAIL. COME WITH ME TO THE WHEELHOUSE...
YOU'VE DONE WELL, YOU'RE A GOOD SUBORDINATE.
BUT HOW TERRIBLE... SO YOUR FACE HAS BEEN STUNG BY BEES?
THOSE SHOULD BE TREATED... LET ME SEE THEM.

ACTUALLY I HAVE A WAY TO MAKE THEM GO AWAY. THAT REALLY IS WHAT MUST BE DONE FOR SUCH TERRIBLE SWELLING.
GO AWAY?
WOULD YOU MIND TAKING ONE STEP INWARD?
YES, YES, JUST ONE STEP INWARD.
IF YOU COULD... PLEASE JUST STEP BACKWARDS SLIGHTLY AND ALSO TO THE 'LEFT', THAT WOULD BE EVEN BETTER.
......
A BIT MORE 'LEFT'.
THERE, PERFECT.
DOJYA——N.........
ALL GONE......

NEW YORK
MANHATTAN ISLAND
NEW JERSEY
PHILIDELPHIA
THERE IS ONLY ONE THING I CAN SAY, AND THAT IS..........

WE ARRIVE WITHIN A FEW HOURS.
AND BEING AT THAT 'PLACE' WHERE I CAN SEE THE ATLANTIC OCEAN MEANS I CAN ATTAIN MY GOAL... .. ...
BUT 'WHAT' WILL OCCUR AT THAT 'PLACE', NO ONE KNOWS



The name of the
POKE
POKE
POKE
DRIP
PLUNK
SPURT

POKE
POKE
POKE
POKE
POKE
SQUEEAK
SQUEEAK
SQUEEAK
SQUEEAK
SQUEEAK
SQUEEAK

ド
パカラ
パカラ
Hawaii

HYUU
FLASH
THE NOTE ABOVE IS THE SAME AS ON PREVIOUS PAGES.
WHAT I USED MY 'TEAR CUTTER' ON... WASN'T THE 'PRESIDENT' ..............
IT WAS 'MY SKIRT'...
JUST WHO IS THE ONE THAT'S 'JUST'...? IF I'M TO SURRENDER MY SELF TO A 'FLOW',
THAT IS A 'FLOW', TOO...

CLIP CLOP
CLIP CLOP
CLIP CLOP
CLIP CLOP

D...
DAMMIT......
SNIFF
HE'S DEFINITELY HERE!
SNIIIFF
SHIT!! HE'S CLOSE...
HE HAS TO BE CLOSE.
HE'S FIXATED ON 'THIS WORLD' BECAUSE OF THE CORPSE!! ......HIS 'SCENT' SHOULD STILL REMAIN AROUND HERE SOMEWHERE......
HIS 'WEAKNESS' ......
EVEN THOUGH I FOUND THE FATAL 'FLAW' IN HIS ABILITY TO CROSS OVER DIMENSIONS,
.............. WHAT DO I DO? COULD I REALLY HAVE 'LOST' HIM..............?

!
SNIFF
GUH, WHAT!?

WHAT? SHE'S STILL IN THIS RACE!?
UGH! 'HOT PANTS'!!?
THE MEAT SPRAY!!

M. . . .
MY MOUTH!
I... CAN'T
BREATHE...
PULL
UGEE
TIGHTEN
DIO...
I HAVE
BUSINESS
WITH YOU!
UGUH
GUH
GUH

BUT NOT UNTIL AFTER I'VE INCAPACITATED YOU.

The sound effect is "ZUGYUUUN". This is the same sound effect used when Dio kissed Erina in Phantom Blood.

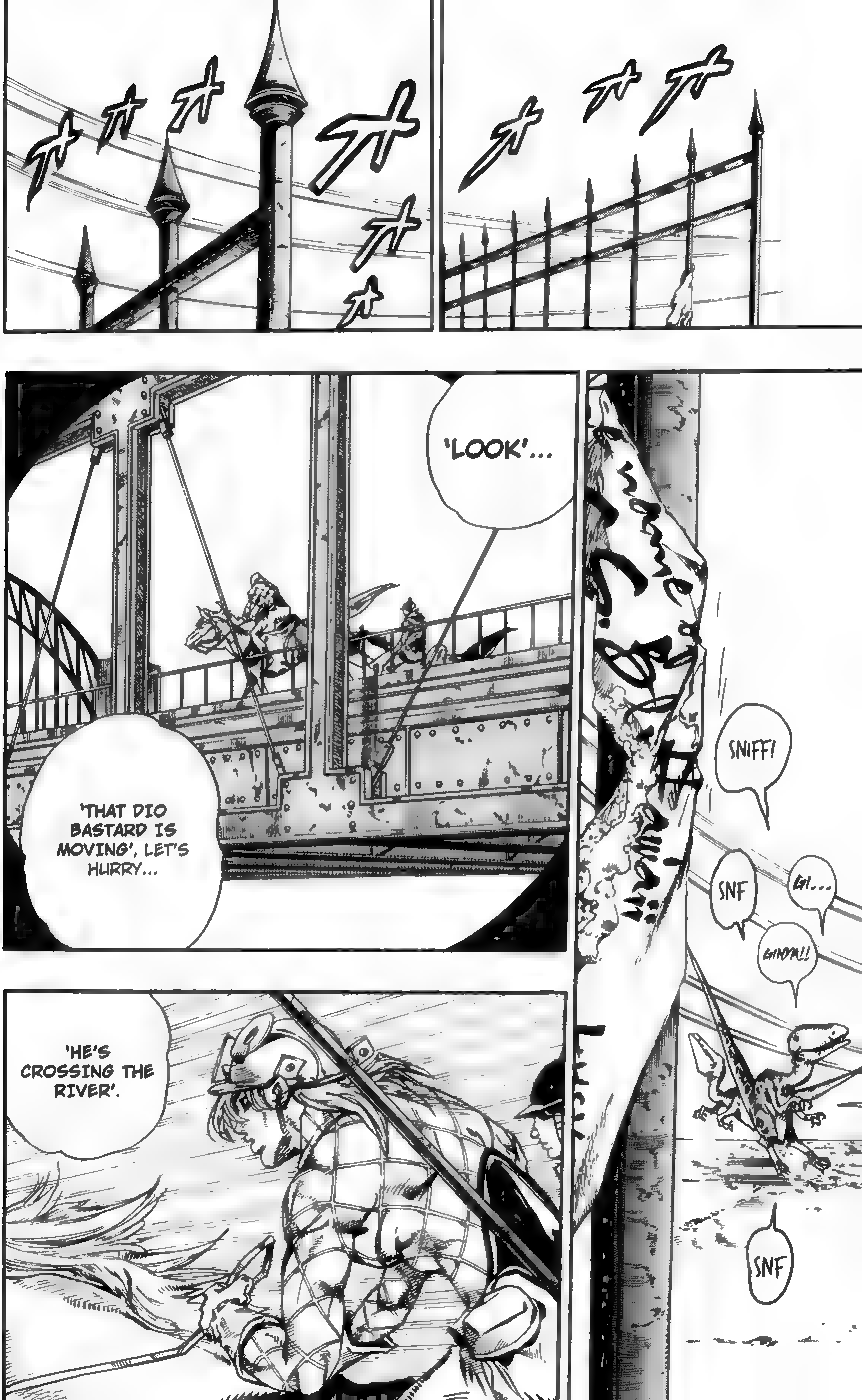
KUH
THEN I'LL DO THE SAME TO YOU, HOT PANTS!
GUH
UH
STOP, DIO!
I SAID I HAVE BUSINESS WITH YOU... BUT NOW WE'RE BOTH SUFFOCATING ............
A......ALL RIGHT...
GUH

......
YOU THINK WE'VE LOST TRACK OF THE PRESIDENT? NO, NOT YET.
BUT DIO... YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN FIND HIM...!!
I'LL MAKE IT SIMPLE! THE WAY TO TRAIL HIM IS BY USING LUCY STEEL'S 'SCENT', NOT THE PRESIDENT'S.
MY MEAT SPRAY KNOWS LUCY'S 'SCENT'.
IF YOU TRACK 'LUCY' BY SCENT, AT THE END OF THAT TRAIL YOU'LL FIND THE 'CORPSE' AND THE 'PRESIDENT', AS WELL!!
......

I'M THE ONLY ONE WHO HOLDS LUCY'S 'SCENT'............ SO I'LL MAKE YOU A 'DEAL' DIO!!
I'LL BE TAKING THE 'CORPSE'!!
YOU CAN HAVE EVERYTHING BESIDES THAT!
I CANNOT BUDGE ON THAT CONDITION... THAT'S HOW IT HAS TO BE! BUT IF YOU COOPERATE AND TRACK THE 'SCENT'......
THE PRESIDENT'S LIFE, ASSETS, AND POLITICAL POWER... DIO, YOU MAY TAKE IT ALL IF YOU LIKE......
YOU'RE FREE TO... ALSO, I KNOW ABOUT YOUR 'FATHER'.
HE'S ALIVE... YOUR FATHER'S NAME IS 'DARIO'.

YOUR FATHER WHO INTENDED TO LET YOU AND YOUR MOTHER DIE WHEN YOU WERE A BABY......
I KNOW THAT INFORMATION AS WELL... I CAN FIND HIM EASILY.
IF YOU WOULD LIKE THAT TOO, IT CAN BE DONE... ALL YOU NEED DO IS ASK AND I'LL TELL YOU.
わあーーーッ
......
HAAAAAAA AAAAAAH GUHAHH!!
HAAA HAAA HAAA
WRYYY

THERE'S NO TIME.
LUCY'S 'SCENT' IN THE SPRAY... HAVE YOUR DINOSAURS SMELL IT.
SO I TAKE IT YOU'RE 'ACCEPTING THE DEAL'...?
HAAA HAAA HAAA HAAA HAAA
GO!! 'SCARY MONSTERS'!


SNIFF!
SNF
GI...
GINYA!!
SNF
'LOOK'...
'THAT DIO BASTARD IS MOVING', LET'S HURRY...
'HE'S CROSSING THE RIVER'.

3 is pronounced "san" in Japanese, and the symbols following it are "KYUU." It's a Bad pun: "Sankyou Forever."

NO ONE CAN TRACK THE PRESIDENT WHO CAN ENTER DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS.
SO THE ONE DIO CAN FIND IS LUCY
WE DON'T KNOW WHAT CONDITION SHE'S IN, BUT 'LUCY AND THE PRESIDENT' ARE TOGETHER, AND FROM THERE WE'LL FIND THE 'CORPSE'.
AND THEY'RE NEARBY... DIO'S HURRYING! DIO'S TARGET IS REALLY CLOSE BY...!! TO THE POINT WHERE THEY'RE IN SIGHT...

ALL OF THESE GUYS ARE AFTER YOU!! ALL OF THESE GUYS ARE AFTER YOU!!
NOW IT'S OUR TURN TO PURSUE YOU!!

HAWAII
パカラッ
パカラッ
カラッ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ

BLUE HAWAII
THERE IT IS... THE 'S.S. BLUE HAWAII'.
THAT'S THE SHIP THAT WAS WRITTEN ON THE CLOTH WITH LUCY'S SCENT ON IT... IT GOT HERE AND ANCHORED.
BUT YOU CAN BET... 'LUCY' IS OVER THERE AND IS TRANSFERRED FROM THE SHIP TO THE TRAIN.
HOW DO YOU KNOW?
A STRETCHER FOR SICK PATIENTS IS ABANDONED OVER THERE.
MR. STEEL WAS SHOT... MR. STEEL IS MOST LIKELY ON THE TRAIN WITH THEM!

OKAY... THEN LET'S BOARD THAT TRAIN.
AT THAT SPEED, WE CAN CATCH UP TO IT WITH OUR HORSES BEFORE IT ACCELERATES.
WAIT!
I CAN SEE THE PRESIDENT!
!!

IT'S PRESIDENT VALENTINE! ...WE FOUND HIM!
...BUT HE'S DOING SOMETHING ......
HE'S AT THE DOOR THAT CONNECTS THE CARS TO EACH OTHER!!
WHAT'S HE GOING TO DO TO THAT DOOR NEXT?

HM!?
?
EH......
?
GLANCE

THUD

UUUH UH
UH.
KUH! UGH.
WH... WHAT? WHAT'S HE DOING!?
WHO ARE THEY? THOSE PEOPLE THAT FELL OUT OF THE TRAIN? WHO ARE THOSE TWO!?
I... I CAN'T BELIEVE IT!! HE'S PULLING THIS!
HE BROUGHT THEM HERE FROM THE OTHER SIDE!!!
......BROUGHT THEM?

THIS IS BAD, HOT PANTS!
IF WE MEET WITH THEM WE'LL BE 'ANNIHILATED'!!
ズバ
ババ

VOLUME 18 CHAPTER 3

RAW: SHIZUKA JOESTAR

TRANSLATOR: KEWL0210

PROOFREADER: ANON

CLEANERS: AVALONSAYAME, DATSNEAKYNDN, DIRNA, DRAIG, KUNDUMSTAF, VAELIS

TYPESETTER: OTAFREEK

http://shizukajoestar.blogspot.com/

Jojo Project

RED HAWK SCANLATIONS

http://www.redhawkscans.com/

THERE ARE 7 DIFFERENCES IN THE ABOVE IMAGE (BUT I'M NOT GIVING ANY ANSWERS ABOUT WHICH ONE'S THE REAL WORLD.)

# #74

# D4C PART ⑦

HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

I'M........
BREAKING OUT IN AN ODD SWEAT ..........
UH... I DON'T FEEL GOOD .............
HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH
POUR

POUR

WHAT... IS THIS?
THE WAY THIS WATER IS MOVING .........
IS IT BECAUSE ..........
OF MY BELLY?
IS IT MY IMAGINATION ......?
!?
SOMETHING IS *WITHERING* AWAY.........

ボドボトォ
ボドッ
ボドッ
ROLL

HAAH
HAAH
EH........ ........?
HAAH

WHAT?
HAA
HAA
ドン
JUST NOW 'SOMETHING'
SOMETHING FLEW OFF?
'WHAT' IS THAT?
IT... IT FLEW OFF MY HAND...
THAT THING THAT FELL ON THE FLOOR! 'WHAT' IS IT?

!!?
WHAT?!
'SOMETHING' ...?!
'SOMETHING' IS HAPPENING TO MY BODY!

AND THAT 'SOMETHING' HAS GONE FROM MY HANDS TO MY HAIR!!

SMACK
SMACK
EH?!!
WHAT IS THIS?! COULD THIS MEAN...!
COULD THIS MEAN SOMETHING'S HAPPENING TO MY BODY?!!

HA
HAAH
HAAH
HAAAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
ドドドド

MY BODY IS BEING REPLACED WITH 'SOMETHING ELSE'..........
TH...
THE 'CORPSE' ..........
ドドドド
AM...
AM I GOING TO TURN INTO THE 'CORPSE'?
STOP
ゴゴゴ

……
ガタタン
ガタタン
ガタタタ
チラッ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ

AS I THOUGHT, MY GREATEST 'GOAL' IS HERE, IT WOULD SEEM...
I THOUGHT WE HAD ALREADY ESCAPED BEING FOLLOWED ..........
AND THERE ARE ONLY MINUTES LEFT...
IS THIS 'LUCY'S' DOING...?
HMPH......
AND TURNING 'EVERYTHING' INTO MY ALLY...... EVEN 'BAD LUCK'.......
I SHALL TAKE THE 'NAPKIN'.
THAT IS WHAT IT IS........ IT WILL BE IN MY GRASP SOON...... THE ULTIMATE GOAL OF THIS STEEL BALL RUN IS..........
'IS KEEPING UNEXPECTED EVENTS FROM OCCURRING.'

THERE HE IS! I KNEW IT.
THE PRESIDENT IS WALKING ALONG THE CARS!
LISTEN, ONCE WE GET ON THE TRAIN...
5 METERS ..........
YOU ABSOLUTLY MUST NOT GET CLOSER THAN 5 METERS TO THE PRESIDENT ..........
IF WE GET TOO CLOSE, WE LOSE... WE'LL HAVE TO DEFEAT HIM FROM OUTSIDE OF THAT RANGE

ドド
ドド
ドドドド

ドド
ドド
DIO... DO YOU TWO REALLY KNOW ABOUT MY 'ABILITY'?
YOU SHOULDN'T.
BECAUSE THIS IS THE *WORLD WITHOUT THE* **'CORPSE'**.
IN THIS WORLD, YOU'RE CHASING AFTER DIAMONDS.
A **'NEIGHBORING WORLD'**, ONLY SLIGHTLY DIFFERENT FROM THE BASE WORLD.
?
?

UH
!?
UGH!
TIGHTEN

TIGHTEN
TIGHTEN
DOOJYA——N!
THE WORLD WHERE EVERYTHING IS BASED............

THE ROOT OF EVERYTHING LIES IN THE WORLD WHERE THE 'CORPSE' IS.
IS NOT HERE.
THE SINGULAR AND IMMOVABLE WORLD WHERE I COME FROM... SO. 'OTHER ME'...
I MAY CROSS OVER TO YOUR SIDE, AGAIN.
WILL IT TAKE MUCH MORE TIME TO GATHER THE REST OF THE CORPSE?
YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE THAT CAN MOVE TO THIS SIDE.
NO.
IN A 'FEW MINUTES', EVERYTHING WILL COME TO AN END.
AND FOR THIS TO HAPPEN, I THINK I'LL BE NEEDING DIO AND H.P. FROM 'THIS SIDE'... I'LL NEED TO BORROW THEM...

I HOPE ALL GOES WELL IN TAKING THE NAPKIN.
OF COURSE. THANK YOU.
TAKING THE NAPKIN ... SO IS THIS WORLD THE ROOT ...?

THUD

......
HAAH HAAH.
ドドドドド
DIO! I'M ASKING YOU WHO THEY ARE!
WHO ARE THOSE TWO!?
ドドドド
UH
ブオオオ

LISTEN, HOT PANTS...
I'LL GIVE YOU A WARNING!
IF WE MEET WITH THOSE TWO OVER THERE, WE'LL BE ANNIHILATED!
AND THEY'RE NOT AWARE OF THAT!
!?
THIS IS THE PRESIDENT'S ATTACK!
HIS 'STAND ABILITY'! THE FIGHT HAS ALREADY BEGUN.......
WHAT...?
GIVE ME SOME MONEY.
HURRY! GET SOME OUT OF YOUR POCKET.
!?

バッ
SLIDE
SLIDE
?
UH...

IF YOU DON'T DO AS I SAY, YOU'LL DIE.
I'VE WARNED YOU... HOT PANTS.
RIGHT AFTER THIS, ABANDON YOUR HORSE! ABANDON IT AND RUN TO THE TRAIN ON FOOT.
CATCH UP TO IT!
I'M ASKING WHO YOU TWO ARE!!
WHAT IS THIS...?! YOU TWO......?!
LIKE I SAID... WHAT ON EARTH?
......

WH...... WHO ARE 'THESE TWO'? WHAT IS THIS...!!
THE ONE ON THE RIGHT... THAT 'FACE', IT CAN'T BE ..........
THAT FACE... YOU, IT CAN'T BE...
YOU THERE!
I DON'T KNOW WHAT YOU ARE, BUT NEITHER OF YOU COME NEAR ME!

SLIP
UOOH!!
ボッ
ジョオ
アアア
ド
!!
UAAH!!

UOOOOH
WHAT IS THIS!!?
THE BILLS!!
HE'S INTERFERING IN OUR PURSUIT!! I DON'T KNOW WHO HE IS, BUT HE MUST BE AN 'ENEMY'!
M-MY LEG! DAMMIT, THAT GUY'S GOING AFTER THE PRESIDENT!?

SYYAAAAA AHH—ッ
HAH!
UUH!!
WE WON'T HAND OVER THE PRESIDENT'S 'DIAMONDS' TO YOU!!
ARE YOU 'AN ENEMY'?!
THIS WOMAN! .......!? WHERE DID SHE COME FROM?
I'VE WARNED YOU........... IF WE MEET THEM, WE'LL BE ANNIHILATED.
"AND THEY'RE NOT AWARE OF THAT!"

NO, STAY BACK!!
YOU STAY AWAY FROM ME!
STAY AWAY FROM ME!
DON'T COME ANY CLOSER TO ME!!
BE QUIET! THAT'S MY HORSE!
THIS IS BAD!!
IF I DON'T ACT, I'M DONE FOR.
THIS WOMAN IS PLANNING SOMETHING ..........

WHAT'S GOING ON?!!
UAAAH!!
WHAAT!!?

EGUH!
ゴロ
ゴロゴロ
ゴロゴロゴロ

AAAA AAAA AAAA AAH!
...SHE 'DID THE SAME THING'! THIS PERSON IS ME! THERE ARE TWO OF ME!
WE EVEN THINK THE SAME THINGS!
M......MY EYES!
AAAAA!

MY EYES ......
I NEED TO FIX MY EYES!!
WHERE'S MY "MEAT SPRAY"?!
HAH!

..........
..........
KUH.
..........
..........
UH.......
..........
..........
KUH.
..........
..........
UH.......

IF EITHER OF US GET CLOSE TO THE OTHER, WE'LL BOTH DIE!!
STOP!!
I CAN'T SEE RIGHT NOW, EITHER...!! DON'T PICK UP THAT SPRAY.........
PLEASE, BELIEVE ME...!
IT... IT'S NO USE...
THIS PERSON INTENDS TO ACT! SHE'LL PICK IT UP!! SHE'S THINKING THE SAME THING...

UWA
AAAAA
AAAAAH!

A
AH!
AA
AAA
AAAA
AAAH!
SHAKE
WH... WHERE ARE YOU!! S.S. BROWN, COME HERE!!
COME THIS WAY!!

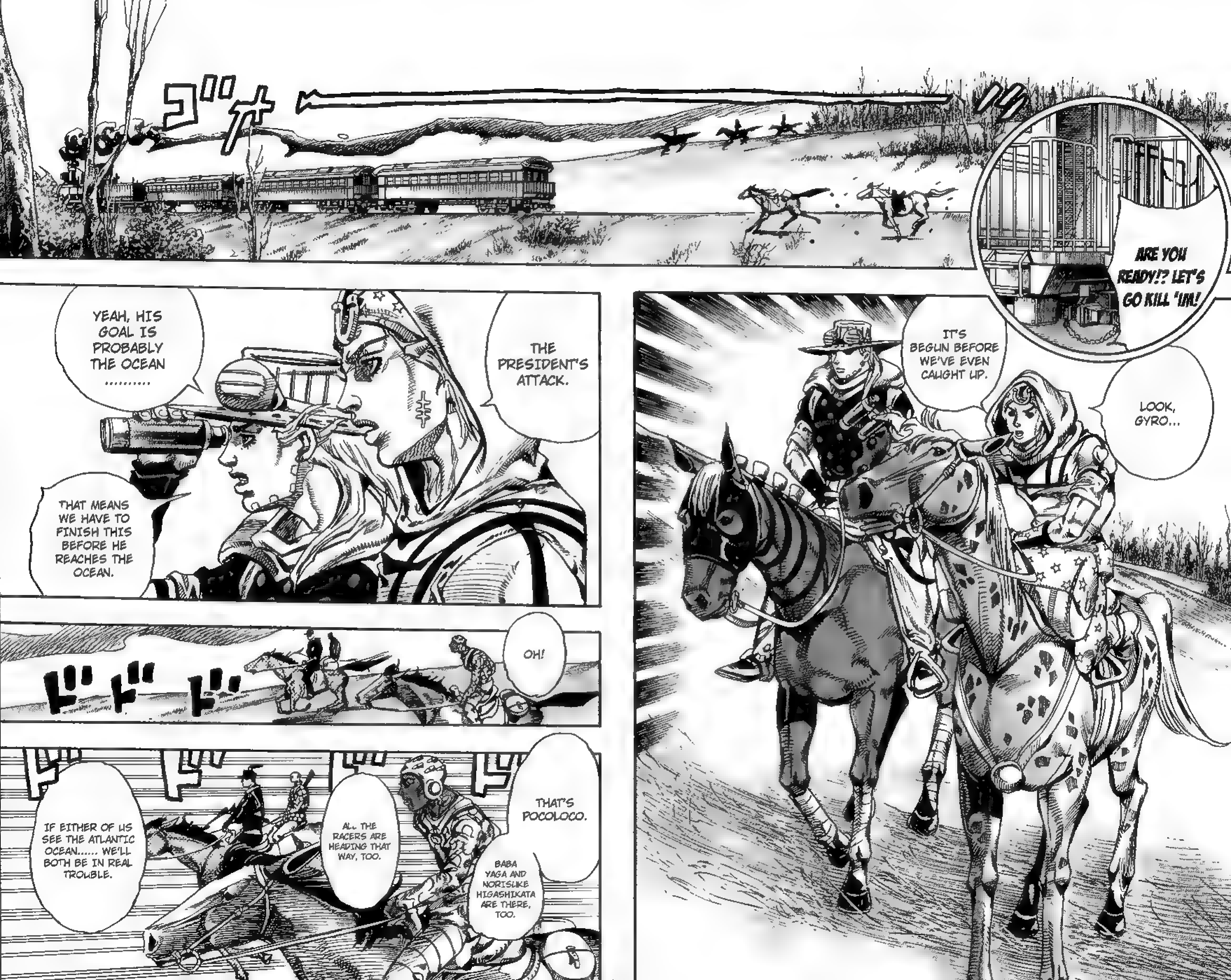
SPLAT
UAAAH

UAAA
AAH!
THIS IS...!
TH...... THIS IS THE PRESIDENT'S ABILITY!
HE BROUGHT THAT OTHER ME HERE FROM SOMEWHERE!

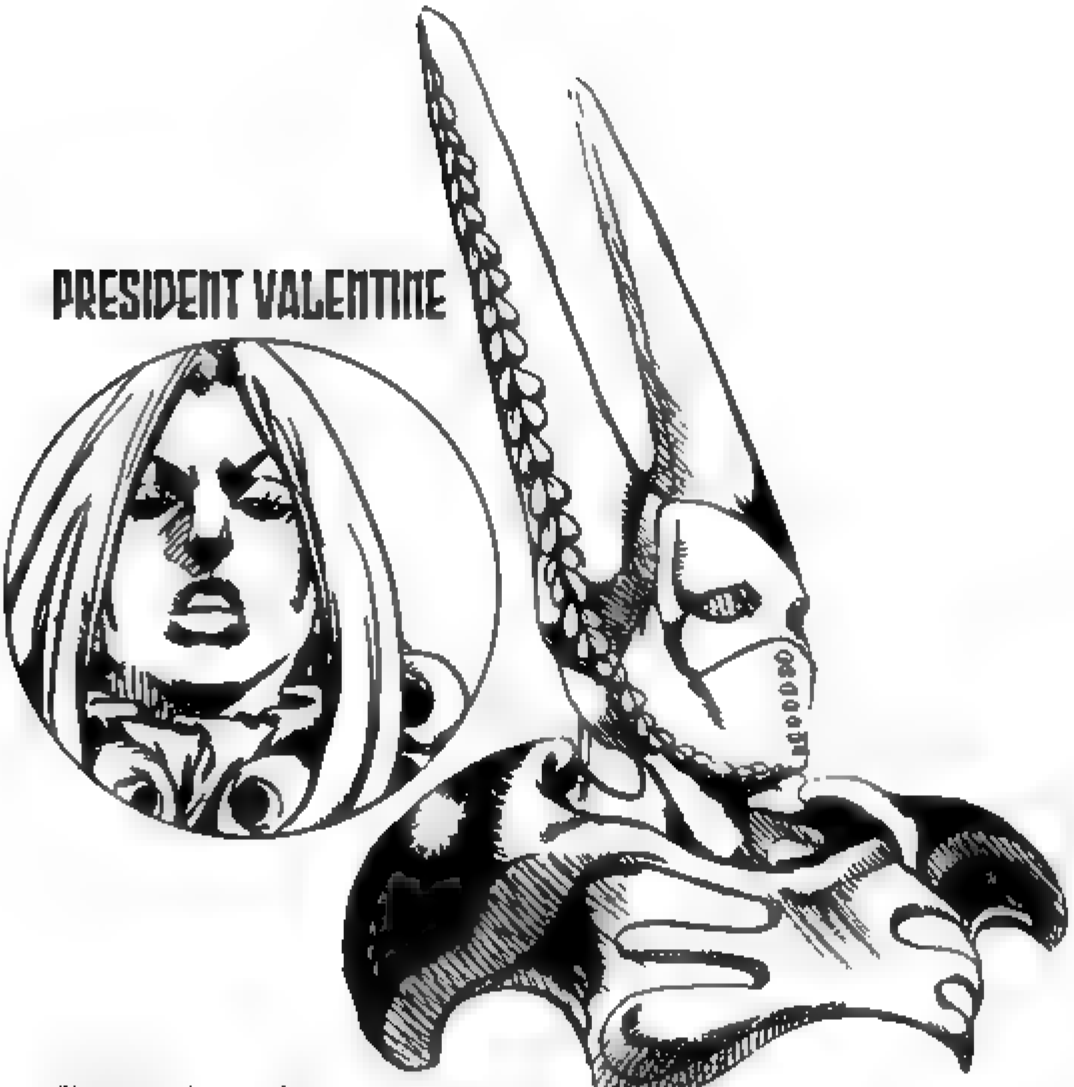
ドドドド
HOT PANTS! GET ON! OVER HERE...
GRAB ON!!
HA!
ドドドド

HAAH
HAAH
DIO! THE OTHER YOU IS ALREADY ON BOARD THE TRAIN!
WHY DID YOU TELL ME TO 'ABANDON' THE HORSES?! THEY'LL CATCH UP TO US!
CATCH UP?
HMPH!
THE OTHER ONE'S COMING!
THAT'S FINE ............
WE ABANDONED THE HORSE SO THESE GUYS WOULD CATCH UP TO US!
GET ON.
GET BEHIND ME!

ONCE THEY'VE CAUGHT UP TO US......
IT'S ALL GOOD!
IF WE MEET WITH OUR OTHER SELVES, WE'LL BE ANNIHILATED, SO WE HAVE NO TACTIC BUT TO 'RETURN THESE TWO' TO THEIR ORIGINAL WORLD...
OR COULD YOU KILL A COPY OF YOURSELF?
WHEN THIS ABILITY IS ACTIVE 'IF IT'S CAUGHT BETWEEN SOMETHING IT CAN BE SENT BACK!'
THAT'S WHY THEY FELL FROM THIS TRAIN AREA ORIGINALLY.
WE CAN JUST JAM THEM BETWEEN SOME-THING!
THIS IS THE 'WEAKNESS' OF THE PRESIDENT'S STAND ABILITY.


LOOK, GYRO...
IT'S BEGUN BEFORE WE'VE EVEN CAUGHT UP.
ARE YOU READY!? LET'S GO KILL 'IM!
THE PRESIDENT'S ATTACK.
YEAH, HIS GOAL IS PROBABLY THE OCEAN .........
THAT MEANS WE HAVE TO FINISH THIS BEFORE HE REACHES THE OCEAN.
OH!
THAT'S POCOLOCO.
BABA YAGA AND NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA ARE THERE, TOO.
ALL THE RACERS ARE HEADING THAT WAY, TOO.
IF EITHER OF US SEE THE ATLANTIC OCEAN...... WE'LL BOTH BE IN REAL TROUBLE.

PRESIDENT VALENTINE



STAND NAME:

'D4C' = (DIRTY DEEDS DONE DIRT CHEAP)

HAS THE ABILITY TO GO TO LIMITLESS OTHER DIMENSIONS BY GETTING CAUGHT IN BETWEEN TWO OBJECTS—

IF THE SAME OBJECTS OR PEOPLE FROM OTHER DIMENSIONS MEET, THEY'LL BE DESTROYED AND BOTH WILL BE ANNIHILATED, SO CAUTION IS A MUST. YOU CAN'T BRING MONEY WITH YOU.

THE ONLY EXCEPTION IS 'PRESIDENT VALENTINE'. THE 'WORLD WHERE THE CORPSE IS' ACTS AS THE ROOT WORLD.

VOLUME 19 CHAPTER 2

RAW: SHIZUKA JOESTAR

TRANSLATOR: KEWL0210

PROOFREADER: ANON, FRESHY

CLEANERS: VAELIS, DRAIG

TYPESETTER: OTAFREEK

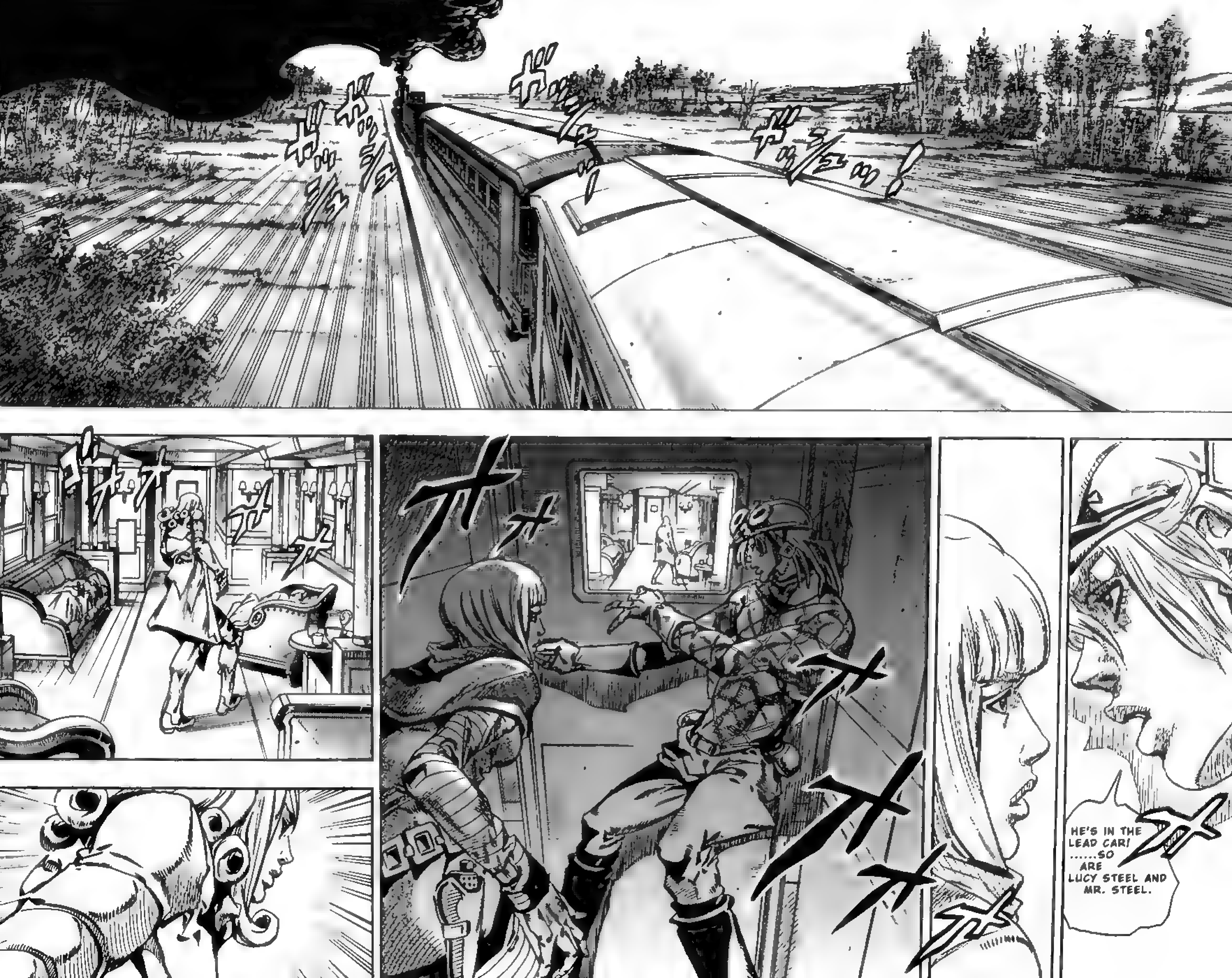
http://shizukajoestar.blogspot.com/

Jojo Project

RED HAWK SCANLATIONS

http://www.redhawkscans.com/

#75
D4C PART 8


HE'S IN THE LEAD CAR! ......SO ARE LUCY STEEL AND MR. STEEL.

AT THIS POINT, HE CAN'T TRY TO ESCAPE FROM THIS CAR OR ANYTHING.
THAT'S HIS 'WEAK POINT' RIGHT NOW.
'THIS WORLD IS THE BASIS.' .......... BECAUSE THE 'CORPSE' CAN'T BE BROUGHT TO ANOTHER WORLD............!!
RIGHT NOW, HE HAS NOWHERE TO HIDE THE 'CORPSE'... AND AS THINGS STAND NOW... HE CAN'T TAKE HIS EYES OFF THE 'CORPSE'!
THAT FIXATION IS HIS WEAKNESS.
REGARDLESS OF HOW FREELY HE CAN USE HIS STAND ABILITY TO GO TO 'NEIGHBORING WORLDS' AND HOW INVINCIBLE THAT MAKES HIM.
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

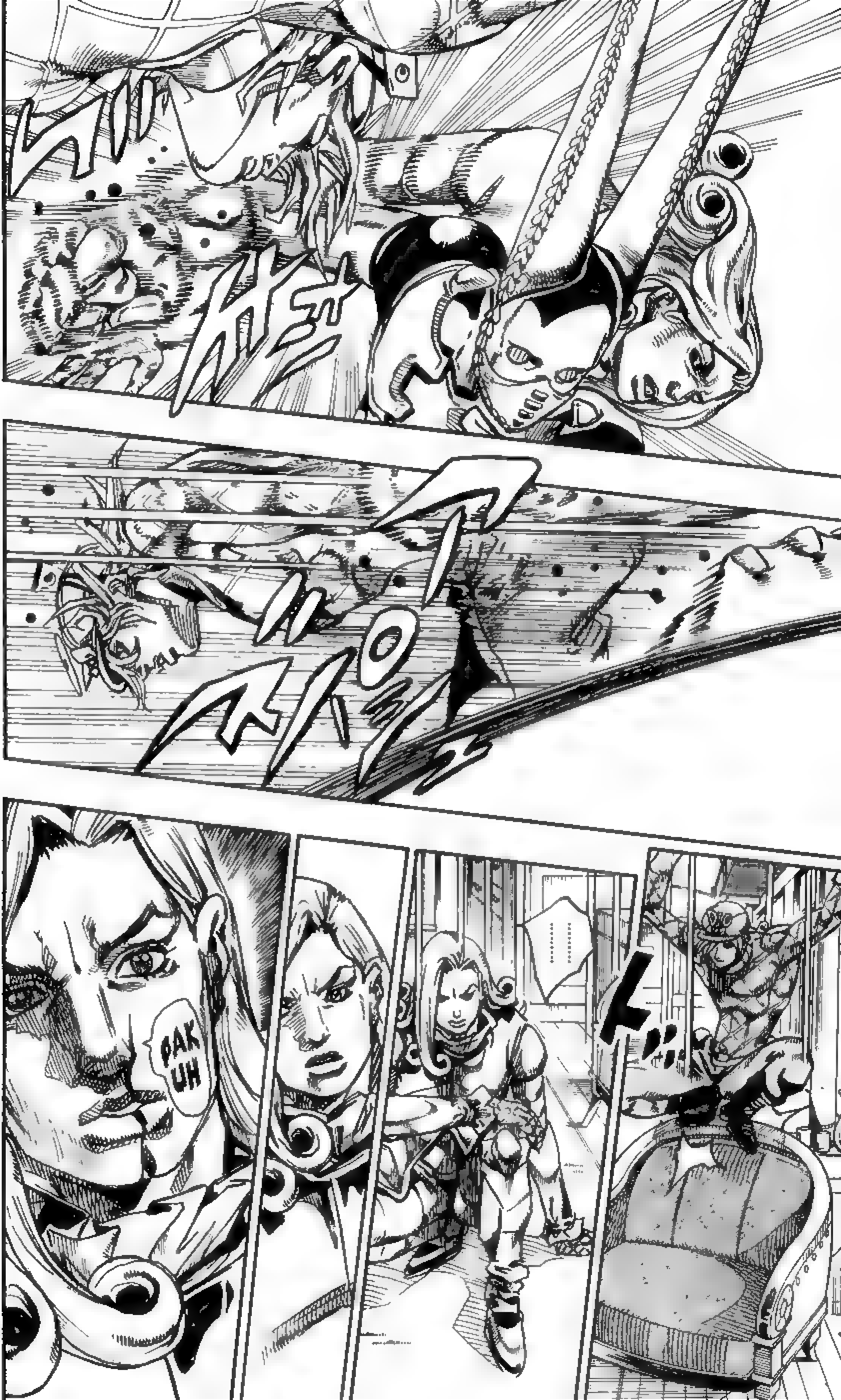
HAAH
HAAH
I... CAN'T BEAR IT ANYMORE... THE SIN I COMMITTED ..............
WAAAAAAAH BIG SIS!
WAAAAAAAAAAAAH
THE ONLY THING THAT CAN SOOTHE AND CLEANSE MY 'SIN' IS THAT 'CORPSE' ........ ........
AND THE ACT OF OBTAINING THE CORPSE IS FOR THE SAKE OF THE PEOPLE OF THIS WORLD'S 'RIGHTEOUS HEARTS'
FOR THAT END, I WILL DEFEAT THE PRESIDENT OR WHOMEVER IT MAY BE!! ...... THIS TIME ......
........ ........ I WILL SACRIFICE MY LIFE.

RATTLE
VERY SOON, THE 'CORPSE' AND THE 'GREATEST POWER' IN THIS WORLD WILL BELONG TO ME AND ME ALONE!
I WON'T TRY TO 'DRESS IT UP'.
FOR THOSE KINDS OF PEOPLE, IT MAY HAVE BEEN ALL RIGHT FOR MY MOTHER'S DEATH TO BE SWEPT UNDER THE RUG, BUT
AT THEIR BASE, HUMANS ARE NO DIFFERENT FROM A FLOCK OF PIGEONS. IF ONE BIRD FLIES RIGHT, THEY ALL GO RIGHT. EVERY LAST ONE OF THEM DON'T TRY TO SEE ANYTHING BUT THEIR OWN GAIN AND THEIR OWN HUBRIS. THEY'RE ALL JUST AN ASSEMBLY OF PRETENDERS.
I WILL HAVE THEM PRETEND EVEN MORE, I WILL STAND FAR ABOVE FROM THAT 'FLOCK OF PIGEONS' AND I WILL 'CONTROL' THEM!

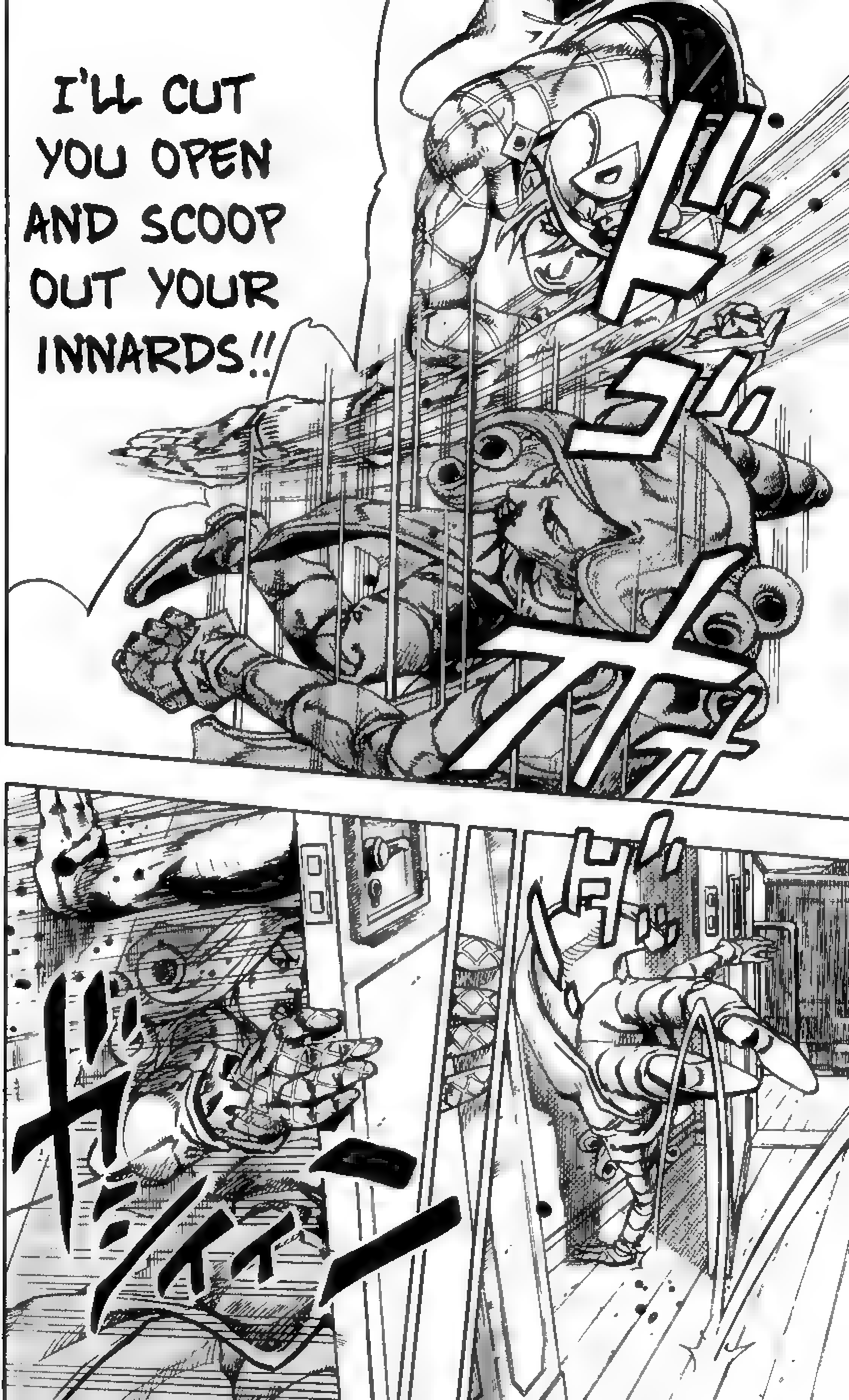
THAT WILL BE BECAUSE OF ALL OF YOU.........
AND EVERY-THING WILL START FROM WHEN I KILL THE PRESI-DENT... NOW!
IT...... WAS YOU...
LU...... 'LUCY'?

HAA HAA
HAA HAA
LUCY... STEEL.
HAA HAA
HAA
AND WITH US SOON ARRIV-ING... THE ATLANTIC OCEAN...
AS I THOUGHT, YOU ARE MINE, LUCY............ ...... YOU WERE MY 'ALLY'.
YOU...... WERE THE 'HEAD' PART, WERE YOU?

HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
AND NOW ......
ALL OF THE PARTS OF THE CORPSE ...
ARE COL-
LECTED HERE!


PAK
UH

"I'LL GOUGE YOUR ORGANS OUT."
BECAUSE OF WHAT I'VE LEARNED ... I WON'T JAM YOU BE-TWEEN ANYTHING.
I WILL... DO NO MORE.
I'LL CUT YOUR BODY APART AND SPLATTER THE FLOOR WITH YOUR ENTRAILS IN SHORT ORDER.
ACTIONS LIKE SLAMMING YOU AGAINST A WALL.........
OR CRUSHING YOU BE-TWEEN MY FISTS.


I'LL CUT YOU OPEN AND SCOOP OUT YOUR INNARDS!!

CLANG
CLANG
CLANG
I WON'T LET YOU DO SOMETHING LIKE THAT IN THIS DOORWAY, EITHER.
JERK
JERK

HE'S GOING BEHIND THE SOFA TO PUT HIMSELF BE- TWEEN IT AND THE WALL!

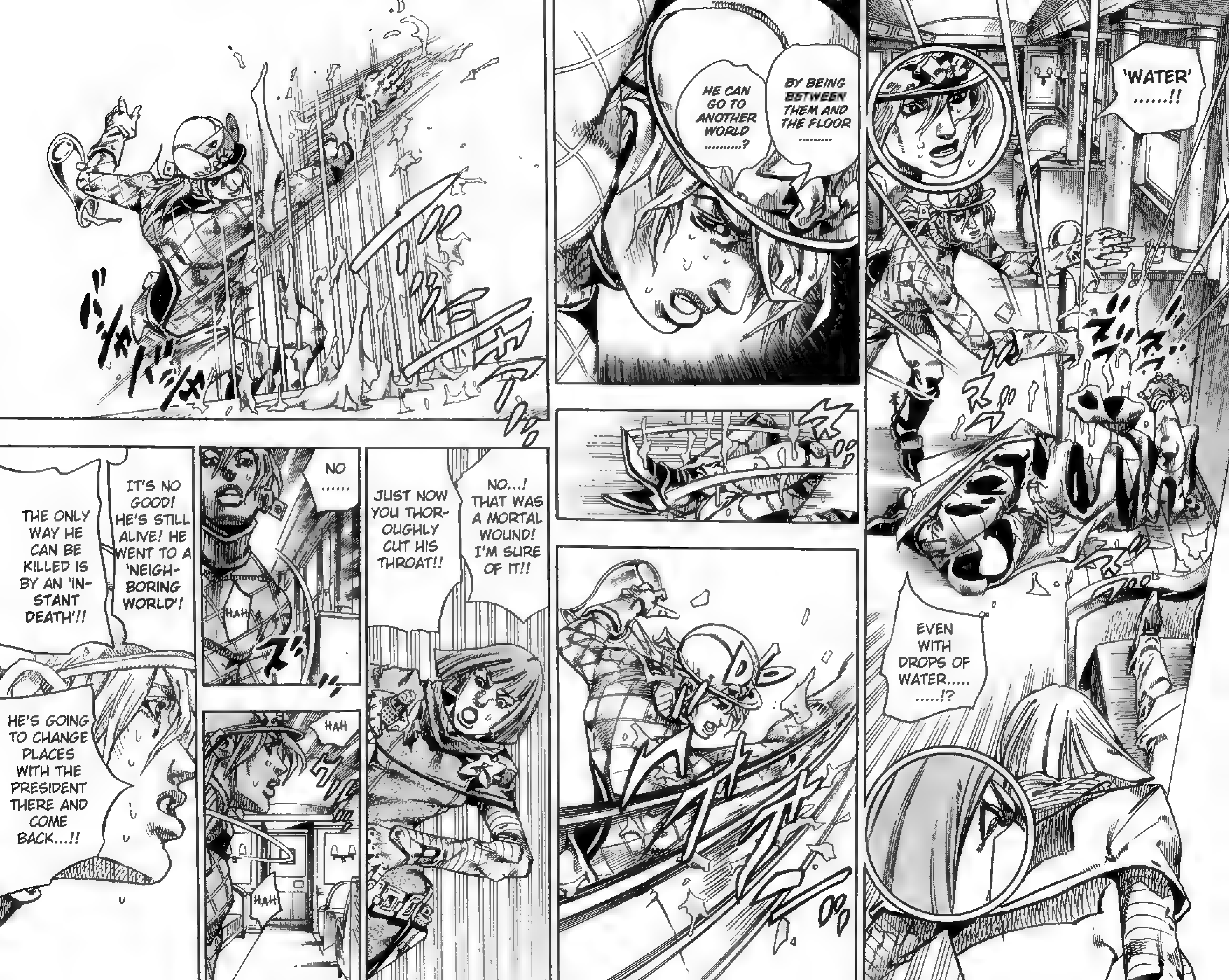
ドヒャア

MY BODY WEIGHT WILL PUSH HIM AGAINST THE FLOOR AND THE WALL!
THE WAY I'M MOVING I'LL FALL ONTO THE FLOOR, TOO!
DAM-MIT!
BUT!
I'LL GET TO HIS THROAT!
I'LL CUT YOU APART!

DAMMIT, THE CURTAIN ......!!
FINISH HIM! DIO!! CUT HIM APART!!

KAH...
Y-
YOU DID IT!
YOU'RE DEAD MEAT!!

!!
ボド
ボドボド
ボドボド
ボドボド


'WATER' ......!!
BY BEING BETWEEN THEM AND THE FLOOR .........
HE CAN GO TO ANOTHER WORLD ..........?
EVEN WITH DROPS OF WATER..... .....!?
NO...! THAT WAS A MORTAL WOUND! I'M SURE OF IT!!
JUST NOW YOU THOROUGHLY CUT HIS THROAT!!
NO ......
HAH
HAH
HAH
IT'S NO GOOD! HE'S STILL ALIVE! HE WENT TO A 'NEIGHBORING WORLD'!
THE ONLY WAY HE CAN BE KILLED IS BY AN 'INSTANT DEATH'!!
HE'S GOING TO CHANGE PLACES WITH THE PRESIDENT THERE AND COME BACK...!!

HE SWITCHES WITH ONE AMONG THEM, AND THEN THAT ONE RETURNS TOGETHER WITH THE 'STAND ABILITY'!! AND THAT 'STAND ABILITY' IS ALSO BASED IN THIS WORLD!
THE WAY THEY THINK AND THEIR PERSONALITIES ARE ALL THE SAME!! BUT EACH ONE IS ACTUALLY 'THE PRESIDENT' FROM NEIGHBORING WORLDS THAT ARE 'UNHARMED'!!
IN ORDER TO DEFEAT HIM, WE HAVE NO CHOICE BUT TO MAKE IT AN 'INSTANT KILL'!
AND THE 'NUMBER' OF NEIGHBORING WORLDS IS PROBABLY INFINITE!
YOU'RE SAYING HE'S STILL ALIVE!? WHERE'S HE GOING TO COME BACK FROM!?
HAH
HAH
GET AWAY FROM THE WALLS AND THE CURTAINS! HE COULD COME FROM ANY OPENING!!
FROM WHERE? DIO!

WHEN HE COMES BACK, WE GIVE HIM AN 'INSTANT DEATH' THIS TIME! GOT IT, HOT PANTS!?
BUT DON'T PANIC!
WHEN IT COMES TO 'SPEED', I'M FASTER. I TOLD YOU I'D FOUND A 'WEAK POINT', DIDN'T I!?
HAH HAH
HAH
HAH HAH
HAH
HAH
HAH

HOT PANTS!! HURRY, GET AWAY FROM THE WALL!
UGH

'Dirty Deeds Done Dirt Cheap'

HE BROUGHT MORE BACK.....
..........
IT'S 3 AGAINST 2.
HE BROUGHT MORE BACK WITH HIM!
HE CAME AS A GROUP OF 3 FROM THE OTHER WORLDS!
ARE YOU READY——
——?
LET'S GO, HOT PANTS!!
WRYYYYYYYYY
YYYYY
YY
ドドドドド

ドドド
ドグッ
UGUH!
ドドド

HOT PANTS!! THIS IS THE REASON WHY I BROUGHT YOU HERE!!
HERE WE GOOOOOOO!

WHAT... .........
IS THIS...... ....!!
ズラァァ!!
NOW THERE ARE 'FOUR OF YOU'.
'ISN'T THAT RIGHT... DIO'!? THIS IS THE 'WEAKNESS' DIO FOUND IN 'D4C'!
BY BRINGING BACK SO MANY OF YOURSELVES, NOW EVEN YOU DON'T KNOW WHICH PRESI-DENT IS REALLY DIO!
I 'DIS-GUISED' DIO USING MY MEAT SPRAY CAN. ONE AMONG YOU IS DIO.

!!
YOU HESITATED, DIDN'T YOU!? NOW I'VE GIVEN TWO 'INSTANT DEATHS'. ALL THAT'S LEFT IS YOU!!

I'VE WON! NOW YOUR 'WEAKNESS' THAT I PRE-DICTED IS PROVEN!
UGH ......

ドワシャアアン

THIS TIME YOU WERE PLANNING TO DO IT WITH THE 'PIECES' OF BROKEN GLASS............?
TOO BAD... YOU NO LONGER HAVE ANY-THING TO GO BE-TWEEN!
GUH

GAH!!

VOLUME 19 CHAPTER 2

RAW: SHIZUKA JOESTAR

TRANSLATOR: KEWL0210

PROOFREADER: ANON

CLEANERS: VAELIS, OTAFREEK

TYPESETTER: SHIZUKA JOESTAR

http://shizukajoestar.blogspot.com/

Jojo Project

RED HAWK SCANLATIONS

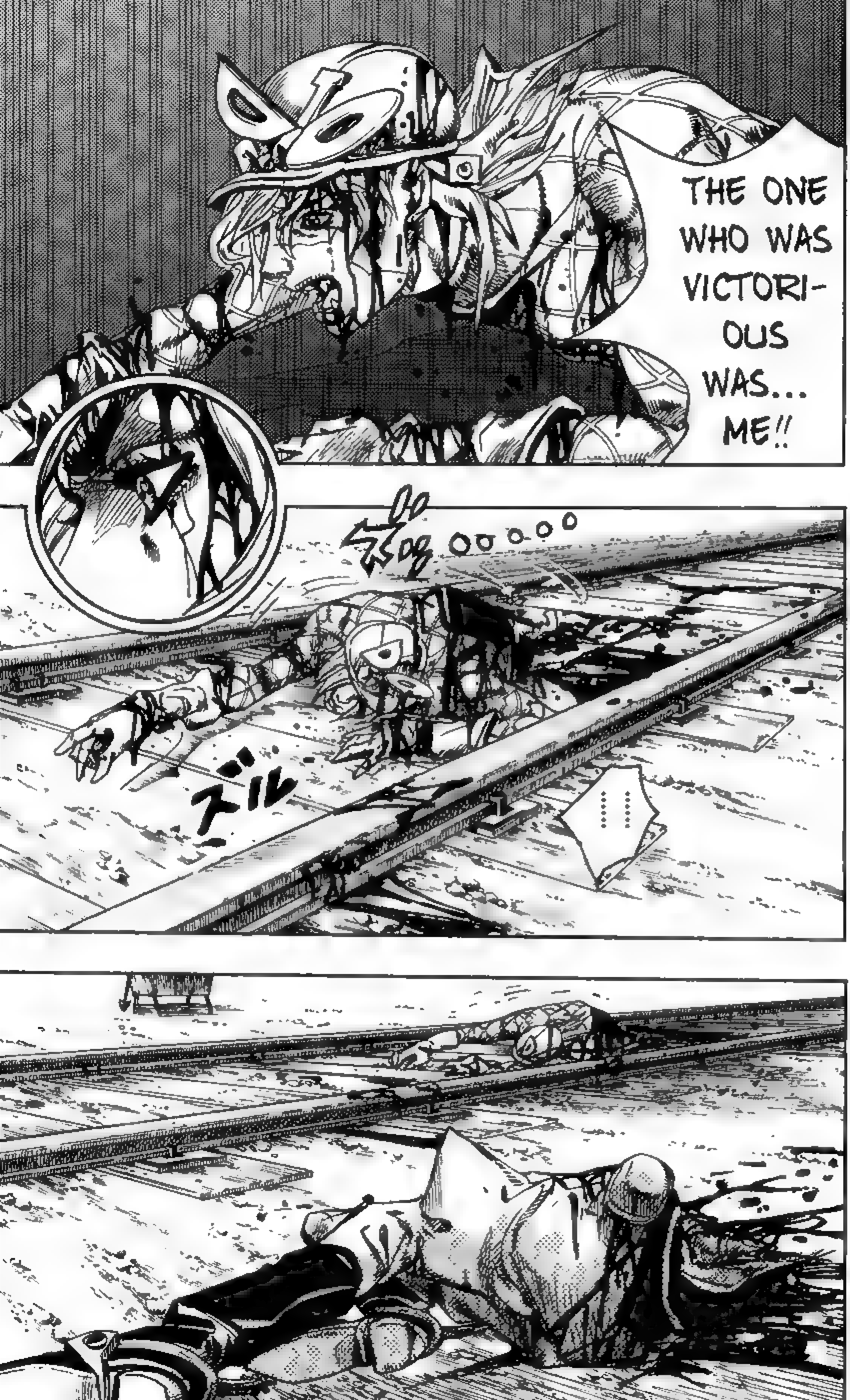
http://www.redhawkscans.com/

# #76
# D4C PART ⑨

IS THE 'LINE' OF THE WRETCHED WORLD I WAS PART OF...
THE WOUND OF YOUR SLIT THROAT...

WRYYYYYY
YYYYYY
AND THIS, THIS IS THE LINE THAT CROSSES OVER IT!
ME!!
THE 'LINE' THAT BRINGS THIS WORLD INTO MY HANDS!!

HAH ......!
UHH!
...
...
UH
UH
THE BASTARD ...
WAS DEFINITELY ...
CUT TO PIECES ......
VALENTINE DIED INSTANTLY.
I'VE WON! ...... ......


THE ONE WHO WAS VICTORI- OUS WAS... ME!!
ズル

GYRO, STOP!
STOP!
WAIT!
DIO IS DEAD.

TWO PEOPLE JUST FELL OUT OF THE TRAIN'S WINDOW.
DIO LOST TO THE PRESIDENT'S 'ABILITY'.
PRESIDENT VALENTINE CAUGHT HIMSELF UNDER THE TRAIN'S WHEEL AND DISAPPEARED TO ANOTHER WORLD.
REALLY...? DIO WAS...
IT LOOKS LIKE THIS'LL BE MORE DANGEROUS THAN I THOUGHT.
YEAH ...
EVERYONE... MIGHT GET KILLED...
THAT 'ABILITY' OF THE PRESIDENT'S IS STRANGE, BUT ON TOP OF THAT IS THE USER'S 'DECISIVENESS'. SURELY THAT'S WHAT DEFEATED DIO.

NOW THE PRESI-DENT HAS THE 'CORPSE' ALL TO HIMSELF.
AND THEN EVERYONE WHO FIGHTS HIM, FROM FAMILY TO DESCENDANTS, WILL BE SHROUDED IN DARKNESS.
......
WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO, GYRO?
IF YOU'RE GOING TO QUIT THE RACE, THIS IS YOUR LAST CHANCE.
IF YOU'RE GOING TO GO BACK TO YOUR COUNTRY, NOW'S YOUR LAST CHANCE...
......

SAY...
WHY DON'T WE TELL EACH OTHER SECRETS?
YOU'VE GOTTA HAVE SOME-THING YOU HIDE FROM EVERYONE... RIGHT?
RIGHT NOW... RIGHT HERE, LET'S TELL EACH OTHER.
I'LL GO FIRST.
I'LL TELL YOU AND ONLY YOU MY REAL NAME.
"GYRO" IS A PET NAME, OR RATHER A NICK-NAME.
MY REAL NAME IS "IULIUS CAESAR ZEPPELI". MY FATHER GAVE IT TO ME... EVEN MY YOUNGER BROTHERS DON'T KNOW THAT NAME... YOU'D BETTER NOT TELL ANYONE.
OKAY... IT'S YOUR TURN NOW!

NOTE THE "CAESAR" IN "IULIUS CAESAR" IS PRONOUNCED IN THE LATIN STYLE THE INDICATED PRONUNCIATION IS MORE LIKE "KAISAR"

THIS IS... WELL, UH...
WITH GIRLS ......
DO YOU KNOW WHAT A 'BUG BITE FETISH' IS...?
WHEN A GIRL'S ARMS OR LEGS OR SOMETHING GET BITTEN BY A MOSQUITO AND THEIR SKIN SWELLS AND GETS A LITTLE RED.
THAT EX-CITES ME!
THAT'S ALL!
DON'T TELL ANYBODY!
AH, I KNEW IT! I TAKE IT BACK!
I TOLD YOU I'D WISH I HADN'T SAID IT!
IF YOU TELL ANYONE WHAT I SAID, I'M GONNA MAKE YOU WISH A LOTTA THINGS.
......
............ DON'T EVER TELL ANYONE ......
SAME TO YOU......!

OKAY.
NOW, LET'S GO...
WE'RE GONNA BOARD THE TRAIN.
YEAH.

LET'S RESCUE LUCY STEEL.
YEAH.
RIGHT ......
IN THE END, THAT'S OUR MAIN OBJECTIVE.
CLEN CH

JOHNNY... BY THE WAY, IF THE PRESI-DENT NOW HAS THE 'CORPSE' ALL TO HIMSELF,
THEN... THAT TRAIN ......

WHO THE HELL IS DRIVING IT?
THERE'S GOTTA BE AN ENGIN-EER.
CAUTION: BEA

……
CAUTION: BEARS!
CAUTION: BEARS!
THIS WHOLE THING COULD BE MEANING-LESS, BUT...

THERE SHOULD BE AN ENGINEER BESIDES THE PRESIDENT DRIVING THAT TRAIN.
YEAH, THAT'S TRUE...
THERE SHOULD BE...
......
CAUTION: BEARS!

CAUTION: BEARS!

......
19 YOU CAN'T GET RICH (END)

■ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN

⑲お金持ちにはなれない

2009年11月9日　第1刷発行

著　者　荒木飛呂彦

©LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS 2009

編　集　ホーム社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
電話　東京　03(5211)2651

発行人　鳥嶋和彦

発行所　株式会社　集英社
東京都千代田区一ツ橋2丁目5番10号
〒101-8050
03(3230)6236(編集部)
電話　東京　03(3230)6191(販売部)
03(3230)6076(読者係)

Printed in Japan

印刷所　中央精版印刷株式会社

造本には十分注意しておりますが、乱丁・落丁(本のページ順序の間違いや抜け落ち)の場合はお取り替え致します。購入された書店名を明記して、集英社読者係宛にお送り下さい。送料は集英社負担でお取り替え致します。但し、古書店で購入したものについてはお取り替え出来ません。本書の一部または全部を無断で複写、複製することは、法律で認められた場合を除き、著作権の侵害となります。

ISBN978-4-08-874769-9 C9979

PRESENTS

# STEEL BALL RUN

Volume 19, Chapter 4

Translation: Kewl0210 — Proofreading: Anonymous
Cleaning: Shizuka Joestar & Ryoflame
Typesetting: Shizuka Joestar

JoJo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 20, Chapter 1
Translation: Kewl0210 — Proofreading: Anonymous
Cleaning: Ryoflame — Typesetting: Otafreek, Soruan,
& Shizuka Joestar

荒木飛呂彦

I'm afraid of "false eyelashes" falling in my house.......... Great long ones fall on in hallways and in the bathroom. When there's bad lighting they really freak me out. I imagine they might be moving, it's a real "horror". (I can't say who specifically, but) I picked some up and threw them in the garbage and they said "Why're you throwing those away? I'm still using them!" then they picked the things up and put them on a shelf. I was really indignant, but also I was even more afraid.

STEEL BALL RUN スティール・ボール・ラン 20

荒木飛呂彦

集英社


9784088700601

1929979004002

ISBN978-4-08-870060-1

C9979 ¥400E

定価 本体400円+税

雑誌 43091—60


大統領をあと一歩の所まで追いつめるも、無惨な最期を遂げたDio。その事を知ったジャイロとジョニィはルーシーを救うべく、いよいよ大統領の乗っている列車に乗り込む事に。遂に始まる直接対決！２人に勝機は…!?

ジャンプ・コミックス

★THE FOLLOWING STORY IS ENTIRELY FICTIONAL.
ANY NAMES AND LIKENESSES ARE PURELY COINCINDENCE.

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

LOVE TRAIN — THE WORLD IS ONE

vol.20

(JOJO vol.100!)

# ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.20
## CONTENTS

LOVE TRAIN — THE WORLD IS ONE


#77
D 4 C PART ⑩ 7

#78
D 4 C PART ⑪ —LOVE TRAIN— 55

#79
D 4 C PART ⑫ —LOVE TRAIN— 105

#80
D 4 C PART ⑬ —LOVE TRAIN— 153

# #77

# D4C PART ⑩

UH......
..... HURRY
MY CONSCIOUSNESS IS. .
SHIVER

......!!
I SEE ..........
I UNDERSTAND ..........
THE 'BASE' HAS COME TO ME...
THE 'ABILITY' FROM THE NEIGHBORING WORLD HAS MOVED TO ME...
NOW I HAVE BECOME THE 'BASE'..........

... SHALL WE GO BACK...... 'D4C'?! TO THE NEIGHBORING 'BASE WORLD' WHERE THE CORPSE IS...?
THE ME DOWN THERE HAS HAD HIS THROAT CUT.
THAT WAS CLOSE .........
DOJYAAAAA----N

NEW JERSEY
GYRO! THE PASSENGER CAR'S WINDOW IS BREAKING!
IT'S THE LEAD CAR!!
THAT'S THE CAR 'LUCY STEEL' IS IN!
MEANING THE 'PRESIDENT', TOO......
NEW JERSEY
LOOKS LIKE WE'RE ALREADY ENTERING 'NEW JERSEY'.
WE'RE ALREADY THIS FAR...?
......THERE'S THE 'SEA'!

YOU CAN SEE IT IN THE DISTANCE ...

THE 'ATLANTIC OCEAN' IS ALREADY IN SIGHT...
WE'VE TRAVERSED THE CONTINENT.
THAT'S THE 'ATLANTIC OCEAN' HUH..........?
CAUTION:

IN THIS AREA...
HONESTLY, HOW MANY OF THOSE SIGNS ARE THERE?
EVEN THOUGH WE HAVEN'T SEEN ANY IN FRONT OF US?
AND WE'VE ONLY SEEN THEM WHEN WE'VE TURNED AROUND?
GYRO!!
!?
IS IT ABOUT THE 'BEAR' WARNING SIGN?

CAUTION: BEARS!

NEEEIGH!
CALUMP
CALUMP
CALUMP

THE SIGN'S CAUGHT UP TO US!!
AAH!

IT'S TRUE IT DID 'CATCH UP TO US'..............
BUT!
WHAT THE HELL IS THIS...
NEW JERSEY
NEW JERSEY
AND WHAT DOES IT MEAN?
WHY'S THERE A SIGN STALKING US?
ANYHOW, SOMETHING ODD IS DEFINITELY GOING ON...

SOMETHING'S OFF.
BUT WHAT THE HELL IS IT.........?
FOR A WHILE NOW, THERE'S BEEN A WEIRD MOOD TO OUR SURROUNDINGS.
SOMETHING I DON'T UNDERSTAND ......
NEW JERSEY
YEAH.
THAT MAY BE..........
LIKE YOU SAID, THE 'ENGINEER' OF THAT TRAIN, MAYBE!!?
HE SHOULD BE KEEPING THE 'CORPSE' ALL TO HIMSELF NOW THAT IT'S ALMOST OVER.
BUT IS THERE SOME NEW ENEMY BESIDES THE PRESIDENT?
AT THE VERY LEAST THERE MUST BE AN 'ENGINEER' ON THAT TRAIN.
THAT MIGHT BE A GOOD SORT OF HYPOTHESIS TO MAKE...

ザザ
ザザ
ザ
ザ
ザザザ

HEY! THERE'RE SOME THINGS IN THAT POOL OF WATER!!
TONS OF 'EM.
GET BACK! GET BACK!

GET AWAY FROM THEM!!
GET AWAY FROM THAT POND!
GET BACK.

WHAT THE HELL IS THIS?! WHAT'S WITH THESE FISH?!
'FISH'?!
THERE WERE FRESHWATER FISH UNDERNEATH THE BEAR SIGN! AND THEY 'ATTACKED US'!
GET FURTHER BACK! LET'S GO! FOLLOW THE TRAIN!!
I DON'T KNOW!
BUT THE WORST THING WE CAN DO IS WASTE OUR TIME GETTING STUCK HERE! LET'S GO!

GYRO! DID THAT FISH BITE YOU JUST NOW?
I KNOW IT TRIED TO!!
WE'RE GONNA FOLLOW THE TRAIN! OUR GOAL IS 'RESCUING LUCY'!
AND DEFEATING THE PRESIDENT!!
WE'LL CATCH UP AND STOP THE TRAIN FIRST!!
IT'S OKAY, LET'S JUST GET OUT OF HERE!!
I DON'T KNOW WHAT KINDA GUY HE IS, BUT FIRST WE NEED TO BEAT UP THE 'ENGINEER'!!

ドカラ
ドカラ
ドカラ

ゴゴゴゴ
……
ゴゴ
ゴゴ

HAH!!
'LUCY... STEEL' ........... SHE HAS ALL 'NINE PARTS' COLLECTED INSIDE HER BODY, AND NOW SHE'S BECOME THE 'CORPSE'...? SHE'S BREATHING...
WHAT IS THIS... .......?
HAA
HAA
?

......? WHAT? ...
SOMETHING ...
JUST NOW... SOMETHING MOVED...
WHEN DIO WENT OUT THE WINDOW AFTER THE PRESIDENT,
WHAT ON EARTH HAPPENED !?
DID HE KILL HIM? OR DID HE LOSE?
BUT 'SOMETHING' IS ODD...
ALL OF A SUDDEN ...
INSIDE THIS TRAIN... .......
HAH!!

!!
!? ......
......
WH...
WHAT !?
ゴゴゴゴ

TH... THE FURNITURE ...
THE FURNITURE'S DRAWING TOGETHER?!
N... NO! THAT'S NOT IT!
IT'S NOT JUST THE FURNITURE!! AND IT'S NOT MY IMAGINATION!!
EVEN THAT 'DOOR' IS COMING TOWARD ME!

HAH!!
VALENTINE!
TO SEE AN 'ABILITY' FOR THE FIRST TIME... HUH...?
THIS NEW 'PHENOMENON'...

……
……
WHAT?!
THE 'FINGERS' ON YOUR RIGHT HAND.
NEW 'ABILITY' ………
DO YOU PERHAPS THINK THAT THIS IS A 'STAND ABILITY' OF A NEW 'SUBORDINATE' OF MINE?
PERHAPS YOU SUSPECT THIS TRAIN'S 'ENGINEER' IS THE USER…?

WHAT?

EVEN FOR ME...
WHAT?! .........
THIS IS THE FIRST TIME I'VE EXPERIENCED THIS 'ABILITY'... THAT 'PHENOMENON' IS...
WHAT DID YOU SAY...?!!
WHAT ON EARTH IS THIS?!!
INSIDE... MY HAND...
...WH.. WHEN?! THERE'S A ... SP... SPIDER.. CRAWLING INSIDE MY HAND ..
NO IT'S NOT JUST A S... SPIDER!! THERE ARE FLIES, TOO......!! EVEN MY FINGERNAILS!?
HAH!!!

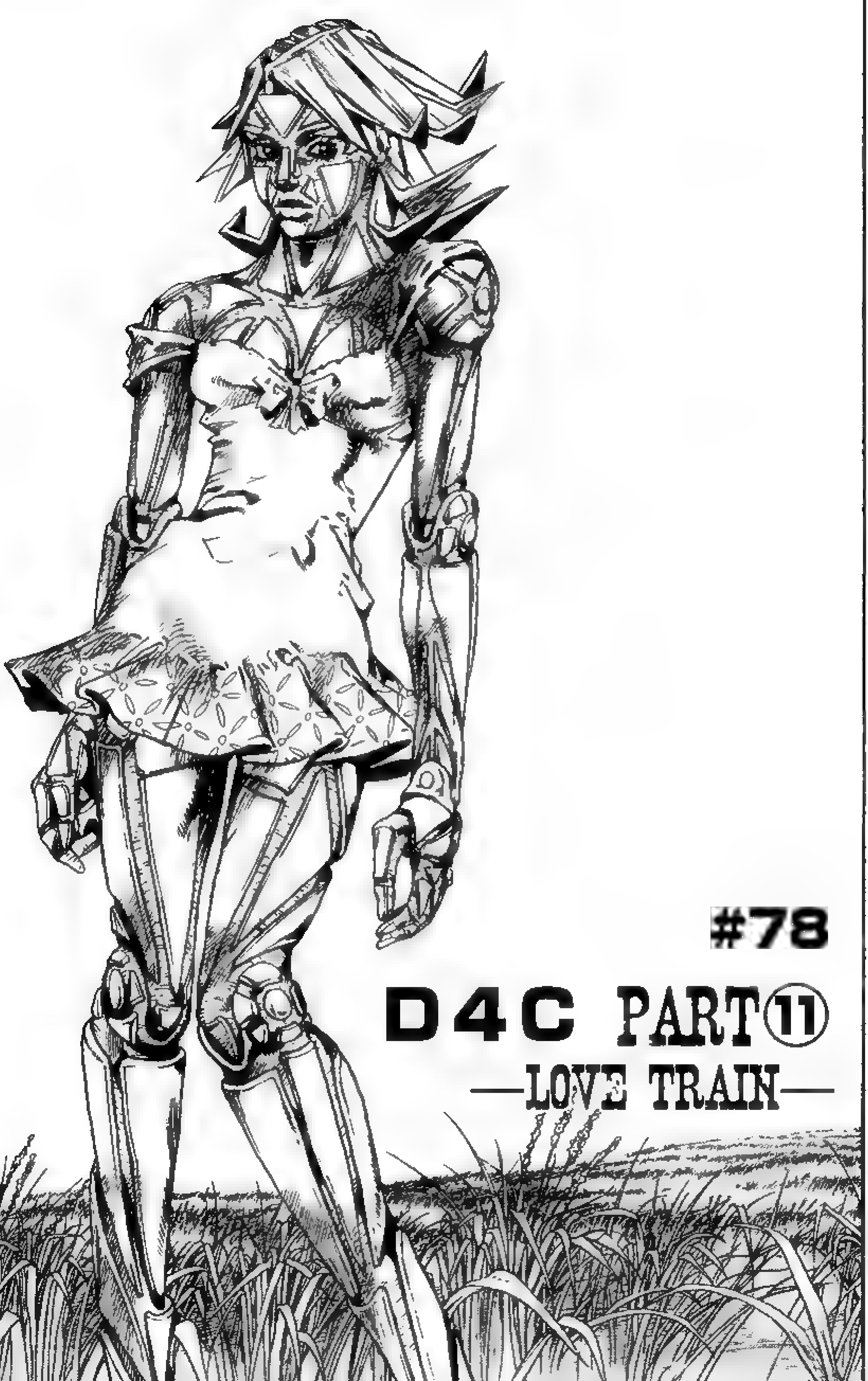
...... RIGHT NOW...
SOMETHING HAS COME INTO OPERATION ...
THIS PHENOMENON... THAT HAS JUST BEGUN TO OCCUR......
NO... WRONG.
RIGHT NOW... WHAT IS JUST STARTING TO HAPPEN...? I'VE JUST BEGUN TO UNDERSTAND.
WHOSE 'ABILITY' IS IT?
THE ENGINEER AT THE FRONT OF THE TRAIN?

UH... KUH

TH...... THE WINDOW FRAME IS...!!
IT'S NOT THE BEAR SIGN THAT'S FOLLOWING US!
IT'S THE 'LAND'! GYRO!
THE 'PLOT OF LAND' ITSELF IS FOLLOWING US!!
THE TREES, THE RIVER, THE GRASS, AND THE GROUND, TOO!!
COMING THIS WAY, TOWARD US!!
THEY'RE...!!

WHAAAAT!!? MY MEAT SPRAY ISN'T WORKING! TH... THE 'WINDOW FRAME' HAS GONE INSIDE MY BODY! AND IT'S MOVING!
OH NO!
OH NO!
TH... THE SPIDER!
...I... I NEED TO GET THEM OUT FAST!!
UGH.
SOMETHING...
EH!
N-NO WAY.
GACK!

'THINGS' ARE CONVERGING...
THE 'SOFA',
THE 'DOOR',
...... THE 'SCENERY OUTSIDE'.
THIS 'TRAIN CAR ITSELF'... THE 'SIZE OF THE WINDOW FRAME'......
EVERYTHING DRAWING TOGETHER WITH 'LUCY STEEL' AS THE CENTER.
ドドド
I UNDERSTAND!! THIS IS AN ABILITY THAT THE 'CORPSE' IS MANIFESTING!!
WHICH MEANS, IT IS MY 'ALLY'!
ドドドド



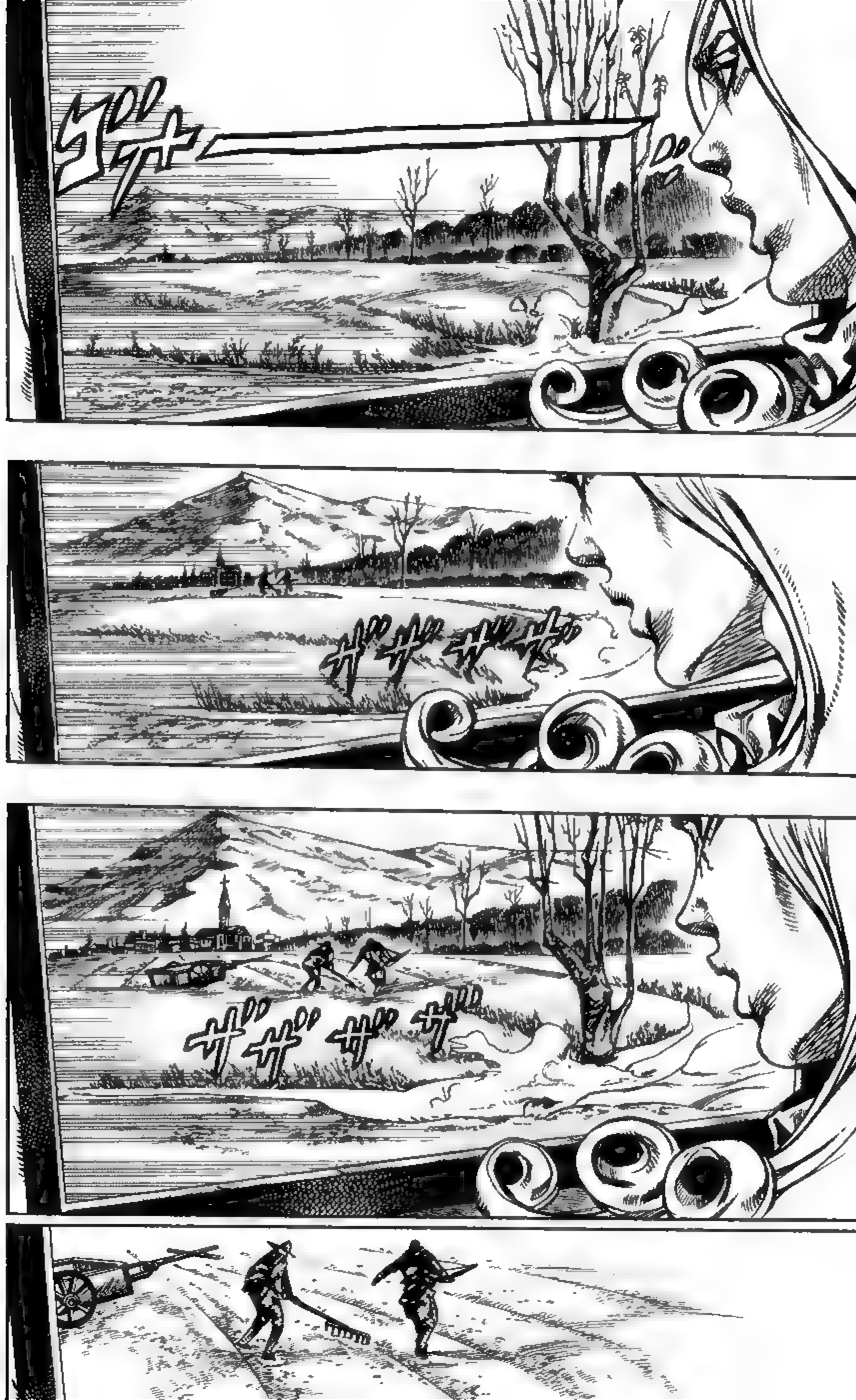
# #78

# D4C PART⑪

## —LOVE TRAIN—

NO...... ..........
THIS NEW 'PHENOMENON' ......
IT WAS ONLY SLIGHTLY, BUT...... I WAS MISTAKEN IN MY UNDERSTANDING.

......
IT'S A GAP.........
I CAN ENTER INSIDE A GAP IN SPACE...
AND I CAN MOVE THE INSIDE...
WITH 'LUCY' AS THE CENTER, A FLAT GAP IN SPACE HAS... FORMED.


ゴオォ
ザザザザ
ザザザザ

TOWARD THIS GAP OF LUCY'S, HOUSES, MOUNTAINS, COUNTLESS RIVERS...
LAND IS DRAWING CLOSER ......
AND I CAN MOVE THAT 'GAP'...... 'D4C'!!
IT'S NOT THE CORPSE! THIS PHENOMENON IS MY 'ABILITY'!
THE 'CORPSE' HAS DRAWN OUT THIS ABILITY... .........
'D4C' HAS PROGRESSED TO A HIGHER LEVEL!!

ドガラッ
ドガラッ

NOD

HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
COUGH
HAA
WHO ARE YOU...!?
STAND UP!
WHAT'RE YOU DOING?!!
!! ......
A MIRROR ...
THAT'S... .........

HEY, YOU THINK THIS IS A JOKE?! I TOLD YOU TO STAND UP!!
GET YOUR HANDS ON THE WALL, RIGHT NOW!!
GYRO! THIS IS THE PRESIDENT'S DOING!
THE MIRROR!
HE MADE THAT MAN SIT IN ANOTHER WORLD INSIDE THE MIRROR!! THAT ENGINEER IS INNOCENT. THE PRESIDENT DID THIS TO HIM!
I'VE SEEN THIS BEFORE! DIO WAS BROUGHT INSIDE A FLAG!!
......!!
UH...
UUH.
HAAH HAAH HAAH

......
HAAH! HAAH!
HAAH!
THAT THING BOUND TO HIS BODY WITH ROPE IS..... .....
!?

WHAT IS THAT!?
!!
......
...
UAAAAH!
UUH.

......
......
THERE'S ANOTHER PERSON INSIDE THE 'MIRROR'!
WHO THE HELL ARE YOU!? ARE YOU A STAND USER?!!
GYRO!! THAT'S 'D4C''S ABILITY!! ANOTHER WORLD!
THERE'S NOTHING ELSE FOR US TO DO HERE! IF HE'S BEEN PUT LIKE THAT, IT MEANS HE'S JUST AN ORDINARY ENGINEER!

I'M ASKING THIS GUY DIRECTLY! HEY, ANSWER ME!!
UUH
UAAH!
HELP ME——
I WAS TOLD THAT IF I LET GO OF THIS HANDLE AND GO INSIDE, I'LL 'DIE'.
I SCREWED UP BEFORE AND I LOST ONE OF MY LEEEEEGS!
H... HELP ME...... ..........
PLEASE... IF I LET MY HANDS GO, I'LL DIE...... .............

INSIDE ......
INSIDE THE MIRROR?
THAT MAN COLLAPSED IN THERE IS THE YOU FROM THE 'OTHER WORLD'?
'IF THE SAME OBJECT MEETS ITS DOUBLE, IT'LL BE DESTROYED AND ANNIHILATED.' IF HE LETS GO OF THE HANDLE AND HIS WHOLE BODY GOES INSIDE THE MIRROR...!
'IF THE SAME HUMAN MEETS HIS DOUBLE, HE'LL BE DESTROYED AND DIE.'

(SERIOUSLY, THIS IS INSANE...) THAT WORLD WITH ANOTHER OF THE SAME PERSON INSIDE... (I CAN'T BELIEVE IT'S REALLY THERE)
SO THAT IN THERE IS THE OTHER 'YOU', HUH?
THAT GUY COLLAPSED 'INSIDE THE MIRROR'?
WITH BOTH HIS ARMS AND LEGS CUT OFF.........
H... HELP MEE.........
PLEASE... PULL ME TO THAT SIDE...
MY FINGERS ARE STARTING TO GO NUMB... WHEN I THREW COAL INTO THE FIRE BEFORE, BECAUSE I LET MY HANDS GO, IT LOOKS LIKE IT MADE ME LOSE A BUNCH OF FINGERS...
!!

I'M JUST A TRAIN ENGINEER WHO MAKES 20 DOLLARS A WEEK.
WHY'S THIS HAVE TO HAPPEN TO MEEE .........?
PLEASE......... PULL ME OVER THERE..........
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE! JUST THINK ABOUT IT. IF THAT MIRROR BREAKS INTO LITTLE PIECES, THAT'LL DEFI-NITELY BE THE END OF YOU.
I'LL SAY IT PLAINLY! ..........
CAN YOU UNDO THAT ROPE?
IF YOUR ARMS AND LEGS MEET THE SAME ONES IN THE MIRROR, YOU'LL BE KILLED INSTANTLY.
WELL... I'M SORRY ABOUT YOU ONLY GETTING A 20 DOLLAR SALARY, TOO, BUT IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE THERE'S ANYTHING WE CAN DO. THE MOMENT WE PULL YOU TO THIS SIDE OF THE 'MIRROR',
THOSE ARMS AND LEGS TIED TO YOU WILL GET BROUGHT HERE ALONG WITH YOUR BODY...
EH......
HAAAAH
HAAAA
THEN PLEASE BREAK THE 'MIRROR' APART! 'BREAK' IT!! THAT'D BE EASY, RIIIIIIGHT?!

WHY..... WHY IS THIS HAPPENING TO ME? I HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH ALL THIS... ...I'M NOT EVEN PAID MUCH!!
IT LOOKS LIKE YOU'RE SCREWED WHICHEVER WAY ROLLS ...
PRESIDENT VALENTINE .........
WAS THIS YOUR BEST WAY TO MAKE SURE THE TRAIN KEEPS MOVING...? PLUS IT AUTOMATICALLY KEEPS HIS MOUTH SHUT! THAT MUST BE HIS PLAN.
WHAT THE HELL......... WHAT'RE YOU SOUNDING SO IMPRESSED ABOOOOUT?
HEY! YOU'VE GOTTA DO SOMETHIIING!
I DON'T MIND IF YOU CRY, BUT...
DON'T LET GO OF THAT HANDLE... YOU'VE GOT TO DO THAT.
AND PRAY FOR GOOD LUCK... IF WE DEFEAT THE PRESIDENT, YOU'LL DEFINITELY BE SAVED.

ドドドドド
……!!
ドドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドドド

JOHNNY JOESTAR.
SO YOU'VE CAUGHT UP WITH ME...?
....
!!

ドドド
ドドド

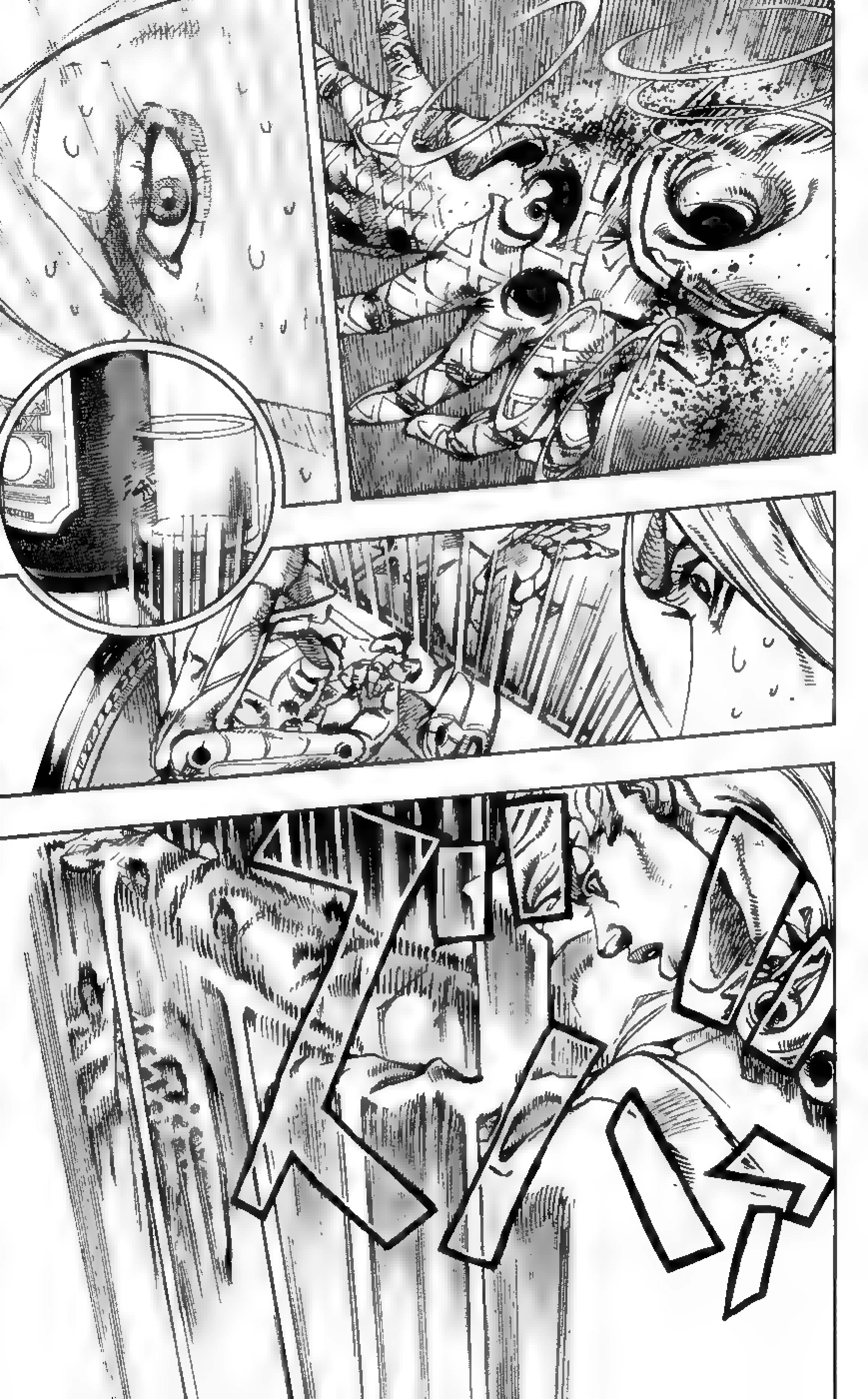
..........WHAT GALL..........
SO HE'LL SHOOT 'LUCY'...?

バッ
……

DOJYAAA~~N
TO FORCE THEM BETWEEN SOMETHING ......HONESTLY............
HM... .......?

........ UH......
'HOLES' THAT......!
THEY THEM-SELVES ARE. ...
EVEN IF I FORCE THEM BETWEEN SOMETHING, D4C CAN'T SEND THEM TO 'ANOTHER WORLD'......?
!!

VOOH
.........
.........



POOF!
BOOM

!?
WHAT THE...?!!

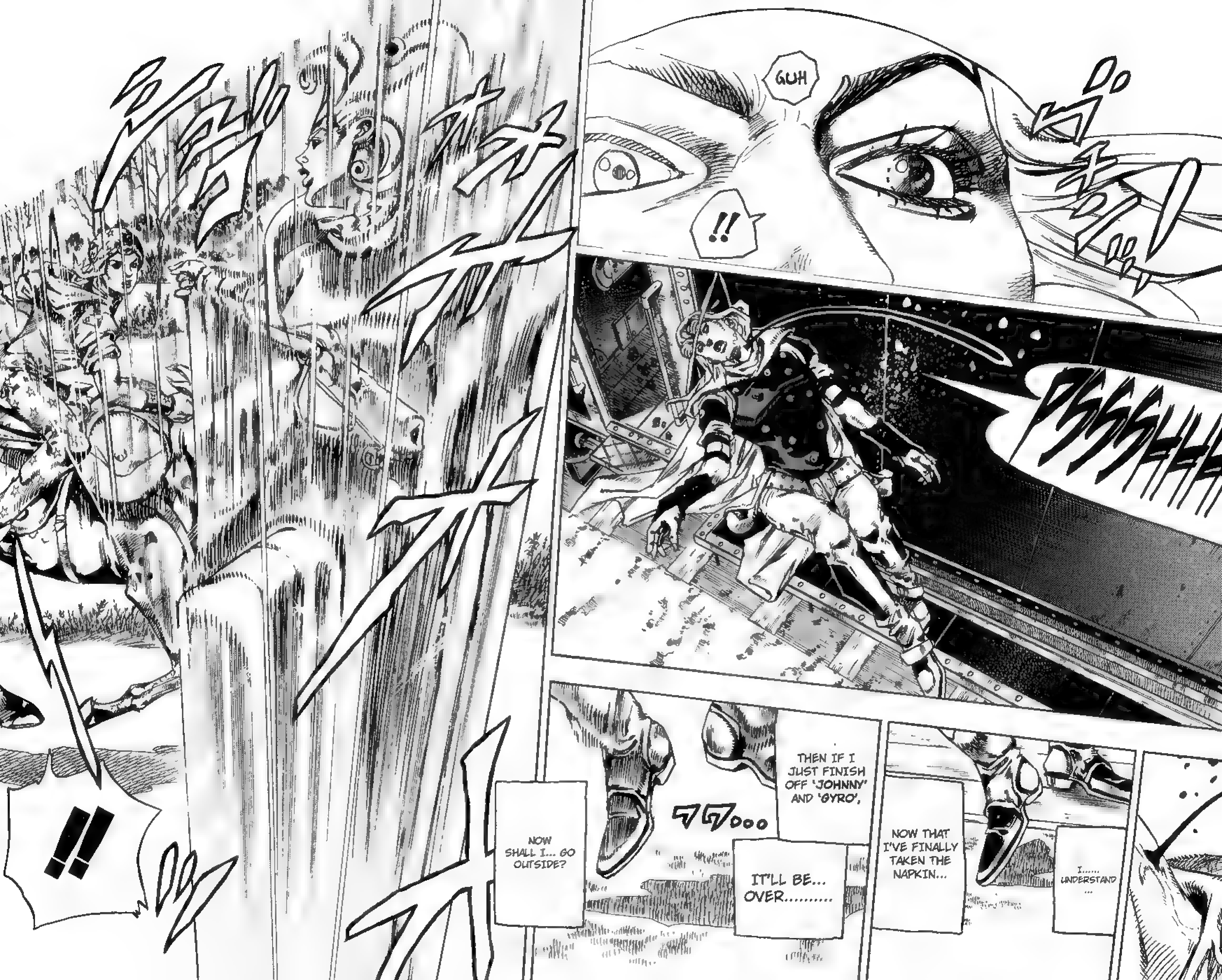
..........
THIS IS....... .......!!
THE WOUNDS ON MY HANDS ARE...

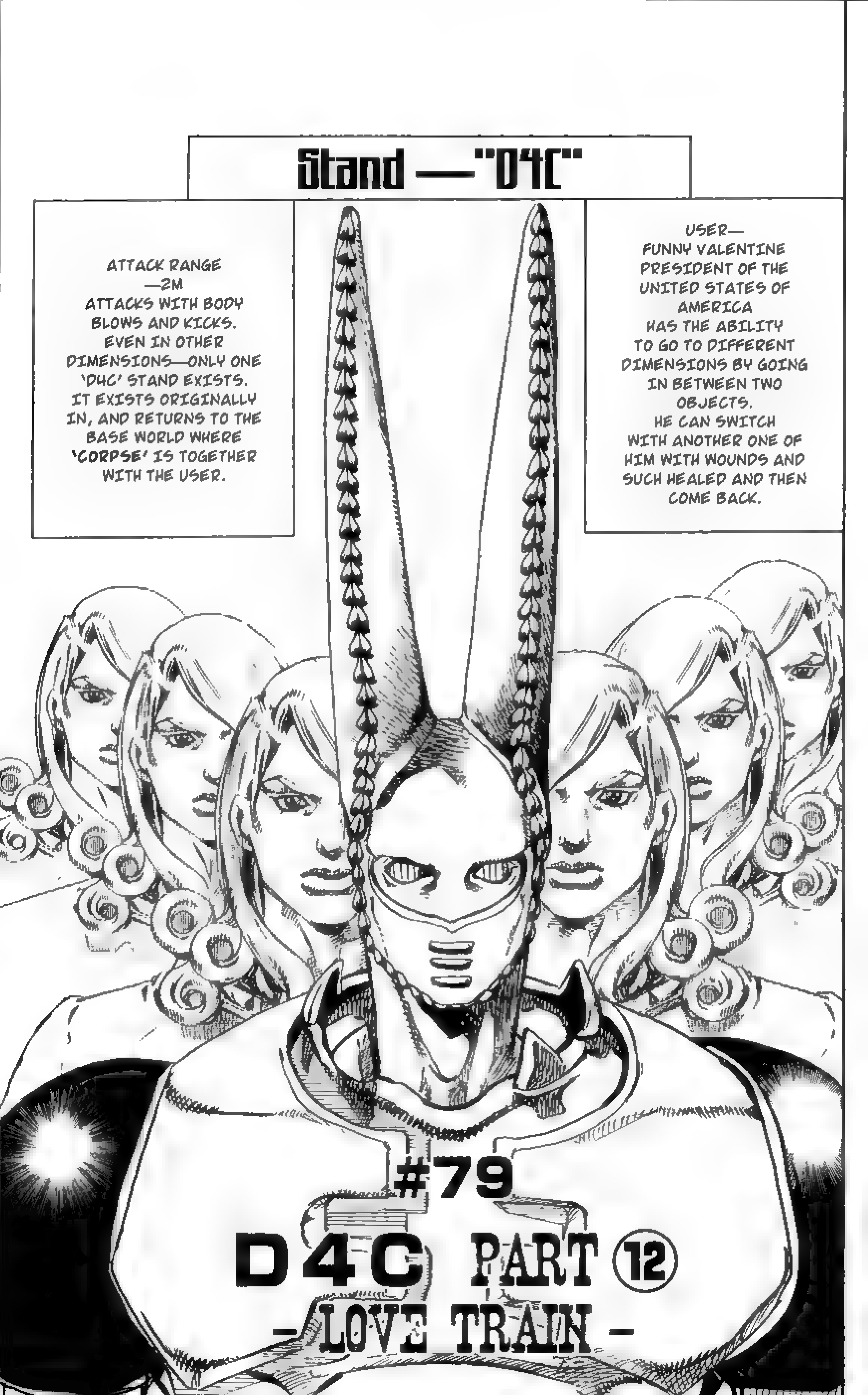
THEN 'STABLE PEACE'! FAR MORE FEASIBLE THAN PEOPLE FIRMLY 'SHAKING HANDS' AS EQUALS IS ONE ABSOLUTELY SUPERIOR PERSON GOVERNING OVER THEM.
THAT IS 'THE REALITY OF THE WORLD OF MAN'!!
THIS 'LUCY' THAT THE CORPSE CHOSE IS... TRULY...
MY 'GODDESS' EXISTING IN THIS REALITY.
WHERE THERE ARE PLACES THE 'SUN'S' LIGHT HITS, THERE MUST ALSO BE 'SHADOWS'... WHERE THERE IS HAPPINESS, ON THE OTHER SIDE, THERE MUST BE THOSE WHO HAVE MISFORTUNE ............
FROM GOD'S PERSPECTIVE, 'HAPPINESS' AND 'MISFORTUNE' BALANCE OUT TO 'ZERO'!
THE THINGS BENDING TOWARDS THIS LUCY ARE ONLY THINGS OF 'GOOD FORTUNE'.
BUT... IN TRUTH,
THIS PHENOMENON... WHAT IS BEING DRAWN TOGETHER HERE IS THE 'EARTH'S SURFACE'.
'LUCY STEEL' .........
SHE'S A 'GODDESS' .........
THE WOUNDS ON MY HANDS WERE... SENT AWAY.

'HARMFUL' THINGS ARE MOVING FURTHER AWAY! TO SOMEONE ELSEWHERE!! BLOWN AWAY!!
THOSE FARMER BYSTANDERS TOOK THE BRUNT OF IT!
IT'S LIKELY THE HARM IS BEING 'FILTERED' THOUGH THAT 'GAP' LEAVING THIS WORLD WITH ONLY 'GOOD THINGS'!!
A SPECIAL RIGHT GIVEN ONLY TO THE ONE WHO HAS OBTAINED THE 'CORPSE'!!
THIS IS THE 'NAPKIN ON THE ROUND TABLE'!! THE ONE THE ENTIRE WORLD MUST FOLLOW AFTER!!
TO ME, VALENTINE!!

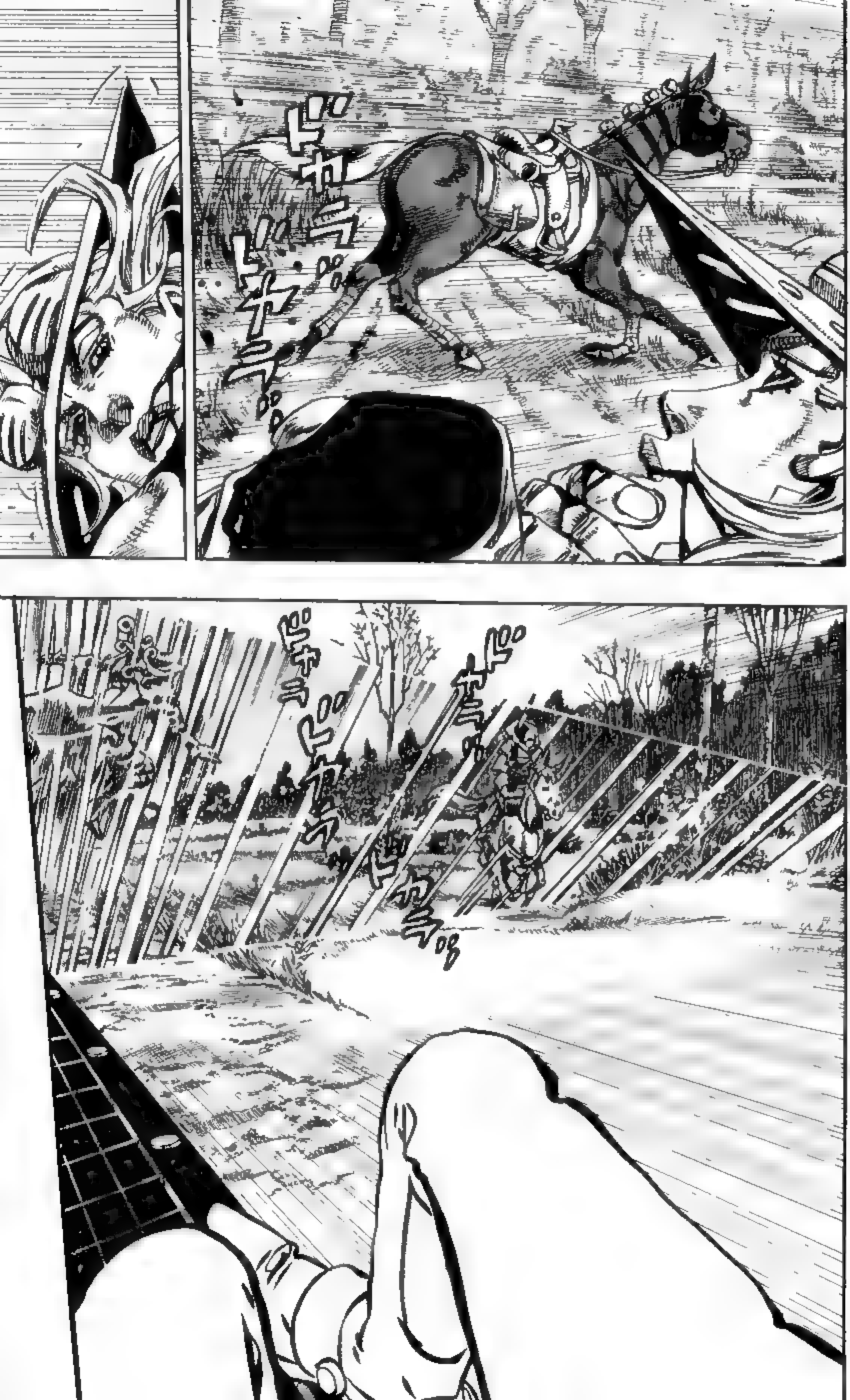
I HAVE TAKEN THE FIRST NAPKIN!
'POWER'!! 'GLORY'!! 'HAPPINESS'! 'CULTURE', 'LAW', 'MONEY'! 'FOOD', 'THE HEARTS OF THE PEOPLE'!!

WH... WHAT!?
6 SHOTS ......
THE 'NAIL BULLETS' I SHOT... WHAT HAPPENED TO THEM?
RIGHT NOW... WHAT'S GOING ON INSIDE THE TRAIN... ..........!?
MU...
HN......
!!
WHAT'S THIS... ........
?
SLIDE
SLIIIDE
THIS LITTLE MARK?
WHAT'S THIS ITCH!?
A 'SCAR'?
HAH! ... ......
... THAT'S RIGHT, BACK THEN I DEFINITELY GOT BIT... ON MY FINGER ... (BY A FISH?)
HEY?!! IS IT MOVING?!!
THIS WOUND IS RISING UP MY ARM......


GUH
!!
I...... UNDERSTAND ...
NOW THAT I'VE FINALLY TAKEN THE NAPKIN...
THEN IF I JUST FINISH OFF 'JOHNNY' AND 'GYRO',
IT'LL BE... OVER..........
NOW SHALL I... GO OUTSIDE?
!!


Stand —"D4C"
ATTACK RANGE —2M
ATTACKS WITH BODY BLOWS AND KICKS.
EVEN IN OTHER DIMENSIONS—ONLY ONE 'D4C' STAND EXISTS.
IT EXISTS ORIGINALLY IN, AND RETURNS TO THE BASE WORLD WHERE 'CORPSE' IS TOGETHER WITH THE USER.
USER— FUNNY VALENTINE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA
HAS THE ABILITY TO GO TO DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS BY GOING IN BETWEEN TWO OBJECTS.
HE CAN SWITCH WITH ANOTHER ONE OF HIM WITH WOUNDS AND SUCH HEALED AND THEN COME BACK.
#79
D4C PART ⑫
- LOVE TRAIN -

WHOSE ATTACK IS THIS... .........
U-UKU...
MY BLOOD PRESSURE IS.. ... ..........
COULD IT BE......THE 'PRESIDENT'S' ......?
IT'S MOVED UP MY ARM... .........
THAT VERY WOUND FROM WHEN THAT FISH BIT MY FINGER EARLIER......
....... GUH
UH

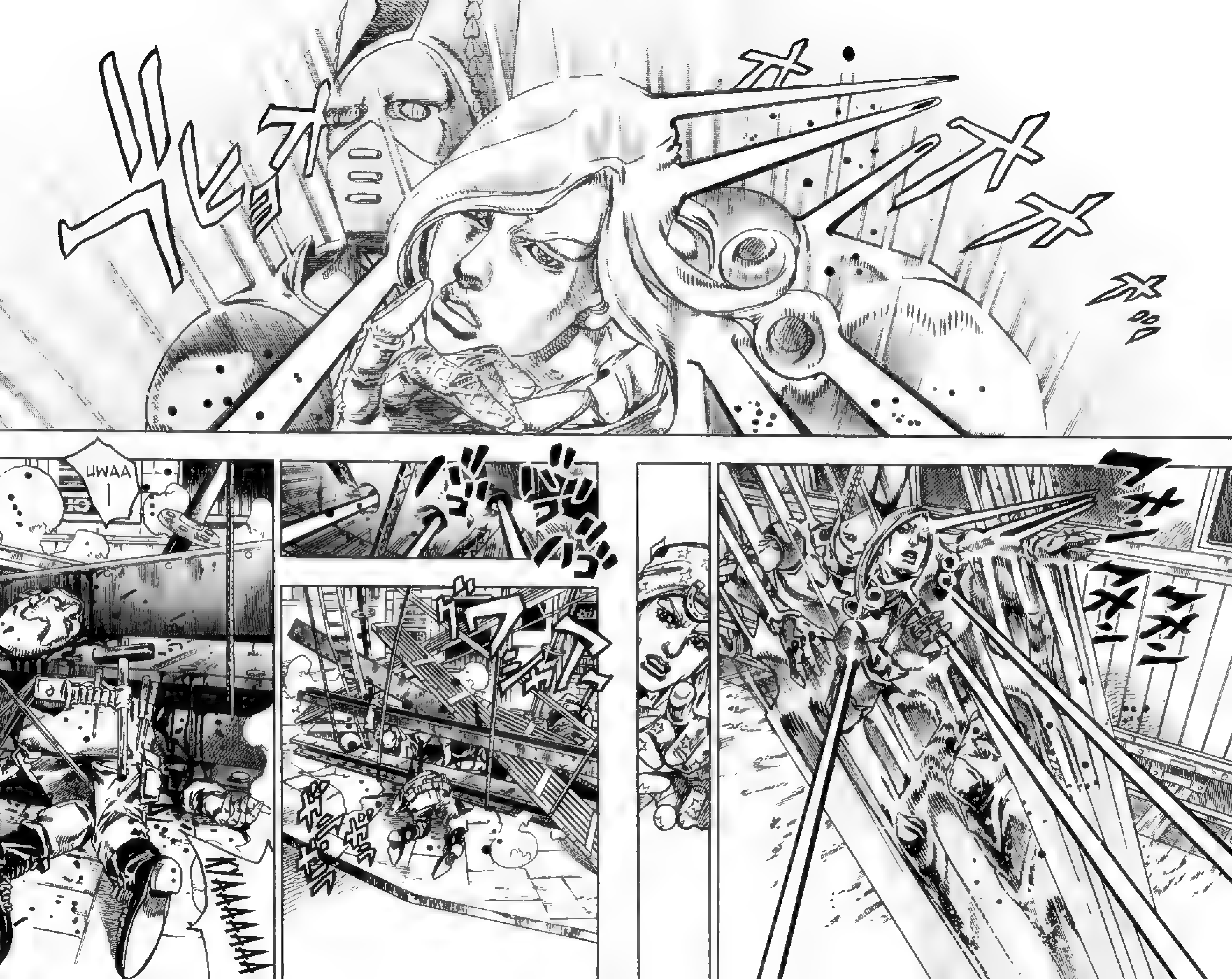

ドカラ
ドカラッ
ドカラ
ドカラ
ドカラッ

……
ジュゴオオオオオオ

THE PRESIDENT ...........!!
HE CAME OUT OF THE TRAIN?......... ........WHAT'S GOING ON HERE? (HE'S NOT ON THE GROUND) ....... WHAT'S HE WALKING ON?

CREEP

HE'S ON THE MOVE! HE'S GOING TO ATTACK!


UWAA !
KYAAAAAAA

..........
SOMEWHERE OTHER THAN THE PLACE I AM.
AGAIN, AT SOME DISTANT LAND.......... THERE ARE HUMANS TAKING THE BURDEN OF THE 'MISFORTUNE'.
WHAT ..........?!

THAT'S A 'GAP'.
IT'S LIKE IT'S SUCKING IN THE NAIL BULLETS AND THEN THEY'RE FLYING OFF SOMEWHERE ELSE!!
RIGHT NOW VALENTINE IS 'INSIDE A GAP IN SPACE'...... AND IT'S MOVING IN THIS DIRECTION!!
WHICH MEANS THAT 'GAP' ISN'T PART OF THE WORLD ON THIS SIDE!!

HAH!

THIS IS BAD!
THE FOREST IS COMING UP FROM BEHIND ME!! AT THIS RATE I'LL BE CAUGHT BETWEEN THEM!!
THEM AND VALENTINE'S ABILITY!!
COULD THIS BE BECAUSE OF THE 'CORPSE'?! WAS THIS ACTIVATED BECAUSE THE PRESIDENT GOT THE 'CORPSE'S' ABILITY!!?

THRUST

ドドドドドド
ギャルギャルギャル
ギャルギャルギャルギャル

DID YOU SEE INSIDE THE GAP...? JOHNNY JOESTAR?
IS THAT THE OTHER SIDE OF THE EARTH...? A WAR SOMEWHERE? PEOPLE DIED AGAIN. CHILDREN WERE KILLED.
SOME FORM OF KARMA...? HARMFUL ENERGY FLIES FROM THIS GAP AND IS UNDERTAKEN BY SOMEONE A GREAT DISTANCE AWAY.
SAIGON
HUMANITY IS ALL EQUAL, ISN'T IT? GOOD THINGS... AND HARMFUL THINGS BALANCE OUT TO ZERO.
BUT NOT FOR THIS PLACE OF GOOD FORTUNE WHERE I AM.

ドガオォ

W-WHAT!?
A LITTLE SCRATCH! ...AGAIN!

ドドド
ドド
ドド

N... NO WAY!! IT'S RISING UP AGAIN!!
THE 'SCRATCH' I GOT ON MY HAND IS......... HEADING FOR MY HEAD OR MY HEART...!!
THIS IS BAD!!
REALLY BAD...... IT'S GOING UP SO FAST!!
UUH...
ドドドド
ドドド

VOOOH

ドカラッ
ドカラ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ
ゴトトン
ゴトトン
ゴトトン

UGH!!
TH... THE WOUND...

THERE'S... NOTHING I CAN DO!!
DAMMIT!
THE WOUND ISN'T STOPPING! IT'S STILL RISING!!
CHOKE
GYROOOOOOO!!!!

UGH
AH...
S... EVEN THOUGH IT WAS JUST A SCRATCH...
U... UGH.
IT... MADE A WOUND IN MY HEART... .......?
......
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAA
HAAAAH HAAAA
HAAAAAAA

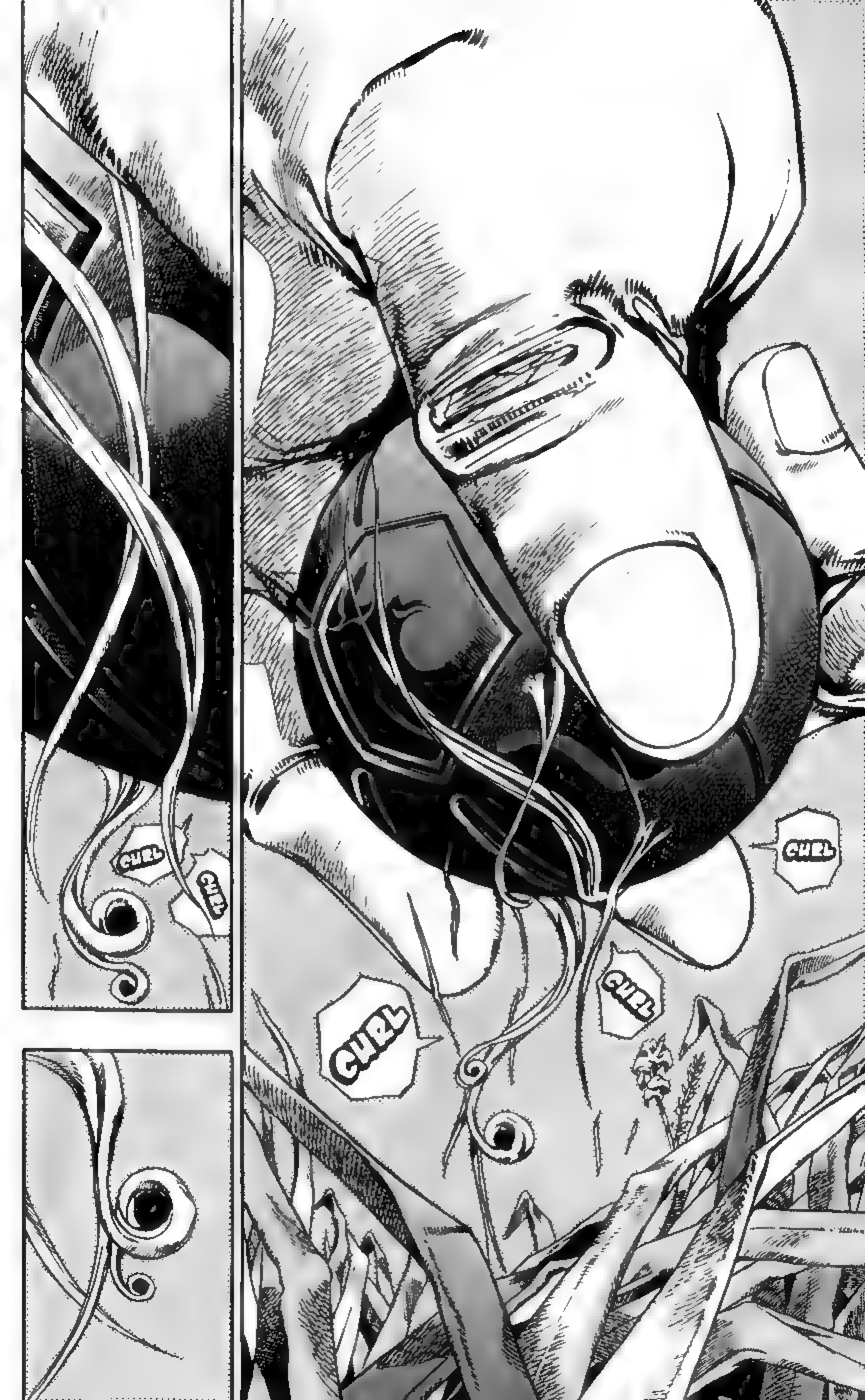
HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAA
HAAAAH
BECAUSE I RELEASED DANNY INTO THE FOREST.
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
BIG BROTHER! BIG BROTHER!
GOD... YOU TOOK THE WRONG SON...
NICHOLAS WOULD'VE GOTTEN 1ST.

HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
JUST A LITTLE MORE AND MY LEGS'LL MOVE... LOOK... JUST A LITTLE MORE!
JUST WHEN I THINK I'VE 'CONQUERED' SOMETHING, DEFEAT REARS ITS HEAD AGAIN!
I WANT TO CROSS THE CONTINENT AND GROW......
I... I CAN'T DO IT! I'M AT MY LIMIT, GYRO!
WE CAN'T WIN!! THE PRESIDENT HAS ALREADY MADE THE COMPLETE 'CORPSE' HIS!
HE'LL COME AGAIN ..........
RIGHT NOW... HE WENT BACK TO THE TRAIN, BUT HE'LL MOVE THE 'GAP' AND COME BACK AGAIN.......! YOU CAN'T SHOOT NAIL BULLETS INTO THAT 'GAP'!
BEHIND HIM IS THE 'HOLY CORPSE'. ANYTHING THAT'LL DO HIM HARM GETS REPELLED SOMEWHERE ELSE, ACCORDING TO WHAT HE SAID... AND BECAUSE THAT WOUND YOU HAVE IS BEING REPELLED AWAY FROM HIM AS THE CORE, IT'LL RISE UP YOUR BODY!

THERE ISN'T ANY WAY TO BEAT HIM!
HE'S 'JUSTICE'
AND WE'RE THE ONES WHO ARE 'EVIL'!!
UUH ......
HEY, JOHNNY.
DO YOU REMEMBER?
ABOUT HOW I SAID YOU CAN USE THE STIRRUPS TO USE THE HORSE'S POWER WITH THE STEEL BALLS' ROTATION?
THOUGH IT'S A ROTATION THAT NEITHER MY FATHER NOR ANYONE'S EVER SEEN... IT'S A ROTATION WE DON'T EVEN KNOW HOW TO SPIN......
YEAH...! OF COURSE I REMEMBER .........
I'VE BEEN THINKING ABOUT THAT EVER SINCE YOU TOLD ME........... ABOUT IF SOMEBODY LIKE ME COULD DO A ROTATION LIKE THAT......
BUT A ROTATION THAT SENDS POWER FROM YOUR LEGS. FOR ME THAT'S...
JUST NOW I TRIED TO THROW WITH THAT 'ROTATION' .............

......
GLANCE
IT'S... IMPOSSIBLE ......
NO MATTER WHAT KIND OF POWER OF 'ROTATION' WE USE............ THAT 'GAP' HE CAN MOVE WILL JUST REPEL ANY ATTACK... THAT'S REALITY!!
ANYWAY, SO WHAT? ...GYRO.
JUST NOW, I SAW THAT REALITY WITH MY OWN EYES IN THAT 'GAP'!

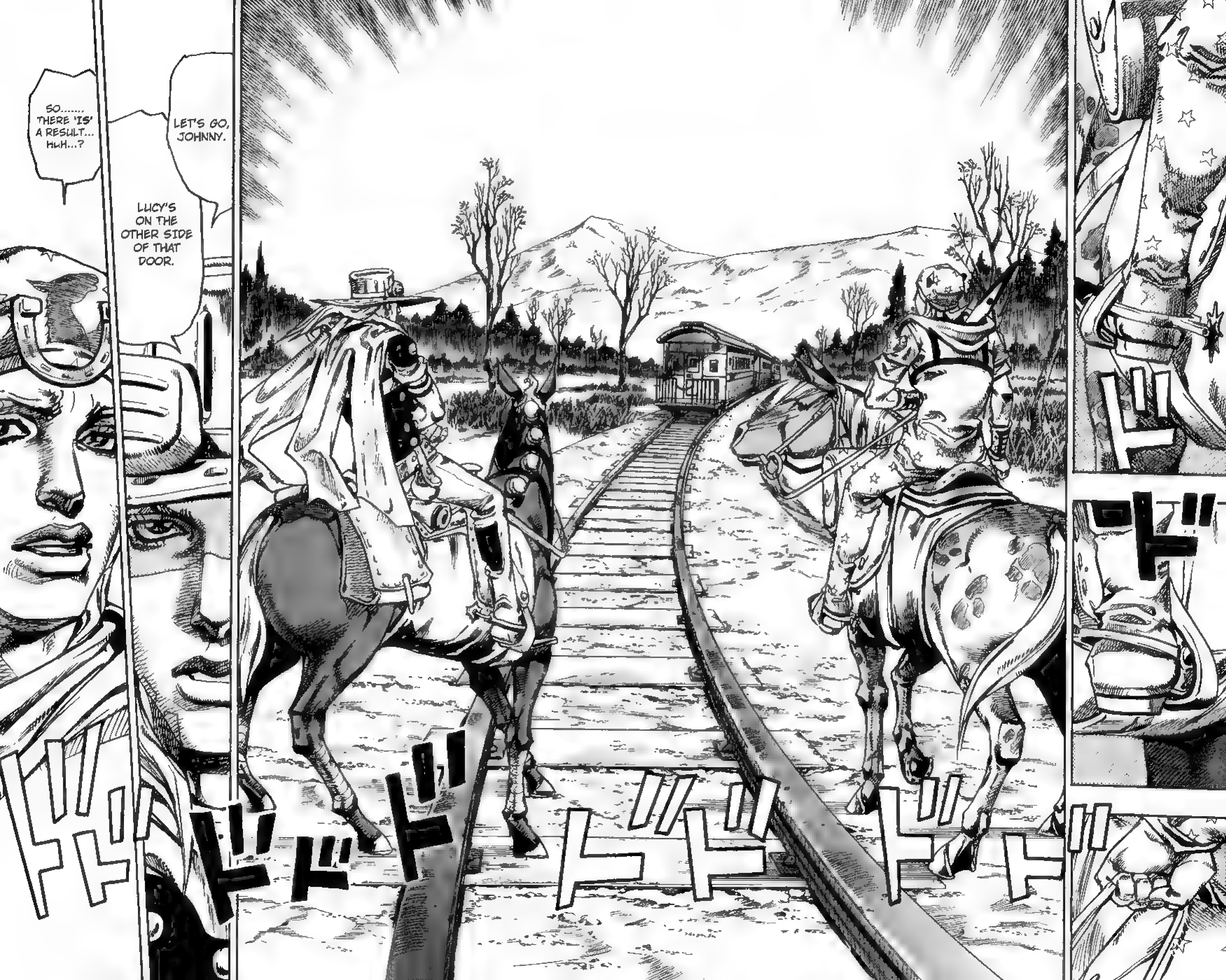
YEAH.
SAME HERE.......... DESPAIR WAS ATTACKING ALL OF MY HEART.
BUT ONLY UP 'TIL NOW.........


CURL
CURL
CURL
CURL
CURL

HIS 'HAIRS' CLUNG TO THE STEEL BALL I JUST THREW.
LOOK... 'HAIRS'......
CURL
WHY'RE HIS 'HAIRS' STUCK TO THE STEEL BALL?
SO WHAT ABOUT HIS HAIR...?
WH... WHAT DO YOU MEAN!?
NO WAY, ARE YOU SAYING YOU HIT HIM!?
WHAT...?

NO... I DIDN'T SEE ANYTHING TO INDICATE I HIT HIS HEAD.
BUT THE ROTATION PASSED DOWN FROM MY ANCESTORS THAT NO ONE'S EVER SEEN......
YOU REMEMBER HOW IT USES THE STIRRUPS INVENTED BY KNIGHTS OF THE MIDDLE AGES?
THE MOUNTED KNIGHTS' ENEMIES WERE ALSO KNIGHTS! THEY WORE 'HELMETS AND ARMOR' AND CARRIED 'SHIELDS'.
IT'S NOT NEEDED NOWADAYS, BUT WHAT IF THERE WAS ONCE A 'ROTATION' THAT EXISTED IN ORDER TO GET THROUGH THOSE DEFENSES!?

WHAT DOES THE 'HAIR' BEING THERE MEAN? WHAT HAPPENED, GYRO!?
WHAT KIND OF 'ROTATION' DID YOU THROW THAT WITH JUST NOW?
I DON'T KNOW.......... ALL I HAVE IS THE 'RESULT'.
AND THE FACT IS...
THE 'RESULT' IS THAT IT PULLED OUT HIS 'HAIR' INSIDE THE GAP.
ドドドドド


LET'S GO, JOHNNY.
LUCY'S ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THAT DOOR.
SO...... THERE 'IS' A RESULT... HUH...?

# #80

# D4C PART⑬

## - LOVE TRAIN -

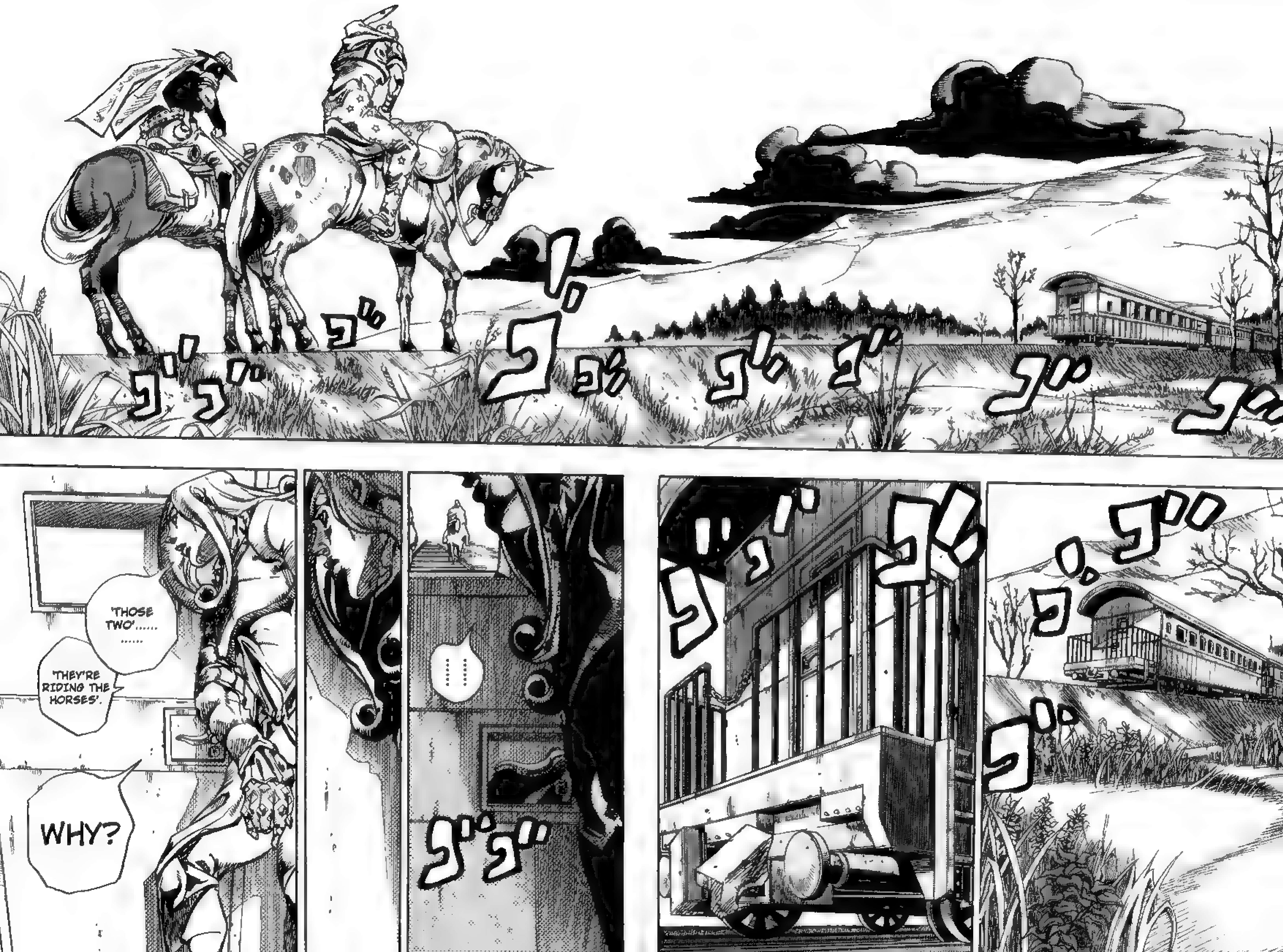
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
CLOP
CLOP

HUUUU...
HAAH
HAH HAH
HAAH
HAAA
HAA
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE' ......JOHNNY.
GOT IT...?
......
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAAH
HAAH
'WHAT KIND OF ENERGY' DOES THE ROTATION GAINED FROM THE HORSE HAVE...?
NO ONE KNOWS. NO ONE'S EVEN SEEN IT, THAT 'ROTATION' ......
'CAN I REALLY DO SOMETHING LIKE THAT MYSELF'...? IF YOU'RE THINKING THAT RIGHT NOW, THEN...
KNOW THAT THE ONLY WAY IS WITH THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'.
HAAH
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA

MAKE THE HORSE RUN WITH THAT FORM.
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
MAKE THE HORSE RUN IN A WAY THE HORSE ITSELF THINKS IS 'GOOD'...
LIKE HOW A HORSE FEELS HAPPY NATURALLY RUNNING ON THE GRASS..........
IF WE CAN OBTAIN THAT 'ROTATIONAL ENERGY' FROM THE HORSE......
..........
IT CAN ONLY BE WITH THE HORSE IN THE 'FORM' OF THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'.

HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
LIKE YOU'RE THANKING THE HORSE ITSELF ..........
FOR BEING BORN AND COMING TO BE HERE IN THIS WORLD UNDER THE SKY...
THAT IS THE TIME IT WILL MAKE THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'.
THEN WE'LL DEFINITELY BE ABLE TO 'WIN'.
WE HAVE THE 'RESULT'... THAT HIS 'HAIRS' CAME OUT...
HAA
HAA
HAA


'THOSE TWO'......
......
'THEY'RE RIDING THE HORSES'.
WHY?
......

WHY DON'T 'THOSE TWO' RUN AWAY...........?
AND BY NOW THEY MUST KNOW THAT THE 'CORPSE' WILL NEVER BE THEIRS.........
JUST NOW, THEY BARELY ESCAPED WITH THEIR LIVES ...........
THEY SHOULD BE IN DESPAIR, KNOWING FULL WELL THAT THE NEXT ATTACK WOULD MEAN THEIR CERTAIN DEFEAT ............
IF THEY ARE IN 'DESPAIR' THEN SURELY THEIR ONLY VIABLE OPTION WOULD BE TO 'ESCAPE' TO A LOCATION AS FAR AWAY AS POSSIBLE.
SO THEN WHY DO THAT?
WHY TAKE THAT FIGHTING POSTURE?
THUMP
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
UH......

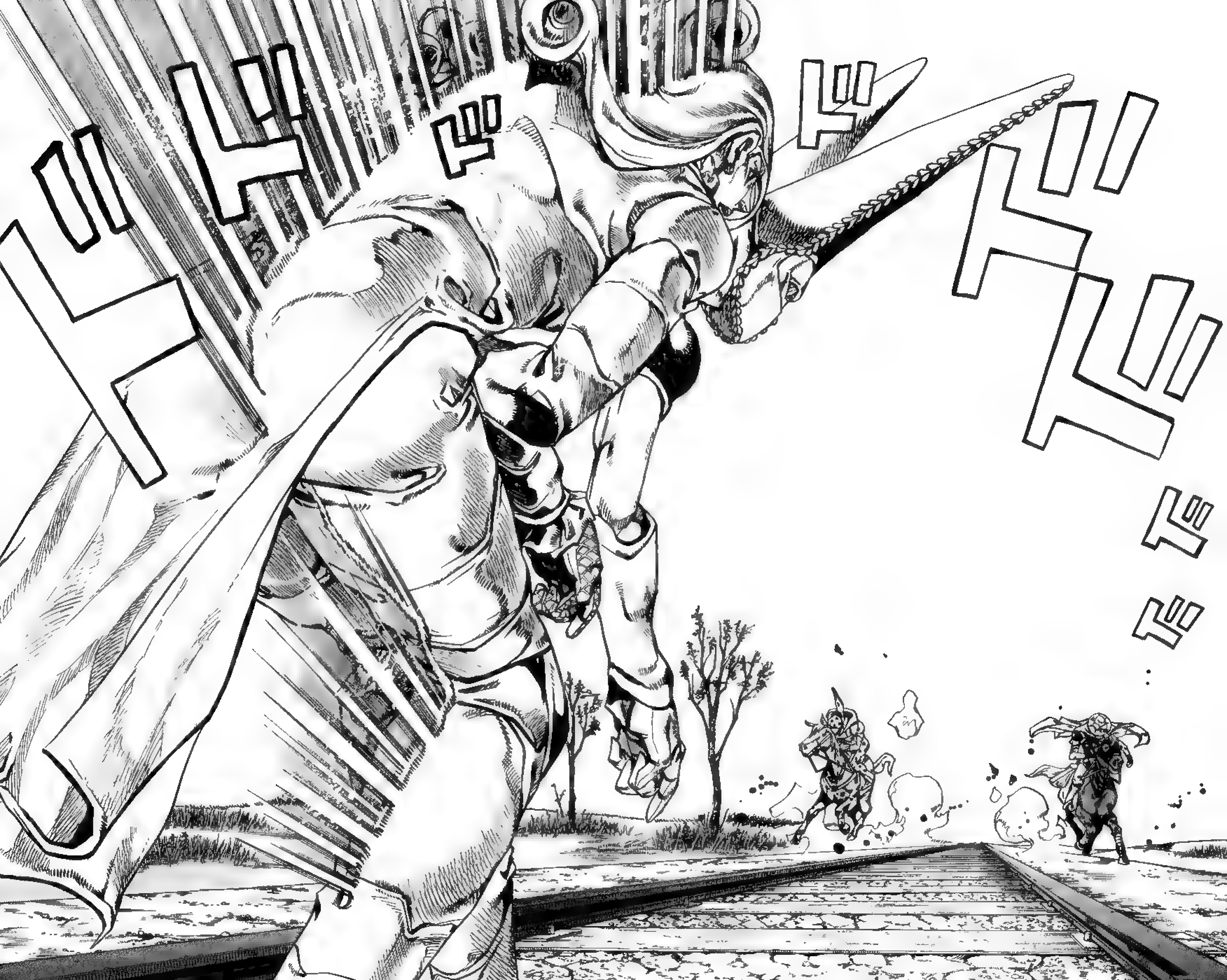
UH
I......
KUH
KU......
I CA......
CAN'T BREA...
...THE
KU... ...
UH

VERY SOON, YOU WILL DIE...........
MY LOVELY LITTLE LUCY...
THAT'S RIGHT.
UH
I WILL BUILD A 'SHRINE' AT THIS PLACE.
YOU ALREADY MUST BE ADORED .........
YOU WILL HAVE BECOME A 'GODDESS'.
A 'GODDESS' WILL BE BORN INTO THIS WORLD.
BECAUSE YOU WILL NOW BE BECOMING THE HOLY 'CORPSE'.
BUT THOUGH LUCY WILL DIE...
ALONGSIDE MY 'D4C', THE 'GODDESS' OF THIS HUMAN WORLD.

ガチャン

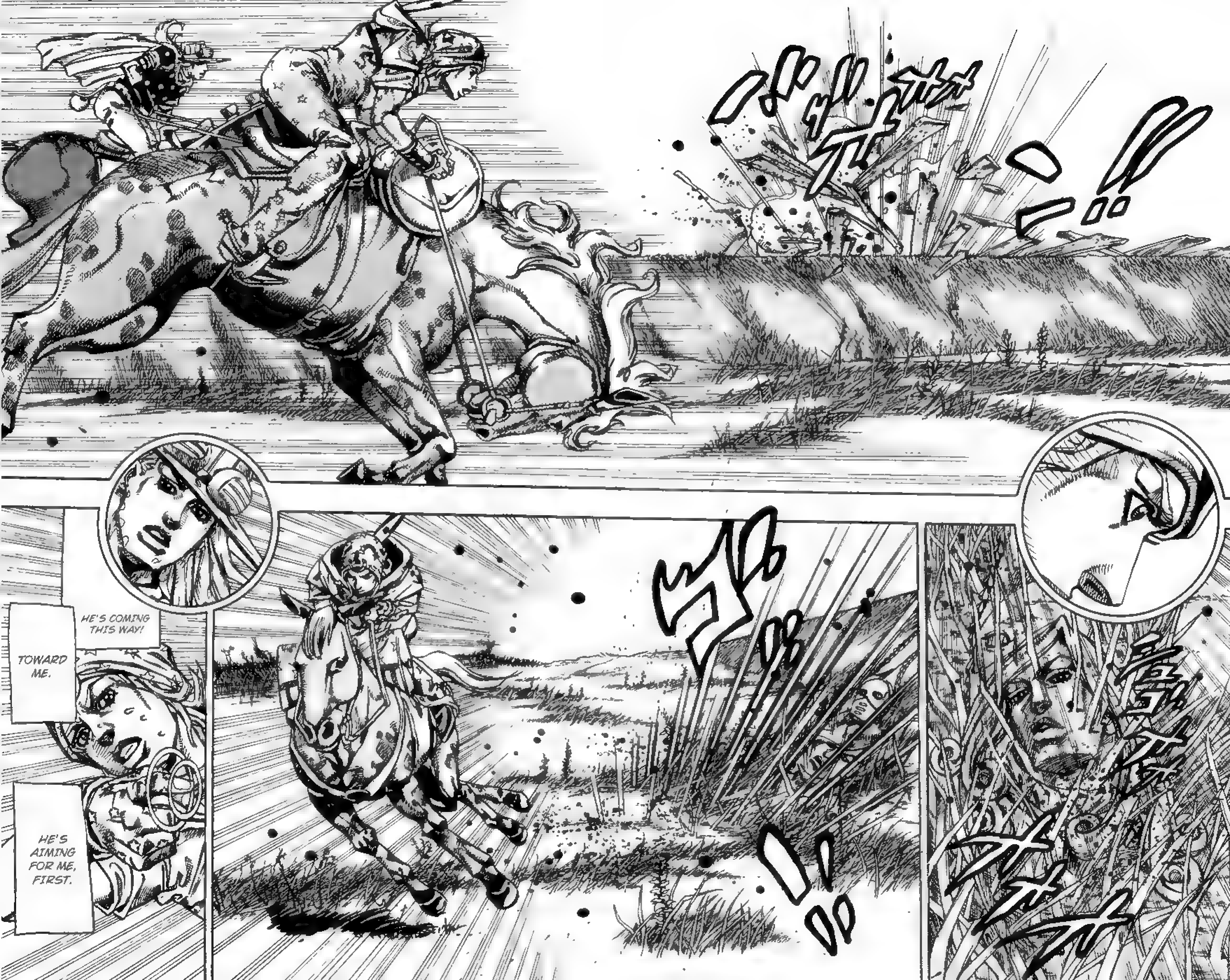
......
SO, HE'S HERE.
LET'S GO, JOHNNY.
ONLY SHOOT 'ONE SHOT'.
ONCE THE HORSE HAS TAKEN THE 'FORM' OF THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE...
ONLY 'THEN'
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

CLICK
CLICK
CLICK
STEP
STEP


ドドドドドド
ドドドド

BOOM
!?
FLIP
FLIP
FLIP
FLIP
WHAT......
...........?
WHAT'S HAPPENING!? WHERE'S THE PRESIDENT? WHAT'D HE JUST DO!?
RATTLE
HE HID UNDER THE TRACKS!!
JUST LIKE BEFORE, INSIDE THAT 'RIPT' OF LIGHT!
RATTLE
RATTLE
RATTLE
RATTLE
RATTLE
RATTLE

HE'S ON THE GROUND!!
HE'S FLAT ON THE GROUND AND SLIDING HERE 'INSIDE THE LIGHT'!!
BUT WHY ON THE GROUND...?
COULD IT BE THAT.. HE REALIZED WE'D BE USING THE HORSE'S POWER FOR 'ROTATION'?
SPLIT UP!! YOU GO RIGHT!!
JOHNNY, CURVE AROUND FROM THE RIGHT!!


HE'S COMING THIS WAY!
TOWARD ME.
HE'S AIMING FOR ME, FIRST.

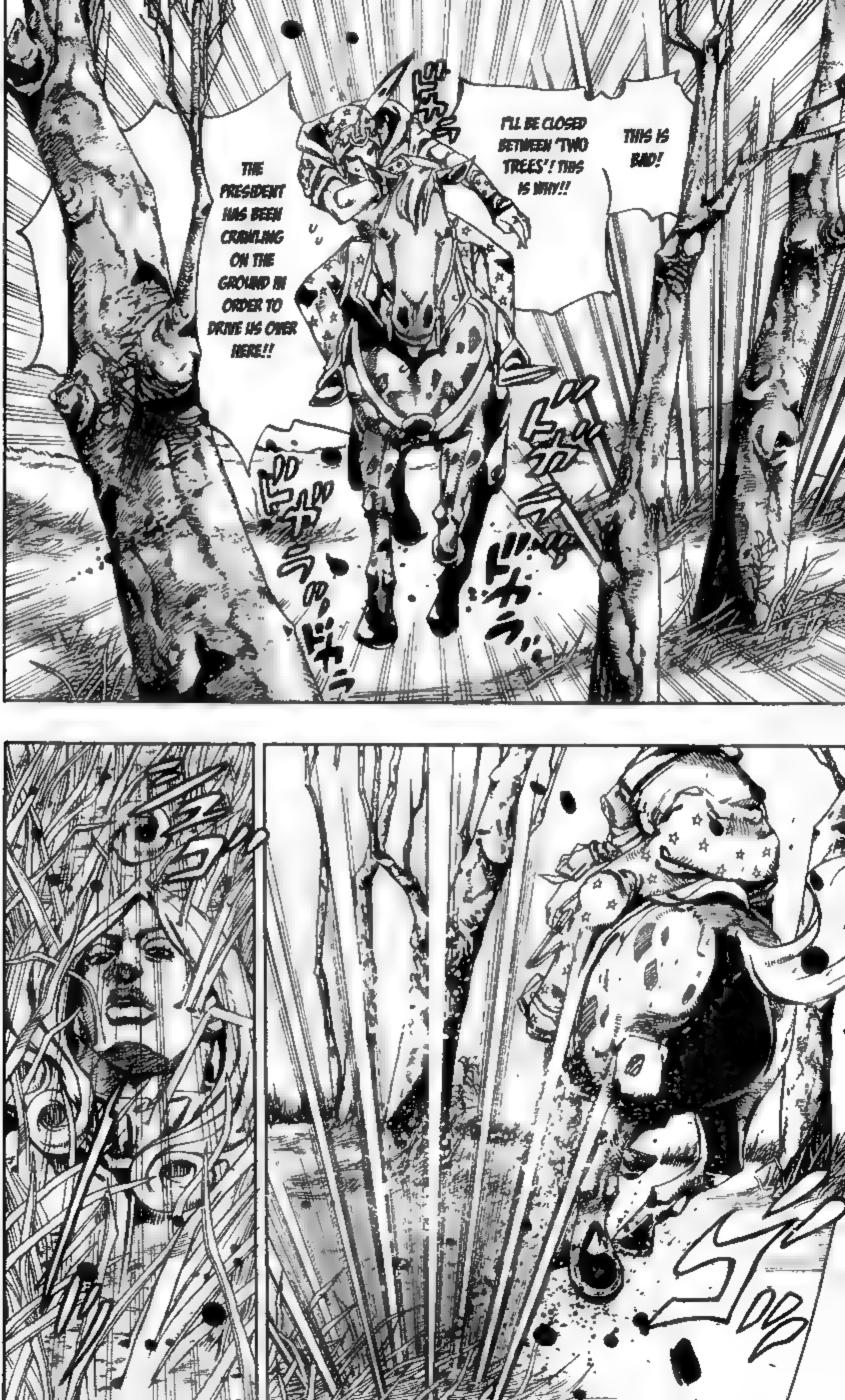
NOT YET! JOHNNY, DON'T SHOOT!

NOT YET... STAY CALM, JOHNNY.............
WAIT UNTIL THE HORSE'S MOVEMENTS HAVE FORMED THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'...
NOT UNTIL ITS MUSCLES GAIN THE POWER OF THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'...

UH!!
KUH... AGAIN, SOMEWHERE ELSE......
......
JOHNNY!! IT HASN'T MADE THE SHAPE YET!!

IT STILL HASN'T MADE THE 'FORM' OF THE RECTANGLE!
!?
GLANCE

HAH!!
DAMMIT... 'TREES' ARE COMING CLOSER AGAIN!!
TREES......


THIS IS BAD!
I'LL BE CLOSED BETWEEN 'TWO TREES'! THIS IS WHY!!
THE PRESIDENT HAS BEEN CRAWLING ON THE GROUND IN ORDER TO DRIVE US OVER HERE!!

BUT IF I DON'T GO BETWEEN THE 'TREES'........!!
HE'LL CATCH ME!!
HAH!!

...............
...............
...... JOHNNY.
IT'S THERE.......
IT'S DONE ............ INSIDE THE RECTANGLE .............
THE 'FORM' IS DONE...
YOU DID IT..... .......
NOW... ...
.......RIGHT NOW, YOUR HORSE IS INSIDE... THE FORM OF THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'!..........

NOW! JOHNNY! THE 'FORM' IS COMPLETE!!

UH
WHACK
UGUH
KUH

⑳ LOVE TRAIN—THE WORLD IS ONE (END)

## Hirohiko Araki

This is an actual conversation I had.—

"Eh? Don't you know 'Wakeru-kun?'"...

"? No. I'm afraid I don't."

"Really? It's Wakeru-kun. Wakeru-kun!"

"Really, who is he?"

"Do you really not know him? Wakeru-kun, he parts his hair. He's incredibly popular. Sensei, you're from Sendai, aren't you?"

"Eh. Yes. I am from Sendai, but...... Is he like Shiga's 'Hikonyan' or Nara's 'Sento-kun', like a city's mascot character?"

"He's been a big sensation ever since I took this post. Sensei, I can't believe you don't know him in spite of being a pro mangaka and all. WAHAHAHA!"

"How would I know?"

(The end. Was that good?)

荒木飛呂彦

集英社

JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
Since 1840
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890 sep 23
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
2
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
集英社
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

BALL BREAKER vol.21

ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.21

## CONTENTS

**BALL BREAKER**

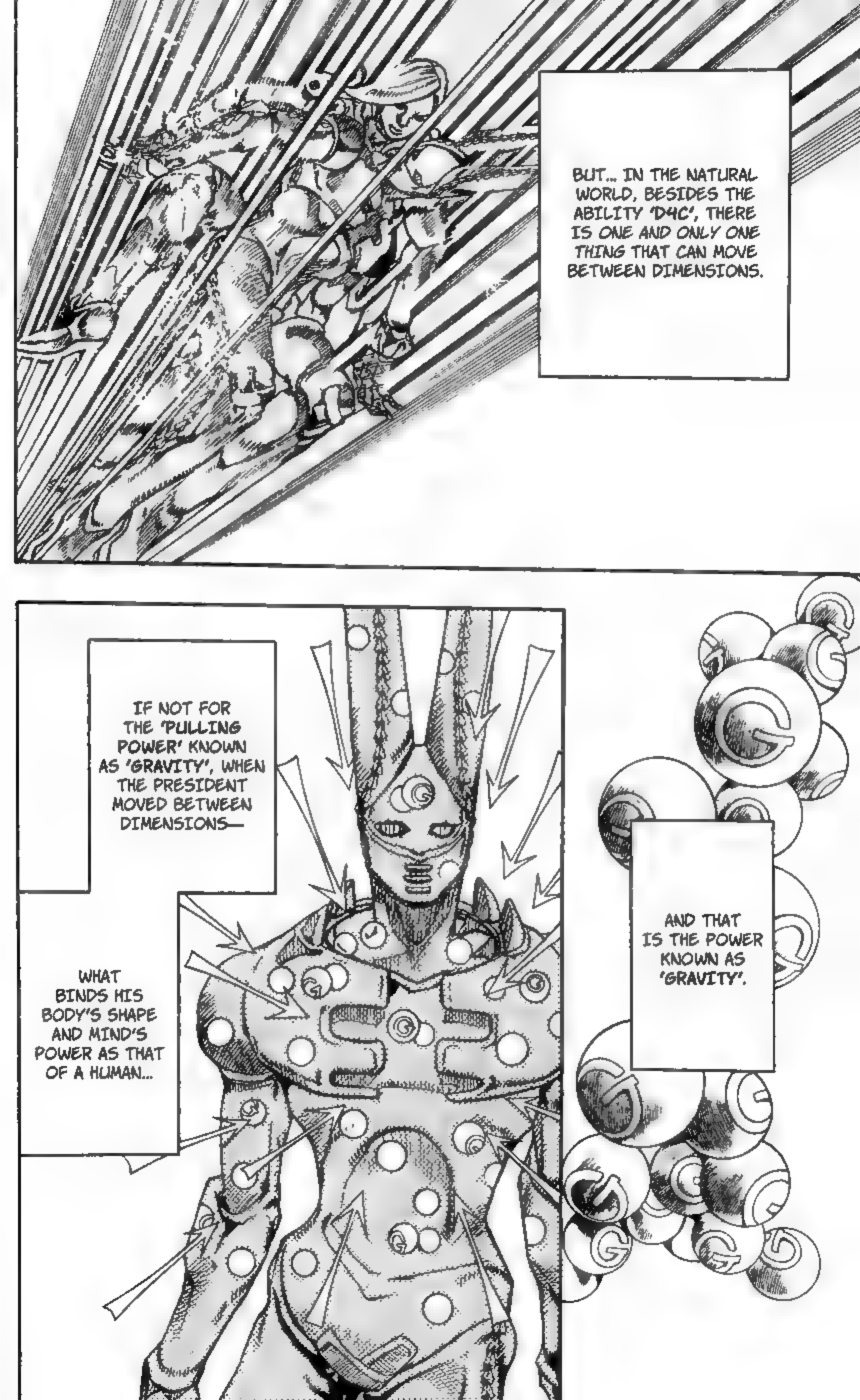

#81
D 4 C PART⑭ —LOVE TRAIN— 7

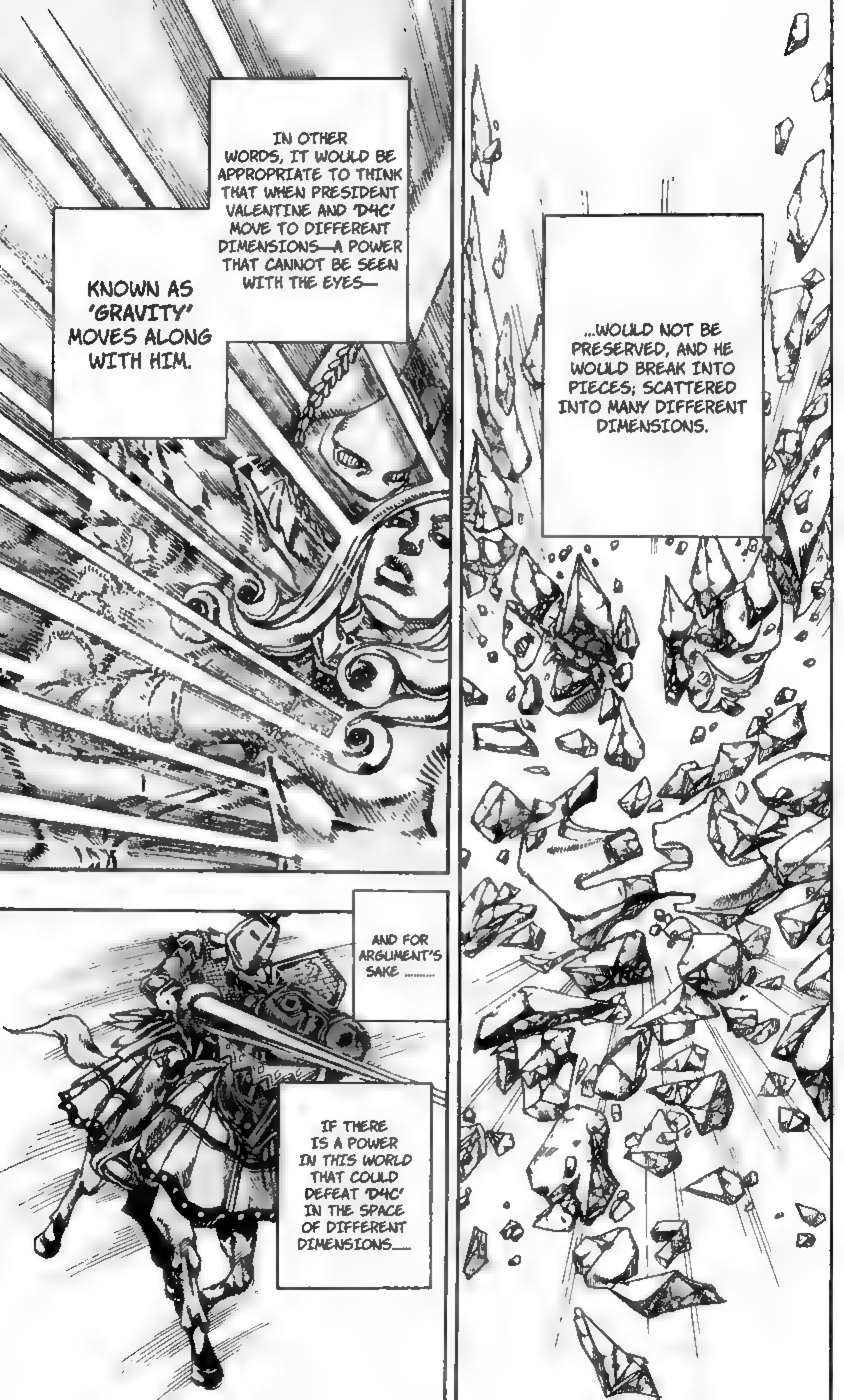
#82
D 4 C PART⑮ —LOVE TRAIN— 57

#83
BALL BREAKER PART① 93

#84
BALL BREAKER PART② 139

#81
D4C PART 14
- LOVE TRAIN -
ONLY PRESIDENT VALENTINE AND HIS ABILITY 'D4C' CAN 'COME AND GO' BETWEEN DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS.
SO UNLESS 'D4C' IS DOING IT, OTHER PEOPLE CANNOT MOVE THROUGH DIMENSIONS.


BUT... IN THE NATURAL WORLD, BESIDES THE ABILITY 'D4C', THERE IS ONE AND ONLY ONE THING THAT CAN MOVE BETWEEN DIMENSIONS.
IF NOT FOR THE 'PULLING POWER' KNOWN AS 'GRAVITY', WHEN THE PRESIDENT MOVED BETWEEN DIMENSIONS—
WHAT BINDS HIS BODY'S SHAPE AND MIND'S POWER AS THAT OF A HUMAN...
AND THAT IS THE POWER KNOWN AS 'GRAVITY'.


IN OTHER WORDS, IT WOULD BE APPROPRIATE TO THINK THAT WHEN PRESIDENT VALENTINE AND 'D4C' MOVE TO DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS—A POWER THAT CANNOT BE SEEN WITH THE EYES—
KNOWN AS 'GRAVITY' MOVES ALONG WITH HIM.
AND FOR ARGUMENT'S SAKE ..........
IF THERE IS A POWER IN THIS WORLD THAT COULD DEFEAT 'D4C' IN THE SPACE OF DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS.....
...WOULD NOT BE PRESERVED, AND HE WOULD BREAK INTO PIECES; SCATTERED INTO MANY DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS.

IF THIS 'POWER KNOWN AS "GRAVITY"' COULD BE PRODUCED FREELY AND IT WERE POSSIBLE TO BE USED AGAINST 'D4C' .........
THAT WOULD HAVE TO BE 'THE POWER KNOWN AS "GRAVITY"'.
......... AND THAT IS A 'PHENOMENON' THAT HAS NEVER BEEN SEEN IN THIS WORLD___
THEN IT WOULD CERTAINLY BE ABLE TO PIERCE THOUGH ANY DIMENSION .........

ドド
ドド
ドド

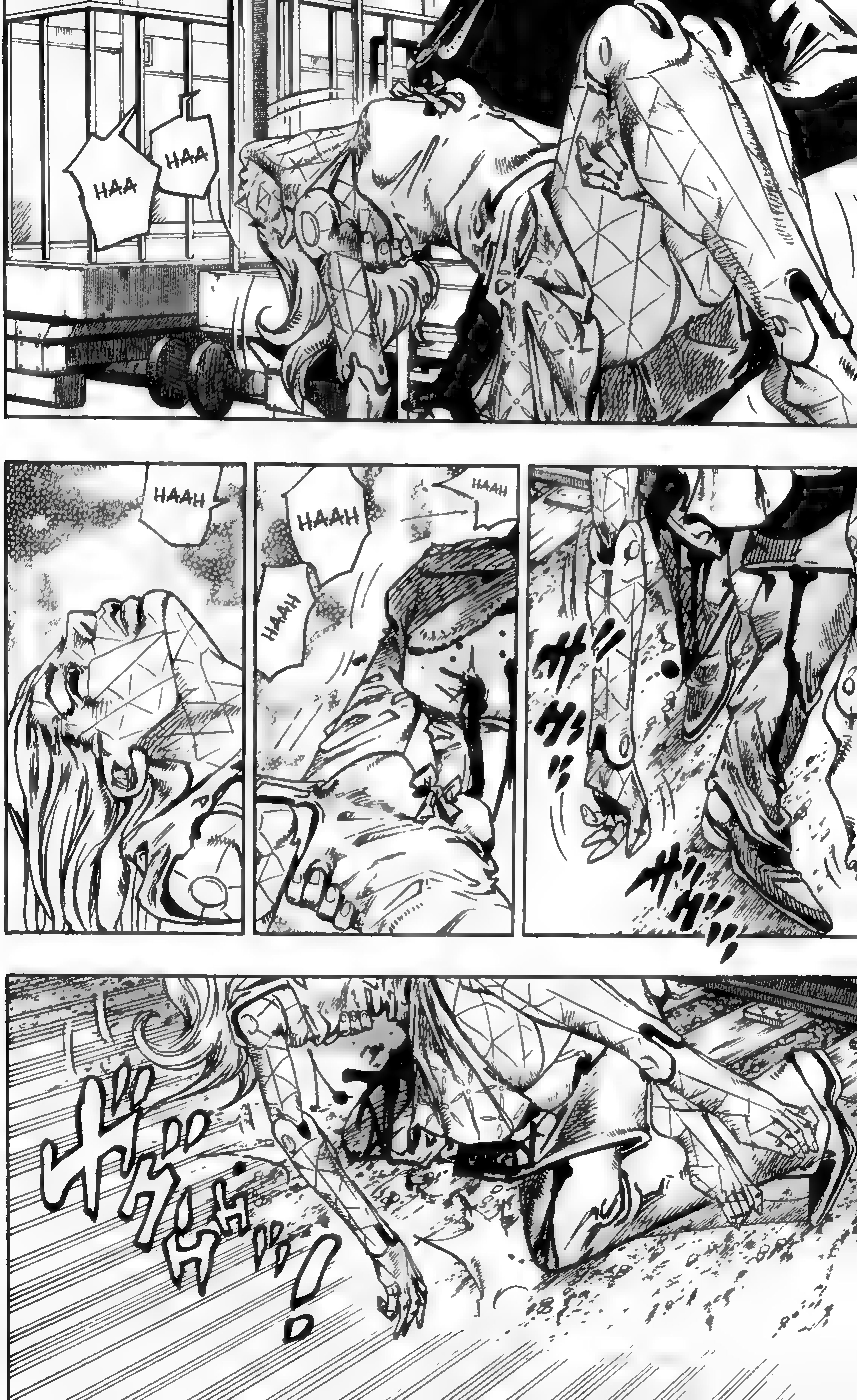
ドドドド
ド
ド

WHIRL
UWAAAH
WAAAAH

JOHNNYYY—
RUSTLE
WHAT? A...... MOUSE...?
A 'WHITE MOUSE'? ...THAT JUST NOW..........WAS IT BROUGHT HERE TOGETHER WITH THE DRAWING OF CLOSER GROUND...... ......?
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
GLANCE
!?

I'M BEING PULLED......
SHE'S MOVING...
LUCY ..........
IS SHE MOVING...... INSIDE THE TRAIN...?
NO... 'LUCY'S' BREATHING HAS ALREADY STOPPED. SHE'S THE 'COMPLETED CORPSE'.
...(?!) SHE DEFINITELY SHOULDN'T BE ABLE TO......
THE 'LIGHT' IS BEING RETURNED TOWARD THE TRAIN.
I WAS PULLED ....!?

...
I WAS RIGHT, I AM BEING PULLED!!
WHIRRL


HAA
HAA
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

......
WHAT.........? 'LUCY' IS BEING MOVED ..........
HIM... OUTSIDE THE TRAIN...
HAA
HAA
GET HER AWAY...
FROM THIS 'PLACE'...
LUCY IS STILL......
'ALIVE' .........
...... GYRO ZEPPELI.
BEFORE LUCY TURNS COMPLETELY INTO THE 'CORPSE' ..........
EVEN THOUGH SHE'D STOPPED BREAKING BEFORE......
WHEN SHE GOT AWAY FROM VALENTINE... JUST NOW... HER BREATHING CAME BACK SLIGHTLY...
HAA
HAA... UH...
TAKE HER FAR AWAY FROM HERE!!
FROM HIM! FAR, FAR AWAY FROM HERE! PLEASE, SAVE THIS GIRL! GET HER OUT OF HERE!

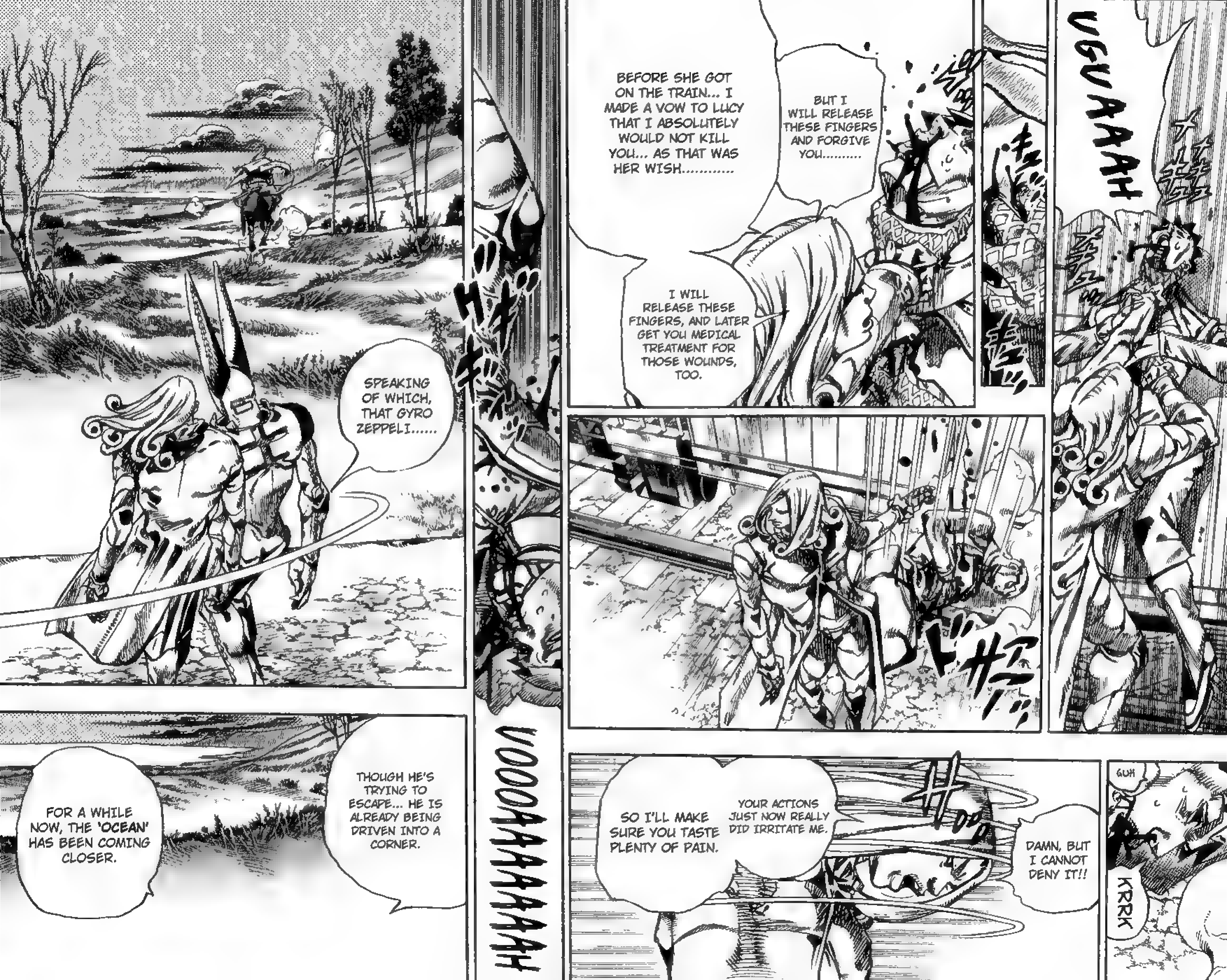
..........
THAT GUY
IS...
STEPHEN
STEEL............
YOU'RE
..........
STIR

I'M COUNTING ON YOU!! GYRO ZEPPELI!!!!!!!!!!!!!
MR. STEPHEN STEEL......!! THE ONLY ONE I CAN TAKE ON MY HORSE AND SAVE RIGHT NOW IS LUCY! IT'S IMPOSSIBLE TO TAKE YOU, TOO.
BUT THANK YOU........... AT THE VERY LEAST, JUST NOW YOU PREVENTED THE PRESIDENT FROM DEALING THE FINISHING BLOW TO JOHNNY!

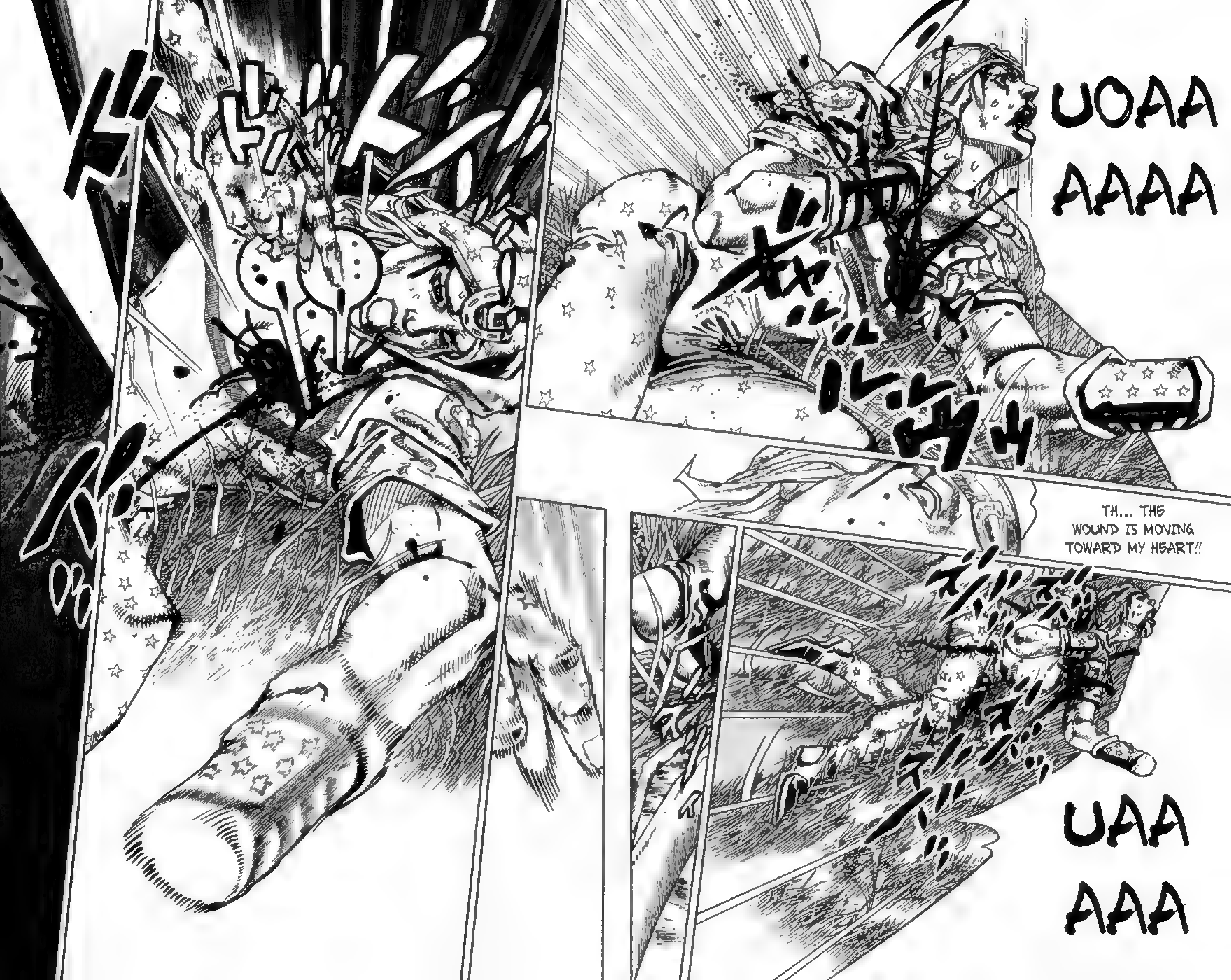
……
LAND

GAHAH!

ARE YOU TRYING BE A HERO?
OR ACT AS THAT GIRL'S FATHER? ...GIVE UP... A PAPER-THIN 'WILL' SUCH AS YOURS IS MEANINGLESS.
YOU ARE A HINDRANCE TO THE FUTURE 'HAPPINESS' OF THIS COUNTRY.
JUST NOW... A 'GODDESS' WAS BEING BORN... THIS HUMAN WORLD'S 'PEACE' AND 'HAPPINESS'...
WILL NOT BE ABATED BY THE LIKES OF CONCEITED FOOLS HOLDING EACH OTHERS' HANDS AS EQUALS.
A 'STRONG COUNTRY' BEGINS WITH TAKING THE NAPKIN.
AND FOR THAT END, THE 'GODDESS' IS NECESSARY... THAT 'CORPSE'S POWER' IS NECESSARY FOR PEACE... AND YOU ARE HINDERING THAT.


UGUAAAAH
BUT I WILL RELEASE THESE FINGERS AND FORGIVE YOU.........
BEFORE SHE GOT ON THE TRAIN... I MADE A VOW TO LUCY THAT I ABSOLUTELY WOULD NOT KILL YOU... AS THAT WAS HER WISH...........
I WILL RELEASE THESE FINGERS, AND LATER GET YOU MEDICAL TREATMENT FOR THOSE WOUNDS, TOO.
GUH
DAMN, BUT I CANNOT DENY IT!!
KRRK
YOUR ACTIONS JUST NOW REALLY DID IRRITATE ME.
SO I'LL MAKE SURE YOU TASTE PLENTY OF PAIN.
VOOOAAAAAAAAAAH
SPEAKING OF WHICH, THAT GYRO ZEPPELI......
THOUGH HE'S TRYING TO ESCAPE... HE IS ALREADY BEING DRIVEN INTO A CORNER.
FOR A WHILE NOW, THE 'OCEAN' HAS BEEN COMING CLOSER.

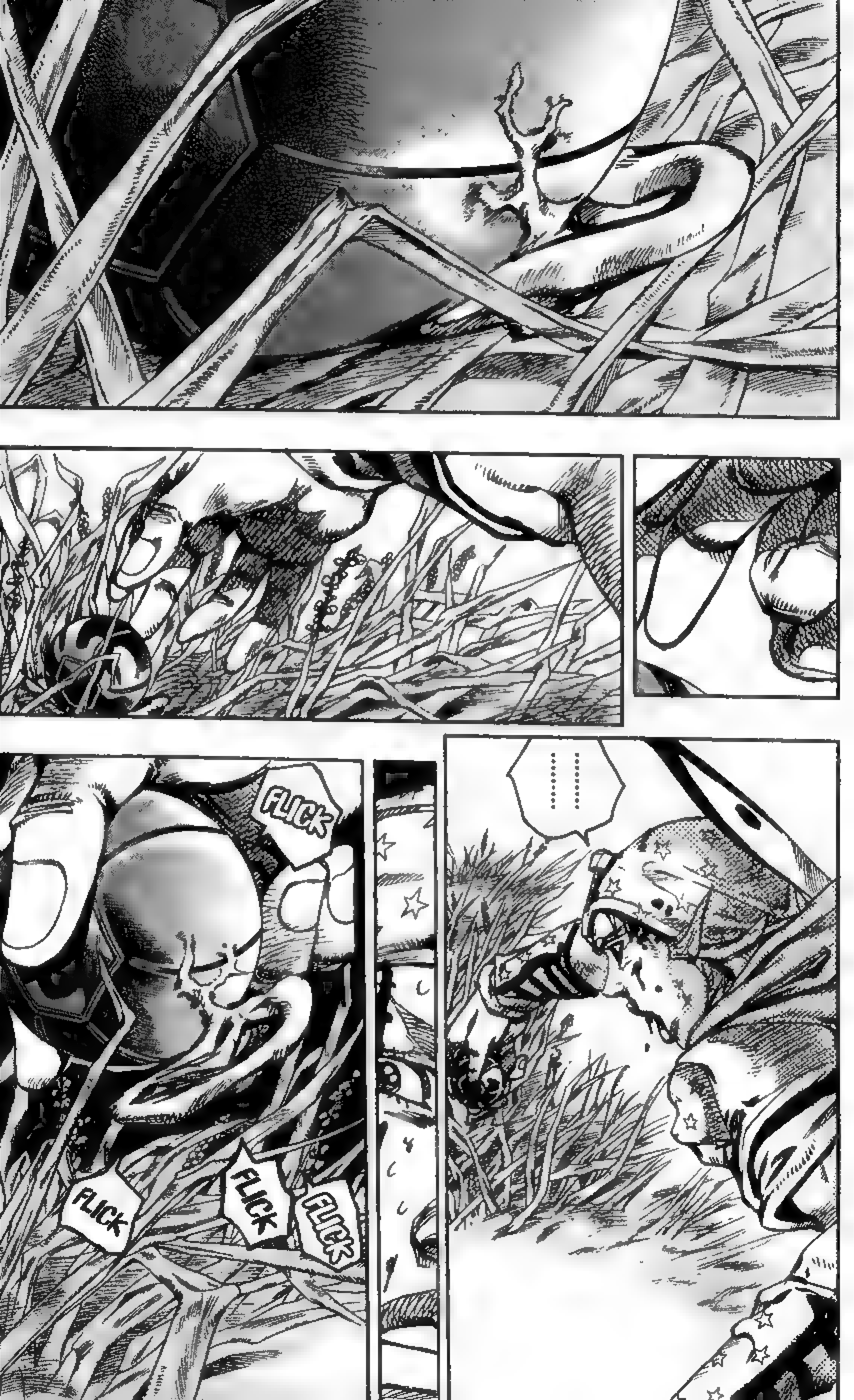
IT'S NOT JUST THE 'TREES' AND THE 'MOUNTAINS' ...
RIGHT NOW, IN THE DIRECTION OF THE 'GODDESS'...
THE 'ATLANTIC OCEAN' IS ALREADY ENCLOSING.
UH...
UUH...
UH
UOOA AAOO OO
...IT'S RISING AGAIN!
TH... THE MOUTH OF THE WOUND


UOAA AAAA
TH... THE WOUND IS MOVING TOWARD MY HEART!!
UAA AAA

UAAH
UAAH
AAA
UAH
AAAH

AAAAH
HAA HAA HAA
HAA HAA
HAAAH HAAAH
HAAAH HAAAH
MY... MY HAND.
G... GYRO!
ドドド
ド
ドド

GYRO.
YOU SAVED ME WITH A 'STEEL BALL'... BUT YOU LEFT THE STEEL BALL HERE.
RIGHT NOW GYRO ONLY HAS 'ONE SHOT' ON HIM.


FLICK
FLICK
FLICK
FLICK
……

FLICK
FLICK
FLICK
FLICK
A... AGAIN.
WHAT... STUCK TO THE STEEL BALL?!
......
WHAT... THIS... IS... ...
THIS IS...!!
AN 'EAR' ..

WHOOSH

FLICK
FLICK
IT... HAPPENED AGAIN! THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'!
GYRO'S STEEL BALL WAS HALFWAY SUCCESSFUL!! THIS IS THE 'GOLDEN ROTATION' DONE USING A HORSE'S POWER!!
WITHOUT A DOUBT, 'SOMETHING' IS GOING ON!
BUT WHAT THE HELL IS IT!?
'SOMETHING' THAT HAS MADE THE PRESIDENT STILL NOT NOTICE WHAT HAPPENED TO 'HIS OWN EAR'!
SOMETHING!!

'D4C —LOVE TRAIN—'
A PHENOMENON
OCCURRING THROUGH
LUCY'S BODY CAUSED BY
ALL 9 PIECES OF THE
CORPSE BEING
COLLECTED.

THE PHENOMENON
BLOWS UNFORTUNATE THINGS
AWAY TO OTHER PLACES ON THE
EARTH, LEAVING ONLY GOOD
FORTUNE BEHIND.
IT ACTS AS AN ALLY TO 'D4C',
STAND OF THE PRESIDENT WHO
OWNS IT, AS AN ABILITY.

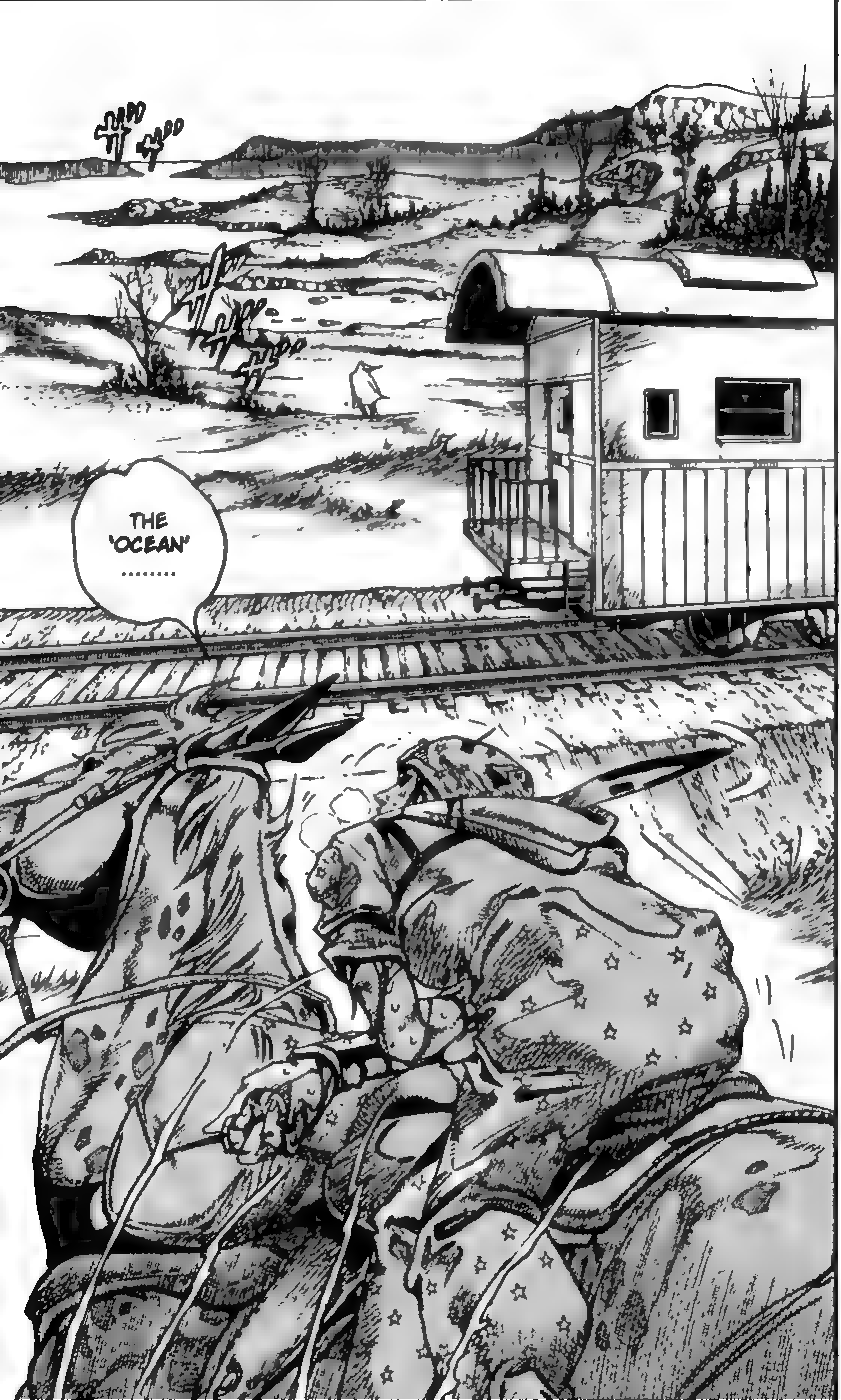
EVERYONE, TRY HARDER,

# WAKERU-KUN!

WAKERU-KUN IS SENDAI'S MASCOT THAT ENCOURAGES THE RESIDENTS OF SENDAI TO SORT THEIR GARBAGE NEATLY (HIS NEATLY PARTED HAIR IS A METAPHOR FOR NEATLY PARTED GARBAGE).

#82
D4C PART 15
-LOVE TRAIN-

HAA
HAAA
HAA
HAA
HAAH
HAA
HAA


THE 'OCEAN' ........

IT'S COMING CLOSER ..........
THE ATLANTIC OCEAN ..........

ドザザザザ
KU...
UH
HAA
UH... HAA... HAA...
THE OCEAN IS COMING CLOSER, BUT STOPPING AROUND LUCY.

ドドドドド
LUCY'S BREATHING AND...
THE WAY HER SKIN FEELS HAS .........
GONE MORE BACK TO NORMAL COMPARED TO BEFORE.

STP
STP
SWISH
THE FURTHER AWAY SHE GETS FROM HIM ............
THAT MEANS THERE'S A CHANCE OF SAVING LUCY.
BUT AS THINGS STAND .........
SWISH
I CAN'T THINK OF ANY WAY TO ESCAPE THAT VALENTINE COMPLETELY ...

FOR A WHILE NOW, ALONG WITH THE GROUND, THE 'OCEAN' HAS BEEN GRADUALLY MOVING TOWARDS 'LUCY'S' LOCATION.
I DON'T KNOW WHERE THIS APPROACHING GROUND AND SEA WATER ARE GOING, BUT.........
I KNOW THAT EVENTUALLY THEY WILL SURROUND 'LUCY'.

THAT'S WHY.........
THE REASON I MADE THE HORSE RUN TOWARDS THE 'OCEAN' WAS ............
.........A CHALLENGE .........
STEP
STEP
AT THIS PLACE AT THE WATER'S EDGE, I'LL SETTLE THINGS WITH 'VALENTINE'!

THAT OUR SURROUNDINGS WILL BE THE 'OCEAN' IS...
JUST PERHAPS ......... TO MY ADVANTAGE.
WHAT EXACTLY IS THE 'WORLD ON THE OTHER SIDE' IN THE PRESIDENT'S ABILITY? ...I DON'T HAVE A CLUE.
.........BUT I KNOW ONE THING. IF HE ATTACKS TO TRY TO KILL ME
HE'LL HAVE TO MOVE HIS ARM 'OUTSIDE THE LIGHT'.
I'M SURE THAT IF HE DOESN'T SEND HIS STAND OUTSIDE THE LIGHT TO 'THIS SIDE', HE CAN'T ATTACK ME.
......IN THAT CASE, IF THE 'LOCATION' WE'RE FIGHTING IN IS A PLACE LIKE THE 'OCEAN' WE'RE IN NOW...
EVEN IF HE SUDDENLY HIDES HIMSELF IN THE 'WORLD ON THE OTHER SIDE'...
WHEN HE RETURNS TO THIS SIDE, IF HE'S IN THE OCEAN, HE'LL DROWN...
STEP
STEP
EVEN IF THE KINDS OF THE TERRAIN IN THE WORLD ON THE OTHER SIDE
ARE INFINITE
AND EVEN IF THEY'RE 'INSIDE THE LIGHT'
IT'S CERTAIN THAT IF HE RETURNS TO THIS 'LOCATION' AND HE'S IN THE OCEAN, HE'LL DROWN BECAUSE HE'LL BE SURROUNDED BY WATER.

AND EVEN IF HE DOES DISAPPEAR TO THE OTHER SIDE, IN TERMS OF AREA HE CAN COME BACK TO
HERE—IT'S VERY NARROW.
WHEN HE REAPPEARS, IN ORDER TO ATTACK ME
IT'LL HAVE TO BE SOMEWHERE IN THE NARROW RANGE OF THE GROUND.
AND THAT MOMENT THE CHANCE I'LL HAVE TO NAIL HIM WITH A 'STEEL BALL'.........
WILL BE 'HUGE'!
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP
I'VE HAD ONE QUESTION FOR YOU, GYRO ZEPPELI ...
FOR A LONG TIME NOW ..........

ABOUT WHY YOU ARE RIDING A 'HORSE'
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP

SWISH...
THE CLOSER I GET TO THE MIDDLE OF LUCY'S LINE OF 'LIGHT'...
'OR TO BE EXACT, THE DEEPER INTO IT I GET' .........
STEP
STEP
STEP
THE MORE INVINCIBLE 'D4C' GETS, THOUGH YOU SHOULD KNOW THAT.
IN THIS SITUATION... YOU SHOULD BE TRYING TO RUN AWAY WITH YOUR TAIL BETWEEN YOUR LEGS...
EVEN NOW.
STEP...
LEAVE 'LUCY' THERE, AND THEN IMMEDIATELY RUN FAR AWAY...
YOU ARE CURRENTLY SURROUNDED BY 'OCEAN'...
YET WHY DO YOU NOT DESPERATELY TRY TO RUN AWAY?

YOU CAME HERE ON HORSEBACK TO MEET MY INVINCIBLE 'D4C'.
DOES THAT MEAN THAT THROWING THOSE 'STEEL BALLS', THAT WON'T HIT, OVER AND OVER AGAIN HAS 'SOME' MEANING?
SWISH
THAT ALONE IS MY... QUESTION...
'SOMETHING' ......
THOUGH IT HAS BEEN CLUMSY FOR A WHILE, 'WHAT' ARE YOU TRYING TO DO?
STEP
BUT GYRO ZEPPELI...
IS A DIFFERENT TYPE OF MAN FROM STEPHEN STEEL, WHO JUST CHASES AFTER DREAMS AND IDEALS, PRETENDING TO BE A FATHER IN ORDER TO PURSUE HAPPINESS.
HE'S A MAN WHO ACTS WITH SOME THEORETICAL MEANING. HE HAS FIRM SELF-CONFIDENCE CAUSED BY HIS UPBRINGING AND TRAINING.
STEP
STEP

'INSIDE THE LIGHT' ..........

HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH
HAA HAA
GYRO ..........!!
A 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE' POWER...... THAT NO ONE HAS EVER SEEN BEFORE
DEFINITELY EXISTS......
HAAAH HAAAH HAAAH
UH... UUH
I'M SURE IT...
EXISTS....!!

RUSTLE
RUSTLE
......
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
......
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
?

UH.
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
........
!!
WHAT ..........!?
WHAT IS THIS.......!?
......!?

HAH! BACK THEN!!?
COULD IT BE....!!?

TH... THIS IS...!!
......!!?
SOMETHING LIKE THIS... WHAT..........'WHAT HAS'..........!? MY.......!!!

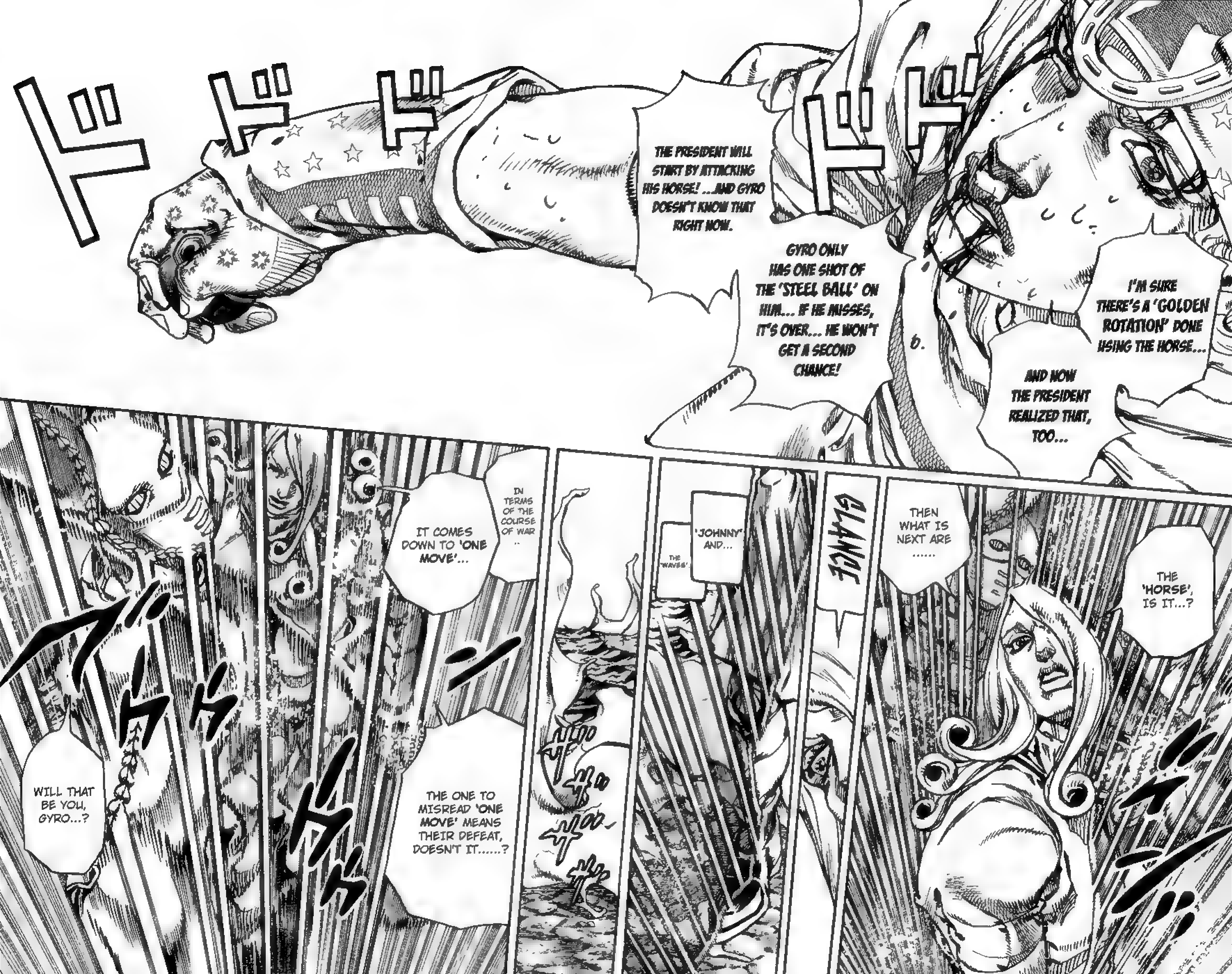
HAAAH HAAA
......... HIS 'EAR'......
HAAAH HAA
HAAH
(GYRO DOESN'T KNOW RIGHT NOW, BUT) THE PRESIDENT'S 'LEFT EAR' FELL OFF...
SURELY, BY THE EFFECTS OF THE YET UNKNOWN 'GOLDEN ROTATION' .................
IT HAS SOME KIND OF POWER THAT MADE THE PRESIDENT NOT FEEL ANY PAIN AND NOT EVEN NOTICE IT FELL OFF!
BUT GYRO! THE NEXT STEEL BALL ATTACK IS GOING TO BE COMPLETELY DIFFERENT.......
JUST NOW!
THE PRESIDENT NOTICED THE DAMAGE TO HIS 'EAR'...
IF HE KNOWS HIMSELF THAT HIS 'EAR' FELL OFF...

NEXT TIME WILL BE DIFFERENT!
BUT NOW... THAT THE DAMAGE TO HIS 'EAR'............... (I'M SURE HE'S NOTICED) ................ WAS FROM 'ROTATION USING THE HORSE'! (IF HE HAS ANY SUSPICION!)
BEFORE, THE PRESIDENT DIDN'T KNOW 'ANYTHING' ABOUT THE 'ROTATION' AND LET HIM THROW THE 'STEEL BALL'.
HAA HAA HAA AAA
HAA HAAA HAAA
ドド
THE DISTANCE TO RUN TO THE PRESIDENT IS PLENTY... AND HAVING ONE 'STEEL BALL' HERE IS PLENTY!!
ドド
ドドド

THE 'HORSE', HUH...?
THE HORSE'S POWER...? IS THAT IT...? GYRO ZEPPELI?
THE FORM OF THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE' HAS BEEN MADE.
ONE 'STEEL BALL' IS NOT ENOUGH!
HE KNOWS! THERE'S NO WAY HE'S GONNA LET YOU THROW A 'STEEL BALL' AT HIM AGAIN!!
FIRST HE'LL GO FOR KILLING YOUR 'HORSE'!

# #83
# BALL BREAKER PART ①

HAAH
ドドドド
KICK
HAAAAH HAAAH
ドドドド
MY 'EAR'........
GLANCE
JOHNNY ...
TELL GYRO..... ...........
I HAVE TO...... .....
ドドドド


ドドドド
I'M SURE THERE'S A 'GOLDEN ROTATION' DONE USING THE HORSE...
AND NOW THE PRESIDENT REALIZED THAT, TOO...
GYRO ONLY HAS ONE SHOT OF THE 'STEEL BALL' ON HIM... IF HE MISSES, IT'S OVER... HE WON'T GET A SECOND CHANCE!
THE PRESIDENT WILL START BY ATTACKING HIS HORSE! ...AND GYRO DOESN'T KNOW THAT RIGHT NOW.
THEN WHAT IS NEXT ARE ......
THE 'HORSE', IS IT...?
GLANCE
'JOHNNY' AND...
THE 'WAVES'
IN TERMS OF THE COURSE OF WAR ..
IT COMES DOWN TO 'ONE MOVE'...
THE ONE TO MISREAD 'ONE MOVE' MEANS THEIR DEFEAT, DOESN'T IT......?
WILL THAT BE YOU, GYRO...?

ドゴオオオ
IT WILL, HOWEVER, NOT BE ME............

バシャア

ドカラッ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ
ドャラッ

......
WHEN THE PRESIDENT GETS BETWEEN 'SOMETHING' AND 'SOMETHING ELSE', HE CAN GO TO NEIGHBORING DIMENSIONS!
JUST NOW HE WENT IN BETWEEN THE 'GROUND' AND THE 'OCEAN WATER'......!!
BUT IN THE 'NEIGHBORING WORLD', THIS LAND! THIS PLACE IS...!!!

SO HE CAN'T HIDE, LYING DORMANT FOREVER......... HE'S GOING TO ATTACK FROM SOMEWHERE UNDER THIS SEA WATER.......!!
AS THINGS STAND, WHEN THE PRESIDENT 'COMES BACK', HE WILL DEFINITELY DROWN.
SOON! HE HAS TO!!
ド
GYROOO!! THE PRESIDENT ALREADY 'KNOOOOOWS'!

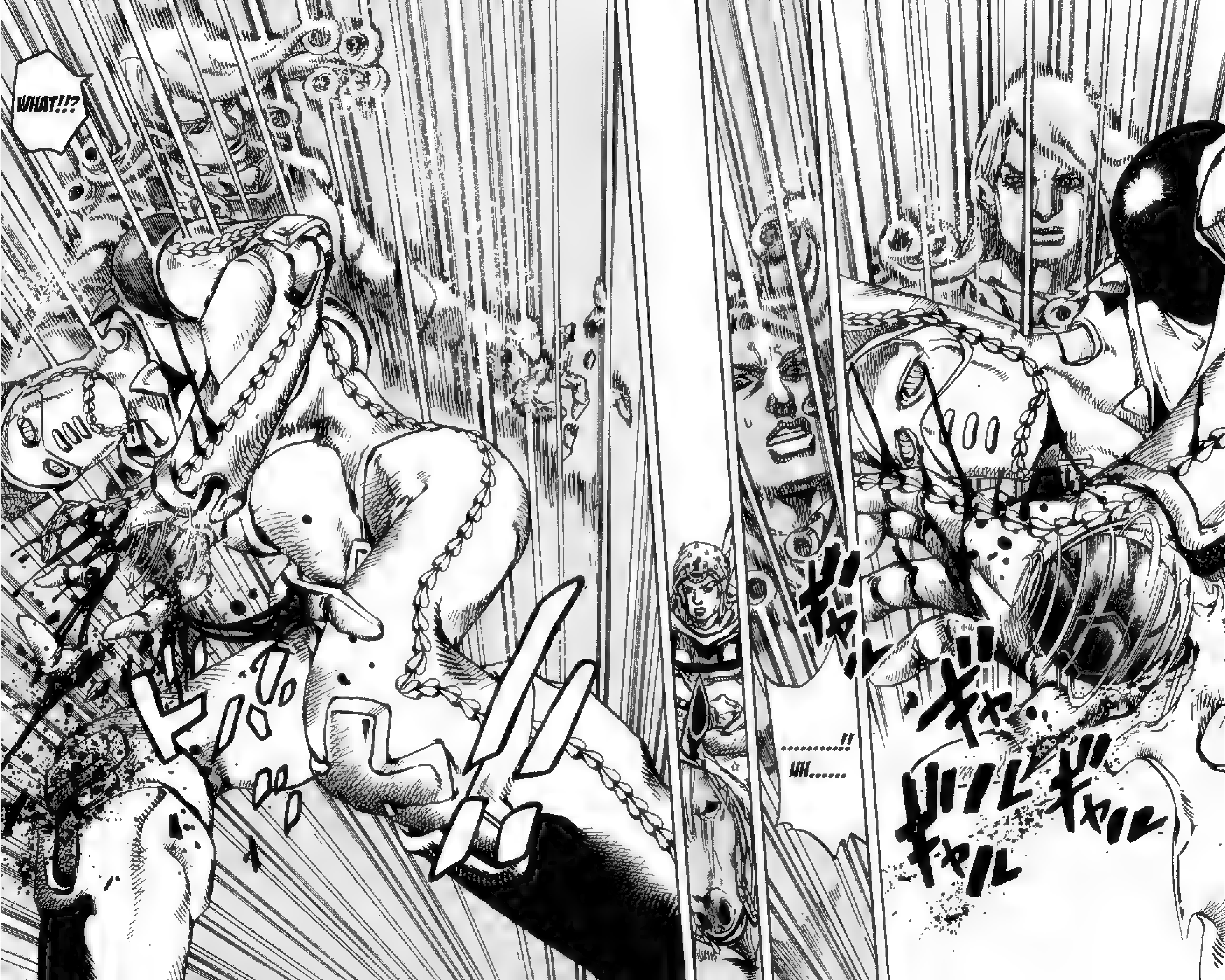
HE KNOWS ABOUT THE 'ROTATIOOON'!!
!

BECAUSE THE PRESIDENT HAS GONE TO 'SEVERAL DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS' ..........
THERE ARE 'MORE OF HIM' THERE! ..........WHICH IS HE!?
THE ONE ON THE RIGHT!? OR THE LEFT!?
WHICH DO I BEAT!?
WHICH IS THE 'REAL ONE'? I'VE GOT TO MAKE A DECISION SOON ..............
FIRST, HE'S GOING TO ATTACK MY 'HORSE'... ..............

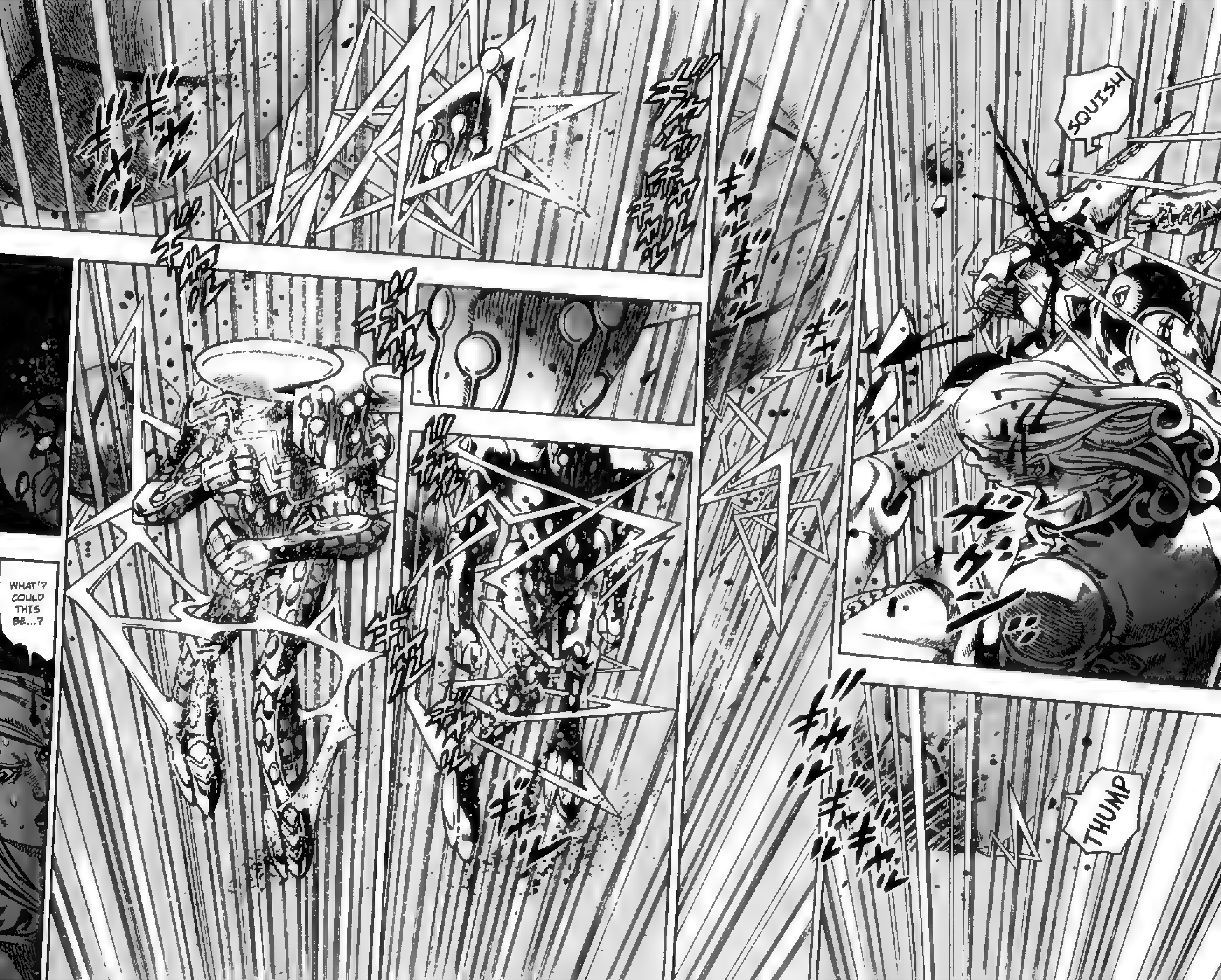
HIS 'EAR'! GYRO! THE REAL PRESIDENT TOOK DAMAGE TO HIS 'EAR' BEFORE!!
'EAR'!!
HAAH
HAAH
..............
......'EAR'.

KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
THE 'EAR'
IT'S HIM!!
THE ONE ON THE 'LEFT'......

THE 'REAL ONE' IS THE ONE WITH THE STAND NEXT TO HIM...
NO... 'THAT'S WRONG'!
KRCK
KRCK
THE 'REAL ONE' DOESN'T NECESSARILY HAVE TO BE THE ONE WITH THE UNIQUE 'EAR'. HE CAN SWITCH WITH ONES IN THE 'OTHER DIMENSIONS'
KRK
KRK
BUT THERE'S ONLY 'ONE' STAND... HE PURPOSELY GOT JOHNNY TO 'YELL'... THE PRESIDENT HAS ALREADY CALCULATED THAT MUCH.
KRK
THE FISSURE OF LIGHT ON LUCY'S SKIN IS POINTING TOWARD THAT DIRECTION
THERE'S ONE MORE OF HIM!!
BEHIND ME...


WHAT!!?
........!!
UH......
ギャル
ギャ
ドバァ
ギャル ギャル
ギャル

AAGUAAH ..........
UAAH
'D4C'!! HIDE YOUR BODY INSIDE THE LIGHT!!
BUH!!


SQUISH
THUMP
WHAT'? COULD THIS BE...?

THERE COULD POSSIBLY EXIST IN THIS WORLD, AN 'ENERGY' THAT CAN CROSS OVER 'DIMENSIONAL WALLS' IS...........
THE IDEA THAT OUTSIDE MY 'D4C',
IMPOSSIBLE......... THIS IS......... 'ENERGY'!?

CRUMBLE
WHAT...!? WHAT ON EARTH...
IS... THIS...... ...........?
THIS IS NO ORDINARY 'ENERGY' ...... ..
CROSSING OVER 'DIMENSIONAL WALLS', WHAT ON EARTH HAS 'SEEPED' THROUGH......?
WHAT IS THIS STEEL BALL'S 'ROTATION'!?

YOU DID IT! THE 'GOLDEN ROTATION'! IT EXPLODED!!
......
YOU...

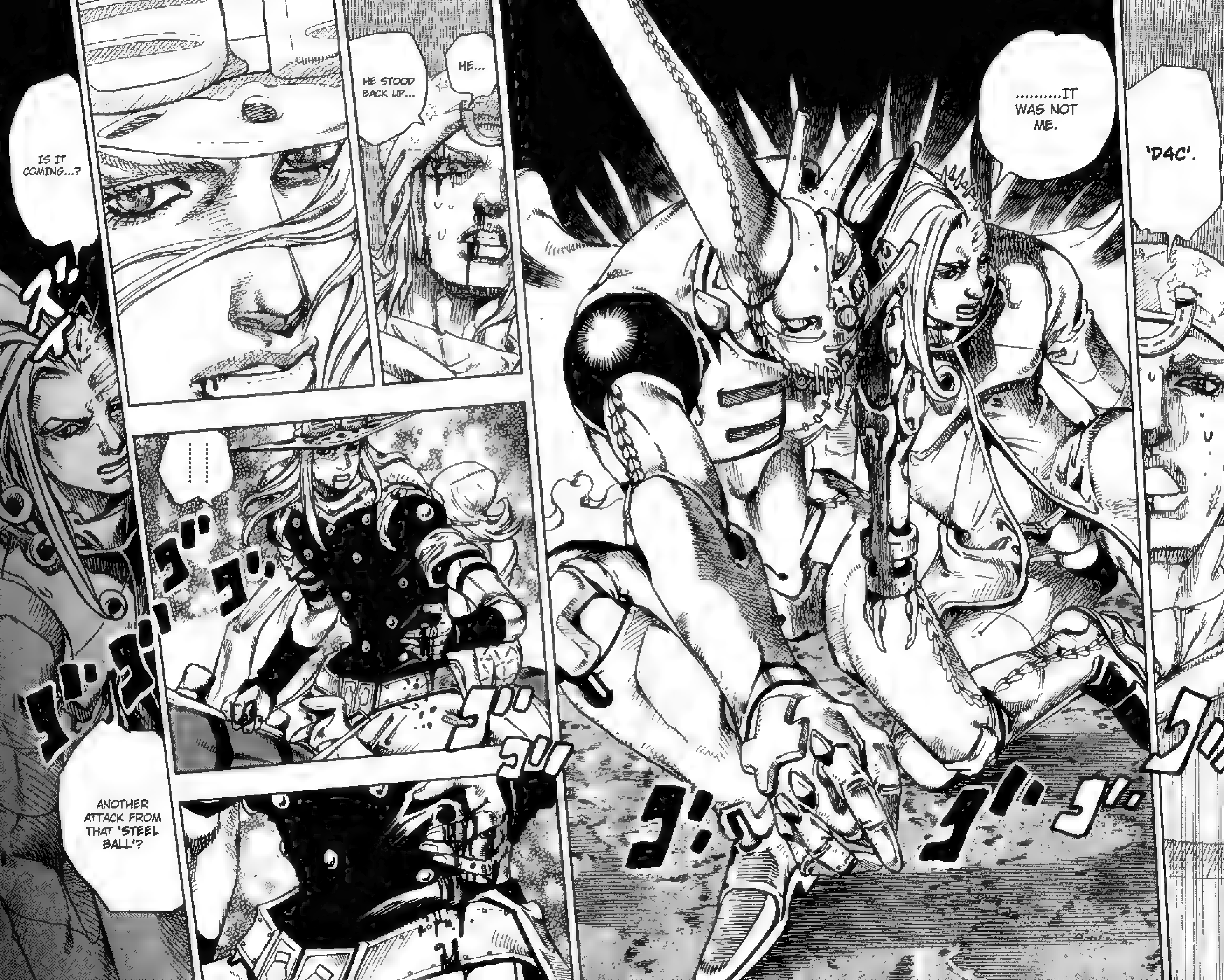
BANG
'THESE TWO'!

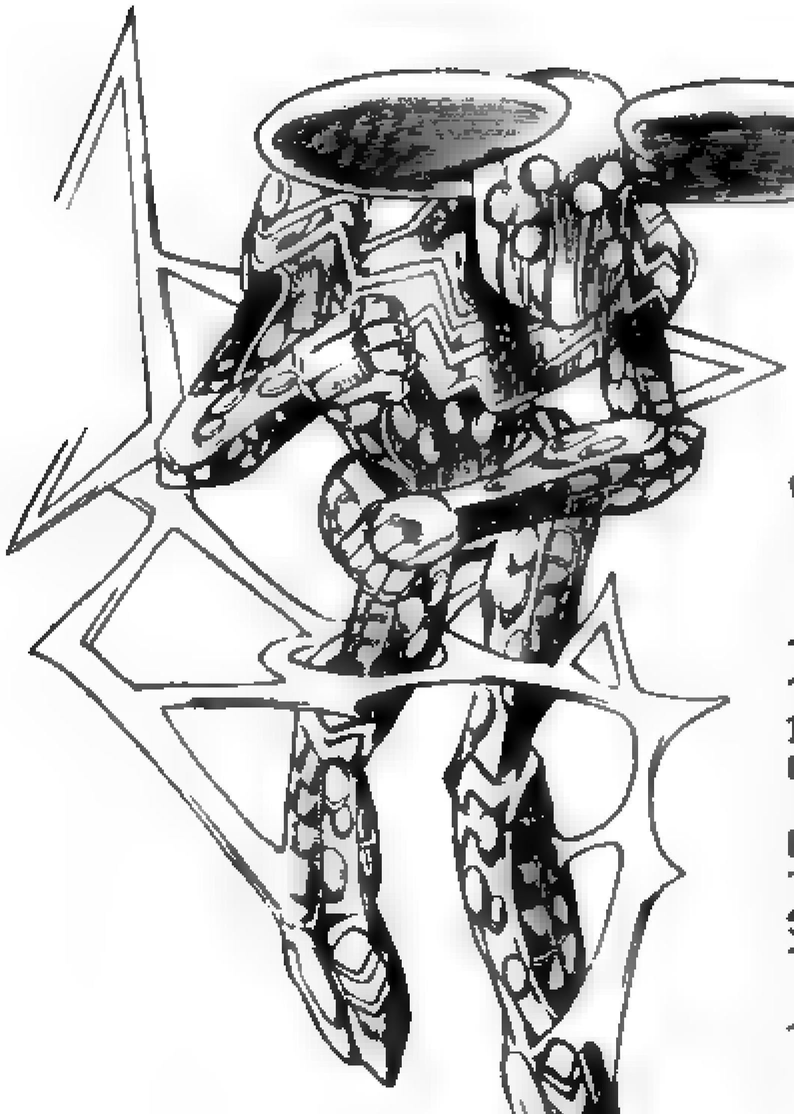
CATCH
YANK
TWIRL
BLAM

UGH... ......!!
Y... YOU WON. IT... IT'S OVER!

WE WON!!
......

'ONE MOVE' .........
THE ONE WHO MISREAD 'ONE MOVE'..........
......
WHICH OF US WAS IT......?


..........IT WAS NOT ME.
'D4C'.
HE...
HE STOOD BACK UP...
IS IT COMING...?
......
ANOTHER ATTACK FROM THAT 'STEEL BALL'?



## "BALL BREAKER"

A TECHNIQUE THAT BY USE OF THE HORSE RUNNING IN THE FORM OF THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE, A ROTATION INCREASED TO INFINITY BY A FURTHER GOLDEN RECTANGLE.

THE ZEPPELI FAMILY HAD RESEARCHED HUNDREDS OF YEARS AGO THE SAKE OF KNIGHTS. AND IT IS A SEALED THROWING TECHNIQUE OF THE 'STEEL BALLS'.

IT SEEMS TO BE ABLE TO PIERCE THROUGH DIMENSIONAL WALLS.

Jojo Project
Presents
Steel Ball Run
Volume 21, Chapter 4
Translation: Kewl0210 — Proofreading: Anonymous
Raws: Shizuka Joestar — Cleaning - Ryoplame — Typesetting: Otafreek

#84
BALL BREAKER PART 2
ギ
ギ
ギギギ
ギ

KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
KRCK
......
......HE'S AGING......
......
BUT... HE STILL GOT UP...
JUST HALF OF HIM......
'VALENTINE'
......

ドザザ
ドカラッ
ドカラッドカラッ
ドカラッドカラッ

VALENTINE ...... ......
AND GYRO.
AGAIN... ONE MORE ATTACK ..........
JUST ONE MORE ATTACK ............
IS GOING TO HIT....... ......

STEP
STEP
STEP
THAT WOUND...
!!!!
!!!!

'BAD THINGS' WILL GET BLOWN AWAY SOMEWHERE.
YOU CAN HAVE SOMEONE SOMEWHERE ELSE IN THIS WORLD TAKE THAT MISFOR-TUNE FOR YOU.
IT'S HEADING TOWARD YOUR HEART...
BEFORE THE WOUND REACHES YOUR HEART,
YOU'LL NEED TO GO INSIDE THE 'FISSURE OF LIGHT' GOING OUT OF LUCY...
NEN NEN.
JOHNNY! 'LESSON 5'! .....YEAH... I'M SURE THAT'S WHAT WE'RE ON NOW.
THE NEXT ONE'S 'LESSON 5'!
.........
WHAT?
EH?

'THE SHORTEST ROUTE WAS A DETOUR.' 'IT WAS THE DETOUR THAT WAS OUR SHORTEST PATH.'
I ALWAYS TRIED TO TAKE THE FASTEST SHORTCUT IN THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE, BUT
IT'S BEEN TRUE THE WHOLE TIME WE'VE BEEN CROSSING THIS CONTINENT.
AND BECAUSE OF YOU, WE WERE ABLE TO TAKE THAT ROUTE.
WHAT...?
......
WHAT'S HE SAYING ALL OF A SUDDEN?
'LESSON 5'? WHAT'S HE SAYING THAT AT A TIME LIKE THIS?

ドカラッ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ
ドカラッ
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP

ドカラ
ドカラドカラッ
ドカラ
ドバ

WHAM!!

IS THIS A STAND...? 'WHAT INCREDIBLE ENERGY...'
A FEARSOME PHENOMENON... THE 'INFINITE ROTATION OF THE STEEL BALL'!!
IS THIS A MAXIM OF NATURE............... OR A FORGOTTEN PIECE OF HUMAN WISDOM......?
TO THINK THAT A 'TECHNIQUE' EXISTS THAT CAN CROSS OVER WALLS OF OTHER DIMENSIONS......
BUT THIS IS GYRO'S LIMIT!

YOU SHOULD HAVE FELT IT YOURSELF FOR SOME TIME NOW...
THE MOMENT YOU 'FELT IN YOUR HAND' THIS 'STEEL BALL' BEFORE MY EYES.
......?
......

LEAAP
FEARSOME
TAP
TAP

QUITE FEARSOME ..............
BUT... IT SEEMS THAT I, VALENTINE, AM THE ONE WHO HAS MADE AN ALLY OF THE GODDESS.
AS I THOUGHT, THE ONE WHO WAS... 'ONE MOVE' AHEAD ..........
TAP
KRK
THAT FISSURE COMING FROM LUCY THAT STARTS WALLS TO ANOTHER DIMENSION .......
TAP

THAT 'STEEL BALL' YOU PITCHED TOWARD ME ..........
BEFORE,
IT PASSED EXACTLY OVER THAT LIGHT FISSURE'S LINE.
...EARLIER, USING THAT 'FISSURE OF LIGHT' OF LUCY'S YOU READ WHAT DIRECTION I WAS HIDING IN, AND KNEW THE LOCATION OF MY 'D4C'S' ATTACK, BUT...
AND ONLY SENDS AWAY THINGS OF 'MISFORTUNE' TO OTHER LANDS ON THIS EARTH.
IT 'DRAWS IN' EVEN THE GRASS AND TREES AND EARTH AND COASTS HERE......
KRK
KRK
KRK

I WILL ACKNOWLEDGE THIS HONESTLY. THAT WAS A COINCIDENCE ........
....I COULDN'T CALCULATE THAT FAR IN.
'D4C' WOULD HAVE BEEN DEFEATED BY THAT PERFECT ROTATIONAL ENERGY......
BECAUSE IF THE STEEL BALL YOU THREW HADN'T PASSED OVER LUCY'S LIGHT LINE IN MID-AIR,
AS I THOUGHT, THE GODDESS......
SHE DOES EXIST... A 'GODDESS' THAT BECAME MY ALLY.
JUST BEFORE THAT STEEL BALL THAT HAD PASSED THROUGH THE LIGHT FISSURE COLLIDED WITH D4C...
JUST A SMALL PART OF IT WAS SCRAPED OFF,
WHICH SHOT OFF SOMEWHERE IN THIS WORLD...

......
WAS NOT A PERFECT 'ROTATION' ANYMORE!
MEANING THAT 'ROTATION' USING THE POWER OF THE HORSE
THE STEEL BALL, HAVING PART OF IT SCRAPED OFF FROM THE LIGHT FISSURE, WAS AN 'ELLIPSE'!
IT WAS NOT A 'TRUE SPHERE', IT WAS THE ROTATION OF AN 'ELLIPTICAL SPHERE' WHEN IT COLLIDED!

ドドドド
ギャルギャルギャル
AN 'ELLIPTICAL SPHERE'! IMPERFECT!
WHAT YOU THREW WAS AN 'ELLIPTICAL SPHERE'.
GYRO......... YOU.........
(IN ORDER TO SAVE LUCY) HAD LUCY 'RIDE THE HORSE SO' YOU COULD DRIVE D4C AND I TO THE BRINK OF DEFEAT.
BUT IT WAS 'BECAUSE YOU HAD LUCY RIDE THE HORSE' THAT YOU WERE COMPLETELY DEFEATED.
ドドドド
......

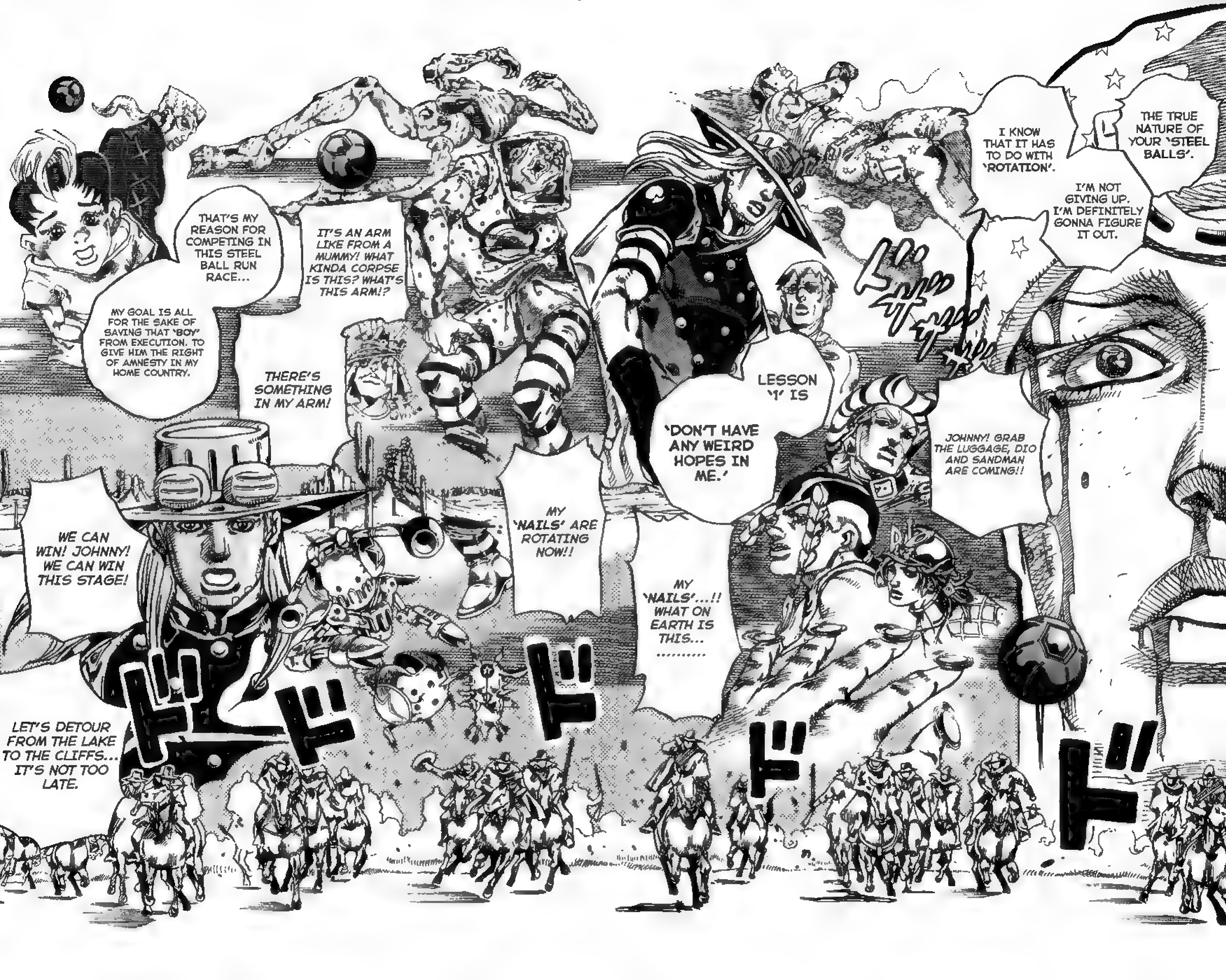
......
WHAT? WHAT......
ON EARTH......
.......... WHAT DOES HE MEAN? ......
......

YOU MUST HAVE REALIZED IT THE MOMENT YOU TOOK THAT SPHERE IN YOUR HAND.
IF THAT ROTATION HAD BEEN WITH A 'TRUE SPHERE'...
THEN D4C'S 'DIMENSIONAL WALLS' WOULD... PERHAPS HAVE BEEN COMPLETELY DESTROYED BY YOUR 'STEEL BALL'.
I WON.

ドギアァァァッ

WHAT?
CHTTR
CHTTR
...WHAT THE HELL IS GOING ON?

HAAAAH
HAAAH
CHTTR
CHTTR
CHTTR
CHTTR
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
YOU WANT THERE TO BE A NEW TOP CAUSE OF DEATH?
HEY, YOU!! BE CAREFUL.
Y'SEE, NUMBER ONE IS AN INFECTIOUS DISEASE TRANSMITTED THROUGH MOSQUITOS. AND SECOND IS GETTING KICKED TO DEATH BY A HORSE.


THE TRUE NATURE OF YOUR 'STEEL BALLS'.
I KNOW THAT IT HAS TO DO WITH 'ROTATION'.
I'M NOT GIVING UP. I'M DEFINITELY GONNA FIGURE IT OUT.
JOHNNY! GRAB THE LUGGAGE, DIO AND SANDMAN ARE COMING!!
LESSON '1' IS
'DON'T HAVE ANY WEIRD HOPES IN ME.'
MY 'NAILS'...!! WHAT ON EARTH IS THIS..........
MY 'NAILS' ARE ROTATING NOW!!
IT'S AN ARM LIKE FROM A MUMMY! WHAT KINDA CORPSE IS THIS? WHAT'S THIS ARM!?
THERE'S SOMETHING IN MY ARM!
THAT'S MY REASON FOR COMPETING IN THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE...
MY GOAL IS ALL FOR THE SAKE OF SAVING THAT 'BOY' FROM EXECUTION. TO GIVE HIM THE RIGHT OF AMNESTY IN MY HOME COUNTRY.
WE CAN WIN! JOHNNY! WE CAN WIN THIS STAGE!
LET'S DETOUR FROM THE LAKE TO THE CLIFFS... IT'S NOT TOO LATE.

THERE SHOULD BE A 'ROTATION' THAT CONTINUES INFINITELY...
HEY...... GYRO.
YOU SAID BEFORE THAT WOMEN CAN'T 'RIDE ON YOUR SADDLE', BUT...
THE MIRACLE OF THE GOLDEN RECTANGLE ...IN THERE
NO WAY .......... MY TEDDY BEAR..........
MY TEDDY BEAR'S... ARM CAME OFF...
GOT IT...? WHATEVER YOU WANT TO DO HAS NOTHING TO DO WITH ME.

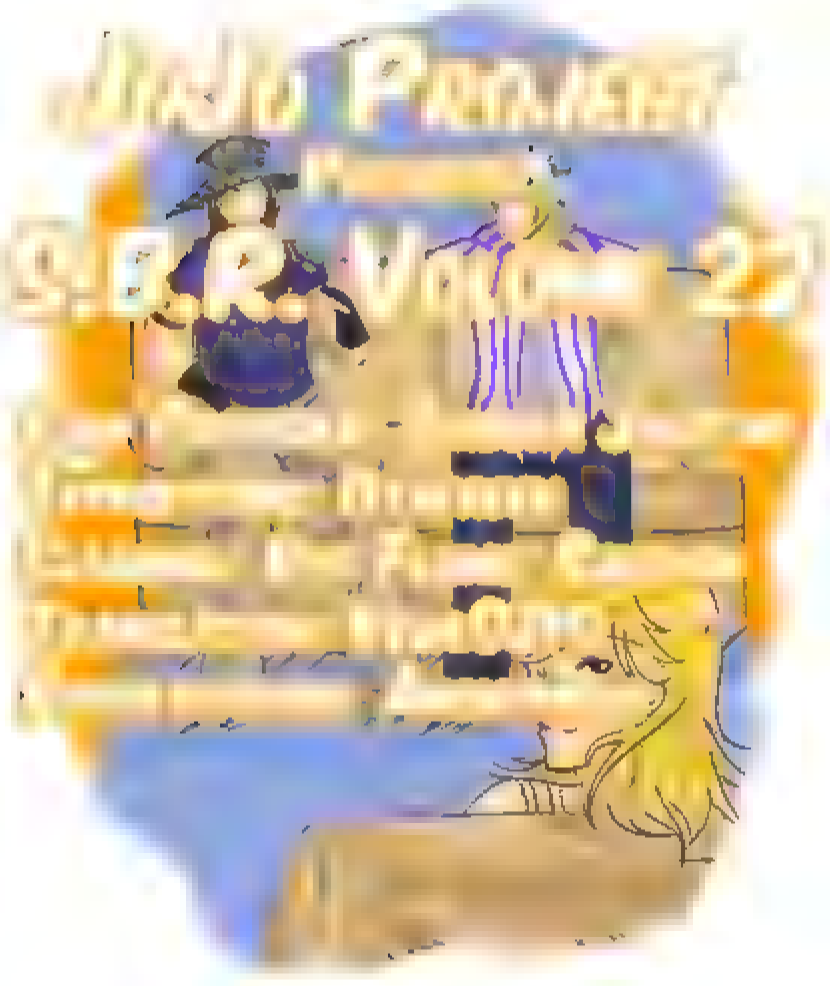
......
WHY CAN'T WOMEN RIDE WITH YOU?.......... A SUPERSTITION?
WHAT'S THE REASON?
SO JUST TRY AND HAVE SOME OTHER WOMAN RIDE ON IT! THE 'GODDESS' WILL GET JEALOUS...
AND YOU'LL LOSE SIGHT OF VICTORY.
IF I TRY LOOKING THIS WAY.......... I CAN'T SEE HER AT A---LLL ON TOP OF YOUR SADDLE RIGHT NOW, BUT...
THE 'GODDESS OF VICTORY' IS ALREADY RIDING ON MY SADDLE.
IF THAT'S WHAT YOU THINK, GO WITH IT...... THEN LOGICALLY, YOU'RE STILL ALL RIGHT ALONE.
THEN I WONDER IF LUCY HERE IS A GODDESS.
IS IT THAT SORTA THING?
OH... LOOK! THE WATER IN THE RIVER LOOKS LIKE IT'S RECEDING
HOW 'BOUT WE CROSS OVER THERE, THEN?

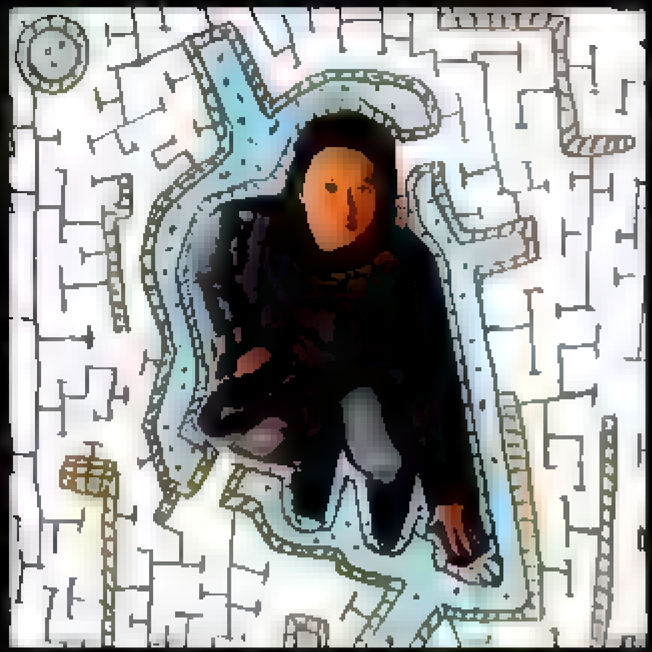
ULTIMATELY, WHEN A TENNIS BALL THAT BOUNCES OFF THE TOP OFF THE NET
NO ONE KNOWS WHICH SIDE IT'LL FALL ON.
THIS IS HOW IT IS, ULTIMATELY.
IT'S AT THAT TIME... WHAT YOU WANT IS TO HAVE A 'GODDESS'...
IF YOU DO THAT, WHICHEVER SIDE THE BALL LANDS ON.................. YOU CAN MAKE SENSE OF IT.
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

HAAH
HAAH HAA HAAAHAAA HAAA!
HAAA AAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH!
HAAAH!!

JOHNNY JOESTAR.
AND NEXT IS YOU......
STEP
STEP
STEP
AH
UAAAAA
..........
AAH
AAA

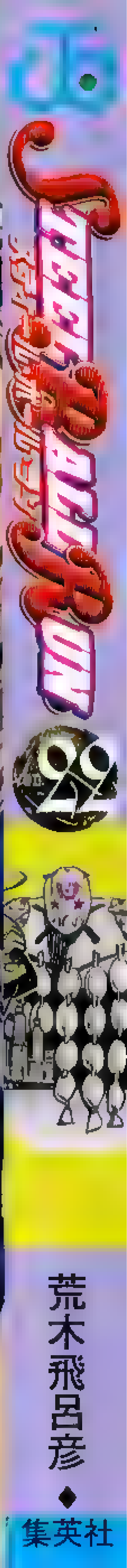
21 BALL BREAKER (END)

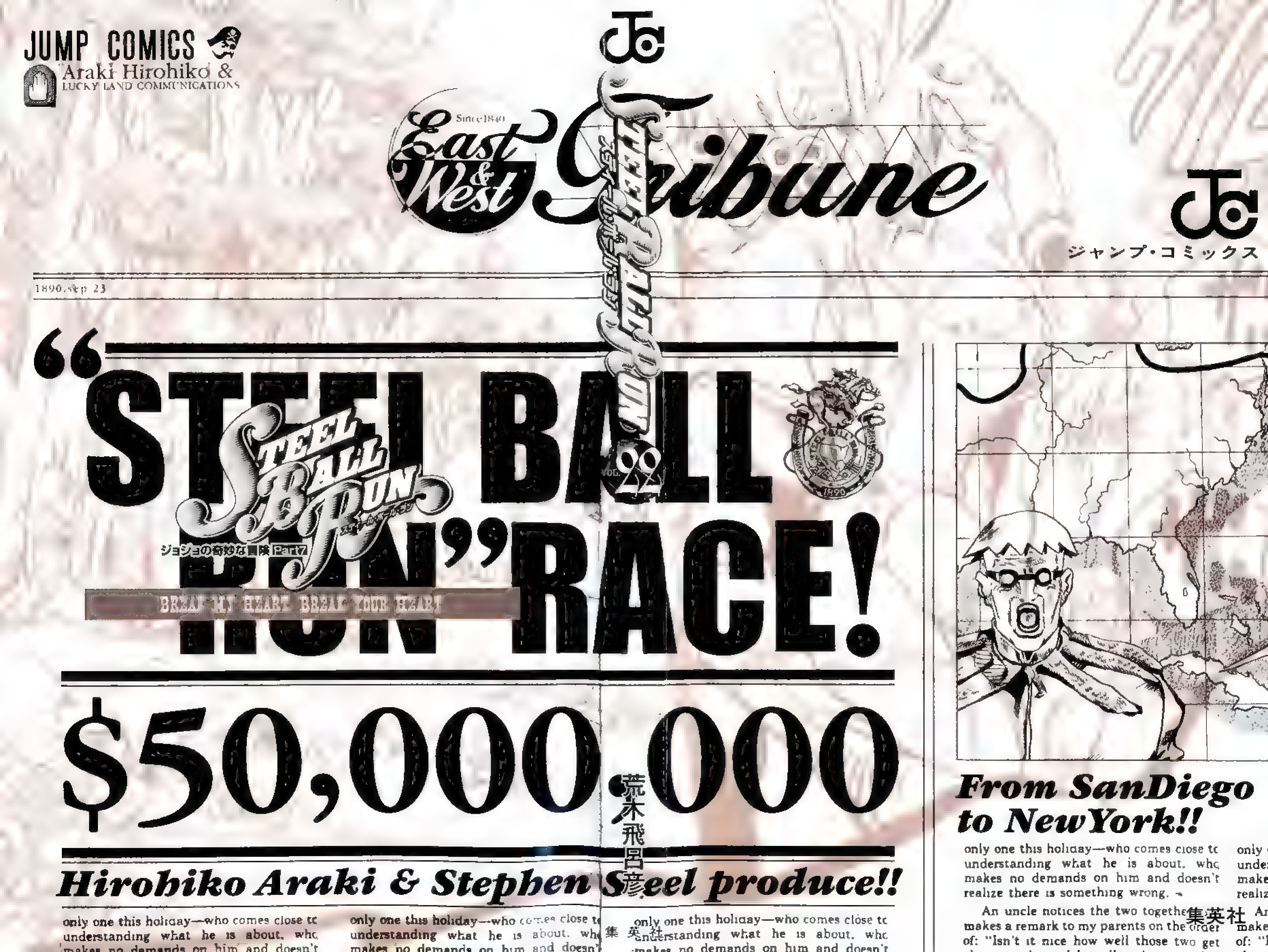




Hirohiko Araki

The work known as drawing 'pictures' is 'infinite'. You can keep drawing on one sheet forever wondering where the best place is to end. And 'story'. For example, you can have the setup of a 'lover' falling to the bottom of a deep hole, but there's a situation where if a 'friend you don't like' can takes the lover's place if you push them in, saving that 'lover's' life. Then what would you do in that situation? Would you push in the guy you hate? I have a feeling that's not the 'right action'. If you think about it, the answers can 'infinitely' disappear. By the way, with 'drawings', they're completed when your own 'heart' wants them to end. That's my personal opinion.





JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko & LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
Since 1840
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890.sep 23
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
STEEL BALL RUN 22
1890
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
集英社
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

JUMP COMICS

Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

BREAK MY HEART, BREAK YOUR HEART vol.22

## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.22

## CONTENTS

BREAK MY HEART, BREAK YOUR HEART

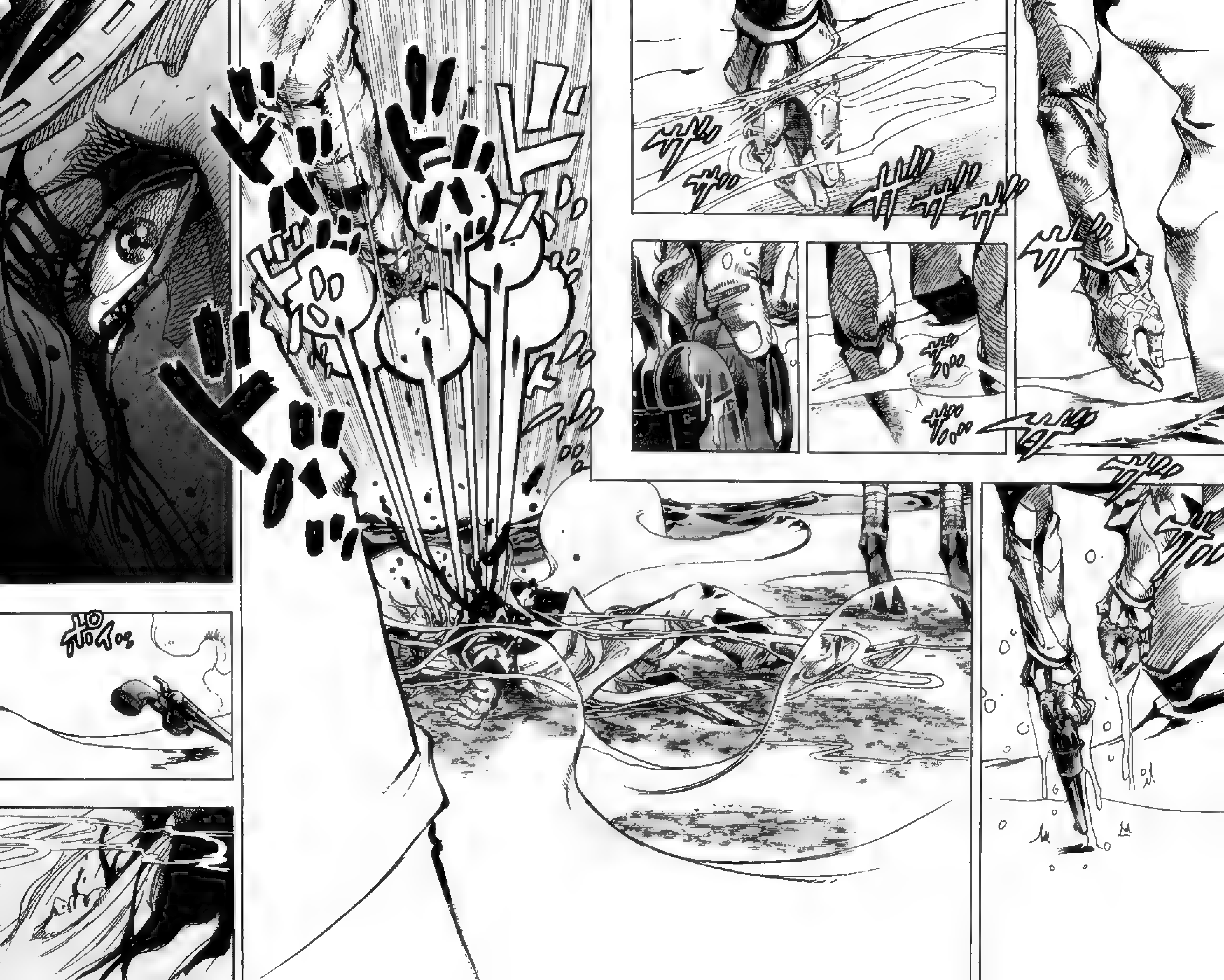

#85
BALL BREAKER PART ③ 7

#86
BALL BREAKER PART ④ 59

#87
BALL BREAKER PART ⑤ 107

#88
BREAK MY HEART, BREAK YOUR HEART PART ① 153

# #85
# BALL BREAKER PART ③


ザッ
ザッ
ザッ
ザッ

HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAAH
HAAH
HAAH!

AA... AAAA
UAAA....... AA...... A
AAAAA AAAAA
STEP
STEP
STEP
GYRO... .........!!

STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP

HOOOOOOOOOH

OOOOAAAAHH!!

GRK
AH!?
M...MY FRIEND!
I DIDN'T MEAN TO ...
WHAT HAPPENED!?
UAAAH!

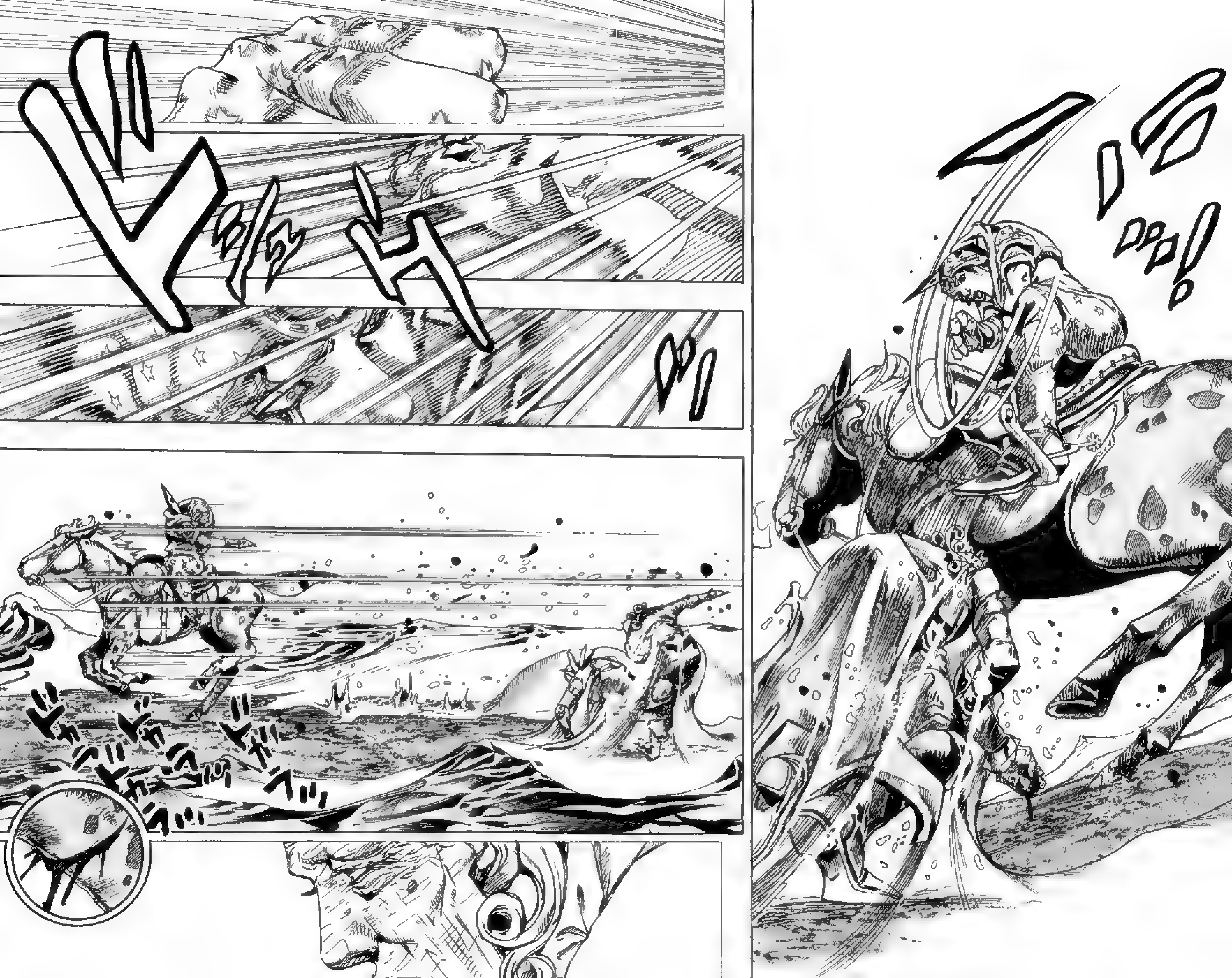
UOOO
OOO!
THE HORSE!
I HAVE TO MAKE THE HORSE RUN
AND ADD THE 'HORSE'S POWER' TO THE SPIN!!

OOOO OOO!
IT'S NO GOOD... I NEED TO KEEP THE NAIL BULLETS FROM SHOOTING INTO THE 'DIMENSIONAL WALL'!!
I NEED TO MAKE THE HORSE RUN AND GIVE THE ROTATION ITS ENERGY!!
OOF!
WHA?
HUH?
AAAH
UWAA AAAA

UH... ...

UGH
UUH
WAAA AAAA
HUH?

'BELOW THE WAVES'! BETWEEN THEM AND THE GROUND!
!!



ズドドド

UGUA
Aa
Aa... A...
Aah......
AAAAH ......
AAH!! ...UH... THE HORSE... ...
...UGUU ... ...... AAA
A... AAH...
UU HAH
HAAAH HAAAH

TWO YEARS AGO.........
WHEN I WAS INAUGURATED AS PRESIDENT OF THIS COUNTRY ......
ドドドド
THERE WAS A CELEBRATORY DINNER PARTY HELD IN THE TOWN I WAS BORN IN.........
HAAA HAAAH
UU.......
UUUUH ......
THERE, AT THAT TIME,
ドド
THOSE PRESENT WERE TREATED TO THE MEAT OF A FRESHLY SLAUGHTERED LAMB.
......... AN OLD CUSTOM PASSED DOWN FROM A DISTANT ANCESTOR.
HAAH HAA
HAAH HAAH
THE REALITY OF THIS HUMAN WORLD
IS THAT WHEN WE DRAW THE CURTAIN TO A NEW AGE, THERE WILL BE NECESSARY 'TRIALS' FOR US TO FACE.
ド
THERE ARE SURE TO BE 'BATTLES' AND 'SPILLED BLOOD'.
AND IN THESE 'TRIALS',
ドド
THE MORE FORMIDABLE THE 'FOE', THE BETTER THE 'TRIAL'...
ポイ
HAAH
HAA

THESE TRIALS ARE 'OFFERINGS'.
AND THE GREATER THEY ARE, THE BETTER.
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
'THE BOOMBOOM FAMILY', 'MOUNTAIN TIM', 'SANDMAN', 'MY WIFE', 'WEKAPIPO', 'DIO'..................
THAT IS WHAT YOU ALL ARE.
BE IT ALLY OR ENEMY, THOSE WHO PARTICIPATED IN THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE ARE 'FRESH LAMB MEAT'.
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
UUH UU...
THE ONLY ENERGY THAT CAN CROSS DIMENSIONAL WALLS IS MY 'D4C'.
AND THE 'NAPKIN' THAT HAS THE MEANING OF A NEW AGE....... THERE IS NO 'MISFORTUNE' HERE, IT HAS BEEN SHOT AWAY SOMEWHERE, AND THE 'CORPSE'...
WILL BECOME THE 'HAPPINESS' OF MY COUNTRY.
STEP
STEP
'LESSON 5'
HAAA
HAAA
GYRO... ......
WHY...?
HAAH
HAAH
SAY 'LESSON 5'......
BEFORE
WHY DID YOU SUDDENLY ...
HAAH

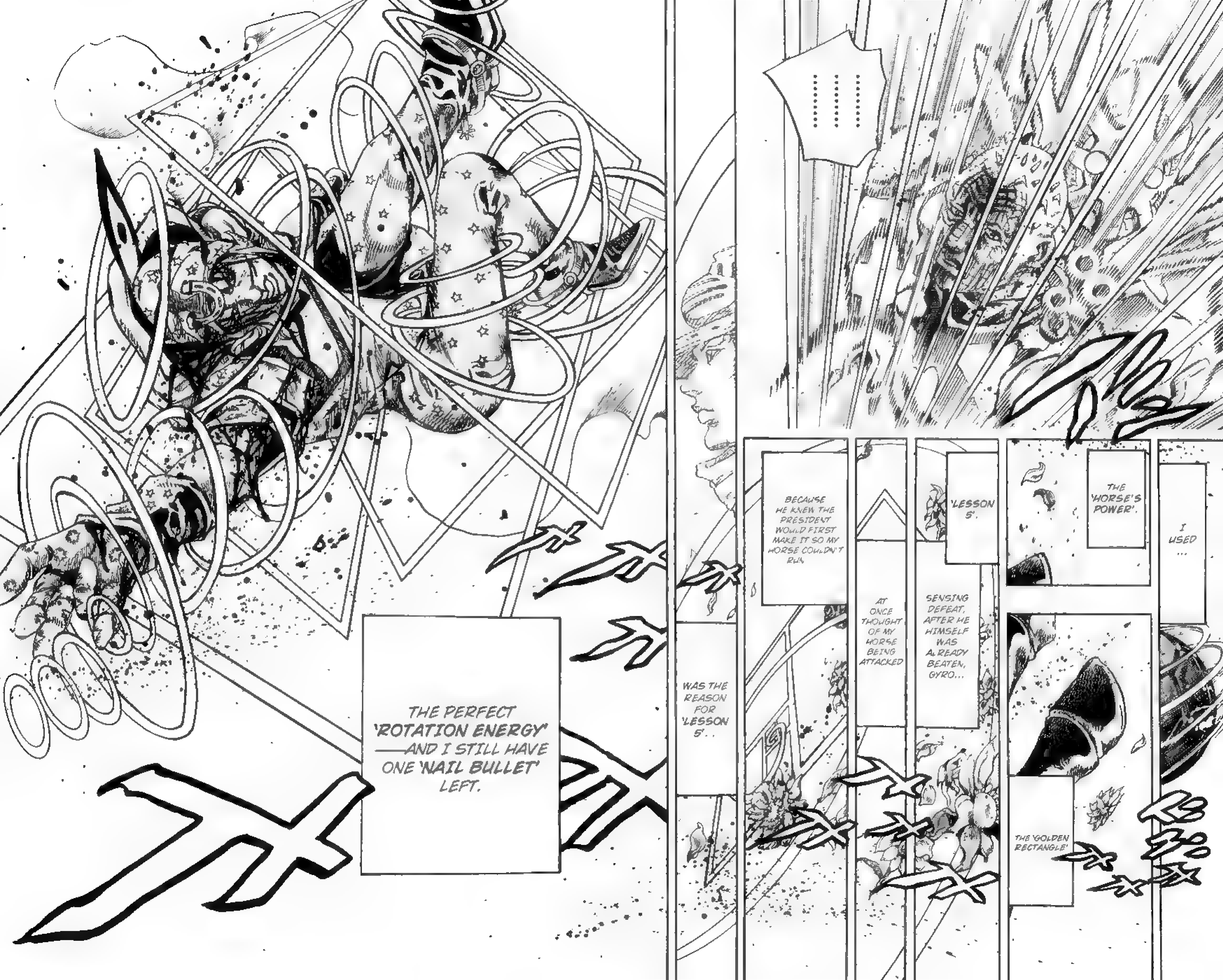
YOU ONLY HAVE ONE 'NAIL BULLET' LEFT NOW, DON'T YOU... JOHNNY JOESTAR...?
YOUR PINKY FINGER, YES?
GO AHEAD AND FIRE IT.
HAAH
HAAH
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP
'THIS IS LESSON 5'
JOHNNY
'OUR SHORTEST ROUTE WAS A DETOUR......
'WITH THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE....... IT WAS ALWAYS THE DETOUR!!
'THAT'S BEEN OUR SHORTEST PATH!
STEP

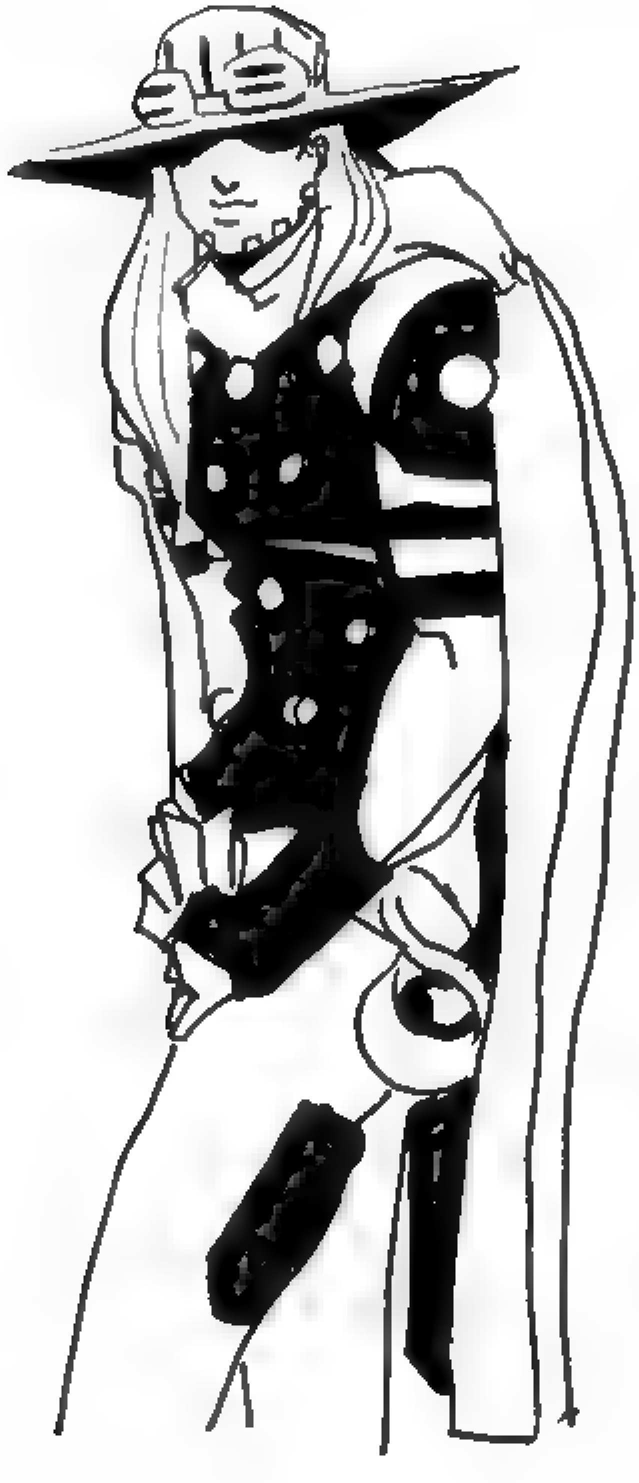
WHAT WILL HAPPEN NOW IS A 'SACRIFICE'... YOU! JOHNNY JOESTAR...
THE TRIAL WILL...
END WITH THE SPILLING OF BLOOD ........
ド
ド
ド
ド
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP
STEP
WHY ...
AT A TIME LIKE THAT......... GYRO
'LESSON 5'......

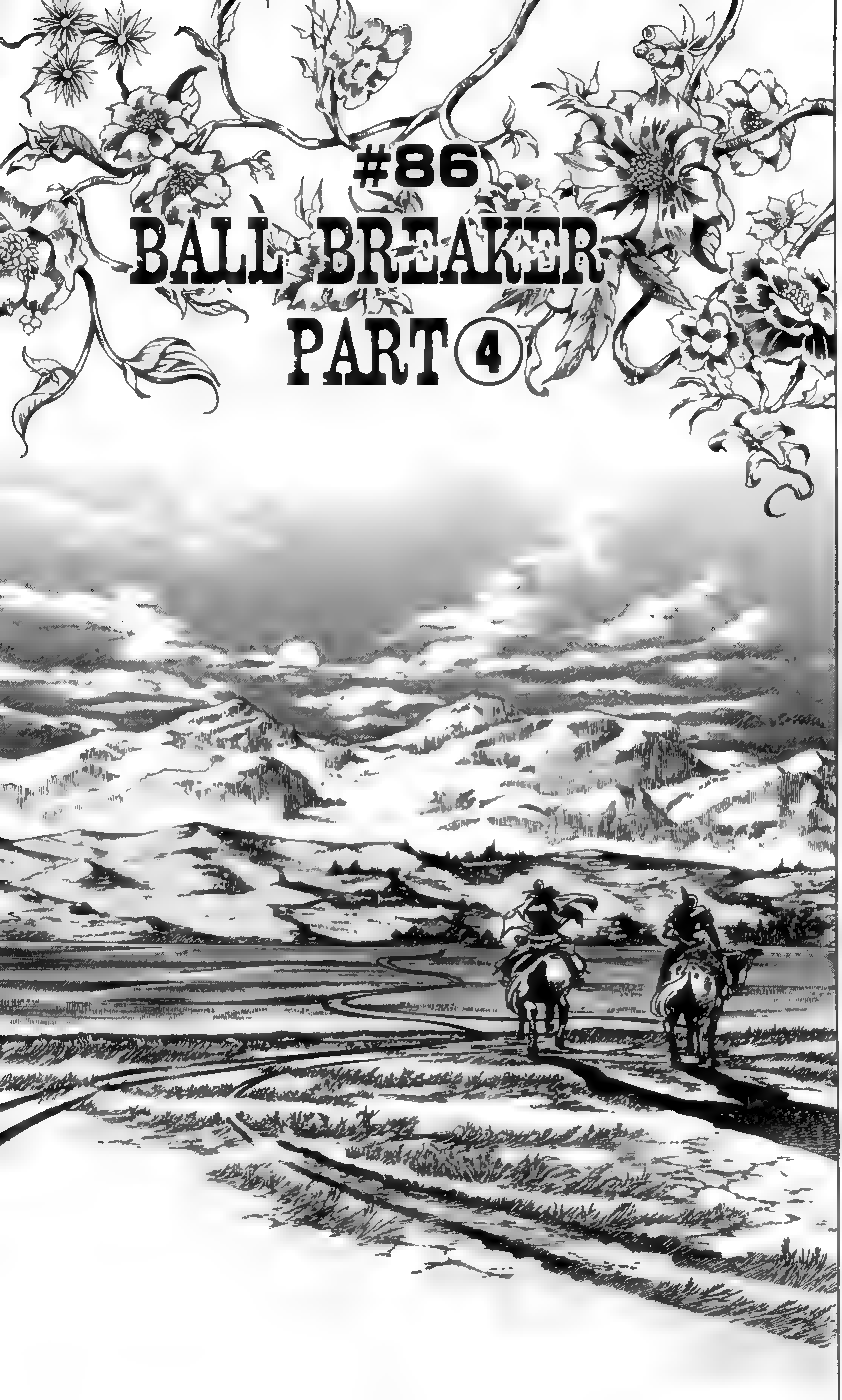
I'LL MAKE YOU ATTACK FIRST!
COME!

ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
?
?
!!
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
ギャル
......A 'STEEL BALL' ......

THIS IS 'LESSON 1'.
DON'T GET YOUR HOPES UP.
YOUR LEGS MOVING WAS JUST A SIMPLE BODILY REFLEX AND NOTHING MORE.
GYRO... RIGHT NOW, THIS ONE 'STEEL BALL' I DIDN'T GIVE TO YOU,
THAT'S STILL WITH ME,
IS TRULY A DETOUR
IT'S TRULY, TRULY,
A VERY LONG, ROUND-ABOUT PATH... .......


I USED ...
THE 'HORSE'S POWER'.
THE 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'
'LESSON 5'.
SENSING DEFEAT, AFTER HE HIMSELF WAS ALREADY BEATEN, GYRO...
AT ONCE THOUGHT OF MY HORSE BEING ATTACKED
BECAUSE HE KNEW THE PRESIDENT WOULD FIRST MAKE IT SO MY HORSE COULDN'T RUN
WAS THE REASON FOR 'LESSON 5'..
THE PERFECT 'ROTATION ENERGY' —AND I STILL HAVE ONE 'NAIL BULLET' LEFT.




#86
BALL BREAKER
PART 4

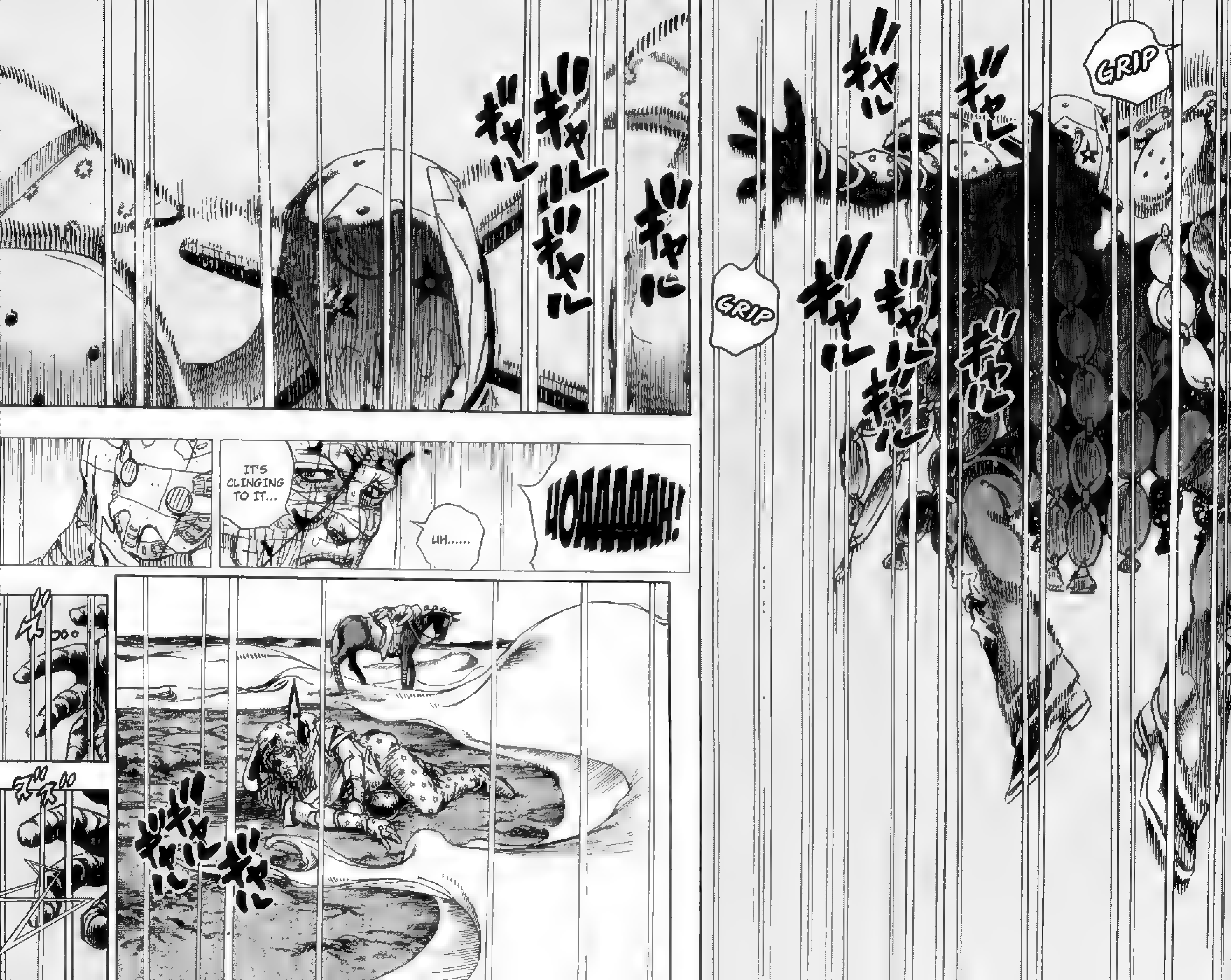
GYRO, FOR THIS REASON......
THIS WAS THE REASON FOR 'LESSON 5'...
THANK YOU......
THANK YOU, GYRO.
I TRULY...
......TRULY......
'THANK YOU'... I CAN'T FIND ANY OTHER WORDS TO EXPRESS IT.

ドドド
ドドド
ドドドド

YOU HAD YOUR OWN BODY
!!
KICKED BY THE HORSE ..........
USING THE 'HORSE'S POWER' ON THE ROTATION ............
...... COME BACK INSIDE THE LIGHT... 'D4C'...
RIGHT AWAY.... ......
'D4C', INSIDE THE LIGHT, HIIIIIII IIIIIIII IDE!

PULL

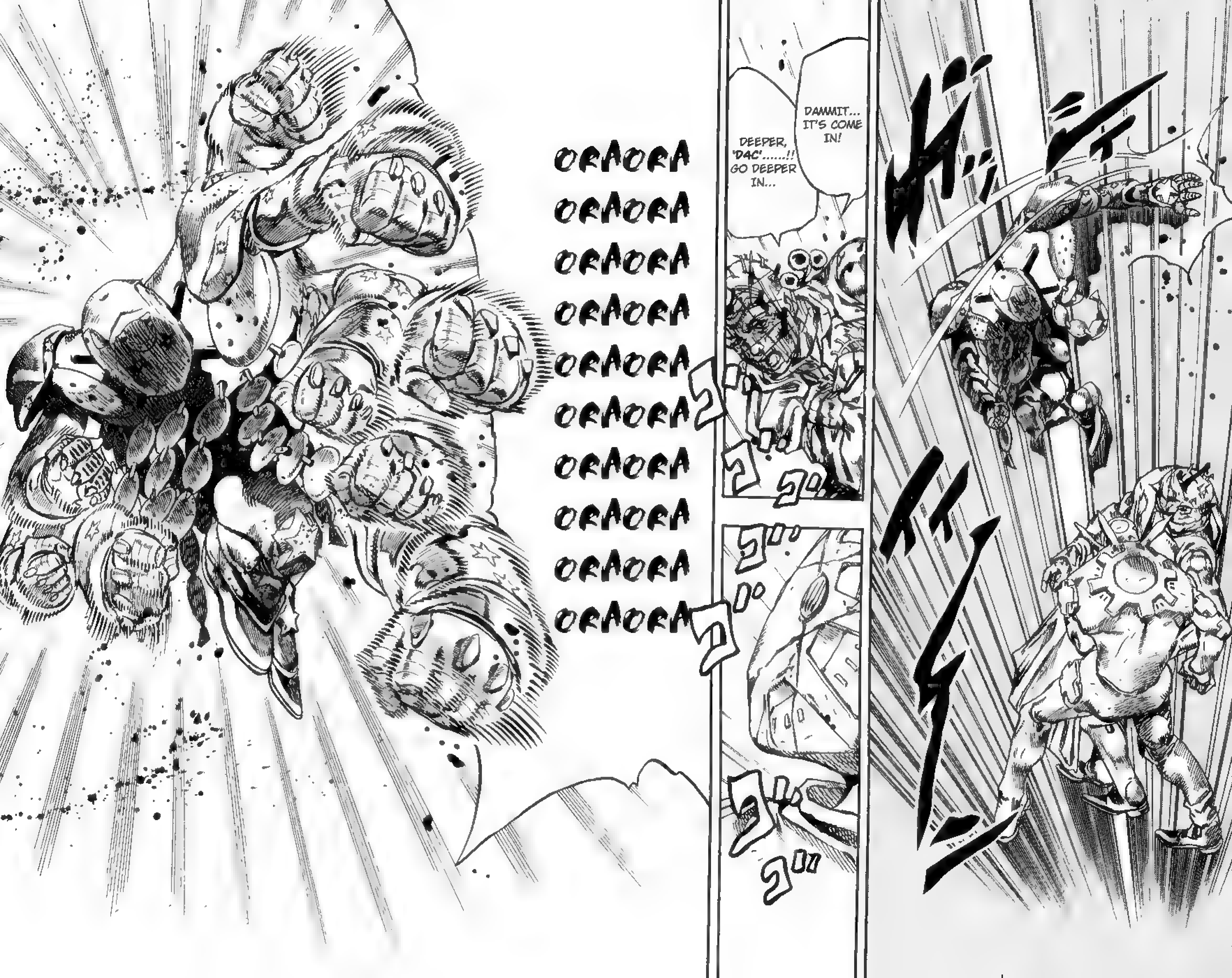
LOUH!!
OO OOO OH
CHINK
SPRT
SPRT
SPRT
SPRT
OO OOO OH!


GRIP
ギャル ギャル
GRIP
ギャル ギャル ギャル
ギャル ギャル ギャル ギャル
ギャル
UOAAAAAH!
UH......
IT'S CLINGING TO IT...
ギャル ギャル ギャル

SNAP
WH...AT?
WHAT IS THIS?!
IT'S THE SAME AS WITH GYRO ZEPPELI.
THE 'FORM' OF THIS ENERGY.
WITHOUT BEING SHOT TO SOMEWHERE ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE WORLD, LIKE CHINA OR AFRICA.
IT'S CLINGING TO THIS WALL AND TRYING TO ENTER INTO IT.

IT'S TRYING TO PRY IT OPEN.
N... NO, IT'S MORE THAN THAT.
D... DAMMIT... THIS IS NOT GOOD...
WITH GYRO, IT WAS AN 'ELLIPTICAL SPHERE'....... BUT WITH JOESTAR, THIS IS PROBABLY A PERFECT, OR EVEN HIGHEST LEVEL OF ROTATION!
A 'NEW POWER'....... THIS IS JOHNNY JOESTAR'S 'STAND'...
CHU...
CHU......

ギャル
WHAT DOES THIS STAND INTEND TO DO?
ONCE IT'S CROSSED THE DIMENSIONAL WALL, WHAT'S IT GOING TO DO?
WHEN IT COMES IN HERE, AND OUTSTRETCHES THOSE ARMS, WHAT'S IT GOING TO DO TO ME!?
THIS IS BAD...
ギャルギャル
ギャルギャル
THIS IS A BAD PLACE TO BE.
IT SEEMS LIKE IT WOULD BE BEST TO RUN FROM THIS PLACE.
JUST HIDING INSIDE THIS LIGHT ISN'T GOOD ENOUGH.
I'LL HAVE TO RUN EVEN DEEPER.
TO THIS 'PLACE'S' .........
INFINITE AND NEIGHBORING
DIMENSIONS...
...I NEED TO RUN AND HIDE THERE, OR..........
'TUSK ACT 4'.
THE 'SACRIFICE' .........
...., PRESIDENT VALENTINE.
WHICH DO YOU THINK IT WILL REALLY BE?


DAMMIT... IT'S COME IN!
DEEPER, 'D4C'......!! GO DEEPER IN...
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA

PTOO
PTOO
PTOO
UBUH!!
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAORA
ORAAAH

UGU
AAH.

UOAA...H
GACK HACK
TH... THIS PLACE IS!!
UGU AOH!!
THIS IS... IN THE...... ....GROUND.
UNDER GROUND.
CAN'T BREATHE...!!
WH... WHERE AM I?!
SEARCH! 'D4C'...
...HURRY. ...SEARCH!
FIND ME.

WHERE'S VALENTINE?!
IN THIS NEW WORLD,
UGUAOOO ..........AAH
I CAN'T BREATHE...
GACK
HURRY.......... WHERE...
FIND.... ME........
KH...

WHSSSH
......
WSSH
WHSSH
WHSSH
......... THERE.
MY SELF IN THIS NEW WORLD...
'D4C' TRANSFERRED TO HIM.........
THAT WAS... .......
..CLOSE!

GACK
RUSTLE
RUSTLE
STEP
STEP
STEP

HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
ALL THAT'S LEFT IS THAT WORTHLESS KID'S EXISTENCE...
I CANNOT FORGIVE THEM...
I'LL 'GO BACK THERE' SOON... I'LL SCATTER THEM APART INTO MORE PIECES THAN THE CORPSE.
ALL THAT'S LEFT IN THE 'WORLD WHERE THE CORPSE IS' IS JOHNNY JOESTAR......
I'LL KILL HIM......
HE DOESN'T EVEN REALIZE HOW MUCH VALUE THE 'CORPSE' HAS, AND WHAT THAT MEANS...
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
......
...... (I UNDERSTAND) ..........

THEY 'CROSSED OVER DIMENSIONAL WALLS'...?!
NOW, THAT 'ROTATION' IS FINISHED!
RIGHT NOW, HIS HORSE IS DEAD.......... HE NO LONGER HAS THE HORSE'S POWER...
AND NOW, BEFORE HIS NAILS GROW BACK,
THOSE 'NAIL BULLETS' .........!!
I CANNOT ALLOW THEM TO EXIST!
I'LL 'GO BACK THERE' AND KILL HIM IMMEDIATELY.

?
...
KLIK
KLIK

......
KLIK
KLIK
KLIK
SLASH
SLASH
CLICK
CLICK
KLIK
!!
WHIRRR

……
……
W…
CLICK
CLICK CLICK
WHAT'S GOING ON…?!
WHIRRRRRR
TH… THIS IS!!
UOH!!

HALT
HALT
AH!

WHAT IS...!
UGUA
UOH
OOH
WHAT'S GOING ON HERE?!
MY 'D4C' IS......
'D4C'!
CLIMB TO THE TOP——!!
CRAWL OUT OF THE HOLE!

CLICK
CLICK
CLICK

KAH!!
I'VE... ......!!
I'VE BEEN RETURNED TO 'INSIDE THE HOLE' ?!
MY BODY IS ROTATING
MY BODY JUST RETURNED TO THE HOLE ON ITS OWN'?
!!
WHEN GYRO USED THAT 'STEEL BALL'
MY SKIN AGED . . . AND THIS TIME, MY BODY IS SPONTANEOUSLY ROTATING.
EACH INDIVIDUAL CELL THAT MAKES UP MY BODY
IS SPINNING . . .
IS THIS BECAUSE I WAS HIT BY JOHNNY'S STAND ATTACK?
IT'S LIKE I KEEP CHANGING DIRECTION ..........
BECAUSE I WAS PUNCHED BY THAT?
THIS IS AN 'AFTER EFFECT'?!
DAMMIT! I CAN'T BREATHE!

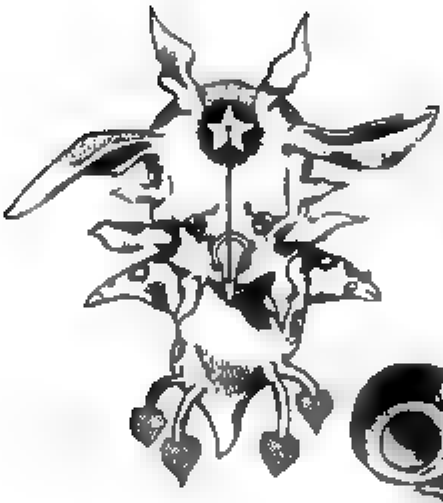
AT THIS RATE I'LL BE 'BURIED ALIVE'!
I'M BETWEEN 'SOIL' AND 'SOIL' SO I CAN ESCAPE TO ANY WORLD I WANT,
I MUSTN'T STAY IN THIS WORLD ANY LONGER.
I NEED TO ESCAPE...
BUT I HAVE NO WAY TO DO IT!
AND IF I SWITCH WITH THE 'NEXT ME' IN A NEW WORLD.......
.......
FINE!!

WHAT'S WRONG?
WHAT'S GOING ON THERE? WHAT'RE YOU DOING?
FI...
WHOSH WHOSH
FINISH HIM OFF.
KILL HIM! THE BASE WORLD JOHNNY JOESTAR!
FINISH HIM!
THE JOHNNY IN 'THE WORLD WHERE THE CORPSE IS'! HURRY!
GO THERE RIGHT AWAY AND KILL JOHNNY!!

GRAB
'UNDERSTAND'
......
I JUST NEED TO GO TO THE 'WORLD WHERE THE CORPSE IS'
AND KILL JOHNNY.
I'LL JUST GO BETWEEN THIS DOOR ~

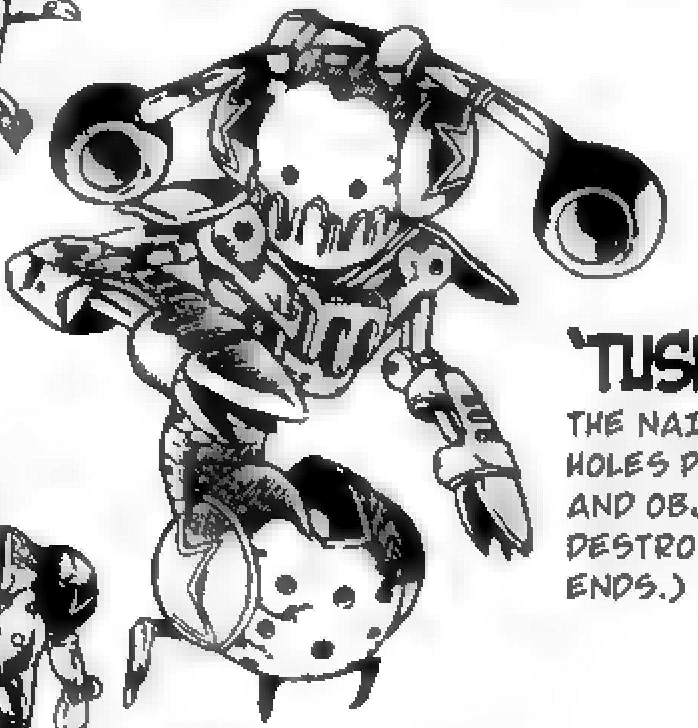
'D4C'
......
IT CAN'T BE, YOU... 'D4C'!!

THE DAMAGE FROM JOHNNY JOESTAR!
IT CAN'T BE... IT'S FOLLOWING YOU?!!
THIS IS DIFFERENT FROM GYRO'S IMPERFECT ELLIPTICAL SPHERE!! JUST HOW LONG? HOW LONG CAN THIS CONTINUE?!



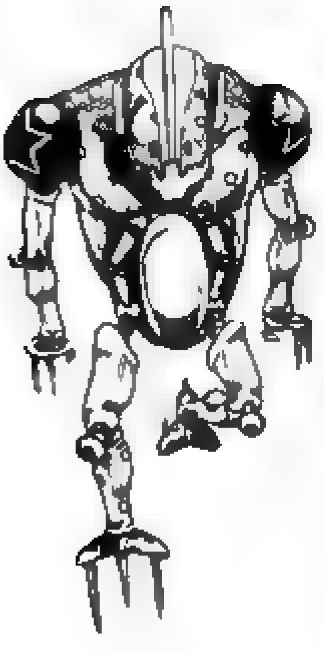
'TUSK - ACT 1'

—JOHNNY JOESTAR'S ROTATING FINGER ENERGY'S NAIL BULLETS—



'TUSK - ACT 2'

THE NAIL BULLET'S BULLET HOLES PURSUE ENEMIES AND OBJECTS. (IF THEY'RE DESTROYED, THE ROTATION ENDS.)



'TUSK - ACT 3'

IF JOHNNY SHOOTS HIMSELF WITH A NAIL BULLET, HE CAN HIDE HIMSELF INSIDE A "HOLE". (PERHAPS HE HIDES IN THE BOUNDARY BETWEEN DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS.)

# #87

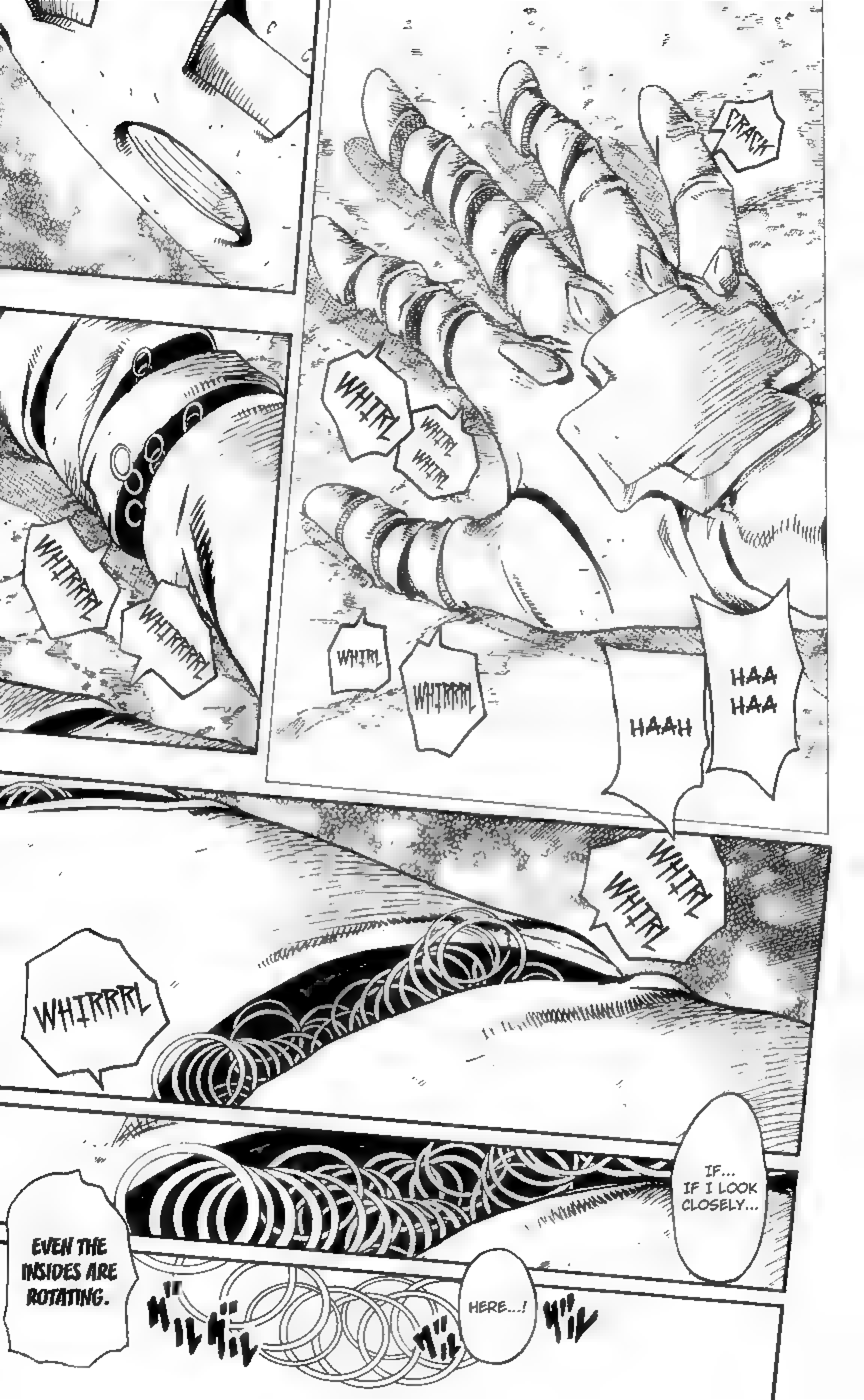
# BALL BREAKER PART ⑤

ONE MORE TIME...
......HE'S COMING.
HAA
HAA
HAA
DEFINITELY ..........ONE MORE TIME.
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
COME BACK HERE ONE MORE TIME.
VALENTINE WILL... ........

TO THIS WORLD 'WHERE THE CORPSE IS'.......
UH.

HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
H.. HOW MANY TIMES DO I HAVE TO REPEAT IT?
N... NO MATTER WHAT I DO...
I END UP BACK 'IN A HOLE'.
I HAVE TO FIND A WAY...
TO ESCAPE FROM THIS...
FROM BEING 'BURIED' IN THIS HOLE!

……
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA



CRACK
WHIRL
WHIRL WHIRL
WHIRRRL
WHIRRRRL
WHIRL
WHIRRRL
HAA HAA
HAAH
WHIRL WHIRL
WHIRRRL
IF... IF I LOOK CLOSELY...
EVEN THE INSIDES ARE ROTATING.
HERE...!

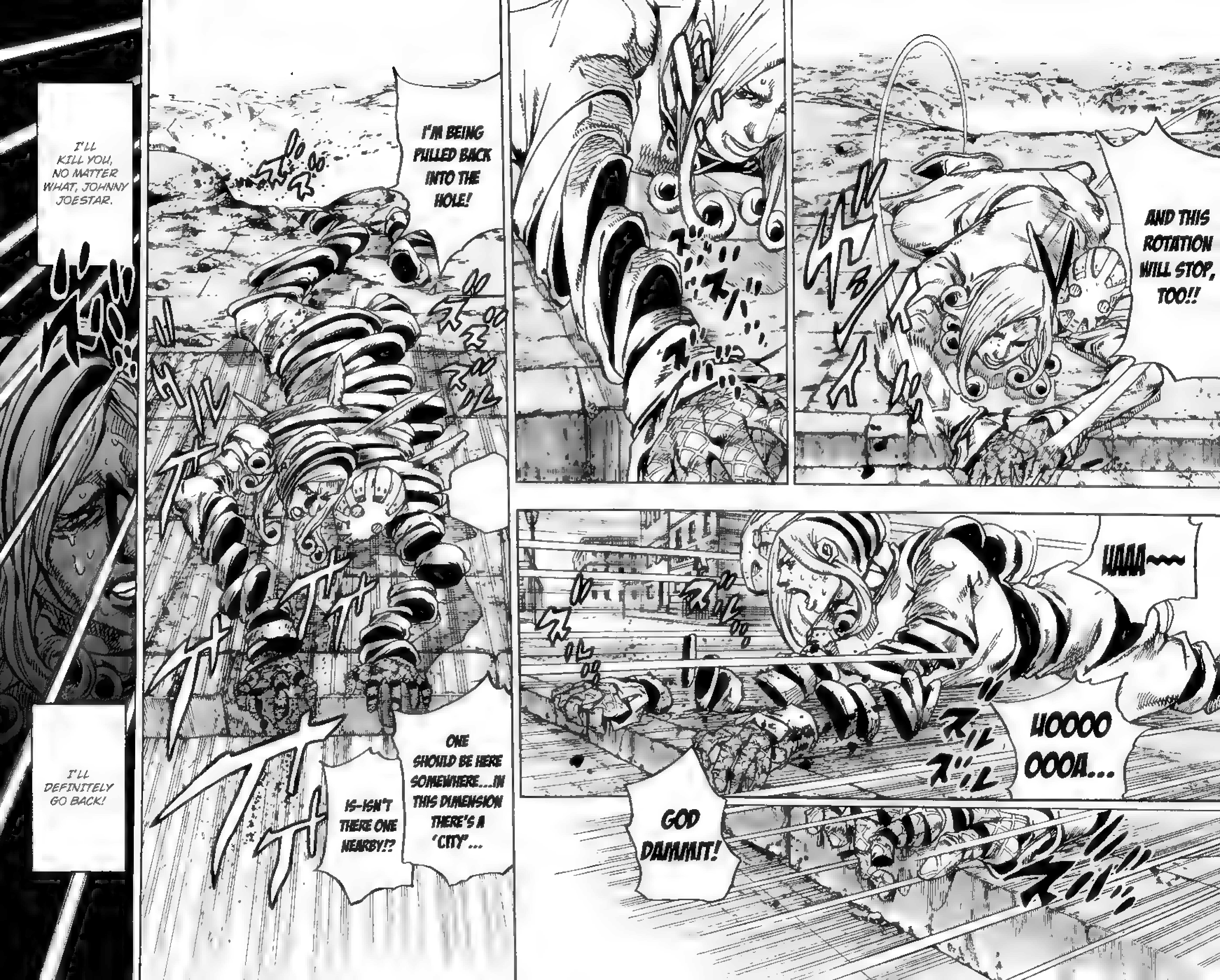
IT'S AS THOUGH...
EACH INDIVIDUAL PORE...
EACH CELL OF MY BODY...
FLAP
FLAP
FLAP
FLAP
FLAP
FLAP
FLAP
FLAP

GAH!!
COUGH
B...
BURIED ALIVE?!
ME...? BY SUCH A CALAMITY AS THIS...?
MADNESS!
EVEN THOUGH I'D TRIED RUNNING ACROSS DOZENS OF DIMENSIONS TO ESCAPE IT...
WHERE CAN I GO TO MAKE HIS ROTATION STOP!?
JUST HOW MANY DIMENSIONS MUST I CROSS TO ESCAPE...?
. IT... IT'S SO PAINFUL I.. I'M... SUFFOCATING!!

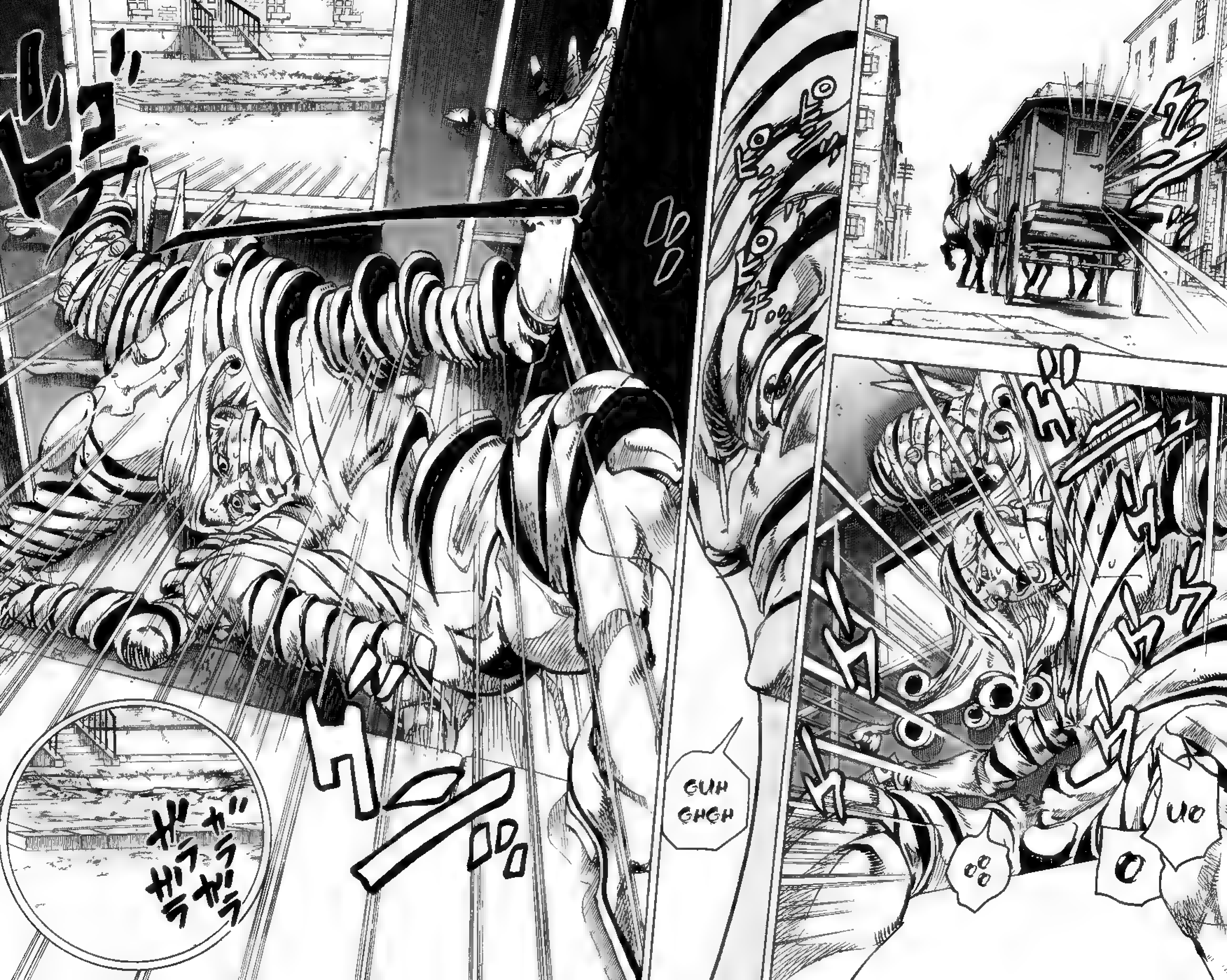
I HAVE TO DO SOMETHING ABOUT THIS 'ROTATION'!!
I HAVE TO DO SOMETHING...
THE INSIDE OF MY 'D4C' IS SPINNING...
I HAVE TO KILL HIM......!!
'JOHNNY JOESTAR'...
NO MATTER WHAT... I WILL ANNIHILATE YOU!!

KH.

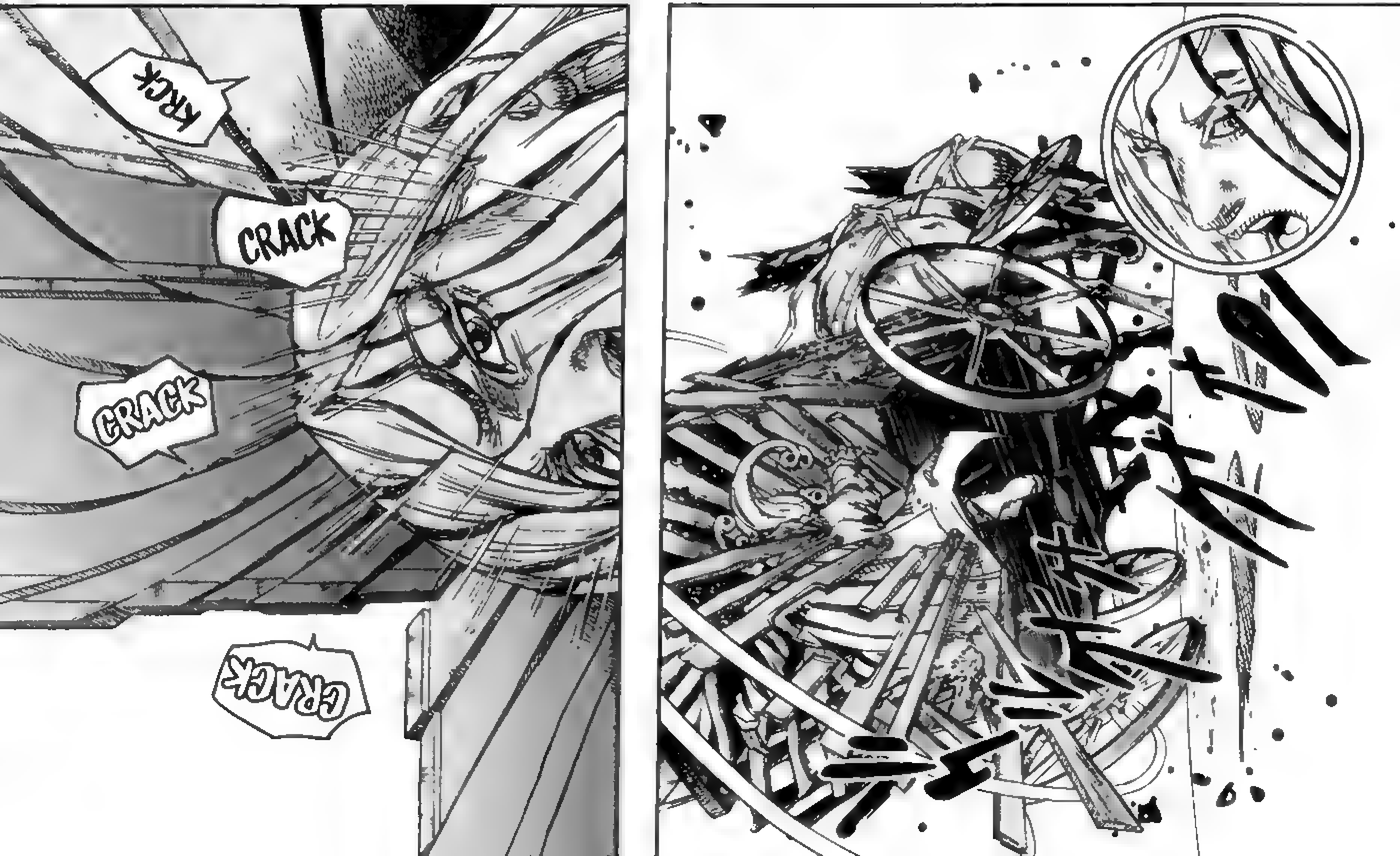
HAAA HAAA
HAAA
HAAA
HAAA
HAAA
TOBACCO
I'M GOING TO KILL YOU........JOHNNY JOESTAR........
I'LL RETURN TO THE 'WORLD WHERE THE CORPSE IS'......
IF I ERASE THE YOU IN THE BASE WORLD! THIS ABILITY WILL ALSO DISAPPEAR!
?

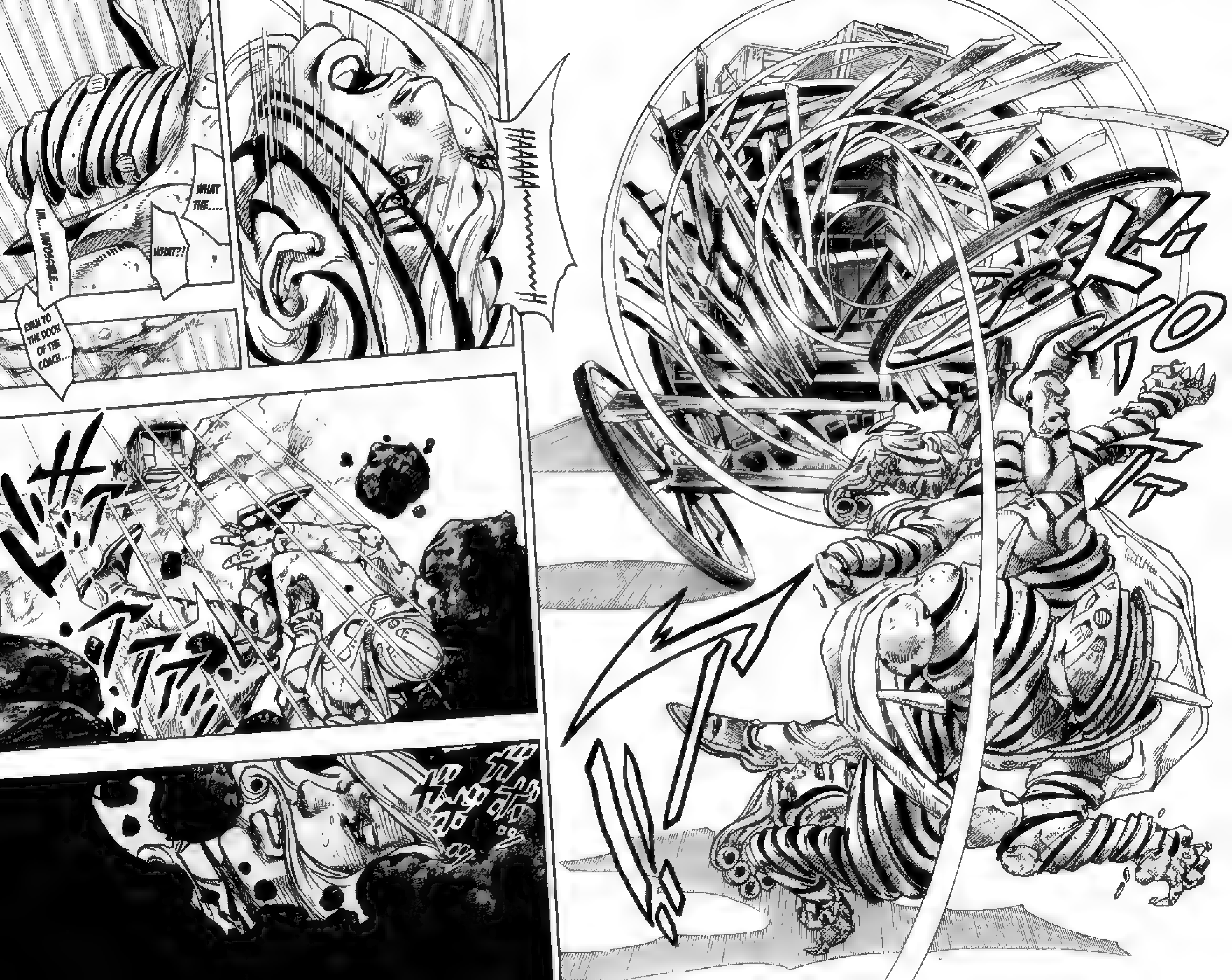

AND THIS ROTATION WILL STOP, TOO!!
UAAAA~~~
UOOOO OOOA...
GOD DAMMIT!
I'M BEING PULLED BACK INTO THE HOLE!
ONE SHOULD BE HERE SOMEWHERE...IN THIS DIMENSION THERE'S A 'CITY'...
IS-ISN'T THERE ONE NEARBY!?
I'LL KILL YOU, NO MATTER WHAT, JOHNNY JOESTAR.
I'LL DEFINITELY GO BACK!

TH...
THERE IT IS...
IT'S THIS WORLD......... 'D4C'.......... RIGHT HERE!
I'VE BEEN WAITING FOR THIS!
FOR A 'DIMENSION' WHERE THIS WAS PASSING . .
NOW...!!
GO!!


UO
O
GUH GHGH

.....
I DID IT!!
I REALLY DID IT!!
...I JUST NEEDED TO GET FAR ENOUGH AWAY... AND I WOULD BE RELEASED FROM IT!
ガラガラガラガラ
AWAY FROM THE 'HOLE'!
ガラガラガラ
I'M GETTING FURTHER AND FURTHER AWAY FROM IT...... AND NOW MY 'BODY'
WON'T GO BACK THAT WAY ANYMORE!!
THE ROTATION HAS ENDE— .......


KRCK
CRACK
CRACK
CRACK


HAAAAAAAAH
WHAT THE....
WHAT?!
IM... IMPOSSIBLE...
EVEN TO THE DOOR OF THE COACH...

IM... IMPOSSIBLE!
TH......... THIS 'ROTATION'.......
.......................
N... NO, IT CAN'T BE TRUE......
UGA
GAH
IS IT INFINITE ..........?
WHEN I TOUCHED THEM TO CLOSE THE DOOR... EVEN THE WALLS OF THE COACH THEMSELVES WERE...
WHAT KIND OF 'ENERGY' IS THIS?
COULD THIS BE INFINITY ...?
GAH
UOO OAAA AAA
AA AAA AAH

IT CAN'T BE! WAAAH...
DOES THIS MEAN I'M DOOMED TO 'ETERNALLY' BE 'BURIED ALIVE' IN THIS HOLE OVER AND OVER?!
I DON'T WANT IT TO BE DARK ANYMORE ...
DAMN! HOW MANY TIMES AM I GOING TO END UP BACK IN THIS HOLE? I DON'T LIKE THIS DARKNESS ...
HOW CAN THIS BE HAPPENING TO MEEE?!!
FUNNY ...
FUNNY.
MOM HAS A GUEST SHE'D LIKE TO INTRODUCE YOU TO.
THIS MAN...

LISTEN TO WHAT HE HAS TO SAY.
HE'S A CAPTAIN IN THE ARMY'S CAVALRY, MR. VALENTINE.
I CAME TO SEE YOU...
TO TALK ABOUT THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF'.
THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF'
20 SEP.

THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF'S' OWNER IS NOT ME..........
THAT PERSON IS A DEAR FRIEND OF MINE, AND I AM HOLDING ONTO THIS FOR HIM..............
HE IS... A MAN WITH A HABIT OF WRITING THE 'DATE' ON EVERYTHING ......
24 DEC.
IF HE BOUGHT BOOTS, HE'D WRITE ON THEM THE 'DATE' OF WHAT MONTH AND WHAT DAY HE BOUGHT THEM...
IF HE BOUGHT FURNITURE, HE WOULD ENGRAVE THE 'DATE' ON THAT FURNITURE.
20 SEP. 1847
ON HIS WEDDING DAY, HE EVEN WROTE THAT 'DATE' ON HIS UNDERPANTS. HIS FRIENDS ALWAYS LAUGHED AT HIM FOR IT.
IN AN EARLIER WAR, AS A SOLDIER IN THIS COUNTRY'S ARMY, THAT MAN
HAD BAD LUCK, WAS CAPTURED BY THE ENEMY, AND BECAME A PRISONER OF WAR.
THAT SOLDIER WAS TORTURED.

WHEN HE DIDN'T ANSWER, THEY WOULD INFLICT PAIN ON HIM AGAIN AND AGAIN.
'HOW MANY PEOPLE ARE IN YOUR COMPANY?'
AND EVERY DAY...........
'FROM WHERE ARE THEY GOING TO ATTACK?'
'WHAT TYPE OF WEAPONS ARE THEY USING?'
'SHOW US ON A MAP WHERE THEIR SNIPERS ARE HIDING.'
HE NEVER ONCE ANSWERED THEM, BUT
HIS MIND WAS NEARLY CRUSHED.

THIS HANDKERCHIEF HAS SEPTEMBER 20TH 1847 EMBROIDERED ON IT......
IT'S A 'DATE' ON WHICH HE HOLDS MEMORIES OF HIS FAMILY.
AND WHEN HE FELT IT WAS GOING TO BREAK DOWN...
HE DECIDED IN HIS HEART THAT HE WOULD 'PROTECT' THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF' WITH ALL HE HAD.
20 SEP. 1847
BECAUSE PROTECTING HIS FAMILY WAS CONNECTED TO PROTECTING HIS COUNTRY.
WITH THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF' BEING THE ONLY THING 'SUPPORTING HIS HEART', HE WAS ABLE TO ENDURE THE PAIN AND FEAR OF BEING A PRISONER OF WAR.
IF HE DIDN'T DO SOMETHING, THE ENEMY SIDE WOULD CONFISCATE IT FROM HIM.
BUT WHILE HE WAS BEING TORTURED... ..........

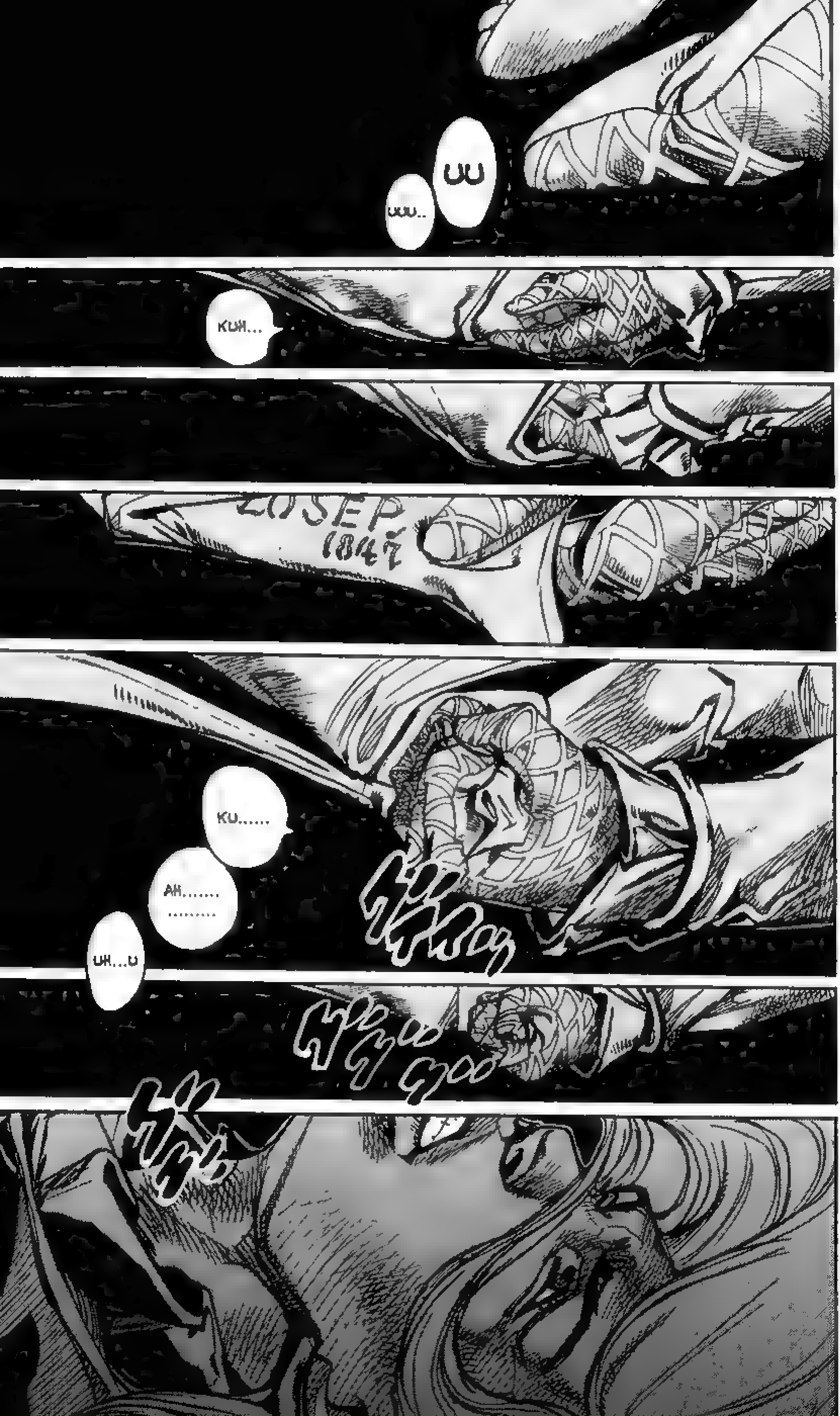
HE HAD TO HIDE THAT HANDKERCHIEF SOMEWHERE...
AND WHAT'S MORE, WHEN HE WAS TORTURED HE WAS STRIPPED COMPLETELY NAKED, AND EVERY HOLE IN HIS BODY WAS ROUGHED UP.
'INSIDE HIS MOUTH', 'INSIDE HIS NOSE', 'INSIDE HIS ANUS' ...............
HE FELT LIKE IF IT WAS CONFISCATED, EVEN HIS 'HEART' WOULD BE TORN TO PIECES, AND THERE WAS NO WAY HE COULD THROW IT AWAY...
IT WOULD BE TOTALLY IMPOSSIBLE TO HIDE IT SOMEWHERE IN HIS PRISON.
BUT HE 'HID IT THROUGH' THE WHOLE ORDEAL DO YOU KNOW WHERE HE HID IT?
IT WAS BECAUSE HE HID IT AND NEVER SAID A THING UP UNTIL AFTER OUR ENTIRE COMPANY WAS ABLE TO SURVIVE
AND I WAS ABLE TO BRING THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF' HERE TO YOU LIKE THIS...

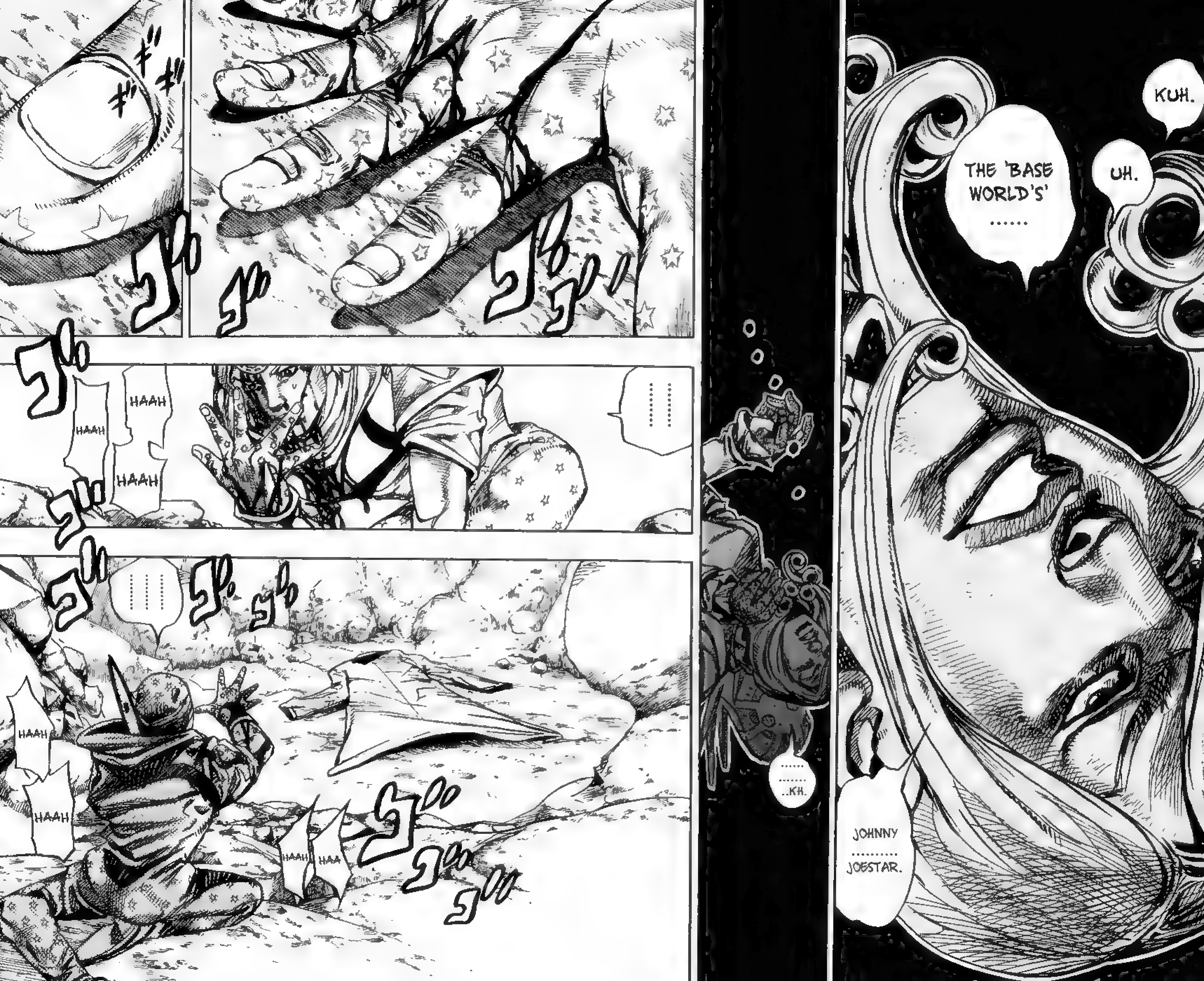
YOU'RE A MAN, SO I CAME THINKING YOU COULD HANDLE IT...
I HAVE TO TELL YOU THIS STORY TO THE END.
AND YOU ARE NOW SEVEN YEARS OLD.
WHAT I'M ABOUT TO TELL YOU IS AN INCREDIBLY PAINFUL AND CRUEL REALITY, BUT...
20 SEP. 1849
WHERE DID HE HIDE THE 'HANDKERCHIEF'
WHEN HE WAS BEING TORTURED...?
......
S.... STOP.. .......... .....
OH... OOOOH.
NO MORE.
HIS EYE WAS ALREADY BLINDED... .........
20 SEP. 1849

HE GOUGED OUT THAT BLINDED LEFT EYE HIMSELF,
BALLED UP THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF', AND KEPT IT THE WHOLE TIME IN THAT CAVITY.
AND THIS EMBROIDERY... SEPTEMBER 20TH, IT'S YOUR 'DATE OF BIRTH', ISN'T IT?......
20 SEP. 1847
AAA UUUU!
UAAA!
HIS BELOVED CHILD'S 'BIRTHDAY'.

IT WAS YOUR FATHER.
AFTER HE DIED, WHEN YOUR FATHER WAS BURIED, I FOUND THIS.
AAAAA!
AAAA!
AAAAAAA
'PATRIOTISM' IS THE MOST BEAUTIFUL 'VIRTUE' IN THIS WORLD.
EVEN ANIMALS RISK THEIR LIVES FOR THE SAKE OF THEIR CHILDREN, BUT
RISKING ONE'S LIFE FOR PRIDE IN THEIR COUNTRY AND THINKING OF IT AS AN EXTENSION OF PROTECTING ONE'S FAMILY IS ONLY A 'NOBILITY OF HUMANITY'......
A KIND OF HEART COMPLETELY DIFFERENT FROM A RELIGIOUS FANATIC

I'M PROUD TO HAVE BEEN YOUR FATHER'S FRIEND.
HERE.........
THIS 'HANDKERCHIEF' BELONGS TO YOU.
20 SEP.
UUU_
UUUU_
AAA_


UU
UUU..
KUH...
20 SEP 1847
KU......
AH.......
..........
UH...U


KUH.
UH.
THE 'BASE WORLD'S' ......
......
........
..KH.
JOHNNY .......... JOESTAR.
......
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
......
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAA

MY NAIL BULLETS ..........
I CAN........ SHOOT '5 SHOTS' NOW.
!?
HAAH
HAAH
HAAH

YOU'RE....
..........
JOHNNY JOESTAR
..............
WHAT'S HAPPENING RIGHT NOW...?
DON'T COME......
OVER HERE...
IT'S STILL NOT OVER...

!!
DON'T COME NEAR ME............
HE'S STILL......

ドドドドド
……

...........THIS IS MY 'DEFEAT' ..........
MY 'COMPLETE DEFEAT'! I CAN NO LONGER WIN...... YOU ARE... THE 'VICTOR'.
STOP... THAT'S ENOUGH... THAT 'INFINITE ROTATION'...

BUT THERE ARE STILL LIVING 'GYRO ZEPPELIS' IN OTHER 'DIMENSIONS'
I'LL MAKE A 'DEAL' WITH YOU......
I CAN BRING 'GYRO' HERE, TO THIS PLACE.
I'M THE ONLY ONE FOR WHOM THIS IS POSSIBLE.
IF I WERE TO 'DIE' HERE LIKE THIS......

THAT WOULD BE LOST FOREVER.
GYRO WILL NEVER COME BACK TO THIS PLACE.
.......... WHAT DO YOU CHOOSE?
TO BE CONTINUED

## 'TUSK - ACT 4'

—FOLLOWING THE LOGIC PASSED DOWN FROM ANCESTORS IN THE ZEPPELI FAMILY—

WITH THE ***'ROTATION USING THE HORSE'S RUNNING POWER'*** COMBINED WITH JOHNNY'S TUSK'S ROTATION, A STAND ABILITY WITH THE POWER OF INFINITE ROTATIONAL ENERGY.
IN ORDER TO CONTROL GRAVITY, THAT ROTATION PIERCES THROUGH OTHER DIMENSIONS.
(ITS DAMAGE IS ALSO LIKELY INFINITE AND SHOULD NEVER END.)

#88
BREAK MY HEART
BREAK YOUR HEART
PART①

HAA
HAAH
HAAA
HAAH
HAAH
HAAA
HAAH!!

CALM DOWN ............JOHNNY JOESTAR.
DON'T SHOOT.
PLEASE LISTEN TO WHAT I HAVE TO SAY, FIRST.
AT THIS POINT, IT WOULD BE A SIMPLE MATTER FOR YOU TO KILL ME.................. DON'T SHOOT OUT OF PANIC.......
UU...UH
AAA...
AAAAH!
.......

I'M ALREADY DEFEATED.
I'D LIKE TO MAKE A 'DEAL' HERE......
PLEASE TRY............ NOT TO SEE THINGS FROM ONLY ONE PERSPECTIVE.
THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN BRING THE LATE GYRO ZEPPELI BACK TO THIS WORLD......
IS MY 'D4C' ABILITY.
HAAH
HAAH
SH... SHUT UP..........
WHAT THE HELL ARE YOU SAYING AT THIS POINT?!! BE QUIET!
STOP TALKING TO MEEEEEEE!!
I'M GOING TO END EVERYTHING HERE AND NOW!
......
YANK
SLIDE

......
AH
?
HAAH
HAH
HAA
HAAH
AAH

MY GOAL IS TO COLLECT ALL OF THOSE 'CORPSE PARTS'...
THAT AND THAT ALONE.
THIS SITUATION CAME ABOUT AS A RESULT OF TRYING TO COLLECT THEM, BUT MY GOAL IS NOT TO TAKE YOUR LIVES.
THIS WORLD'S GYRO ZEPPELI DISAPPEARED INTO THE SEA......... AS THINGS STAND, HIS BODY WILL JUST ROT AWAY...
SO EVEN IF I BRING A GYRO ZEPPELI FROM ANOTHER WORLD, THERE WILL BE NO SITUATION WHERE THE TWO GYROS WILL MEET AND BE 'ANNIHILATED'.
I CAN DO THAT......
UUH
AH.

HAH.
HAH.
NOW...
THIS 'INFINITE ROTATION',
PLEASE 'STOP' IT...

SHOOT A NAIL BULLET WITH A ROTATION OPPOSITE THE DIRECTION OF WHAT YOU SHOT BEFORE.
THERE IS WAY TO DO THAT FOR THIS ROTATION...
WITH THE OPPOSITE DIRECTION, SHOOT MY 'D4C' AGAIN.
PLEASE SHOOT ME WITH AN 'INFINITE ROTATION' GOING THE EXACT OPPOSITE WAY..................
IT SHOULD BE ABLE TO DO IT..............! YOUR 'STAND ABILITY'!!
IT SHOULD STOP IF YOU MATCH THE PLUG WITH A MINUS.
AND THEN I CAN BRING GYRO HERE...............
HAAA HAAA
HAAA HAAA
UUH...

HAAH
HAAH
HAAH
HAAA
HAH
HAA
YOU'RE SAYING YOU CAN BRING GYRO BACK?
I PROMISE.
PROMISE
HAAA
GYRO, SAFELY, AND UNINJURED ..........?!!
HAAA
I PROMISE.
PROMISE
HAAA
AND THEN YOU'LL JUST LET GYRO AND ME GO?
HAAH
I PROMISE.
PROMISE
I WON'T TAKE REVENGE ON ANYONE..........
HAA

I VOW THAT I'LL ACT LIKE NOTHING EVER HAPPENED BETWEEN US.
HEREAFTER, I WILL ABSOLUTELY NOT LAY A HAND ON EITHER OF YOU AND I'LL LET YOU GO WHEREVER YOU WANT
IF YOU WANT TO CONTINUE THE RACE FOR THE PRIZE MONEY, I'M FINE WITH IT.
HAAAH
ALL I WANT IS TO PROCURE THE 'CORPSE'..........
THAT'S ALL.
HAAH
HAAA
BUT THE GYRO YOU BRING BACK HERE...
IT WON'T BE EXACTLY THE SAME PERSON...
HE WOULD BE FROM A 'WORLD OF A DIFFERENT DIMENSION'.......
......HE'LL BE A 'DIFFERENT GYRO'!

JOHNNY JOESTAR...
DO YOU THINK THERE'S ANYONE WHO KNOWS THE FUTURE?
EVEN IF IT'S A DIFFERENT GYRO WITH A DIFFERENT PAST... OR POSSIBLY EVEN ONE WHO'S NOT YOUR FRIEND
FROM THIS POINT FORWARD, GYRO ZEPPELI WILL WALK THE PATH OF GYRO ZEPPELI.................. THE 'IMPORTANT THING' IS THAT HE'S ALIVE HERE IN OUR WORLD.
...UH.
OOH .......
HAAA HAAH
HAAA HAAA

I HAVE ONE MORE THING TO SAY.
SOMETHING OF GREAT IMPORTANCE.
MY ACTIONS WERE NOT DONE OUT OF 'SELFISH DESIRE'.
I DO NOT DESIRE TO PROCURE THE 'CORPSE' FOR THE SAKE OF 'POWER' OR IN ORDER TO 'CONTROL' SOMEONE.

UA...A
I HAVE 'FEELINGS OF PATRIOTISM'.
EVERY ACTION I HAVE PERFORMED DONE BECAUSE I JUDGED IT TO BE 'ABSOLUTELY' FOR THIS COUNTRY'S SAKE.
YOU EXPERIENCED IT, DIDN'T YOU?! ONLY THINGS OF 'HAPPINESS' AND 'BEAUTY' GATHER TOWARD THE 'CORPSE'.
HAA
HAA
HAA
THINGS OF 'UNHAPPINESS' AND 'CRUELTY' WERE BLOWN AWAY SOMEWHERE... HAVING SOMEONE ELSEWHERE BEAR THEIR 'BRUNT'.

THAT IS BECAUSE, IN THE REALITY OF THIS HUMAN WORLD, IT IS IMPOSSIBLE FOR EVERY PERSON TO BE 'HAPPY'.
SAIGON
IN THE SHADOW OF 'HAPPINESS' THERE IS 'CRUELTY'.
BLACK
THERE IS ALWAYS A BALANCE BETWEEN THE 'POSITIVES' AND THE 'NEGATIVES'.
WHITE
THAT'S WHAT THE HOLY 'CORPSE' IS!!
FOR ARGUMENT'S SAKE, THINK OF WHAT'D HAPPEN WERE IT HANDED OVER TO SOME RULE-FLAUNTING 'LOW-LIFE BASTARD' ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE WORLD.
HE WOULD ONLY THINK OF USING IT FOR THINGS HE WANTS, LOW-LIFE THINGS.
ONE CAN ONLY IMAGINE WHAT DEPLORABLE EVENTS WOULD THEN BE IN STORE FOR THE FUTURE OF THIS COUNTRY......
HAPPY
THAT IS ONE SCENARIO WHICH I MUST PREVENT.

AS PRESIDENT, IT IS MY SWORN 'DUTY'.
IN THIS WORLD, TO 'GUARANTEE THE SAFETY' OF THE PEOPLE OF MY COUNTRY. THAT IS WHAT IT ALL COMES DOWN TO!
GUARANTEE
保障 OK
THIS STEEL BALL RUN RACE HAS OCCURRED FOR THAT END.
SBR
HAVING THE 'STAND USERS' COLLECT THE 'HOLY CORPSE' WAS THE ONE AND ONLY WAY.
AS YOU WOULD KNOW FROM WORLD HISTORY, DURING TIMES OF DRAMATIC CHANGE, THERE IS ALWAYS BATTLE.

PLEASE, 'JOHNNY JOESTAR'.
DO NOT BE HASTY.
IT IS BECAUSE IT WAS THE 'STEEL BALL RUN RACE', AND NOT A WAR, THAT IT HAS ENDED WITH THE MINIMUM NUMBER OF SACRIFICES.
BUT ON THE OTHER HAND, BECAUSE THERE ARE SACRIFICES THAT OCCUR FROM BATTLE, 'IMPORTANT THINGS' CAN BE OBTAINED.
WAR
THOSE WHO DIED IN THIS RACE ARE A NECESSARY RESULT.
I BELIEVE I HAVE MADE NO MISTAKES IN MY ACTIONS.
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA

THE ONLY ONE WHO CORRECTLY UNDERSTANDS THE 'CORPSE' IS ME. ..............I WILL NOT HAND THAT 'CORPSE' OVER TO SOME OTHER COUNTRY............
I AM NOT AFRAID OF DEATH...... BUT I NEED TIME! I CAN'T DIE HERE......
PLEASE STOP THIS 'INFINITE ROTATION' IN MY BODY...
HAA
HAAH
HAH
HAA
HAA
YOU'RE A 'RIGHTEOUS PERSON'? ..........
I WANT TO BELIEVE YOU...
I WANT TO BELIEVE... THAT YOU MIGHT BE A 'GOOD PERSON'.
HAH
AND THAT MAYBE MY ACTIONS HAVE BEEN THE 'BAD' ONES...
HAA

HAA
HAA
BEFORE YOU BRING GYRO BACK.........
YOU COULD DO SOMETHING LIKE SEND AN 'ASSASSIN' OR 'ARMY TROOP' BACK.
BUT THERE'S NO 'PROOF'......
PROOF
保障 OK
YOU'RE THE PRESIDENT. IF I STOP THAT 'ROTATION' AND YOU GET CONTROL OF THE 'CORPSE',
YOU MIGHT PULL A 'SURPRISE ATTACK'.
THERE'S NO 'PROOF WE WILL BE SAFE'...
HAA
HAA
I SAID I 'VOW' TO.
ONCE I HAVE SWORN TO DO SOMETHING, I HAVE ALWAYS CARRIED IT OUT.
............I ABSOLUTELY WILL NOT 'TAKE REVENGE'.
I'M SAYING YOU HAVE TO MAKE ME 'BELIEVE' THAT!!
......
HOW YOU SAY YOU'RE A 'GOOD PERSON'...
THAT YOU'RE NOT A POWERFUL AND TALENTED 'LIAR'.............. THAT YOU'RE A PERSON THAT WALKS THE 'PATH OF RIGHTEOUSNESS'...
NOW! RIGHT HERE, TRY AND CONVINCE ME!
IF YOU CAN PROVE TO ME THAT YOU'RE A RIGHTEOUS PERSON WHO HONORS HIS 'VOWS', I'LL GLADLY STOP THE 'ROTATION'!!
HAA
HAA
HAA

I WANT TO SEE GYRO AGAIN...
I WANT A 'SAFE GYRO' TO BE BROUGHT BACK HERE ONCE AGAIN.................. I WANT TO BRING EVERYONE BACK.
IF I COULD BELIEVE YOU WERE A 'GOOD PERSON' THEN IT WOULD BE INCREDIBLY FANTASTIC.
PLEASE LET ME BELIEVE YOU.

…………
SHE BECAME A SACRIFICE AS WELL, BUT THAT'S FROM THE WORLD OF ANOTHER DIMENSION'S 'HOT PANTS'.
THAT'S 'HOT PANTS'S' SPRAY.
I TOOK IT FROM ONE EARLIER.

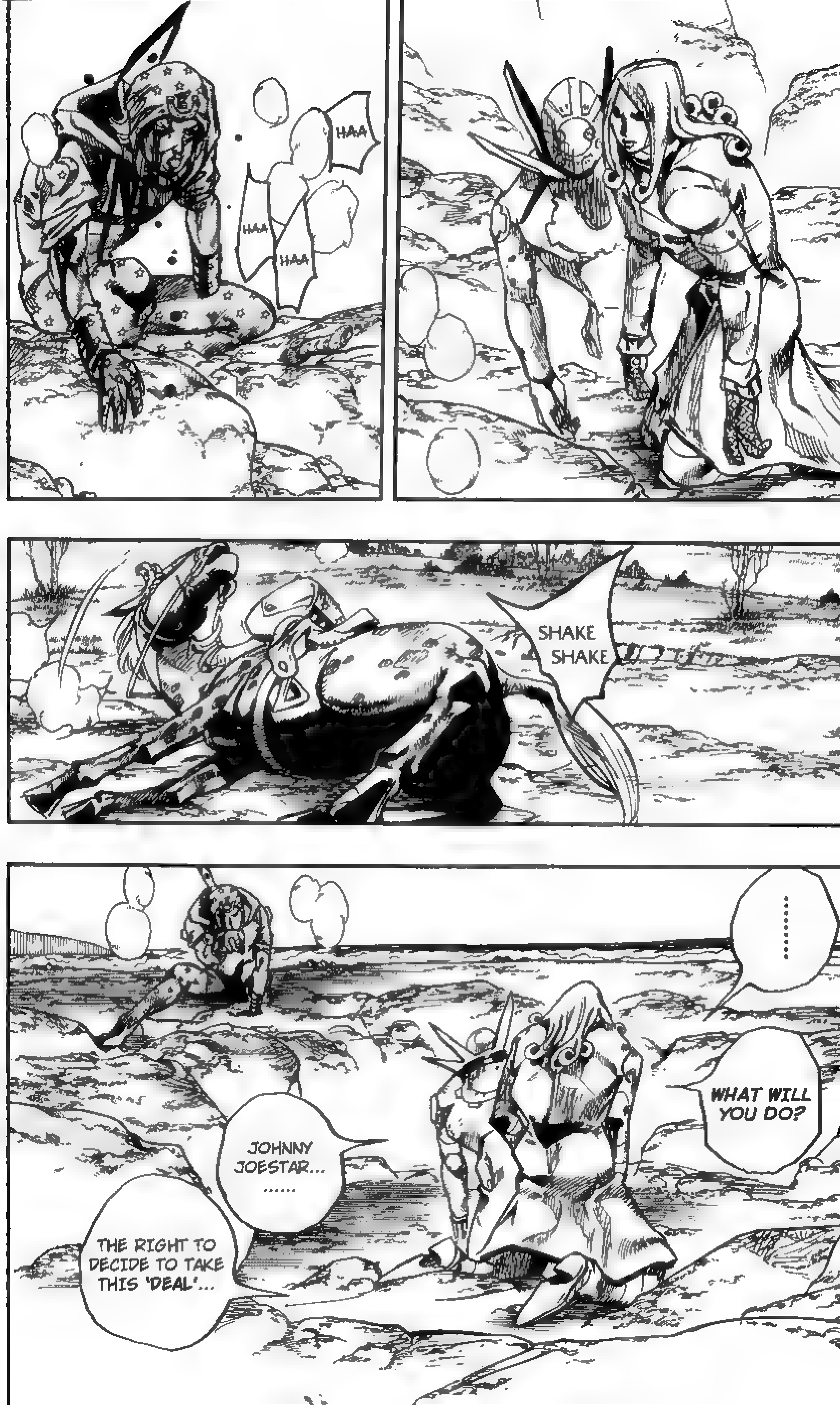
GUSH
GUSH
WHEN THE 'CORPSE' COMPLETELY SEPARATES FROM LUCY'S BODY...
SHE WILL PROBABLY DIE THERE.
GUSH
BUT WITH 'HOT PANTS'S' 'SPRAY', YOU CAN HEAL HER WOUNDS.
I THINK OF THIS WORLD'S 'LUCY' AS A PRECIOUS GODDESS OF GOOD FORTUNE.
I STOLE THAT 'SPRAY' ON THE OFF CHANCE THAT 'LUCY'S' LIFE BECAME ENDANGERED.

YOU CAN ALSO USE IT FOR YOUR 'LEFT HAND' THAT I CUT OFF... AND WHILE IT'S STILL BREATHING, YOU CAN USE IT TO HEAL THE NECK OF YOUR 'BELOVED HORSE'.
USE IT TO HEAL HER.

LISTEN...
THE ONE WHO GOT IN MY WAY, 'STEPHEN STEEL',
IF THAT MAN, 'STEEL', HADN'T GOT IN MY WAY BEFORE AT THE TRAIN,
WHEN I WAS GOING TO CUT YOUR THROAT, YOU WOULD HAVE BEEN KILLED BY ME AND WE WOULDN'T HAVE GOTTEN INTO THESE CIRCUMSTANCES.
THE REASON I DIDN'T KILL THAT 'STEEL' MAN WAS
BECAUSE I TOLD LUCY I WOULD 'GUARANTEE HIS SAFETY'.
IT WAS A VOW TO THE GODDESS OF GOOD FORTUNE .............THAT I WOULD NOT LAY A HAND ON 'STEEL'...!!
ONCE I HAVE VERBALLY VOWED SOMETHING, I WILL ALWAYS CARRY IT OUT.
IF I HAVE PROMISED I 'WILL NOT TAKE VENGEANCE' ON YOU, THEN I 'ABSOLUTELY WON'T'.
THIS IS.........
A 'MEMENTO' OF MY FATHER'S.
MY FATHER, WHO HAD A HABIT OF WRITING THE DATE ON EVERYTHING, HAD EMBROIDERED ON THIS HANDKERCHIEF— MY 'BIRTHDATE'.
20 SEP. 1847
IT IS A SUPPORT FOR MY HEART...... I ALWAYS CARRY IT WITH ME AT IMPORTANT TIMES......
I WAS TOLD THAT MY FATHER KEPT IT WITH HIM WHEN HE WENT TO WAR. BUT HE DIED IN ACTION, AND THEN IT WAS RETURNED TO WHERE I LIVED.
IT MAY BE IMPOSSIBLE FOR SOMEONE ELSE TO UNDERSTAND IT'S IRREPLACEABLE IMPORTANCE TO ME, BUT
I SWEAR ON MY DECEASED FATHER'S 'HANDKERCHIEF'.

JOHNNY JOESTAR.
I VOW 'I WILL NOT TAKE REVENGE ON YOU.'
AND I WILL END EVERYTHING HERE.
......

FROM THIS HANDKERCHIEF I LEARNED OF A 'FATHER'S LOVE' AND 'PATRIOTISM'. IT WAS MY STARTING POINT...
I HAVE PARENTS, TOO...
BUT EVEN IN THE COUNTLESS OTHER DIMENSIONS, MY FATHER WAS ALREADY DEAD AND GONE.
I WAS TOLD HE EVEN WROTE THE 'DATE' ON HIS UNDERWEAR, BUT FATHER WAS A GREAT MAN.
SINCE AFTER HE DIED, I'VE THOUGHT SO MORE AND MORE.
I WENT TO SEARCH FOR HIM COUNTLESS TIMES...
IF THERE'S A WAY TO FIND HIM, I'D LIKE TO SEE MY FATHER ONE MORE TIME... ..............
........


HAA
HAA
HAA
SHAKE SHAKE
..........
WHAT WILL YOU DO?
JOHNNY JOESTAR... ......
THE RIGHT TO DECIDE TO TAKE THIS 'DEAL'...

HAA
HAA
HAA
LIES SOLELY WITH YOU.
BUT I HOPE YOU MAKE THE RIGHT DECISION!
SHOOT MY 'D4C' WITH AN 'OPPOSITE NAIL BULLET'.
STOP THIS 'ROTATION'...
MY FATHER IS STILL ALIVE, BUT...
......

AAH...
GOD...
YOU TOOK...
THE WRONG SON......
FATHERS ......
CAN THEY BE THOUGHT OF IN THE WAY YOU THINK OF YOURS......?
I NEVER ONCE...
............FELT TOWARDS MY OWN FATHER THE WAY YOU REMEMBER YOURS...
NOT EVEN FOR ONE MOMENT ......
SO EVEN IF I COULD GO TO DIFFERENT DIMENSIONS...

I WOULD NEVER DO SOMETHING LIKE GO LOOKING FOR MY FATHER.
THE 'RIGHTEOUS PATH'............
YOURS MIGHT BE...
AT THE VERY LEAST, COMPARED TO ME, RIGHT HERE ......
YOU'RE WALKING A MORE 'RIGHTEOUS PATH' AS A PERSON
ズル...
JOHNNY JOESTAR ..........
22. BREAK MY HEART BREAK YOUR HEART (END)

## Hirohiko Araki

Recently, something that has been on my mind is people that put on 'performances'. These people's biggest goal is to "be the center of attention", so I honestly can't tell what it is they're actually trying to do. Those people are abundantly talented so they try to extend into many different fields and never try to quietly master one single thing.

Is it art, or is it politics? Is it a rescue operation or is it business? I feel like they're a particularly extraordinary and uncanny part of society. I can really think of no way to unite these clashing goals.

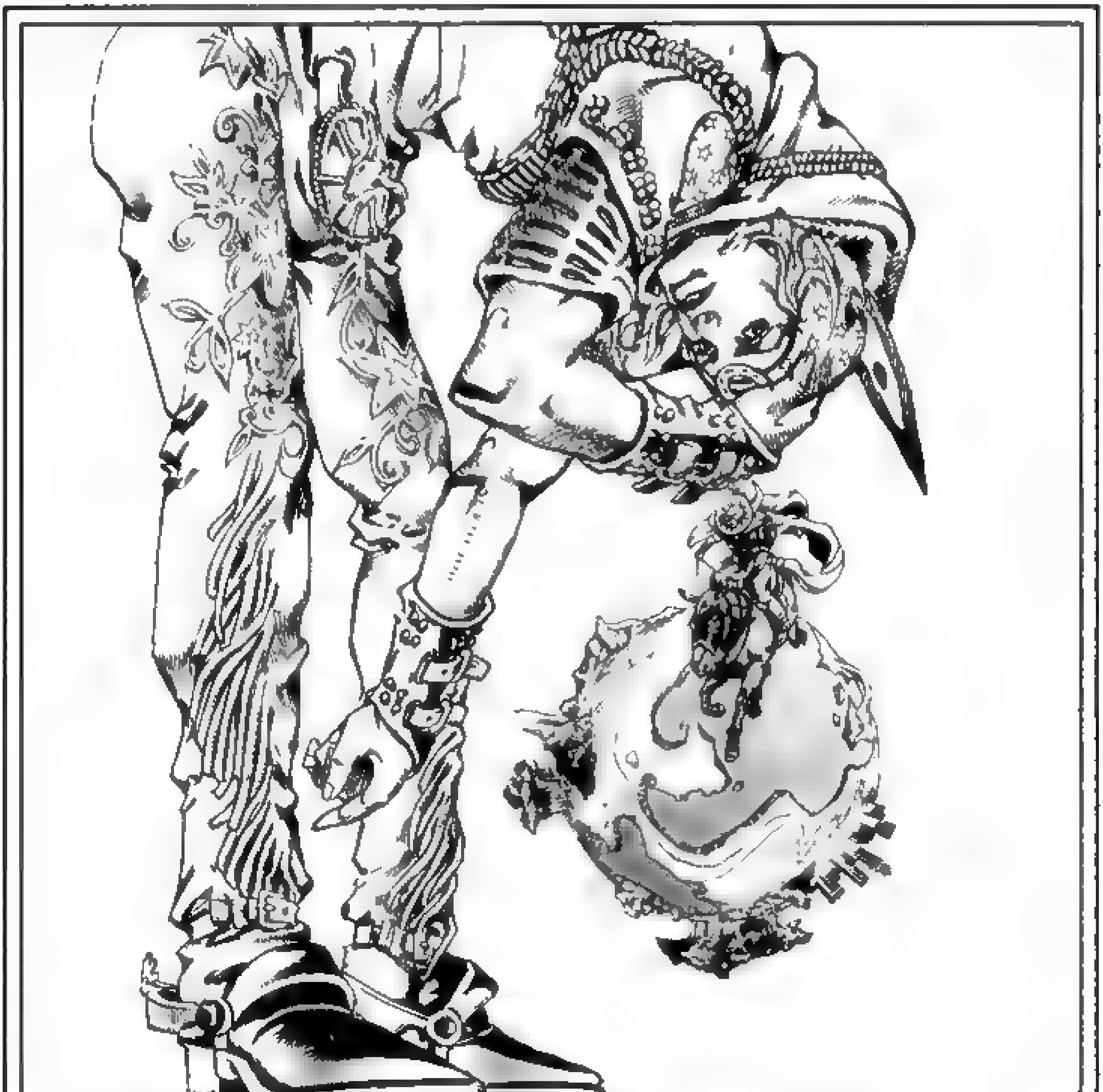
JUMP COMICS
Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS
Since 1840
East & West Tribune
ジャンプ・コミックス
1890.sep.23
"STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!
STEEL BALL RUN
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7
HIGH VOLTAGE
23
$50,000,000
荒木飛呂彦
Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!
From SanDiego to NewYork!!
only one this holiday—who comes close to understanding what he is about, who makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.
An uncle notices the two together and makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get
集英社

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

HIGH VOLTAGE vol.23



## ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.23

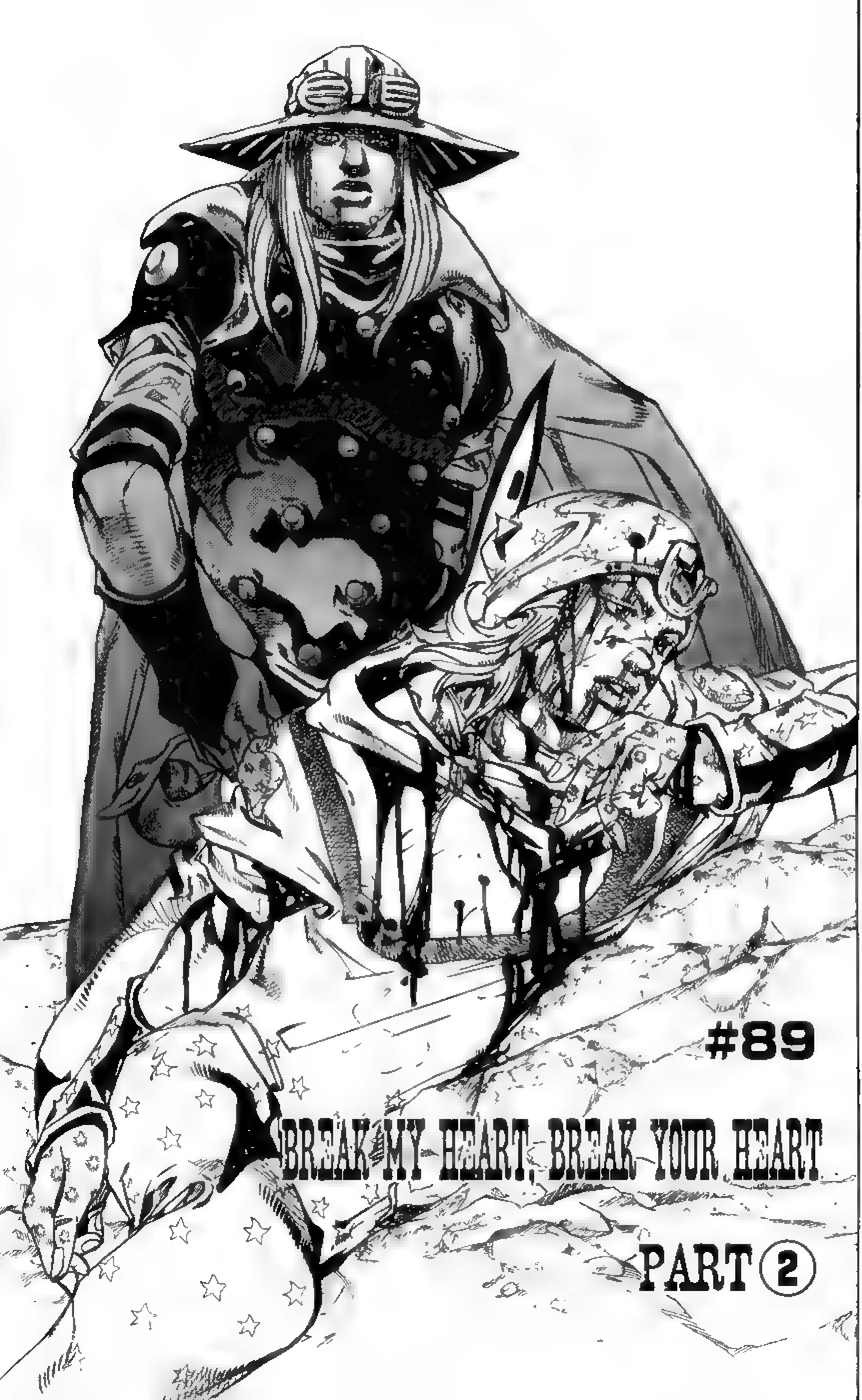
## CONTENTS

HIGH VOLTAGE

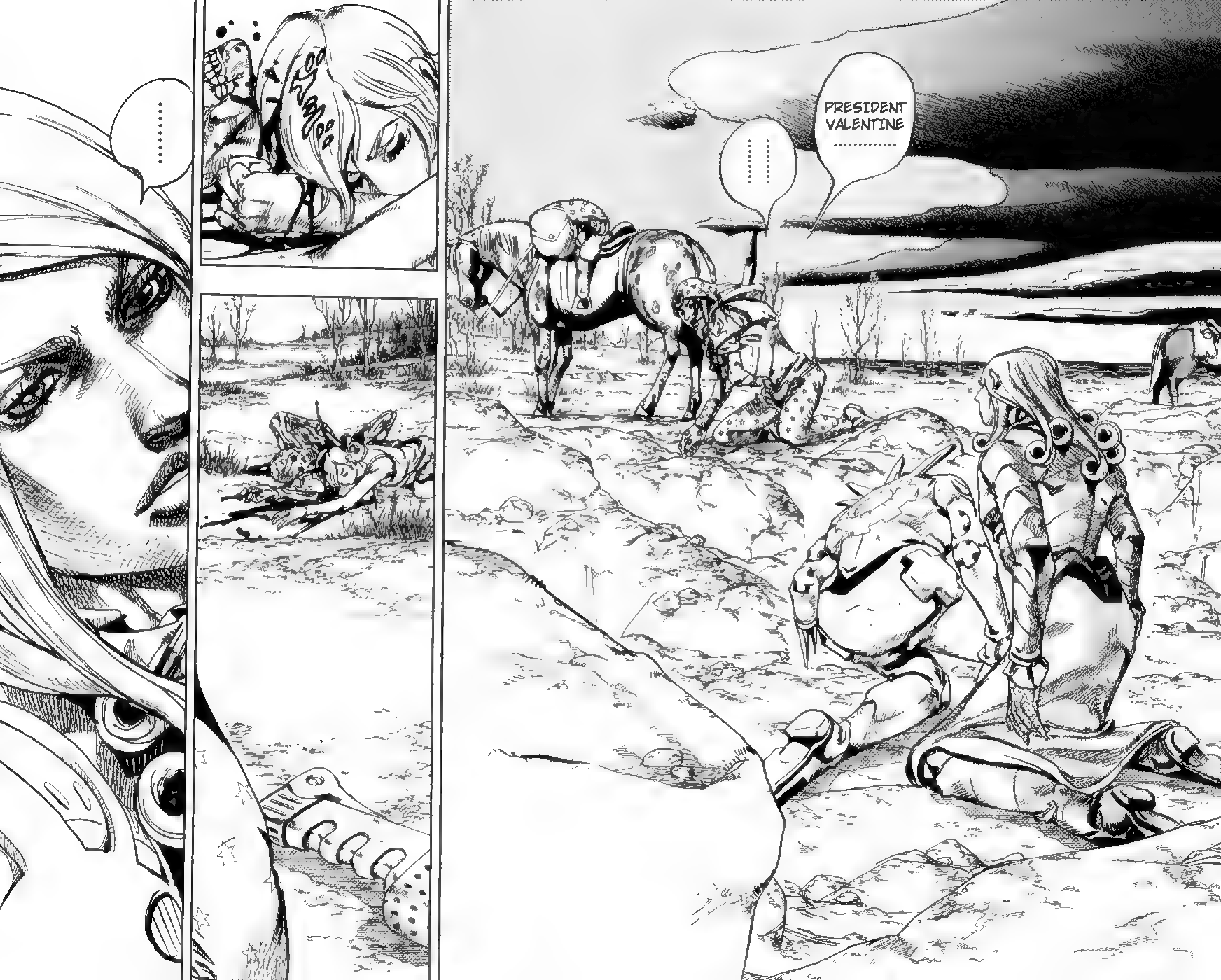

#89
BREAK MY HEART, BREAK YOUR HEART PART② 7

#90
HIGH VOLTAGE PART① 55

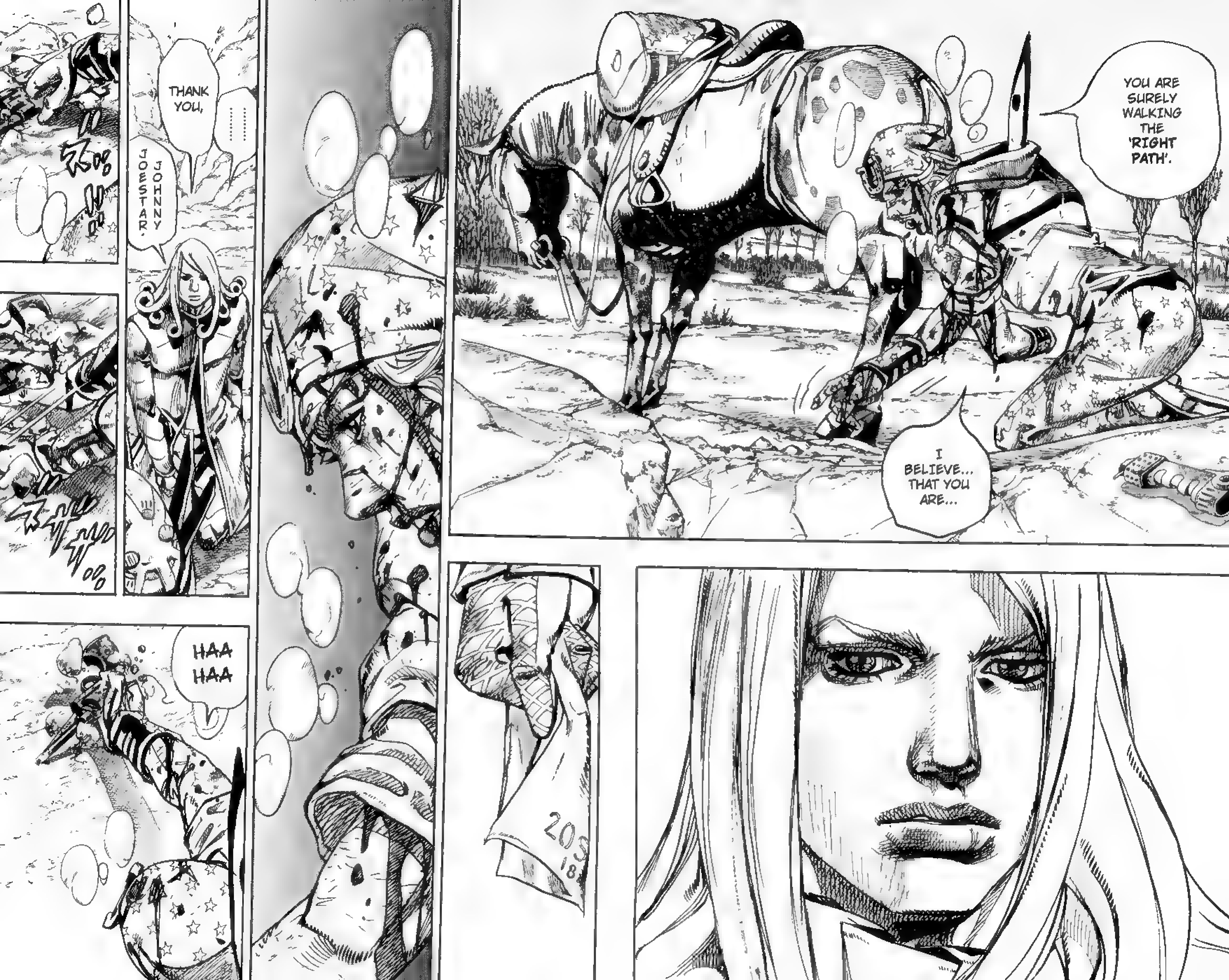
#91
HIGH VOLTAGE PART② 105

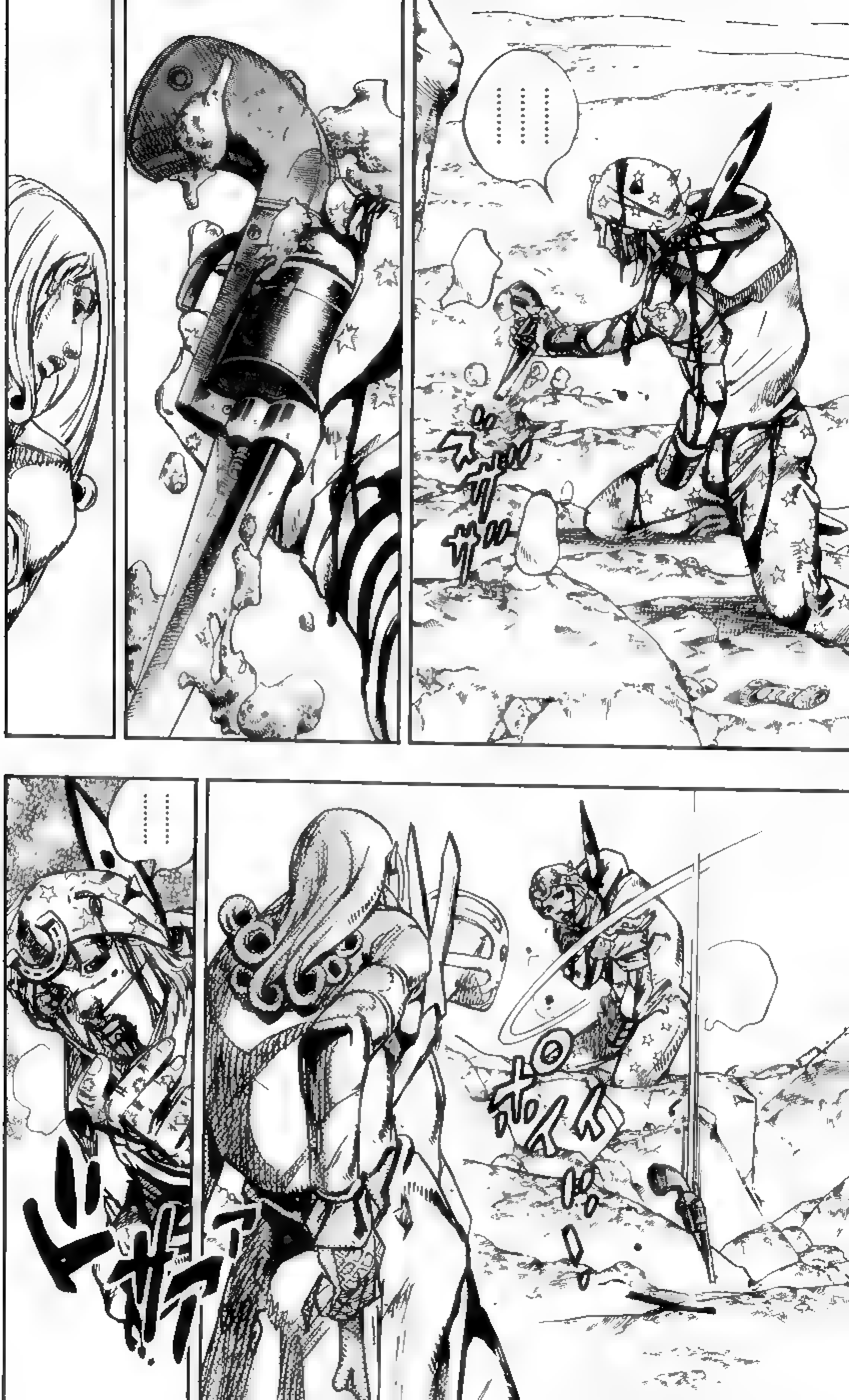

#89
BREAK MY HEART, BREAK YOUR HEART
PART ②

GOD,
YOU TOOK... THE WRONG SON...
HAAA
HAAA
HAAA
HAAH
HAAA
HAAA
HAA
HAAA
HAAH
HAAA
HAAA
I BELIEVE YOU...
......



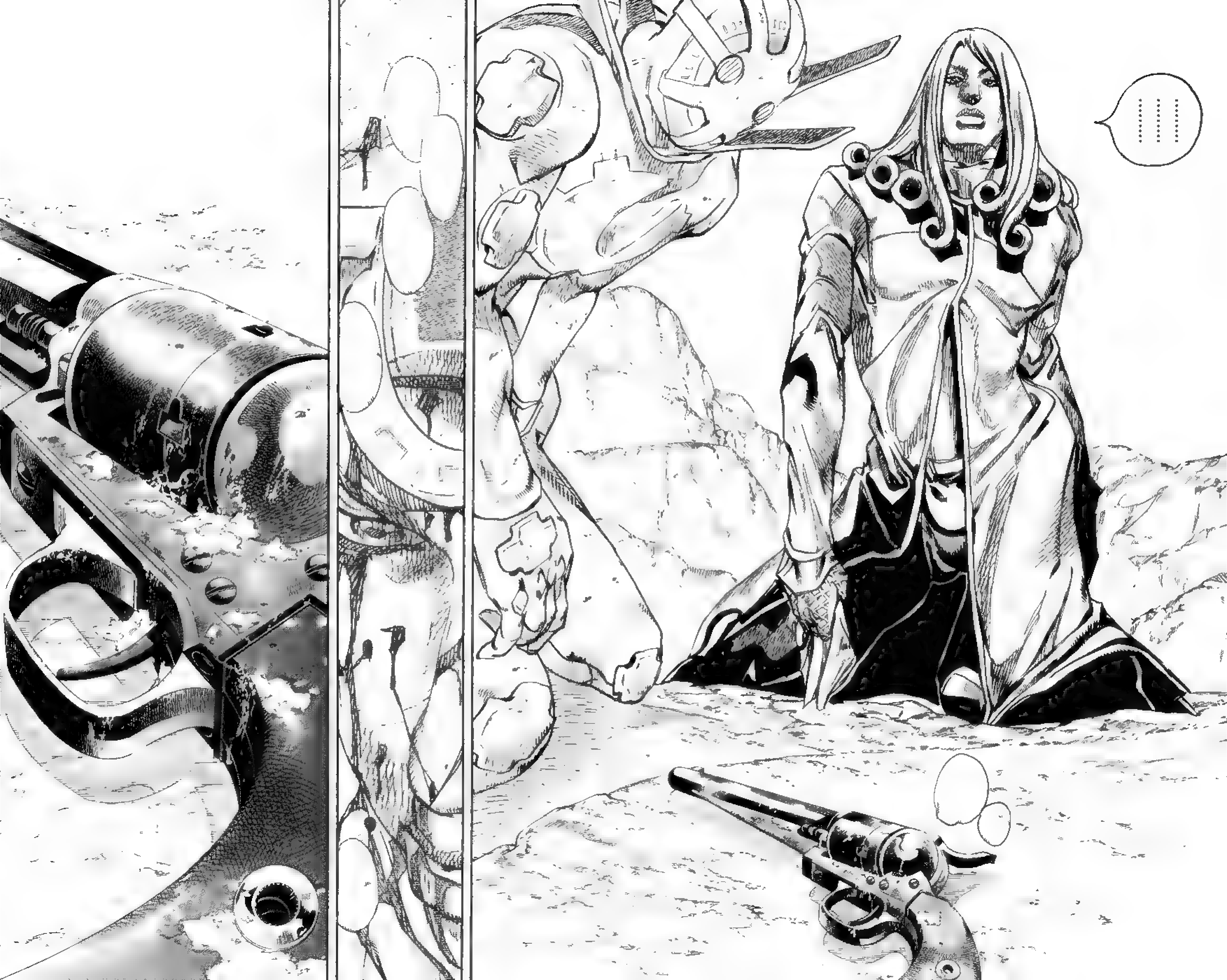
PRESIDENT VALENTINE ..............


YOU ARE SURELY WALKING THE 'RIGHT PATH'.
I BELIEVE... THAT YOU ARE...
THANK YOU, ......
JOHNNY JOESTAR.
HAA HAA


……
ポイッ
……
ドザァ

HAAH
HAAH
HAA
HAAH
HAA
HAA
HAA
BEFORE THAT...
THAT 'GUN'...
IT'S 'YOUR GUN'...
YOU HAD IT HIDDEN ON YOUR BODY WHEN YOU CAME BACK TO THIS WORLD FROM ANOTHER DIMENSION.
YOU SHOT GYRO WITH IT BEFORE... IT'S THE 'GUN THAT FINISHED HIM'...

!
YOU USED UP ALL THE BULLETS BEFORE, SO NOW ...
THE CHAMBER IS EMPTY... THERE ISN'T A SINGLE SHOT LEFT.
BANG!
THIS 'GUN' COULD ALSO DO THINGS LIKE THAT.
AND YOU THREW THE 'GUN' AWAY BEFORE.
AS A TEST, TRY PICKING UP THAT 'GUN'.



I... BELIEVE YOUR 'VOW'... 100% NOW.
I WANT TO SHOOT YOU WITH THE 'OPPOSITE ROTATION' AND STOP THE 'INFINITE ROTATION' THAT IS GOING ON NOW IN YOUR BODY.
FROM MY HEART, I REALLY WANT TO DO THAT.
BUT...
I WANT TO BELIEVE ANOTHER '1%'.
THAT 'BEHIND' YOUR VOW, SOMEWHERE DEEP 'BEHIND' IT, THERE LIES NO 'DECEPTIVE SURPRISE ATTACK' AND 'BETRAYAL'...
ALL YOU HAVE TO DO IS PICK UP THAT 'GUN' WITH YOUR OWN 'HAND'.
I'M SURE NOTHING WILL HAPPEN.
NOTHING WILL HAPPEN..........
THAT WILL DO...

JUST TRY PICKING IT UP.
PRESIDENT VALENTINE.
IF NOTHING HAPPENS, EVERY-THING WILL BE ABLE TO COME TO AN END...
AND I'LL BE ABLE TO BELIEVE YOU 101%...

HAAAA
HAAAA
HAAH
HAAAH
HAA
HAAAH
ゴゴゴゴ
ゴゴゴゴ

MY HEART AND ACTIONS ARE UTTERLY UNCLOUDED .............!
THEY ARE ALL THOSE OF 'JUSTICE'.

ドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドド
ダッ

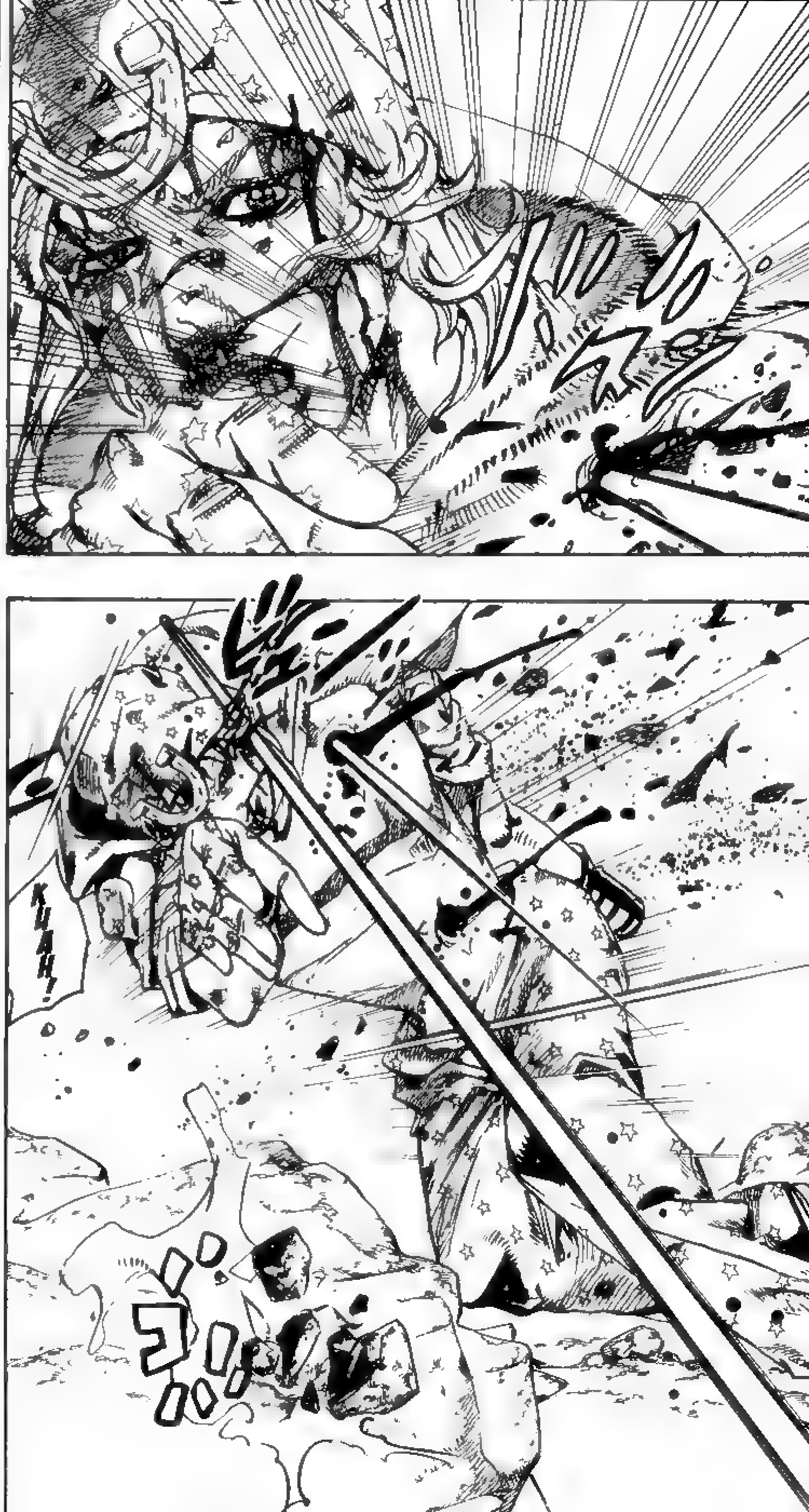
ドバァッ

UH!!
GU-HAH!!

MUH!
GA-BUH!

GURAH!!
GAGUH!!

UGUH



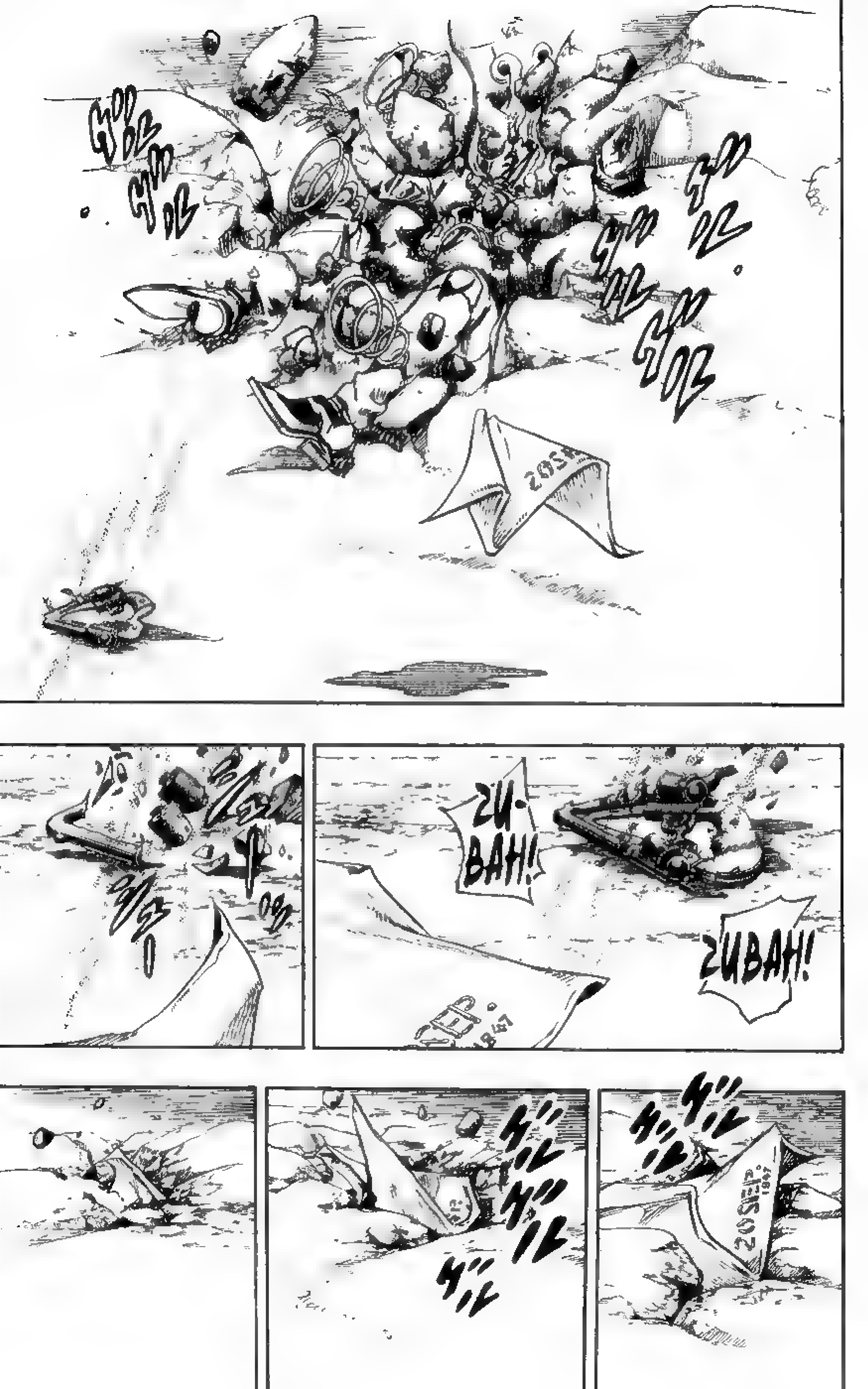
KAH...
BHAH-
UUH! UU!
UUUH!

HEY, JOHNNY ...
JOHNNY ... OVER HERE.
OVER HERE.
I'M MOVING ... OVER THIS WAY ...
UUH...
UU... UH...
U... UH.
......
AAH...

IF THAT'S HOW IT IS ... I'M OKAY WITH IT...
MY REAL NAME...
YOU PROMISED, RIGHT ........?
DON'T TELL ANYBODY.
SEE YA .... TAKE CARE.
GYRO...
......
I'M SORRY ...
I'M REALLY SORRY ...
I WANTED TO BELIEVE.
I REALLY ... WANTED TO BELIEVE THE PRES- IDENT.
GOOD BYE,
GYRO.
...... ...... GOOD BYE.

ド
20 SEP 1841

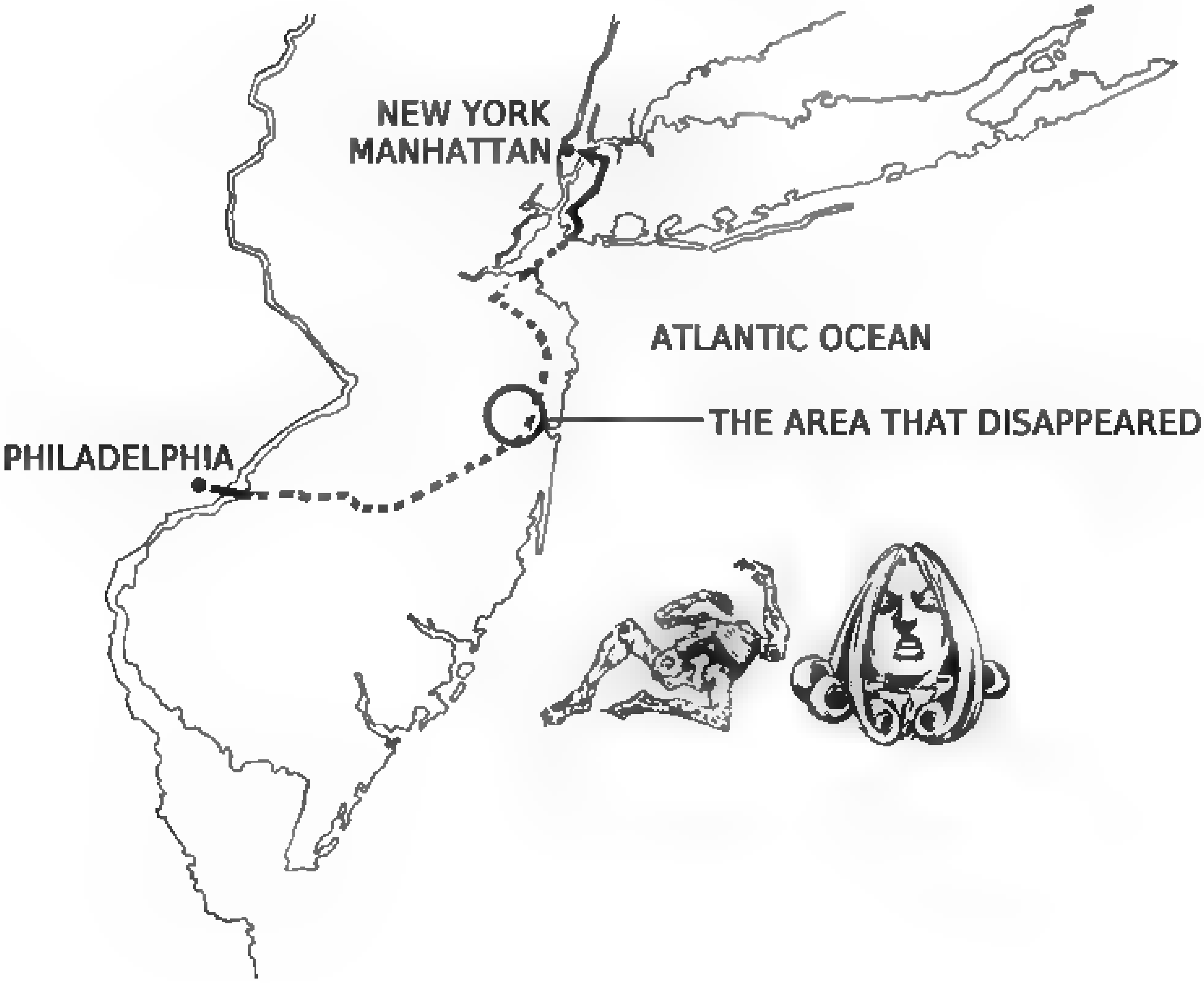
OSEP
1847


ZU-
BAH!
ZUBAH!

UUH... UH... U.
UUUH UUUUH.
U-UUUU-UUH.
AAA...
UAAA... AAA-AAAA.
UWAAAAAAAAAA
AAAAAAAAAAA

UAAAAAA
AAAA
UWAAAAH
AAAAAAAA

THE RESULT OF THE PRESIDENT'S DIMENSION TRAVERSING '**D4C**' ABILITY COMBINED WITH THE '**GOOD FORTUNE**' OF THE '**COMPLETED CORPSE**' IS A RANGE OF AREA WHERE '**BAD THINGS**' ARE SHOT OFF AND ANNIHILATED. LAND, HOUSES, PEOPLE, AND ANIMALS ALL GOT SHOT OFF SOMEWHERE AND DISAPPEARED WITHOUT ANYONE NOTICING. PERHAPS THE AREA GOT SMALLER. BUT IT'S CERTAIN THAT THE '**FORTUNATE THINGS**' INCREASED.



#90
HIGH VOLTAGE
PART 1

UH.
UUH.
UUUU.
THANK GOODNESS...
THANK YOU.
MY DEAR LUCY ...
UUUH.
AUUAA ........

I'M TRULY ...
GLAD YOU'RE ...
...SAFE.
PRESIDENT VALENTINE IS GONE...
HE'S DEAD.
AND HIS STAND WAS DEST-ROYED.
......
AND AFTER HE DIED... HE DISAP-PEARED TO SOME OTHER DIMENSION ...
NOW HE WON'T BE GREETING US AT THE RACE'S CLOSING CEREMONY.
........... BUT NO HUMANS EXIST IN 'THIS' WORLD WHO KNOW THAT FACT.

EVERY-ONE'S GONE ...
NO ONE'S LEFT...
JUST... LITTLE BY LITTLE ...
......
I ALWAYS IMAGINED... IT'D BE A LITTLE MORE DRAMATIC. BUT IT'S LIKE THE MOON BECOMING FULL..
THE THING ITSELF IS KINDA... UNCONCERNED ABOUT IT ...
YOU CAN STAND ?
JOHNNY JOESTAR ...

MR. STEEL ...
EVERY-THING'S OVER NOW...
LUCY IS SAFE.
JOHNNY ...
...THANK YOU.

THAT'S 'POCOLOCO' IN THE LEAD.
THEN 'NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA' ....
AND 'BABA YAGA' TOO...
AT THIS RATE ...
......
THE 'STEEL BALL RUN' WILL REACH ITS GOAL...
THE RACE WILL PROBABLY BE A BIG SUCCESS ...
IT WAS SOMETHING I DREAMED OF EVER SINCE I WAS A BOY, BUT... AT SOME POINT, IT BECAME SOMETHING DIFFERENT...
I NEVER ONCE THOUGHT THAT I MYSELF WOULD REACH THAT GOAL.
THE STEEL BALL RUN'S 'CLOSING CEREMONY' ..........
......
......

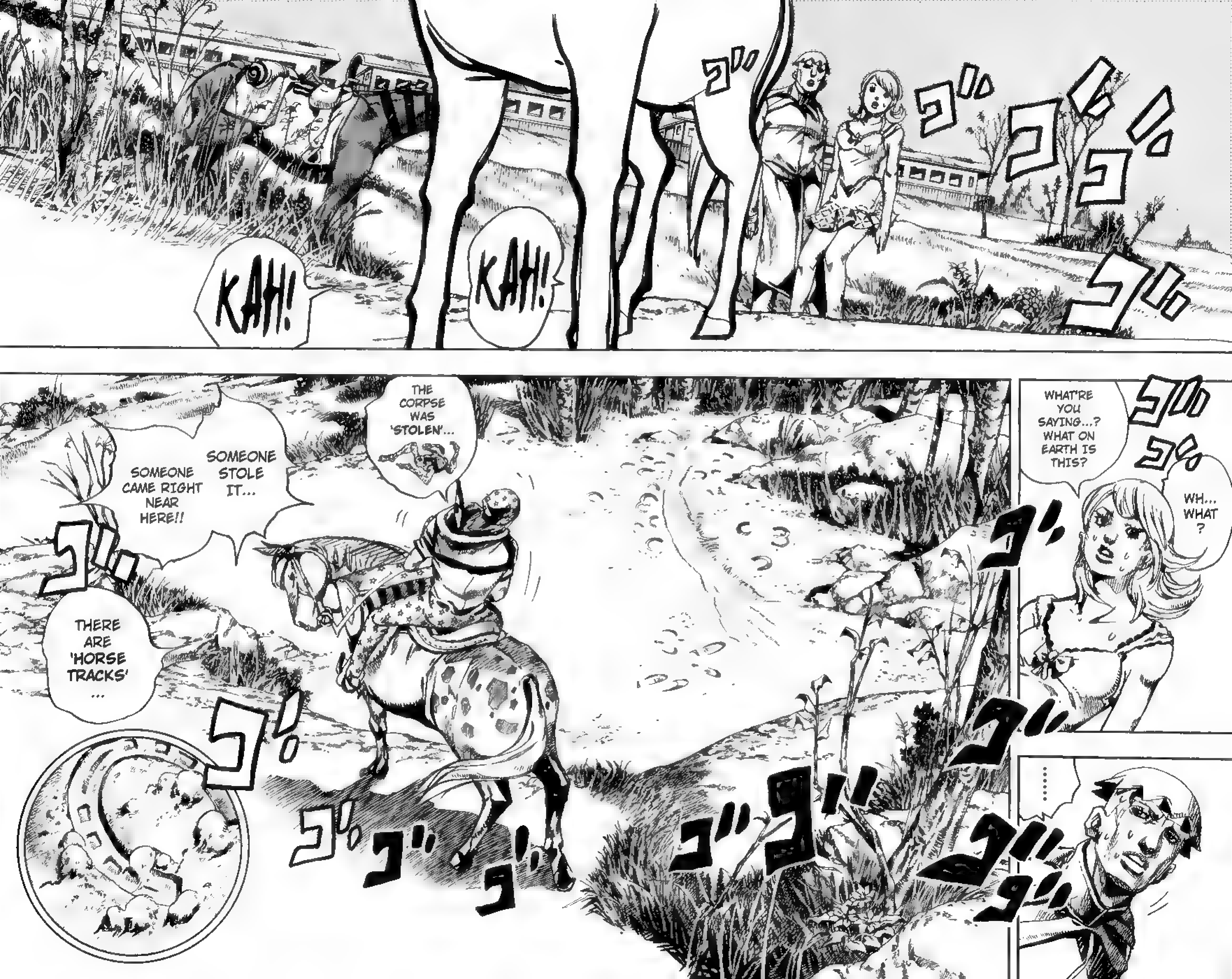
JOHNNY ...?
WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO NOW ?
......
... WHAT AM I GONNA DO...?
I HAVE NO IDEA ...
BUT...
I NEED TO FIND GYRO...
GYRO'S 'CORPSE' ...
I NEED TO BURY IT...
THE COASTLINE IS GRADUALLY RECEDING BACK TO THE OPEN SEA.
IF MY 'FRIEND' JUST GETS WASHED AWAY...
I COULDN'T BE OK WITH THAT... I NEED TO FIND HIM ...

GYRO'S OBJECTIVE FOR ENTERING THIS 'STEEL BALL RUN' RACE WAS;
'TO SAVE AN INNOCENT BOY FROM HIS HOME COUNTRY WITH AMNESTY'.
AT THE VERY LEAST, I WANT TO TELL WHAT KIND OF RACE GYRO RAN ACROSS THIS CONTINENT ...
TO HIS COUNTRY AND HIS FATHER, AS MY THANKS AND RESPONSIBILITY TO GYRO...
THAT'S THE LAST THING I NEED TO DO ....

?
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA

?
...
JOHNNY
?
?

I CAN'T BEL-IEVE THIS ...
NO WAY...
IT WAS SO CLOSE TO ME...
WHAT'RE YOU DOING ?
DID SOME-THING... HAPPEN ?
JOHNNY ?
BAH!
BAH!
THE 'CORPSE' IS GONE.
THE 'CORPSE', THAT I TIED UP, DISAPPEARED!
ALONG WITH THE BLANKET ...


KAH!
KAH!
WHAT'RE YOU SAYING...? WHAT ON EARTH IS THIS?
WH... WHAT?
......
THE CORPSE WAS 'STOLEN'...
SOMEONE STOLE IT...
SOMEONE CAME RIGHT NEAR HERE!!
THERE ARE 'HORSE TRACKS'...

THERE'S STILL AN 'ENEMY'.
EH...?
?
ドドドド
ドド

......
THE 'CORPSE' DISAPPEARED ..........?
I...I DON'T UNDERSTAND...!! YOU'RE SAYING SOMEONE WAS HIDING SOMEWHERE NEARBY JUST NOW?
AND SOMEONE'S BEEN WATCHING US THE WHOLE TIME?
I DON'T UNDERSTAND, JOHNNY ...
ドドド
ZUH!
ドドド
I CAN'T BELIEVE IT EITHER, BUT ............. IT LOOKS LIKE THAT'S IT...
OVER HERE, THE 'CORPSE' WAS PUT ON A HORSE.
ドドド
I DIDN'T HEAR ANY APPROACHING 'FOOTSTEPS' ...OR EVEN SENSE THE HORSE'S PRESENCE ...
IT'S UNBELIEVABLE, BUT SOMEONE WITH THAT KIND OF TECHNIQUE WAS HERE ...
AND THEY TOOK IT AND LEFT... BASED ON WHERE THE HORSESHOE PRINTS ARE FACING, IT LOOKS LIKE THEY WENT 'EAST'.
ドドド

...WHAT ON EARTH DOES THAT MEAN?
WHY DID THEY DO IT ...?
'PRESIDENT VALENTINE' IS DEAD, ISN'T HE?
WHO COULD IT POSSIBLY BE!? THERE'S STILL SOMEONE ELSE? WHAT DO THEY WANT?
THAT 'CORPSE' WAS A TRULY IMPORTANT OBJECT, WASN'T IT?
GYRO DIED FOR ITS SAKE...
AS DID MANY OTHERS ...
AND THERE ARE PROBABLY STILL... PEOPLE WHO'LL DIE BECAUSE OF THAT 'CORPSE'.
THESE 'HORSE-SHOE PRINTS' ...
I'VE SEEN THEM BEFORE... THEY'RE 'HORSESHOE PRINTS' I'M VERY FAMILIAR WITH.
BUT WHOSE WERE THEY...?
IT'S ONE OF THE 'PARTI-CIPANTS IN THE RACE'!...

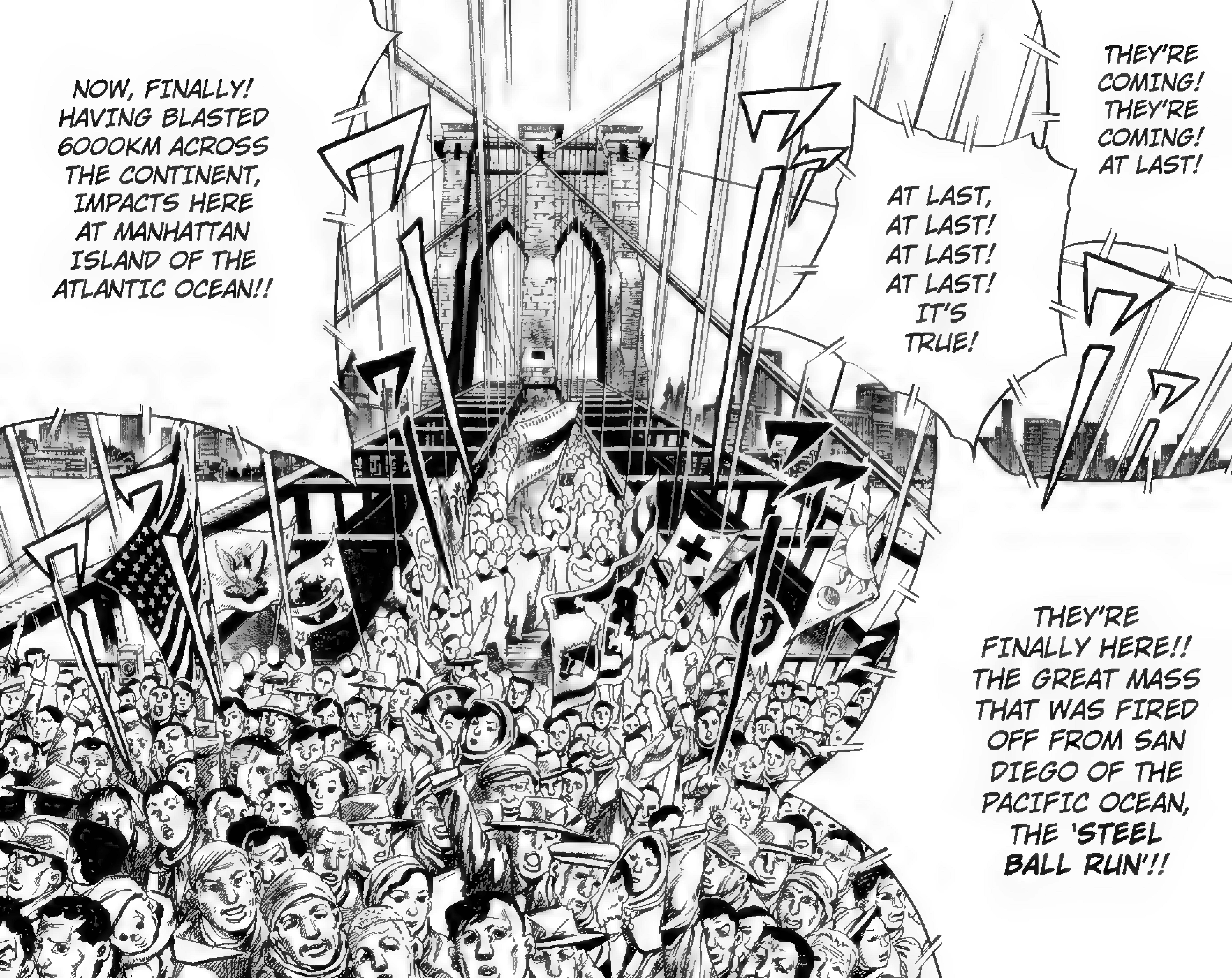
WHO CAN FIGURE OUT WHO THIS GUY IS...?
WHO KNOWS THAT THE 'CORPSE' IS REALLY IMPORTANT...? WHO UNDERSTANDS THE 'CORPSE'?
IN THIS WHOLE WORLD, IT IS ME ALONE; 'JOHNNY JOESTAR' ...
THERE'S NO WAY I'LL HAND IT OVER TO ANYONE... THE ONLY ONE WITH THE RIGHT TO END THIS IS ME!!
LUCY ...
I HAVE A FAVOR TO ASK. COULD YOU PLEASE LOOK FOR GYRO IN MY STEAD?
AND LOOK AFTER VALKYRIE, TOO.
JOHNNY,
..YES, OF COURSE, BUT...
......
WELL, I'LL...
WAIT ...
WAIT, JOHNNY ...
IF YOU'RE GOING TO 'CHASE AFTER' HIM, THEN... I HAVE SOME ADVICE AND INFORMATION TO GIVE TO YOU.
I'M SURE YOU REMEMBER... HOW THOROUGHLY PREPARED AND CAREFUL PRESIDENT VALENTINE WAS...
YES... I REMEMBER THAT THE PRESIDENT ...
SOME TIME AGO...
JUST BEFORE THIS RACE BEGAN, CONSTRUCTED A 'SHELTER' BENEATH MANHATTAN ISLAND.
FROM THE EVENTS THAT HAVE OCCURRED UP UNTIL NOW, IF I WERE TO MAKE A GUESS, I THINK PERHAPS ...
IT IS A PLACE FOR 'WHEN IT WAS ALL GATHERED' .............. TO HOUSE THE 'CORPSE'!
......

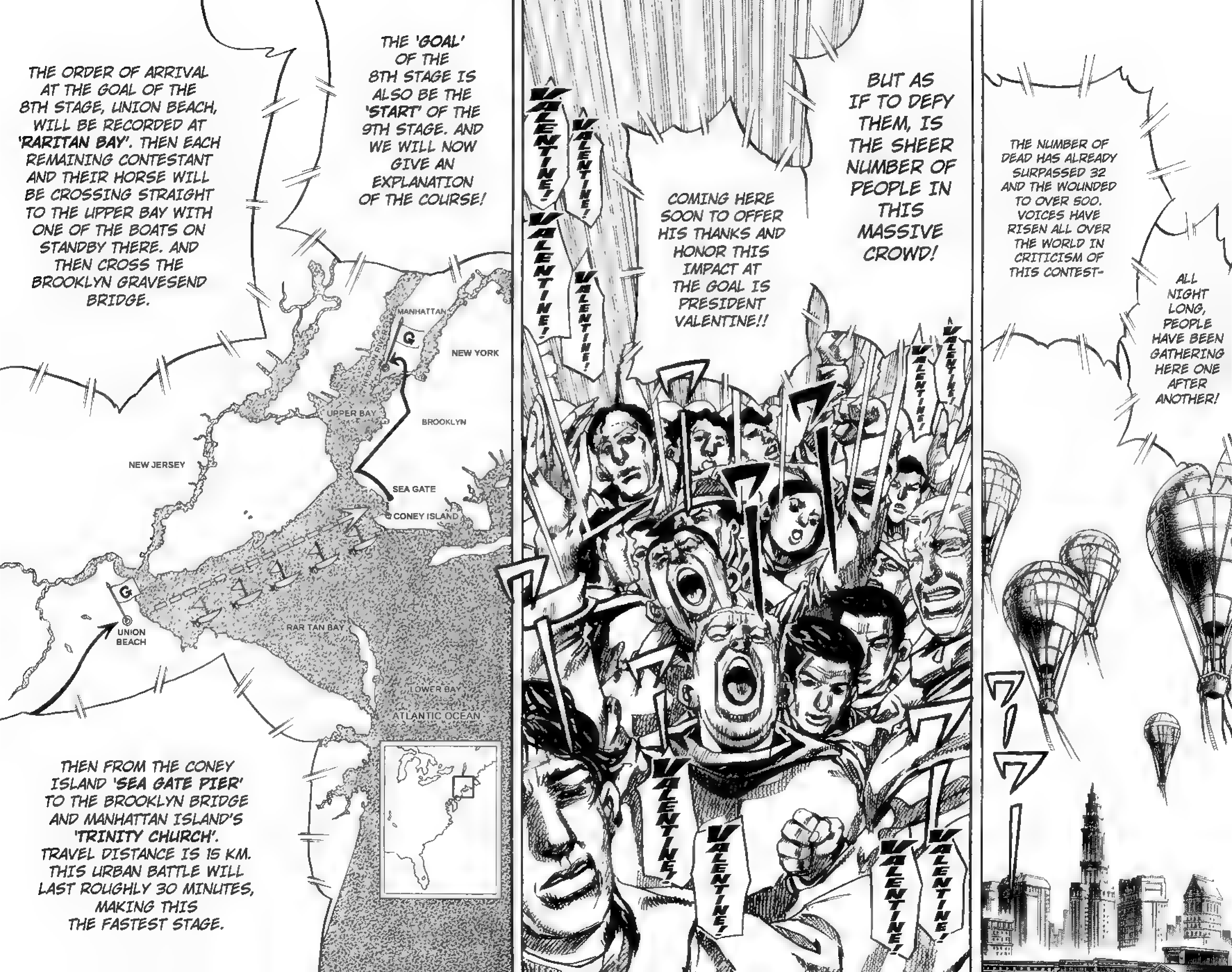
# 『THE Final STAGE』 -MANHATTAN RHAPSODY-

8th STAGE (New Jersey State, Union Beach) ⟶ the (Final) 9th. STAGE (New York State, Manhattan Trinity Church)

| Travel distance: 15km | Estimated travel time: 30 minutes | Number of participants: 45 |
|---|---|---|

THE TRAVELING HORSES THAT DISAPPEARED IN THE DARK OF NIGHT, TOGETHER WITH THE RISING SUN, HAVE RETURNED IN A SOARING 'MASS' OF RADIANCE!
TODAY IS JANUARY 18TH 1891!
THE TIME IS 6:02 AM!
THE WEATHER IS CLEAR!
THE BEAMS OF LIGHT THAT DISAPPEARED TO THE WEST ARE SURE TO BE REBORN IN THE EAST. THE RADIANCE IS SURE TO RETURN!


THEY'RE COMING! THEY'RE COMING! AT LAST!
AT LAST, AT LAST! AT LAST! AT LAST! IT'S TRUE!
NOW, FINALLY! HAVING BLASTED 6000KM ACROSS THE CONTINENT, IMPACTS HERE AT MANHATTAN ISLAND OF THE ATLANTIC OCEAN!!
THEY'RE FINALLY HERE!! THE GREAT MASS THAT WAS FIRED OFF FROM SAN DIEGO OF THE PACIFIC OCEAN, THE 'STEEL BALL RUN'!!



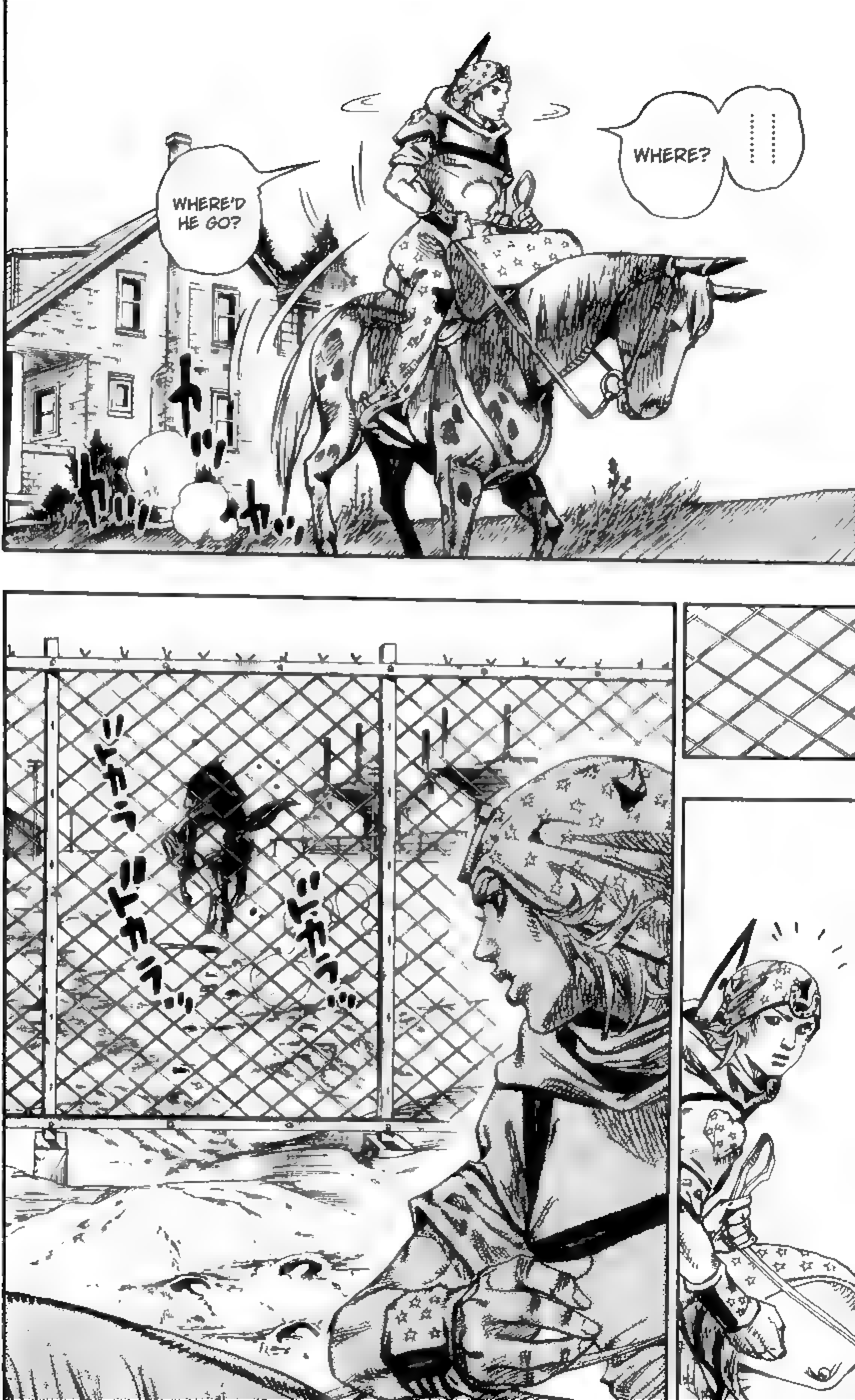
THE NUMBER OF DEAD HAS ALREADY SURPASSED 32 AND THE WOUNDED TO OVER 500. VOICES HAVE RISEN ALL OVER THE WORLD IN CRITICISM OF THIS CONTEST-
ALL NIGHT LONG, PEOPLE HAVE BEEN GATHERING HERE ONE AFTER ANOTHER!
BUT AS IF TO DEFY THEM, IS THE SHEER NUMBER OF PEOPLE IN THIS MASSIVE CROWD!
COMING HERE SOON TO OFFER HIS THANKS AND HONOR THIS IMPACT AT THE GOAL IS PRESIDENT VALENTINE!!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
VALENTINE!
THE 'GOAL' OF THE 8TH STAGE IS ALSO BE THE 'START' OF THE 9TH STAGE. AND WE WILL NOW GIVE AN EXPLANATION OF THE COURSE!
THE ORDER OF ARRIVAL AT THE GOAL OF THE 8TH STAGE, UNION BEACH, WILL BE RECORDED AT 'RARITAN BAY'. THEN EACH REMAINING CONTESTANT AND THEIR HORSE WILL BE CROSSING STRAIGHT TO THE UPPER BAY WITH ONE OF THE BOATS ON STANDBY THERE. AND THEN CROSS THE BROOKLYN GRAVESEND BRIDGE.
MANHATTAN
G
NEW YORK
UPPER BAY
BROOKLYN
NEW JERSEY
SEA GATE
CONEY ISLAND
G
UNION BEACH
RAR TAN BAY
LOWER BAY
ATLANTIC OCEAN
THEN FROM THE CONEY ISLAND 'SEA GATE PIER' TO THE BROOKLYN BRIDGE AND MANHATTAN ISLAND'S 'TRINITY CHURCH'. TRAVEL DISTANCE IS 15 KM. THIS URBAN BATTLE WILL LAST ROUGHLY 30 MINUTES, MAKING THIS THE FASTEST STAGE.

WOA~~~H, HOLD ON THERE!
HIS HORSE'S LEGS ARE WOUNDED! HE CAN NO LONGER TRAVEL! 'BABA YAGA' HAS STOPPED RUNNING!
IT SEEMS THAT 'BABA YAGA' HAS STOPPED MOVING!
BUT BABA YAGA HAS STOPPED HIS JOURNEY WITH THE ATLANTIC OCEAN RIGHT IN FRONT OF HIS EYES!
HE ENDURED THE SCORCHING HOT DESERT SANDS! HE STOOD AGAINST THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS! HE TRAVERSED THE GREAT PRAIRIES AND FROZEN LAKES, AND CROSSED COUNTLESS RIVERS!
'BABA YAGA' HAS RE-TIRED!
HE'S GETTING OFF THE SADDLE!
JUST BEFORE THE GOAL, IT SEEMS HIS MARCH THROUGH THE DARK NIGHT HAS WOUNDED HIS HORSE'S LEGS!
HIS HORSE'S LEGS ARE HURT!

THESE HORSESHOE PRINTS...

THEY'RE 'HORSESHOE PRINTS', I REMEMBER THEM VERY WELL...
THEY'RE NOT 'POCOLOCO'S' ...
THEY'RE NOT 'HIGASHI-KATA'S' EITHER ...
BUT THEY'RE SO FAMILIAR.
WHAT IS THIS...? I HAVE NO IDEA ...

ドドド
ドド
!?
……
チョロッ
ヤッホッ


WHERE? ......
WHERE'D HE GO?

'IT'S HIM'.
THE HORSE-SHOE PRINTS ARE 'HIS'...
I'VE CAUGHT UP TO HIM.
IN FRONT OF HIS SADDLE... HE'S GOT SOMETHING THAT LOOKS LIKE THE 'CORPSE'...
'WHO' IS HE?
THERE WAS NO ONE PRESIDENT VALENTINE TRUSTED REGARDING THE 'CORPSE'... HE WAS ACTING 'ALL BY HIMSELF' .........
BUT... THEN HOW DO I EXPLAIN THE FACT THAT THIS RIDER WAS IN THE RACE...?
DAMN.
ANYHOW, HOW'D HE GET OVER THIS FENCE?
AND IN SPITE OF THAT, THIS GUY'S HEADING TO THE SECRET 'SHELTER' THAT THE PRESIDENT BUILT?
(IF THERE REALLY IS A 'SHELTER').
'SHOULD I SHOOT HIM?'...

NO... HE'S BARELY IN 'RANGE' ..........
THAT GUY COULDN'T POSSIBLY KNOW THAT AND BE TRYING TO MAINTAIN THIS DISTANCE FROM ME, COULD HE?
SOMETHING'S ODD HERE. THAT GUY... HE'S PRESUMED INNOCENT UNTIL PROVEN GUILTY, BUT...
IF HE COMES WITHIN MY NAIL BULLETS' 'FIRING RANGE', I'LL WIPE HIM OUT INSTANTLY!

BA-KA-RA!
BA-KA-RA!
BA-KA-RA!
BAKARAH!
BAKARAH!
BAKARA!

OK.
HE'S IN RANGE. I'LL BRING HIM DOWN.
!!
UH-

ドドドドドド
NO WAY... THERE WAS NOBODY WHO COULD...!? WHERE'D HE GO THIS TIME?
I'M SURE THERE WAS NOBODY IN THE 'RACE' WHO COULD RUN LIKE THIS.......
ドドドド
'HORSE-SHOE PRINTS'!
ドド
!!
THERE'S A GAP!
UH-!!

HEY STEVEN, LOOK ...
LOOK AT THIS.
COULD THIS BE...? NO WAY...
THOSE 'HORSE-SHOE PRINTS' ...
THE ONES JOHNNY FOLLOWED...THEY'RE THE 'HORSESHOE PRINTS' THAT THE PERSON WHO TOOK THE 'CORPSE' LEFT, BUT...
THE HOLE THE PRESIDENT WAS IN... THEY COME OUT FROM 'THE BOTTOM OF THE HOLE'...
THE HORSE-SHOE PRINTS START FROM THE BOTTOM OF THE HOLE...

THEY COME OUT OF 'THE SOIL AT THE BOTTOM OF THE HOLE'.
THE HORSE'S FOOT-PRINTS ...
WHAT IS THIS? SOMEONE CAME OUT OF THE HOLE RIDING A HORSE...
'A DIFFERENT DIMENSION' .........

KUH.

『THE WORLD』 THIS TIME IS ONLY MINE!
WHAT!? IT CAN'T BE...
......D......
!? 『DIO』

ZURAAA!

#91
HIGH VOLTAGE
PART②

HMPH.
KOH!!
GU!!

ESPECIALLY AS IT SEEMS THERE'S NOTHING DIFFERENT ABOUT YOU IN THIS PLACE...
KON!
KON!
KON!
I KNOW YOU WELL, 'JOHNNY JOESTAR' ...

HAA
HAA
HAA
HAAH
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAA
HAAH
HAA
I'VE BEEN LOOKING... FOR YOU.
JUST HOW MANY... 'DIMENSIONS' DID I CROSS...?
HAA
HAA
LOOKING FOR YOU...
I FINALLY FOUND YOU.
ALIVE ........
HAA
HAA
WAIT, DON'T GO!
WAIT!
........

FROM THE LOOK OF THINGS,
'ALIVE'?
IT SEEMS TO ME THE ONE WHO'S GONNA DIE... IS YOU, MR. PRESIDENT.
HAA
THERE'S A WORLD YOU DON'T KNOW OF KNOWN AS THE 'BASE WORLD'.
HAA
HAA
OK...? DIO, LISTEN CLOSELY.
VERY SOON, I WILL BE DEFEATED BY JOHNNY JOESTAR.
HAA

......
OH...
REALLY?
YOU THINK OF ME AS AN ENEMY AND DISTRUST ME, NOW IT'S DIFFERENT.
THIS IS MY 'LAST REQUEST'.
JOHNNY JOESTAR'S ABILITY IS;
'INFINITE ROTATION'.
MY BODY WILL SOON BE ANNIHILATED... FROM A WORLD SOMEWHERE.
HIS 'NAIL BULLETS' ARE AN INVINCIBLE STAND ABILITY...
NO MATTER WHERE I FLEE, THE ROTATION NEVER STOPS AND I'M BROUGHT BACK TO THIS PLACE.
NO MATTER WHAT I DO, I CAN'T WIN ..............
WELL, THAT'S A PITY ...
BUT... MR. PRESIDENT... DON'T YOU HAVE SOMETHING TO SAY TO ME?
YOU WANT ME TO GET YOU A DRINK BEFORE YOU DIE, OR SOMETHING?

RECOVER THE 'HOLY CORPSE' IN MY PLACE.
THE ONE WHO OWNS THE 'CORPSE' CAN CONTROL ALL THE GOOD FORTUNE OF THIS WORLD.
BECOME THE CONTROLLER .........
?
......
THE 'HOLY CORPSE' IS CENTRAL TO THIS UNIVERSE, ITS 'BASIS'.
IT MEANS TAKING THE 'NAPKIN'.
I'M NOT AFRAID OF DYING, BUT ONE THING I CANNOT ALLOW IS FOR THE 'HOLY CORPSE' TO FALL INTO JOHNNY JOESTAR'S HANDS.
IT CANNOT LEAVE AMERICA... EVEN IF I DIE, I CAN'T LET IT GO...SO DIO, I'M ENTRUSTING IT TO YOU!

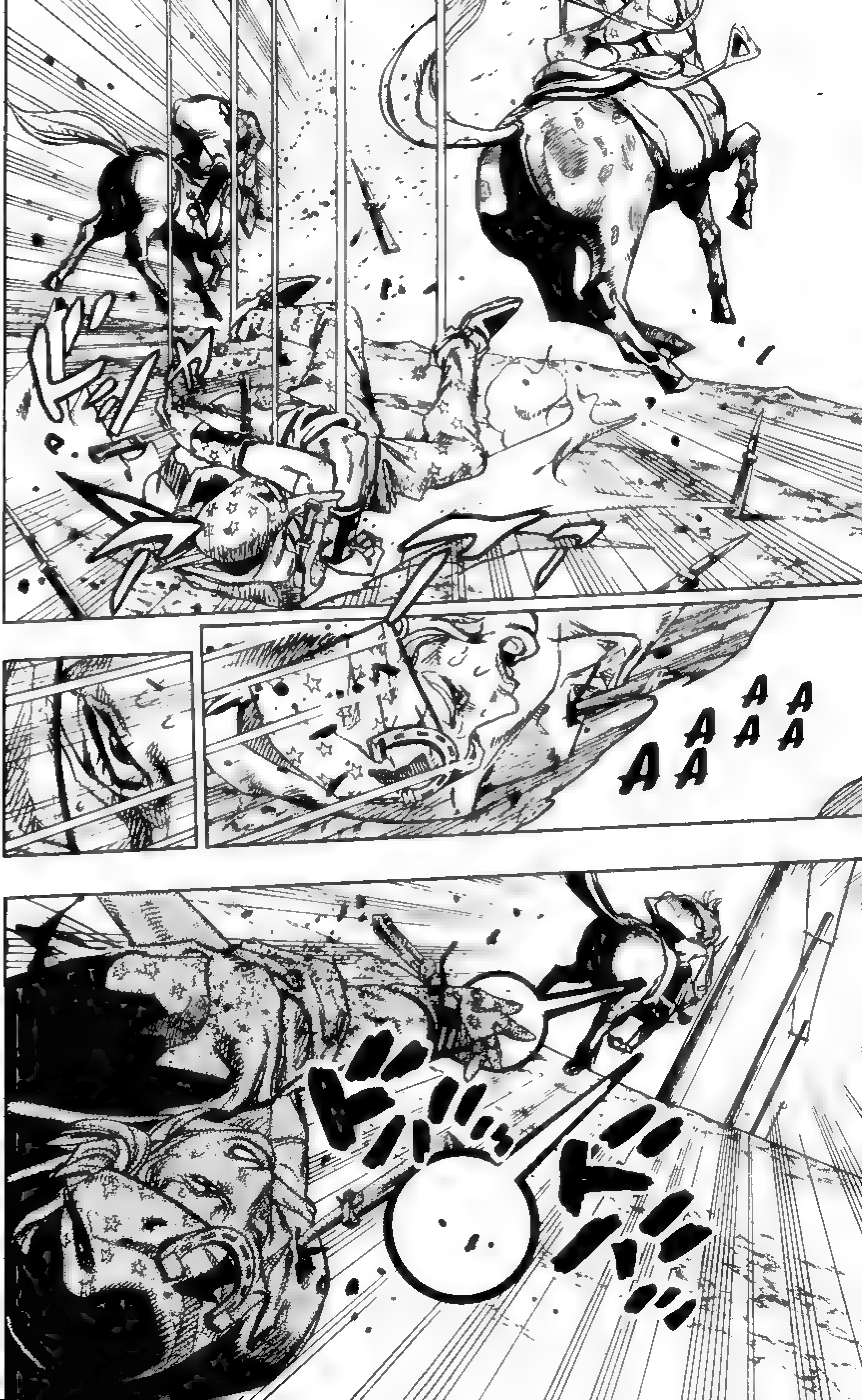
ONLY THE UNITED STATES! YOU MUST NOT HAND IT OVER TO SOME DIRTY BASTARD ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE WORLD WHO DOESN'T EVEN TRY TO UNDERSTAND ANYTHING!
'HOLY CORPSE' ......
'BASE WORLD' ......
I DON'T TRUST YOU EITHER, BUT...
YOUR AMBITION IS SOMETHING I APPROVE... YOU HAVE TO 'CONTROL'IT...
FOR AMERICA'S... FUTURE...
I HAVE BUILT A SECURE UNDERGROUND SHELTER IN MANHATTAN, NEW YORK FOR THE 'CORPSE'. STORE IT THERE! THE 'CORPSE' WILL BE YOURS.

NOW, 'YOUR BODY' ...
USING D4C'S ABILITY, YOU'LL HAVE TO GO BETWEEN 'GROUND' AND 'MORE GROUND' AND HIDE.
YOUR HORSE, TOO.
I ALSO PLAN TO DO A FINAL 'DEAL' WITH JOHNNY JOESTAR.
I HAVE CONFIDENCE I CAN CONVINCE HIM, BUT STILL NOT SURE IF I CAN KILL HIM...
IF I FAIL AND DIE, I'LL HAVE YOU CROSS DIMENSIONS TO THE 'BASE WORLD'.
BUT DON'T FORGET, DIO.
IN THAT WORLD LIES THE JOHNNY JOESTAR WITH THE 'INFINITE ROTATION'!
YOU MUST KILL HIM!

「THE WORLD」
MY ABILITY CAN STOP TIME FOR '5 SECONDS'... AND THEN RESTART IT.
TO PHRASE IT AS '5 SECONDS' ...
THERE'S REALLY NO REASON FOR IT, BUT...
-YEAH-
HAH!!

WHAT!?

UGUAAAA!


A A A A A A A

GANI!
UH.
ドゴォーーーン!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!

DAMMIT. AS I EXPECTED, THEY'RE A LITTLE DANGEROUS ...
THOSE 'NAIL BULLETS' ...
SO I CAN'T GET CARELESS AND MOVE TOO CLOSE TO HIM ..............
I NEED TO STAY OUTSIDE HIS FIRING RANGE.
AND ESPECIALLY AWAY FROM THAT 'INFINITE ROTATION' ....................
BUT I'VE ALREADY GOT A 'PLAN' TO DO AWAY WITH THAT.
UAA...
UGGH.
GUUA.

!?
TH... THAT GUY JUST NOW ...
N... NO WAY...
HIS 'STAND ABILITY' WASN'T DINOSAURS!!
WHAT WAS THAT JUST NOW !?
THE ONE RIDING WAS DIO...
AND THE HORSE-SHOE TRACKS WERE DIO'S TOO!
AND WHAT'S MORE ...
...WAS 'DIO'? IT CAN'T BE...
I DEFINITELY SAW DIO DIE WITH MY OWN EYES.
I'M SURE HE DIED ON THE TRAIN TRACKS IN NEW JERSEY.

KUH.
UAA
UAAA
UAAA
HHAAAA
HHAAAAAAAA
THAT WASN'T SIMPLY A 'TECHNIQUE' OR MERELY 'SPEED'...
AND THEN A BUNCH OF KNIVES SUDDENLY 'APPEARED' OUT OF THIN AIR!
AND DIO'S BODY MOVED THROUGH SPACE INSTAN-TANEOUSLY!

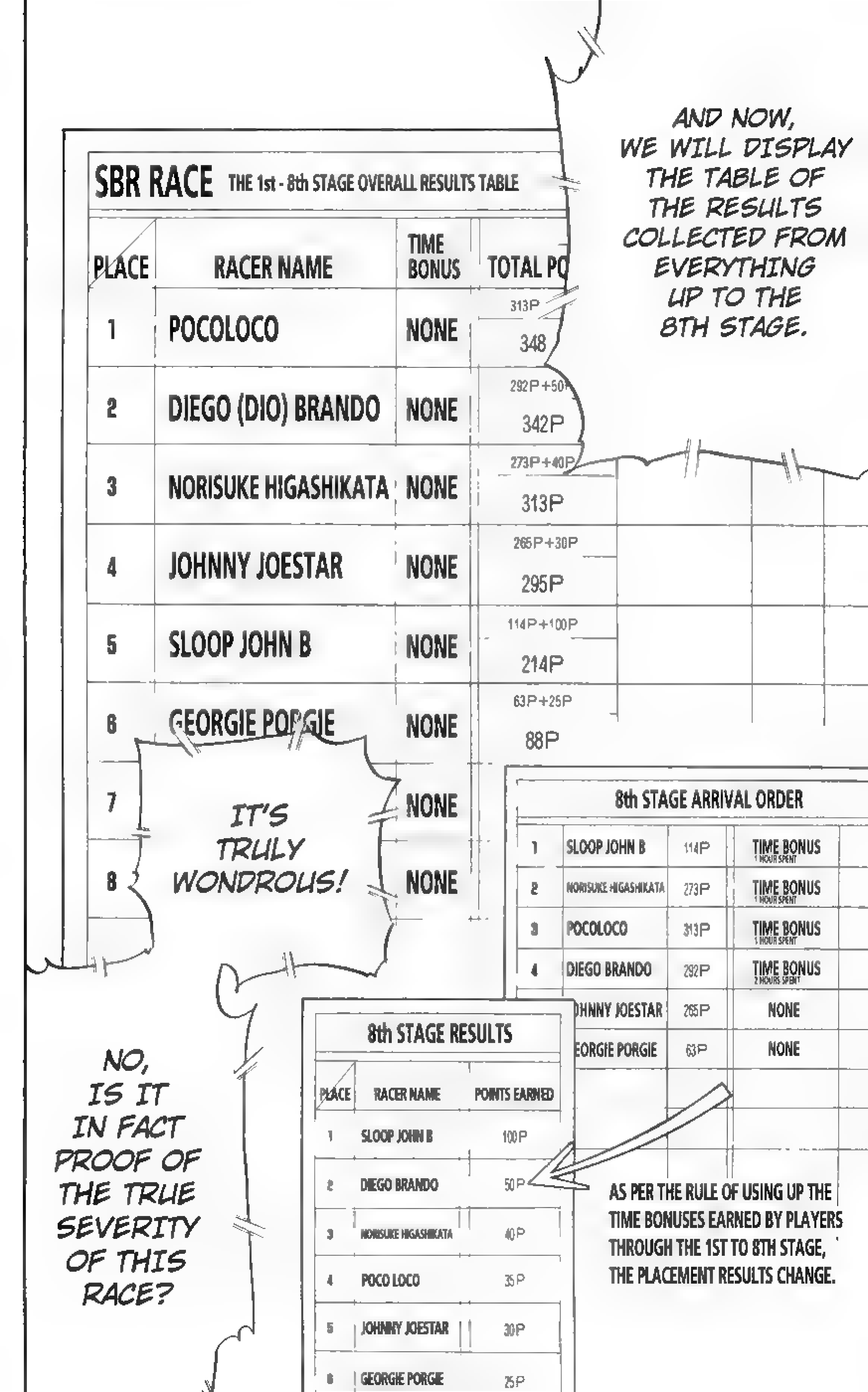
HIS 'ABILITY' IS COMPLETELY DIFFERENT!
IT'S LIKE TIME HAD 'STOPPED' FOR A FEW SECONDS!
THE ONLY ONE WHO CAN BRING THE DEAD GYRO ZEPPELI BACK TO THIS WORLD IS MY 'D4C' ABILITY.
LISTEN... I'D LIKE TO MAKE A 'DEAL' HERE... JOHNNY JOESTAR.
THIS IS... PRESIDENT VALENTINE'S DOING.

THAT'S A DIO FROM A DIFFERENT DIMENSION WITH A DIFFERENT 'ABILITY'!
SO THAT MEANS HE BROUGHT DIO HERE, TOO...
THE PRESIDENT HID A 'PISTOL' HE TOOK FROM A DIFFERENT DIMENSION WHEN HE CAME.
AND HE ALSO BROUGHT HOT PANTS' 'SPRAY'.
TO ENSURE NO ONE ELSE GOT THE 'CORPSE' EVEN IF HE DIED ...
TO PUT AN END TO THIS.

GOAL
HIS ARRIVAL ORDER IS 5TH!
AT THE END OF THE 8TH STAGE, UNION BEACH, NEW JERSEY!!
8th. STAGE GOAL
JOHNNY JOESTAR IS 5TH!!
JOHNNY JOESTAR AND 'SLOW DANCER' TOOK 5TH PLACE.
AND FOLLOWING HIM UP IN '6TH' IS GEORGIE PORGIE ...
キョロ

8th. STAGE GOAL
SFX: ROARING CROWD.

FOLLOWING THE PLACE RECORDING FOR THE '8TH STAGE', EACH CONTESTANT AND THEIR HORSE WILL BOARD A STEAM BOAT AND GO STRAIGHT ACROSS THE BAY.
DO-DO
DOH
DO-
DO OH
DO-DO
DOOO-DOH
CROSSING THE LOWER BAY TO CONEY ISLAND IN THE NEW YORK BOROUGH OF BROOKLYN!
THE SEA TRAVEL TIME IS APPROXIMATELY 2 HOURS, AND IN THAT TIME THE HORSES WILL BE ABLE TO PRESERVE THEIR STAMINA!
EACH BOAT WILL REACH THE FINAL STAGE ON THE OPPOSITE SHORE IN THE ORDER THE RACERS PLACED IN THE 8TH STAGE. THEN, STARTING WITH WHO CAME IN 1ST, THEY ARE SCHEDULED TO BEGIN THE FINAL STAGE IN 15 SECOND INTERVALS.
AFTER APPROXIMATELY 4 MONTHS OF CROSSING THE CONTINENT, WHEN THE RACERS REACH THE OPPOSITE SHORE IN THIS 'STEEL BALL RUN' RACE, THEY ARE THOUGHT TO HAVE ONLY 20 MORE MINUTES OF TRAVEL BEFORE THEY REACH THE FINISHING LINE!



AND NOW, WE WILL DISPLAY THE TABLE OF THE RESULTS COLLECTED FROM EVERYTHING UP TO THE 8TH STAGE.
SBR RACE THE 1st - 8th STAGE OVERALL RESULTS TABLE
PLACE | RACER NAME | TIME BONUS | TOTAL PO
1 | POCOLOCO | NONE | 313P 348
2 | DIEGO (DIO) BRANDO | NONE | 292P +50 342P
3 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | NONE | 273P +40P 313P
4 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | NONE | 265P +30P 295P
5 | SLOOP JOHN B | NONE | 114P +100P 214P
6 | GEORGIE PORGIE | NONE | 63P +25P 88P
7 | NONE
8 | NONE
IT'S TRULY WONDROUS!
8th STAGE ARRIVAL ORDER
1 | SLOOP JOHN B | 114P | TIME BONUS 1 HOUR SPENT
2 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 273P | TIME BONUS 1 HOUR SPENT
3 | POCOLOCO | 313P | TIME BONUS 1 HOUR SPENT
4 | DIEGO BRANDO | 292P | TIME BONUS 2 HOURS SPENT
JOHNNY JOESTAR | 265P | NONE
EORGIE PORGIE | 63P | NONE
8th STAGE RESULTS
PLACE | RACER NAME | POINTS EARNED
1 | SLOOP JOHN B | 100P
2 | DIEGO BRANDO | 50P
3 | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | 40P
4 | POCO LOCO | 35P
5 | JOHNNY JOESTAR | 30P
6 | GEORGIE PORGIE | 25P
AS PER THE RULE OF USING UP THE TIME BONUSES EARNED BY PLAYERS THROUGH THE 1ST TO 8TH STAGE, THE PLACEMENT RESULTS CHANGE.
NO, IS IT IN FACT PROOF OF THE TRUE SEVERITY OF THIS RACE?

ALTHOUGH THEY'VE CROSSED THE LONG JOURNEY OF 6000 KILOMETERS, THERE IS NO CONTESTANT IN 1ST PLACE WITH A SIGNIFICANT LEAD OVER THE OTHER RACERS.
ALL CONTESTANTS' TIME BONUSES MUST BE USED BY THE 8TH STAGE; THEY CANNOT CARRY THEM OVER TO THE FINAL STAGE.
NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA
THIS LEAVES 4 CONTESTANTS WHO ARE WITHIN THE RANGE OF OVERALL VICTORY!
THOSE WITH THE POSSIBILITY OF OVERALL VICTORY IN THE FINAL STAGE ARE...!!
AND TO ADD TO THAT, THE PRIZE MONEY FOR THE WINNER WITH THE HIGHEST POINT TOTAL HAS INCREASED TO 6 BILLION YEN.......!!
DIEGO BRANDO
POCOLOCO
NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA
JOHNNY JOESTAR
ALSO, THE PRIZE MONEY FOR THIS FINAL STAGE ALONE IS '1 BILLION YEN'. GIVING A MAXIMUM POSSIBLE PRIZE TOTAL OF 7 BILLION YEN!

HEY...!
...I SAID HEY!
CAN YOU SPEED THIS THING UP? IT'S REALLY SLOW!
LEMME GIVE YOU A WARNING.
FOR THIS BOAT TO DO SOMETHING LIKE PASS THE BOAT AHEAD OF US...
IF IT'S JUDGED AS AN ACT OF OBSTRUCTION ........
YOU'LL BE IMMEDIATELY 'DISQUALIFIED'.
I DON'T CARE ABOUT STUFF LIKE BEING DISQUALIFIED OR WHAT PLACE I COME IN ANYMORE!
HOW MUCH DO YOU WANT? GET ME CLOSER TO THEM.
TELL ME... HOW MUCH DO I HAVE TO PAY YOU?
10,000 YEN?
HOW ABOUT 50,000 YEN? I JUST NEED YOU TO GET ME CLOSER TO DIO'S BOAT.
IF YOU SHOW ME ANY MONEY, YOU'LL BE PUT UNDER ARREST!!

IT'S NOT THE OTHER WAY AROUND, IS IT? YOU DIDN'T TAKE A BRIBE FROM DIO TO OBSTRUCT ME, DID YOU!?
IT'S AN INSULT TO THE RACE! IF YOU BRIBE US, WE'LL STOP THE BOAT AND PLACE YOU UNDER ARREST!!
STOP THE BOAT ...?
....... WAIT.
IT'S A JOKE. I WAS JUST KIDDING... CALM DOWN ...
YEAH...
REALLY THE ONE WHO SHOULD CALM DOWN.
...IS ME, HUH...?
WHEN I GET OFF AGAIN ...
THERE ARE MANY ROUTES TO THE MANHATTAN BROOKLYN BRIDGE...
NEW JERSEY
MANHATTAN
BROOKLYN BRIDGE
UPPER BAY
BROOKLYN BOROUGH
SEA GATE
CONEY ISLAND

WHAT'S IMPORTANT IS NOT FALLING OFF DIO'S TRAIL, BUT...
THE PROBLEM IS
—(HIS NO LONGER DINOSAUR)—
'STAND ABILITY'.
THAT GUY 'RINGO' WE MET IN THAT FOREST IN KANSAS COULD MAKE TIME GO BACK A FEW SECONDS.
THERE'S A HIGH POSSIBILITY THAT ABILITY STOPS 'TIME' AND LETS HIM MOVE WHILE IT'S ACTIVE.
ONCE I GET WITHIN FIRING RANGE, WILL I BE ABLE TO HIT HIM WITH SOMETHING LIKE A NAIL BULLET...?
BUT FOR IF 'TIME' IS STOPPED

IS DIO STUPID ENOUGH TO LET HIMSELF GET SHOT?
I NEED TO 'FIND A WAY TO OUTWIT' HIS ABILITY...
THE REMAINING TRAVEL DISTANCE IS 13KM.
PUKAAAAA!

EACH SHIP WILL ARRIVE AT SEA GATE ON CONEY ISLAND SEQUENTIALLY IN 15 SECOND INTERVALS!!
......
SLOOP JOHN B, START!
AND THEN NEXT, AFTER 15 SECONDS, NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA STARTS!
FOLLOWED BY POCOLOCO!
THEN DIO DISEMBARKS IN NEW YORK!!

ワァ
ワァ
ワァ
ワァ

AND NOW, WITH THE WHOLE WORLD WATCHING, THE 'FINAL STAGE' HAS BEGUN!
THE REMAINING DISTANCE IS 13 KILOMETERS! COME TEARS OR LAUGHTER, IN 13 KILOMETERS IT WILL ALL BE OVER.
IT'S AN URBAN BATTLE! A '13 KILOMETER HIGH SPEED RACE' HAS BEGUN!!
WHO WILL TAKE POSSESSION OF THE '6 BILLION YEN' PRIZE MONEY!? WHO WILL TAKE THE 'CROWN' AND GO DOWN IN HISTORY!?
EXCUSE ME...
COMING THROUGH
EXCUSE ME.
LET ME THROUGH.
PLEASE ... EXCUSE ME.
LET ME GET BY!
OUCH!
OW!
HEY, DON'T PUSH!
YOU'RE HURTING MY DAUGHTER!
SHU!
SHI—U!
!

......
.......
DAD...?

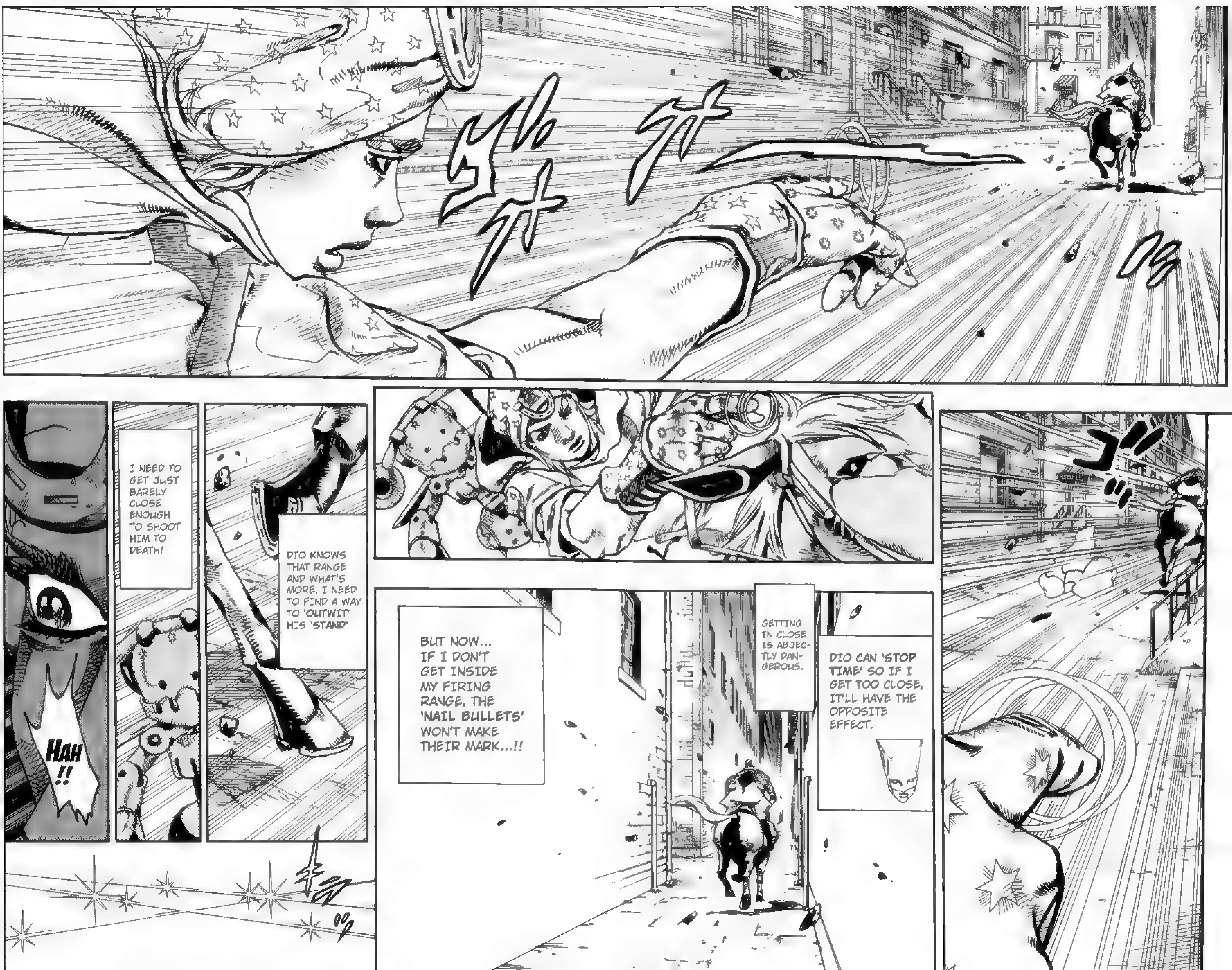
......
WHAT'S HE.......
.........?
GRIP
......

COULD HE HAVE COME TO...
......
MY BROTHER'S 'BOOTS'.
'CHEER ME ON'?
NEXT, THE 5TH CONTESTANT, JOHNNY JOESTAR, DISEMBARKS!!
HIS BELOVED HORSE'S NECK EXTENDS TOWARD MANHATTAN!

EVERYONE, EVERYONE, PLEASE!
PLEASE LISTEN TO ME.
PLEASE, JUST FOR A BIT, PLEASE LISTEN TO WHAT I HAVE TO SAY.
I'VE COME HERE BECAUSE I'VE TREATED MY OWN CHILD HORRIBLY FOR YEARS AND YEARS.
AND THE WHOLE TIME UP UNTIL NOW, I NEVER REALIZED THAT CRUELTY.
I KNOW THAT APOLOGIZING ISN'T ENOUGH TO MAKE UP FOR SCARRING MY CHILD'S HEART.
BUT THAT... IS SOMETHING I FINALLY NOW HAVE COME TO REALIZE.

MY CHILD'S NAME IS 'JOHNNY JOESTAR'.
HE TREKKED FROM THE FAR-OFF WEST COAST ALL THE WAY ACROSS THE CONTINENT.
ALL BY HIMSELF! AND NOW! HE'S HERE! HE'S FINALLY MADE IT TO NEW YORK ..............
......
......
UUH.
......
...EXCUSE .........ME.
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!

CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
CLAP!
ワァァーーーー
ドドドド
ゴオオオ
ドドドド



I NEED TO GET JUST BARELY CLOSE ENOUGH TO SHOOT HIM TO DEATH!
DIO KNOWS THAT RANGE AND WHAT'S MORE, I NEED TO FIND A WAY TO 'OUTWIT' HIS 'STAND'
HAH!!
BUT NOW... IF I DON'T GET INSIDE MY FIRING RANGE, THE 'NAIL BULLETS' WON'T MAKE THEIR MARK...!!
GETTING IN CLOSE IS ABJECTLY DANGEROUS.
DIO CAN 'STOP TIME' SO IF I GET TOO CLOSE, IT'LL HAVE THE OPPOSITE EFFECT.

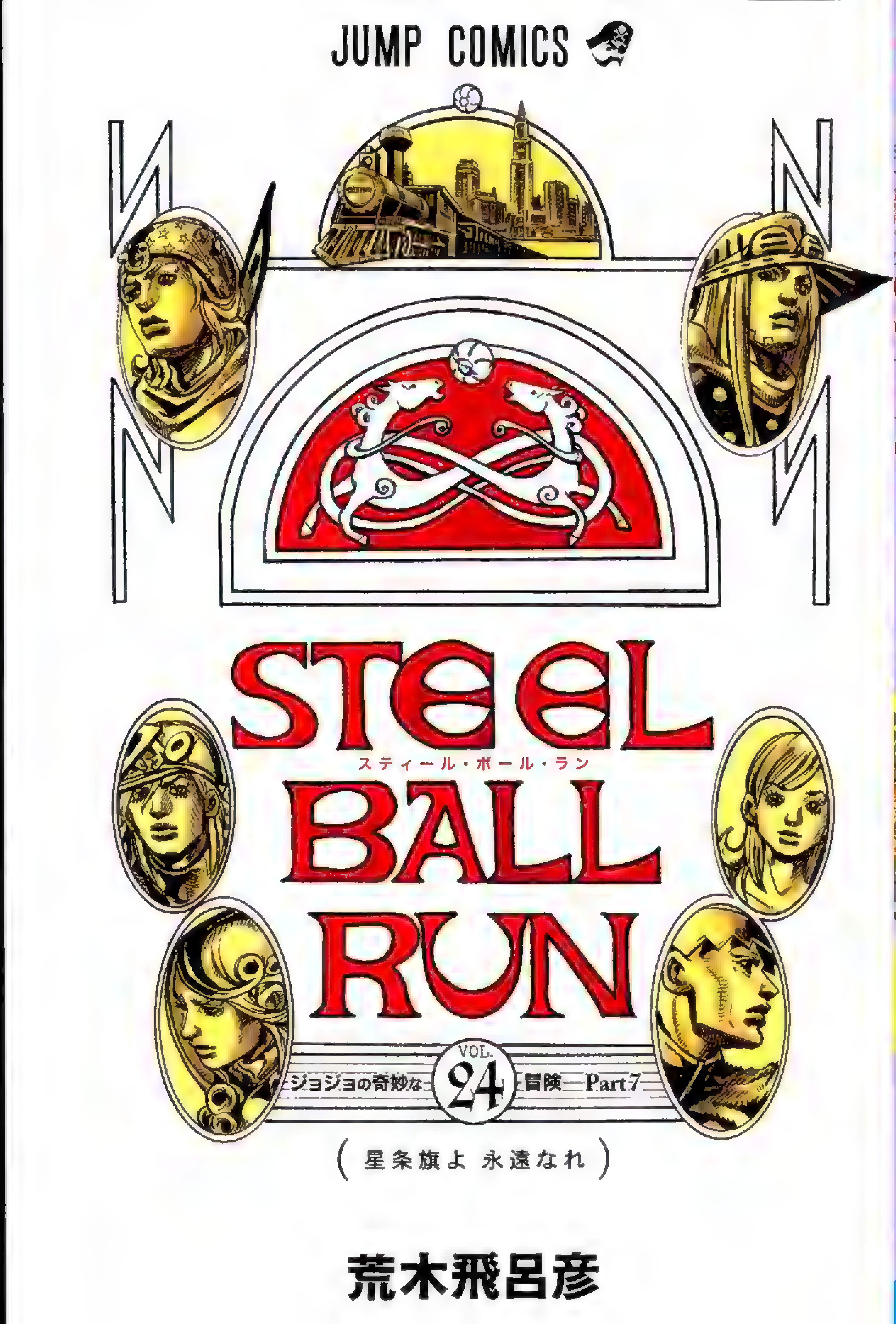
WHAT ...?
THE ONE WHO WAS OUTWITTED ..............
HE HUNG WIRES!!
DAMN, WAS IT ME ...?

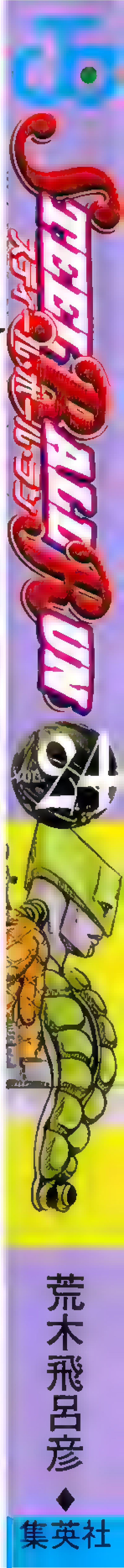
23 HIGH VOLTAGE (END)

# HIROHIKO ARAKI

With this, Volume 24, the Steel Ball Run race is completed. Everyone, from the bottom of my heart, I thank you for being such loving readers.
Just what was the '**holy corpse**' that appeared here? I never explained it thoroughly right up to the end, but I wrote it as a symbol of '**purity**'. I think that the sensation of '**purity**' is an extremely important sense. Like how concepts such as the distinction between good and evil, virtue and what should be respected, can be understood instinctually. You can be sure that the one who obtains the '**corpse**' would also attain '**happiness**'.

●This is a collection of chapters which ran in Ultra Jump Issues February 2011 to May 2011.



JUMP COMICS

Araki Hirohiko &
LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

Since1840 East & West Tribune

ジャンプ・コミックス

STEEL BALL RUN スティール・ボール・ラン 4

1890.sep.23

# "STEEL BALL RUN" RACE!

STEEL BALL RUN スティール・ボール・ラン

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# $50,000,000

荒木飛呂彦

集英社

## Hirohiko Araki & Stephen Steel produce!!

only one this holiday—who comes close tc understanding what he is about, whc makes no demands on him and doesn't

## From SanDiego to NewYork!!

only one this holiday—who comes close tc understanding what he is about, whc makes no demands on him and doesn't realize there is something wrong.

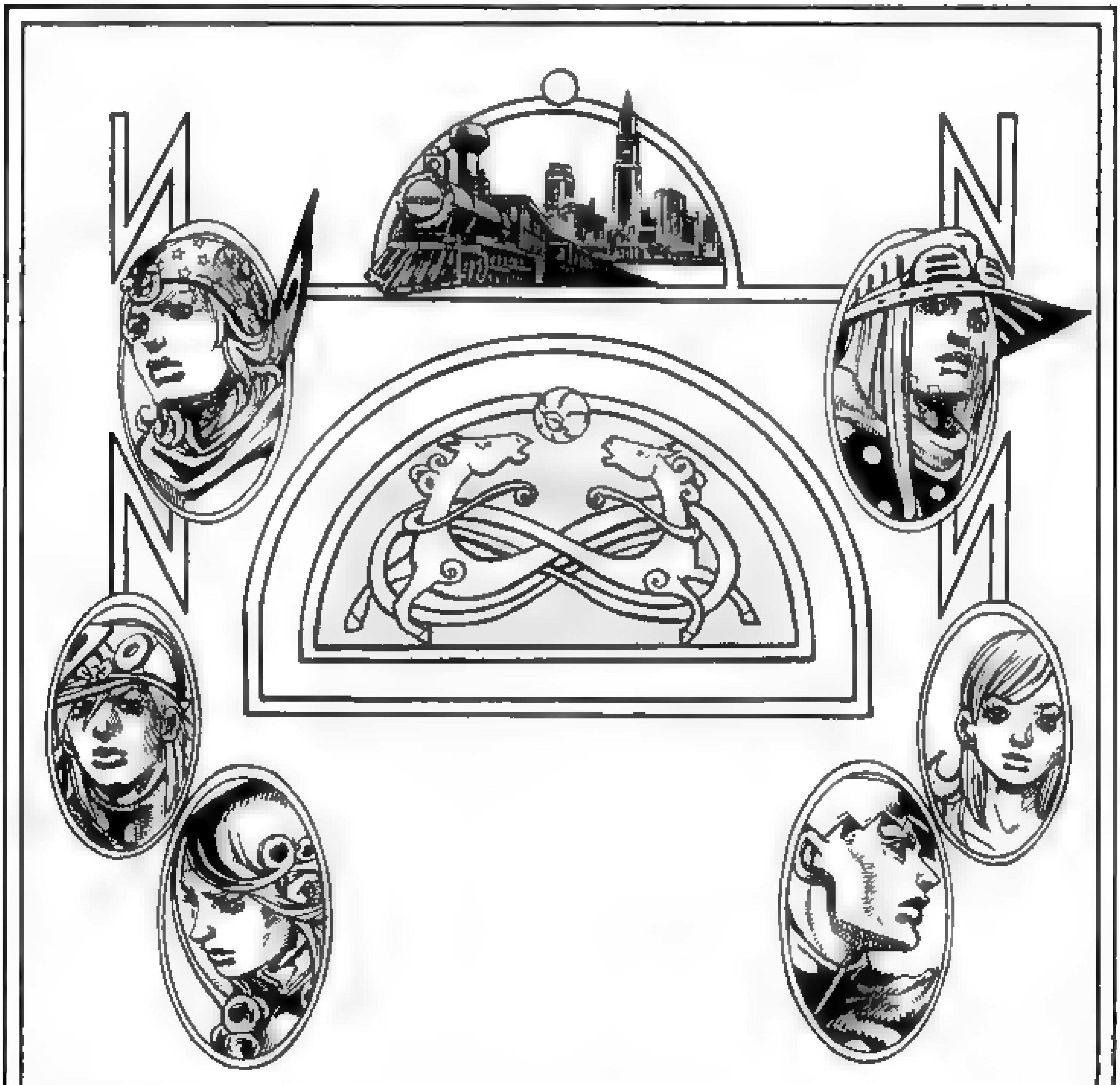
An uncle notices the two togeth... makes a remark to my parents on the order of: "Isn't it nice how well those two get

JUMP COMICS

ジョジョの奇妙な冒険 Part7

# STEEL BALL RUN

STARS AND STRIPES FOREVER vol.24



ARAKI HIROHIKO

& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

ジャイロ・ツェペリ

ネアポリス王国の法務官。不思議な鉄球を、自在に操る特殊能力を持つ。国家反逆罪で捕まった幼い少年・マルコの無罪を信じ、彼を救う手段である「国王の恩赦」を得る為、レースに参加。

ジョニィ・ジョースター

元天才騎手だが、慢心から半身不随となる。ジャイロの鉄球の力に希望を見出し、秘密を知る為、レースに参加。

ファニー・ヴァレンタイン

第23代アメリカ合衆国大統領。遺体を集める為にSBRレースを利用している。ジャイロ達が遺体の一部を所有している事を知り、テロリストを送り込む。

1st.STAGE、1着でゴールするも走行妨害によるペナルティで1位を逃したジャイロは、勝利を確実にする為、ジョニィと協力関係を結ぶ事に。続く2nd.STAGE、アリゾナ砂漠を突っ切るジャイロ達の前に突如テロリスト達が立ちはだかった！戦いの末、彼等の狙いがレース中ジョニィの左腕に取り憑いた『ミイラ化した左腕』である事を知る。

なんとSBRレースは、大統領の陰謀により、アメリカ中に散らばったある人物の遺体を集める為のレースであった！その遺体を全て集めた者は真の『力』と『永遠の王国』を手にする事が出来るという…。遺体の力でスタンド能力を身につけたジョニィは、その力に希望を感じ、残る遺体を集める事を決意。遺体争奪戦が幕を開けた！

8th.STAGE、全ての遺体を揃えた大統領との直接対決が開始。ジャイロは「次元のスキ間」を移動する大統領の能力を攻略するが、あと一歩及ばず敗北…。その遺志を継いだジョニィは「無限の回転エネルギー」を持つ爪弾で、ついに大統領の野望に終止符を打った!!

『スティール・ボール・ラン』レースとは
太平洋『サンディエゴ』ビーチをスタートし
ゴールを『ニューヨーク』とする
人類史上初の乗馬による北米大陸横断レースである！
総距離約6,000km 優勝賞金5千万ドル!!（60億円）
世界各国から屈強の冒険者達が集い、
その数は3,600人を超えた！

そして1890年9月25日　午前10時00分
ついに世紀のレースはスタートした！

戦いを終えたジョニィは海に沈んだジャイロの遺体を探す事に。だが、一瞬の隙を突かれ「聖なる遺体」を何者かに奪われてしまう！　見覚えのある馬の足跡を発見したジョニィは追跡を開始し、8th.STAGEのゴール間近で犯人に接近。その正体は大統領の能力により別次元から現れたDioだった!!「時を止める」という驚異の能力を持つDioを倒す事はできるのか…!?

ホット・パンツ

遺体を集める修道女。遺体を全て揃えれば、過去の過ちを許されると思っている。

ディエゴ・ブランドー

通称ディオ。イギリス下層階級出身の天才騎手。SBRレースに優勝し、栄光と権力を手に入れる為に参加。全ての遺体を持つ。

ルーシー・スティール

スティールを支える妻。夫を「よちよち」となだめる彼女は、弱冠14歳!?

スティーブン・スティール

40年のキャリアを持つプロモーター。SBRの主催者。

# STEEL BALL RUN

## vol.24

## CONTENTS

**STARS AND STRIPES FOREVER**


#92
HIGH VOLTAGE PART③ 7

#93
HIGH VOLTAGE PART④ 41

#94
WORLD OF STARS AND STRIPES 75

#95
WORLD OF STARS AND STRIPES OUTRO 127

#92
HIGH VOLTAGE
PART ③

HE CAN DO ANYTHING WITHIN THE 'STOPPED TIME'!!
CAN I WIN AGAINST AN ABILITY LIKE THAT ...!?
EVEN THOUGH I'D LEFT PLENTY OF SPACE BETWEEN US, I CAN'T EVEN PURSUE 'DIO' FROM BEHIND...!!
UG UAH!!
UG UA AH!

UH.
ギャルギャル
ギャルギャル
ドォォーーン

TO PURSUE ME IS FOOLISH.
IT'S USELESS. (MUDA DA)
USELESS. (MUDA)
I'LL BE TAKING THIS 'ARM'...
PIKURI!

HAH!

IMPOSSIBLE...
JUST NOW— IT MOVED...
SOMETHING IS LOOKING AT ME FROM INSIDE THE HOLE.

CHU MI!
MI!
........
...UH.
CONTROLS 'GRAVITY' ..............
PRESIDENT VALENTINE EXPLAINED THAT JOHNNY'S ROTATIONAL ENERGY ..........
'INFINITE ROTATION'
COULD THAT MEAN... THAT IT EVEN CROSSES INTO 'STOPPED TIME'?...
JUST NOW... I SAID I'D TAKE THIS ARM, BUT...

ギャルギャル
ギャル
ズ…
ドドドド

GA BUUH!
UUH.
UUH.
LIKE WITH PRESIDENT VALENTINE ..............
JUST AS HE SAID.
IF I'M TOUCHED BY THAT 'ROTATION' EVEN A LITTLE, IT MEANS MY DEFEAT.
THAT 'ENERGY' IS DANGEROUS... IT'S AN ABILITY THAT SHOULD NOT BE...

...THAT IT'S COME TO THIS, I ALSO NEED TO BE 'PREPARED'...
THIS WORLD'S JOHNNY JOESTAR IS MY 'GREATEST TEST'.
HAH
HAH
HA
HA
IN THIS SITUATION... I WANNA SAY SOMETHING TOUGH...
HAH
LIKE GYRO WOULD.
AND I WILL 'OVERCOME' THAT TEST AND 'KILL HIM WITH-OUT FAIL'.

HAH
HAH
HA
HAH
HA
THE ONE WHO CAME FROM BELOW THE GROUND, IS 'DIO'.
THE ONE THAT DIED WHEN WE WERE ON THE TRAIN ....
THERE'S NOTHING WE CAN DO NOW.
IT'S IMPOSSIBLE AT THIS POINT, LUCY.
THE BOATS HAVE ALREADY CROSSED THE SEA.
IT'S NOT WITHIN MY POWER TO STOP 'DIO' FROM RUNNING.
ALL THE POLICE AND GUARDS ARE LOOKING FOR THE 'MISSING PRESIDENT' RIGHT NOW.

WITH THAT BEING THE 'HOLY' CORPSE...
ALL WE CAN DO NOW IS PRAY.
IT WILL DEPEND ON WHO THE WILL OF THE 'CORPSE' CHOOSES...
...IS THAT SO?
IF THE ONE THE 'CORPSE'S' WILL ALLIES WITH NOW... IS THE ONE WHO 'POSSESSES' IT...
THEN WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO JOHNNY?

THERE'S THE LEAD GROUP ...AND THE 'BROOKLYN BRIDGE'.
ONCE WE CROSS THE BRIDGE WE'LL BE IN 'MANHATTAN'.
BUT I CAN'T GET ANY CLOSER BEHIND DIO ...............
IF I GET WITHIN FIRING RANGE, HE'LL THROW 'KNIVES' OR HANG 'WIRES' AND I'LL BE KILLED.

THAT'S THE ONLY WAY I CAN FIRE THE 'NAIL BULLETS'...
OR A WAY IN WHICH HE WON'T 'HEAR' IT.
GAS
I HAVE TO ATTACK IN SUCH A WAY THAT HE WON'T 'SEE' IT...
I CAN ONLY DO IT IN A MOMENT WHERE THE 'FORM OF DIO' IS HIDDEN IN A BLIND SPOT DUE TO A WALL......
I NEED TO TIME IT SO IT'S WHEN HE CAN'T STOP TIME...
IF I'M SEN-SED,
ONLY BY USING THE INFINITE ROTATION AND PENETRATING THROUGH WALLS CAN I HIT DIO...
IT CAN ONLY BE WITH A PERFECT 'GOLDEN RECTANGLE'...
SENT THROUGH A WALL, IT'LL SURELY BE ABLE TO REACH DIO!!
I CAN ONLY USE 'ACT 4'.

SHU!
!?
GAN!
GAN!
GAN!

ヌルッ
WHAT THE HELL ......?
A 'CAN' ..........
WHEN DID HE...? WHERE'D HE GET THAT FROM?
WHAT'D HE THROW JUST NOW? A 'CAN'?
HAH!!
Po!
Po!
Po!
Po!
Po!
TH...
THIS SMELL !!!

ド
ドド
ドドド
ド
!!

JUST NOW! HE STOPPED TIME WITHOUT ME NOTICING IT!! ALREADY! WHAT HE SPRINKLED ON ME WAS GASOLINE!!
AND NOW... HE'S GOING TO AGAIN!!
TIME HAS STOPPED ...

AND NOW THE FUN BEGINS...

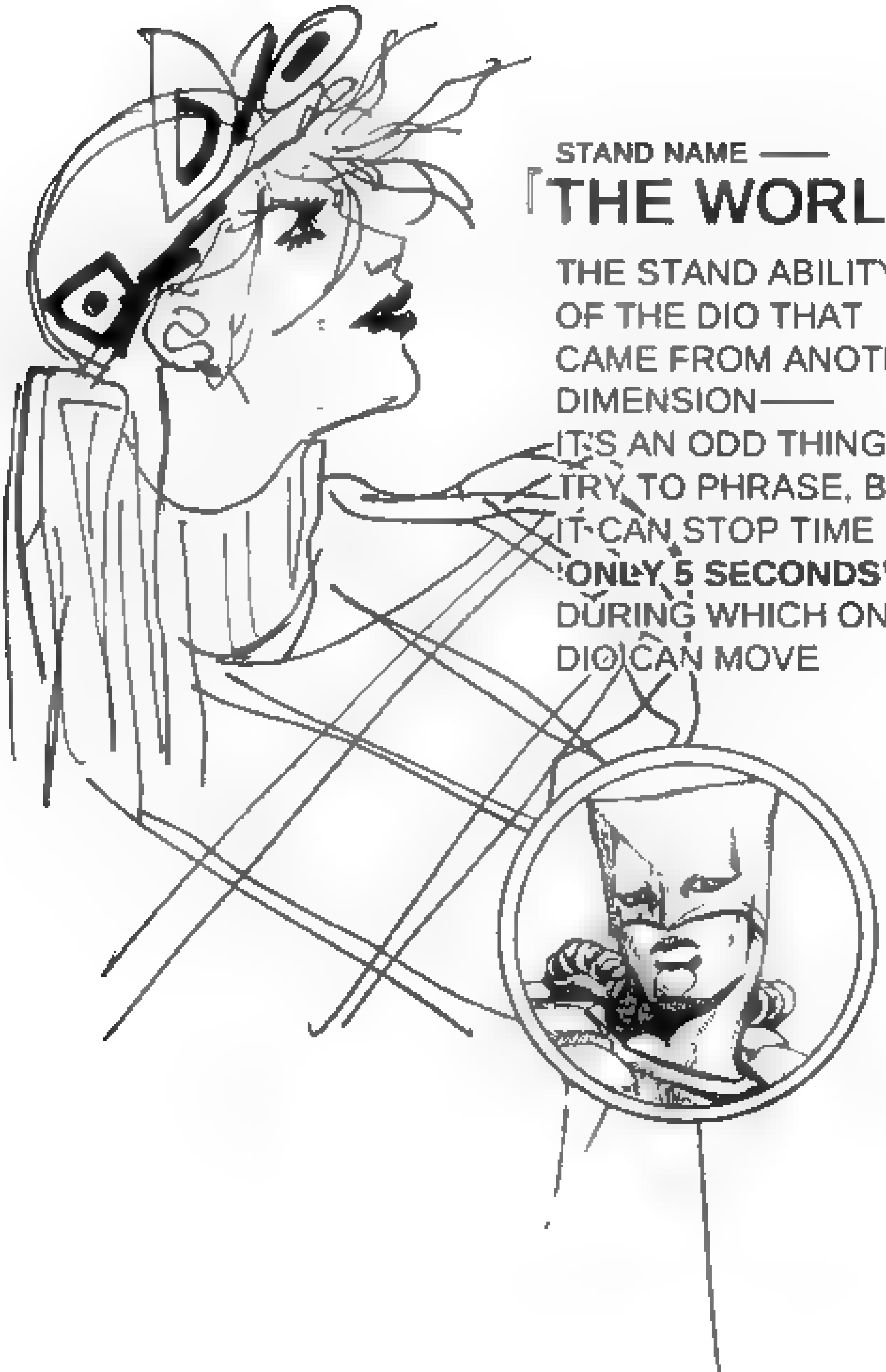
MY 'PLAN' IS COMPLETE ...
MY PLAN FOR WHEN TIME RESUMES, YOUR 'TUSK' WILL BE COMPLETELY ANNIHILATED.
I, TOO, REQUIRED A CONSIDERABLE LEVEL OF PREPARED- NESS, BUT...
I HAD ALREADY DECIDED IN MY HEART ...

IT'S MY VICTORY
..............
THIS 'CORPSE' BELONGS TO ME.
HA-

AAAA
UAAAH!

AAAAAAAAA
『ACT4!!』

DAMMIT! BELOW THE ROAD... I NEED TO RUN INTO THE 'SEWER' OR I CAN'T PUT THIS OUT!
...SO THIS IS DIO!! I COULDN'T PREDICT WHAT WAS COMING AT ALL...BUT I'LL DEFINITELY SHOOT YOU WITH 'ACT 4'!



STAND NAME ——

# 『THE WORLD』

THE STAND ABILITY OF THE DIO THAT CAME FROM ANOTHER DIMENSION——

IT'S AN ODD THING TO TRY TO PHRASE, BUT IT CAN STOP TIME FOR **'ONLY 5 SECONDS'**, DURING WHICH ONLY DIO CAN MOVE

JoJo Project
S.B.R. Volume 24

#93
HIGH VOLTAGE
PART 4

......
ドドドドド
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
......

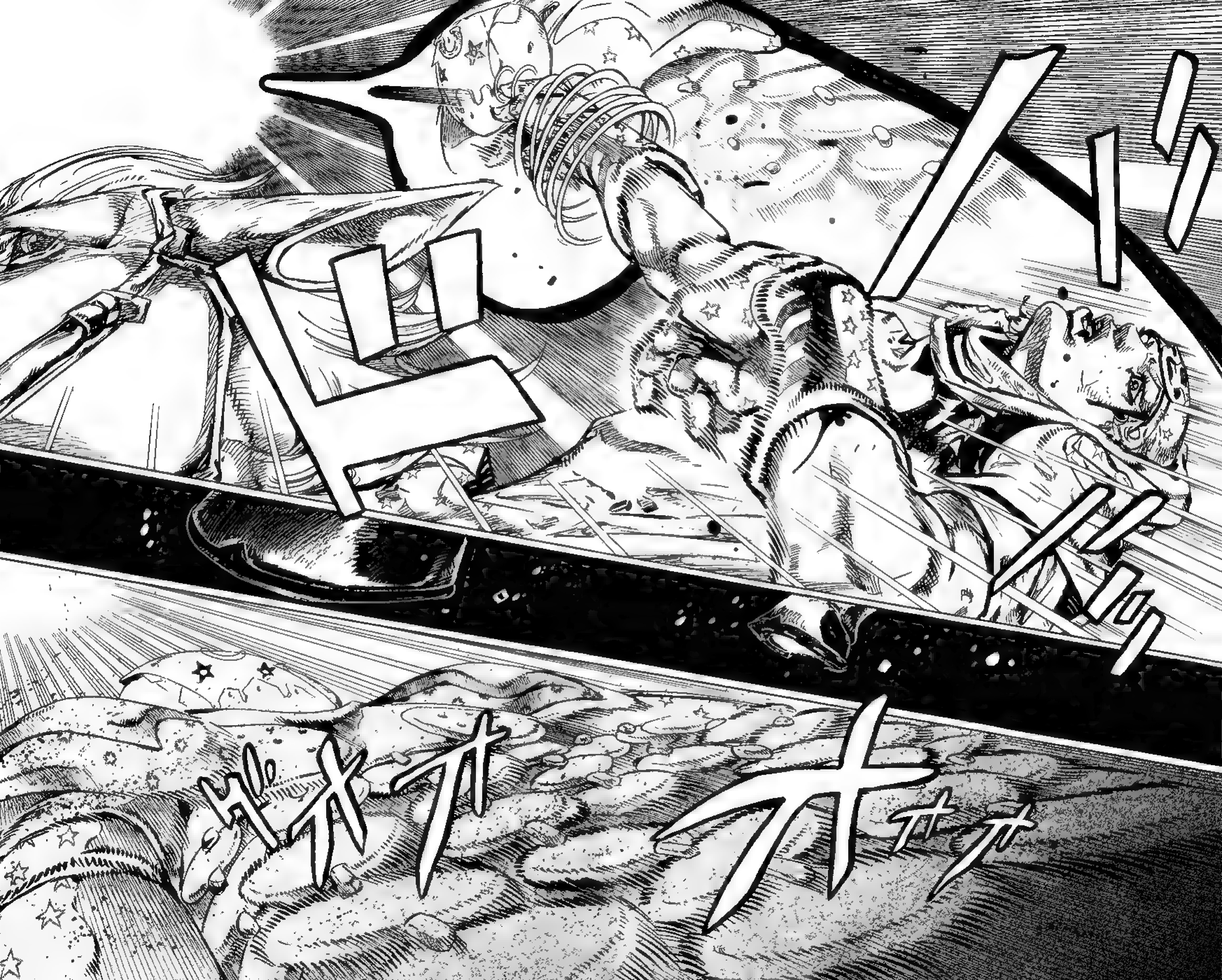
!!
!?
!!
JOHNNY
...
......

ドドドドド
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
ドドドド
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
ドドド
ドドドドドド

HERE'S THE LEAD GROUP!!
THEY'RE APPROACHING THE 'BROOKLYN BRIDGE'!
SPANNING THE EAST RIVER, WITH A TOTAL LENGTH OF ROUGHLY 2 KILOMETERS, ONCE THIS 'BROOKLYN BRIDGE', COMPLETED IN 1883, IS CROSSED-
THE COURSE TURNS LEFT IN FRONT OF CITY HALL!
THEN CONTINUES STRAIGHT DOWN SOUTH THROUGH BROADWAY AND FINALLY TO 'WALL STREET'!!
LOWER MANHATTAN
HUDSON RIVER
BROADWAY
CITY HALL
GOAL
G
WALL STREET
BROOKLYN BRIDGE
EAST RIVER
BROOKLYN
AND THEN AFTER 5 MONTHS, AND CROSSING OVER 6000 KILOMETERS, THEY'LL HAVE FINALLY MADE IT. THE FINAL SITE OF THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE!
THE 'TRINITY CHURCH' WILL BE IN SIGHT!!
G
TRINITY CHURCH
DIEGO BRANDO HAS CAUGHT UP WITH THE TOP 3!
FOLLOWING HIM ARE GEORGIE PORGIE AND NELLYVILLE!
BUT THE CONTESTANT WHO SHOULD HAVE STARTED 5TH IS NO-WHERE TO BE SEEN!
WHAT COULD HAVE HAP-PENED TO HIM!?

JOHNNY.
THAT GUY...
HAH!
DID HE SLOW DOWN TO BE WAY BEHIND!? OR DID HE CHOOSE A DIFFERENT 'ROUTE'!?
THE ONE WHO HAS RISEN TO FAVORITE TO BECOME CHAMPION, JOHNNY JOESTAR, IS NOWHERE TO BE SEEN AMONG THE TOP GROUP!!
'HE'S BELOW' ... HE'S RUN-NING 'BELOW' ...
THE FIRE I LIT ON HIM.
HE'S NOT JUST DOWN THERE TO PUT IT OUT!! ...DAMMIT!
IF JOHNNY'S UNDER-GROUND, I HAVE NO IDEA WHEN HE'LL SHOOT ME!
TH...THIS IS BAD!!
HE'S PREVEN-TED ME FROM HAVING THE RIGHT TIMING FOR WHEN TO STOP TIME!

I KNOW EXACTLY WHICH FOOT-STEPS ARE YOURS!
PA KA RA!
PA KA RA
BA KA RA!
BA KA RA!
DO KA RA!
DO KA!
PA KA RA!
DIO!!
I'VE DISCERNED WHICH ARE YOURS...
THERE!



WOAAA—H! I DON'T BELIEVE IT, WHAT AN INCREDIBLE PERFORMANCE IN THIS SITUATION!! 'DIO'——!!
HIS FEMALE FANS HAVE RUSHED OVER TO HIM AND STOPPED HIS HORSE!
THEY'RE CLIMBING UP ON TOP OF THE HORSE!!
IS BEING A TOPIC OF THE PRESS MORE IMPORTANT TO HIM THAN THE BATTLE TO THE GOAL!?
OR IS HE SO CONFI-DENT IN HIS VICTORY HE FEELS HE HAS TIME TO SPARE!?

ドォ

BA-
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
BAKARA!
!?
......
!!

HMPH!
HEY, HEY,
HOW TERRIBLE,
THAT WAS NOT MY CRIME, JOHNNY.
THE ONE WHO KILLED THEM WAS YOU...
SUCH PURE AND CUTE GIRLS...
IT'S SUCH A SHAME ...
THEY BROKE INTO PIECES AND DIED...
ALTHOUGH IT LOOKS LIKE THEY WENT TO ANOTHER DIMENSION.
YOU KILLED THEM.
THAT'S ENOUGH ... YOU LOT, GET OFF THE HORSE.
AND WHAT IS HAPPENING NOW!?
I CAN'T SEE WHAT HAPPENED EXACTLY...

IT'S NO GOOD...
HAA HAAA
HAAA HAAA
HAA
...I DIDN'T HIT HIM...
THERE'S 3 KILOMETERS REMAINING UNTIL THE GOAL!!
BEHOLDING THE 'STATUE OF LIBERTY' OFF THEIR LEFT SHOULDER, EACH HORSE RUSHES ONTO BROOKLYN BRIDGE!!
SPECTATORS ARE FILLING THE PEDESTRIAN SECTION OF THE BRIDGE!

Johnny
Johnny
JUDGING THE DISTANCE BASED ON THE SOUNDS OF HIS HORSE'S 'HOOVES',
AT THIS DISTANCE HE'S IMPOSSIBLE TO HIT...
LIKE I THOUGHT AT FIRST, THE ONLY WAY TO FINISH OFF 'DIO' IS AT CLOSE RANGE.
Johnny

Dio
MY CHANCE WILL BE BEFORE WE FINISH CROSSING BEFORE THE NUMBER OF SPECTATORS ON THE COURSE INCREASES AGAIN...
BEFORE I SHOOT THE NAIL BULLET.
I NEED TO GET AS CLOSE TO HIM AS POSSIBILE...
Dio
AND NOW JOHNNY JOESTAR, WHO IS THOUGHT TO HAVE TAKEN A DIFFERENT ROUTE, IS BACK ON THE COURSE!!

BUT!
Sloop John B
Dio
Poco Loco
Higashi-kata
HOWEVER! JUST WHAT IS HE ANTICIPATING? WHAT COULD HE BE THINKING!?
'JOHNNY JOESTAR' HAS SUDDENLY GAINED AN ADDITIONAL BURST OF SPEED TO CATCH UP WITH THE LEAD GROUP!!
ドドド
AT THE SITE OF THE BROOKLYN BRIDGE, HE'S GAINED A SPURT THAT SEEMS TO BE HIS FULL SPEED!!
AT THIS POINT WITH ONLY 3KM TO GO BEFORE THE GOAL!!
Johnny
IN UNTRAINED HANDS, THIS ACCELERATION WOULD EVENTUALLY MAKE THE HORSE BREAK DOWN - EXPERT TIMING IS REQUIRED!
ドドドド
HE'S SLOWLY DRAWING AWAY FROM RIDER NELLYVILLE IN 5TH PLACE.
AND CLOSING ON DIEGO BRANDO, CURRENTLY IN 3RD PLACE!!
Johnny
WOO—AH!
NOW IT SEEMS THAT DIO IS ALSO SUDDENLY BEGINNING TO ACCELERATE!
Dio

Johnny
IS THIS AN ACT OF SUI-CI—DE!?
OR A CALCULATED JUDGEMENT BY TWO GENIUS JOCKEYS!!?
Dio
Johnny
ドドドド

AND HERE, AT INCRED-IBLE SPEEDS, DIEGO BRANDO AND JOHNNY JOESTAR HAVE BROKEN OUT OF THE LEAD GROUP!!
Dio
Johnny

THEY'RE PULLING AWAY!
THEY'RE PULLING AWAY!
THE OTHER RACERS AREN'T TAKING THE INVITA-TION!
AT THIS POINT, THE TWO RACERS ARE GOING AT THEIR MAX SPEED!!
IN 2ND-JOHNNY JOESTAR IS CHASING!! AND IN 1ST-DIO IS TRYING TO ESCAPE HIM!!

'THAT TIME STOPPING ABILITY'...!
Dio
OF 'DIO'S' ...
JUDGING FROM WHAT I'VE SENSED UP UNTIL NOW, FROM DIO'S POINT OF VIEW THERE'S A 'LENGTH OF TIME' THAT HE CAN STOP TIME.
I'D SAY THAT IT'S LIKELY 'WITHIN A FEW SECONDS'...
PROBABLY THE MAX LENGTH HE CAN STOP TIME IS 'WITHIN 5 SECONDS'...
DIO CAN ONLY MOVE IN STOPPED TIME DURING THAT INTERVAL...
IN THAT CASE, I'LL GET TO A POSITION JUST BARELY '5 SECONDS' AWAY FROM HIM... AND SHOOT!

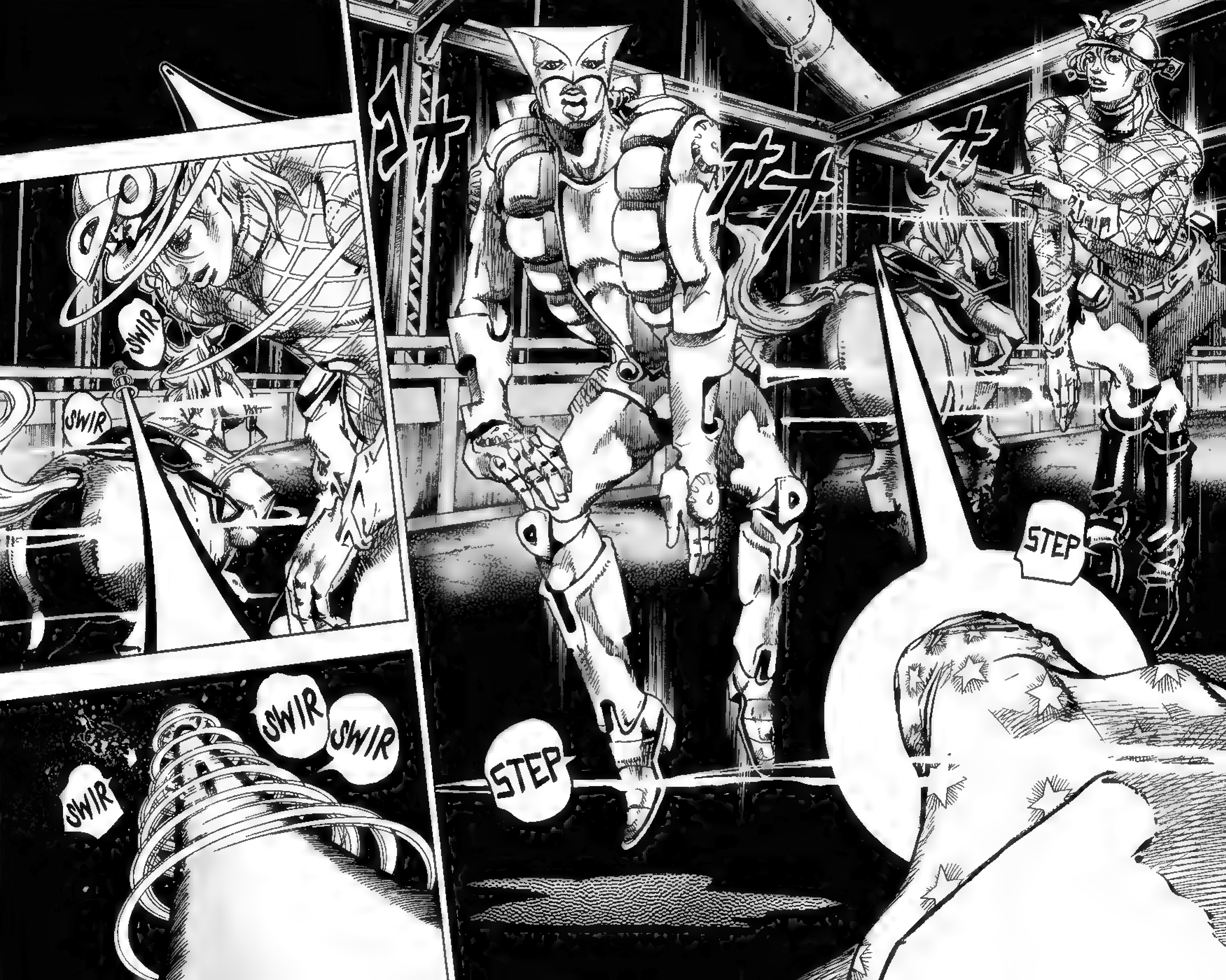
ドドドド
ARE YOU COMING... JOHNNY...? THEN COME SHOOT ME...
JUST TRY AND SHOOT YOUR 'NAIL BULLETS' OF INFINITE ROTATION AT ME.....
BECAUSE IT'S ALL PROGRESSING 'ACCORDING TO MY PLAN'...
ドドドド
JOHNNY WILL PREDICT 'THE WORLD'S' RANGE AND TRY TO GET AS CLOSE AS HE CAN BEFORE FIRING!
HE SHOULD PREDICT AROUND '5 SECONDS' ............... ...... .......!
I, TOO.. MUST MAKE A SACRIFICE AND PAYMENT EQUIVALENT TO THAT..
I AM CERTAIN TO WIN.
ドドドド
I'LL IMPALE YOU.
I'LL SKEWER YOU...

COME!! JOHNNY JOESTAR.
THE CONCLUSION WILL COME 'FASTER' THAN IF TIME WERE STOPPED!

"S" LEFT!!

JoJo Project
S.B.R. Volume 24

'THE WORLD'
TIME HAS STOPPED... '5 SECONDS LEFT'.
#94
WORLD OF STARS AND STRIPES


STEP
STEP
SWIR
SWIR
SWIR
SWIR
SWIR

'4 SECONDS LEFT'!!
CH CHK
CH CHK
GRIP
CLENCH
CH CHK
CH-K
......
'3 SECONDS LEFT'.

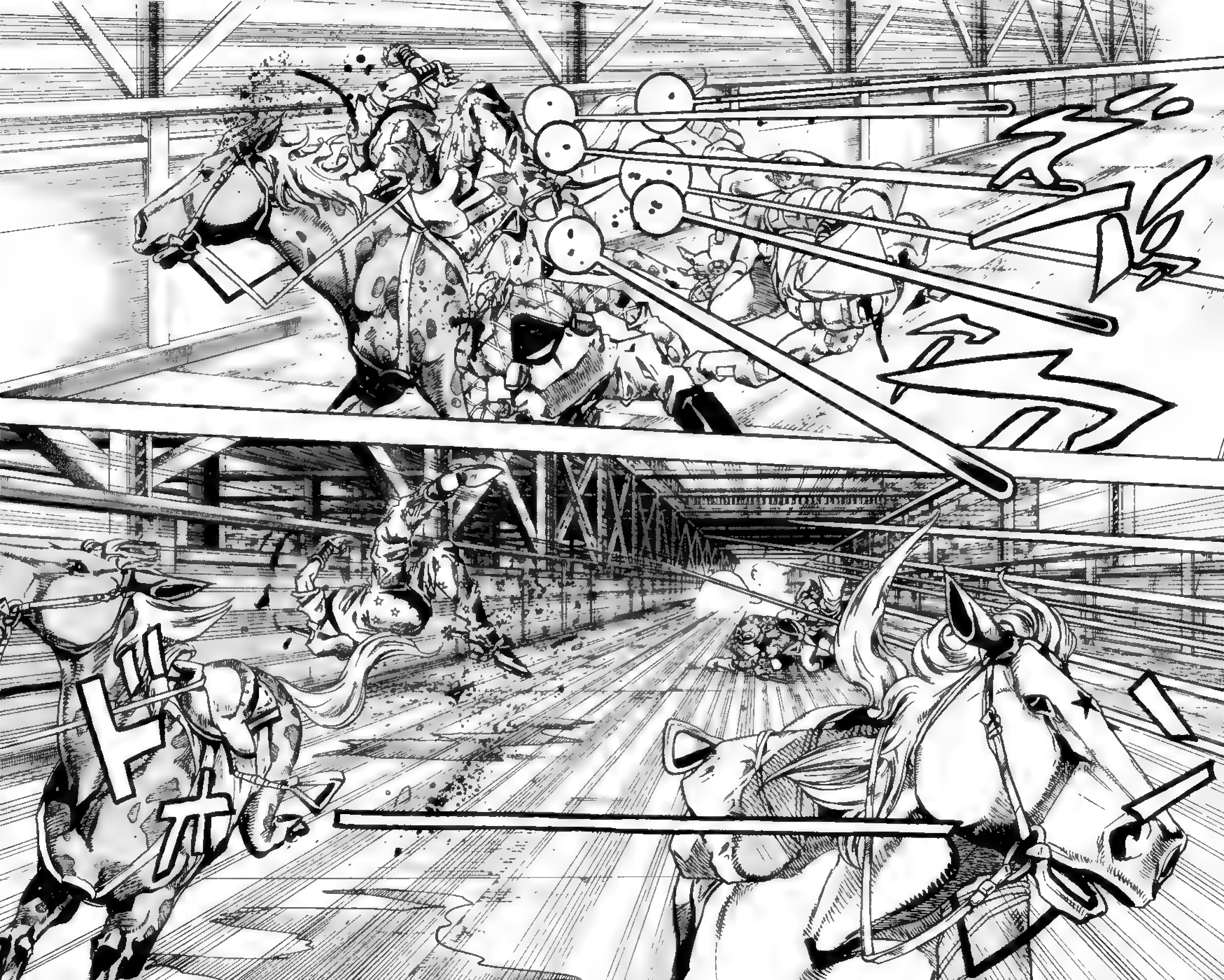
'2 SECONDS LEFT'.

KA
SHK
'1
SECOND
LEFT'.

'AND TIME CONTINUES'
......

HAH!

UGHH


ドォ

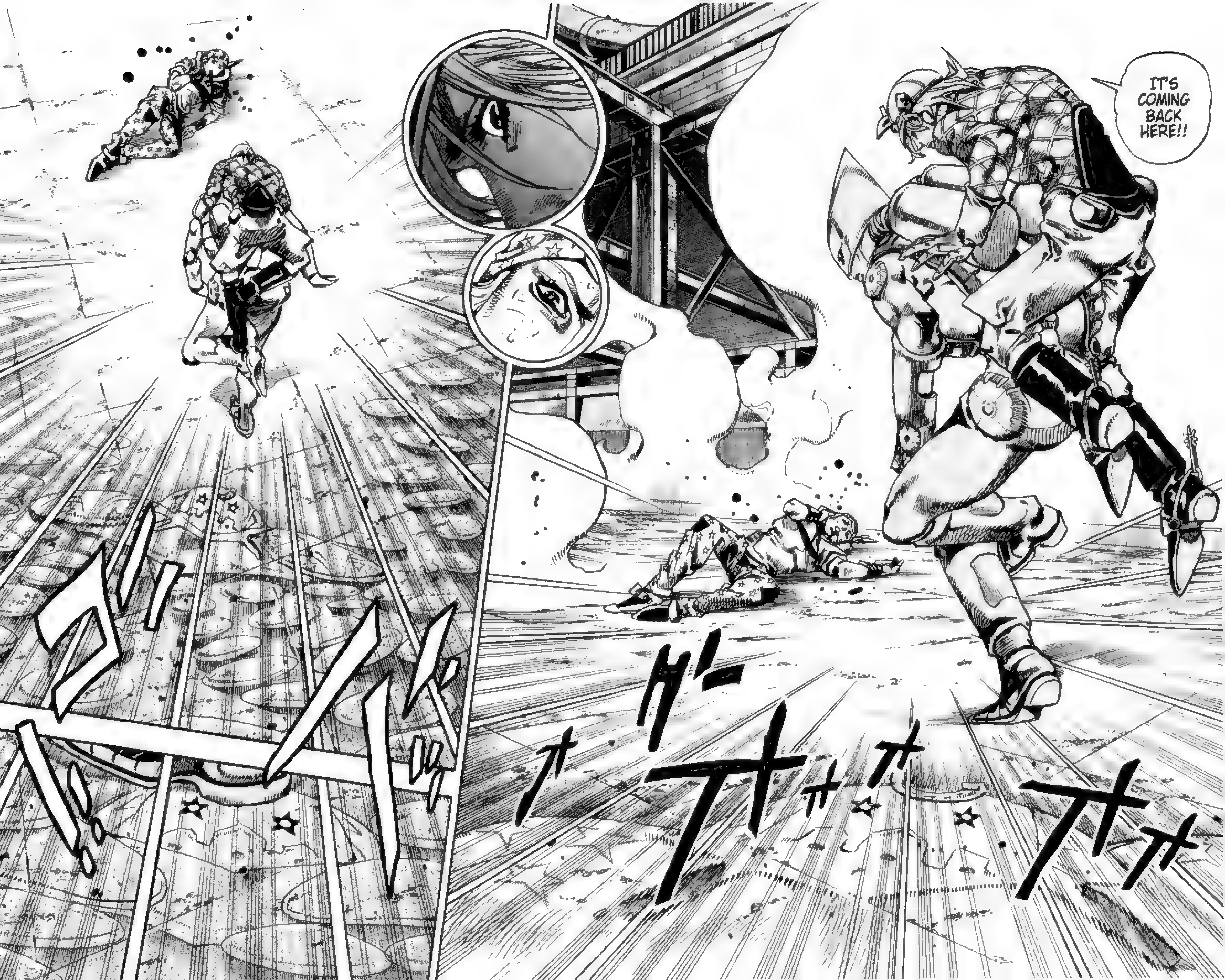
WOA——H THERE, WHAT JUST HAPPENED——!?
THIS IS SUD-DEN!
CONTESTANT JOHNNY JOESTAR HAS FALLEN OFF HIS HORSE!!!
SOMETHING HAPPENED WHICH CAUSED HIM TO LOSE HIS GRIP!! CONTESTANT JOESTAR HAS FALLEN AND DIO HAS GOTTEN OFF HIS HORSE!

GURGLE
GH... GUH
UH
...
HOW COULD THIS HAPPEN WITH JUST 1000 METERS REMAINING JUST AS HE WAS ABOUT TO FINISH CROSSING THE BROOKLYN BRIDGE?!
KLIK
...
KLIK
KLIK
CONTESTANT JOESTAR IS HURT!
HE'S BEEN INJURED!
AND CONTESTANT DIEGO BRANDO IS STEPPING TOWARD HIM!
KLIK
KLIK
KLIK
CONTESTANT JOESTAR HAS FALLEN OFF HIS HORSE AND IS INJURED!!
KLIK

KLIK
KLIK
HA
HA
HA
...
NOW YOU'RE 'UNHORSED'.
KLIK
HAH
HA
HAH
HAH

BASED ON WHAT THE PRESIDENT TOLD ME...
YOUR 'INFINITE ROTATION' IS NO LONGER ACTIVE.
BECAUSE YOU CAN'T USE THE 'HORSE'S POWER'.
HA
HA
HA
HOWEVER ...
NOW IT'S GOING TO COME BACK TO WHERE I AM.
IF THAT 'INFINITE NAIL BULLET' YOU SHOT AT THE BRIDGE'S 'STEEL FRAME' BEFORE, IS EXPUNGED...
... RIGHT?

CORRECT?
THE 'INFINITE ROTATION' YOU SHOT IS ETERNAL, SO IT WON'T DISAPPEAR, IT'S STILL ON TOP OF THIS BRIDGE.
!!
IS THAT WHAT YOU HAD IN MIND? IS THAT YOUR 'PLAN'?
'ACT 4'!
THAT IS ALSO ACCORDING TO MY PREDICTIONS ...
SST
MY 'PLAN'.


IT'S COMING BACK HERE!!

SO HERE IT IS...
BUT SACRIFICES GO HAND-IN-HAND WITH VICTORY.
THE 'INFINITE ROTATION' HUH? THERE'S NO OTHER 'MEANS' OF PROTECTION IT SEEMS.

MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA
MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MUDA MU-
DAAAA!!
GWAAAA
AAH
THE 'ROTATION' ............. .............
TAKE IT YOUR-SELF!

AAH!!
AAHA
AUAAHA
AAA
AA
......
AA
OH!!
AA
GRGH!!

......
AAH
AAA
UOAAAAAA
AAAAA
AAA
『ACT2』!!

ドン
ギュル ギュル
ギャン

......
SPIN
SPIN
SPIN
SPIN
UUUA
...
U
SPIN
'DIO'
....
USE IT TO YOUR ADVANTAGE.
IF YOU CAN MAKE JOHNNY JOESTAR GET HIT BY THE 'INFINITE ROTATION' JUST ONCE...
THE LAWS OF PHYSICS WILL BE FORCED TO AFFECT BOTH HIS BODY AND SOUL.
NO ONE WILL BE ABLE TO HELP HIM. AND HE WILL BE... 'EXTINGUISHED' FROM THIS WORLD.
IN AN INSTANT THERE WILL BE NO ONE HE WILL HAVE NO 'PATH'

HIT JOHNNY HIMSELF WITH THE INFINITE ROTATION.
USE IT AGAINST HIM.
YOU MUST USE IT.
THAT IS YOUR ONLY 'PATH'.

Dio
IT WILL BE YOUR 'VICTORY'!
ドドドド
AA
UAAA
UAA
AA
AAH
AAA

AAA
AAA
UUH
'DIEGO BRANDO' HAS GOTTEN BACK ON HIS HORSE!!
HE HAS FINALLY FINISHED CROSSING THE BROOKLYN BRIDGE...
THEY ARE RUNNING LEFT PAST THE 'FRONT OF CITY HALL'!!
DID DIEGO BRANDO FALL OFF HIS HORSE OVER THE BRIDGE, TOO?!
THERE SEEMS TO BE A HEAVY WOUND ON HIS RIGHT LEG...!!
BUT HIS SPEED HAS NOT DROPPED!
AND STILL, HAVING SEPARATED FROM THE PACK, HE ALONE REACHES ONTO BROADWAY, THE FINAL STRETCH TO THE FINISH!!

ONLY 500 METERS LEFT!
'POCOLOCO' AND 'NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA' ARE GAINING ON DIO!!
IN 2ND IS 'SLOOP JOHN B'!
GEORGIE PORGIE AND NELLYVILLE ARE CONTINUING TO ACCELERATE!!
400 METERS LEFT!!
300 METERS!
HE CAN NOW SEE TRINITY CHURCH UP AHEAD!! BUT WILL DIO HAVE ENOUGH STAMINA?!

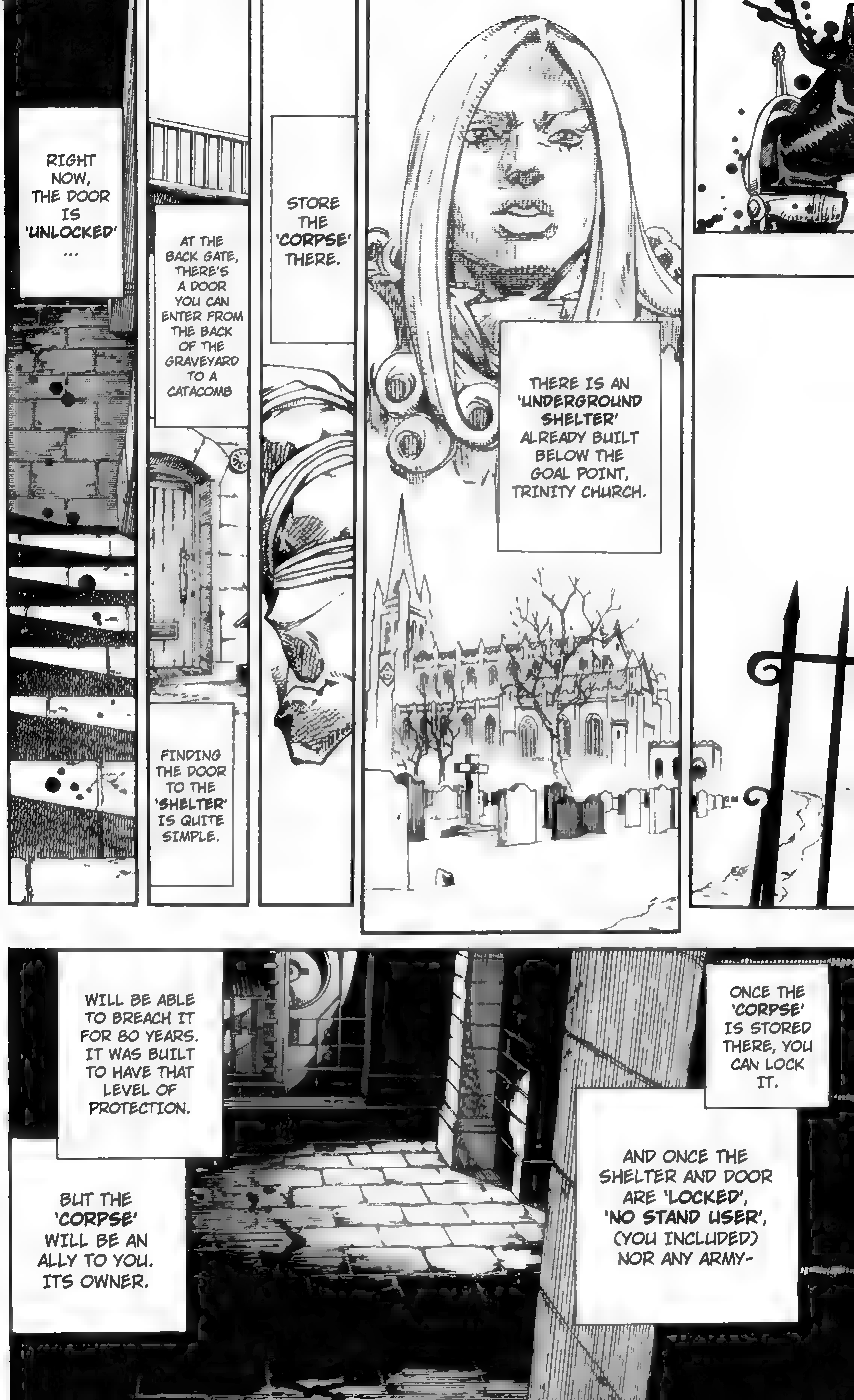
COME BACK!! 'SLOW DANCER'!
WOAH!!
SPIN
SPIN
SPIN
UH
UAA
AAH...

!!
HHHH
AAAA
||||
HHHH
UUH.
THE INF-......
'INFINITE ROTATION' ......
UU UUH.
I CAN'T... 'MOUNT MY HORSE' ...ITS NO GOOD.

THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE THAT STARTED ON THE WEST COAST, SAN DIEGO CALIFORNIA, ON SEPTEMBER 25TH 1890 AT 10AM HAS TRAVERSED THIS GREAT NORTH AMERICAN CONTINENT!
AND WITH A TRAVELING TIME OF 116 DAYS, 6 HOURS, 33 MINUTES AND... 12 SECONDS,
UAAAAAH
UAAAH
WITH A TOTAL NUMBER OF 3652 HORSEBACK CONTENDERS! HAVING TRAVELED A DISTANCE OF 6400 KILOMETERS!
UAAAH
UA
THIS RACE'S CHAMPION IS...!!

『DIEGO BRANDO』
GOOA——L!!
AT LAST!
AT LAST!
AT LAST!
AT LAST!
AT LAST!
AT LAST!
AT LAST!

IT IS OVER AT LAST! THE ONE TO REACH THE GOAL FIRST IS 'DIEGO BRANDOOOOOOOO —'! ON JANUARY 19TH 1891 AT 6:33 AND 12 SECONDS. THE WINNER OF THE 9TH STAGE IS DIEGO BRANDO!!
HE HAS WON THE SPECIAL PRIZE OF THE FINAL STAGE OF 1 BILLION YEN! AS WELL AS HAVING THE OVERALL TOTAL POINT VALUE OF 442 POINTS,
THE OVERALL WINNER OF THE STEEL BALL RUN IS DIEGO BRANDO — WITH 6 BILLION YEN IN PRIZE MONEY!!!
MAKING HIS TOTAL PRIZE MONEY 7 BILLION YEN!
AND AS EXTRA PRIZES, THE TRANS-CONTINENTAL RAILROAD STOCKHOLDER AWARD!
THE HORIZON NEWSPAPER AWARD, THE NORTH AMERICAN HORSE OWNER ASSOCIATION AWARD! THE SELECTIVE BREEDING VEGETABLE COMPANY AWARD! AND THE COM-MUNICATION CATALOG SALES AWARD!!
THE PINNACLE OF THE WORLD!!
'IT IS CONCLUDED WITH DIEGO BRANDO'!!



THERE IS AN 'UNDERGROUND SHELTER' ALREADY BUILT BELOW THE GOAL POINT, TRINITY CHURCH.
STORE THE 'CORPSE' THERE.
AT THE BACK GATE, THERE'S A DOOR YOU CAN ENTER FROM THE BACK OF THE GRAVEYARD TO A CATACOMB
FINDING THE DOOR TO THE 'SHELTER' IS QUITE SIMPLE.
RIGHT NOW, THE DOOR IS 'UNLOCKED' ...
ONCE THE 'CORPSE' IS STORED THERE, YOU CAN LOCK IT.
AND ONCE THE SHELTER AND DOOR ARE 'LOCKED', 'NO STAND USER', (YOU INCLUDED) NOR ANY ARMY-
WILL BE ABLE TO BREACH IT FOR 80 YEARS. IT WAS BUILT TO HAVE THAT LEVEL OF PROTECTION.
BUT THE 'CORPSE' WILL BE AN ALLY TO YOU. ITS OWNER.

Dio
WITH THIS COUNTRY, YOU MUST BE TAKE THE 'NAPKIN'. AND IN MY STEAD...
'ALL GOOD LUCK' AND 'THE CENTER OF THE WORLD' WILL BE AT THAT PLACE!

JoJo Project
S.B.R. Volume 24

#95 WORLD OF STARS AND STRIPES - OUTRO
ALL YOU NEED TO DO-
IS 'LOCK' IT.
THE 'SHELTER'
HAS AN ELEVATOR THAT WILL DESCEND ONLY ONCE... ...WHEN IT IS 'LOCKED' IT CANNOT BE 'UNLOCKED'.
THE 'CORPSE' IS STORED DEEP BELOW THE EARTH'S SURFACE.
SO EVEN IF ENEMIES THAT WISH TO DESTROY IT APPEAR-
IT WOULD TAKE THEM 80 YEARS.
ALL OF THE GOOD FORTUNE IN THIS WORLD WILL BEGIN WITH YOU.

#95
WORLD OF STARS AND STRIPES
- OUTRO

ドッガッ
ビクンッ
ビクンッ
ビクンッ
ビクンッ
ギュル
ギュル
ギュル

●SFX. SPIN SPIN SPIN

HAH!!
I BELIEVE YOU.
ALL RIGHT... PRESIDENT.
WITH THE 'CORPSE' BEING HERE IN NEW YORK .......
NY
DIO... YOU WILL BECOME THE CENTER OF THE WORLD.
JUST SPIN THE DIALS WITH YOUR FINGERS AND IT WILL BE 'LOCKED'.

UH A- A-
A-
A-
!!

A-
AA-
?
'LUCY STEEL' ........
WHAT... WHAT ARE YOU DOING ...?
?
WHAT IS THIS?
YOU CAME HERE ALONE?
UH...
A-
HAA
HAA
IT DOESN'T LOOK LIKE THAT MAN 'STEEL' IS OUT-SIDE.
WHY HAVE YOU COME?

F... ....
IT WAS FOR 'HAPPINESS' THAT I CROSSED THIS CONTINENT...
FOR HAPPINESS ...
AND CAME HERE.
UH
A-
......
HMPH!
STEPHEN STEEL ALREADY KNOWS ABOUT THE 'CONSTRUCTION OF THIS SHELTER' AND ABOUT 'THE EXISTENCE OF THE CORPSE'.
I SEE ...
HE KNOWS TOO MUCH.

BUT LUCY... YOU'RE JUST SO YOUNG AND CUTE.
WHAT SHALL I DO WITH YOU?
IT MAY SEEM LIKE YOU WILL NEVER GET YOUR HAPPINESS, BUT...
ONCE EVERYTHING IS OVER... I'LL HAVE TO SHUT STEEL'S MOUTH.
OBVIOUSLY I CANNOT LEAVE HIM ALIVE.
......
?
I'VE BEEN WAITING AT THIS GOAL-POINT CHURCH SINCE EARLY THIS MORNING, FOR YOUR ARRIVAL.
I CAME IN CASE 'JOHNNY' ..........
IN CASE JOHNNY COULDN'T TAKE THE 'CORPSE' BACK FROM YOU, I CAME HERE...

......
THE 'CORPSE' IS NOT YOURS.
IS THAT RIGHT?
RIGHT NOW BECAUSE OF CERTAIN CIRCUMSTANCES ONE OF MY LEGS IS WOUNDED AND IT HURTS SO MUCH.
IF YOU THINK THAT THIS TECHNIQUE OF SEDUCTION WILL INCITE SYMPATHY IN ME, THEN-
NO MATTER HOW CUTE A VOICE YOU SAY IT IN, IT'S USELESS... LUCY.
JUST WAIT UNTIL MY LEG IS TREATED, AND WE CAN PLAY ALL WE WANT.
I'LL MAKE YOU FALL TO THE LOWEST A WOMAN CAN GO, AND THEN WHILE I'M PLAYING WITH YOU I'LL KILL YOU.

……
?
WHAT IS THIS?
THIS 'BUNDLE' …?
?
HA HA HA
IT'S NOT EXACTLY A 'PRESENT' ……
MORE LIKE SOMETHING YOU 'LOST' ……

WAIT! ...LUCY.
WAIT... PLEASE STOP... WHAT ARE YOU INTENDING TO DO...?
LUCY!
I'M SURE ...
IT SHOULD BE AROUND HERE. IT WASN'T THAT FAR OFF...
IF WE GO THERE NOW BY TRAIN, WE'LL BE ABLE TO OVERTAKE THE RACERS AND GET THERE FIRST.
BEFORE THEN, WE HAVE TO FIND 'THAT'.
IF WE 'FIND THAT' AND THEN HEAD ONWARD...
THROW AWAY THAT BLADE.
PLEASE STOP, LUCY...
WHY DO YOU NEED SOMETHING SO REPULSIVE?
......
IN ORDER TO FIND 'HAPPINESS'.
IF JOHNNY IS DEFEATED AND FAILS... WE'RE SURE TO BE KILLED, TOO.
AT THIS RATE, JOHNNY AND DIO SHOULD REACH MANHATTAN AND GET TO THE GOAL TOMORROW MORNING.
IF THE SAME 'TWO' THINGS MEET, THEY'LL BE 'ANNIHILATED'.
I HEARD PRESIDENT VALENTINE SAY THAT WHEN I WAS ON THE TRAIN.
'SOMETHING THAT CAME FROM ANOTHER WORLD'
AND 'SOMETHING IN THIS WORLD'.
IF 'TWO' OF THE SAME OBJECTS MEET...

F...
'THE WORLD' ......
G... GET AWAY!
...FAR AWAY, THIS IS BAD...
「THE WORLD」
GET AWAY!!
STOP TIIIME——!!!

UOOOOH I'VE GOT TO GET AWAY FROM HERE!!
FAR AWAY!
AAAH
GUAH!!
AAAH
AAH... MY LEG...
UOOH......
UAAAAH
WAAAAAAH!
HOW DARE YOU!
HOW DARE......
SOMEONE LIKE YOU...... LUCY STEEL...
WHO DO YOU THINK I AM?!!

DOING SOMETHING LIKE THIS TO ME...
THE VICTOR IS I, DIO!! ...STOP!
I'M AT THE PINNACLE OF THE WORLD ...
STOP THIS!! YOU'RE JUST A SHALLOW SCUM OF A LITTLE GIRL!!
HOW DARE YOU DO SOMETHING LIKE THIS TO ME! I WON'T LET YOU LIVE!

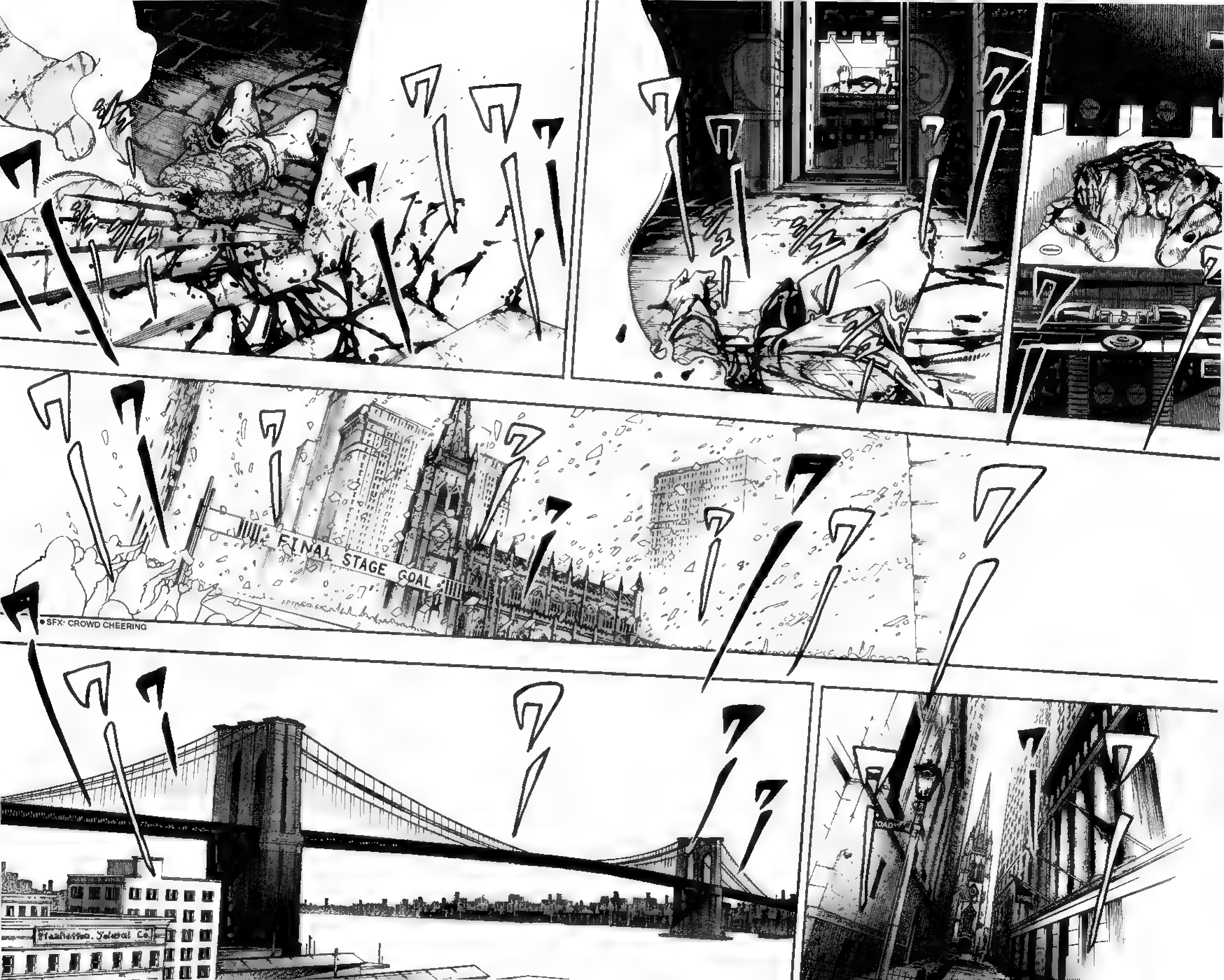
WRY

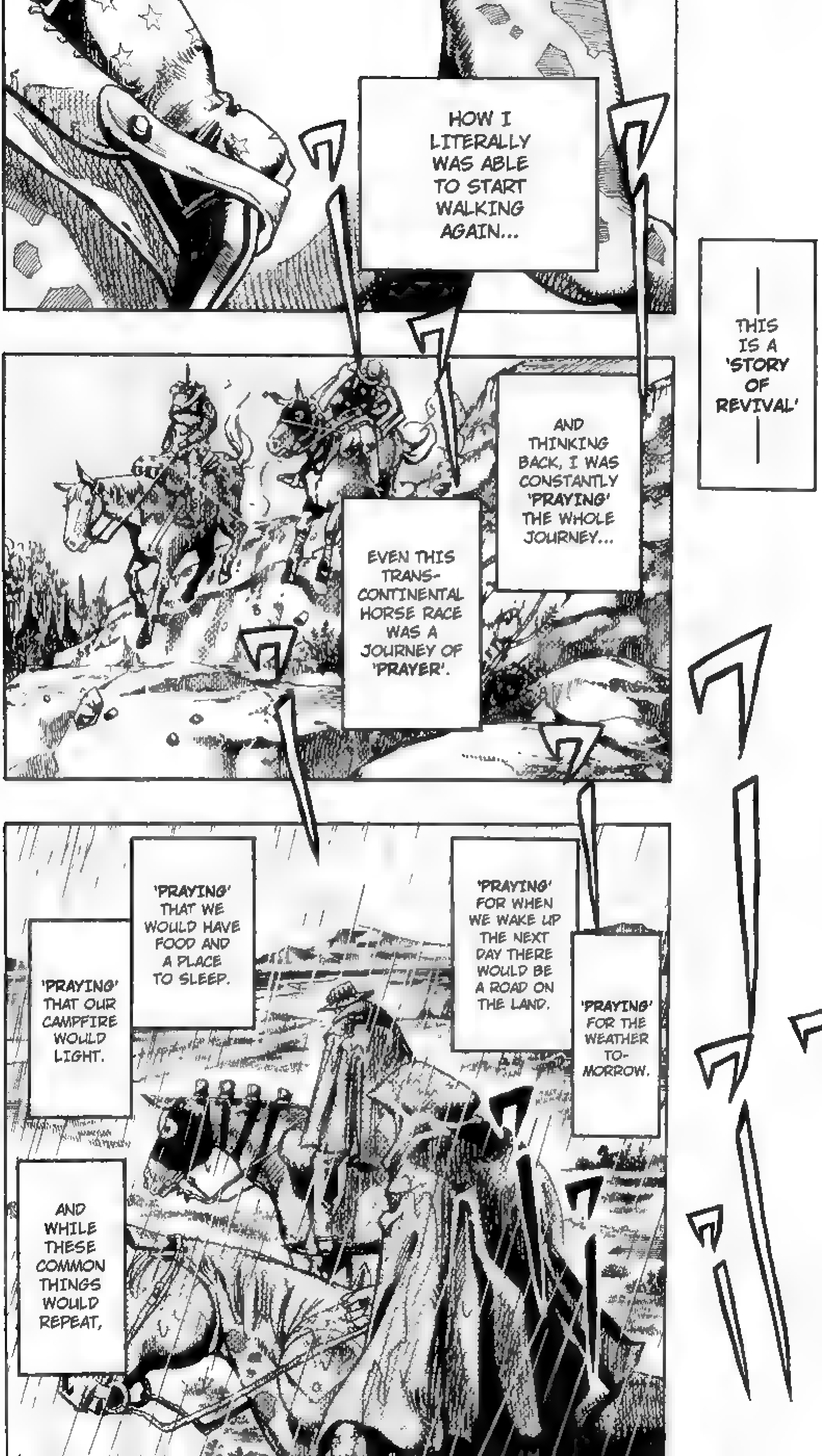
YYYー
STOOOOOOPWRYYYYYYYY—!!

HAA HAA
HAA HAA
HAA HAA
シュー
シュー
シュー
シュー
ドドドド
ドド
ドドド
ドドドド

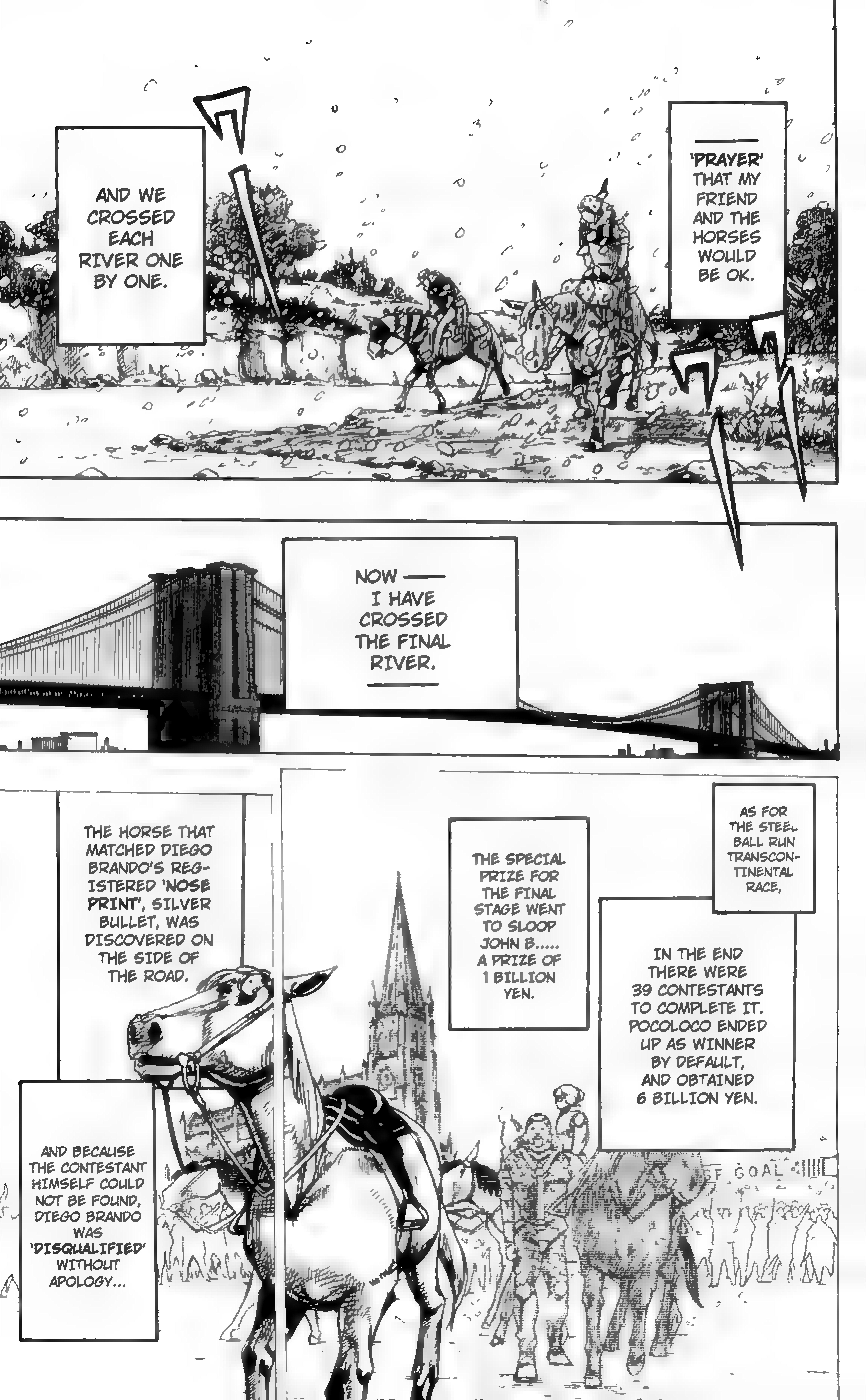
IT'S ME, JOHNNY!
YOU MAY HAVE BEEN DISQUALIFIED FROM THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE — BUT IF YOU RIDE ON THIS HORSE FOR A MOMENT, YOU'LL HAVE A CHANCE, WON'T YOU?!
GRAB ON!

AN 'INFINITE REVERSE ROTATION' ...ON 'MYSELF'...
USING THE HORSE'S POWER...
THE ROTATION WILL BE A 'REVERSE ROTATION' !!


FINAL STAGE GOAL
SFX: CROWD CHEERING



THIS IS A 'STORY OF REVIVAL'
HOW I LITERALLY WAS ABLE TO START WALKING AGAIN...
AND THINKING BACK, I WAS CONSTANTLY 'PRAYING' THE WHOLE JOURNEY...
EVEN THIS TRANS-CONTINENTAL HORSE RACE WAS A JOURNEY OF 'PRAYER'.
'PRAYING' FOR WHEN WE WAKE UP THE NEXT DAY THERE WOULD BE A ROAD ON THE LAND.
'PRAYING' FOR THE WEATHER TO-MORROW.
'PRAYING' THAT WE WOULD HAVE FOOD AND A PLACE TO SLEEP.
'PRAYING' THAT OUR CAMPFIRE WOULD LIGHT.
AND WHILE THESE COMMON THINGS WOULD REPEAT,


'PRAYER' THAT MY FRIEND AND THE HORSES WOULD BE OK.
AND WE CROSSED EACH RIVER ONE BY ONE.
NOW —— I HAVE CROSSED THE FINAL RIVER.
AS FOR THE STEEL BALL RUN TRANSCONTINENTAL RACE,
IN THE END THERE WERE 39 CONTESTANTS TO COMPLETE IT. POCOLOCO ENDED UP AS WINNER BY DEFAULT, AND OBTAINED 6 BILLION YEN.
THE SPECIAL PRIZE FOR THE FINAL STAGE WENT TO SLOOP JOHN B..... A PRIZE OF 1 BILLION YEN.
SF GOAL
THE HORSE THAT MATCHED DIEGO BRANDO'S REGISTERED 'NOSE PRINT', SILVER BULLET, WAS DISCOVERED ON THE SIDE OF THE ROAD.
AND BECAUSE THE CONTESTANT HIMSELF COULD NOT BE FOUND, DIEGO BRANDO WAS 'DISQUALIFIED' WITHOUT APOLOGY...

PEOPLE FROM ALL OVER THE WORLD WAITED FOR UNITED STATES PRESIDENT VALENTINE TO ARRIVE AND GIVE THE SPEECH FOR THE CLOSING CEREMONY, BUT-
WITH THE EXCUSE BEING 'SECURITY ISSUES', THE MAYOR OF NEW YORK MADE A SPEECH IN HIS PLACE.
(THE PRESIDENT DID NOT APPEAR.)
BECAUSE OF THE MANY RESULTING DEAD, CRITICISM THAT THE RACE WAS INHUMANE CAME FROM ALL SIDES.
AND IT WAS ANNOUNCED THAT THE HEADS OF EVERY NATION SENT DISTINCTIONS TO HIM.
ACCORDING TO A NEWSPAPER REPORT, THE APPROVAL RATINGS FOR THE PRESIDENT ROSE TO 91%.
HOWEVER,
THE PEOPLE'S PRAISE OF PRESIDENT VALENTINE WOULD NEVER STOP.

IT WAS ANNOUNCED THAT THE ECONOMIC RESULT OF THE RACE WAS 7 TRILLION YEN.

AND IT WAS ALSO ANNOUNCED THAT THE PROMOTER, MR. STEPHEN STEEL, DONATED EVERYTHING HE EARNED TO VARIOUS CAUSES.

AND ALL OF THE CRITICISM STOPPED IMMEDIATELY.

THE FINAL RESULTS OF THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE ARE SHOWN BELOW:

## 1890-1891 STEEL BALL RUN COMPILED OVERALL RESULTS

| | NAME | NATIONALITY | ACQUIRED PRIZE MONEY (YEN) | RESULT | TIME |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| CHAMPION 1ST | POCOLOCO | USA | 6 BILLION | 398 POINTS | 116 DAYS 06:33:16 |
| 2ND | NORISUKE HIGASHIKATA | JPN | 1 MILLION | 353 POINTS | (BY A NECK) 06:33:16 |
| 3RD | SLOOP JOHN B | USA | 1 BILLION 500 THOUSAND | 314 POINTS | (BY 1 HORSE LENGTH) 06:33:16 |
| 4TH | GORGIE PORGIE | FRA | 250,000 | 123 POINTS | 06:33:21 |
| 5TH | NELLYVILLE | USA | 120,000 | 122 POINTS | 06:33:23 |
| 6TH | | | | | |

AND SO, AFTER SPANNING 4 MONTHS,

THE CURTAIN FELL ON THE 'STEEL BALL RUN RACE'.

WHAT THE PRESIDENT WANTED...
'THE RIGHT TO BEING FORTUNATE'
EVEN IF THE LAW OF THE 'NAPKIN' IS WITHIN THE 'CORPSE',
ULTIMATELY... THE 'CORPSE' DOES NOT BELONG TO ANYONE...
IT CANNOT BE THE POSSESSION OF ONE NATION... OR ONE PERSON.
I THINK THAT, AFTER ALL, THE ONLY THING THAT CAN DECIDE THAT IS THE WILL OF GOD.

'DIO' HAS BEEN ANNIHI-LATED.
THIS WAY IS BEST...
THE CORPSE MUST BE STORED SOMEWHERE, BUT-
THIS WAY IT WILL NOT BELONG TO ANYONE...
DIO HAS LOCKED THIS SHELTER SHUT, BUT ...
THIS. WAY. IS. FINE.
...... 'QUALIFIED' ......
DIO WAS NOT 'QUALIFIED' TO BE THE OWNER... IT WOULD SEEM.
IT NO LONGER BELONGS TO ANYONE ...
I WAS AFRAID THE ONE WHO OWNED IT WHEN IT WAS LOCKED WOULD BE GIVEN THE 'NAPKIN', BUT......

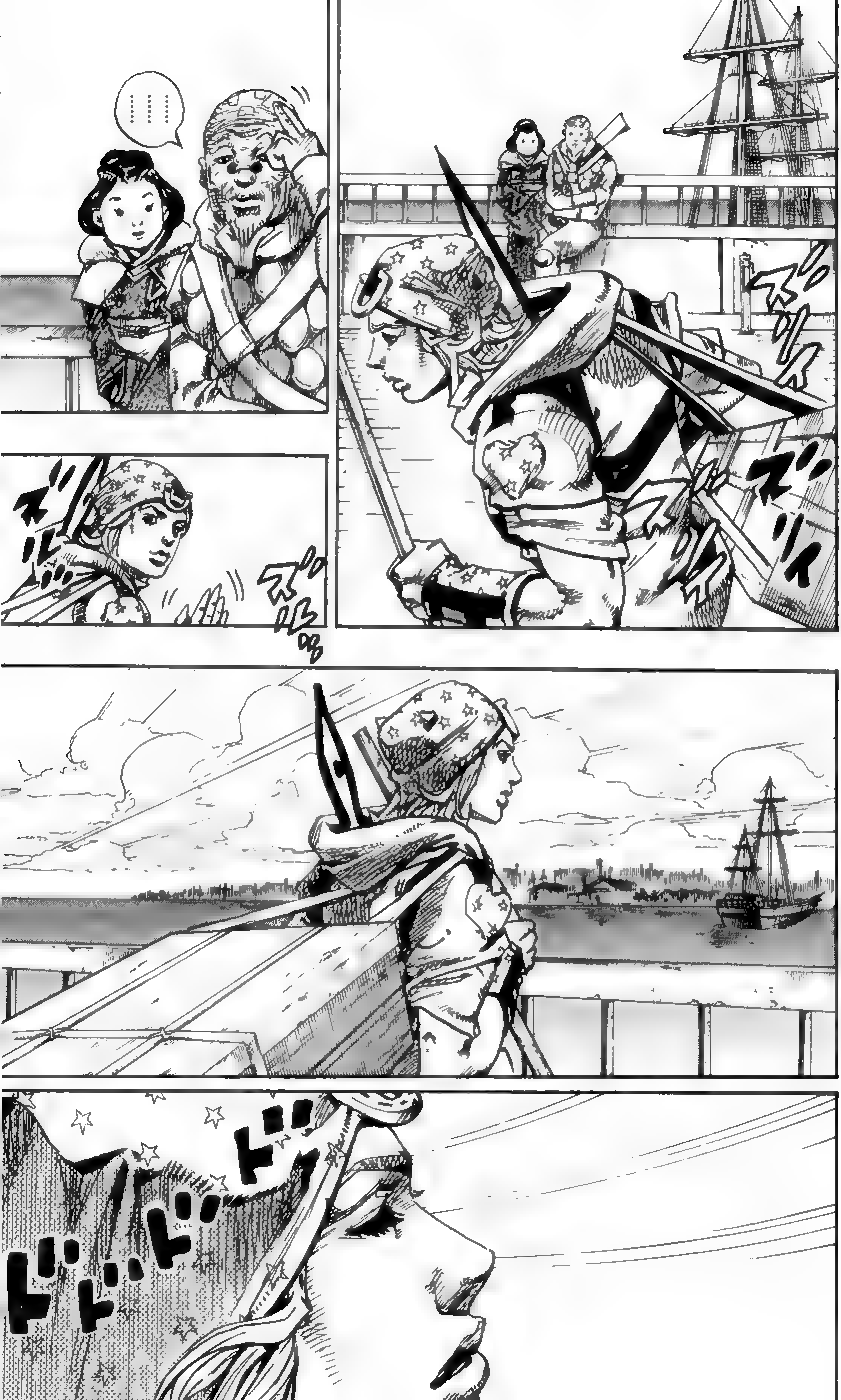
......
YES...
IT WAS LOCKED...
THE 'CORPSE' HAS BEEN STORED DEEP WITHIN THE EARTH.

ザパァアー
ザザザ
ザザザ
ザザザ
DRAG
DRAG
DRAG
DRAG
DRAG
!!
ザザザ
HUH?!

DRAG
OH.
IT'S YOU...
ARE YOU DOING WELL? WHAT'RE YOU DOING-
ON A BOAT LIKE THIS...?
THIS BOAT IS GOING TO EUROPE, RIGHT?
WHAT AM I DOING ...?
MY ORIGINAL JOB WAS A CUSTOMS OFFICER...
THE OFFICIALS IN THE STEEL BALL RUN RACE WERE HIRED ON A TEMPORARY BASIS...
BY THE WAY, MR. JOHNNY JOESTAR, WHAT'S THAT CRATE YOU HAVE WITH YOU?
A 'CORPSE'.

TUNK!!
IT'S THE 'CORPSE' OF MY FRIEND.
AND MY FRIEND'S BELOVED HORSE, VALKYRIE.
I'M GOING BACK TO HIS HOMELAND ON THIS BOAT.
AND HANDING THEM OVER TO HIS FAMILY.
U~MM...... THE HORSE IS FINE, BUT ACCORDING TO THE BOARDING RULES, I CANNOT PERMIT YOU TO BRING A 'CORPSE' ON BOARD.
I'M SINCERELY SORRY, BUT I'LL HAVE TO ASK YOU TO HAVE HIM CREMATED AND BRING ONLY THE ASHES, OR HAVE HIM BURIED IN THIS COUNTRY.
I SEE.
THEN LET ME TELL YOU A NICE SOLUTION FOR THAT. YOU...GO GET ME AUTHORIZATION TO BRING HIM ON BOARD.
I AM DEFINITELY GOING TO RETURN MY FRIEND TO HIS NATIVE COUNTRY... NO MATTER WHAT!
IF YOU WANT A BRIBE, I'LL PAY YOU.

HEY!
COME HERE, EVERY-ONE!
EVERYONE GATHER AROUND! RIGHT OVER HERE!
GET THIS CRATE OFF HERE BY BRUTE FORCE!
GET 'EM!
WHAT ARE YOU TRYING TO DO......? I TOLD YOU, THERE'S NO WAY I'M TAKING THIS OFF THE BOAT...
IT'S ALREADY IMPOS-SIBLE.
NYO-HOHO.
GUESS YOU'VE GOT NO CHOICE BUT TO BUG OFF.
AND IF NECESSARY, YOU GO GET AUTHORI-ZATION! ...GOT IT?
WE DON'T HAVE A PROBLEM HERE, DO WE?

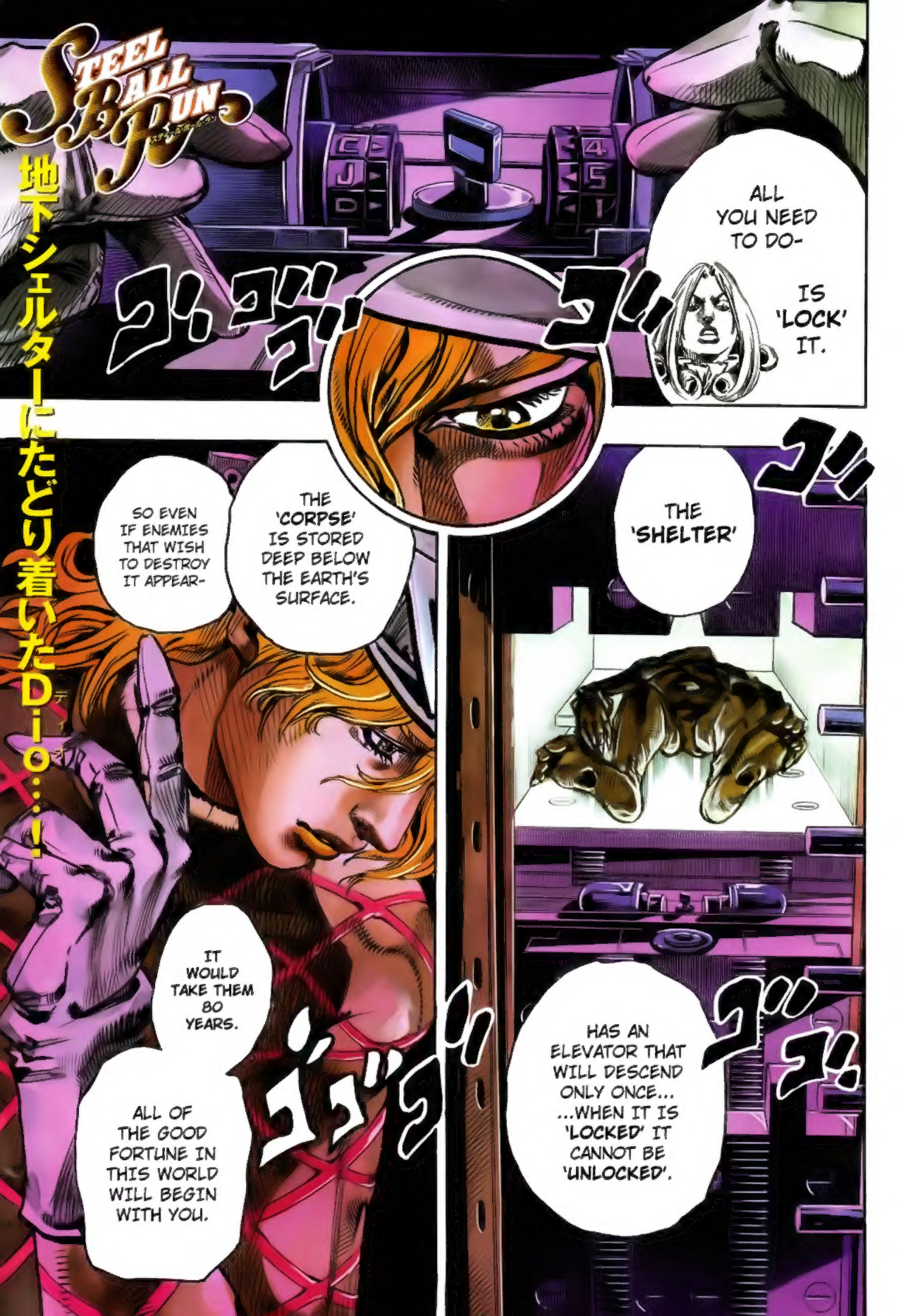

……
ドドドド

ドドドドドドド
HEY, LOOK! 'SANDMAN' IS RUNNING!
AWE-SOME!
YOU STILL CAN'T LET THEM DRINK, HERE. THE HORSES HAVE TO LAST 3 DAYS WITHOUT DRINKING.
FIRST, THE MOST DANGEROUS ONE IS THE FAVORITE TO WIN, MOUNTAIN TIM.
HOW MANY TIMES HAVE WE TAKEN THIS PATH?
THAT GUY KNOWS. HE'S A MEMBER OF THE ROYAL GUARD, WEKAPIPO.
THOSE GUYS ARE THE BOOMBOOM FAMILY. CREEPY, AREN'T THEY?
THAT BRAT! I'LL NEVER FORGIVE HIM!
WHAT THE HELL'S THAT? IS IT ALIVE?
JOHNNY, THIS IS LESSON 4.

WHY DON'T WE 'PRAY' ...?
HOME...
THAT WE HAVE A SAFE VOYAGE ...
CROSSING THE ATLANTIC OCEAN, AND GETTING YOU BACK HOME ...

LET'S GO HOME ...
SEVERAL YEARS LATER
ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE ATLANTIC — THE 'KINGDOM OF NAPLES' HAD A REVOLUTION, THE MONARCHY HAD BEEN ABOLISHED, AND IT HAD BECOME A REPUBLIC'S DEPENDANT PROVINCE.
AS FOR BOY A, WHO HAD BEEN IMPRISONED WITH A DEATH SENTENCE, ALONG WITH THE ABOLISHMENT OF THE MONARCHY, HE WAS GRANTED AMNESTY AND SET FREE.
HE WOULD LATER DIE OF A COLD.
I HEARD THAT THE 'ZEPPELI FAMILY' WHO WERE PATRIMONIALLY EMPLOYED AS THE OFFICIAL ROYAL EXECUTIONERS OF THE 'KINGDOM OF NAPLES' HAD MOVED TO A DIFFERENT COUNTRY.
BUT NO ONE KNOWS EXACTLY.

JoJo's Bizarre Adventure
Part 7
STEEL BALL RUN
END
ザバアァアァアァァァ


STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン
地下シェルターにたどり着いたD-i-o…!
ALL YOU NEED TO DO-
IS 'LOCK' IT.
THE 'SHELTER'
HAS AN ELEVATOR THAT WILL DESCEND ONLY ONCE... ...WHEN IT IS 'LOCKED' IT CANNOT BE 'UNLOCKED'.
THE 'CORPSE' IS STORED DEEP BELOW THE EARTH'S SURFACE.
SO EVEN IF ENEMIES THAT WISH TO DESTROY IT APPEAR-
IT WOULD TAKE THEM 80 YEARS.
ALL OF THE GOOD FORTUNE IN THIS WORLD WILL BEGIN WITH YOU.

レース決着。
STEEL BALL RUN
スティール・ボール・ラン
ジョジョの奇妙な冒険
Part7

◎最終話
勝者(Dio)は世界をも手中に――!?
荒木飛呂彦執筆30周年＆
「ジョジョの奇妙な冒険」作品25周年記念
荒木飛呂彦公式サイト
「jojo.com」公開中!
www.araki-jojo.com
へGO!
「SBR」コミックス
23巻(5月19日)24巻(6月3日/完結巻)
連続刊行決定!!
特製図書カードプレゼント実施中!
詳しくは54P&174P!!
荒木飛呂彦
& LUCKY LAND COMMUNICATIONS

ド・ガ
ゴッ
ゴッ
ゴッ
ドガァ
ドガァ
ドガァ
ドガァ
ギャルン
ギャルン
ギャルン